# THE ROGUE,
OR
# THE LIFE
OF GVZMAN
DE ALFARACHE:

In two Parts.

WRITTEN IN SPANISH
By MATHEO ALEMAN,
Servant to his Catholick Majesty,
and born in SEVIL.

The fourth Edition corrected.

LONDON,
Printed by W.B. for PHILLIP CHETWIND
1656.

# THE ROGUE

OR

# THE LIFE

OF

# GYZMAN

DE ALFARACHE.

# TO
# DON FRANCISCO DE
## ROIAS, MARQVESSE DE POZA,
### LORD OF THE HOUSE DE MONCON,
Preſident of the Councel de HAZIENDA to
*his Majeſty, and the Courts belonging*
*thereunto.*

OF all thoſe things in this world, which are wont amongſt men to cauſe the greateſt fear, I know not any that may be greater, or of equal compare to that of an evil intention, and ſecret ill meaning. And by ſo much truly the more, by how much it ſhall be the more deeply rooted in thoſe that are of obſcure Blood, humble Birth, and baſe mindes. For in ſuch it is uſually more forcible, and leſſe corrigible. But both of them, the one and the other, are like unto *Hunters*; who (taking up ſome cloſe ſtanding, ſhadowed over with boughs) lie in wait for our deſtruction, and even then, after we have received our deaths wound, we are never a whit the neerer in diſcovering whence our hurt came. Theſe are *Bazilisks*, whom if we view them firſt, their poiſon loſeth its force, and is of ſo much the leſſe prejudice; but if they once gain the hand of us (by getting a kinde of dominion over us) they bring us in danger of our utter undoing. They are a ſcandal to a Common-wealth, the promoting Knaves of *Innocence*, and the very executioners of *Vertue*; againſt whom the wiſdome of man is not of power to prevail, or able to guard it ſelf. Of theſe kind of men, from whoſe ſubtil gins (as traps tending to death) no perſon lives ſecure, I (for mine own part) have ever been more afraid, than of any other beaſts, how fierce or hurtful ſoever. And more eſpecially in this preſent occaſion, wherein a large field is laid open unto them, wherein they may ſowe the ſeed of their venome, calumniating me (at the leaſt) with the reproachful attribute of an over-bold and raſh-headed fellow, that I ſhould preſume to offer to ſo powerful a *Prince*, ſo poor a gift. Not conſidering, that this my boldneſſe firſt grew from that neceſſity, whereinto their fear had put me. For, as thoſe Cities that are



Gen. Rec. 4 D33 Dolell. E2.4

852546

UMI

weakly fortified, meanly mann'd, and of ſmall force for defence, have ſo much the greater need of brave and worthy Captains to maintain them, by reſiſting the furious violence and ſharp aſſaults of their enemies: So in like manner was it needful for me, to help my ſelf, and make uſe of your Lordſhips protection; in whom, with ſo much ſplendour and glory, are made manifeſt to the worlds view, thoſe three parts *(Vertue, Blood,* and *Power)* whereof true *Nobleneſſe* is compoſed. And becauſe it is a peculiar property belonging thereunto, to favour and protect thoſe, who (as to a ſacred place) with-draw themſelves thither for their better ſafety, I reſt ſo ſecure under the ſhadow of your Lordſhips protection, and relie ſo much upon your noble diſpoſition, that you ſtretching forth the wings of your accuſtomed clemency, my Book ſhall under them (as Chickens under the Hens wing) remain free from thoſe that ſhall ſeek to wrong it. And together therewith obtain this happineſſe; that you making that great, which in it ſelf is little, admitting a poor *Picaro*, to become a Courtier, ſhall give a being to that which had none before, a work of ſuch Greatneſſe and Excellency, as ſhall make your Lordſhip to appear the more. Whoſe long and happy life is deſired of no man more than

MATHEO ALEMAN.

---

TO

# To the discreet

# READER.



I Did ingage my self by promise to compose this Book, and now I am inforced to hold my honest word. I must confesse I made a false Vie, and did set up my rest in jest, but now I am driven to see it in earnest: For it is the word that binds the Player. I know full well (considering the rudenesse of my wit, and shortnesse of my studies) that it had been very fit in me to fear the Carreer that I am to make; and that this liberty and licence of mine, is more than needed, and might well have been spared: But considering with my self, that there is not any Book so bad, out of which some good may not be drawn, it may be possible, that in that wherein my wit was wanting, the Zeal which I had to profit others may supply that defect, by working so vertuous effects; which happinesse if I light upon, it shall be a sufficient reward of my greater pains, and make this my boldnesse more worthy your pardon. I shall not need with the discreet to use long Proemes, nor prolix circumlocutions. For neither can the eloquence of words vainly work him, nor the force of speech dotingly perswade him to more than what is just: nor doth his felicity consist in the procuring of his favourable Censure. I remit my self to his correction: I crave his helping hand to uphold my weaknesse, and put my self wholly under his fair protection.

And thou (O Reader) that art desirous to profit hereby, if thou wilt but truly consider me, when I wrought this Book, and that common good, to which I had then an eye, thou wilt not conceit, that which had been done therein, was haply performed by me for private interest, or undertaken for ostentation of wit; for I did never so much pretend it, nor could I find that sufficient worth in me, to put my self upon my wings in so vain a flight.

Some perhaps will say, That having (like unto Water-men) turn'd my back and eyes the contrary way (who look one way, and row another) I direct this little Bark of mine, where I have most desire to land. But upon mine honest word; he is deceived that so thinketh. For it was my sole purpose, to guide the prow for the publick good, if I might be worthy to obtain so great a blessing, and that my labour might serve to so good a use. Thou shalt finde many things not so clean wrought, but like Painters first colours, laid on with a careless hand, and slubber'd over, which I did omit to polish and flourish over for some causes, that gave hinderance thereunto. Others are somewhat more refined, and better shadowed, which I did willingly avoid to follow, and was loth to finish them to the full, being as fearful as careful of committing some unadvised errour, or unconceived offence. Others I boldly unmasked, and laid open to discovery, as worthy to be drawn without a vail, and fit to be presented to publick view. I have much to say unto thee, and desire so to do, yet may not tell it thee. I have written unto thee, yet have I left out much of what I would have written. Read so, as it becomes thee to read, and do not scoff at my Fable; and if it shall receive entertainment at thy hands, accept these lines,

which

*which I give thee, and with them the mind wherewith they offered unto thee. Do not be-caſt them, as duſt and ſweepings of the houſe upon the dunghil of oblivion; conſider that there may be ſome filings and parings of price; rake them out, gather them into an heap, and when they come unto a convenient quantity, put them into the criſole of thy conſideration; give to them the fire of the ſpirit, and I aſſure thee, thou ſhalt extract ſome gold from them, wherewithall to inrich thy ſelf. Theſe Arrowes are not all of mine own Quiver, nor this honey that I ſet before thee, all of mine own Hive; much of their ſweetneſſe did I ſuck from holy and learned men; this is merchantable ware, well conditioned; and for ſuch I recommend it unto thee. And becauſe there is no good thing, which doth not proceed from the hands of God; nor any thing ſo bad, whereof ſome glory doth not reſult to his divine Majeſty (as having a part in every thing) imbrace and give a friendly reception to that which may be profitable for thee, rejecting that which is otherwiſe, or whatſoever elſe is bad, as meerly mine: Albeit I am very confident, that thoſe things which cannot hurt, are wont many times to do much good.*

*In this Diſcourſe, thou maieſt moralize things, as they ſhall be offered unto thee; Thou haſt a large margent left thee to do it; That, which thou ſhalt find leſſe grave, or diſcompoſed, preſents it ſelf in the perſon of a* Picaro, *or* Rogue: *which is the ſubject of this Book. Such things as theſe (which are not very many) ſport thy ſelf a while with them, jeſt and play the wag, and afterwards ſhake hands with them. For at great Feaſts, we muſt have meats for all mouths, and diſhes for all taſtes: Pleaſant and ſweet wines, which muſt cheer the heart, and help digeſtion: and muſick for to pleaſe and delight the ear.*

Vale, Amice.

# A Declaration for the better uuderſtanding of this

# BOOK.



IT is to be pre-ſuppoſed, that *Guzman de Alfarache*, our *Picaro*, having (by his ſtudy) come to be a good Latiniſt, Rhetorician, and Grecian (as we ſhall deliver unto you in this firſt Part) after he had returned out of *Italy* into *Spain*, he went forward in his Studies, with purpoſe to profeſſe the ſtate of Religion, and to make himſelf a Church-man. But by reaſon of his often relapſings to his Vices, he left that courſe, after he had ſpent ſome years therein. Now himſelf writeth his own life from a-boord the Galleys, where he remained, and was put to the Oar, for the faults which he had committed, having been a moſt famous Thief, and notorious Offender, as you ſhall ſee more at large in the ſecond Part Nor is it any impropriety, or beyond our preſent purpoſe, if in this firſt Part I ſhall ſet before you ſome Tracts of Doctrine: But rather ſeemeth agreeable unto reaſon to preſent unto you a man of a clear nnderſtanding, holpen by Learning, and puniſhed by Time, making benefit of that idle time, which he had in the Gallies; being that we ſee likewiſe many ignorant ſouls ſentenced to death, who being to ſpend the remainder of their time in thinking on their ſouls health, divert their thoughts from all other worldly things, for to make a ſhort ſtudied ſpeech, when they come to the Ladder.

This Book divides it ſelf into three parts: In the firſt, it is treated of *Guzman de Alfarache*'s going forth of his mothers houſe, and the ſlender conſideration of young men in thoſe endeavours which they attempt: And how, though their eye-ſight be clear, they will not ſee, precipitated and blinded with their falſe pleaſures. In the ſecond, the life of a *Picaro* or *Rogue*, which he under-went, and the lewd tricks which he was led into by ill company, and the time which he idly miſ-ſpent. In the third, the calamities, and extreme poverty, whereunto he grew, and the inconſiderate courſes which he ran into, becauſe he would not take up himſelf in time; and his obſtinacy in not ſuffering himſelf to be ruled by thoſe, who were both able and deſirous to doe him good.

AD

AD

# GUZMAN DE ALFARAGHE

## Vincentij SPINELLI Epigramma.

*QUis te tanta loqui docuit* Guzmanule? *Quis te*
*Stercore ſubmerſum, duxit ad aſtra modo?*
*Muſca modò, & lautas epulas, & putrida tangis*
*Ulcera; jam trepidas frigore, jamque cales.*
*Fura doces, ſuperema petis, medicamine curas,*
*Dulcibus & nugis ſeria mixta doces.*
*Dùm carpiſque alios, alios virtutibus auges,*
*Conſulis ipſe omnes, conſulis ipſe tibi.*
*Jam ſacræ Sophiæ virides amplecteris umbras,*
*Tranſis ad obſcœnos ſordibus inde jocos.*
*Et modò divitiis plenus, modò paupere cultu,*
*Triſtibus & miſeris dulce levamen ades.*

*Sic ſpeciem humanæ vitæ, ſic præfero ſolus;*
*Proſpera complectens, aſpera cuncta fereas.*
*Has* Aleman *variè picta me veſte decorat;*
*Me lege deſertum, tuque diſertus eris.*

---

GUSMAN

# GUZMAN DE ALFARAGHE
## upon his own Life.

BOrn without Parents, which in my Cradle
Should have ſowne ſuch ſeeds, as might inable
Me to good; My *Youth* choſe *Vice* fort's *Father*,
Whoſe Step-dame, *Fortune*, quickly did inſlave her.
My Travels, and my Studies found eft-ſoon
More Forms and Changes than are in the *Moon*.
But now my building being ruin'd quite,
Like to a Pillar, I onely ſtand in ſight,
Others to fore-warn what courſe they runne,
Leſt, like my ſelf, they chance to be undone.
With this Story, my life now lives again,
Which in *Oblivions* pit did dead remain.
Whoſe blurres are now in ſuch fair letters writ,
As *Time* no more ſhall trinmph over it.
An un-hewn piece of wood, I long have bin,
Knotty, and rugged, rinded up in ſin.
But poliſh'd now by this neat Work-mans hand.
And on the *Altar* ſet, as a *Memorial* ſtand
To leſſon others, how their lives to lead,
While I to them, mine own miſ-fortnnes read.

## HERNANDO de SOTO, to the Authour.

TVVo great things I ſee
In this wiſe Book contained be:
A notable Knave,
And yet the Authors Subject, grave.
In it I diſcern,
By others harms, how men may learn
Their own faults t'amend,
And ſhape their courſe to ſome good end.
Likewiſe we may know,
VVhat love to goodneſſe we muſt owe.
To teach more, none can:
Nor more be learn'd of any man.
'Tis the common voice,
So good on either ſide's the choice.
*Picaro* honour gains,
*Aleman* immortal remains.

To

# To the exact Tranſlator of the famous

## Hiſtory of infamous *Guzman.*

WHen *Guzmans* legend was allowed in *Spain,*
And, though a *Rogue*, found Prince-like entertain;
He did o're *Alpes* and *Pyrene* Hills advance
To tell his tale in *Italy* and *France:*
VVith which their native ears being ſweetly ſtung,
He theeviſh ſtole their heart, and bound their tongue
To ſpeak his praiſe. At laſt on *Gallick* ſhore
(Standing like *Cæſar*) thence he did implore
Some *Pegaſus*, or winged *Argo*'s aid,
To croſſe the *Brittain* Seas: Shall they (he ſaid)
VVant onely my thrice ſeven times printed Story?
Nor know my *Oaiſſe's?* Nor ſhall my glory
Out-goe my feet? I come no ſpie, nor take
A Factious part, No ſound of war I make,
But againſt ſin, I land no forrain mates;
For Vertues Schools ſhould free be in all States.
Straight-wayes thy gentler Spirit (without thirſt,
Or Fame or Fare) wafts him aſhore, and firſt
Shews him the preſent garbe, the parle, and guiſe,
In a few weeks; whoſe Quill both writes and flies
VVith equall ſpeed: Then ſhapes him quaint and rare,
That he ſeems *Engliſh*, nay, a *Courtiar.*
VVould you know his Diſcourſe? He biting laughs,
A Comick Satyr, at ſmall faults he ſcoffs,
But ſtabs the impudent: Now in amorous ſtrain
He ſighes a *Lover:* Now in buſie gain
He acts a *Merchant*; Then in learned weeds
He looks a Student: *Ibis*-like he feeds
On publick venome, and deſerves a Shrine
(Sooner than he that ſtiled was Divine)
For purging humours. Now his wiſhes are
Out-ſtript by favour; Then in Gallies bare
He honours beggery: His whole theam is *Man,*
On which nor *Crantor* nor *Chryſippus* can
More wiſdome comment; for his life alone,
Is Precept with Example; So that none
Can better teach by worſe means; who by ſtrange
Bifronted poſture, ill, to good doth change.
So Vipers fleſh, the Vipers cure hath bin:
And ſinful ſurfets, Antidotes for ſin.
So an old Bawds face, Chaſtneſſe doth ſuggeſt:
Vices true picture, makes us Vice deteſt:

More

More than grave *Plato*'s wiſh; for vertues ſight
Can leſſe allure than villany affright.
Dear Countrey then, harbour a weary wight,
Be thou a *Delos* to this errant Knight:
Give the kind *Parahien*, and gracious eye
To various mirth: And (Reader) if thou ſpy
Thy own ſelf in this Magick glaſſe, refuſe
No Surgeons hand, but ('gainſt the common uſe)
Let the Book cenſure thee; and thank his pain,
Whoſe Pen ſo gently prickt thy Maſter-vein:
And thank his faithful convoy, It may be,
Who ſcorns baſe fawning, Love may gratifie.
More is but due: for as my Scale deſignes;
This is the Baſe, to large and worthy Lines.

Yours *I. F.*

## On the Authour, Work, and Tranſlator.

WHo tracks this Authors, or Tranſlators Pen,
Shall find, that either hath read Books & Men:
To ſay but one, were ſingle. Then it chimes,
When the old words do ſtrike on the new times,
As in this *Spaniſh Proteus*, who, though writ
But in one tongue, was form'd with the worlds wit:
And hath the nobleſt mark of a good Book,
That an ill man dares not ſecurely look
Upon it, but will loath, or let it paſſe,
As a deformed face doth a true glaſſe.
Such Books deſerve Tranſlators, of like coate
As was the *Genius* wherewith they were wrote,
And this hath met that one, that may be ſtil'd
More than the Foſter-father of this Child;
For though *Spain* gave him his firſt air and Vogue,
He would be call'd henceforth the *Engliſh Rogue*,
But that he's too well ſuted in a cloth,
Finer than was his *Spaniſh*, if my Oath
Will be receiv'd in Court. If not, would I
Had cloath'd him ſo. Here's all I can ſupply
To your deſert, who have done it, Friend. And this
Fair Emulation, and no Envy is;
When you behold me, wiſh my ſelf, the man
That would have done, that, which you only can.

*Ben. Johnſon.*

## To the Tranſlator.

BUt is the *Rogue* reviv'd? Is *Guzman* made
A Spaniſh-Engliſh Raſcal by his Trade?
Tis ſo. And (as our home-bred *Spaniards* gheſſe)
He's printed liveliest in the Engliſh Preſſe.
Tongues have but one *Horizon*, if they prove
Each others true Interpreters; and move
Alike to all the world. But if they fear
To joyn; each Language has his *Hemiſphere*,
And ſo had *Guzman*. But his Engliſh ſtrain,
Makes it appear to us, as well as *Spain*.
Thus, like a blazing Star, each Author is
Strecht to a ſtreaming length of Languages.

## To the Tranſlator.

WOuld any man ſit ſtill, and yet ſurvay
The world at large? Or ſtudy to betray
All humane *Quiddities*? Or would he view
All men unmaskt, diſcerning falſe from true?
VVould any man ſee *Proteus*? VVould he ſee
*Proteus* again, and ſay, that this is he?
Or ſee the Moon? And when ſhe waxes light,
Know her to be the ſame, at ſecond ſight?
In this ſame Optick-Art, who ſtrives to thrive,
Let him uſe *Guzman* as a *Perſpective*.
*Guzman* is all the world; know him alone,
And then ye know a multitude in one;
The *Spaniſh* lim's him; but this *Engliſh* phraſe
Adds life and colour: and prolongs his dayes.
The *Spaniſh* was too ſmall a Map: but this
Drawes him at large, and ſhews him as he is.
Nor let the ſubject of this Book ſeem ill,
Becauſe 'tis *Guzman*. Painters ſhew their skill
No more in *Beauty* than *Deformity*:
No leſſe in *Devils* than a *Deity*.
All's one to them. Nor do they think it more
To draw fair *Virgins*, than a *Blackamore*.
VVhy then, ſhould not a *Raſcal* honour thoſe,
VVhoſe Language ſhews him to the life in Proſe?
Read him: and as his labour ſhall appear,
Commend his Pen by which he landed here.

*Edw. Burton.*

# A Table of the Chapters and matters contained in the three Books of the first Part.

CHAP. I.

GUzman de Alfarache *recounteth who was his Father, and thereupon takes occasion learnedly to discourse of Detractours, and evil speakers, of unconscionable Merchants, of Judges, of bad Clerks, of Lites and Litigants, and that too much neatnesse in cloaths, and nice dressing is ill in a Woman, and worse in a Man.*

CHAP. II.

Guzman de Alfarache *goes on in reconnting who were his Parents, and declareth withall who his Mother was; and for our better instruction, describes the evil condition and bad qualities of a lewd woman, of Bawds, of a sensual and lascivious man; and that the end of dishoneſt Love, is the wasting of a mans honour, of his wealth, and of himself.*

CHAP. III.

*How* Guzman *departed from his Mothers house upon a Friday towards the Evening, discovering by the way the torments of hunger, and that which befell him with his Hostesse, recounting many notable examples of some Rules of ill government.*

CHAP. IV.

Guzman de Alfarache *recounteth to a Carrier what had betided him with his Hostesse: And discourseth of laughing. After that he tells two short Tales; one of a covetous Physician; the other of two young men, how they used the said Hostesse: And upon the neck of that falls into a learned discourse touching the pardoning of injuries.*

CHAP. V.

*How* Guzman *and the Carrier did eat of a young Mule, thinking it had been Veal, being cozened by his Host in* Cantillana, *and discourseth by the way of the cozening tricks, which bad Hosts put upon poor Travellers.*

CHAP. VI.

Guzman *goes on in recounting what succeeded with his Host of* Cantillana, *who had given him to eat of his young Mule, and of the mis-fortunes that befell the said* Guzman. *And how it is not good upon the way to quarrel with our Host.*

CHAP. VII.

*Mans mis-fortune is here discoursed of, and to that purpose you have a story told you of the gods of those ancient times: And how* Guzman *being thought to be a Thief, was apprehended; but afterwards being known what he was, he was set at liberty. One of the Clergy-men promiseth to tell us a story, to entertain the time withall upon the way.*

CHAP. VIII.

*Wherein* Guzman de Alfarache *relateth the story of those two Lovers,* Ozmin *and* Daraxa.

THE ARGUMENT.

*How* Ferdinand *and* Isabel, *King and Queen of* Spain, *took Baza, a City of the Moores, wherein* Daraxa, *a beautiful and noble Damosell was taken prisoner, whom Queen* Isabel *brought with her to* Sevil, *and there left her in the custody of* Don Luys de Pallida. *And how* Ozmin, *a young Gentleman, well descended and inamoured of that Lady, after he had suffered long sickneſſe for the imprisonment of his fair* Daraxa, *went to the said Citie: together with the divers accidents that happened to them both.*

---

# A Table of the Chapters and matter contained in the second Book.

CHAP. I.

*How* Guzman de Alfarache *going out of* Cazalla *towards* Madrid, *proves the quality and condition of a miserable man, and upon this occasion, gravely discourseth of the effects of Want,*

*of Shame, and of Caſtles in the air: And how he came to ſerve an Hoſt; and of the wicked diſpoſition of ſuch kind of men.*

CHAP. II.

*How* Guzman de Alfarache, *leaving his hoſt, went begging to* Madrid; *and comming thither, how he ſet himſelf to learn to pray the Rogue, and to bear a basket; where by the way he diſcourſeth of Hunger, of Beggery, and of Honour, which hurteth the ſoul.*

CHAP. III.

Guzman de Alfarache *goes on in his Diſcourſe againſt vain Honours, where by the way he offers unto mans conſideration, what manner of perſon he ought to be, how to bear himſelf in his office, and to govern himſelf in thoſe high places, whereunto he is called.*

CHAP. IV.

Guzman de Alfarache *delivereth a learned and witty diſcourſe, conceived by himſelf againſt the vanity of Honour: touching by the way upon the vices of Servants, of Shop-keepers, of Notaries, of Proctors, of Judges, of Artificers, of Apothecaries, of Phyſicians, and of Lawyers.*

CHAP. V.

*How* Guzman de Alfarache *lighted on a Cooks ſervice, and with fair Sentences and good Leſſons ſheweth what he ſhould be that ſerveth. He blameth gaming and Gameſters. He declareth a pretty theft performed by him; he relateth the vices of Deſpenſero's, Cooks, Butlers, and other the like Officers. Of Lords, abuſed by their ſervants. Of Kings, and their miſerable condition. Of the vanity of inferiours, conteſting with their Superiours. He condemneth thoſe Maſters that ill intreat their ſervants: And how they ought to carry themſelves towards them.*

CHAP. VI.

Guzman de Alfarache *proſecutes that which paſt betwixt him and his Maſter, till being diſmiſt, he departed from him: And takes occaſion hereupon to condemn Idleneſſe and evil company; and thoſe inveterated vices in rich men. He recounteth the ſpoils, and Trophees of Cooks, and tells a merry ſtory that paſt between himſelf, and the Cooks wife, his Miſtreſſe.*

CHAP. VII.

*How* Guzman de Alfarache *being put from the Cook his Maſter, turns* Picaro, *and proves a notable cunning Rogue. How he having a great deſire to ſee* Italy, *was offered unto him to effect his purpoſe, by the help of a theft done upon a Grocer, and how he went ſheer away with it, and left* Madrid.

CHAP. VIII.

Guzman de Alfarache *cloathing himſelf like a Gallant in* Toledo, *makes love to a certain Gentlewoman: He telleth how things paſt between them, and how there, and in* Malagon *they ſcorned him; he diſcourſeth of youthful jollity, and of the craft and ſubtilty of your Spaniſh women: which may ſerve for an inſtruction and warning to all young men.*

CHAP. IX.

*How* Guzman de Alfarache *liſts himſelf for a ſouldier. He telleth whence that ill phraſe grew,* En Malegon, en cada caſa un ladron, ven lo del Alcalde, hijoy padre: *In* Malegon *every houſe a Thief, and in that of the* Alcalde *two: The father and the ſon. How in a ſhort time through ill government, all* Guzmans *money is gone: How to his grief he is forced to ſerve a Captain. Some leſſons are given to young men. To theſe are added the faults of bad Miniſters in matters of warfare.*

CHAP. X.

Guzman de Alfarache *declareth the misfortunes. And the wants of one that is decayed in his fortunes: And how he followed a Captain, till he came into* Italy; *exerciſing himſelf in all kind of thefts great and ſmall, for the relief and help of his Maſter.*

---

# A Table of the Chapters and matter contained in the third Book.

CHAP. I.

GUzman *diſcourſeth of poverty, and of the wrongs and outrages, which a poor man indureth: As alſo of Riches, and of the honours that are done unto the rich: as likewiſe of the naughtineſſe of this preſent world: And how finding his Kindred, which he ſought for in* Genoa, *he went to* Rome: *and of a jeſt that was put upon him, before he left that City.*

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

Guzman *discourseth of the unhappinesse, greatnesse, commendation of Necessity and Want: And how after he was gone from* Genoa, *he fell a begging. And how keeping company with other poor beggars, he was instructed by them of their Statutes and Lawes.*

CHAP. III.

*How* Guzman de Alfarache *was not onely reprehended by a learned Rogue, and Doctor in his faculty; but likewise how he learned of him some new Orders and Capitulations, concerning this his roguish kind of life, and that which happened unto him in this his upright course: And of many Precepts and Lessons, delivered unto him upon this point by a* Cordevose, *an old cunning Crosse biter.*

CHAP. IV.

Guzman de Alfarache *discourseth of the Charity that we are to use towards our neighbour; He recounteth what befell him with a Gentleman: And of the free life, and great liberty which a Beggar enjoyes.*

CHAP. V.

Guzman de Alfarache *discourseth of the quality of mens consciences, and recounteth what happened in his time to a notable rogue, and famous beggar in* Florence, *who at his death made the great Duke his heir. He treats of the ambitious man; And delivers in the end, how he was thrust out of* Gaeta *for his counterfeiting.*

CHAP. VI.

Guzman de Alfarache *discourseth of Almes: And being returned to* Rome, *he falls afresh to his old Trade of begging. He feigns himself to have a sore leg. A Cardinal taking compassion of him, takes order to have him cured in his own house, and to be laid in his own bed. He discovers the knavery of Surgeons, having a bad conscience. And now being cured, he becomes a Cardinals Page.*

CHAP. VII.

Guzman de Alfarache *discourseth, how all things have had their time of Empire: He delivereth strange things touching* Truth *&* Lying. *As being Page to the Cardinal; he declareth the Vertues and the Vices, wherein your Pages exercise themselves. He relateth a pleasant Story of his stealing some Conserves, and how he was punished for it.*

CHAP. VIII.

Guzman de Alfarache *revenges a trick which the Secretary had put upon the Chamberlain whom he then attended. He tells a tale of Shame and Fear; What it is, and how painted forth. He is received again into the Cardinals service. And how finely he cozened him of a Barrel of Conserves.*

CHAP. IX.

Guzman de Alfarache *treats of Charity, discourseth of Masters kind & unkinde: Telleth of another theft of Conserves. His exercises, and distastes being a Page. He recounteth the tricks he used at* Primera. *That it is good to know play, but better to use no gaming at all. And how for playing he was put out of the Cardinals service. And how proud ignorance is the cause of all evil.*

CHAP. X.

Guzman de Alfarache *discourseth of ill company, of Hospitality, of Patience, & how being put out of the Guardians house, he placed himself with the Ambassadour of* France, *where he plaied some knavish pranks. He relates a Story, which he heard from a Gentleman of* Naples. *And ending with that, he gives an end to the first part of his life.*

# A Table of the Chapters and matter contained in the three Books of the ſecond Part.


CHAP. I.

Guzman de Alfarache *excuſeth the proceſſe of his diſcourſe, craveth attention, gives notice of his intent; ſheweth that Lying of all other things is the worſt. He treats of the ill government of great men; of Courtiers, and their vices: Of the Spaniards love to Radiſhes. Of the order and end of his Work.*

CHAP. II.

Guzman *tells, what place he ſerved in, in the houſe of his Lord Ambaſſadour: And that Fools and Jeſters are both fit and profitable for Princes: falling into a deſcription of their conditions and qualities.*

CHAP. III.

Guzman *recounteth that which happened unto him with a Captain and a Doctor at a banquet, which the Ambaſſadour, his Lord, made.*

CHAP. IV.

*The Doctor finding himſelf aggrieved, that* Guzmanillo *had wronged him in the preſence of ſo many Gentlemen, would be revenged of him. The Spaniſh Ambaſſadour takes up the quarrel: The French cauſing another of the Gueſts, that was there at table, to relate an accident that befell the Conſtable of* Caſtile, Don Alvaro de Luna.

CHAP. V.

*A Roman Matron, not knowing how to free her ſelf (without ſuffering in her honour) from the perſwaſions of* Guzman, *who ſollicited her in his Lords behalf, the French Ambaſſadour put a jeſt upon him, which was the occaſion of a ſecond diſgrace that afterwards befell him.*

CHAP. VI.

Guzman de Alfarache *recounteth, how in the houſe, whereinto he had withdrawn himſelf, to make himſelf clean, another diſgrace befell him, and many other miſ-fortunes. And that which paſſed afterwards between him, and his Lord, the Ambaſſadour, with whom he diſcourſed of politick and grave matters.*

CHAP. VII.

*The jeſt being publickly known throw* Rome, *which befell* Guzman, *together with the ill ſucceſſe that he had with the Bore: for very ſhame he goes from thence, and goes for* Florence. *In which journey a Thief enters into friendſhip with him, that he might the better, under that colour, rob him of all that he had.*

CHAP. VIII.

Guzman de Alfarache *diſcourſeth of Deceit: He departs from* Rome. *He deſires to ſee* Siena, *where certain theeves meet with his Trunks, which he had ſent away before, and rob him of all that he had.*

CHAP. IX.

Guzman de Alfarache, *not recovering his loſt goods, ſhrewdly complains of the ſmall puniſhment that is laid upon theeves. Wherein he delivereth many things worthy the noting.*


---

# A Table of the Chapters and matter contained in the ſecond Book.


CHAP. I.

Guzman de Alfarache, *leaves* Siena, *and goes for* Florence. *He meets with* Sayavedra, *whom he takes into his ſervice. And before he comes to* Florence, *he recounts unto him on the way*

*way, many admirable things concerning that City. And when he was arrived there, he ſhews him all, that was worth the ſeeing.*

CHAP. II.

Guzman de Alfarache *goes to* Bologna *in purſuit of* Alexandro, *who had ſtolne his Trunk from him; Whither, when he was come, going about to impriſon* Alexandro, *himſelf was clapt up.*

CHAP. III.

Guzman de Alfarache *diſcourſeth on the injuſtice, which ſome Judges do, blinded by gain, or by paſſion.*

CHAP. IV.

Guzman de Alfarache *being freed out of priſon, falls to gaming, gets money: whereupon he reſolves with himſelf to goe to* Millain.

CHAP. V.

Guzman de Alfarache *travelling towards* Millain, Sayavedra *upon the way recounts his own life unto him.*

CHAP. VI.

Sayavedra *meets in* Millain *with a friend of his that ſerved a Merchant*; Guzman de Alfarache *layes a witty plot how to rob him.*

CHAP. VII.

*The robbing of the Merchant of* Millain, *as* Guzman de Alfarache *could have wiſht it.* Aguilera *ſhares ſo much with him, as of right belonged unto him: And he and his ſervant* Sayavedra *goe to* Genoa.

CHAP. VIII.

Guzman de Alfarache *comes to* Genoa, *where being known by his kindred, he is feaſted by them. He perſwades every one to live vertuouſly; And ſhews the hurt, which Murmurers, Hypocrits, and falſe witneſſes brings to mens ſouls, honours and riches: He delivereth the great profit we ſhall gain, by avoiding ſuch venomous Baſiliskes, And concludes with telling us, who are true theeves indeed.*

CHAP. IX.

Guzman de Alfarache *robs his Vncle and kinſmen in* Genoa, *and imbarks himſelf in the Gallies that were to goe for* Spain.

CHAP. X.

Guzman *ſailing towards* Spain, Sayavedra *by reaſon of a great ſtorm, growes Sea-ſick. He falls into a Calenture or burning Fever. He waxes light-headed, and loſes his wits. He cries out that he is* Guzman, *and growing mad, throwes himſelf into the Sea, where he is drowned.*

---

# A Table of the Chapters and matter contained in the third Book.

CHAP. I.

GUzman de Alfarache, *having taken his leave of Captain* Favelo, *telling him that he was to goe for* Sevil, *makes for* Saragoca, *where he peruſes the ſtatutes of* Gotam Colledge, *otherwiſe called,* The Hoſpital of Fools.

CHAP. II.

Guzman de Alfarache *goes from* Saragoca, *and comes to* Madrid, *where he turns Merchant, and is married. He breaks his credit, and turns bankrupt. He treats of womens ſubtil tricks. And of the inconvenience of counter-writings; and of their remedy.*

CHAP. III.

Guzman *proſeccutes the ſucceſſe of his marriage, till ſuch time as his wife died, and how her dowry returned back to her father in law. He diſcourſeth of bad wives, and the hurt they do their husbands.*

CHAP. IV.

Guzman *being now a widower, reſolves to goe to* Alcala de Henarez, *to ſtudy the Arts and Divinity, that he might make himſelf fit to ſay Maſſe. And having fulfilled all his Terms, and duely heard his Lectures, he leaves all, and marries again.*

CHAP. V.

Guzman *leaves off his ſtudies; he goes to live at* Madrid: *he carries his wife with him; from whence they were both baniſhed.*

CHAP.

## Chap. VI.

Guzman *and his wife comes to* Sevil: *He findes his mother to be now somewhat ancient, and well stricken in years. His wife gets her away to* Italy *with one of the Captains of the Gallies, leaving him alone to himself, and exceeding poor: whereupon he falls to his old trade of theeving.*

## Chap. VII.

Guzman *being preferred to a Gentlewomans service, robs her: Upon this theft he is apprehended and condemned to the Gallies during life.*

## Chap. VIII.

Guzman de Alfarache *is taken out of the prison of* Sevil, *to be carried to the Port, to be put into the Gallies. He recounteth that which befell him on the way; as likewise in the Gallies.*

## Chap. IX.

Guzman de Alfarache *prosecutes that which happened unto him in the Gallies: And by what means he came to be freed from thence.*

# THE ROGUE:

OR,

# THE FIRST PART OF THE LIFE OF GUZMAN DE ALFARACHE.

## The first Booke.

Guzman de Alfarache *recounteth who was his Father, and thereupon takes occaſion learnedly to diſcourſe of Detractors, and evill ſpeakers, of unconſcionable Merchants, of Judges, of bad Clerkes, of Lites, and Litigants, and that too much neatneſſe in cloaths, and nice dreſſing is ill in a Woman, and worſe in a Man.*



Urious READER, The deſire which I had to recount my life unto thee, made me make great haſt to ingulfe my ſelfe therein, without firſt preparing ſome things fit to be related, which (ſerving as an introduction and entrance to the matter) had been very needfull for the better informing of thy underſtanding: (for being eſſentiall to this Diſcourſe) they would likewiſe have given thee no ſmall content. But through too much haſt, I forgat to ſhut the doore after me, and ſo unawares have left a way of entrance open for every wrangling Sophiſter, and ſmatterer in Logicke, to taxe me of ignorance, and to lay it as a fault to my charge, that I did not proceed *à definitione ad definitum*, from the definition to the thing defined. And that before I tooke upon me to make Relation thereof, I had not firſt told thee, who, and what were my Parents, together with their obſcure and confuſed birth: which ſo much for ſo much, or as farre as concerneth them in their particular, according to their modell, and proportion in their kind and degree, would without doubt (had I but undertaken to deſcribe it unto you) have been farre more pleaſing, and more acceptable unto you, than this mine own life. I will rather preferre that, which is of moſt importance, leaving that which is not lawfull for me, to others to undergoe that taske, and to play out that tricke of Cards for mee. And albeit it becometh no man to participate of that property of the *Hyena*, to make a living by ripping up the lives of the dead, as ſhe doth maintaine her ſelfe by feeding on thoſe carkaſes which ſhe teares out of graves; I aſſure my ſelfe conſidering the Cenſures that are now adayes to be found in the world, they will not want thoſe that will write their *Chronicle*. Nor is it a thing to be wondred at ſince, this ſlight ſhadowing of my fathers life, ſeemeth to infer, that I pare them too neer the quicke, or at leaſt, that there went but one paire of ſheeres between their lives, and mine. And I doubt not, but thou wilt out with thy purſe and give me a thouſand raſh Attributes; the leaſt whereof ſhall be either Foole, or Block-head, or Coxecombe, or the like, For if I cannot conceale mine owne faults, you will ſay, I will make no bones to bewray others. Thy reaſon is good, and I allow of it; but I will have thee withall to conſider, That albeit thou wilt count me but a lewd Companion, yet I would not willingly ſeeme ſo to be, though it be farre worſe to be ſo, and to make boaſt of wickedneſſe. And that by contradicting ſo juſt a Precept, as is that fifth Commandement, touching the honour and reverence which I owe them, I ſhould goe about to cover mine owne weaknеſſes, by laying

open thoſe of my Anceſtors. For, it is the birth of vile and baſe thoughts, to ſeeke to grace themſelves by diſgracing others, which is now an ordinary practice, which I condemne for that ſolemne foolery of ſix Prieſtes Copes, or double Feaſts; that is to ſay, for a notorious & high point of folly. And a greater there cannot be, becauſe therein I diſcover my bend, and ſhew which way the dint of my edge lyeth. And my errour is not ſalved by wounding the good name of my neighbour, or by traducing my Parent. Beſides, the Detractor never beareth well, but is evill ſpoken of by all men. But to me it doth ſucceed ſo; for in the ſetting forth and adorning of this Hiſtory, (it being neceſſary that my ſelfe muſt needs doe it) no man but will ſay, Gods bleſſing be with him, that ſo truly reſembles his Parents, caſting upon me theſe their good wiſhes by the way. Againe, his life was ſo well known, and all that he did ſo manifeſt to all the world, that to pretend the denying of it, were meere folly, and an open Arreſt, and free liberty given for the occaſioning new matter of murmuration to be brought againſt him. And therefore I am perſwaded, that I doe them (if I may uſe that phraſe of ſpeech) a notorious courteſie, in expreſſing the pure, and true naked Text, wherewith I will give the lye to thoſe gloſſes, which have been made thereupon. For as often as any one mentioneth any thing of him, or recounts ought of his, he addes thereunto, and multiplies it with the Cyphers, which are ſet to his own Spectacles, or as it pleaſeth him; ſometimes making more, but never leſſe, as the veine comes upon him, and as the toy for the preſent takes him in the head. For there is a certaine kind of men, that when matter is offered ſuiting to their purpoſe, for to make their tale ſquare, and to hang well together, will leſſen a *Pyramis* of *Egypt*, and make a Gnat an Elephant, gather evidences from ſurmiſes; ſight from hearing, and knowledge from opinion, onely for to flouriſh their eloquence, and to credit their diſcretion. Thus it uſually falleth out, and this was to be ſeene in a Gentleman a Stranger, whom my ſelfe knew in *Madrid*: Who being much affectioned to Spaniſh Horſes, and deſirous to carry home with him to his owne Countrey, a true and faithfull Counterfeit, as well for his owne entertainment and delight, as that he might ſhew the ſame to his friends. And for that he was of a Nation farre remote, and it being neither permitted, nor poſſible for him to carry them home alive, having in his owne ſtable two of the faireſt ſtature, and feature, that were to be found in all the Court: he intreated two famous Painters, that each of them would draw one, as they ſhould agree upon their choice; promiſing (beſides their due) a certaine reward to him that ſhould ſurpaſſe the other in workmanſhip. The one painted a py'd Horſe, with that perfection, that he onely failed in that, which was impoſſible for him to doe, to wit, in giving him life and ſoule: For, in the reſt (deceiving the ſight, becauſe it did little, or nothing at all differ from the naturall (it would on the ſudden, have blinded any careleſſe eye, and at the firſt bluſh amazed his underſtanding, for that there was no difference betweene a living Horſe and it. With this onely he did fill and finiſh his Table, giving in the reſt lights and ſhadowes as might ſuite beſt with each ſeverall part.

The other drew a dapple gray (that heaven-reſembling colour) and though his worke were very good, yet it came very ſhort of that before delivered; yet in one thing, he went much beyond him, wherein he ſhewed himſelfe his crafts-maſter. And it was this: when he had painted his Horſe in thoſe other parts of the Table, where he found blankes, or void places, in thoſe that were uppermoſt, he drew admirable Land-skips, and other repreſentations of things ſtarre of, as clouds in the Ayre, ſtreaks in the skie, and other fiery colours of the heavens, occaſioned by the reflex of the Sun-ſetting beams, ruinated buildings, and other diverſity of rare Architecture. And in the loweſt part, neareſt to the ground, he had graced his worke with many fine Groves, dainty Flowres, green Medows, and craggy Rockes. And on the one ſide of the Table, that made fitteſt for that purpoſe, he had faſtned all the furniture, belonging to his Horſe to the body of a Tree, at the foot whereof ſtood a Saddle, Gennet-faſhion, ſo coſtly, and ſo curiouſly wrought, and with that excellency of Art, as it cannot be indeemed too much, or expreſſed to that life it deſerveth.

When this Gentleman ſaw his Tables, and liking them wonderfull well (as he had reaſon to doe) he firſt paid him, with whom he had firſt agreed, and not ſticking upon that which he demanded for it, giving in reward to that ingenious Painter, a rich ring from off his finger, he ſent him away well ſatisfied, having payd him over and above the price for which they bargained.

Now the other grew ſo fondly conceited, and ſo fooliſhly in love with his own work, and was ſo vainely tranſported with hope of a liberall and franke payment, that he required ſuch an exceſſive price, as was beyond all reaſon.

The Gentleman, being ſtrooken blanke, and put to a *non-plus*, that he ſhould aske him

ſo much, and that he had ſcarce wherewithall to pay him, ſaid unto him; Tell me (my friend) why ſhouldſt thou aske me ſo much, or why doeſt thou not conſider with thy ſelfe what this other piece coſt me, whereunto thine cannot be compared, nor comes nothing neere it? For the Horſe (indeed Sir, anſwered the Painter) your Worſhip ſpeakes reaſon. But the very trees and ruines, that are in mine, are worth as much as all the others worke. To whom the Gentleman replyde; It is neither fitting, nor neceſſary for me to carry home with me ſuch a volume of trees; ſuch a bulke of ill combined buildings, and ſuch a deale of lumber and luggage as is here; when we have many faire and goodly houſes in our owne Countrey. Beſides, I have not that affection to theſe toyes, as I have unto Horſes. And that which I cannot otherwiſe enjoy but by picture, that alone I deſire to carry along with me.

The Painter againe made anſwer; in ſo great and large a piece, a ſole ſingle Horſe will not ſhew ſo well. And if for nothing elſe, yet at leaſt for the delight of the Eye, and the gracing of the Square, it not onely importeth a Painter, but even enforceth him ſometimes to compoſe a picture of other different things beſides the Maſter-peece, that may qualifie it the better, and give it the more delicate luſtre. So that this ſeeming fairer to the ſight, and preſenting it ſelfe with that pleaſure as it doth, you will grant me this, I hope: That it is very fit, that a Horſe ſhould have his bridle, and his ſaddle, together with his trappings, and all other things belonging to a perfect and complete furniture; eſpecially being ſo curiouſly wrought, with ſo cleane a hand, and ſuch exquiſite Art, that if you would give me other ſuch as theſe, though they were all of Gold, I would not take them in exchange for thoſe that you ſee here drawne. The Gentleman having now found a ſtring where upon to play, & caught hold on that, which he moſt deſired, which was the Picture, that he had already paid for (the other eſteeming impertinent, though in its kinde very good, and much to be commended) and not finding himſelfe ſo overſtored with money, as to part with ſo much as he required, diſcreetly ſaid unto him; I onely bargain'd with you for the Horſe, and (for that the worke is good, and well wrought) I will (if you be pleaſed to ſell it me) pay you accordingly. As for the furniture, you may keepe it to your ſelfe, or beſtow it upon thoſe that have a minde to it, for I have no need of it. The Painter, went away diſcontented and unpaid, by reaſon of the exceſſive rates he had ſet upon his Picture; and for that out of his owne, he had wilfully overlaſhed his diſcretion, thinking with himſelfe, that becauſe his work was more, he ſhould be the more rewarded.

It hath beene (and ſtill is) a common and generall cuſtome amongſt men, when you intreat them to recite what they know in this, or that other thing: or to report what they have heard, or ſeene; or to tell you the truth and ſubſtance of a buſineſſe, to prepare colours to ſlicke it over, and to paint and diſguize it, that you can no more know the face of it, than the countenance of an old Hag, that is plaiſtred over with painting. Every one gives his ſhadowings after his owne fancy; one while amplifying; another while moving paſſion, ſometimes diſannulling, and ſometimes diverting, as the humour takes him. Now he ſtretcheth it with his teeth, that he may make the Leather retch: By and by againe he fileth and poliſheth it, till he have made it fit for his purpoſe, that he may cut and grave therein what he liſt; putting it an Ace, or a Sice higher, if it pleaſe him ſo to doe. Making like another *Count Palatine*, a Foole, a Wiſeman: a filthy fac'd fellow, a beautifull perſon; and a Cowardly Villaine, a valliant *Hercules*. They ſet the Character and worth upon things, as they pleaſe to va lue them; not remembring that they may paint a Horſe well enough, though they leave him bare-ridged, and without his furniture; and report a thing true enough to the life, without commenting upon it. Juſt ſo hath it fared with my Father, of whom (to ſpeake the truth) things are ſo falſifyed, that nothing is now ſaid of him, which was ſo indeed. They have (with *Celeſtine*) of *tres* made *treze*; of three, thirteene; and of thirteene, three hundred. For every one thinks it fit to adde ſomewhat: ſo that Molehills are growne to be Mountaines, and ſuch a confuſed *Chaos*, and *rapſodie* of things hudled one on the neck of another, that there is no bottome of them, nor can there any ground for them be found: every one incouraging himſelfe by the additions of others, (one growing ſtill upon another.) And that wrong which every particular perſon in himſelfe was not able to doe, by a generall helping hand, and common conſent of all men, is become more grievous. There are ſome deceitfull and falſe tongues, which like ſharpe-headed Arrowes, and hot burning Coales, have gone about to wound the honour, and conſume to aſhes the good name of my Parents; whence both to them and my ſelfe, divers notable affronts doe daily redound. It is to be imagined, and you may very well beleeve me, that if it lay in our hands to make our owne choyce (but

beggers muſt be no chooſers) out of that maſſe of *Adam*, and firſt lumpe of fleſh, I would have ſcrambled hard for one of the beſt morſels, though I had beene forced to goe to Cuffes for it: But there is no help for that; Every man muſt be content with that which falls to his lot: we may not be our owne Carvers. But ſince he that hath ſhared theſe things amongſt us, keepes them in his owne hands, and knowes when and where to beſtow them, and what is fitteſt for every man, let us prayſe his holy Name. For though I had (God be thanked for it) my haltings, though I had naturall defects, though I were not without my ſpots and blemiſhes, yet was I ſo favoured by Fortune, that I was nobly borne; and that they lighted upon a man innobled in his blood, both by father and mother. *La ſangve ſe hereda, yel vicio ſe apega*: Blood is by inheritance, but Vice is adventitious, yet cleaveth cloſer than the other, when it once takes hold of us. He that ſhall be what he ought to be, ſhall be accordingly rewarded, but ſhall not purge away the faults of his Parents.

Firſt of all then, I ſhall give you to underſtand, that my father and his kindred, were a certaine kinde of upſtart Gentlemen, that came out of the *Levant*, who having no certaine abiding, came at length to reſide and ſettle in *Genoa*; where they were ingrafted into the Nobilitie, and had many large and goodly Priviledges granted unto them. And although they were not Naturals of that place, yet we ſhall here put them under that ſtile, as if they had been borne there. His Trafficke and in-come, whereby he maintained himſelfe, was according to the common cuſtome of that Countrey, the which for our ſinnes ſake, is growne now into ours; which infection of late, hath ſpread it ſelfe thorow the world, to wit, Uſury, Money banks, and profitable Exchange of gold and ſilver. Even for this was he perſecuted and reviled, defaming him with that foule name of Vſurer. Many times he himſelfe heard that reproachfull word; as he paſt along the ſtreets, it could not eſcape his eare, yet he was of that good nature and gentle condition, that he tooke no notice of it, but ſlightly paſt it over. For which they had no reaſon ſo to doe, ſince that Uſe-money (the more the pitie) hath beene, and is ſtill permitted thorowout the world. I will not commend it, and (God forbid) that I ſhould defend it to be lawfull (which ſome do allow) to take money for money, upon pawnes of gold or ſilver for ſome limited time, or to take (the day being broken) the forfeiture thereof, nor other cloſe trickes and conveyances: nor that which they call by the name of *Cambio ſeco*, a dry kinde of Exchange. Nor that money ſhould run from Faire to Faire, where there was never any intercourſe of men or trading: for thoſe doe but bear about them the yoyce of *Jacob*, and the hands of *Eſau*; kinde ſhewes, and rough deedes. And at the ſhooting of *Jonathan's* flight, or ſome warning-piece or other that is given, the deceit is diſcovered. But ſuch things are theſe, (though they laid them to his charge) I my ſelfe ſaw them not, and therefore cannot give you any inckling of them.

But that which is abſolutely underſtood to be *Cambio*, an Exchange or turning and winding of moneyes, is a thing indifferent, which may (as it is uſed) be either good or ill. And for ſuch (though perhaps unjuſtly) I do not wonder, that (being it ought to be eſteemed ill) it is not reproved. But that which is evidently good, being without any ſhadow of evill) that men ſhould murmure at this and ſpeake againſt it, this is that, which doth aſtoniſh me, and ſtrikes me into a ſtrange amazement. To ſay, when I ſee a religious perſon enter at midnight thorow a window into a ſuſpected place, with his ſword in his hand, and his buckler at his girdle, that he is going to miniſter the Sacrament, were a meere madneſſe: for neither God will have it ſo, nor doth his Church permit, that I ſhould be ſuch an errant Aſſe, as to thinke that to be good, which is evidently evill. When a man ſhall pray, frequent vertuous exerciſes, heare divine Service, confeſſe his ſinnes, and often communicate; for men to ſay that ſuch a one is an hypocrite, I can by no meanes indure it: and as there is nothing more ſcandalous to a good Chriſtian, ſo is there not any wickedneſſe like unto it.

My father had a faire large Maſſe-booke, with the full number of *David's* 150. Pſalmes, wherein he had beene taught to pray, (I meane in the *Spaniſh* tongue) and a great paire of Beades, whereof every one of them was as bigge as an hazell nut. Theſe my mother gave him, which came to his hands when ſhe died. Theſe he alwayes carried about him, you ſhould never ſee them out of his hand, every morning he heard his Maſſe, humbly kneeling with both his knees on the ground, his hands joyning themſelves together at his breſt, lifting them up towards Heaven, on the toppe whereof his Hat hung. Some malicious people (by way of reproach) did not ſticke to ſay, that he did pray in this manner, becauſe he would not heare the Prieſt, and that he held his Hat ſo high, becauſe he would not ſee him, But of this, let them judge, who finde themſelves free from paſſion, and let them tell me, whether it be not a perverſe and raſh cenſure, proceeding from a prophane kinde of people, that

have

have no care of their ſoules, and without any conſcience at all. But the very truth *is*, *that* the maine cauſe, and firſt beginning of their murmuring againſt him was, that a Partner of his in *Sivill*, being broken and turn'd Bankrupt, and having carried away with him great ſums of moneyes that were his, he purſued after him, as well to remedy himſelfe as well as he could of ſo great a loſſe, as alſo to order and ſettle ſome other neceſſary buſineſſes, which did much concern him.

The ſhip he went in, was ſet upon, and taken; and he together with the reſt that were in her, taken captives, and carried to *Argiers*: where, what out of feare, and what out of deſpaire; out for that he never looked to get againe his monyes; for quietneſſe ſake, as one that had not the ſpirit of contradiction, or that was wont to gaine-ſay any thing, he renounced his Religion, and turned *Turke*. There he married a *Moore*, a woman of perfect beauty, and principall rank, with whom he had good ſtore of wealth. For in matter of intereſt (taking it in the generall, in which tracke I ſtill tread without prejudice to a great number of noble perſons, and grave & principle Gentlemen; for there are of all ſorts in all places) I will onely ſpeak by the way, what I my ſelfe knew of ſome of my fathers kinred, during the time that I traded and converſed with them. They were very ſolicitous in medling with other mens houſes, and too forgetfull and careleſſe of their owne: deſirous, that other men ſhould deale plainely and truly with them, whileſt from themſelves, you ſhould not get ſo much as one true word. Willing that others ſhould pay them all that they owed, but of what they owed, to pay nothing at all: to gaine and ſpend freely, (light where it would light for them, they cared not who did wring for it) for the pawne was already forfeited, their day was paſt; and (as the Proverb is) *à Roma por todo*, at *Rome* there is an abſolution for all offences. It afterwards ſo fell out, that my fathers Partner, to ſecure himſelfe from after-claps, and to live out of danger, laboured to take order with his Creditours, and to compound for his debts, upon faire and reaſonable conditions, requiring ſuch rates and dayes of payment, as that he might both be able to live well himſelfe, as alſo to pay his debts.

When this came to my fathers eare, that had certaine and aſſured notice of it, he had great deſire to come away with all the ſecrecie and diligence he could poſſible deviſe. And the better to deceive the *Moore* his wife, hee told her, that he purpoſed to employ himſelfe in matters of Marchandize, which would turne much to their profit. He made money of moſt that he had, and putting it into Chekines, (a certaine coyne that is made of fine *Barbary* gold) taking with him all the Jewels he could finger, and ſo leaving her alone, and very poore, he came his way with all the ſpeed he could. And not making any one acquainted therewith, neither friend nor foe, reducing himſelfe to the Faith of *Ieſus Chriſt*, repenting himſelfe of his fault, with teares in his eyes, being his owne Promoter, he accuſed himſelfe, craving pardon for his offence, and that ſome favourable penance might be inflicted upon him; Which being injoyned him, and fully performed by him, he afterwards went about to recover his debts. And this was the chiefe cauſe why they would never afterwards truſt him, nor have any charitable opinion of him, were his workes never ſo good, never ſo pious. And if you aske other reaſon, you were as good hold your tongue, you ſhall get none other from them, but impertinencies and anſwers nothing to the purpoſe, ſuch as they have often made me; Once a knave, and ever a knave: *Nam qui ſemel eſt, ſemper præſumitur eſſe malus*: For he that hath once beene naught, is preſumed to be ſo ſtill; and that he will never get out of the way of wickedneſſe, that hath once made it his common walke. Not conſidering, that no man knowes how God toucheth a mans heart, and calls him home unto him, putting him againe in the right path, and whether (agreeable to that authenticke Law) he had reformed his manners or no,

Here you ſee, without leaning this or that way, or without any the leaſt inclining to any ſide, my fathers Mere-ſtones; the very limits, and bounds, that doe define and determine him; On the one ſide, ſtand (as ſupporters) his couzening Kinred, and bankrupt Copartner; on the other ſide, his owne couzening of the *Moore*. And if it be objected, that he himſelfe brake twice or thrice, having other mens goods in his hands; if they likewiſe breake with him, it is no wonder, that he ſhould not hold. For men are not made of ſteele, nor are they bound to hold like nayles: for they, even though of iron, doe ſometimes faile and burſt in ſunder, and grow weake and looſe. Theſe are your Marchants ſtratagems, their fine ſhifts of wit, which (upon occaſion) they practiſe when and where they pleaſe; eſpecially in *Spaine*, where they have found the tricke of getting. Nor is it a thing ſo much to be wondred at; there lies their skill, let it thrive as

it will: we leave that to themſelves, and their Confeſſors, to whom, I doubt not, but they give a large account of their doings. Onely God is the Judge of theſe things; and let him that abſolves them, looke what he does: I ſee many that make a common practice of it, but not a man of them, that hangs for it, if it were a delict, an evill thing, or a theft, it is a cleare caſe that it ſhould be puniſhed, ſince for leſſe than ſixe Royals, we ſee an hundred poore ſoules whipt about the towne, and ſent to the Gallies.

That I might not vent my ſelfe in my fathers prejudice, I could be content to hold my peace, and to ſilence what I thinke: but If I will follow the Philoſophers counſell, I muſt then ſay, *Amicus Plato, ſed magis amica Veritas*: *Plato* is my friend, but the truth more. I love my father well, but I muſt preſerve the Truth above all things. Conforming my ſelfe therefore to that Philoſophicall ſaying, let the world hold me excuſed, if I canonize this Caſe for one of the greateſt villanies and rogueries that was ever put in uſe, and ſuch as deſerveth exemplarie puniſhment, and that in no meane degree. But perhaps ſome one Merchant or other, that is his crafts-maſter in this kinde of trade, will tell me to my face, Hold your hand, Sir, you are a little too forward, in what Conſiſtory (I pray you) of the Pope and his Cardinals, hath Bankrupture beene determined, and condemned for a ſinne? Who will put an Ideot, a Galley-ſlave, a Rogue, to eſtabliſh Lawes, or to cenſure thoſe Trades wherein he hath no skil? But I now ſee how I have erred, in ſpeaking againſt that, which I cannot helpe, and whereof there is ſo little amendment to be expected. For I would willingly endure thy taunts, and beare thy reproaches, ſo that there might either puniſhment or remedy be given to this honourable kinde of theeving, though my owne father ſhould ſtretch for it, and give the Gallowes it's firſt handſell. Let it runne on as it doth; for the reformation of ſuch important things as theſe, and of other of greater moment, grow daylie worſe and worſe; their Cloake is falne (as it is in the Proverbe) from off their ſhoulders. But what doth this belong to me? for me to ſpeake againſt it, is to crye out upon the Woolfe, where none will come to helpe me, to ſtoppe the Sunne in its courſe, and to preach in the wilderneſſe.

But I returne to that, which they laid moſt to his charge; which was, That he was apprehended and impriſoned, for that which thou thy ſelfe ſayeſt, or that hath beene dictated unto thee by others. But for that he was rich and wealthy, and (as ſome ſay) for that he had an *Alcalde* to his father, and a Notarie to his Goſſip, he by that meanes came off, and was freed. For there were ſufficient proofes, and evidences brought againſt him; and ſuch ſuſpicions to induce belief, as might have ſerved the turne to have turned him over. But one puls me by the ſleeve, and tells me in mine eare, doe you heare Sir? Suſpicion is no proofe, and naked ſignes, are not of themſelves capable of chaſtiſement. I did looke for this concluſion from thee; aſſuring my ſelfe before-hand, that thou wouldſt take them all to be old Wives tales, when they meet at the Bake-houſe to ſet their bread into the Oven; that they are all lies, and falſe teſtimonies, maliciouſly urged againſt him. And ſeeing I have vowed, and made good one part unto thee, thou wilt not deny, but that I have reaſon to defend the other, and to give thee my reaſons for it. I ſay then, that to have *Scrivano*; or Notaries, (I may ſo terme them) to be a mans Goſſips, is a bare title, that onely ſuites it ſelfe according to the Money, where-with every one wageth Law. For in blearing the ſight, and picking a mans purſe before his face, ſome have the ſoule and conſcience of your Gypſies, and will make of Juſtice a matter of juggling, with a hyepaſſe, and repaſſe, come off *Jacke* with a whim-wham; ordering things ſo, as they ſhall thinke good, and may make moſt for their profit, ſo that it ſhall neither be in the power of the Plaintiffe or defendant to impeache it, nor in the Advocate to diſpute the right, nor in the Judge to ſentence it.

And leſt that I ſhould chance to forget it, I pray you hearken by the way to that, which in the Church of *S. Gil*, in *Madrid*, was delivered to the Lords of the ſupreme Councell, by a learned, Preacher, upon a certaine Friday in Lent. By way of diſcourſe, he ranne thorow all the miniſters of Juſtice, till he came to the *Scrivano*, or Notary or Regiſter, (or what in that kinde you pleaſe to call him) which purpoſely he forbore to ſpeake of, as reſerving that diſh for the laſt ſervice, & then with theſe words, he ſet it before them: Here my Cart ſtickes faſt, & is ſo clogged with durt and myre, and ſo furrounded & wedged in, as it were, on every ſide with filth & mucke, that I know not in the world how to get it out unleſſe the Angell of God returne once againe to the fiſh-poole. I confeſſe (my Lords) that for theſe thirty yeeres & upwards, I have ſeene and heard the Confeſſions of many ſinners; who having falne into one ſinne, have falne againe many times into the ſame. And yet all theſe, (by God's helpe, & his goodneſſe and mercy towards them) have reformed both their lives and conſciences, and become

become good livers, and haye all put on amendment. The Wencher that hath lyen at rack and manger,& ſtood at continuall Livery,Time,and a filthy Queane hath tam'd him.The Gamester, a maſter of a Dicing houſe,orKeeper of anOrdinary,makes him in the end to ſee his error;who like aHorſe-leech,goes from one to another ſucking by little & little their blood from them. To day thou winneſt,to morrow thou loſeſt; the money runnes round , and ſtill it remaineth; but they that play , I am ſure remaine without it. The famouſeſt Thiefe , feare and ſhame reformeth. The raſh Railer , the Palſie , for which few eſcape. The proud man , his owne miſerie doth diſ-deceive him,being conſcious to himſelfe, that he is but dirt. The Lyer, the ill language , and the affronts , which are daily caſt in his teeth , put a bridle upon his tongue. The unadviſed Blaſphemer, the continuall reprehenſions of his friends and kinsfolkes correct & amend him. All theſe, either early or late,at one time or another,reape ſome fruit & caſt off (like the Snake)their old skinne,although perhaps (within) they wring hard for it.

In all and every one of theſe have I found ſome markes,and ſignes of their ſalvation: Onely in the Scrivener,I miſſe in my account, and am quite out of my reckoning, nor doe I finde in him any amendment at all;but is juſt the ſame man to day,that he was yeſterday;this yeere, as he was thirty yeeres ſince; for he is ſtill one and the ſelfe-ſame man : Nor do I know to whom, or how he confeſſeth, nor who abſolveth him: (I ſpeake of him, who doth not faithfully exerciſe his Office) for they informe, and write downe that, which they thinke fit, and for two ducats,or to pleaſure a friend, or to do a ſhee creature a courteſie (for your mantles, are great medlers, and your Women not the worſt ſolicitours : ) they take away this mans life, that mans honour , and a third mans wealth ; ſetting the gate wide open to an infinite number of ſinnes , in their unſatiable covetouſneſſe , in their canine and dogge-like appetite, through the heat of that infernall fire that is in their ſoule : which makes them to ſwallow downe without chewing , bee it good or bad ; right, or wrong , another mans goods. And becauſe ever and anon,upon every ſlight occaſion, they take that which is not their due ; and for that the money, that is put into the palmes of their hands , their fiſt being well greaſed therewith, is in an inſtant converted into fleſh and bloud, and incorporated into one and the ſelfe-ſame ſubſtance with themſelves ; they have no more power to caſt it off from them, than they have to ſhake off the World , or the devill, who ſit ſo cloſe unto them , that they can hardly be removed. So that it ſeemeth unto me, that when any ſuch is ſaved, (for it cannot be that all ſhould be ſuch , as I have here taken upon me to treat of) at his entrance into glory , the Angels fulfilled with joy , will cry out one to another , *Latamini in Domino*. A Scrivener come into Heaven, new fruit, new. For Scriveners are not *poma Paradiſi* , ſuch fruit growes not there : And with this he ended his Sermon. But let it paſſe and goe for currant, that ſome good may be wrought upon a Scrivener , and that there may be ſome hope his ſoule may be ſaved,by changing his former courſe of life : yet for all this, fall backe, fall edge , goe which way you will to work with him , he will be not enough able to anſwer for himſelfe, by laying an excuſe upon his faults ( for iron alſo may bee guilded ) and then will he tell you that theſe are the rates of old , and that they take no more but their wonted fees , that victuals and other things grow ſtill dearer and dearer , and the meanes to maintaine them,worſe and worſe : That the Kings rents and prices are variable; that they had not their Offices for nothing, but payd ſoundly for them;and therefore muſt licke himſelfe whole as well as he can,ſaving himſelfe harmeleſſe out of other mens gettings : And that there is no reaſon but that he ſhould be well payd for the imployment of his perſon,& his paines taking. This hath been the courſe of all ages , and for ought I ſee,is like ſtill ſo to continue. Howbeit *Ariſtotle* tels us ; That the greateſt wrong that can be offered to a Common-wealth , is the ſale of Offices.

And *Cleomenes* the *Spartane* , being demanded how a Kingdome might come to be happy, made anſwer,When a King ſhould not reſpect his private profit. But for a Judge that comes freely by his place,to whom they have given the*Title of gracious Lord*,in hope that he will doe the office of *God*,which is,to doe Juſtice,& to ſhew Mercy,(& therefore are called Gods upon earth)that to ſuch an one it ſhould be imputed,that he ſells Juſtice;omitting to puniſh the bad, and to reward the good,and that he will ſalve and cover a fault in a lewd fellow,or ſave a notorious offender from the gallowes;I abſolutely deny it,& prove this my propoſition by plaine and evident Reaſons. For who can thinke,that there ſhould be in the world a Judge ſo ill, ſo unorderly , ſo impudent and ſo ſhameleſſe ( for ſuch an one muſt he be , that will do ſuch things) though a mountaine of gold ſhould make his Mace,or rod of Juſtice to bend,& compell him to breake the Law ? Howbeit,there are ſome abroad in the world, who ſticke not to ſay,that this ſuing for Offices, and ſeates of Juſtice, goes by certaine indirect pathes, and by-

wayes,

wayes, unuſuall courſes out of the common track, and unaccuſtomed; or (to ſpeak more properly) by falſe reports and forged Relations, whereof they make benefit, and grow thereby into great Eſtates. And after that they once grow warme in their places, and ſee that they are ſurely ſetled in them, they then make up their ſtocke againe, and ſet up for themſelves, and begin to play their prizes, raking and ſcraping at whatſoever comes within their reach; like unto the *Polypus*, or Cuttle Fiſh, that hath many clawes (like ſo many Wiers) to catch his prey. There is not a pore or joynt in all his body, but is either a mouth to ſwallow, or a paw to take hold, if you once come within his clutches. Here he ſeizeth on Wheat, there on Barley; here Wine, there Oile, beſides flitches of Bacon, cloathes both wollen and linnen, ſilkes of all ſorts, Jewels, Money, from the Hangings in the dining Chamber, to ſtoope ſo low as the ſpice-box in the Kitchin; from the Maſters bed, to the Mules cratch; from the pureſt Wheat in the granary, to the very Straw and Chaffe that lies at the Barnes doore, chooſing rather to play at ſmall game, than to ſit out. From which terrible griping, and violent hold-faſt, nothing can un-hitch them but deaths fleſh-hooke. For, when the hand takes a bribe, and they once begin to be corrupted, there is no ho with them, they are marred for ever after by an evill uſe, and never come to be good. And ſo they receive with open hand all manner of bribes, as if they were men in pay, and what they wrongfully take, were true wages, and lawfull fees. So, that they obſerve not juſtice, they wink at theeves, becauſe they offer unto them the firſt fruits and tithes of their thefts: they have gotten the favour of ſome Courtier, to beare them out in that, which they have bought for their money: whereupon they relying, caſt away all feare of wreſting & perverting Juſtice.

Thus is it, in all your Officers of Juſtice, as well with your royall Merchant, as your Retayler; your *Alcalde*, as your *Alguazil*; your Judge, as your Petty-fogger; with him that ſelleth in groſſe, as him that ſelleth by retayle; your Juſticer is the Merchant, your Petty-fogger, the Pedler. (And for their better thriving in the World) every one hath his *bonus Genius*, or Angell of guard, either bought out-right for his money, (or at leaſt ſo ſetled upon him, that it can hardly be alienated from him,) for thoſe impertinent neceſſities of the body; beſides that, which God hath given them for thoſe that import the ſoule. So that they have two *Genii*, (as men for the more ſurety will have two ſtrings to their Bow:) The Court *Genius*, which is the Protector of their bodily goods, and Gods good Angell, that is, the Protector of their ſoules.

So that out of all this, you ſee ſomething may be gathered, & happily a great part of it too true; yet for all this, we muſt not hence preſume to coclude of all: But he that ſhall fall through covetouſneſſe into the like baſeneſs, which perhaps may be one of a thouſand, and the ſame ſome baſe-born ſlave, an ill-bred fellow, or of a vile and abject minde, thou needeſt not wiſh him greater harme, or worſe miſ-fortune, than hath already lighted upon him; for he carries with him his owne chaſtiſement; He is pointed at (where-ever he goes) with the finger; he is murmured at by men; he is abhorred of the Angels, and both in publike and in private, hath every mans mouth againſt him: yet muſt we not for their ſakes condemne the reſt, or thinke all to be made of the ſame lumpe. And if ſome particular perſon finde himſelfe agrieved, and complaine, that he hath received hard meaſure, wiſe men will conſider (as a thing to be neceſſarily preſuppoſed) that ſuits of Law, being in number ſo infinite; in nature ſo differing; and in their ends ſo diverſe and difficile to be decided, it is not poſſible that one judgement ſhould content both ſides; or one Judge (though never ſo indifferent) pleaſe both parties. There will (while the World ſtands) be ſome quarrellous men, either with, or without reaſon, have they cauſe, or not cauſe. Therefore thou muſt firſt weigh, and conſider well with thy ſelfe, that theſe things, (I meane your Law-ſuites) will require a great deale of care, a great deale of skill, and a great deale of cunning. And if thou be wanting to thy ſelfe in theſe thy diligences, and take not the right courſe, the blame will lye in thy ſelfe. Nor is it any marvell, *Que pierdas tu derecho, no ſabiendo hazer tu hecho*: That for want of good information, thou ſhouldeſt loſe thy right, & miſcarry in thy ſuite, ſo that the fault is not ſo much the Judges, as thine owne. But that the Judge ſhould deny to doe Juſtice, becauſe many times he does not give ſentence on his ſide, who perſwades himſelfe that he is in the right, it is becauſe he failes peradventure in his prooſes, or for that his Adverſary made a bad cauſe good, and the other a good cauſe bad, by the evill carriage of the buſineſſe. (For much advantage doth conſiſt in the handling of a cauſe.) Or elſe through the negligence of the party; or for that he wants meanes and money to follow his ſuite; or for that his oppoſite is too powerfull for him. And therefore it is not good to taxe Judges, much leſſe thoſe that are ſeated in thoſe higher Thrones, and ſuperiour Tribunall ſeates, where there are many good and choiſe men, even the

beſt

beſt that the Kingdome affordeth. And ſuppoſe, ſome one Judge or other out of paſſion, would raſhly and unadviſedly precipitate himſelfe, nor caring which end went forward (be it right, or be it wrong,) yet the reſt will not doe ſo, they beare a better minde, and will not ſticke to withſtand him to his face.

I remember that a *Labvador* in *Granada*, a good crafty Clowne, did (for his own private profit) follow a ſuite very hard in open Court againſt the Lord of the Towne where he dwelt. Thinking with himſelfe, that he had to doe with *Pero Creſpo*, the townes *Alcalde*, or Conſtable (if I may ſo ſtile him) of the Pariſh, and that he could have drawn the *Oydores*, or Judges (appointed to heare his cauſe) by the eares, and led them along as he liſted; ſtanding one day in the *Placa nueva*, or the new Market-place, gazing hard, and looking buſily on the Porch, by which you enter into the *Chancery*, which is one of the famouſeſt buildings (for its bigneſſe) that is in all *Spaine*; and whereunto (for not onely the curiouſneſſe of the Arches and Vaults, but for the faire carriage of buſineſſe) there is not any in theſe times known to be equall unto it: after he had well viewed it, he perceived that the Kings Armes that were placed in the Frontiſpiece, had for its two Supporters, *Juſtice*, and *Fortitude*. Another Countrey fellow of his acquaintance, ſeeing him ſtand thus gaping, as if he had nothing to doe, asked him why he did not go in to ſolicite his buſineſſe? He told him, I begin to thinke with my ſelfe that theſe things are not for me, and therefore I could wiſh my ſelfe at home againe. Why (quoth his friend?) Why ſaid he? becauſe *Juſtice* is here ſeated ſo high, that it is in vain for me to look to have her ſtoope unto me, and I am not able to reach up unto her, and therefore would I were well at home.

It is no marvell then (as I ſaid before) that a Judge doe not *Juſtice* now and then to ſome men, though they have Law on their ſide; but it would ſeem ſomewhat ſtrange, that a man ſhould have a ſentence goe on his ſide, and hath not wit to defend his cauſe. But my Father found ſentence in his favour, becauſe he had been beaten to thoſe kinde of buſineſſes, and knew the trace of them, and was well able to hold plea. Beſides, when he had the torment given him, and was put (as we here tearme it) upon the rack, he cleared himſelfe of thoſe imputations that were laid upon him, & attainted thoſe witneſſes that were brought againſt him of publicke malice, proving that they had depoſed againſt him upon idle & vaine preſumptions, and upon weak and feeble grounds.

But here (me thinkes) I heare a Murmurer mutter forth his malice, telling me, That my Father had a very ill report: That he curled his haire, painted his face, and did divers other things, which I paſſe over with ſilence, and willingly omit to ſpeake of: That monies were ſtill ſtirring and came tumbling in on every ſide, beſides gifts and preſents, which coming from two oppoſite parties,, continually croſſed one another. Whereunto I may adde the ſolicitation of Women, who are not the worſt Advocates, or the leaſt importunate Suitors. All which put together, leave ſuch a thorne or ſting in my finger, that I dare not touch upon them. O thou man of malediction, thou doeſt preſſe me too too hard, thou doeſt weary and tyre me out; I purpoſe this bout onely, to give thee the beſt ſatisfaction I can, and not to anſwer any more to thy replyes; for it were but to proceed in *infinitum*, and never to make an end, to waite upon thy Sophiſtries, and frivolous queſtions. And therefore I doe not tell thee that thou ſhooteſt at randome, ſpeakeſt *non ſequitur:*, and ſuch like things, wherein thou canſt not prevaile as thou wouldſt, nor make thy part good; foraſmuch as the truth thereof is otherwiſe already determined. Yet when ſuites go thus, they give occaſion of much miſlike and offence; but there is no remedy, and we muſt be contented with it, as things that cannot ſometimes be poſſibly avoided: But God deliver thee from ſuch a Judge, *qui habet Legem in ſcrinio pectoris*, that interpreteth the Law as he liſteth himſelfe, and as his owne conceit ſhall lead him, having neither Text, nor Doctor on his ſide to make good that he doth; and from a Notarie, that is thine enemy, or any other of thoſe kinde of creatures, that are bribed; for they will falſify orders for their profit, and regiſter things otherwiſe than they were reported in Court. But in caſe thou wilt be carried away with opinion, and the voyce of the vulgar, (which is evermore the weakeſt and leaſt true, according to the ſubject from whence it comes) tell me, not out of the peoples talke, (whereunto little credit is to be given) but to ſpeak like a wiſe man, (out of thine own diſcretion and judgement, (whether all that which thou haſt ſaid be ſufficient to prove that my father was (undoubtedly) faulty.

Beſides, if it be the received opinion of ſome Phyſitians, that the uſing of Complexions and ſuch like ſlibber-ſlabbers, is a kind of infirmity and ſickneſſe in it ſelfe, who can ſay, whether my father were ſound or no? And as for your curling of pates, criſping of hairs, & other grea-

ter

ter diſhoneſties, and unſeemelier ſights than theſe, I doe not commend them nor allow of thoſe, who permits them in *Spaine*.

But that which I ſaw with mine owns eyes, for that time that I knew him, and was converſant with him, I am able to tell thee what manner of man my Father was. He was of a faire complexion, ruddy, well coloured, clean and ſoft was the graine of his skinne, and his haire curled, which on my conſcience was naturall unto him: He had a full eye, and that full of life, reſembling in colour the watry *Turquoys*. He wore a fore-top, and thoſe his Lockes, which over-ſpread his Temples, to give them the greatet grace, curled themſelves into rings of haires. And if God had given him theſe colours, as proper to him, was it fit (thinke you) that he ſhould beſoot his face with the ſame paintings? or is it likely, that he ſhould make ſuch ſleight reckoning of theſe faire pledges of *Gods* goodneſſe, and imbrace ſuch counterfeit ſtuffe to the ill example of others? But if it be true, as thou ſaiſt, that he made uſe of oyntments, greaſie ingredients, ſlabber ſawces, gals of Beaſts, and the like artifices, and that thoſe teeth & hands, which did ſo much commend him, that all is, I ſay, ſhould be done by the vertue of certaine Powders, Oxe-gals, Lees, Letherings, and other ſuch fluttiſh and beaſtly confections, I ſhall then ingeniouſly acknowledge whatſoever thou ſhalt ſay of him, and ſhall be a capitall enemy not onely to him, but to all thoſe that ſhall practice the like, For beſides that they are effeminate actions,, fitting onely wanton wenches, and light huſwives, they give occaſion to men to murmure againſt them, and breed a juſt ſuſpition of baſeneſs in the vileſt degree, when they ſhall ſee them thus daubed over with clay, and wholly compoſed of thoſe things, that are onely permitted unto Women; who, becauſe they have no ſufficient beauty of themſelves, borrow it from paintings, and varniſhings, to the great coſt, both of their health, and purſe. And (which to ſee, is a thouſand pitties) that your foule, and worſt favoured women, are not onely thoſe that do this, but even your faireſt, and thoſe that are moſt beholding to Nature: who thinking thereby to ſeeme fairer, and to make Nature appeare more lovely in Arts dreſſing, begin this worke betimes in the morning in their bed, and finiſh it at noone, when the Cloath is laid, So that I ſay, (and not without reaſon) *Que la muger, quanto mas mirare la cara, tanto mas diſtruye la caſa*: That a woman, the more curious ſhe is about her face, the more careleſſe ſhe is about her houſe, the repairing of the one, being the ruine of the other. If this then (even in women) be blame-worthy, how much more ſhall it be in men? O filthineſs, above all other filthineſſe! O affront, above all other affronts that God having given thee one face, thou ſhouldſt abuſe his Image, and make thy ſelfe another. Thou canſt not twit me in the teeth, that my love to my father hath blinded me, or that my naturall affection to my Countrey hath bribed me, nor ſhalt thou ever find me out of reaſon, or in ought I ſhall ſay, to ſwerve from the truth. But if there be any diſcharge or ſatisfaction in a thing that is evill, I will tell thee one curioſity, becauſe it falls out pat for this place, and did ſucceed all, as it were about one and the ſelfe-ſame time. To thee it will ſerve for counſell; to me for comfort, as a common evill, that goes not without his fellowes.

In the Yeare 1512. (a little before *Ravenna* was ſak't) there were cruell warres in *Italy*. And in this very City, (I meane *Ravenna*) there was borne a ſtrange Monſter, which did ſtrike the beholders into great admiration, and cauſed much wonder. He had from the girdle upward all his whole body, face, and head, like unto a man, ſaving that he had one horne in his forehead: he wanted his armes, but inſtead thereof, Nature had given him two wings, like a Bat; he had figured in his breſt the *Pythagoricall* (Y.) and in his ſtomacke downe to his belly, a well formed Croſſe, or Crucifix. He was an *Hermophradite*, both thoſe two natural Sexes being in a very proportionable manner well and truly formed: he had no more but one thigh, and to it one legge with its foot like a Kites, and the tallons anſwerable thereunto. In the knotty part, or locking joynt of the knee, he had one onely eye. Theſe monſtroſities and unnaturall ſhapes poſſeſſed mens mindes with extraordinary admiration; and thoſe that were learned men, and great Schollers, conſidering with themſelves, that ſuch monſters in nature were uſually prodigious, and did foretoken ſome ſtrange effects, did beate their braines, and exercile the ſtrength of their wit, in the ſpeculation and ſearch of the ſignification thereof, and what this ſtrange Monſter might portend. And amongſt many other that were given, only this that followeth, was well received amongſt them: That the horne did ſignifie Pride, and Ambition; the wings Inconſtancy and Lightneſſe: want of armes, want of good workes: the foot of that bird of Rapine, Theft, Uſury, and Avarice: the eye in the knee, affection to vanities and worldly things: the two Sexes, Sodomy, and beaſtly filthineſſe; in all which vices, all *Italy* did then abound. For the which God did ſcourge them with that his whip of Wars and diſſentions. But the Croſſe and the Y were good and fortunate ſignes; for the Y in

the

the breſt did ſignifie Vertue; and the Croſſe on the belly, that if men (ſuppreſſing their diſhoneſt luſts of the fleſh) ſhould imbrace vertue in their breſts, God would give them peace, ſweeten his diſpleaſure, and abate his wrath.

You ſee here (in a caſe prohibited) that when the whole current ran with a troubled water, my father followed along with the ſtreame, and did as others did, and was not the ſole and onely offender. And therefore more worthy ſhalt thou be of blame, if thou ſhalt offend, having beene brought up in a Schoole of Chriſtianity, and taught by example what to avoyd. God lend us his helping hand, that we may not fall into other the like miſeries: for all of us, even the beſt of us, we are but men.

## CHAPTER. II.

*Guzman de Alfarache goes on, in recounting who were his Parents, and declareth withall who his mother was; and for our better inſtruction deſcribes the evil conditions, and bad qualities of a lewd woman, of Bawdes; of a ſenſuall and luſcivious man, and that the end of diſhoneſt Love, is the waſting of a mans honour, of his wealth, and of himſelfe.*

BUT that I may return againe to my Story, I told you before, (if my memory do not fail me) that (having performed his penance) my father came to *Sevill* for to recover his debt; whereupon Law was waged, many offers made either to give or take; ſome demands, and ſome anſwers: and if he had not thorowly purged himſelfe for his health, and found an evaſion; that is, if he had not well cleared himſelfe of being a *Renegado*, it would have broken out upon him into the ſcurfe of the head, or the ſcratches in the paſternes; the fat had lien in the fire, and he had beene quite blowne up. But he had wrought ſuch a cure upon himſelfe, and handled the buſineſſe ſo handſomely, that they could not catch hold of him for having the Leproſie, or the dry ſcab. All things were ſo well made up, that they could not finde a hole in his coate, or make any marke or white, to ſhoot at him; ſo well he was provided for all comers. Meanes were uſed on both ſides, compoſition offered, but not accepted; the one being unwilling to pay all, the other is loth to loſe all. Of this ſpilt water, he gathered up as much as he could, making the beſt of a bad bargain. And with that which came to his ſhare (be it what it will) it ſo well ſerved his turne, that the cards once more were delt round againe, and he came into very good play. His incomes were ſuch, and his lucke ſo great, that in a very ſhort time, he gained not onely wherewithall to dine, but alſo to ſup. He built him a pretty handſome houſe, he ſought to plant and ſettle himſelfe in thoſe parts, he bought him land of inheritance: he had a Garden in *San Juan de Alfarache*, a neat one it was, and of much recreation and pleaſure, diſtant from *Sevill* little more than halfe a League; whither many dayes, eſpecially in the Summer time, he went for his paſſe-time, and made many banquets. It hapqened, that the Merchants made a Burſe or Pawne for their contractations at the ſtayers of the great Church, (like that of Saint *Felipe* at *Madrid*) with a place to walke in, which went round about it, having a Parapet or wall breſt-high on the outſide of it, to ſeparate it from the open ſtreet, girt in with great Marble pillars, and ſtrong chains of iron. My father walking there with other Merchants, there chanced a Chriſtening to paſſe by. And (as the talke there went) this childe was ſaid to be the ſecret ſonne, or to ſpeake plaine Engliſh) baſtard to a certaine perſon, that ſhall be nameleſſe. My father followed in the tayle of the troope, and entred in after them even to the very Font, for to ſee and view my mother, who with a certaine old Knight of the military habit, (who for to maintaine the honour of his Order, lived by the Rents of the Church) were Partners in this Ceremony: it was a mettall'd thing, a luſty lively wench, yet graye enough withall; her carriage was very graceſull, and full of courteſie, her ſelfe young, beautifull, diſcreet, modeſt and of a well compoſed & ſettled behaviour. Her handſome feature needs no other commender than it ſelfe. He ſtood ſteddily looking upon her, all the while that the Exerciſe of that Sacrament gave him leave ſo to doe, being aſtoniſh'd to behold ſo rare a beauty, if not beſotted with it. For, to that her naturall beauty of face, and feature of body, (without any tricking or painting at all) all was ſo curious and fitly placed thorow that whole frame of nature, that one part helping another, and all put together into one piece, did make ſuch a delicate contexture, that no penſill can reach to expreſſe it's perfection; nor imagination conceive, how to make it better. The parts, and faſhion of my father, I have already largely laid open unto you: this goodly creature, (for they ſeeme gods and not men, who are not touched with naturall affections) began to perceive his earneſt eying of her, and did not a little rejoyce in it, howſoever ſhe did diſſemble it. For there is not any woman, (though

(though never ſo proud, be ſhe of high or low degree) but does take comfort, and chucke for joy, to be beheld and looked upon with an hungry eye, be the man never ſo baſe, never ſo meane. Their eies being their interpreters, though their tongues were ſilent, ſpake plain language each to other: manifeſting by them their hearts; for ſoules on ſuch occaſions do not admit of maskes, neither will willing minds yeeld to the veile and muffler. For that time, there paſſed no more betwixt them, nor ought elſe done, ſave onely that he came to know, that ſhe was that Knights Pawne, his jewel, his delight, a morſell that he kept for his owne mouth, over whom he was wondrous wary, and ſo tenderly affected, that he could ſcarce endure to have her out of his ſight: In fine, this Gentlewoman went directly home to her houſe, and my father was at his wits end, not knowing in the world how to put her out of his mind. He uſed, that he might come to the ſight of her againe, many extraordinary diligences: but, unleſſe when ſhe went forth to Maſſe upon ſome ſolemne Feaſt-dayes, he could not otherwiſe ſee her for a long time together.

The often falling drop hollowes the hardeſt ſtone that is; and ſtedfaſt perſeverance ſtill gets the victory: for continuance crowneth our actions, and diſpoſeth them to their intended ends. He ploddeth ſo long on the matter, that he found out a tricke to ſerve his turne; uſing the meanes of a good old beldame; a reverent Matron forſooth, an honeſt Bawd, one of my charitable Aunts; for ſuch miniſters as theſe doth the Devill ſet a-work, and imploy in his ſervice; with which ſecret Mynes, he overturnes the ſtrongeſt towers of the chaſteſt woman: for that they may better themſelves in their rayment, ſeeking to gaine a widowes habit, a Huke, or a Mantle, and that their little Caskets may be ſtored with Boxes of Marmalet; there is no treachery which they will not attempt; no filthineſſe, which they will not ſolicite, no bloud, which they will not draw forth, no chaſtity, which they will not ſpot, no cleanneſſe, which they will not fully, no wickedneſſe, which they will not bring to paſſe. This good creature then, being courted by him with words, and rewarded by him with deeds, went and came to & fro with papers: And becauſe the Principles, as they are the firſt, ſo the hardeſt to learn, and becauſe the greateſt difficulty conſiſts in the beginning, and for that, Loaves go aſide, if they be not well ſet into the Oven, ſhe moulded the buſineſſe well, uſing the beſt ſleights ſhe had. And becauſe my father had heard of old, That money levelleth the greateſt difficulties, and makes all things plain and eaſie, he did ever manifeſt his faith by his works, becauſe they ſhould not condemne it to be dead and fruitleſſe. He was never negligent, nor yet no niggard. He began (as I told you by this womans hand, to ſow the ſeeds of his love, and prodigally to ſpend upon my mother, and they both, very willingly, and very cheerefully, are ready to receive all. And becauſe unto goodneſs, gratitude is ſo due a debt, and that he, who receiveth, is bound to a requitall, and every courteſie deſerves its acknowledgement. This good mother of miſchiefe did play her part ſo well, grew ſuch a good Solicitor, and followed the buſineſſe ſo cloſe, that her diligence, meeting in a happy conjuncture with the forwardneſs of my Mothers will, ſhe ſtill went adding more fuell to the fire; and of a little light ſtubble, raiſed in a ſhort time a terrible flame. As we ſee many times jeſting turned into earneſt; and things fall often to end in ſober ſadneſſe, which at the firſt, were but begun in jeſt.

My Mother (as ye have already heard) was a diſcreet woman; faine ſhe would, but durſt not; ſhe had a good mind to the buſineſſe, but yet ſhe was afraid: ſhe was ſometimes on, ſometimes off; her own heart was the Oracle of her deſires; with that ſhe conſulted often what were beſt to doe. And thus diſputing *pro* and *con* with her ſelfe, *ya lo tenia de la haz, ya delennes*. Sometimes (as we ſee in the handling of Stuffes, or of Cloth) ſhe was on the right, ſometimes on the wrong: one while ſhe would put on a full reſolution to doe thus and thus; by and by againe, ſhe would turne to a new Conjugation, and vary the Mood ſhe was in before. In concluſion, whom will not ſilver win? whom will not gold corrupt? This Knight was an elderly man, much ſubject to ſpitting, ſpalling, and coughing, he was troubled with the Stone, with ſharpneſſe of his Vrine, and other the like infirmities: ſhe had ſeene him full oft by her ſweet ſide in the naked bed; where he did not appeare the man my father was, he had not that vigour, nor livelineſſe, nor that handſomneſſe of ſhape and proportion. And beſides, obſerve it while you live, and you ſhall evermore finde it to be true, That long acquaintance, and much converſation, (where Gods feare is not) breeds weariſomneſſe, and loathſomneſſe at the laſt. Novelties pleaſe all, eſpecially women, who are lovers of ſlim-flam-tales, and for the receiving and returning of newes; like unto *Materia prima*, which never ceaſeth to deſire and ſeeke after new Forms. She was reſolved to have forſaken the old Knight, to ſhift her of her old clothes, to change her ſmocke, and was fully bent to fly out, and to break looſe, whatſoever came of it; but her great wiſedome, and long experience, which was hereditary

eary unto her, and ſuckt from her mothers teat, opened the way, and preſented unto her an ingenious reſolution. And queſtionleſſe, the feare of looſing her penſion, kept her alooſe off, the thought whereof much perplexed her for the preſent, who otherwiſe was of herſelfe well egged forward, and had a good minde to the game. For what leſſon my Father read but once unto her, the Devill repeated the ſame ten times over; ſo that it was no ſuch great matter now to winn *Troy*; there was likelihood enough to take it in leſſe than ten yeares.

My good mother caſt up her account, and made this reckoning with herſelfe: In this particular, my perſon loſeth nothing, I ſell no houſhould ſtuffe, I waſt none of my goods: and though in this kind, I affoord much kindneſſe to others, I am therein like unto the Candle, or the Sunne in its brightneſſe, though I lend light unto others, I have nothing the leſſe my ſelfe: I ſhall not want a whit in my eſtate, but be rather ſtill at the full. Of whom I have received ſo many courteſies, ſo many gifts, it is fit, I ſhould in ſome ſort ſhew my ſelfe thankfull, and not be ſparing to him, that hath beene ſo bountifull to me, ſhall I be covetous, when he is ſo liberall? God forbid. I am now reſolved what to do: I will ſow my bagge at both ends, my jawes ſhall grind on both ſides, my chaps ſhall walke every way; and the better to ſecure my ſhip, I will have two anchors to one bottome; that if I ſhould chance to loſe the one, I might ſtill have another remaining to ſerve my turne. And if the manſion houſe ſhould chance to fall, yet if the Dove-houſe hold up, if that ſtand faſt, we ſhall lacke no Pigeons, as long as there is a Lover-hole for the poore fooles to get in at.

Having taken theſe things into her conſideration, ſhe treated with this her bawdy Embaſſadreſſe, how, and what it might be; the manner, how; and the time when: but finding (after long conſultation) that it was impoſſible to effect her deſires in her owne houſe, and that there was no good to be done at home, for to enjoy each other freely, and to take that fulneſs of content, which muſt ſatisfie the hungry mawes of greedy Lovers, amongſt many other ſhifts and tricks, and very good and witty devices, and ſtrange plots, which they had laid their heads about, for the better ſucceſſe in the buſineſſe, they made choiſe of this which followeth.

The Spring had ſo farre advanced it ſelfe, that *May* was in its ending, and the Summer was now making its entrance. And the Village of *Gelves*, and that of *San Juan de Alfarache*, are now the ſweeteſt and the pleaſanteſt of all that bordering Territory, none thereabouts was like unto them; beſides the fertileneſſe and goodneſſe of the ſoyle (which is all one with that of *Sevill*, as next neighbouring unto it) which that river of *Guadalquiber*, makes the more famous, whoſe watry gullets purling along the banks, inrich and adorne all thoſe gardens and fields that confine thereupon: ſo that with reaſon (if there may be a knowne Paradiſe upon earth) ſurely the name thereof properly appertaines to this particular ſeate: So fairely is it ſet forth with ſhadow-caſting trees, ſo beautified with curious bowres, ſo richly inamel'd with ſundry ſorts of flowers, ſo abounding with ſavoury fruits, ſo accompanied with ſilver-running ſtreames, with cleere ſprings, glaſſe-labour-ſaving fountaines, freſh ayres, and delightſome ſhades, wherein the beames of the Sunne are at that time denied their entrance, and have not permiſſion ſo much as once to peepe in. At one of theſe retiring roomes of recreation, my mother agreed with her marriage-maker, her *ſine qua non*; and ſome of the people of her houſe, to come one day thither to make merry. And albeit the place whither they were to goe, was not that which my father was owner of, but was ſomewhat beyond it, neerer unto *Gelves*; yet of force they muſt, to go thither, paſſe cloſe by our doore.

Upon this care taken, and former agreement concluded between them, juſt about the time that ſhe was to come neere unto our Garden gate, my Mother began preſently to complaine of a ſudden and grievous paine in her ſtomacke, imputing the cauſe thereof to the coldneſſe of the morning, and the freſhneſſe of the weather, and did ſo cunningly diſſemble the pangs and griping ſhe endured, that they were faine to take her down from her *Xamuga*, which for her more eaſe in her journey, was borne by a pretty little, but ſure-footed *Sardinian* Aſſe. She feigned ſuch extremities of torture, made ſuch pittifull faces, and ſuch wofull geſtures (holding her hands as hard as ſhe could for her life upon her belly, cruſhing and wringing it with all the might and maine ſhe could:) then would ſhe let them looſe againe, then claſpe them together, and wring each finger through anguiſh of her pain: other-while ſhe would hang the head, as if ſhe were fainting and ready to ſwoune; and that fit paſt, fetching a deep ſigh or two, ſhe fell to untacing and unbracing herſelfe, that all that were about her (ſave thoſe that were privie to the plot) did verily beleeve that ſhe was wonderfully and mightily tormented, that ſhee made them to melt into teares, and to have a com-

paſſionate feeling of this her affliction. Diverſe paſſengers in the *interim* chanced to come by, and every one propoſed his remedy; ſo many men, ſo many medicines; but becauſe they knew not for the preſent where to have the things that ſhould be applyed; nor where to have a fit place for to miniſter unto her, their medicines were impertinent, and to no purpoſe in the World. To goe backe unto the Citie, it was impoſſible; to go further forward, dangerous; and to abide thus in the high-way, not commodious. Her Fits increaſed, all ſtood amazed, as not knowing what to doe, nor what courſe to take. At laſt, one amongſt the reſt that was there (who was laid there for the purpoſe) breakes me in amongſt them, and as he paſſes the preſſe, cries, Roome for the paſſion of God, make way there, ſtand further off, leſt you ſtifle her for want of aire. Come, let us take her and remove her out of the high-way; it were cruelty not to ſeek to cure her, and a thouſand pities, that ſo ſweet a creature ſhould be caſt away, for want of care and good looking to. Come, let us take her in our armes, and put her into this Grrden-houſe here hard by, in this caſe we muſt be content to take that which comes next to hand.

All approved what he ſaid, his motion was applauded, and ſo generally well liked, that it was preſently concluded amongſt them; That untill that Fit were over-paſt, they ſhould crave leave of thoſe that kept the houſe, to give her entrance, not doubting but ſhe would be much the better, if they could be but ſo happy as once to get her within the doores. They knockt hard and thick, (as men uſe to doe when they are in haſte;) the good Woman that kept the houſe made ſhow, as if ſhe thought her Maſter had been there: and as ſhee came waddling along, bawled to her ſelfe: O good God, is it you, Maſter? O ſweet Jeſus! I pray be not angry that I came no ſooner, I was very buſie, I could not do withall, I came as ſoone as I could; Theſe and the like excuſes, her unprofitable chaps mumbled to herſelfe.

The old Hag knew well enough what ſhe had to doe, ſhe might goe in the ranke of thoſe rude Countrey wenches, that make curtſey, and cry *No chero, no ſabo*; No forſooth not I, I am a poor ſilly old Woman, ſeeming as if ſhe could not ſay B. to a battle-doore; yet was ſhee a diſſembling Hilding, a craſty old Carrion, one that had learned her leſſon before-hand, & received her inſtructions from my father, ſo that ſhe was well prepared for the buſineſſe. Beſides, ſhee was no Dullard, and for ſuch kinde of imployments ſhe was no Baby, but underſtood very well in ſuch ſervices as theſe what was fit to be done.

And herein (amongſt other things) the rich have this advantage of the poor; That evill ſervants will not ſo eaſily come to the becke and bend of a poor Maſter, as well-diſpoſed ſervants will be over-awed by a rich Maſter, and wunne to his lewd commands. The poore man (though he be never ſo honeſt) yet muſt he yeeld ſometimes to the violent diſpoſition of his wilfull and head-ſtrong ſervants; whereas honeſt Countrey Swaines, over-commanded by their rich Land-lords, become Miniſters to their luſtfulneſſe. So that the poore (though never ſo good) having ill ſervants, are ſervants to their ſervants. And the rich (though never ſo bad) by being ſerved with good ſervants, are the onely men that are well ſerved.

My good old Woman had by this time opened the gate, and either not well remembring, or making ſhew, as if ſhe had not knowne them, full of diſſimulation, ſhe fell thus upon them: What a ſtirre, what a knocking is here? The Devill take you all for me: beſhrew me, if I did not thinke it had beene our Maſter; The very feare whereof, leſt I might have ſtayed too long before I let him in, hath not left me one drop of bloud in all my body. It is very well, what is the matter now I pray? What would you with me? What is your Worſhips pleaſure? Have you any thing to ſay to me? If you have, let mee know your minde, that I may make an end, and goe about my buſineſſe; for I have ſomething elſe to doe than to ſtand thus idly here.

Then the old Knight anſwered, and ſaid; Good Woman, I pray affoord us ſome place in your houſe, where this Gentlewoman may reſt herſelfe a while: for a grievous paine in her ſtomacke hath befalne her here upon the way: ſhe that kept the houſe, ſeeming to relent her paine, and to be much grieved for it, in her rude ruſtick manner, ſorrowfully reply'd:

Now a miſchief on all ſuch ill luck! O what a grief it is to ſee, that any pain ſhould prove ſo unhappy, as to be thus ill imploy'd upon ſo ſweet a face, ſuch a dainty bed of red and white Roſes! Come in a Gods name, come in, I pray, for all the houſe is at your ſervice. My mother all this while, ſaid not ſo much as one word, onely ſhe complained of her griefe.

The good old Wench of the houſe, uſing her with all the kindneſſe her Country-faſhion could afford, gave them the liberty of the whole houſe, bringing them into a lower roome, where, in a well furniſht bed, there were certaine *Colchones*, or Matreſſes; theſe

ſhee

ſhe preſently unfolded, and having ſpred them forth, and made all things fit and handſome, ſhe preſently opened a Cheſt, whence ſhe tooke out a very faire paire of ſheetes, that were neat and ſweet, a faire Quilt, and a couple of Pillowes; wherewith ſhee dreſſed up a bed, and made it ready for her to take her reſt in. Well might the bed have been made, the roome kept cleane, all places ſweetned with the burning of perfumes, breathing forth Pomanders, and other the like odoriferous ſents, and a breakefaſt provided, and many other dainties and delicaties put in a readineſſe to entertaine them withall. All the things I ſay, might well have beene made ready before-hand; but it was thought fit, that ſome of them ſhould not be prepared; as alſo that the Woman that kept the houſe, ſhould not come at the firſt knocking, as likewiſe that the gate ſhould be ſhut againſt them, and not be opened untill they called, that it might not ſeeme to be a ſet match, and leſt it might chance to breed ſome ſuſpition, and ſo the ſtratagem might be diſcovered, and the maskers made knowne; for this dayes plot was meerely no other thing. My mother in this her pitifull paine, put off her cloaths, got her to bed, and called ever anon for warme cloaths; which being brought unto her, making as if ſhe had laid them to her belly, ſhe truſt them lower beneath her knees, and ſomewhat apart from her; becauſe the heate of them did ſomewhat offend her, fearing leaſt they might cauſe ſome remotion or alteration in her body, whereby qualmes might ariſe and weaken her ſtomacke: With the helpe of theſe warme Napkins, ſhe found herſelfe much eaſed, and feigned ſhe had a deſire to ſleepe, hoping ſhe ſhould be the better after ſhe had taken ſome reſt.

The poor old Knight, whoſe chiefeſt joy conſiſted in giving her content, having placed all his happineſſe in her welfare, was (honeſt Cuckold as hee was) wonderfully glad of this, and left her alone in her naked bed. And having made faſt the doore after him, that none could get in to trouble her, hee went forth to recreate himſelfe in thoſe Gardens belonging to the houſe, charging his people to make no noiſe, and that none ſhould come neere the doore, enjoyning ſtilneſſe and ſilence, and that none of them ſhould dare to open it, till they had farther order from him, or that he came himſelfe. And for that honeſt Woman of the houſe, he willed her that ſhe ſhould watch by her till ſhe waked, and that then ſhee ſhould come and call him. My Father in the meane while was not aſleep, but ſtood with attention, hearkening to what was ſaid, and lay peeping out through the Key-hole (like one that lyes in Ambuſcado) of a certaine backe doore, belonging to a cloſe cloſet, whither hee had retired himſelfe, till he could ſpy his time of advantage for to ſally forth, and ſurprize that deſired fort, which he had ſo long ſince cunningly undermined.

Now, when all was huſht and quiet, and that her owne Nurſe that came with her, and that other olde Bawde of the houſe, ſtood like two Sentinels upon their Watch, ready upon all occaſions, to give quicke advice, by a certaine ſecret ſigne, which might ſerve in ſtead of a Watch-word, when the old Knight ſhould make head that way, then did my father iſſue out at that poſterne, or little back-doore of his, that he might ſee, and confer with his Miſtreſſe. And at that very inſtant did her feigned pangs ceaſe, and thoſe truer ones of love beganne to manifeſt themſelves, giving other kinde of twinges, and thoſe kinder for the place affected. In this ſwelling kinde of ſport they continued two long houres, two yeers being not ſufficient to expreſſe thoſe paſſages that were betwixt theſe two new Lovers in this their merry Fit.

Now the day began to grow hot, and was entring more and more into his heates, which forced the Knight to make his retreate towards the houſe. Which he did the more willingly, out of the deſire which he had to know how his ſicke Saint did, whether ſhe were any thing better, and whether they would ſtay there, or go forward, or what they were beſt to doe, theſe were the lines that led him along to viſit her. Upon his marching thitherward, the Sentinels ſhot off a warning peece: and my father with great ſorrow of heart, forſooke the Fort, where hee had ſet up his Standard, and retyred backe to his Court of Guard, and ſhut himſelfe up cloſe where he was before.

Upon the entring in of her old Gallant, ſhe made ſhew as if ſhe had beene faſt aſleepe, and was awakened with the noiſe that he had made. And with a bended brow and angry looke, caſting her eye a-skew upon him with a coyneſſe of language, ſhe turned aſide from him, accenting her words in a pretty kinde of mournefull faſhion, pittying as it were and bemoaning herſelfe; Ay me, God helpe me. Why (alas) have they opened the doore ſo quickly? Was there no care, no love to bee ſhowne unto mee, in letting mee ſleepe a little longer? I thought you, of all others, would not have put me out of ſo ſweet a ſlumber. But tis no matter, I ſhall one day; and with that ſhe ſighed, and ſtopped, as if ſhe had ſomething elſe to ſay, ſtudying more to amaze him, than to declare herſelfe.

This good old Knight of ours, this patient peece of flesh, gently made answer: By those eyes of thine, than which I adore nothing more, I did not thinke to wake thee: it grieves mee (pretty soule) that I have done thee that wrong; yet hast thou slept full two houres and more. Two houres (replyed my Mother:) no, nor yet halfe an houre: mee thinks it is but even now that I began to shut mine eyes, and in all my life, I never had so quiet and contented a nap, for that little while that it lasted; (nor did she lie in all that she said, for she gulled him with a matter of truth:) and looking with somewhat a more cheerefull countenance upon him, she much commended the remedy which they had given her; telling them, that they had given her her life.

The old Knight was glad to see so much comfort come from her. And by consent of both parties, they agreed to celebrate their feast there, and to passe away, as merrily as they could, the remainder of that day; for that Garden was no lesse pleasant, than that whither they intended to have gone. And because their people were not farre off, that had the charge of their provision (for the other house was hard by) they sent to them to bring backe their dinner thither, and such other things, as they had brought along with them.

Whilest this businesse was a doing, my Father found fit opportunity to get out secretly at the other gate, and to returne back to *Seuill*: where, every houre was a thousand yeeres; a moment, an Age; and the time of his absence from his new Love, a present Hell.

Now, when the Sunne was in declining, which was about five in the Evening, mounting upon his *Gennet*, as if it had beene but his ordinary walke, he came to visit this his house: Wherein he found these Gallants, he bid them welcome, and told them he was glad to see them there, only he was sorry for the mishap, which caused their stay. For hee no sooner came in, but they told him all that had past. His carriage courteous; his voyce lowd and shrill; but not very cleere: Hee made them many discreet and faire offers, (for he had learned a little Courtship) and they on the other side, remained no whit in his debt for kinde words: So that in the end, there was a great League of friendship professed and confirmed between them in publike; but a stricter tye in secret, betwixt my Father and his Mistresse, for the good pawnes and pledges of Love, that had lately past between them.

But there is a difference between Love, Friendship, and Good-will. Goodwill, is that, which I may beare to one that I never saw in my life, nor had any other knowledge of him, than that I have heard of his vertues, or of his noble disposition, or some other worthy parts in him, which makes me to wish him well, and drawes my affection by a violent kinde of motion as it were to runne after him.

Friendship, we call that, which is commonly concluded betwixt man and man, or one friend with another, upon some long Treaty or Communication, Similiancy in condition, or some other pledges of love, and reall courtesies, that have passed between them: So that Good-will, is said to be between those that are absent; and Friendship, between those that are present. But Love runnes by another kinde of course; it steeres by another Compasse. That must of force be reciprocall, a commutation of hearts, a copy or counterpane of interchangeable kindnesse, a translation of two soules, where each strives with other with all their might and maine, to assist there more, where it loves, than where it lives. And this takes it's perfection from it's object; the perfecter the object, the perfecter the Love: but the truest Love of all is *Divine Love*. And therefore we are to love God above all things, with all our heart, with all our strength, and with all our soule, seeing that he so much loveth us. Next unto this, is your *Amor Conjugalis*, that Love which is between a man & his wife: and then that which is betwixt neighbour and neighbour, or one friend towards another. For lewd Love, and that which is dishoneſt, (whose ground growes not from Vertue) is not worthy of this name of Love, as being of a bastard-brood.

But hap what may hap, come what will come, fall backe, or fall edge, whersoever this lewd love raigneth, there are all your Witchcrafts, as no where in the World more; there your inchantments, there your Sorceries. This lewd love is that, which (like another *Circes*) alters the conditions of men, adventured thorow all difficulties, and makes them easie; it is that alone which tameth the strongest and fiercest Lions. For to say, that there are *Philtra* amorous potions, poisons of love, and the like baits and trickes to force affection, it is all false: for this alone, is sufficient of it selfe to turne a mans braine, to pervert his judgement, to take away his life, to confound his memory, to draw on diseases, and to occasion sundry shrewd fits, either of melancholly or of madnesse. Love ought to be free, and to have the libertie and power to consigne and deliver over all the faculties of the soule to the thing beloved.

loved. For the *Alcayde*, or Governour of a Caſtle, cannot be ſayd to give up the Caſtle, when as by force it is taken from him; ſo hee, that ſhall make love by indirect and evill meanes, it cannot be truly ſaid that he loveth, but that he is forced (contrary to his better will) and violently carried away with that eager paſſion of luſt and ſenſuality, which, like a head-ſtrong beaſt, beates a man headlong to his deſtruction.

The converſation went forward, Cards are call'd for, and to play they goe. Their game was *Primera* at three hands; my mother, ſhee got the money, for my father was willing to loſe to her: and it beginning now to waxe night, they gave off play, and went out into the garden to take the aire. In the meane while, the Cloth was layd, and their ſupper brought in, and ſet on the boord: they ſit down, then eate and have ſupp'd. And having given order againſt after ſupper, that a Barge ſhould bee made ready for them, and tricked up with freſh flagges, and greene boughes: when they came to the water ſide, they took Boat, and were no ſooner lanched foorth into the channell, but they might hear from other Veſſels, which went too and fro upon the River, ſundry Conſorts of all ſorts of Muſicke, which made a moſt melodious ſound; being an uſuall ordinary thing with them, in ſuch a place, and ſuch a time as that was, being in that ſeaſon of the yeare that was fitteſt for it. In this manner they were brought along, till at laſt they landed; and being now come into the citty, they took their leaves: every one betaking himſelfe to his owne home, and his owne bed, ſave onely my fathers contemplative pate, whoſe roving head was ſo full of fancies, that it could take no reſt. My mother too, (like another *Meliſendra*) full of muſing and thought-full love, ſlept with her bed-fellow her old Conſort; her body being priſoner in *Sanſuenna*, and her ſoule a ſlave in *Paris*; her corps in one place, and her minde in another.

From that day forwards, ſuch a ſtrong knot of friendſhip was there knit between them, and continued with ſo much diſcretion and good cunning, (conſidering their over-venturouſneſſe, and the danger they might run into) as could poſſibly be preſumed from the quaint wit, and cloſe convey ance of an Eaſterling, dyed into a *Genoneſſe*, and dipt in the Fat of Uſury, who knew well enough, how to put out his money to the beſt profit; who could cleare you any account, could liquidate and divide it to an haire, how much loſſe there was in meaſure, from the waſtings that aroſe from the winnowing, and cleanſing of corn; how many graines loſt in the refining of ſuch a proportion or quantity of Metall; nay, he could tell you to a crumme, how much loſſe there was in an hundred dozen, between the bread that was broken with the hand, and that which was cut with the knife. As likewiſe from a Woman of that good talent, and thoſe gifts & conditions, which I have heretofore acquainted you withall, it is enough (if I ſay no more) that ſhe was an *Andaluz*, borne in the towne of *Sevill*, and bred in that good ſchoole, where ſhe proved ſo good a proficient, that ſhee ran thorow the whole courſe of her Art, and did all her Exerciſe for her degree of a Whore; which ſhee had laudably taken, by making her appointments between the two Quires, and the Naves, or Iſles of the old Church. Now my mother had fits and flings before this time; this was not the firſt flying out, in ſo much, that not having any thing of her owne in her owne hands, that was worth the keeping, that very day that ſhee compounded with this old Knight for her company, and had driven her bargaine with him, ſhe ſwore unto me, that ſhe put over in truſt above 3000 Ducats, onely in Jewells of gold and plate, beſides the movables of her houſe, and her change of apparell for the ſetting forth of her perſon.

The time (we ſee) weares away, and we muſt weare with it: that runnes from us, and we muſt follow after it. Every day that opens, diſcovers new things; and with the riſing of the morning, ariſe new alterations. And let us labour, and doe all that we can, we may not be excuſed, nor can the flower of our youth eſcape in it's due time the cutting Sythe of Death. For there is not the ſhorteſt moment that paſſes, that doth not ſhorten ſomewhat of our life: and the elder ſtill we grow, the neerer we are to our grave. The good old Knight (as formerly you have heard) was an ancient man, and of a feeble body: my mother, young, faire, and full of wit, and knew ſo well how to provoke his appetite upon all occaſions, that his diſorder opened the doore to his death: for the old Lad, by over-doing himſelfe, haſtened his owne end. Firſt, his ſtomacke began to faile him, then was he taken with a paine in his head, after that followed a burning fever, which after ſome few fits began to leave him; but though that ceaſed, he had never a whit the more minde to his meate, he could eate nothing: ſo by little and little he conſumed away, and after ſome few pulls, he died. My mother not being able to reſtore him to life, though ſhee would ever ſweare unto him, that ſhee was his life, and he hers. But all that proteſtation proved to bee but a lie; for he was buried, yet ſhee ſtill lived.

The old Knight left many kinſmen behind him in the houſe, when he dyed, but none of them of the ſame ſute with my ſelfe, though they colour'd for it: onely my mother and I ſorted well together: as for the reſt, they were *pan de diezmo, cado uno de la ſuya*; like the bread, that the people offer up to the Prieſt; every one with a different device, or contrary marke, that his loafe may be knowne from others. That good old Gentleman, (God be with him, and have mercy on his ſoule) had but little comfort in this life; and at the time of his death, they on the one ſide, my mother on the other, while the breath was yet in his body, pull'd the linnen from under him (leaving him a ſoule in his body, but not a ſheete in his bed: ſo that the ſacking of *Antwerepe*, which for the cruelty thereof is growne into a Proverb) compared with this, was not halfe ſo rigorous, nor halfe ſo inhumane as this: and all (forſooth) for feare of a Sequeſtration to have the goods depoſited. But my mother, as ſhe churned the milk, ſo ſhe was her owne carver; ſhe was the Tayler to cut our her owne coat, and the worker of her owne fortune. Shee found a time not long after to put her hands there, where her heart was long before, and fell to fingring of his money. For ſhe had the chiefeſt of all his goods in her owne keeping under locke and key, and was Miſtris of all that was worth the having. But ſeeing herſelfe in danger, and fearing to be put to her jumpes, ſhee thought it better to ſteale than to begge; and like a theef to make a ſtart out of a buſh, than hereafter to aske an almes for Gods ſake. They were ſo nimble on all hands, that there was ſcarce enough left wherewithall to bury him.

Some few dayes were ſcarce over-paſt, but many diligences were uſed, for to make theſe his goods appeare. They ſet up Excommunications at the Churches, and upon mens doores, to try if that would doe any good, and make the purloyners to bring in the goods: But all to ſmall purpoſe; for hee that ſteales, ſeldome returnes to make reſtitution. But my mother made her excuſe, ſaying; That the Knight (God be with him) would ſtill tell her, when he came to viſite his monies, and ran over his Coffers and his Cabinets, or had brought any thing in to the houſe; This is thine, (ſweet heart) it is all for thee. So the Lawyers were of opinion, that with this ſhe might very well ſatisfie her conſcience. Beſides, they affirmed, that it was due debt, and properly belonged unto her; for though ſhe gain'd it ill, yet it was not received ill. And howbeit the Act were not lawfull, yet the Compact was juſtifiable. It was not lawfull for her to play the whore, yet might ſhe by Law have whatſoever was promiſed her for the uſe of her body.

In this mans death, I found that to be verified which I had often heard before; That rich men die of hunger, poor men of ſurfets, and thoſe which have no Heyrs, and enjoy the goods of the Church, of cold: So that this man may ſerve herein for an Example. For whilſt he was yet living, they left him not ſo much as a ſhirt ſave only that which he wore on his backe, which of courteſie they were content hee ſhould carry out of the World with him. Rich men, for feare they ſhould be ſicke with eating too much, to avoid hurt, hurt themſelves; ſince by eating by ounces, and drinking by thimble-fulls, they live by drams; dying rather out of hunger, than their diſeaſe. Poore men, in that they are poore, every man takes pitty of them; one ſends, another brings to them, and all of all ſorts, and from all parts repaire unto them, to give them relieſe, eſpecially when they are in that extremity. And when they finde themſelves leane and hunger-ſtarv'd, they make no good choiſe of their feeding, for want of ſome diſcreet bodie that ſhould adminiſter unto them, and order them in their diet: wherupon they eate much, and glut them themſelves ſo full, that they cannot digeſt their meat for want of naturall heat, and ſo choaking themſelves with over-gorging their pannels, they meerely dye forfeited.

The like happeneth likewiſe in your Hoſpitals, where ſome devout fooles, tender-hearted Women, who go thither to viſit them out of meer devotion, ſtuffe their pockets and their ſleeves full of banquetting-ſtuffe to carry along with them, ſending their ſervants laden with baskets of *regalo's*, & delicate choiſe Dainties. And thinking therein to do an almes-deed, out of their charity, they kill them for *Gods*-ſake. In my opinion, this ought not to be ſuffered, but this coſt ſhould rather be beſtowed upon the ſickneſs, than the ſicke, and bee put into their Keepers hands, that are ſworne to have a due care of them: for by that meanes (having the counſell of ſome learned Phyſician) thoſe things ſhall be better diſtributed in their proper place, and make more for their good: And to doe otherwiſe, may prove hurtfull and dangerous. And in this their ill-diſpenſed charity, not weighing the good, nor the hurt; the ſeaſon, nor the ſickneſſe; whether it be fitting or not fitting, they cramme their crawes, like ſo many Capons in a Coope, till they can ſwallow no more, and ſo die of the throttle. Henceforth therefore let it be ordained, that ſuch things as theſe be given to

thoſe

thoſe which miniſter unto them, who know better how to diſpoſe of them, or let it be given in money, for to ſupply other their greater wants and neceſſities.

O what a gentle *diſparity*, what a pretty abſurdity is this of mine, yet well grounded in Divinitie? how am I lept from the Oare to the Helme? What a Saint *John* the Evangeliſt am I become on the ſudden, that I read you ſuch a Lecture? The Oven grew hot, my zeale was kindled, and ſo theſe good flaſhes flew forth; you may the better pardon this fault in me, becauſe I have made you ſome amends in being ſo ſhort. As it came in my fingers, I tooke it along with me; it came in my way, and I could not let it ſlippe: ſo ſhall I doe hereafter, as often as occaſion is offered. And looke not thou on him that ſayes it, but to that which is ſaid unto thee. For if thou be clad in a neat Suit of cloathes, and that they ſit well upon thee, it is not materiall, whether thy Taylour were crooke-back't or no: that is not a thing to be thought on. And thus much by the way of prevention, that thou mayeſt either leave me to my ſelfe, or arme thy ſelfe with patience. I wot well, that it is impoſſible to be well received of all; for there is not that Veſſel in the World, that can meaſure mens taſts; nor that Balance, that can equall their likings, or give an even poyſe to ſuch uneven humours. Every one is in love with his owne: and thinking his owne judgement to be the beſt, is thereby the more deceived: For the moſt of men have it, for the moſt part, moſt depraved.

But I returne to my firſt ſtation, whence I have digreſſed: for my mother lookes for me, now being the widow of him that firſt poſſeſſed her; and dearely beloved, and wonderfully much made of by this ſecond Owner. In this change and alteration of things, between theſe and thoſe other nuptials, I was between three and four yeers old: and by the reckonings and rules of your feminine knowledge, I had two fathers: for my mother was ſo well learned in her Art, that ſhe knew very well how to father me on them both. She had attained to the knowledge of working impoſſibilities, as plainely was to be ſeene, ſince ſhe had the cunning to ſerve two Maſters, and to pleaſe two Husbands; to both of them giving good contentment. Both of them did acknowledge me to be their ſonne; the one ſayd, I was his; ſo did the other. And when the Knight was alone by himſelfe, my mother would tell him, that I was as like him, as if I had beene ſpit out of his mouth; and that two Egges were not liker one another, than I was like him. When againe, ſhe talked with my father, ſhe would tell him, that I was his *alter ego*, that he and I were one, & ſo would have ſeemed, if our heads had beene cut off, and laid in a Charger: and that I was himſelfe, made leſſe, and did ſo truely reſemble him; as if my head had ſtood upon his ſhoulders. But I wonder a God, in this reſemblance of mine, (which a blind man might diſcerne at the firſt bluſh) that the myſtery thereof was not diſcovered; that they found not out her craft, and ſearched not out the ſecret of this her deceit. But what with the blindneſſe where-withall they loved her, and the confidence which each of them had, it was not perceived, nor any the leaſt ſuſpition made thereof. And ſo both their beliefes were good, and both made exceeding much of me: the difference onely was, that in the time the good old man liv'd, he was my true father in publike, and the ſtranger in ſecret. And ſo my mother certified mee afterwards, making large relations of theſe things unto me.

And therefore I proteſt, howſoever men may talke, and ſeek to ſlander mee, that it doth nothing prejudice mee; I heard it from her owne mouth, and barely relate unto you what ſhe told me. For it were great indiſcretion and unadviſedneſſe in me, to affirme; which of theſe two did beget mee, or whether I were the ſonne of a third. Let her excuſe me in this, who brought mee forth: for it ill becometh any man to lye, much leſſe to write an untruth: nor would I that men ſhould ſay; that I maintaine Paradoxes. But that Women, that profeſſes to love two, deceiveth both the one and the other, and there is no truſt to be had to her. This is to be underſtood of a ſingle Woman; for the rule of thoſe that is married is otherwiſe. It is an old ſaying, that two is one; one, none; and three Roguery. For a Woman, making no reckoning of her Husband, (and this is true which I ſpeake) he being alone, is none; and hee, with another, makes one, and with thoſe other two, which are three in the whole, makes up juſt as much, as thoſe two to a ſingle-Woman. So that according to their reaſon, the reckoning is already made. But be it as it may be, and grant that this Eaſterling, this Jew, or this Moore be my father, for ſince that they have ſaid it, and every one doth averre it to be true, it is not fit that I ſhould appeale, all parties being agreed. I call my ſelfe his ſonne, and ſo I take my ſelfe to be: ſince that from that Mellon-bed I was made legitimate by the holy right of matrimony. And it is much better for me this way, than that people ſhould ſay; that I am ill borne and the ſon of no man.

My

My father did love us both with that true love, as his affections ſhall ſufficiently declare. For by the force of this his love, hee did tread under-foot the idolatry of that, which men ſtile by the name of popular Voice, and common Opinion. For they knew no other name that ſhee had, ſave the *Commandadora*, and to that would ſhe anſwer, as if ſhe had had beene ſome *Commendum* conferred upon her. But he not regarding any of theſe things, nor making any reckoning of the one or the other, ſetting as light by them, as the leaſt haire of his head, kept company with her, and in the end tooke her to wife. I would have thee likewiſe to underſtand, that he did not enter upon his buſineſſe, *à humo de pajas*, ſuddenly and unadviſedly, without having firſt well bethought himſelfe of what he did. Every man knowes his owne eſtate beſt; and a foole underſtands more in his owne, than a wiſe man in another mans houſe.

In this *Intermedium*, albeit this his *Quinta* or Garden-houſe, which hee had purchaſed, was a place of pleaſure and delight, yet it was his undoing, it was her overthrow: the profit little, and loſſe much; the coſt great, as well for the keeping of it neate and handſome, as for the feaſting and banquetings which were very frequent. Such kinde of delicates are theſe, and ſuch places for recreations are onely fit for thoſe, that have other large poſſeſſions, good ſure Lands, Great and certaine Rents, which may quit the coſt and make the load ſeeme the lighter: But for thoſe that are not well lin'd, that have not a ſtrong and able purſe, and that have not the World at will, theſe niceties, are that Moth that eateth on, till it fretteth out and conſumeth the heart: It is that Worme in Wood, that Magot in the Nut, which turnes all into duſt and rottenneſſe: it is Hemlocke in a cup of Amber, and poyſon in a garden veſſell.

And thus much by the way concerning that point; it is but a touch, and now we go on. What with ſuites in Law, what with making love to my mother, and other expences, one charge drawing on another, a great part of my fathers ſtate was conſumed, all was almoſt gone, he was upon the point of breaking, and ready to turne Bankrupt, as hee had often done before; ſo that it would have beene no ſtrange or new thing unto him.

My mother was a ſtorer, a thrifty Wench, one that could hold her owne; ſhe was no waſter but ſtill lay on the ſaving hand: what with that which ſhee gained in her youth-fuller dayes, and what ſhe had ſcraped up in the Knights life-time, as likewiſe at his death, amounted almoſt to ten thouſand Ducats, this was her Dowry, and ſo much had he with her.

This money did ſomewhat refreſh his drooping eſtate, it made him hold up his head againe, who before was upon fainting, and ready to ſwoune: it was unto him like a peece of Weake, or Cotton in a Lampe, dipt in Oile; he began to give light afreſh; he ſpent bravely, got him a Caroche, and a *Silla de manos*, a little chaire to carry with hands, borne with girthes upon mens ſhoulders, as well for eaſe as ſtate. Not ſo much for any longing that my mother had thereunto, as for his owne oſtentation and glory, that the World might not take notice of the weakeneſſe of his Eſtate, or that he was going downe the winde. In this kinde of faſhion did he live to uphold his credit, and rubb'd out as well as he might with his meanes; but his gaines did not equall his expences. There was but one to get and many to ſpend, but one paire of hands, and a great many mouths. The times were hard, the yeares deare; dealings ſmall and bad; little or no Trading. What was well gotten, is waſted and gone; and what was ill gotten, hath not onely conſumed it ſelfe, but his owner too. So, that at laſt all was brought to nothing: Sin brought it in; and Sin (on my conſcience) ſent it packing. For of all that was left, nothing appeared. The light was now quite out, and my father being taken with a grievous ſickneſſe, was arreſted by Death within five dayes after: and ſo ſhut up his ſhop-windowes and departed this world.

Now, for that I was a Childe and of ſmall underſtanding, I did not feele the want of a Father, nor found any great miſſe of him when he died, though I was then at that time a dozen yeere old, and better. And notwithſtanding that we grew poore, the houſe was ſtill well furniſhed with houſhold-ſtuffe, whereof we tooke now a peece, and then a peece, and ſold it away by parcels for to buy us bread, and wherewith to eate. But the wealth of thoſe, that have beene rich, hath this property, that the remainder of their eſtate is alwayes more, than the beſt eſtate of thoſe that be poore; and daily more and more they leave ſome prints, which diſcover, like the ruines of *Rome*, what it was.

My mother grieved much, for that ſhe had loſt a good and honeſt Husband, and found herſelfe, not onely robbed of him, but alſo of her wealth, and growne now ſo aged, that ſhe was ſuper-annuated for any more Suitors, ſo that ſhe could not helpe herſelfe with her good parts;

parts; nor recover her former credit. And albeit her beauty was not disfigured, yet her yeares hath somewhat defaced it: And it grieved her exceedingly, that having beene so many times used unto by many, that shee was not now in case to be courted: And especially of some such person, whose feathers she might have pull'd from him for otherwise neither would she have yeelded unto him, nor I have permitted it. Even in this also was I unhappy, since that in-come which my mother got (as Cats do) by her tayle, did then cease, when I had most need of it. I said amisse, when I said it ceased: For she was yet fit for action; and would (when she was so disposed) put on her dressings, and weare her head-attire, as being little more than forty yeers old. I have knowne since some old Maids (pussockes in comparison of her) of greater yeeres, and lesse handsomenesse, that would call themselves by the name of young Girles, and little pretty Maidens, and sweare (if you would beleeve them when they lye) that they came but yesterday out of their swadling cloathes: And although my mother did not shew so fare for it, she thought her penny good silver, and would not give her arme for the ringing, or her head for the washing. And shee would rather die and starve for hunger, than bate an Aee of her former height, or faile one quilate in the touch or fineneſſe of her punctuality.

You now see mee here left without a father, either the one or the other, our goods wasted, and that which is worst of all, bearing a high sayle, living at a great rate, without any person in it to gaine a penny, to maintaine this port. On my fathers side, *Cid* did not goe beyond me, he was no better a man than my selfe; for my possession crossed and divided that Lordship. On my mothers side, I was as well descended, my great Grandfathers being men of great wealth, and of good esteeme in their Country. I had more grafts than the *Cigarrales of Toledo*, (for by that name are those Gardens of pleasure thereabouts called) as I learned afterwards. I tell you (as a thing publikely knowne to all the world) that my mother was her mothers owne daughter, and trode just in her steps; shee set her Samplar before her, that shee might draw out some good worke from thence, so that she went along in the very same path that shee did, save only in that of her child-bearing; for my Grandmother brought forth a daughter for her comfort, and my father begot a son for my mothers ruine. If my mother brought two into the net, my Grandmother brought two dozen, and made them like Chickens (if the world speakes truth) to eate together in one pot-sheard, and to sleepe in one Henroost; and to be pend up in one Coope, without pecking one at another; or driven to hood them as they doe Hawkes.

With this daughter of hers, (I meane my Mother) she ensnared a hundred severall persons, vowing and protesting to every supposed father, that my Mother was his child, and so to all, that she was like them all: To such a one, in her eye; to another, in her mouth; to a third, in most of the parts and lineaments of her body; nay, to colour the busines the better, she would go a little farther in counterfetting markes and moles in the face, and other spots in other parts to that purpose; not wanting to tell some, that shee did spit like them, and that she had it naturally from them. She had this (as shee was excellent in many) cunning trickes with her, that when any of her sweet-hearts were present with her, she would call her after his Sir-name. And if two, or more were there at the same time, she called her barely by her owne name, without any addition. Her proper name was *Marcella*, which was burnished and furbished over with the title of *Don*, set over the head of it; for as she was called *Donna Marcella*, so had she her *Don* or *Cavellero* for her servant. For *Donna*, without *Don*, are lesse compatible, and lesse comely, than a house, without a bed; a Mill, without a wheele, or a body, without a shadow. As for her Sir-names, seeing they were things that meerely depended upon her mothers owne free choice and election; and for that she was uncertaine thereof, because she could not well tell who was the true father to her daughter: I must therefore give you to know, that she did bolster her up and under-prop her, with the best titular names shee could devise, throwing more noble houses upon her, than a King of *Arimes* could conferre with all his farre-fetcht pedigrees. Which to repeat unto you, weere to reckon up a Bead-roll of *G*enealogies, as long as any Letany, that is solemnly sung at divine service.

The *Guzmans* were those, unto whom she most inclined, (for she had a great liking to that name) and my mother told me in secret, that in her opinion, which was no more than her owne conscience did tell her: in discharge whereof, she did verily beleeve, and was fully perswaded (by some likely incounters and probable guesses, and other circumstances of time and place jumping and concurring together) that she was some by-blow of a *Cavallero*, that was neere of kinde to the Dukes of *Medina Sidonia*. My *G*randmother was a wise woman, a crafty old Dame, and never wanted to her dying day, but had wherewithall to spend freely,

nor was it any wonder; for when it began to wax night with her, and that it was time for her to ſhut up her ſhop, then did my mothers dawning of the day begin to appeare, and ſhe had him at her elbow, to continue the trade for her, and the firſt bargaine that ſhe drove, was worth to her better than 4000. Ducats, which ſhee had of a rich Merchant, (with whom ſhe held trafique, and exchanged wares) that was newly come from *Peru*, who did deliver her the money by basket fuls, which was good and quick payment. She never made bad voyage, ſhe ſtill bore up, liv'd in plenty, and would not loſe a jot of what was her due. No Chriſtian could carry away her right from her; nor would ſhe give any firſt fruits to the Devill.

Now, if we had the like good lucke, our miſery might have beene the leſſe: Or if, as I was the only ſonne of my Mother, it had beene my good hap to have had a Siſter, to have ſerv'd a prop to my Mother, as a ſtaffe to her old age, as a pillar to our poverty, and as a port to our often ſhiprackes, wee would have bid a figge in Fortunes teeth.

*Sevill* ſtood very fitly and commodiouſly ſeated for point of profit, or for any kinde of incroaching-getting, and as much is brought either to be ſold, as thither is to be bought. For there ſhall you meet with Merchants that will deale with you in all commodities, no wares come amiſſe. It is *Patria communis*, and a free-common for all commers; it is a paſture, without incloſure, a Gordian knot, and open field, a Globe without end, a mother of Orphans, and a ſhelter for ſinners, where all cry out for want, and yet no man wants. O (ſince not this) that I had beene bred up in Court, which is the Sea, that ſwallowes all; the point wherein all lines meet; and the very center, whereunto all other parts have recourſe: ſure my abilities would not have beene leſſe than other mens; and as I ſhould have wanted no good parts, ſo ſhould I not have lackt entertainment: I ſhould have lighted on ſome good Office or other, got to be in commiſſion, and other the like places of profit and honour, wherein I ſhould have gone as far as another, and have found as much favour, had my purſe beene as good: For that will hold any thing faſt and is the onely thing to keepe a man in. And had the worſt come to the worſt, yet could we not have wanted meat and drinke, but ſhould have far'd like Kings. For he that ſhall have a good peece of land, or the like pledge either to impawne, or to ſell, ſhall ever have a chapman ready at hand, either to buy it out right, or to lend ſo much money upon it, as to ſerve a mans preſent occaſion. But I was an unfortunate man, (as you have already heard) and ſtood alone by my ſelfe, without any tree by mee, either to ſhaddow, or to ſhelter me. I had many troubles come upon me, the burthen was heavy, my ſtrength weake, my debts great, and my meanes ſmall. See then and conſider whether it were fit or no, that ſuch a young Youth as I, that began to grow before I was ſcarce out of the ſhell, and to write man ſo ſoone, having ſuch honeſt parts in me, and good endowments, ſhould not be made ſome reckoning of? The beſt helpe that I had, was to try my fortune, by leaving my Mother, and my country, to ſee if I could mend my miſerable Eſtate, I did ſo, and becauſe I would not bee knowne, I would not make uſe of my Fathers name, but by that of *Guzman*, which I tooke from my mother; and of *Alfarache*, which was the place of my inheritance, as alſo of my being. With this reſolution, I went abroad to ſee the World, travelling from place to place, re-commending my ſelfe to God, and well-diſpoſed people, in whom I had put my truſt.

## Chapter III.

*How Guzman departed from his Mothers house upon a Friday towards the Evening, discovering by the way the torments of hunger, and that which befell him with his Hosteſſe, recounting many notable examples of some Rules of ill government.*



Was a fat plumpe Lad, well fed, and cocker'd up, bred in *Sevill*, never checkt, chid, nor corrected by my Father: My Mother (as you have heard) a Widdow-women, my ſelfe cramm'd with collops of Bacon, your fineſt Bread, and your daintieſt Creame, your ſops of Honey ſteep't in Roſe-water, more lookt on, and adored, than a Merchant of *Toledo*, or at leaſt as good a man as he, it grieved me very much (beſides that the love of a mans Countrey is ſweet and deare unto him) to forgoe thus my houſe, my kinsfolke and my friends. But being forced thereunto, I could not avoid it. The deſire that I had to ſee the world, and to go into *Italy* to take acquaintance of my Noble Kindred and Alliance, did much quicken and put life into me.

I ſet forth, which I ought not to have done (I may be bold to ſay it) late, and unluckily. And thinking to meet with ſome rich remedy, I loſt all that little that I had. That hapned unto me, which befell the Dogge in the Fable, with the ſhadow of his peece of fleſh in the water.

I had ſcarce gone out of the Citie-gate, when (without being able to make reſiſtance) two great Rivers (like an over flowing *Nilus*) did break out from forth mine eyes, watring my face in great abundance, till it was bathed all over with teares. What with this and the nights comming on (for it grew darke) I could not diſcerne any light of heaven: nor perceive ſo much as a handsbreadth of earth as I went along. When I came to *San Lazaro*, (which is but a little way off from the Citie,) I ſate me downe there upon the ſtaires or ſteps by which we goe up to that holy Hermitage: There I made a new muſter of my life, ſurvay'd it over and over, and diſcourſed with my ſelfe thereupon, I was about to goe backe againe, for that I came forth ill provided, worſe adviſed, and poorely furniſht with money for ſo long a Voyage, having ſcarce ſufficient to ſerve my turne for a farre ſhorter journey. And amongſt other my ſo many misfortunes, (which when they once beginne, come by cluſters, hanging like Cherries; one at the tayle of another) it was Friday night: and withall ſomewhat darke. I had neither ſupt, nor had any bever that afternoone. Had I gone out of the Citie upon a fleſh day, although I had beene borne blinde, my noſe would have helped me to ſmell out ſome Cookes ſhop or other, where I might have had a penny Paſty, wherewithall to entertaine my ſtomacke, and to dry up my teares, and ſo my ſorrow would have beene the leſſe.

Then I began to perceive, how much more ſenſible a man is of the good he loſeth, than when hee enjoyed it; and what difference there is betweene the hungry belly, and the full-fed paunch. All troubles paſſe the better with bread: Where good feeding faileth, there no good followeth; no evill which aboundeth not; no pleaſure that indureth, nor content to comfort us. All fret and chafe, and know not why, nor wherefore. No man is in fault; and yet they lay it one upon another, all runne upon the haunt, faining ſtrange *Chimera's* in their heads; all is then nothing but government; all is Philoſophy. I had a great minde to my ſupper, but the devill a bit of any thing that I could get to put to my mouth, ſave a little freſh water that ranne from a fountaine that was there hard by. I knew not what to doe with my ſelfe, nor how to caſt about, to bring my ſelfe into ſome one Haven or other. That which did hearten me one way, did diſcourage me another. I found my ſelfe betwixt feares and hopes, a ſleepe downe fell before mine eyes, and ravening Wolves ready to devoure me at my backe. My thoughts began as faſt to waver, as my feet did to wander: at length I was willing to put my ſelfe into Gods hands. I entred into a Church, I powr'd forth ſuch a ſhort prayer, but whether devout enough or no, I know not. Nor would they ſuffer me to dwell any longer in my Orizons, for the houre was come that they were to rid the Church and to ſhut up the doores.

The night was now ſhut up, and with it my imaginations, but not the teares that trickled from mine eyes. In this melancholy humour I fell at laſt aſleepe upon a ſeate without in the Church-porch. I know not what ſhould be the reaſon of it, unleſſe peradventure that ſleepe craves his owne, and breakes melancholy in twaine. As that *Mountanyſſe* gave us to underſtand, who going to bury his Wife, ſate bare-foot, and bare-legg'd, his jacket with its

inſide outward; and ſo in the reſt, all was Kim-kam, I know not how. In that mountainous Countrey, the houſes ſtand apart, and ſome of them very far from the Church. And paſſing by a Taverne, he perceived white-Wine was there to be ſold: whereupon he made as if he had ſome other neceſſary buſineſſe to do, and ſaid unto them, On Gods name, keep on afore, my maſters, with this unfortunate Courſe, for I ſhall overtake you in a trice: So hee ſlunke back, and went into the Taverne; where taking cup after cup, he ſoop't ſo long, till hee was ſtarke drunke, and there fell aſleepe. Now when thoſe of his company came from the Buriall, and found him ſtretcht out upon the floor, they called aloud unto him; he after awhile being come againe to himſelfe, looking ſomewhat heavily upon them ſaid; Now a pockes of all ill luck; pardon me (my maſters) I pray, pardon mee; for I ſweare unto you, that there is not any thing in the World, that cauſeth more thirſt, or more ſleepe, than ſorrow. It was juſt even ſo with me; for it was now Saturday morning, and the Sunne was two houres high, when I beganne to bethinke my ſelfe what I had been doing: nor ſhould I have wak't ſo ſoone, if the Timbrels, and the Songs, and the Dances of certaine Women, which came thither that day to keep their Wake, and to feaſt and be merry, with their dubbing, and their bawling, had not rowz'd mee up from ſleepe. I got mee, (though ſomewhat of the lateſt) hungry, and drowſie, without knowing for awhile where I was; that mee thought I was ſtill as it were in a dreame. But when at laſt I was fully awake, and found all was true that I ſaw, or heard, I ſaid to my ſelfe; *Echada eſta la ſuerte*, the Dye is throwne, God ſend mee good lucke. And with this reſolution, I went forward on my journey; but the Devill awhit did I know whether I did goe, nor indeed did I much ſtand upon it: for all was one to mee. At laſt, I took that way, which offered it ſelfe faireſt to mine eye: let it leade whither it would, I did not care. Which did then put me in mind of thoſe ill governed both houſes and Common-wealths, where the feet performes the heads office. Where reaſon and underſtanding doe not diſpatch buſineſſes: where they have not the command, it is to melt a mans gold, (come of it what may come) and afterwards to adore a Calfe. My feet carried mee along, I followed as faſt after them; come good, or come ill; over hill and dale trudge I. That happening unto mee, which befell a fooliſh Phyſitian in *Mancha*; who had no learning in the World, never ſtudied any Phyſicall Author; but had gotten together (which he carried along with him) a great number of Receits; ſome for Syrrupes, and ſome for Purges, which were diſtributed into ſeverall, either Boxes, or Vyols.

Now this cunning Leech, when he viſited any ſicke body, (and look to be well payd for his paines, for the good he ſhould do him) he would thruſt his hand into his Satchell, (which he ſtill bare about with him for theſe purpoſes) and then would he take forth one of his *recipe's*, ſaying firſt to himſelfe, God diſpoſe it to good. And ſo hee gave the Patient that which came firſt to hand, without any more adoe; worke how it would worke, that was all one to him, he would put that ſtill to the venture. In letting of bloud, he kept no account either for the Veine, or the quantity, but would cry, either a little more, or a little leſſe, as hee chanced to blurt the word at all adventure out of his mouth, caſting himſelfe upon Fortune, ruſhing through thicke and thinne; like him that careleſſely runnes through a Corn-field, where ſome Eares are trod under foot, and ſome ſcape without harme, more by chance, than good cunning. I might then have ſaid to my ſelfe, as he did, God diſpoſe it to good: for I did not know what courſe I ranne, I was ignorant of my way, nor could I tell (if my life ſhould have lyen upon it) whither I was bound.

But becauſe his divine Majeſty ſendeth troubles, according to his owne good will and pleaſure, and for ſuch ends as are beſt knowne to himſelfe, they turne all unto our greater good, if we can have the grace to make true uſe of them. They began now to come faſt upon me, and followed me at an inch, not allowing mee one moment of content, nor affoording mee ſo much as a breathing time from my cares, all the while that I was abroad in my travels: ſo that they never left, whitherſoever I went. But theſe were not thoſe, that were ſent mee of God, but onely thoſe which my ſelfe went ſeeking after. And there is a great deale of difference between the one, & the other: for thoſe that come from the hand of God, hee knowes how to free us from them: and ſuch as theſe, are Mynes of moſt pure gold, moſt precious Jewells, covered with a little Sward, or light Turfe of earth, which with a little labour may bee diſcovered and found. But thoſe which men draw upon themſelves by their vices and ſenſuall delight, are guilded Pilles, which deceiving the ſight with a falſe ſhow of favory taſte, put the body out of order, if not utterly overthrow it. They are green fields, full of venemous Vipers: ſtones (at the firſt ſight) of great eſteeme, but underneath are full of Scorpions: and laſtly, an eternall death, which deludeth us with a ſhort life.

This

This day having wearied out my ſelfe with going onely but two little Leagues, (which were the firſt that ever I went) it ſeemed unto mee, that I had arrived at the *Antipodes*, and like another famous *Columbus*; that I had diſcovered a new world. Well, I came at length to an Inne, full of ſweate and duſt, my feet ſurbated, my ſelfe ſad, and above all, with my Mill in very good ſtate to grind, my teeth ſharpe, and my ſtomacke faint. It was about Noone, I ask'd what we might have to dinner: they told me, that they had nothing but egges: it had not beene amiſſe if they had beene egges: for either whether the roguiſh Hoſteſſe, through too much heat, clocking over them, or that the Fox had kill'd the Hen; ſome were growne addle, others ready to hatch; and that ſhe might not loſe by them, ſhe had put them in a box, and had mingled them with other egges that were good. But ſhee did not deale ſo ill with me, God reward her according to her uſage of mee: ſhe ſaw I was a young Lad, ruddy-cheekt, full-fac'd, and plumpe withall; that I was a novice in the world, and looke like a good honeſt ſimple Youth, and that any thing would ſerve me well enough: Upon this ſhe aſkt me; My pretty childe, whence art thou? I told her I was of *Sevill*: with that ſhee came neerer unto me, and giving me a chocke under the chin, ſhe ſaid unto me: Now you little wanton foole, whither wander you? O good God, how did her ſtinking breath annoy me! with her very touching of me, me thought I had drawne old age upon me, the attraction was ſo ſenſible to my ſeeming. This made me imagine, that the utmoſt of evils had now lighted upon me, in meeting with ſuch a filthy unſavoury Slut. And if my Stomacke had been full at that time, as it was empty, I ſhould have ſpued out all within me; for my ſtomacke then roſe up to my mouth, and my guts had almoſt kiſt my lippes. I told her, that I was going to the Court, and wiſht her to give me ſomewhat for my dinner. Then ſhe made me ſit downe upon a lame bench, and on the top of a little blocke, ſhe ſpred a Diſh-clout before me, juſt for all the world, like unto the Maulkins whererewith ſhe ſwept her Oven; and this (forſooth was my Table-cloath: my Salt-ſellar was the foot of an old broken Pitcher, or ſome peece of Pot-sheard, ſuch as ſhe ſets ful of water, to make her Poultry drinke: and halfe a loafe of bread that was blacker than her Napery. This preparation made, ſhee preſently pour'd me forth upon a Plate, a Froice of egges, which might more truly have beene termed a Plaiſter of egges: they, the bread, the Iarre, the water, the ſalt-ſellar, the ſalt, the linnen, and the Hoſteſſe, were all one; ſo well did they ſute together. I knew my ſelfe to bee a young traveller, and therefore held it diſcretion to make no reply, but to take all patiently; my tongue was tyed, my mouth muzled, my ſtomacke empty, my guts ſhrunke, and clung ſo cloſe together, as if they had beene newly milched. I was as ſharpe ſet upon my Froize, as a Hog upon his Akornes, and, ſlopt up my egges as a Sow do's Waſh, I was ſo eager upon the buſineſſe. I made no bones of it, all went cleane up together without any great chewing; howbeit to ſpeake the truth, I felt the tender bones of thoſe untimely Chickens to crackle betweene my teeth, that they made my gummes to tickle againe. I muſt tell you truly, that me thought (beſides the ill favourednesſe of the taſte, which was not like that of other egs, which I us'd to eate at home in my mothers houſe) this was but a courſe kinde of uſage; and ſuch as I had not heretofore beene acquainted with. But I did let that conceit paſſe by, and drowned the imagination thereof in my hunger and wearineſſe; conceiting with my ſelfe, that the diſtance of place, or difference of the Climate, might be the cauſe thereof, and that all egges were not of one ſavour, nor of one quality. In concluſion, I digeſted all things ſo well, that I tooke it for a token of good lucke. For it is as proper to him that is hungry, not to ſtand upon Sauces, and your fine reliſhes; as to him that is in want, to ſtep out into the highway, and to take a purſe. No booty comes amiſſe to him that is in need. Beg, ſteale, or any thing, rather than ſtarve.

I made light of it, my dinner was ſhort, and as quickly diſpatch't, and took in good part this my firſt courſe, though it could not be well courſer. Upon my bread I dwelt ſomewhat longer, I fell to that a little more leiſurely, pawſing now and then betwixt every bit; for it being likewiſe very bad, I was forced to take longer time: one morſell making way for another; that it might the more orderly deſcend downe into my ſtomacke. I began with the cruſt, and ended in the crumme, which was as tough as whit-lether, and as dry as a Paſte-board: whatſoever it were, were it better or worſe, I devoured every jot of it, nor did leave out of courteſie, the leaſt crumme thereof for the Ants to feed upon, no more than if it had beene little, and good. That happening unto me, which doth befall good feeders, when they fall cloſe to a diſh of fruit: who picking out firſt the beſt and the ripeſt; doe (as in the eating of Cherries) leave up the greeneſt & worſt laſt, without once thinking of thoſe that were gone before. Then did I eate apace, one bit (as they ſay) driving downe another, till I had made

an end of halfe a Loafe: which, if it had been good, or but any thing reasonable, or that it had but pleased mine eye (for it was but poore browne bread) I would have taken in a greater crop, and have filled up my pannell, with a whole Loafe of at least three pound weight. The yeere was barren by reason of the great droughts; and in such times as those, *Sevill* was wont to suffer much scarcity: for even in their bitter, and more plentifull yeers, they have had much adoe to tubbe out: what hope can there then be, when Corn is scant with them?

But it is not fit, that I should enlarge my selfe in this subject, nor open the mystery thereof unto you, by giving you a reason for it. I am a sonne of that Citie, a Towne-borne Child: I will therefore hold my peace; for all the whole World is one and the same, here and there, and every where, all alike. For no man buyes an Office for any other end and purpose, but for his profit, be it publicke, or be it private; they will grate and scrape, be it by hooke or by crooke, to raise a fortune there out unto themselves. Few are they, that will part with so many thousand Ducats, for to doe good unto the poore, but to themselves. For ere they will bestow a farthing token on a poor body by way of almes, they will first examine the businesse, and consult with themselves, whether it be a charitable act or no.

Thus it fated with a *Regidor*, who being espied by an old man, one of that Towne where hee had to doe, to exceed the bounds of his duty, and to doe things beyond his Commission, call'd him unto him, and told him; How now Seignior N. &c. Is this it, that you were sworne unto, when you were admitted at the Assembly, to be one of our Company, that you should go about to picke up your crummes after this fashion, and trot up & down to shark for these *Menudo's*? To whom he made this answer; Doe not you see, how I comply with mine Oath, since I come for them every Saturday to the Shambles? I bought them with my money; and I had them out of the poore sheeps belly. After this manner all things passe, in all places; it is the world. They go dividing the spoyle among themselves; they will fetch flowre from all parts to make themselves a good Cake. Claw mee, claw me: to day for me, to morrow for thee: doe thou give me leave to buy, and I will give thee leave to sell. They make restraint for selling of Victuals, save onely at such set times and places: they set the prices upon all things, as if they were their owne: and when they please, they will sell the same againe at what rate they thinke fit. For all is theirs as well what is bought, as what is sold.

My selfe am a Witnesse, that a *Regidor* of one of the chiefest Cities of *Andaluzia*, and Kingdome of *Granada*, had a flock of Sheepe, an herd of Goates, and some other milke beasts; and for that the weather was cold, he could by no meanes utter his milke, but every man fell to his *Burunelo's*. Now thinking with himselfe that he should lose much thereby, if Lent should grow on, and should not remedy the matter before hand, he propounded at an open Meeting, or publicke Assembly, that the Moriscan *Bonuelero's*, or Fritter-makers, did rob the Common-wealth. He rated them therefore at a lesser price, than it stood them in, amounting to little more than six *Maravedis*. Well, he was willing in the end to raise them to eight, allowing them rather a small than moderate gaine.

Hereupon, none would make of them, because they could get nothing by the bargaine. And so in that space or tract of time, he spent the profits of his Cattel, in Butter, Cream, fresh-cheese, and other such like things, till the time of yeere was come, that hee was to put forth his Flocks and Herds of Cattell into the common fields. And when he began to make his Cheese, then would he raise up your *Burunelo's* to twelve *Maravedis*, as they were at before; but then Summer was comming on, and they shortly to grow out of season. He himselfe did not sticke to report this crafty tricke of his, to teach men how to become good Husbands, and how they ought to beate their braines, to make shift to live.

Now let us returne againe into our old way, from which we have digreſt: for me thinks it is not meet, that we should lay all the fault upon the Magistrate and Governours of Townes and Incorporations, seeing that wee may distribute it as well among others. Let us throw some of this upon your Surveyors, and Commissaries; and not upon all neither, but on some of them, as it may be found out of five, or so, who like Caterpillers destroy the Land, by robbing of poor old men, and desolate widowes, by deceiving of their betters, and by telling lyes, and informing false hoods to their King; the one for to increase their lands and inheritances, and the other, to have them confirmed unto them, that they may leave a good estate upon the Heires of their house, and have where-withall to live in fulnesse, and in plenty.

This likewise is somewhat out of the way from that discourse which I ought here to create of, and requires of it selfe a whole and entire book. I treat in this of mine owne life, and therefore will not meddle with other mens: but I doe not know, whether I shall be able,

when

when a ball offers it ſelfe ſo fairely unto mee, to pull back my hand or no? For there is no man that is Maſter of himſelfe, when he is on horſebacke: How much more is a man unable to containe himſelfe in things ſo generally knowne? But the one and the other is generally embraced, and all walke the ſame way, yeelding the field to the ſtronger, crying out *Vivat qui vincit*, let him live that conquers, and he weare gold that wins it. But alas, how do we deceive our ſelves? For we are thoſe that are conquered; and he that deceiveth, is the deceived. I ſay then, that *Sevilla per fas, aut per nefas*, either by right or by wrong, one way or other I know not which (conſidering her abundance of fruits, and the deareneſſe of them) ſuffereth ſterility, and ſcarcity; and that yeere was there greater want and penury than heretofore, by reaſon of ſome ſecret diſorders, and through the covetouſneſſe of thoſe, who ſhould have ſought to remedy the matter, who did ſtudy onely their owne ends, and to make a particular fortune to themſelves. The ſecret of this myſtery paſt onely between ſome three or four of them, many were not acquainted with it, who without conſidering the ends, took in hand bad beginnings, and divelliſh meanes, to the hurt of their owne Common-wealth.

In all my travells I have ever obſerved, that theſe great rich men, and powerfull perſons, are like unto Whales, who opening wide the mouth and jawes of their covetouſneſſe, ſwallow up all that comes in their way, to the end that their houſes may bee well provided for, and their revenues increaſed, without caſting any eye of compaſſion upon the poor young Orphan; or lending an eare to the cry of the diſtreſſed Damoſell; or affording his ſhoulders for to uphold the feeble and the weake; or opening his charitable hands to relieve the ſicke, and him that is in need, but rather under the name of good government, every man ſo governes himſelfe, that he does the beſt he can, to draw all the water to his owne Mill. They publiſh good deſires; but they exerciſe bad actions. Their pretenſions are faire, but their practiſe ſtarke naught. They would ſeeme to be Gods Lambes, innocent and harmeleſſe fooles, but the Devill onely makes profit of them: they fall wholly to his ſhare; he and none but he reapes the fruit of them: God hath the name indeed, but the Devill hath the ſhearing of them. There was good ſtore of Rye-bread, paſſible enough, and at a reaſonable price; He that had Wheat, reſerved the flower of the Meale for his owne table, and the refuſe he brought forth to ſell in the Market, as if any thing were good enough for the poor Commons. Our Officers and great men growne to bee Bakers, and thoſe went about to burne and waſte the Countrey, which ſhould have rather beene willing to have been burned for it. I cannot deny but this was puniſhed, and that there were many good men, to whom evill ſeemed evill. But in ſuch neceſſities as theſe, it is not to bee holden by a few. Beſides, the great numbers of thoſe that were interreſſed therein, did cruſh thoſe, that offered to ſtirre againſt them, becauſe they were poor. And if poor, it is enough, I need ſay no more. Let every man make his owne conjecture, and diſcourſe that with himſelfe.

Perceiveſt thou not how impatient I am? Seeſt thou not that I cannot containe my ſelfe? and how that my penne, before ever I thonght of laſhing out ſo farre, hath ſlipt upon this Theame. They gave mee the yarke with the ſpurre, and I turned my head to ſtrike where they pricked me! I know not what excuſe to make thee, but to tell thee, that I doe as Carriers doe, that drive their beaſts of burthen before them, who ruſh the man that meets them againſt the wall, or throwes him to the ground and then ſay, I cry you mercy, Sir. In concluſion all the bread was naught, although then it did not reliſh amiſſe with me. I did refreſh my ſelfe with eating, and did cheere up my ſelfe with drinking, for the Wines of thoſe Countries are exceeding rich, generous and full of ſpirit; and with this I had pretty well recovered my ſelfe and received new courage. And my feet, that were wearied out with bearing; my belly, though empty, and of ſmall weight (as being lightly laden) now that it was full, and had his loade, made ſhift to carry my feet.

And ſo I went on my way, with no ſmall care to know, what knacking of *Caſtannetas* that might bee, which made the Egges that I had eaten, to dance in my mouth. My imagination was working to and fro upon this matter; and the more it did beat upon it, the more misfortunes repreſented themſelves unto mee, and my ſtomack began to ſtirre more and more: for I could ſuſpect nothing leſſe than a kind of loathing, ſeeing how ill they were dreſt, of what blackneſſe the Oile, like to that which is in the bottome of a Lampe; a foule Pan, and a foule bleare-ey'd Hoſteſſe.

Thus my Imagination running from one thing unto another, I met at laſt with the truth; and having gone another League, my fancie wrought ſo with mee, that I could hold no longer. For as it is with your Women that are with Child, ſo was it juſt with me. Eructa-

tions

tions and belchings did come and go from my ſtomacke to my mouth, till at laſt I fell a vomiting, till there was not any thing left within me. And even yet to this day, mee thinks I heare thoſe little Chickens, thoſe poore pretty fooles, cry ſtill peepe, peepe, within my bowells.

Being in this miſerable taking, I ſate me down on the ſide of a hollow Ditch, that ſerv'd for a fence to certaine Vines that were thereby; conſidering with my ſelfe what misfortune I had, and was like to runne into, much repenting my ſelfe of my adviſed departure. But it is, and ever will bee, the faſhion of young fellowes, to caſt themſelves away headlong, upon their preſent pleaſures, without having any eye, or any regard in the World to their future hurt, or the harme that will follow after.

## Chapter IV.

*Guzman de Alfarache, recounteth to a Carrier what had betided him with his Hoſteſſe: and diſcourſeth of laughing. After that he tels two ſhort Tales; one of a covetous Phyſitian, the other of two young men, how they uſed the ſaid Hoſteſſe: And upon the necke of that fals into a learned Diſcourſe touching the pardoning of injuries.*

TRoubled in minde, full of care and thoughts, and penſively muſing with my ſelfe, I lay all a long on the ground, leaning mine head upon mine arme; when by chance a Carrier hapt to paſſe by, who went along with empty Mules, which were to bee laden with Wine at the Village called *Cacalla de la Sierra*. He ſeeing me ſitting in this melancholly manner, a young Stripling all alone, afflicted in minde, handſome in my perſon, and reaſonably well clad, as one that had beene much made of heretofore, began (as I then conceived) to pitty my troubles, and to take compaſſion of mee, asking mee, what the matter was, that I was ſo ſad. I told him all that had hapned unto me in my Inne; and had ſcarce made an end of my Tale, when hee brake forth into ſuch a Youle of laughing, that hee was ready to burſt, and I to break forth into Choller. And that face of mine, which before was as pale as aſhes, was ſet on fire by thoſe coales of anger, which were kindled in my breſt againſt him. But becauſe I was not then a Cock that ſtood upon my owne dunghill, nor ſcarce mine owne man; as alſo for that I found my ſelfe diſarmed, and as it were in a deſart by my ſelfe: I held my tongue, and ſaid nothing unto him, becauſe I could not crow as I would. For it is diſcretion to diſſemble that, which a man cannot helpe; Patiently brooking this rather grinning than laughing: And thoſe ends that are doubtfull in obtaining, muſt be throughly firſt conſulted one, and be reduced to ſome certaine ground and Principles. For opinions are various, and honours vitreous, glaſſy, and ſubject to breaking. And if I ſhould there, at that time, have miſ-behaved my ſelfe, happily he would have laid hold on me firſt, and by adventuring to gaine upon him, I might have runne the hazzard, if not the certainty of loſing all. For *Competition* is a thing to be avoided. But if it cannot be avoided, but that wee muſt needs have it, let it bee with our equals; and rather of the two, with thy Superiours, than thy Inferiours; but have a care that thou doe not over-match thy ſelfe with thoſe that are two ſtrong for thee, leſt they trample upon thee, and tread thee underfoot. Every thing hath its Vice, and there muſt an account be given of it. But although I did forbeare him; yet he had ſo heated me, that out of the warmth of that choller, which yet boyled within me, I could not chooſe but tell him.

My friend, Doe you ſee me coated for a Foole, or with a Fooles Cap on my head? Or what elſe is it that occaſions you thus to laugh? He rather increaſing than ceaſing his laughter, as if it had been a taske put upon him, or a part that he had been enjoyned to play: ſo faſt it came from him, that gaping with his mouth fiſt-wide, he let his head fall on th'one ſide, (for he was not able for laughing to hold it upright:) and laying both hands as hard as he was able, one while upon his belly, another on his ſides, for feare of burſting; he was ſcarce able to ſit upon his Beaſt for falling, and ſeemed with his extreme ſtraining of himſelfe, as if he would at every bout have come tumbling down on the ground.

I was about to anſwer him ſome three or foure times, but I could never come to doe it: for I no ſooner offered to ſpeake unto him, but hee preſently fell afreſh to his laughing till he chuck't againe; ſo did his pot run over, when it once fell a boyling.

God bee thanked yet at laſt, after this inundation and ſuddaine breaking forth of waters (that thoſe overflowings of *Tagus* could not be greater) began to fall by little and little, by patches and by pieces, now a word and then a word, as well as he could, having taken a little breath,

breath, delivering his minde by halfes, like one that ſtumbles and goes, and goes and ſtumbles, he blundred forth theſe words unto me: My good Youth, I doe not laugh at your ill ſucceſſe, nor do your miſ-fortunes glad me any whit at all: but I laugh at that, which hapned to this Woman ſcarce two houres ſince. Did you haply meete with two young fellowes, that were *Camorades*, and walkt along together, and ſeemed by their habit to bee Souldiers; the one clad in a medley greene ſuite; the other in gray or aſh-coulour'd cloth, with a white doublet cut to the skin? Theſe two (quoth I) by your deſcription, if my memory doe not faile mee, when I left the Inne, remained there behind, being newly come in when I went my way, and called for their dinner. Theſe then (ſayd the Carrier) are thoſe that have revenged your quarrell. And the jeſt, that they put upon the Hoſteſſe, is that which I now laugh at. But if you go my way, get up upon one of theſe beaſts; and as we ride along I will tell you how it was. I thanked him for his kindneſſe, as I had good cauſe ſo to doe, conſidering my preſent neceſſitie, rendring him ſuch good language, as I thought might make ſufficient payment for ſuch a courteſie. For good words requite good works, when a man is not able to pay him, that he is beholding unto, in better mony; and that he is in neceſſity, to whom the kindneſſe is done.

Mounting my ſelfe then upon this ill accoutred Gennet, howbeit it was no better than a plaine Aſſe with a pack-ſaddle; yet it ſeemed to me a *Silla de menos*, or eaſie hand-Chaire, a Litter or a Coach, drawne with four horſes. For ſome ſuccour, in caſe of neceſſity, although it bee little, yet it helpeth much; and that which is but a trifle to him that gives, is an infinite ſupply to him that wants: it is like a little ſtone, that is throwne into a ſmooth and cleer water, which maks not onely many, but great circles alſo. And then is a kindneſſe moſt to be eſteemed, when it comes in a good conjuncture, albeit it alwayes comes well, and never too late, ſo as it come at laſt. Now (me thought) I ſaw Heaven opened, and my honeſt Carrier appearing unto me in the ſhape of an Angell. His face was as joyfull unto me, as that of the deſired Phyſician is to him that is afflicted with ſickneſſe. I ſay, deſired; becauſe (as perhaps you may have heard) a Phyſitian hath three faces. Of a man when we ſee him, and have no need of him: of an Angell, when we are ſicke, and cannot bee without him; and of a Devill, when at one and the ſelfe-ſame time our ſickneſſe, and our purſe ends together, and yet for his private intereſt, and to gaine a fee, he followes us with daily viſites. As it hapned to a Gentleman in *Madrid*, who having ſent for a Phyſitian, for a certaine infirmity, wherewithall he was troubled, every viſit that he made, gave him a crowne. The humour ceaſed; but his Phyſitian was not in the humour to ceaſe from coming unto him.

Now the Gentleman when he ſaw that he was thorow well, and that his Phyſitian did ſtill continue his viſits, he got up one morning very earely, and went to Church.

Now when the Phyſician came to viſite him, and found him not at home, he asked his ſervant whither he was gone. He like a foole as he was (for there are ſervants ſtill enow for the Maſters hurt, but few for their profit) told him, that he was gone forth to Maſſe to ſuch a Church. My nimble Doctor, putting ſpurres to his Mule for to make more haſte, went with all ſpeede, to the ſaid Church, and ſearching for him at laſt he found him; and ſaid unto him: What a Gods name [illegible] you meane to commit ſo great an exceſſe, as to go abroad without my leave? [illegible]man, who knew well enough what he came for, and ſeeing that now he had no [illegible]ed of him, put his hand in his pocket, took out his purſe, drew forth a Crowne, and [illegible]ng it in his hand, told him; Here, take it; (maſter Doctor) for by the faith of a Gentleman, I now perceive, that this ſacred place cannot priviledge me from you.

See here, how farre the covetouſneſſe of a fooliſh Phyſician carries him; and how farre the vertue of a quick and noble diſpoſition in this other Gentleman.

I betooke mee to my beaſt, and fetching my riſe, I got upon his back, and away we went together: and wee had ſcarce gone a furlong from the place, but wee met with two Churchmen that ſat there hard by, expecting ſome paſſengers, that would carry them on horſe-back towards *Cacalla*, (for there was their dwelling) and had been at *Sevill* about a certaine Suit in Law. By their carriage and their countenance you might well know their good life and their poverty. They were well ſpoken men, very kinde, and very courteous; the one was about ſome 36. yeares of age, the other above fifty. They made the Carrier ſtay, they agreed with him; and, doing as I had done before, they got each of them up upon his Aſſe, and wee proceeded on our journey.

But all this while, ſo great was the laughter of this honeſt man, and ſo exceſſive beyond all meaſure, that he could ſcarce go on with his tale: for betwixt every word he would let go the

ſluce of his ſides; whileſt like a Flood that furiouſly breakes forth, his laughing ſuddenly fluſhes out upon him: and as in houſes, where men vittaile upon the way, a man ſhall meete many times with a bare couple of Hens onely amongſt five hundred perſons; and ſee what they want in good cheere, they make up in good mirth: ſo this mans laughter was three-fold more than this diſcourſe; ſo farre did his ſplene out-talke his tongue. Theſe his delayes were ſo many Speares in my ſides; every deferring was a farther provoking: ſo that I was all this while upon thornes. For he that hath a longing deſire to know a thing, would willingly have one word come treading on the heeles of another; and with a quicke and nimble pace come (if it were poſſible) huddling all at once out of the mouth.

Never any woman that hath beene with Child, did ever more earneſtly long for any thing, than I did to know the ſucceſſe of this buſineſſe. Mee thought I did conſume and pine away while I was held in this ſuſpence, I could have burſt for anger, that my eares were put off, from having a preſent hearing: for I could not but expect, but that ſome great matter muſt ariſe from ſuch a glorious and ingenious Fabricke as this made ſhow to be. I began to conceit with my ſelfe, whether ſome fire falne from heaven, had conſumed the houſe, and all that was therein: or whether thoſe young fellowes had ſet the houſe on fire, and roſted my Hoſteſſe alive: or at leaſt (for a leſſer revenge could not be taken of ſo vile a creature) whether or no they had ſtript her ſtarke naked, and hung her up by the heeles upon an Olive-tree, and given her ſome thouſand laſhes, till they had left her for dead: for leſſe things than theſe his laughter could not promiſe. Howbeit, I muſt confeſſe, had I beene then ſo wiſe and conſiderate, as I ſhould have beene, I ought not to have look't for any great matter, or to preſume that any good thing could proceed from one that was thus immoderate in his laughter. For even that which is moderate doth in a kind of manner, accuſe a man of lightneſſe, argue indiſcretion, want of judgement, and ſtore of vanity: but that which is diſcompoſed, and out of reaſons compaſſe, is (though there be never ſo much occaſion offered) the marke of a mad-man, and the onely note of an abſolute Aſſe, or complete Foole.

At laſt (God be thanked) this Mountaine brought forth its Mouſe: in concluſion, he told us, (but with a thouſand ſtops and jumpes, and his wonted bounds and curvets of laughing) that he having ſtayd to drinke a little wine, and to tarry the comming of a Companion of his, whom he had left behind, hee perceived, that the Hoſteſſe of the houſe brought in on a Plate, a Froyze of ſix eggs; three of them ſtarke naught; the other not ſo bad; which ſhe ſet before them: and going about to divide this their Froyze or Tanſey in twaine, it ſeemed unto them, that it made a certaine kinde of reſiſtance, refuſing (as it were) to be parted, one piece hanging (like torne ragges) at the taile of another, Whereupon, becauſe this ſeemed to bee ſome-what a bad ſigne, and ſuch as they did not well like of; they began to ſearch a little more narrowly, what ſhould be the cauſe thereof. They were not long in diſcovering the truth: for they might diſcerne certaine knobs and knurs in it; which, had it bin any body but my ſelfe, hee might at firſt ſight have ſeen how the world went, and where the fault lay; but being a young Lad, I ſhould eaſily have ſwallowed ſuch a Gudgeon, and ſhould in good manners have ſligh[illegible] it over. But theſe were a little more curious, and more Court-like, and ſifted [illegible]nely, that they found to their ſeeming, three little round bumps, like three little [illegible] heads clotted together. And this cleared the doubt; for finding the bils of theſe [illegible]poles ſomwhat hard growne, and none of the tendreſt, the pad that lay in the ſtr[illegible]as preſently perceived. And they taking one of them betweene their fingers, going about to cruſh and break it in pieces, it put forth his bill, and began (though dead) to peepe forth its head, and ſpeake aloud unto them, and told them plainely, whence, and what he was. So they covered the Plate, clapping another thereupon, and whiſpered ſomewhat in ſecret amongſt themſelves: what it was, I then knew not, howbeit afterwards it did manifeſt it ſelfe; for preſently one of them called out, and ſaid; Hoſteſſe, have you any thing elſe for us? ſhe had a little before (in their ſight) bought a *Sabalo* (which is a fiſh like a Shad) which ſhe had put upon the ground for to rub off the ſcales of it, telling them I have ſuch a Fiſh here, whereof (if you will) I ſhall ſpare you a ſlice or two, other meat have I none. I pray (mother) ſaid they, broyle it us quickly then, for we muſt be gone; and if it ſtand with your good liking, ſet a price what you will have for it all, and we will carry it home along with us. She ſaid, it being cut out into pieces, every ſlice will yeeld me a Royall, and I cannot bate you a farthing of it. They ſaid, No: they thought it was to much, one Royall profit in the whole, were very good gaines.

At

At last they agreed for two Royals; For a bad pay-master never reckons what he receiveth, nor stands a bucking for that, which he is to take up upon trust. It went against her heart to let them have it so, howbeit the gain of two Royals in four, for so short a time as she laid it out of her purse, did work much with her, and made her willing at last to let them have it. She cuts it out into pieces, broyls two of them, they eat it, the rest they wrapt up in a Napkin of her own; and after they had fill'd their bellies, being not well contented with their ill usage, instead of paying their reckoning, they reckoned without paying. For one of the young fellows, taking the Froyze of Eggs in his right hand, went directly thither where the old woman was, unpanching the belly of an old rotten sheep, that had dyed in some ditch, to make thereof Tripes and Chitterlings, or (as the Spanish word hath it) *Mondongo's*; and with all the force that he had, threw it full in the face of her; sealing up both her eyes therewith, which looked like an old Wall all to be dawbed with rough-cast. Which playstered eyes of hers, he had made so blinde and painfull unto her, that not daring to open them, she cryed out, as if she had been mad, whilest this his other Companion, behaving himself, as if he had rebuked him for it, and that he might be ashamed to use a poor old woman in this uncivill kinde of fashion, threw me a handfull of hot ashes in the very face of her, and so they got them out of doors, telling her, as they went away; Ah you old rotten Carrion, *Qui en tal haze, que tal pague*, you are now paid in your own money: what you got by your cozening, you may now put it in your eye.

She was toothlesse, chap-faln, hollow-eyed, and wappering withall; her hair sluttishly hanging about her ears, unkembt, and as greazie, as it was knotty; a fouler Swine no man ever saw: mealed she was all over, like a Mullet dressed with flower, or a Flounder that is ready for the frying-pan; with a gesture so graciously scurvy, a look so pleasantly fierce, and in all the rest so handsomly ill-favoured, that as oft as you shall but think either of it, or her, you cannot (if your life should lye upon it) but you must needs burst forth into laughter.

With this, he ended his story, telling us, that he had now matter enough to laugh at all the dayes of his life. Whereunto I answered; And I to weep. Why, quoth he? Because when time was, I did not do the like: but like a coward (as I was) suffered my revenge to come from another hand. But I vow (if God give me life and health) it shall cost her dear; I will make her pay for the old and the new; I will have my penny-worths out of her, and make my self that full amends, that the longest day she ha's to live, she shall think upon the Eggs, and the Youth.

The good honest Clergy-men much condemned their Hostesse, and did as much reprove my speech; for that I seemed to be grieved, that I had not done her a mischief. They both set themselves against me, and turning towards me, the antienter of the two, seeing me so angry, and full of choler, spake thus unto me:

Your hot and young bloud moves you to say that, which your own good nature and ingenious disposition will by and by confess to be ill: and I hope in God, that I shall work so much good upon you, that you will be sory for the present: for what you have said; and study to correct hereafter, not onely the acting of any such violent deed, but the very thought of it.

Saint *Matthew* in the fifth Chapter of his holy Gospel, and S. *Luke* in his sixth, read us this lesson; *Love your enemies, and do good to them that hate you.* Wherein you are first to consider, that the Evangelist doth not say, Do good unto those, that do ill unto you; but he saith; Do good to them that hate you. For suppose that your enemy should hate you, yet it is impossible that he should hurt you, unlesse you will your self. For, it being an infallible truth, that we are to account those as true goods, which are to continue for ever: and those which fail us to morrow, (as they often do) are more properly to be called evils, for the evil use which we make of them: since that in the trust that we have in them, *& nos ipsos, & illa amittimus*, we lose both them and our selves. We may reckon those our enemies, to be our best friends; and these our friends to be our greatest enemies; in regard of the effects which arise from the one and the other: For, from our enemies, ariseth all our true good; & from our friends, our assured hurt. We may plainly perceive, how that the greatest good that we can draw from the faithfullest friend that we have in this world, can be no more, than to pleasure us either with his purse, by giving us all that he hath; or by his life, by employing it in those things that give us content; or by his honour, by not sticking to hazard that for us, when our reputation shall lie at the stake. In which two latter, none will adventure themselves; or there are so few of them to be found, that I doubt we shall

not be able to produce any example in theſe times wherein we live. But ſay it were ſo indeed, and that there were ſome ſuch kinde of men now adayes, and ſhould jump together in all theſe three repeated particulars, when they have done all that they can, it is much leſſe (if in that which is not at all, a *magis* and a *minus*: a more, or leſſe, may be found) than a Geometrical point. For, when he hath given me all that he hath in this world, (were it never ſo much) it is too ſmall a ſubſtance to free me from Hell. Beſides, men do not now adayes ſpend their wealth, and their riches upon the vertuous, but ſuch as are conditioned like themſelves, and aſſiſt them in their ſins; and theſe are the friends that they reckon of, and to theſe their purſe is open.

If for my ſake, my friend ſhould loſe his life, one minute of time is not added thereby unto mine; if he ſhould put his honour in peril; nay, ſay he ſhould be willing to loſe it quite for his love to me, I ſay; that is not honour, nor may it be ſo called: for true honour is that which is ingaged in the ſervice of God; and whatſoever is otherwiſe, and hath not ſome reference thereunto, is falſe and evil. So that, whatſoever my friend ſhall throw upon me, being it is temporal, and of no continuance, it is unprofitable, vain, and of little, or no worth at all. But mine enemy proves all pure Wheat; all turns to profit, that comes from him to me; ſo that my ſelf will be willing to make true uſe thereof. For, from his ill-wiſhing to me, do I come to wiſh well unto him; and therefore God will wiſh well again unto me, and do me good, (though I deſerve ill) for that I do good for ill. If I pardon him a light injury, to me are forgiven and remitted an infinite number of ſins; and if, he ſpeak ill of me, and I ſpeak well of him, his evil language cannot hurt me; and his bitter tongue ſhall bring me a bleſſing. *Come ye bleſſed of my Father, &c.* So that by his thoughts, words, and works, mine enemy makes mine to be good and true.

And what is the cauſe, think you, of this ſo great a wonder, and whence is the cauſe of this ſo excellent a vertue? I ſhall tell it you, becauſe it is a thing commanded by God, becauſe it is his expreſſe will and commandment ſo to do. And if we are to obſerve that of the Princes of this world; much better (without compariſon) is it to keep that which is commanded us by the King of Heaven; before whom are humbled all the hearts both of heaven and earth. And that ſaying of his; *I command you this*, is a ſweet conſerve, which is applied to the diſtaſted palate of him that is commanded. As if the Phyſicians ſhould preſcribe their ſick Patients to take flowres of Oranges, young preſerved Wall-nuts, buds of Limons, Rindes of Pome-Citrons, the Roots of wilde Borage, or Bugloſſe. What ſhall I ſay now? O my good Lord, do not give me any ſuch thing! for a body that is ſtrong and in health, can by no means away with it, but is rather unpleaſing than otherwiſe. But for the better ſwallowing of theſe Pills, and to make the reliſh the ſweeter, they are ſo well Candied and rolled up in Sugar, that what was hard in it ſelf to be taken down, is now become ſweet and ſavoury unto us. The like effect doth this ſweet Conſerve of Gods word work with us. *I command* (ſaith the Text) *that ye love your enemies.* This is a dainty Sauce, made for that ſour Morſell, which before was unſavoury to our taſtes. So, that which goes moſt againſt our ſtomacks, and which fleſh and blood can hardly endure, by reaſon of its bitterneſſe, being to our concupiſcences and fleſhly deſires, no better than very Gall and Worm-wood: The Spirit tells us in the voice of a good Phyſician, now it is made more pleaſant, more ſavoury and ſweeter for you, ſince that Chriſt our Redeemer hath ſo commanded it. So that if a man ſhould now ſtrike me on the cheek, I would turn the other: for it is an honour unto us punctually to obſerve thoſe orders which are delivered unto us, by thoſe that are ſet in Authority over us, and not to break them in the leaſt branch, or tittle.

A General doth command one of his Captains, that he make good ſuch a ſtrong place, or paſſage, by which the enemy is to paſſe; where, if he will himſelf, it ſhall be in his power to overcome him, and to kill him: but his General tells him; Take heed, I charge you, for it much importeth my ſervice, and it is my pleaſure ſo to have it, that when he ſhall paſſe by you, you offend him not, but let him go quietly along, notwithſtanding that he ſhould give you cauſe to the contrary, and provoke you all that he can to fight with him.

Now when this his enemy ſhall paſſe thus along by him, and ſhall brave him to his face, and revile him with reprochfull and injurious terms, calling this Captain Coward, and other the like diſgraceſull names, will this Captain (think you) though thus mightily abuſed, and affronted in the face of the whole Army, offered him hereupon any offence at all, or violently ſet upon him? No certainly; But he will rather laugh at him, as a Braggadocio, and vain-boaſter, and though he could eaſily have overthrown him, and kill'd

him

him at pleasure; yet he doth it not, onely because he would keep that Order which was given unto him: And if he should have broken it, he had done very ill, and contrary to his duty, and therefore had well deserved to be punished for it. What reason then is it, that we should not diligently observe the orders and Ordinances, given us by God? Why should we go about to break them; or seek even in the least kinde of manner to contradict them? If a Captaine, for his pay only, and upon hope of some better preferment (which is a hazard whether he shall attaine thereunto or no) shall be so punctuall: why should not we be as observant, since we shall gaine thereby a celestiall reward; which is reserved for us? Especially, since that he that made the Law, had the first handfell of it himselfe, and submitted himselfe thereunto, by suffering and receiving from that unhallowed and sacrilegious hand of an under officer, a great buffet on that most sacred face of his, without returning him so much as an evill word, or any angry look.

If God himselfe could be content to indure such rough usage, and pocket it up with so much patience: Why should this same *Nada del hombre*, this same nothing of man, this *res nihil*, why I say should he be puffed up with pride, transported with passion, and stand upon his *punto*, and termes of honour? And why, for to receive satisfaction of a poor silly word, shot out unawares, or advisedly; or howsoever (complaining of the impatiencie of the wrong) breaking forth into rage, should one Christian challenge the field of another, seeking amongst Infidels, as if he were one of them himselfe, a place, where to fight it out, or (to speake more truely) to thrust themselves wilfully into the hands of the Divell, their mortall enemy, flying from those of their Creator?

Of whom we may learne, that when he was to leave this World, and was to seale his last Will and Testament, he suffered himselfe to be nayled to the Crosse, his body to be bored, his flesh to be torne, being full of paine, and gored all in bloud, from the sole of his foot, even to the crowne of his head, whose hair did cleave to his most precious bloud, being congealed and clodded together in hard plotted Knots, and marred, as it were, with the cruell wounds occasioned by that his sharpe thorny crowne, which they scornefully crowned him withall. And when he was to take his leave of his Mother, and that his beloved Disciple, amongst other his last words that he uttered, as it were by way of his last request, and charge unto them, and in that his violent and extreme agony, which was then plucking up his soul by the rooces from his divine body, he prayed unto his eternall Father, that he would pardon those that had thus persecuted him, and put him to this so shamefull and painefull a death.

This mildnesse of our Saviour, was imitated by Saint *Christopher*: who, when he had a sound box on the eare given him, calling that to mind, which his Master had before received, told him that strucke him: If I were not a Christian, I would be revenged on thee. So that revenge then, is a member put apart from the Children of the Church our Mother.

The like blow was given to Saint *Bernard* in the presence of his brethren; and they being very earnest to revenge this wrong done unto him, he ranne in amongst them, telling them: It is not fit that we should revenge the injuries done us by others, when as we doe all day long, kneeling humbly on our knees, crave pardon for our owne offences.

Saint *Steven*, when they were stoning him to death, doth not grieve for those cruell blowes, which bereave him of his life: but his sorrow was, that these bloudy Ministers should lose their soules: and grieving for them, desires God, even then, when the pangs of death were upon him, that he would pardon his persecutors, and *Saul* especially, who being deceived, and zealous of his Law, thought to merit heaven by looking to the cloaks and other cloths belonging to those that were the Executioners; to the end that having nothing to hinder their armes, they might, being rid of those lets, wound him with the greater force.

And so fervent was his Prayer that this glorious Apostle Saint *Paul* was afterwards reduced to the faith, who like a wise Doctor, well experienced in this Doctrine, finding it to be so necessary a thing, and so much importing our salvation, as nothing more, gives us this good counsell: That we should forgive and lay aside all anger, that we should not suffer the Sunne to go down upon our wrath. Rather blesse them that curse your persecutors. Give them to eat, if they suffer hunger, and if they be a thirst, give them drinke: which if you shall not do, the same measure that you mete unto others, shall be meted unto you again: and as you forgive, so shall you be forgiven.

The Apostle Saint *James* saith: Without mercy shall they be judged, that have no mercy, and the rigour of justice shall be returned on those that are rigorous.

Very fearefull of the breach of this divine precept, was *Conſtantine the Great*; who, when one told him, how his enemies to affront him, had in contempt and ſcorne of him, throwne ſtones at his picture, wounding him with their ſtroks in the head and the face; ſo great was his modeſty, that neglecting the injury, he began to touch and feel with his hands from place to place all the ſeverall parts of his body: Asking when he had ſo done; What are become of theſe blowes; where are thoſe wounds you talk of? I feel none, nor have I any paine of all thoſe thou tell'ſt me, they have done unto me. Giving thereby to underſtand, that there is no diſhonour done to any, but to him that will eſteem it ſo. Beſides, he was willing thereby to inferre, that whoſoever does thee an injury, ſhall not ſcape ſcot-free, or go cleer away with it, though thou doe not revenge it; nay, though thou for thy part ſhouldſt pardon the wrong that he hath done thee: For what injury he hath offered unto thee, he hath likewiſe offered the like unto God; whoſe, both thou, and he art. *Duenno tiene eſta hazienda*; theſe goods have an owner; and therefore you muſt not be your owne carvers. For, if in a Princes Palace, or a Kings Court, any affront ſhall be done, it is likewiſe done unto the Lord thereof: nor ſhall the pardon of him that is affronted be ſufficient, abſolutely to excuſe the other, becauſe by that indiſcreet act of his, and inferred injury, are likewiſe injured the Lawes of that Prince, the good goverment of his houſe queſtioned, and his Kingdome ſcandalized thereby. And therefore God ſaith, *Revenge* belongeth unto me; and when I ſee my time, I ſhall puniſh the offender: Vengeance is mine, and mine own hands ſhall execute the ſame. Wretched then is that man, who is thus threatned; for if Gods own hands ſhall give him his chaſtiſement, better had it been that he had never been borne. So that you muſt never requite ill with ill, unleſſe thou wilt that ill ſhall light upon thy ſelf. Moreover, thou ſhalt merit much thereby, and thou ſhalt be thine own pay-maſter: for, by imitating him that commandeth thee, thou ſhalt be made like unto him. Give way therefore to the ire and fury of your perſecutors, that you may merit Gods favour: Thank him for theſe outrages and wrongs that are done you and you, ſhall in requitall, receive glory, and obtaine eternall reſt---And there he reſted.---

I would faine have committed to memory that good Doctrine which he delivered unto me to this purpoſe, that I might repeate it here unto you. For it was all heavenly ſtuffe. Fine, moſt fine, Holy Scripture. From that time forward I unfeignedly propounded to my ſelf to make true profit thereof; And if it be well conſidered, he ſpake very home, and well unto me. What greater revenge can there be, than that a man may be revenged if he will? *Poſſe, nolle, nobile*, is as true a ſaying as it is olde: And what thing can be more foul than revenge, being that it is a paſſion of injuſtice? And ſuch a one, as none is more odious in the ſight both of God and Man? For it is only proper unto bruit beaſts. Revenge is but a kinde of cowardice, and a certaine *Actus fœminilis*, an effeminate Act, and womaniſh kinde of weakeneſſe: Whereas the forgiving of a wrong, is a glorious kinde of Victory. The revengefull man makes himſelf the *Reus*, when by pardoning, he might be made the Actor; that is, inſtead of an Accuſer, the Accuſed. What greater preſumption can there be in the World, than that the creature ſhould uſurpe the office of his Creator? appropriating that unto him, which is none of his; and going away (as we ſay) with another mans wealth, whereunto he hath no right in the World? If thou thy ſelf art not thine owne, or in thine own diſpoſall; neither haſt thou any thing of thine own in thee, that he, who (as thou ſay'ſt) hath offended thee, can take from thee. Such actions as theſe, thou canſt not commence thy ſelf, they belong unto thy Lord, which is God: Leave vengeance therefore unto him. God will take it of the wicked, *tardiùs aut citiùs*, at one time or another, early or late. And that cannot be termed too late, which is in a continuall inclination to its end. And to take it out of his hands, is a haynous offence, a mighty miſ-regard, and a contempt in the higheſt degree.

But admit ſatisfaction ſhould belong unto thee, and that the Law were in thine own hands; tell me: I pray thee, What thing can be more noble, than to doe good? And what more good, than not to doe ill? One onely, which is this; To doe good unto him, that doth ill unto thee, and doth perſecute thee, as it is commanded us, which we are bound to obey. For, to repay ill with ill, is the Devils office; to doe good to him that doth good unto thee, is a naturall debt between man and man; nay, the wilde beaſts of the Forreſt do acknowledge as much, and do not wax furious againſt thoſe, that doe not ſeek to hurt them. But to procure and work that mans good, that would do thee a miſchief, and cut thy throat, if it were in his power to doe it; this is *opus ſupernaturale*, a work above the reach of nature: It is that divine Ladder, whereby we climb up by the rounds of Charity, to glorious Eternitie: it

is that key of the Croſſe, which openeth the gates of Heaven: it is the ſoules ſweet peace and the bodies quiet reſt. But revenge is a life without quietneſſe: one calls upon another, and all unto death. Is not he a foole, nay, worſe than a mad-man, who, if his doublet chance to wring him, will thruſt his ponyard into his owne body? And what other thing is revenge, than to doe ill unto our ſelves, out of a deſire to doe ill unto others? And to plucke out both our owne eyes, to put out one of our emenies? Or to ſpit againſt Heaven, that it may preſently fall againe in our owne faces? *Seneca* underſtood this Doctrine wonderfull well, when an enemy of his having given him a box on the eare in the Market-place, and all that ſaw it, did incite him to complaine thereof unto the Juſtice; he ſmiling upon them, ſaid unto them? Were it not a fooliſh part in me (thinke you) to call a beaſt into the Court? As if he ſhould have ſaid, With that buffet, he like a beaſt did expreſſe his rage; and I like a man, did ſcorne and contemne this his bruitiſh behaviour. Can there be any bruitiſhneſſe greater than to doe ill? Or can there bee any greatneſſe like unto that, which ſhall deſpiſe the ill that is done him, and ſet light by it?

The Duke of *Orleans* having formerly been injured by one, when he was afterward King of *France*, he was put in minde, that hee might now be revenged of the wrong he then received: for now it was in his power to doe it. But he, looking ſowerly on him that did ſo adviſe him, told him; it was not fit that the King of *France*, ſhould revenge the wrongs of the Duke of *Orleans*. If, for a man to conquer himſelfe, be counted ſo great a Victory; Why, by ſubduing our appetites, allaying our anger, and rebating our rancour; doe not we gaine unto our ſelves this glorious Palme? Since that, (beſides that which is promiſed unto us in the future) even in this life alſo, we ſhall avoide many miſchiefs, which may either take away our life from us, or rob us of this our vaine honour, and conſume our wealth. O good God! had I been a good Lad, that which I heard from that good man, I might have been the better for it all the dayes of my life. But I was young, and paſt it quickly over; that treaſure was ill beſtow'd upon me, I loſt it; it was Corn that fell in the high-way, it did not thrive with me. His good converſation and Doctrine entertained us to *Cantillana*, whither wee came about Sun-ſet: I with a good deſire to my Supper, and my Companion with an earneſt expectation to have his, but that never came. The two Clergy-men made their ranke apart, and went to a friends houſe that they were acquainted withall in the Towne, and we to our Inne.

## CHAPTER V.

*How* Guzman *and the Carrier did eate of a young Mule, thinking it had been Veale being cozened by his Hoſt in* Cantillana, *and diſcourſeth by the way of the cozening tricks, which bad Hoſts put upon poor Travellers.*

WHen the Company, that came along with us, had left us, and were gone every man his way, I ask't my Comerade, Whither ſhall we go now? He told me. Here's an honeſt Hoſt hard by, one of my old acquaintance, a good-fellow, where we ſhall be well lodged, fare daintily, and kindly entertained. Well, along we trudge together, till we came to this his ſo much commended Inne, having brought me (as you ſhall heare hereafter) to one of the veryeſt theeves, and arranteſt knaves, that there was not ſuch another in all that part of the Countrey wherein he liv'd.

Heare new occaſion of matter was offered, freſh plates ſet upon the boord, and ſuch proviſion, as you may therewith well entertaine the time. Was I not (thinke you) in fine taking when I leapt out of the Frying-pan into the fire; and fell into *Scylla*, ſeeking to ſhun *Charybdis*? Our Hoſt had for his owne uſe a good ſtrong Aſſe, and a *Galitian* Mare, that was a pretty little Tit. And becauſe men in their neceſſity, doe not ſtand upon beauty, youth, nor pompe of apparrell; but content themſelves onely with Night-caps, when their heads are mangie and ſcabbed; it is no marvell, if the like ſhould happen even amongſt brute beaſts. They were alwayes fellow-feeders in one Stable, one Racke, and one Field; and he that was owner of them, took no great heed to have them tyed faſt, but let them go looſe of purpoſe, to the end that they might helpe the other Beaſts in the Inne in the repeating of their leſſons. Whereby it came to paſſe that this Mare grew great with Foale, by living at large amongſt this good company.

It

It is an inviolable law in *Andaluzia*, That no ſuch Conjunction, or Commixture be permitted; and to this end, grievous penalties are ordained. This Mare then, having in her due time foled a pretty young Mule, mine Hoſt was willing to make profit thereof, and to that end nouriſhed and bred it up. He kept this buſineſſe very ſecret ſome certaine dayes, and was wonderfull carefull, that it might not come to light: but becauſe he ſaw it was not poſſible for him to hide this matter long, and to keep it from the knowledge of the World, that he might not give his enemies advantage of revenge; carried away partly with the feare of his owne hurt, and partly with the greedineſſe of gaine, he reſolved (this laſt Friday night) to kill him. He cuts me out the fleſh of it into pieces, which he pouders up in a pickle made of purpoſe, and made ready againſt the next day, (being Saturday) for his Gueſts: *partes minutiores hujus animalis, ut pedes, ilia, venter, &c.* all the entrales and offals of this beaſt; as feet, tripes, the cragge-end of the necke, tongue, braine and the like. We (as I told you) came to our Inne in a very good houre: for he that travailes, takes contentment upon the way, that he may come into his Inne betimes, that he may have meate to fill his empty guts, and a bed to reſt his weary bones.

My Companion, as ſoone as he had alighted and taken off his lading, and put up all things ſafe, ſet up his Aſſes in the ſtable, taking order for their dreſſing and their feeding. But I came thither ſo wearied, that I was not able when I lighted to ſtand upon my legges, but was faine to lie down on the ground, and was not able for a great while to turne my ſelfe any way in the World. For all my muſcles and ſinewes were quite benum'd, my legges and feet ſwolne, with their long hanging down for want of Stirrops, my breech extremely gall'd, my parts neerer my privities full of paine, as if ſo many needles had been ſtuck in my Groyne; my body was all out of joynt; but of all other parts, my belly (for pure hunger) did moſt pittifully complaine.

Now when my companion had ordered his beaſts of burthen, and had eaſed them of their carriages, and had done all things fitting for one of his profeſſion, my turne was next to be ſerved, and therefore ſaid unto him; How (my Camerade) what thinke you of the motion? Is it not high-time, thinke you, to go to Supper? He anſwered, It was; the motion, he told me, was very good, and that it was high-time indeed; for hee meant to be ſtirring very early in the next morning, and to reach betimes to *Cacalla*, and ſo to lade, and away. We ask't our Hoſt, if he had any thing in the houſe for our ſupper? He anſwered, he had; adding withall, that we ſhould fare very daintily. He was a burly-kind of man, yet of a ſtirring metall, nimble-witted, cheerfull both in his ſpeech and countenance, an eternall talker, but above all a moſt excellent Villaine. His promiſing perſon (I confeſſe) did deceive me: for, ſeeing ſo good a preſence, and not having knowne him before, the Spot at firſt ſight, made ſhew of a good Card. And hearing him ſay that he could feaſt us bravely, my very heart and ſoule did leape for joy within me: Oh, they were comfortable words! Whereupon I began with my ſelfe to give thanks unto God, reverencing his holy name, for that after our troubles, he gives us eaſe; after ſickneſſe, health; after a ſtorme, a calme; after ſorrow, joy; and a good ſupper after a bad dinner.

I know not, whether I may well tell you or no, of a tongue-error, but a witty one, which came from a plaine country-fellow, whom I knew in *Olias*, being a certaine Village belonging to *Toledo*: yet I ſhall make bold to tell it you, as well for that the thing in it ſelfe is not ſcandalous, as alſo for that it proceeded from the ſincere heart of an old Chriſtian.

There were certaine good-fellowes playing at *Primera*, and the third having diſcarded, the ſecond cri'd, I am *Prime*; God be thanked yet at laſt, that I have got one game ſince I plaid, ſaid hee that had the *Prime*. The other Countrey-fellow that was in the *interim* drawing his Cards, when he had puld them, found them to be all of one linage, and being glad that he had got the hand of him, ſuddenly brake forth at that very inſtant, and ſaid; Not ſo much God be thanked neither, as you think for; for I am Fluſh. If ſuch a *diſparate*, or idle toy as this, being not purpoſely ſpoken with either due meaſure, or to any certaine end, but by meere chance, as it were, may be brought upon the Stage; this is its proper place, and the Scene well layd here, conſidering what befell us. Its very well, (ſaid my Companion) to mine Hoſt; Now and thou beeſt a good fellow, tell me I pray thee, what dainty morſell haſt thou provided for us? This *Socarron*, this diſſembling Raſcall, that was all for his commodity, and cared not (ſo as he might get by him) whom he coozened, told him; Yeſterday I kild a very delicate fine young Calfe: which, becauſe the damme thereof was very weake; and by reaſon, (through the drineſſe of the yeare) that he wanted feeding, he cauſed his calfe to be kill'd af-

ter

ter it was ſome eight dayes old; The offals, and the intrailes are ready dreſt, take what you pleaſe. After this, crying out *Proſto*, be gone, lifting up his leggs, and fetching a friſcall, or two, he flies away in the aire in a trice, clapping his heels with his hands as he ran along. With this my heart began to be ſomewhat lighter than it was before, and it did rejoyce me much to hear him ſay that he had the calves intrailes; the very naming whereof, did make my Bowells to move within me. And taking my leave of my former wearineſſe, looking cheerily upon him, I ſaid unto him; Mine Hoſt, bring us what you think good.

Thereupon, the Cloth was laid in the turning of an hand, our Linnen was cleane, and our bread was not ſo bad as before, but our wine was paſſing good: we had alſo a freſh Sallad ſet upon the Board in a faire Plate: But for ſuch waſhie Tripes as mine then were, I held it no good meate. And had it it been ſpared by me, either for any of the intrailes, or any one foot of a Calfe, it would never have griev'd me. But theſe promiſes might deceive any diſcreet judgement whatſoever, making the taſt of an hungry appetite drunken with the very conceit of his promiſed fare. The *Italian*, by way of advice gives us this good leſſon; That in the promiſes of Women, Mariners, and Inne-keepers, we ſhould place ſmall confidence: for they that are given to commend themſelves and their own things, (as all theſe uſually do) they do all (gueſſing the whole by the greater part) generally lie. After he had ſet down the Salled, he brings us in two little Plates, in each of which lay a little of this ſame Calves-pluck, I ſay, a little; for he was afraid to give us too much, leſt through too much plenty, hunger being ſatisfied; and the belly glutted, we might more eaſily come to the knowledge of this deceit of his.

Leading us thus leaſurely along, we follow the ſent we firſt ran upon, and it ſeemed to our taſte, that we ſtill did eate, according to that conceit which we had intertained, of this our ſuppoſed tender Veale; and the more we thought thereon, the greater edge was ſet upon our appetite, and as we had a longing deſire thereunto, ſo by degrees we were ſtill calling for the ſame hand againe. For My Companion, there was no care to be taken for him, all meats were alike to him; for he was borne amongſt Savage people, and bred up by brutiſh Parents, whoſe palate was ſeaſoned from the cradle with a clove of Garlick; and your rude ruſticall Clownes, (as a thing not belonging to their, either goodneſſe or cleanlineſſe) in matter of taſte can ſeldome diſtinguiſh ill from good. To moſt of them, there is want of perfection of their Senſes; and albeit they ſee, yet do they not ſee that which they ought to ſee; and though they hear, yet do they not hear that which they ought to hear: and ſo in the reſt, but more particularly in the tongue, which was not given them to murmure againſt any man, much leſſe againſt thoſe, that are gentle and noble, as well in their diſpoſition, as their deſcent. But theſe kinds of un-nuttured people are like unto Dogs, who ſnatch and ſnap at every thing, ſwallowing all that comes in the compaſſe of their chaps, without chewing: or like unto the Oſtrich, that will devour a horſe-ſhooe, though it be never ſo red-hot. And if a double-ſoled ſhooe, which had done ſervice three Winters in *Madrid*, treading thorow thick and thin; *lodo y mierda*, durt and turds had been ſet before ſuch a fellow as this, he would have made no bones of it, nor found no difference in the going down of it. But that I, who was daintily brought up, and borne of civill Parents, and ſuch as were neat and curious in their diet, that I ſhould not find out this deceit, my hunger muſt needs be great; and this muſt excuſe my errour. The deſire that I had to eat ſomething that was good, was exceeding great, ſo that every thing ſeemed too little to feed mine eye. This cunning Rogue, mine Hoſt, gave it us by way of diſtillation, Limbeck-faſhion, now a little, and then a little: and therefore it is no ſuch wonder, had it had far greater defects, that it ſhould ſeem unto me a well-ordered Banquet.

Have you not heard it ſaid, *Que à la hambre, no ay mal pan?* That all bread is ſavoury to the hungry? I ſay, all ſeemed to me to be Suckets, and Marmalate; and me-thought I ſhould never have enough to fill my belly. I demanded, if he had any thing elſe: He told me, we might (if we would) have the brains fried, with ſome butter and eggs. We told him we would: but we are ſlower in telling him ſo, than he is in going about it; nay, almoſt in the dreſſing of it. In the meane while, leſt we might not catch cold with ſtanding ſtill, like your Poſt-horſes when they have runne their ſtage: he gave us, to intertaine the time withall, a piece of fleſh folded, and rolled up made out of the Tripes, (after the faſhion of your roſted Olives of Veale) together with ſome of the Filme and rinde of the belly, I did not like the taſte of it halfe well: it ſmelled (me thought) like rotten ſtraw that's thrown out upon the dung-hill. Whereupon I thruſt it from me, leaving it to my Companion, who entred

roundly upon it, devouring it as greedily, as a man would grapes, coming into a Vineyard in the time of Vintage. Nor did it grieve me awhit to see him fall to it so lustily; but was rather very glad of it, thinking by this means, that when he had been full-fed therewith, a greater part of the braines would fall to my share. But it fell out contrary to my expectation; for he had never awhit the more cloyd his panch, nor did he cease to lay about him with as good a stomake, as if he had not all the day, nor night before, eaten so much as one morsell of bread.

The egges and the braines were set upon the Board; and when my honest Carrier saw this fine Froyze, he began according to his old wont to laugh out aloud, with as wide a throate as you can imagine. I did fret and fume, and chafe with my self out of all cry, conceiting with my self, that he made himself merry with my misery, and took delight, to represent to my remembrance those former loathsome things, that had lately overthrowne my stomake.

Our Host thereupon looking very soberly on us both, with a watchfull eye observing our behaviour, and with an itching eare, listning to hear what we said; seeing his discomposed laughter so ill seasoned, an unoccasioned, (as hee thought) was much moved thereat; fearing that he had found out his Knavery: for untill then, there was not any matter offered, that might move occasion of laughter. And therefore he was jealous, that the Fox was now unearthed, and this must needs be it. And because a guilty person carries his beard evermore upon his shoulders: *& umbra sua imagine concutitur*, and is afraid of his own shadow; because his own conscience doth accuse him: and the committed fault, represents the deserved punishment. Every the least act, or inkling of any thing whatsoever, he imagineth, that it is all meant against him; and that the very aire doth whistle forth his offence, and publish it to all the world.

This poor Rogue (albeit a very villaine) hardned in roguery, and habituated in mischief, and being steeped, and lyen long in soke, (as it were) in thefts, and all kinde of coozenages, was now out of heart, and grew silly, and weak-spirited, and was ready to quake for feare. Besides, such kinde of men are commonly Cowards, and have onely an outside of men, but no manhood at all. Why is it (think you) that some men hack and hew, and threaten to kill and slay, and like Tygers lay about them? I will tell you the reason of it. They doe this, not out of true metall, but to make others afraid, and to supply by this roaring carriage, the defect of their courage being like herein, to doggs; whereof those that are barkers are least biters; they are like your little *Melitean* dogs, or a kind of foisting-hound, which are made all of noise and barking; but if you turne towards them, they clap their tailes between their legs, and runne away. Our Host was (as I have told you) much troubled; for fear, suspition, and jealousie, is a property, that is still incident to an evill liver. He hath quite lost his stirrops, nor did he know how or which way to recover his seate; but began to swear with many great and horrible oathes, that it was very good Veale that he had set before us, and that we had no just cause, nor reason to laugh as we did; and if need were, I could bring an hundred witnes to testifie as much.

These words he uttered with much passion; with a face as red as fire, that the bloud seemed to trickle down his cheeks, and sparkles to flash for very anger forth his eyes. The Carrier lifting up his head, and looking earnestly upon him, told him; Who meddles with you (my friend) what wrong have we done you, that you are so cholerick? We doe not touch upon you, no not so much as to aske you how you doe, or how old you are? Have you any Edict, or proclamation here in the house, that doth set a taxe or rate upon laughing; or to what proportion and quantity your guest shall be tyed to laugh, if at any time he be so disposed, upon paine of some great forfeit? or is this a generall sessing set thereupon, and you alone have got the Monopoly thereof into your hands? If it be so, good mine Host, let every man weep, or laugh, as he will himself; and take that a Gods-name which is your due, and recover your right of us by order of Law. I tell you, Sir, you are mistaken in mee; for I am of that free disposition, that if I were minded to laugh at any thing of yours, I am not so meal-mouth'd, but I would plainely tell you at what I laught.

These eggs now put me in mind of those other, which my Companion here did eate day at an Inne some three Leagues hence. Then he up and told all that had passed, as my self before had delivered unto him; and that which happened afterwards in his presence, betwixt the old Hostesse, and my two young Souldiers; in the relating whereof, he seemed as if he had been bathing himself all the while in Rose-water, if a man might judge the content he took in repeating the same; by his passions, his lowd laughters, strange visages,

viſages, antick geſtures, and the diverſities of poſtures, in the bowing and writhing of his body; all the while that he was telling him this tale. Mine Hoſt, he fell as faſt a bleſſing and croſſing himſelf, pouring out Volleys of Exclamations, calling upon, and often reiterating the name of Jeſus, a thouſand times one after another, and lifting up his eyes to heaven, ſaid; Our bleſſed Lady be my helper; let her ſtill be preſent with mee! *Mal haga Dios, à quién mal haze ſu Oficio*, let ill betide him that performes his function ill. And becauſe in his Theeveries and his Rogueries he was ſo good a Proficient, he might reſt aſſured, that this malediction did not belong to him, ſo well had he exerciſed that trade all his life-time. He began afterwards to walk up and down, and ſeeming ſometimes to wonder, ſometimes to complain, at laſt he cried out; I wonder a Gods-name, that the earth did not open, and ſwallow up this Inne? How is it poſſible, that God ſhould diſſemble his anger, and forbeare to puniſh ſo vile a woman? Does this old witch live? is ſhee not gone down quick to hell? All Travellers have juſt cauſe to complaine of her; I now ſee, that all men have reaſon to complaine of her ill uſage; no man comes away contented from her; all finde fault, not one that comes thence well ſatisfied, but are ſorry that ever they came within her doores. Either all her gueſts are very bad, or ſhee herſelf: but it is not to bee imagined ſo many can bee all bad; and therefore ſure the fault is onely hers.

For theſe and other the like tricks, no paſſenger will ſtay to baite at her Inne, they have all ſet a Croſſe upon her doore, they bleſſe themſelves when they go by, and make large ſtrides till they be paſt that wicked houſe. I ſweare unto you ſhee would be well whipt, if ſhe were well ſerv'd, that all other coozening queanes, ſuch as ſhee is, might take example by her. Her Signe was once pull'd down, and order taken, that ſhee ſhould not keep victualling any more. And I much wonder, that ſhe turning againe to the old byas, the officers returne not againe to puniſh her anew.

There is ſome thing in it, as the Ant ſaid, but what it is I cannot tell you, that makes her to doe as ſhe does. There muſt be ſome myſtery in it, what ever it be: for ſhee robs and coozens with the like liberty to day, as ſhe did yeſterday: and now, as laſt yeer. And (which is worſt of all) ſhe coozens with that confidence, as if ſhe were commanded ſo to do. And ſure it muſt needs be ſo; for the Guards, the Searchers, the Promoters, and the Alguazils, all ſee her dealings, and know them well enough; yet they winke at them, and ſay not ſo much as black is her eye. Theſe I warrant you be her fee'd men, ſhee gives them good content, and greazes them in the fiſt with that, which ſhe filches from others. For if it were not ſo, as ſure as the coate is on your back, they would have another fling at her, and pay her home againe with a pox in her own kinde.

Howbeit (wretched woman as ſhee is) it is puniſhment enough unto her, that ſhe liv'd ſo long, as to diſcredit her houſe. For if ſhe had kept good meat in her houſe, and us'd her gueſts well, behaving herſelf civilly, and demanding reaſonable reckonings, her cuſtome would have been good, and all Travellers would have flockt unto her houſe. And you know, *De muchos pocos hiziera mucho*, Many a little, makes a mickle. For by carrying but one graine of Corn away with him at once, the Ant fils his granary, and lives in ſtore and plenty all the year long. And had ſhee done ſo, the proudeſt Officer of them all, could not have ſet his foot upon her neck, and torne her ungodly gains out of her throat. But ſhame light upon her, and all ſuch as ſhe is. The Devill take ſuch conſcionable Inne-keepers.

When he had come thus farre and made his full point, I thought he would there have left. But he comes about againe, giving us this cloſe for a fare-well: Bleſſed be that unſpotted purity of the Virgin *Mary*, that though I am but a poor man; yet I thank God for it, there is no ſuch ill uſage in my houſe, no ſuch deceitfull tricks; Every thing here is ſold for the thing it is: no Cats for Conies; nor Mutton for Veale. *Limpieza de vida, es lo que importa*, a cleare conſcience, is that, which will carry a man through thick and thin. He may goe bare-faced through the world, and never be aſhamed, that hath led an innocent life. Let every man enjoy that which is his own, and not defraude and deceive one another.

Here he ſtopt, and took a freſh breath, which was no more than needed, conſidering how faſt his tongue walkt: and though happly he might think, that we might the more willingly give him the hearing, now that we had ſupt; yet he here cuts off the thread of his Diſcourſe, and ſayes no more, giving us in ſtead of our ſecond Courſe, two or three Olives, as big as Nuts. We intreated him that againſt the next morning we might have a morſell of his Veale made ready for us. He undertooke that care, and we went to take our reſt. Our boulſters were our pack-ſadles, and our bedding the cloaths that covered our Packs, which we ſtretcht out as plaine as we could upon the bare Floor; and ſo we paſt over that night, as well as we could.

## CHAPTER VI.

Guzman *goes on in recounting what ſucceeded with his Hoſt of* Cantillana, *who had given him to eate of his young Mule, and of the misfortunes that befell the ſaid* Guzman: *And how it is not good upon the way to quarrell with our Hoſt.*

HAd I, the Sunday morning now following, when it was day, been ſet in the Market-place in *Sevill*, or at my mothers own door: I am doubtfull, whether they would have known me or no. For I was monſtrouſly flea-bitten by that infinite number of Fleas, which had fed that night on my carkaſe, that it ſeemed they likewiſe endured a dear year, and that I was offered up unto them for a prey. And ſo in the morning I got me up, looking for all the world, like one that had been ſick of the ſmall Pox, or infected with the Meazles; my face and hands, and all my whole body over, not having one free place, or one ſpot of white; no, not ſo much as you might put a pins point between; ſo miſerably was I tormented with them.

But fortune was herein ſo favourable unto me, that what with the wearineſſe of the journey, and taking a cup or two over night more than ordinary, I ſlept ſoundly, dreaming heavenly dreams, no noiſe hindring my quiet reſt; till that my Companion, whoſe minde ranne upon hearing Maſſe betimes in the morning, and of his ſeven Leagues which he had farther to go, did awaken him.

We riſe by the break of day, before the Sun was up. And calling preſently for our breakfaſt, it was brought us in; but it did not like me ſo well, as it did my fellow; for every morſell that went down his throate, ſeemed to him, as if he had ſwallowed ſo many bits of the brawne of ſome young tender Peacocks, and he did ſo much commend the goodneſſe of it, as if all the world could not afford a daintier diſh. And I was forced ſo to eſteem of it, by laying my faith upon another mans taſte, attributing that defect to mine own bad palate; which this hungry hound had inherited from the Aſſe his father. But to ſpeak the plain truth, it was ſtark naught, and as vile meate as a man could eate, and did not ſtick to ſpeake it ſelfe unto me in a known language.

To me it ſeemed tough, and unſavory, and of that little which I did eate over-night at ſupper, my ſtomack was ſo furcharged with it, lying as heavy within me as Lead, that I was not able for my life to digeſt it. And albeit I was ſomewhat fearfull, leſt my fellow ſhould finde fault with me, yet did I not ſtick to ſay unto mine Hoſt; How comes this fleſh to be ſo tough, and of that evill reliſh, that a man can ſcarce faſten upon it with his teeth? He told me; Do not you ſee, Sir, that it is fleſh that hath been newly kill'd, and wants time for the mortifying and making of it tender? Hereupon my Companion taking his Q It is not (quoth he) any lack of mortifying, or hanging in the aire; or that it does not eate tender and ſhort enough, that makes this Gentleman to be ſo ſqueamiſh: but becauſe he hath been fed from his cradle with Spice-buns, Sugar-carks, and freſh egges, all other meats ſave theſe, are hard both to his teeth and ſtomack. I ſhrunk up my ſhoulders, and held my peace, as one that knew full well, that I was now as it were in another kind of world, and that it was but one dayes patience more, and then I ſhould be out of danger of underſtanding ſuch kind of language any longer.

But for all this, I could not herewith reſt contented, but ſtill me thought this meate had an ill ſmatch with it, of I know not what.

And as I was thinking thereon, it preſently came in my mind what unneceſſary oaths mine Hoſt made the night before, when he vow'd and ſwore it was Veale.

This ſwearing and ſtaring of his, I did not like half well, and did therefore thinke he did the rather lie, becauſe he did ſo deeply ſweare: for the truth hath no need of the confirmation of an Oath, unleſſe it bee in open Court before a Judge, or in caſe of great neceſſity. Beſides, all ſuch ſatisfaction, as offers it ſelfe by way of prevention, before the thing delivered, is queſtioned or called into doubt, makes the faith of the reporter to be evermore ſuſpected. I know not what did aile mee or what might be the cauſe of this; for although I did not really conceive any aſſured ill, I did as little preſume, that there could be any good meaning herein. It was onely a touch of my imagination, a ſtrange apprehenſion, that I had in my head at that time. Whereupon I did not long dwell, nor made any great reckoning of it. So paſſing it over I call'd for a reckoning, my Companion told mee, I ſhould let my purſe alone, for he would pay for us both. Whereupon I went aſide leaving him to be the Pay-

maſter:

maſter: thinking with my ſelfe that out of courteſie, and this our new acquaintance, he was not willing that I ſhould pay my ſhare of ſo ſmall a ſhot.

I was very thankfull to him in my heart for this his kindneſſe, and was not wanting to ſing forth his prayſes, for this his freeneſſe and love which he had ſhowne unto me, ever ſince that he met me upon the way, giving mee my horſe-hire and my dyet *gratis*; not ſuffering me to ſpend one penny in his company.

I thought with my ſelf, this World would ſtill hold, and that whereſoever I went, I ſhould meet with ſome one or other that would beare my charges, and let me ride for nothing. I had now taken heart unto mee, and began to be prettily well freſht, and to forget my mothers teat, as if it had bin anointed with Aloes, Worme-wood, or the like bitter ſtuffe, and ſo in all other things did I doe the like, whereunto I had been formerly accuſtomed. And becauſe it ſhould not be ſaid of me, *Que delos ingratos eſt avellano el infierno*; That hell is full of ungratefull perſons: While he was paying the ſhot, I was willing to ſhew ſome part of my thankfulneſſe, by leading out his Aſſes to drink, and carrying them back again to their cratches, to the end, that while they were ſadling and making all things ready, they might champe upon their ſtraw, and make an end of their provender. I put a helping hand to all that was needfull, rubbing their foreheads and their eares, as well as I was able.

Whilſt I was buſied in this, I had laid my Cloak upon a bench hard by, which like Quick-ſilver before the fire, or ſmoake before the winde, was vaniſht away in an inſtant, that I never could ſet eye on it any more; nor could deviſe in the world what ſhould become of it. I thought with my ſelf, that either mine Hoſt or my Conſort had, to make themſelves merry therewith, hid it from me in jeſt. But it was now no more a jeſting matter, for they began to ſweare in good earneſt that they had it not, nor knew what was become of it: I made diligent ſearch for it even to the very gate which was ſhut, and had not yet been opened. There was no body there in the houſe but our ſelves, and mine Hoſt, and therefore me thought it was impoſſible, that it ſhould be loſt, and that I might peradventure forget my ſelf, and have put it apart in ſome other place. Hereupon I ſought up and down all the Houſe; and going out of the Hall into the Kitchin, it was my hap to come into a back Court, where I found a great plaſh of freſh bloud, and hard by it a Mules skin, fairely ſtretcht out to its full breadth and length, from the which the feet were not yet cut off; The ears were there at large, and all that part of the head towards the fore-head, neere whereunto were thoſe other bones belonging to the head, only the tongue and the braines were wanting: Which I no ſooner perceived but I was preſently confirmed in my doubt.

Here upon I ſtraight go forth to call in my Companion; To whom, when I had made ſhow of the Hide, that had bound in our breakfaſt and our ſupper, I then ſaid unto him; What think you now Sir? Are not thoſe things (trow you) Sugar-caks, and new-layd Egges, in compariſon of theſe that we eate at home? This is that Veale, forſooth, which you ſo extolled to the skies; and this is the Hoſt you promiſed ſhould provide us ſuch dainty cheere.

What think you of the ſupper now, and the breakfaſt which he hath beſtowed upon us? Hath he not dealt well with us I pray? Have we not been excellently well uſed? He (good man) is none of theſe coozening Hoſts, and cheating Inne-keepers, that will ſell a Cat for a Cony; and put away Mutton, for Veale. This is that innocent man, that may go unmaskt throughout the world, and cares not who ſees him, and looks him in the face, he is ſo honeſt a man. This is that *integer vitæ, ſceleriſq; purus*, ſo unſpotted in his life and conſcience, and ſo free from all ill dealing, that out of his own integrity, made no bones to curſe our Hoſteſſe, and the evill uſage of her Gueſts.

He was ſtrucken ſo dumpe, and ſo full of wonder, to ſee what I had ſhew'd him, that he had not a word to ſay; but with his head caſt down into his boſome, went ſlinking away from me, and was ſo amazed at this ſtrange ſight, that all the day after till we parted company, I could not get from him ſo much as a word, ſave what paſt at our parting when we were to take our leave each of other. And that which then came from him, ſeemed to be drawne out of the very guts of him, as you ſhall hear anon.

Howbeit, I was not (as every man may imagine) very well pleaſed with this unhappy accident; yet notwithſtanding (that this his flood of laughter might by this means be dammed up, or the current there of turn'd another way, wherewith every moment before, my very heart and ſoul was overflowne, and in a manner, quite drowned.) I was wonderfully overjoyed with this my miſ-fortune, which did ſo much the leſſe grieve me, becauſe he had ſo great a ſhare in it.

What with this (which was vantage enough) and the ſtrong beleef that I had, that no man

but mine Hoſt could poſſibly convey away my Cloak, I began ſomewhat more boldly to charge him with it; it being ever incident to a good cauſe, to put ſtrength into weakneſſe; and to add courage to the faint-hearted. I began to put it home to him, and told him plainly that he ſhould anſwer me my Cloak, and that he had ſtoln it: But he very ſcornfully denies, jeering, and fleering at me, and the more earneſt I was, the more merry he makes himſelf. Wherewith my patience was ſo much moved, that I could not hold, but threatned him in my choler with the Juſtice; yet did I not touch at all on this new buſineſſe, nor ſpake one word to him of that which I had ſeen. But he, for that I was a young Lad, a poor Boy, and nobody to take my part, began to domineer over me, telling me, that he had a rod for me in his pocket, and other the like reproachfull words, terms onely befitting Cowards, and men of baſe condition, ſuch as himſelf. But becauſe worms will turn again, if they be trod on, and the gentleſt Lambs grow mad, if they be too much wrong'd, upon multiplying of words one begetting another: and the later worſe than the former, at laſt we fell foul. And as the fewneſſe of my years and weakneſſe of my ſtrength would give me leave, I tore out half a brick-bat from the ſide of a bench thereby, and threw it at him as hard as ever I could drive; which if I had hit him withall, and that he had not hid himſelf behinde a pillar, I think I had beaten out his brains, and been fully revenged of the wrong he did me. But he ſcap'd my hands, and ran as faſt as his legs would carry him into his Chamber; whence he came forth in all haſte with his ſword drawn in his hand.

Here you may ſee what manner of men theſe roaring-boys be, ſince that this great Gull doth not now ſeek to defend himſelf with the force of his ſtrong and brawny arms againſt thoſe weak and tender twigs of mine; forgetting that he ſaid he would whip me, ſeeking now to offend me by force of arms, I being but a griſle, and a poor ſimple diſ-armed chicken. In this manner then he makes towards me with his naked ſword; whileſt I fearing what might follow, ſtood upon my guard with two pibble ſtones, which I had pluck't out of the pavement. Which when he ſaw I had now ready in my hand, his courage began to be abated, and did not dare to draw nearer unto him.

Now with the noyſe and out-cries that were made upon this occaſion, the whole Inne was in an uproare; and all the Neighbours thereabouts hearing the ſtirre, came flocking in upon us, to ſee what the matter was. All the whole ſtreet haſted thither, and with them a great throng of people, as well Juſtices, as Notaries. There came in two *Alcaldes*, both at the ſame inſtant, and each of them ſtrove to have the hearing of the cauſe, labouring to prevent each other. And the Notaries for their private gain, every one ſaid that this buſineſſe did belong unto him; whereupon they grew at difference and odds between themſelves.

Upon this contention grew a ſecond quarrel, no leſſe fierce and tumultuous than was ours: for on both ſides, they digg'd up their Grand-fathers graves, twitting one another in the teeth with their Fathers and their Mothers, not ſparing one anothers wives, ripping up their faults, and the courſe of life that they led; Wherein perhaps they did not lye: but they would no more underſtand one another, than did we. Whileſt we were in this hurly-burly, come in certain *Regidores*, accompanied with other worſhipfull Burgomaſters of the Town, who laboured to make peace between them, and laid hold on me. *Que ſiempre quebra la ſoga, por lo mas deglado:* for the weakeſt muſt ſtill go to the wall: and the Skean there breaketh ſooneſt, where the threed is fineſt. The ſtranger, the poor Soul, the miſerable man, he that hath no ſhelter, no friends to ſtick unto him; no great ones to favour him, he that is deprived of all ſuccour and comfort, and hath no body to defend him, he is the man, whom the Juſtice doth firſt take in hand.

They would needs know, what this ſtir was, and whence it grew. They called me aſide, and took my confeſſion: I plainly told them all that had paſſed; but becauſe ſome that were there by, might chance to over-hear me, I went apart with the *Alcaldes*, and told them in ſecret, that which I knew concerning the *Machuelo*, or little young Mule. They were firſt of all deſirous to approve and verifie the cauſe; but it ſeeming unto them, that they had time enough to diſpatch all, they uſed diligence for the apprehending of mine Hoſt, who was careleſſe of any ill that might come unto him for that offence. And perſwading himſelf, that all this enquiry was onely about the Cloak, made but a jeſt of it, and laugh'd at it as a thing of nothing, and could no way touch him, for default of information, and thoſe due proofs that I was to make, having no man, beſides the Carrier, to witneſſe for me, that I was ſeen to come in thither with a Cloak.

But afterwards perceiving, that by little and little, this piece of hangings came to be ſeen, to wit the skinne, and the reſt of the appurtenances, the Copy of my Gentlemans countenance

nance was quickly altered, and began ſuddenly to look blank upon the matter: ſo that when they began to examine him, and had withall before his face ſhew'd him the skin; confeſſing the fact, he was convicted, not having the heart to deny any thing; but told them the truth of all that had paſt.

For it is an aſſured truth, that baſe-minded men, infamous in their life, and ill-conditioned in their carriage and manners, are (as I ſaid before) rank Cowards, and of no courage in the world. For without having the torment given him, or before ever that he was threatned with the Rack, undemanded, he declared the Theſts, and the Rogueries that he had done, as well in that his Inne, as his robbing upon the High-way, when he was a ſhepheard: whereby he got him a ſtock, to ſet up for himſelf in this world. I all this while liſtened very cloſe: looking ſtill when his confeſſion ſhould bring my Cloak to light; but out of the malice and hatred he bare unto me, that was quite left out. I uſed my beſt diligence I could, to make it appear, but all would not ſerve the turn. After they had made an end of taking our Declarations; I mean, the Carriers and mine, becauſe we were ſtrangers, they did in that particular ratifie and approve what we had depoſed. And whileſt this Plea was depending, whether, or no (till it were determined) they ſhould carry me to priſon and keep me there (*tras pacientis, aporreada* (as they ſay) I muſt have the wrong, and be beaten too,) there were divers diſputes thereupon. The Notaries were very glad of this, and they did pretend I ſhould: but one of the *Alchaldes* ſtood up and ſaid, that I had reaſon on my ſide and was in no fault at all, and that they had no reaſon to queſtion me any farther; for it was puniſhment enough already for me, and too much too, that I was left thus naked in my Hoſe and Doublet, and was cozened of my Cloak. Hereupon they let me go, but mine Hoſt, he was led away to priſon, And leaving him there, we prepare for our journey: and all things being made ready, we begin to ſet forward, paſſing along that ſtreet, where the Clergy men ſtood looking for us, each of them took his Aſſe, and away we go. By the way I told them the whole ſucceſſe of the buſineſſe: they bleſt themſelves when they heard of it, and much pitied my caſe. But becauſe they could not help it, they committed it to God. My ſelf and my Companion, what with the long time that was ſpent in this broyl, and the haſte we had to be gone, we went away without hearing Maſſe; ſeeming rather to flie, than go forth of the Town. I (for my part) never miſt Maſſe before, being accuſtomed all my life-time to that dayly exerciſe of devotion. From that time forward, it entred into my head, that from ſo bad a beginning, it was impoſſible to look for a good ending. And that now, nothing could ſucceed well and happily unto me. And ſo it fell out, as you ſhall hear hereafter. Nor can it be otherwiſe expected, when we ſerve our ſelves, and not God firſt; and not begin with him, before we begin our buſineſſe.

## Chapter VII.

*Mans misfortune is here diſcourſed of, and to that purpoſe you have a ſtory told you of the gods of thoſe ancienter times: And how* Guzman, *being thought to be a Thief was apprehended; but afterwards being known what he was, he was ſet at liberty. One of the Clergie-men promiſeth to tell us a ſtory to entertain the time withall, upon the way.*



THE *Ægyptians*, a great while ago, in thoſe times of old being notable Sooth-ſayers, (as indeed they were) amongſt many other errours, which they had, this was one amongſt the reſt, that they adored *Fortune*, as a Goddeſſe; verily believing that there was ſome ſuch thing indeed. To her, they celebrated a Feaſt on the firſt day of the year, preparing ſumptuous Tables, making great Feaſts and coſtly Banquets, in a thankfull acknowledgement of the fore-paſſed year, and intreating her favour for that which was to come. They were fully perſwaded, that this Goddeſſe was ſhe, that had the diſpoſal of all things, giving and taking away at her pleaſure, as ſupream Governeſſe over all humane things. This they did, becauſe they wanted the knowledge of one onely true God, whom we adore and worſhip, by whoſe powerfull hand, and divine will, Heaven and earth are governed, and whatſoever is created in them both be it viſible, or inviſible. It ſeemed ſomewhat ſtrange unto them, and were touched therewith to the quick, when misfortunes began to light upon them; to ſee how one miſchief came upon the neck of another; one no ſooner paſt, but another at the heels of them, not giving them one hour of eaſe and quiet, never making an end, till they

they had made an end of man, and quite over-thrown him horſe and foot: And how again at another time (like ſo many Cowards) they came trouping all at once upon us, and never leave aſſaulting us, till they had utterly ruin'd us, and thrown this our houſe of clay down to the ground.

And on the contrary ſide again, the aire doth not aſcend with that nimbleneſſe and quick motion to the top of the higheſt mountains, as Fortune doth elevate and lift men up by wayes and means, neither ſeen, nor thought upon, never ſuffering them to continue ſtill firm, either in the one, or the other eſtate; to the end that he that is dejected may not deſpair; and he that is exalted, may not preſume. If the light of faith were wanting unto me, as it was unto them, I might (giving credit unto this their errour) happily ſay, when ſuch like misfortunes ſhould befall me; *Bien vengas mal, ſi ſolo vienes.* Welcome is that misfortune which comes alone: yeſterday morning I did complain of little wearineſſe, and of the demy-chickens that I had to dinner going diſguiſed in your Hermites habite, as unwilling to be known. Afterwards I came to make my ſupper upon the ſtinking panch of a young Mule; and which was worſe, to feed upon the fleſh and brains thereof, which was all one in a manner, as if I ſhould have devoured mine own fleſh; I mean, by his fathers ſide; which may be every mans caſe, as well as mine. And for an upſhot of all, the ill luck that I had at laſt, to be coozened of my Cloak. *Poco danno eſpanta, y mucho amanſa*: little loſſes do onely ſtartle and amaze men at the firſt, but great ones do quell and daunt a man, making him as gentle as a Lamb.

What treaſon hath been plotted againſt me? what ſquint-eyed Star hath ſcowl'd upon me? what misfortune followed me, ſince I came from home? For from the time that I firſt put forth of doors, all things have gone amiſſe with me, one miſchance being the fore-runner of another, and the ſad preſager of worſer things to come, which like a double *Tertian* went increaſing upon me, every fit being worſe and more violent than the former, not allowing me the leaſt *intervallum* of time, or any ſpace, or reſpit in the world to take any reſt.

Mans life is a ware-fare upon earth, there is no certainty therein; no ſetled aſſurance, no eſtate that is permanent; no pleaſure that is perfect; no content that is true; but all is counterfeit and vain. Wilt thou ſee, that this is true? Then hearken to that that I ſhall tell thee.

The great god *Jupiter* (for ſo the Poets fain him) having created all things upon earth; and man to be the enjoyer of them, commanded the god *Content*, to reſide in the world, not believing nor preventing the ingratitude, which afterwards they fell into, following their own proper pleaſures and delights, and bearing themſelves in a high and proud faſhion: for having this god continuing amongſt them, they did not ſo much as think on any other. To him they did ſacrifice, to him they offered their oblations, his name they celebrated with joy, and to him onely did they ſing ſongs of praiſe and thank-ſgiving. *Jupiter* ſcorning this contempt, and being mightily offended with man for this ſtrange neglect, called a Councell of the gods; and when they were all aſſembled together, he made unto them a long diſcourſe, wherein he informed them, of the evil correſpondence which man held with him, for that they did onely adore *Content*, as their true god; not conſidering the benefits which they had received from his prodigal hand, being meerly his workmanſhip, and by him created of nothing. And that therefore they ſhould deliver their opinions, what order was to be taken, for the redreſſing of ſo foul an abuſe, and what Medicines to be applied for the curing of this their madneſſe.

Some of the milder gods, out of their tender hearts, and mercifull natures, ſpake thus unto *Jupiter*.

Man, you know, is but a weak kinde of Creature, framed of a frail and brittle matter, a corruptible ſubſtance, ſoon diſſolv'd and turn'd to nothing; and therefore we think it fit, that they ſhould be holpen and held up by us, and that we ſhould yield them our ſuccour and aſſiſtance in all that we can. For, if it were poſſible that we could exchange fortunes with them, and were in the ſame eſtate and condition as they are, and every way equal with them, I doubt me, we ſhould do juſt as they do. And therefore we are not to make any great reckoning of the matter: but if we do, and that they muſt be proceeded againſt, we for our parts are verily perſwaded, that ſome milde and gentle correction will be a ſufficient remedy for the preſent.

*Momus* would fain have ſpoke his minde, and his tongue itcht to be let looſe, having already, entered into ſome free language, and would have laſht out farther, had he not been commanded to hold his peace, and to forbear till it came to his turn, and then he ſhould have a full hearing. He would gladly have taken hold on that occaſion, to have incenſed *Jupiter*, becauſe

becauſe it did ſo fairly offer it ſelf unto him: but obeying for the preſent, he meditated in the mean while on a long Oration, which he meant ſhould make for his purpoſe, when it came to his turn to ſpeak. Howbeit, there were not ſome wanting in the *interim*, of equal (almoſt) condition with himſelf, and of the ſame humour, who ſtood up and ſaid:

It is not fit (great God of Heaven) to leave ſo heynous a fault unpuniſh'd: for the offence is infinite, being committed againſt ſo infinite a Majeſty; & therefore the puniſhment ought likewiſe to be infinite. Our opinion is, that they ſhould be utterly deſtroyed, and made an end of at once, and never to have any more of them created anew; for there is no neceſſity at all of their being and living in the world, but may very well be ſpared.

Others would not agree to that motion, but did hold it fit, that great ſtore of Thunderbolts, with fearfull flaſhes of Lightning, ſhould be thrown down upon them, and conſume them all; and that others more good ſhould be created anew.

Thus as they were delivering their opinions, being more, or leſſe rigorous, according to their ſeveral qualities and complexions, till it came to *Apollo's* turn to ſpeak, who craving leave of the Houſe, and their favour obtained, in a grave voyce, and with a cheerfull countenance, he thus expreſt himſelf.

Supream Scepter-ſwaying *Jupiter*, higheſt amongſt the gods, both in power, and in piety: That grievous accuſation, wherewith thou chargeſt man, is ſo juſt, that we cannot gain-ſay, or contradict any vengeance, which thou ſhalt take of them. Yet withall, I cannot (out of that great reſpect which I bear unto thee) but utter what I think, and plainly to ſhew unto thee, what I have conceived in my minde, my words being as free from paſſion, as I hope they ſhall be from offence.

If thou deſtroy the world, in vain then are thoſe things, which thou haſt therein created; and it were imperfection in thee, to un-make that, which thou haſt already made; onely for to mend that which thou now findeſt amiſſe: Much leſſe, would I have thee to repent thy ſelf that thou haſt made man; for that will be but to diſcredit thy ſelf, and thine own work. Beſides, how can it ſtand with the power and goodneſſe of a Creator, to take too ſtrict a courſe againſt his Creature, and to exceed by extraordinary means, in his chaſtiſements?

To deſtroy theſe that are now living, and to create others a new, I hold that not ſo fit to be done by thee. For thou muſt either give them, or not give them free-will: if thou give them it, they muſt neceſſarily then be ſuch manner of men, as their fore-fathers were: if thou not give it them, they ſhall not be men: And ſo thou ſhalt have created in vain that ſo great and glorious a frame of Heaven, Earth, Stars, Moon, Sun, together with the compoſition of the Elements, and Millions more of things, which thou haſt made in ſo exact a manner, and ſuch a ſingular perfection. So that (which importeth your ſervice, if you will be pleaſed to take it into conſideration) there remaineth but one thing to be done to ſet all right again, without ſeeking for any other remedy; or that you ſhall be driven to any violent, or rigorous proceeding againſt them, to the prejudice of your clemency.

Thou (O *Jupiter*) gav'ſt them the god *Content*, whom they were to have with them, as long as it pleaſed thee, and no longer: for upon thy will and pleaſure, all things both in Heaven and Earth have their dependancy. Now, had they been ſo wiſe, that they could have continued thankfull towards thee, and have conſerved themſelves in juſtice and obedience towards thee, it had been a thing repugnant to the goodneſſe of thy nature and juſtice, not to uphold and protect them, by enlarging thy favours towards them, and multiplying thy bleſſings upon them. But ſince they have diſ-merited this by diſobedience, thou oughteſt in ſome ſort to puniſh them. For it is not fit, that they ſhould in tyrannous manner, and a ſtrong hand poſſeſſe theſe ſo great bleſſings, to offend thee hereby: But thou oughteſt rather to take this their god from them, and in his ſtead to ſend down his brother *Diſcontent* amongſt them, who is very like in favour unto him, and doth reſemble him ſo near, that a man can hardly diſcern the one from the other. And ſo by this means, they will ever after come to acknowledge this their own miſery, and thy mercy; thy happy eſtate and their own wretched condition; thy eaſe, and their trouble; their pain, and thy glory; thy power, and their own weakneſſe. And then, as thou ſhalt ſee cauſe, thou mayeſt diſtribute thy favour to thoſe that ſhall deſerve them, and according to thy loving kindneſſe recompence every man according to thine own good will and pleaſure, not making thy benefits alike common to the good and to the bad, by ſuffering all men equally to enjoy one and the ſame happineſſe. This courſe being taken with them, I am of opinion, that it will not onely be a ſufficient puniſhment unto them; but will alſo bring them to a due acknowledgement of their

errour. I have now ſpoke my minde, and ſhall now leave it unto thee (thou mercy imbracing *Jupiter*) to do that herein, which ſhall ſuite beſt to thine own good liking, and ſhall make moſt for thy ſervice.

With this brief advice, he ended his Oration. Then *Momus*, with his venomous tongue began to lay about him, labouring to exaggerate the offence, and to ſet it forth in its vileſt colours, induced thereunto not ſo much for goodneſſe ſake, as that inveterated hatred which he evermore bare unto mankinde. But notice being taken of his paſſion (which was a known diſeaſe in him) his opinion was reproved, and cry'd down by the general voice of that higheſt Court of Parliament: All commending the motion that was made by *Apollo*. The execution of whoſe ſpeech was (with an unanimous conſent) committed to *Mercury*: Who preſently (ſpreading his wings, and breaking with them through the Aire) deſcended down upon the earth, where he found the men of this world with their God, *Content*, feeding and making merry together, doing him all the honour they could deviſe, being far from the leaſt thought, that this their God ſhould (while the world indured) be alienated from their poſſeſſion.

*Mercury* came to this God, where he was; and having in ſecret delivered the Embaſſage unto him, ſent from the Gods above, was (though ſore againſt his will) forced to yield thereunto. The men were hereupon in an uprore, and ſought to hinder it all they could, and began with might and main to intereſt themſelves in the cauſe: and ſeeing that there was no remedy, but that this their God muſt be taken away from them, they ſtrove to defend him with all the ſtrength they could make; and taking ſtrong hold of him, they tugged hard for him, as deſirous to retain him ſtill amongſt them.

*Jupiter* perceiving how the world went, and what a coil they kept about him, came down amongſt them, and whil'ſt theſe men were buſied in laying faſt hold on his Cloaths, (uſing a pretty ſleight) he cunningly conveyed away *Content* from amidſt his Cloaths, leaving them *Diſcontent* in his ſtead, with the ſame Cloaths, and the very ſame habit of raiment, wherewith *Content* was at that time apparelled, taking him away from thence with him to heaven. Wherewith the men that were in this broyl were very well pleaſed (though thus deceived) thinking that they had prevailed in their purpoſe, and obtained what they deſired, ſince they had their God ſtill amongſt them: But it was not ſo well with them, as they thought it to be.

This errour of thoſe former times (the ſame deceit but living ſtill amongſt them) hath continued even to this preſent age. Men did think that *Content* remaineth ſtill with them, and that they had him ſure enough upon earth. But it is nothing ſo; for it is onely the bare raiment, and outward ſhape and reſemblance, which they injoy with them; and *Diſcontent*, clapt into his Cloaths. And if thou believe otherwiſe, or conceiv'ſt the contrary, thou art wide of the truth, and a meer ſtranger thereunto. Wilt thou, that I make this plain unto thee? Mark well then what I ſhall ſay unto thee.

Weigh and conſider with thy ſelf, in any kinde of manner thou thy ſelf ſhalt deviſe: the Feaſt, the Sports, the Bankets, the Muſicks, all the delights and joyes, and whatſoever elſe may moſt move thy inclination to the higheſt point of all, which thine own deſire can ſuggeſt and paint forth unto thee to the life. If I ſhall ask thee by the way: Whither goeſt thou? Thou wilt anſwer me perhaps, and that very proudly, to ſuch a feaſt of *Content*. I give it for granted, that there thou doeſt receive it, and that the place doth afford it thee; the Gardens being freſh and full of flowers; the Rivers planted with their ſilver ſtreams, and that the fountains diſtilling their drops of of pearle, may much cheer and glad thy heart. I ſuppoſe that thou haſt banketted thy ſelf in ſweet and pleaſant Arbours, where neither the Sun did offend thee, nor the aire annoy thee. And that thou didſt enjoy thy deſires to their full height, and that thou hadſt all the ſport and paſtimes that a man could wiſh. Yet not withſtanding, there is no contentment ſo abſolute in this world, which is not watred with ſome ſorrow. And though in all theſe things thou hadſt no diſtaſte at all given thee; but hadſt every thing according to thine own minde: yet when thou turneſt home to thine own houſe; or layeſt thee down in thy bed to take thy reſt, it is not poſſible but thou ſhalt finde thy ſelf weary, duſty and ſweaty, to have loſt thy ſtomack, or taken cold, to grow heavy, melancholy, and ſad; and peradventure either become mad, or dead. For amidſt our greateſt pleaſures, happen the greateſt misfortunes: And are uſually wont to be unto us Veſpers of fear, and of horror; and not Veſpers, where the night paſſeth merrily away from the beginning to the middle, and from the middle to the end: for in the midſt of this thy idolatry, all ſhall be taken from thee. Set not thy heart therefore upon them; but ſlight them,

and

and let them go by; as if thou didſt not know them: for there is no truſt to be had in them.

Now, by this time, (I doubt not) but thou wilt ingenioully confeſſe, that this diſguiſe did deceive thee, theſe Cloaths coozen thee, and this mask ſo blinde thy eye-ſight; That whereas thou didſt verily think, that thou hadſt *Content* now ſafe enough in thy hands, thou hadſt nothing more but his outward raiment; and in it, *Diſcontent*. Now doſt thou ſee, how there is no *Content* upon the earth; and that our true *Content* is onely in Heaven. And therefore, till thou meet with it there, do not look for it here.

When I reſolved on my departure, (O good God) what a deal of *Content* did repreſent it ſelf unto me? Me thought, the very thought of it wrought wonderfully upon me, apprehending no happineſſe to be equal unto this. With theſe eyes of my imagination I beheld onely *April*, and the beauty of the fields in that ſeaſon; not ſo much as once thinking on the *Auguſt*, that was to come after: as if I were to ſuffer nothing, and had been made of ſome impoſſible ſubſtance, that could not be ſubject to perturbations, or theſe fooliſh croſſes of this world. Thoſe long and even wayes, I conceited as things, that I was not to go: at leaſt, not to be wearied with them. To eat and drink at your Inns, and other the like victualing houſes, (as one that did not know what kinde of Vermine thoſe bloud-ſuckers were,) I thought they would have given me my meat for nothing, or if they did take money for it, that it would have been much better than what you have heard me tell you. The variety and greatneſſe of things: as Birds, Beaſts, Mountains, Woods, Cities, and whatſoever was inhabited with people, as if I had them all already in my hand, all did figure forth unto me *Content*, and nothing but *Content*; but could not finde it in any thing, but in a good and honeſt life.

I did frame in the fabrick of my brain, Caſtles of *Content*, and that all things ſhould ſucceed proſperouſly with me, and that whereſoever I came, I ſhould meet with my Mother, that ſhould make much of me, and my maid that ſhould make me unready, and bring my ſupper to bed to me, and that ſhould help me on in the morning with my Cloaths, and fetch me my breakfaſt. Good God who would think, that the world were ſo large and ſo long as it is? I had ſeen it in ſome Maps, and me thought it was all plain and ſmooth, and huddled (as it ſeemed there to be) altogether without any great, either difference, or diſtance. I did not imagine, there could have been ſo many troubles, and ſo many miſeries in it. But to ſay I never thought it, is a thing that betrayes a man to have lineally deſcended of a race of Coxcombs, it is a property, that belongs onely unto fools; it is the excuſe of rude and ignorant Aſſes, the Childes help, and the careleſſe mans refuge. For he that is wiſe and diſcreet ought ever to think on things afore-hand, to fore-caſt the worſt; and to prevent a miſchief before it come.

But I did like a ſimple Youth, (as I was) having neither wit nor government in me; and therefore I was juſtly puniſhed, for that living ſo at eaſe as I did; and being as it were in Paradiſe, I would go abroad into the world; and like my firſt fore-fathers, could not ſee when I was well, but I know not out of what vain humour, muſt go ſeek after the knowledge of good, and ill. How many things began I then to call to minde, when I came out of the Inne without my Cloak, and was not onely coozened, but made a common laughing ſtock to as many as look upon me! I would fain have then been feeding on the fleſh-pots of *Egypt*: O how I did long to be at home again! But (as the ſaying is) *el bien, haſt que ſe pierde, no ſe conoce.* Man knows not what happineſſe is, till he want it.

We were all ſad and heavy, and jogged on along in a ſullen and melancholly kinde of faſhion: and now my honeſt Carrier was no more ſo full of his laughing, as he was before; the winde was laid in that corner, by the trick that mine Hoſt had put upon him. Before, he threw ſtones on my houſe top, thinking to break the Tyles, and crack my Roof: but when he found his own to be made of glaſſe, he left his ſlinging, with-drew his hand, and kept himſelf quiet. It is leſſe ill, and more diſcretion to conſider with a mans ſelf, before he ſpeak, what he may chance to hear; and before that he do a wrong, whether it may be returned upon himſelf, or no. It is not good for a man to thruſt himſelf wilfully into danger. For when a man ſhall take too much liberty to himſelf; he ſhall finde a tongue for a tongue, and a hand for a hand. All things have their equall meaſure; like do, like have: And he that will be honoured of all, muſt honour all.

If it enter not (yet at leaſt it ought) into thy conſideration, that what thou haſt ſaid, or done in ſecret, either ſhall, or may be publiſhed by ſome one, or other to the world, and that thou mayeſt meet with ſuch a one, that either in word, or in deed, may reply that unto thee,

which thou wouldſt not willingly hear, and leſſe indure: Doe not ſtand upon thy ſtrength, nor rely too much on thine own might: For though thy affronts be not written in thy forehead; yet will it be made known to all the World. Doe not make thoſe thy enemies, whom with good uſage thou maieſt make thy friends. For it is not good to have any enemy at all, though never ſo weake. For from a little ſparke, ariſeth oftentimes a great flame. What thing's ſo faire and beautifull in it ſelf; what more worthy wiſe-men, what more befitting brave ſpirits and valiant Gentlemen; than to meaſure their actions by the rule of reaſon, to bridle and reine in their paſſions, and to carry an even hand in all that they doe: to the end that they may not act any thing unadviſedly, and put themſelves upon extremities? Doeſt thou not ſee, how the World is now altered with our Carrier? He was now as ſilent as the night, not a word that comes from him. He laughs no more, but hangs down his head in his boſome, not daring for ſhame to lift it up. Our good honeſt Clergy-men rode mumbling their Mattins to themſelves; I was thinking on mine owne mis-fortunes: and when all and every one of us were as it were in a wood, even in the thickeſt of all our contemplations, (every man thinking upon his own buſineſſe) two Miniſters of juſtice, with their Officers at their heels, came in purſuit of a Page, that had ſtolne from his Maſter great ſtore of money and Jewels. And by the marks that were given them; it ſhould ſeeme it was ſuch another ſtripling as my ſelf. They had no ſooner ſpied me, but they cryed out aloud: Ah thou thief, have we caught thee? we have thee ſafe enough now, thou canſt not eſcape our hands: And preſently hereupon they ſtruck me off the Aſſe (my brother) with their fiſts; and when they had me down, laying faſt hold on me, they fell a ſearching me, thinking to have found the ſtolne goods about me.

They took off the Pack-ſaddles, ſearched the Punnels, leaving not ſo much roome, as you may put a pins-head between, which they did not narrowly pry into: and when they could finde nothing there, then they began to exclaime, and cry out upon me; Ah, thou thief, confeſſe and tell us the truth, for we will hang thee here preſently, if thou delay us any longer. They would not hear me, nor admit of any excuſe I could make for my ſelf; and in deſpight of the World, without any other cauſe given, (ſave their own ſelf-will and opinion) I, and no other man, muſt needs be the fellow. They gave me many blowes, thumps on the breaſt, boxes on the eare with the backs of their hands, and many other outrages, wherewith they tormented me, and all, that I might not be ſuffered by them to ſpeake for my ſelf, and to pronounce ſomething in mine own defence. And although it did much grieve me, to ſee how ill I was uſed by them, yet I could not chuſe but laugh to my ſelf, for that my companion was worſe dealt withall; laying more load and harder blowes upon him, than me, as a receiver and concealer of this theft, and that he was my partner and ſharer therein.

Doeſt thou not here perceive the perverſe inclination of men, who have ſcarce any feeling of their own miſeries, when they ſee thoſe of their enemies to be greater than their owne? I was not half Cater-couſins with him, becauſe by his means, I had loſt my Cloake, and ſup't upon a mule. And therefore I did bear mine own hurt the better, becauſe he ſuffered ſomewhat more than my ſelf. They did beate him without mercy; they had no pitty of him in the World, but were ſtill bawling upon him, that he ſhould diſcover whither he had carried theſe goods; and to what ſecret place he had convey'd them.

The poor man that was as innocent as my ſelfe, and as free from any ſuch fault, as the child that is new borne, did not know in the World what to doe. He thought at firſt that they had been but in jeſt with him; but when he ſaw they were in earneſt, and paſt ſo farre beyond the bounds of ſport, and that it was now no longer a jeſting matter; He curſt the dead to the devill, and all thoſe that ſhould but ſhed a tear for him. This ſport did nothing pleaſe him, and wiſht by this time withall his heart, that he had never ſeen me. The Gown (as they ſay) was now bruſht cleane, not a ſpeck to be ſeen: all was unfolded, and ſearched over and over, but nothing at all to be found: and though the theft appeared not, yet the rigour of their puniſhment ceaſed not: But as if they had the Law in their own hands, or had been to ſit upon us as our lawfull Judges, they did uſe us moſt cruelly both in word and deed: perhaps it was given them ſo in charge amongſt other their inſtructions. Now they being weary with puniſhing us, and we with ſuffering it, they began to bind our hands, and pinion our armes to carry us back with them to *Sevill*.

Let it be in thy *Letany*, that God would deliver thee from committing any offence againſt theſe three *Holy's*; The holy *Inquiſition*, the holy *Hermanded* and the holy *Cruzada*: But if thou be faulty, then pray, that the Lord would deliver thee from the holy *Hermanded*: for the other *Holy's*, having (as they have) upright Judges, men of truth, knowledge, and Conſcience;

Conſcience; their Miniſters notwithſtanding and under-Officers, are of a different condition. And your Sergeants and Catch-pols belonging to the holy *Hermandad*, are in the generall, a kind of moſt lewd and wicked people; men without Souls, and not worthy to be ſpoken of, or named amongſt honeſt men. And very many of them, for a very little matter, will not ſtick to ſweare that againſt thee, which thou never didſt, nor they never ſaw, more than the mony which they took, to bear falſe witneſſe againſt thee (unleſſe thou beſtow the wine upon them, or otherwiſe content them, by greaſing their fiſt.) They are in concluſion, of raſcall kinde of race; very Varlets, Buckle-boſomes, Collar-catchers: in a word, they are Sergeants, and Catch-pols; and ſo by conſequence, theeves, peaſants, or but an Ace leſſe; and (as we ſhall tell you hereafter) thoſe that rob the Common-wealth whereſoever they come, as if they had a commiſſion for theſe their open theſts. And now (my honeſt Sergeant) me thinks I hear thee mutter, that I ſpeak amiſſe; telling me, that thou (for thy part) art a very honeſt man, and doſt exerciſe thy Office well, without abuſe unto many. I confeſſe as much, I ſay, that thou art ſuch an one, and that I know thee to be ſo. But tell me, my friend, (and let us ſpeak it in ſecret between our ſelves, that no body may hear us) doeſt not thou know, (and confeſſe igeniouſly) that this is truth which I ſpeak of thy fellows; if thou knoweſt as much, (as thou canſt not chooſe) and that it is ſo indeed; I talk to them and not to thee.

Now had we quite loſt our Clergy-men we ſhook hands with them at the firſt, who walked afoot their way, and we ours. Shall I tell you what I thought with my ſelf? If you will give me the hearing, I will. Truſt me, all the blowes that I received, nay, Death it ſelf, would not have been half ſo grievous unto me, as to ſee my ſelf brought back again, in this manner to mine own Countrey, if their reſolution had held: if they had carried me to any place, where I was unknown to it, and it to me, it had not been a pins-poynt matter; I ſhould have ſet light by it, and caſt it at my heels, eſpecially conſidering, that in the end I muſt be ſet at liberty, and come off cleare; and that the truth would at laſt ſhew it ſelf, and make it known to the World that I was not the man, they took me to be. We were drawn along like doggs in a paire of couples afflicted in that manner as thou mayſt imagine, (if ever the like misfortune ſhould happen unto thee.) I know not how it came to paſſe, (but ſo it was) that one amongſt the reſt look't ſtedfaſtly upon me, and ſaid to ſome that was by him: How now, what's this? I fear me we have taken our mark amiſſe, and through our too much haſt, have runne into an errour. The other anſwered; Why think you ſo? He replide: Doe not you know, that he, whom we are to ſeek after, wants his left Thumbe; and this Youth you ſee, is found in that part? Whereupon they went to read their *Requiſitoria*, which did ſet down the marks, whereby they ſhould know him, and they found they had been deceived almoſt in every one of them. But queſtionleſſe, they had a great deſire to beat ſome body, and ſo fell upon him that came firſt to hand. Preſently thereupon, they unpinion'd us, and looſed our hands, and craving pardon, that they were ſo much miſtaken, they went their way, and left us ſoundly paid for our paines; taking ſome few *Quarto's* of the Carrier, for the ſight of the Commiſſion, to moyſten their mouths herewith, at the next Inne that they ſhould light on.

*No ay mal tan malo, de que no reſulte algo bueno.*

If they had not ſtolne my Cloak from me, by having that upon my back, they would not have perceived, whether I had been ſound of my thumbs, or no: But had it ſo falne out, that they ſhould have come to know any ſuch thing by me, it had come ſo out of ſeaſon, that rather than I would have confeſt the fact, I would have firſt endured a thouſand torments: In every thing I had very good fortune, My money ſpent, my Cloak ſtoll'n, my belly hungry, my cheeks buffeted, my neck out of joynt, and my teeth bathed in bloud, with the bobs of my noſe, and the daſhes that they gave me on the mouth. My Companion, if he were not worſe, was no leſſe ill intreated than my ſelf. And when they had uſ'd us both thus hardly, to make us amends, they cry us mercy, ſaying, That we are not the men. I pray mark, what a pretty kinde of pardon this was, and in what good time it came: firſt, they fall a beating of us, before they examine us; and when they have almoſt maymed us, to make us amends, forſooth, they aske us forgiveneſſe.

The Clergy-men were now neer at hand, we preſently overtooke them; they bleſt themſelves when they ſaw us. But I up and told them, what was the cauſe of our liberty; for my Companion was ſo bang'd about the chappes, that he durſt not dare to ſpeak, for fear he ſhould ſpit out his grinders.

Every one got upon his Aſſe, and we began to ſpurre on, but not with our heels; becauſe

with them we were not able to reach to our Saddle-skirts. And I assure you in good faith, it were a world to tell you, what a bargaine we had of it; how the Fair went, and what a market we had of it.

Then said the younger of the two Clerks; No more of this (my friends) it is enough. That we may forget part of these sorrowes past, and entertaine the way with some merriment; when my Companion hath ended his Devotion, I shall relate a Story unto you; much whereof happened in *Sevill*. We took it all as a favour: and the other having now ended his Orizons, attending this Discourse with a deep silence, and an earnest desire, we looked still when he should begin.

## Chapter VIII.

### Wherein *Guzman de Alfarache* relateth the Story of those two Lovers, *Ozmin* and *Daraxa*.

### The Argument.

*How* Ferdinand *and* Isabell, *King and Queen* of *Spaine*, took *Baca*, *a Citie of the Moors, wherein* Daraxa *a beautifull and noble Damozell was taken prisoner, whom Queen* Isabell *brought with her to* Sevill, *and there left her in the custodie of Don* Luyis de Padilla. *How* Ozmin *a young Gentleman well descended, and inamoured of that Lady, after he had suffered long sickness for the imprisonment of his fair* Daraxa, *went to the said Citie, together with the divers accidents that happened to them both.*

AS soone as they mumbled up their prayers, (which they quickly dispatch't) they shut their prayer-books, and putting them in their *Alforjas*, (which is a kinde of Wallet) all of us giving diligent eare unto him, the good Priest began his promised History after this manner.

The Catholicke King *Don Ferdinand*, and *Donna Isabella*, being at the Siege of *Baca*, it was so well fought on both sides, (being as bravely defended as it was valiantly assaulted) that for a long time it was not known which side had the better, or where the advantage was like to fall, (Fortune had so equally spread her wings.) For albeit, the Kings Forces were the greater, and did exceed the other in number of men; yet the Moors (being likewise many) were wonderfully strengthened by the good disposition of the situation of that City.

The Queen *Donna Isabell* remained in *Iaen*, making provision of all things necessary for the Camp. And the King *Don Ferdinand*, went forth in person to supply the Army; which he divided into two parts: In the one he planted his Ordinance, recommending the care thereof to the Marquesses of *Cadiz*, and *Aquila*, to *Luys Fernandez Portocarrero*, Lord of *Palma*, and to the *Commendadores* of *Alcantara* and *Calatrava*, besides other Captains and Souldiers. In the other himself was incamped, accompanied with the chief of his Nobility and Gentry, and most experienced men of Armes; so hedging in the Citie on every side, that it seemed as a Center in the midst of a large Circle.

The two Camps lay some half League the one from the other, if the compasse had runne right; but because their passage was stopt, they beleaguered the other half along by the mountaine, and by this means were distanced one from the other a League or thereabouts: and because they could hardly succour one another, they agreed (the Councell of Warre having so thought it fit) to make certaine Trenches and Castles, which the King in his own person did often visit. And albeit the Moors did labour by all means possible, to hinder this designe, yet the Christians made good their Work, valiantly defending what they had undertaken; there being not a day that past over their heads, wherein there were not two or three (if not more) skirmishes that past between them; many on both sides being both hurt and slaine. But because the work, (being of so great importance) should not cease upon those that wrought thereon, a sufficient Guard did continually attend both night and day: it happened, that *Don Rodrigo*, and *Don Hurtado de Mendoza*, *Adelantado* of *Caverla*, and *Don Sancho de Castilla*, being of the Guard; the King commanded them to make good that place, till that the *Condes* of *Cifra* and *Urenna*, and the Marquesse of *Astorga* should enter with their Regiments

giments

giments for a certaine exploit that was to be put in execution. The Moors, who (as hath been ſaid) were very watchfull, ſeeking to diſturb the work, deſcended from the top of the Mountain with ſome 3000 Foot, and 400 Horſe, and ſet upon *Don Rodrigo Mendonca*. The *Adelantado*, and *Don Suncho* began the fight with them: and now the battel growing hot between them, the Moors were relieved by many other that ſallied out of the Citie. King *Ferdinand* being there preſent, and ſeeing how things went, commanded the *Condee de Tendilla*, that he ſhould aſſaile them on the other ſide, ſo that the battell by this time grew very bloudy on both ſides.

The King then ſeeing the ſtreight wherein the *Condee* was, and that he was wounded, manfully fighting againſt the Moors, he gave order to the Maſter *de Santiago*, to aſſiſt with his forces on the one ſide, and to the Marqueſſe of *Cadiz*, the Duke of *Nagera*, and the *Commendador*, of *Calatrava*, and to *Franciſco de Bonadilla*, that they ſhould charge them with their troops, where the Artillery was planted: The Moors thereupon draw foorth another third Squadron againſt them, and it was bravely fought on both ſides, aſwell by the Moors as the Chriſtians. And the King being himſelf in this conflict, diſcovered by thoſe of his Campe, they armed withall the haſte they could, and went forth to ayde him. And ſo thick were the Troops of thoſe that came to ſuccour him, that the Moors, being unable any longer to make reſiſtance, betook themſelves to flight, the Chriſtians ſtill having them in chaſe, making great ſlaughter of them; purſuing them even to the very ſuburbs of the Citie; whereinto many of the Souldiers entred, and got rich pillage; taking ſome of the principall perſons priſoners; in which number was *Daraxa*, a Mooriſh Damoſell, the onely daughter of the *Alcalde* of that Fort. Her beauty was her own, and the moſt perfect one, that ever eye had ſeen: her yeers were rather ſhorter than full ſeventeen; being ſo well grown in the bud, that ſhee was now ready for the blowing. And being in this true height of excellencie, as is here ſet down, it was raiſed much the higher by her diſcretion, gravity, and graceſull carriage: She ſpake Spaniſh ſo well, that a man that had not knowne her, would have taken her to be an old Chriſtian, for ſhee might have paſt amongſt thoſe that ſpeake the pureſt Language.

The King did highly eſteem of this Lady, accounting of her as of a jewell of great price; And therefore ſent her as a treaſure to the Queen his Wife, who made no leſſe reckoning of her, receiving her very graciouſly, as well for her owne deſert and worth, for that ſhe was of principall rank and qualitie, being deſcended of Kings, and the daughter of ſo honourable a perſon; as alſo for to try whether ſhe might be a means to make the Citie to yeeld, without farther fight, and ſhedding of bloud, Whereupon ſhe treated her with all kindneſſe, and the beſt uſage ſhe could deviſe, farre exceeding the faſhion of thoſe her other Ladies, which were neereſt about her perſon. So that not as a Captive, but as a Kinſwoman, ſhe entertined her in the kindeſt manner that could be, greatly deſiring, that ſuch an excellent piece of nature as ſhe was, and where ſuch ſurpaſſing beauty did poſſeſſe the body, there the ſoule might not with fowle Paganiſme be ſullied and defiled. Theſe were ſufficient reaſons of themſelves to have her ſtill in her ſight, beſides the content ſhee received in talking and converſing with her. For ſhee was able to give her ſo good an account of the ſtate of the whole Country, and of every particular paſſage in thoſe warres (though ſhe were but of young and tender yeeres) as if ſhe had beene of maturer age, and the wiſeſt Counſellour in the Kingdome. And albeit the King and Queene hapned afterwards to meet in *Baca*, (that Citie being renred up into their hands upon certaine conditions) yet the Queene would never ſuffer *Daraxa* to be from her ſide, for that great affection which ſhe bare unto her, promiſing the *Alcalde* her father, to doe her many particular favours. Her abſence did much grieve him: but the love which he ſaw their Catholicke Majeſties bare unto her, did ſomewhat leſſen his ſorrow, conceiving that much honour and profit would redound unto her thereby: And ſo reſted himſelf contented, and pocketed up his grief in ſilence. The Queen (as I told you) would never be without her, and at length carried her along with her unto *Sevill*; where, out of the deſire ſhe had to winne her to be a Chriſtian, for to diſpoſe her thereunto, by little and by little, uſing no violent, but tractable means; ſhe took her one day aſide, and ſaid thus unto her:

Thou canſt not by this time (*Daraxa*) but truely underſtand how well I affect thee, and the great deſire I have had to give thee content: In requitall whereof, I ſhall intreate thee for my ſake to grant me one requeſt; which is, that thou wilt exchange this attire thou now weareſt, and put on ſuch cloths as I ſhall inveſt thee withall, appertaining to mine own perſon; and to wear, and enjoy them, being that thy beauty will be much advantaged by this habite of ours.

*Daraxa*

*Daraxa* mildly made anſwer; I ſhall willingly perform, what your Majeſty ſhall be pleaſed to command me. For by obeying you herein, (if there be any diſcretion in me, or any conſideration of worth in this my weak apprehenſion,) I ſhall from this day forward think the better of it, and hold it for good, for doubtleſſe it cannot be otherwiſe, but that theſe your Majeſties ornaments will add a grace to my imperfections, and your rich dreſſings ſupply my poor defects.

*Daraxa*, (replied the Queen) it is not your modeſty that can make you derogate from your ſelf. For if ever nature made a perfect work, ſhe ſumm'd it all up in thy ſelf. But not to inſiſt upon the praiſe of that, which cannot ſufficiently be expreſſed, we graciouſly accept of this your ſervice, and the willing tender you make thereof unto us.

Now was *Daraxa* apparelled after the Spaniſh faſhion, reſiding certain dayes in the Palace, till ſuch time as their Catholick Majeſties departed from thence, to go to the ſiege of *Granada*. And therefore as well for the troubles that attend the Wars; as alſo that ſhe might take ſome favour in the things of our faith, the Queen thought it fit to leave her in the houſe of *Don Luys de Padilla* (a man of quality and a favourite) where ſhe might entertain herſelf with *Donna Eluira de Guzman*, his daughter and a Virgin; to whom was given in charge, the care of her entertainment, with expreſſe order to uſe her with all reſpect; and that ſhe ſhould want nothing that might give her content. And albeit ſhe were accordingly received by them, being feaſted and courted withall the pleaſures that place could afford; yet it grieved her much to ſee her ſelf ſo far from her native home, beſides other cauſes, which gave her much more diſcontent, but thoſe ſhe did not diſcover; for with a cheerfull countenance, and a pleaſant reſemblance, ſhe made ſhow, that ſeeing it was her Majeſties pleaſure ſo to diſpoſe of her, that ſhe did eſteem it as a favour; and ſo did expreſſe it in her looks and geſture.

This Damoſeil, her Parents had betrothed to a Mooriſh Gentleman of *Granada*, whoſe name was *Ozmin*: whoſe quality and condition, together with his diſpoſition, was in all points ſuitable to that of *Daraxa*. He was young, rich, of a ſweet behaviour, perſonable, diſcreet, and above all very valiant, and full of courage, and every one of theſe parts well adapted, and diſpoſed to receive many other, which as they were fit for him, ſo they did well become him. Beſides, he was ſo dextrous in the Spaniſh tongue, as if he had been bred up in the heart of *Caſtile*, and a natural of that Countrey: (it being a thing as worthy commendation in virtuous young men, as it is a glory to thoſe parents, who breed up their Children in the knowledge of tongues, and exerciſe of Arms.) He loved his eſpouſed Lady with all the tenderneſſe that a Lover could, inſomuch that he did (in a manner) commit idolatry, out of the reverence and reſpect that he bare unto her; and would (might he be ſuffered ſo to do) have ſet up her *Statua* upon the higheſt Altars. On her he did wholly imploy his memory; for her all his ſenſes kept continual watch and ward, and his will was more hers, than his own: Nor was his Spouſe (who was made all of thankfulneſſe) any whit his debtor. Their love was as equal, as was their quality, and their affection did truely correſpond with their even condition. But ſurpaſſing all the reſt, was that moſt honeſt courſe of life, wherein they conſerved themſelves. The ſweetneſſe of thoſe diſcourſes, which by Letters paſſed between them, thoſe lovely meſſages which were ſent to and fro each to other, cannot be indeered according to their true deſert, They had viſited and ſeen one another very often, but never treated of love, mouth to mouth. But their ſpeaking eyes parled many times when their tongues were ſilent, which never omitted the occaſion to talk together. For both of them many years before, and yet not very many, becauſe they were both but young, but to ſpeak more properly, had even from their child-hood loved and viſited each other at their pleaſure. The parents were knit in ſo perfect a friendſhip, and their Children in ſuch ſtreight knots of the faſteſt love, that to make his harmony the fuller, they did all deſire to be nearer linked (if poſſible they might be) by a ſtrong Alliance: And by this marriage it had taken effect, had it not, when all was in a manner concluded, been croſt in an unlucky hour, and by the rigour of ſome auſtere Planet, when *Baca* was beſieged.

But upon this revolution of things, and theſe warlike commotions, it was thought fit to deferre it for awhile, waiting for a more convenient time, wherein their marriage might be ſolemnized with greater mirth and jollity, and ſuch triumphs and feaſtings performed, as the youthfulneſſe and qualification required of ſo ſweet and lovely a couple; and ſeemed neceſſarily to ſuite with the eſtimation and greatneſſe of both their parents.

You have heard already who *Daraxa's* Father was: Her Mother was her own Kinſwoman,

woman, daughter to a ſiſter of *Boabdelin*, King of that Citie, who had treated this match between them. And *Ozmin* was Couſin Germane to *Mahomet*, King of *Granada*, ſurnamed *The little*. Now that all theſe fair deſignes, had contrary ſucceſſe to their deſires; and that Fortune had bent her brow againſt them, *Daraxa* remaining now in the power of thoſe their Catholick Majeſties; and being left behinde in *Sevill*, as ſoon as *Ozmin* heard of it, the exclamations that he made; the ſorrows which he uttered; the ſighs which he vented, as they were the true Herauldes that proclaimed his hearts griefe; ſo did they move all men to compaſſion, who could not chuſe but ſhare, (and that in no ſmall meaſure) with him, when they ſaw ſuch lamentable effects of his great affliction.

But becauſe the loſſe was ſo ſolely his, and the wound put ſo home to his very heart and ſoul, ſorrow did ſo ſeize upon him, that in a ſhort time it took hold upon his manly (yet delicate) body; ſo that all the whole frame thereof was out of temper, and fell at laſt into a grievous ſickneſſe, as dangerous and difficil to be cured, as the remedy was diſtant, and the cauſe unknown. The effects whereof dayly increaſed with mortal ſigns of death, becauſe the cauſe encreaſed; and the Medicines that were miniſtred unto him, being not rightly applied, did him no good at all. And which is the worſt in maladies, the Phyſicians did not truely apprehend the nature of his diſeaſe, being the moſt eſſential point, for the reſtoring of man to the former ſtate of health. So that his afflicted Parents, deſpairing of his recovery, had now rendred up all hope of life; and the Phyſicians they had given him over, being of opinion, that it was impoſſible he ſhould live; their judgement being ſtrengthned and confirmed by all thoſe accidents, which did joyntly concurre, and openly expreſſe themſelves in this his painfull torment.

But when this ſick Lover was treading the laſt ſtep of life, that he had to go, and even entring into the doors of death; a conceit came ſuddenly into his head, which repreſenting it ſelf to his imagination, wrought ſo effectually with him, that he ſeemed to draw ſome fruit from it, and to be ſomewhat better than he was: And though his ſickneſſe were yet ſtill full of danger, yet compared with that miſerable eſtate wherein he ſtood before, the amendment could not for the time be greater. And out of the longing deſire that he had to put that in execution, which his conceit had formerly entertained, plotting in his imagination, how he might come to get a ſight of his beloved Spouſe, he gained breath, and grew ſomewhat ſtrong, ſtoutly reſiſting thoſe things, that might hinder his intent.

Whereupon he ſilenced his ſorrows, and ſhook hands with melancholy, taking his leave of them both, bidding them fare-well for ever, and did now wholly intend his health; and by this means began by degrees to grow better and better, clean contrary to the expectation of thoſe, who had ſeen how low he was brought, and in what a deſperate eſtate he was.

True is that old Adage, *Deſire ſubdueth fear*, trampleth on the neck of inconveniences, and levelleth all difficulties, be the way of them never ſo ſteep, never ſo rocky. And a good and cheerfull heart in a ſick man, is the beſt Sirrup, and the moſt comfortable Cordial in the world; your Amber, your Corall, your Pearle, your Gold, and all the rabble of your other reſtoratives are nothing unto it. And therefore it is good for a man to make himſelf as merry as he can. And when thou ſeeſt a man once to wax merry when he is ſick, thou may eſt boldly ſay, he mends.

Now then, by this time, our Gentleman is up upon his feet, and though yet weak and ſcarce able to walk up and down in his Chamber (his long ſickneſſe having yet made his legs unable to bear his body) he forthwith furniſhed himſelf of a *Moor*, to be both his Guide, and Interpreter, who had for a long time ſerved the Kings of *Granada* as an Intelligencer. And putting up good ſtore of Gold and Jewels for that journey, and taking with him a good horſe, that was a brown Bay, with a Petronel hanging at the arſon of his Saddle, and his Sword and Dagger girt to his ſide, upon a certain night by them appointed they departed out of the Citie, in the faſhion and habit of Spaniards; and going by the way, knowing well how to coaſt the Countrey; as being well acquainted with thoſe parts, they paſſed within view of the enemies Campe, and having left that behinde them, by by-paths, and ſecret paſſages they came to *Loja*. Where, being near unto the Citie, it was their hard fortune to meet with a Captain of the field, who went gathering up of men which had fled from the Army, and forſaken their colours. Now as ſoon as he eſpied theſe two, he took hold of them. The *Moor* fained he had a Paſport, ſeeking for it one while in his boſom, another while in his pocket, and other parts about him. But becauſe he could not finde it, and for that the

Captain perceived he had been out of the rode-way, which made him ſhrewdly to ſuſpect them, he took them along with him, to bring them back again to the Camp.

But *Ozmin* not diſmayed herewith, nor ſuffering any alteration of countenance, with great boldneſſe and free language, making benefit of the Noblemans name, in whoſe power his Spouſe was, fained himſelf to be his Son, ſtyling himſelf by the name *Don Rodrigo de Padille*, and that he came with a meſſage to their Catholick Majeſties from his father touching *Daraxa*; and that his health failing him (which was witneſſed by his wanne lookes) he was making home with all the convenient haſte he could. Other whiles, he affirmed, he had loſt both his Paſport, and his way; and that to return again thereinto, he had betaken himſelf to that path.

But this would not ſerve his turn; for he ſtill inſiſted to have them go backer, whileſt they either did not, or would not then underſtand, that he did not care a button whether they returned, or no? His pretenſion onely was, that a Gentleman of that rank and quality, as he pretended himſelf to be, ſhould have blinded his eyes with ſome few Dubblons; for there is no Generals hand, that can equal the ſeal-Royal, which is of ſo much the more power with us; by how much we finde it firmed and inſtamped with that more noble metal. For your poor Shag-rags, and ſilly ſnakes, that ſteal from the Army to return home: for theſe (I ſay) they have teeth, and ſharp ones too, and on ſuch poor Souls as theſe, do they onely exerciſe their power, executing thoſe orders which are made againſt ſuch kinde of fugitives: But not on them, from whom they have hope of profit, and may make good gain: for this is that they ſeek for.

*Ozmin* ſuſpecting whither theſe bravings of his did tend; and finding on which foot he began to halt, followed him cloſe, and began thus to ſpeak unto him; Miſconſter me not (Noble Captain) nor think, that it ſhall grieve me a whit to return once more back again, nor were it ten times one after another, ſhould it trouble me to reiterate the ſteps that I have troden; nay, I would willingly repeat the ſame way again and again; if my health (as you ſee) were not wanting unto me; but ſince the neceſſity of my return is made evident and plain unto you: let me intreat you, Sir, not to put me to that trouble, ſeeing it is as much as my life is worth, conſidering the weakneſſe wherein I now am: And with that, taking a rich Ring from off his finger, he put it into his hand, which was as if he ſhould have thrown Vinegar upon fire; for he ſtraight grew cool upon it, and kindley ſaid unto him, Sir, God be your good ſpeed; for I well perceive that you are, as you ſeem to be, a man of principle note, and does not ſerve the King for pay, nor would out of your nobleneſſe and point of honour forſake the field, but upon ſo great an occaſion as this. I ſhall wait upon you to *Loja*, where I will give order, that you paſſe forward with the more ſafety. And ſo he did, remaining both good friends; and when they had repoſed themſelves awhile, they took their leave.

Attended with theſe and other the like misfortunes, they arrived at length at *Sevill*; where, by the information that he had gotten, he came to know the ſtreet and houſe where his *Daraxa* dwelt: he walked many a fair turn thereabout at different hours; and on divers dayes, but it was never his good hap to ſee her, for in regard ſhe walked not abroad, nor went to Church, ſhe ſpent her whole time in her needle, and in recreating her ſelf with her friend *Donna Elvira*.

Now *Ozmin* perceiving the difficulty to compaſſe his deſire, and the ſuſpition which he might give, (as ordinarily all ſtrangers do, in whatſoever place they come: for all mens eyes are upon them, deſiring to know who they are, whence they come, what they ſeek, and how they live, eſpecially if they frequent one ſtreet more than another, and caſt a carefull eye either upon the windows, or the doors of ſome particular houſe.) Hence ariſeth envy; hence a muttering and murmuring of the multitude, and hence, (though none be intereſſed in the buſineſſe) and hatred without cauſe. And ſome whiſperings were already begun; whereupon he was inforced, for the avoiding the ſcandall to forbear for ſome few dayes, whileſt his ſervant in the mean while performed that office, as being a perſon of leſſe eſteem, and therefore the leſſe obſerved. But he making no diſcovery, did onely comfort himſelf in walking that way in the night at extraordinary hours, and in imbracing the walls, kiſſing the doors and threſholds of that houſe.

In this forlorn kinde of hope he lived ſometime, till at length that fell out which ſorted with this deſire. For his ſervant taking the care upon him to round the houſe three, or four times aday, found out in the end, that *Don Luys* was making up of a certain Wall that was faln down. Then did he take occaſion by the fore-top, adviſing his

his Maſter to put on a poor canvaſſe Frock, or the like baſe garment, and to thruſt himſelf in amongſt the reſt, as a Labourer in that work. He liked well of the invention, put it in execution, leaving his ſervant to look to his horſe, and the wealth and Jewels that were in his Lodging, that he might help himſelf there-withall, if need were. And ſo he went forth to his work: whither, when he came, he demanded, if they had any work for a ſtranger; they told him, they had. For his wages, it is to be ſuppoſed, that he for his part was willing to be hired at any rate, rather than to ſit out. So he now ſets himſelf roundly to his work, ſtriving to out-work them all: and albeit, through his many croſſes and diſcontents, he had not yet recovered his perfect health, yet (as the phraſe is) he drew ſtrength out of weakneſſe: for it is the heart that commands the fleſh. He was the firſt ſtill that came to work, and the laſt that left off: and when all the reſt were willing to take their eaſe and refreſh themſelves, he was ſtill ſeeking out ſomething, wherein he might buſie himſelf: inſomuch that being found fault withall for it by his fellow-labourers, (for even in misfortune envy likewiſe hath a hand) he made them anſwer; That he knew not how to be idle. *Don Luys*, who noted his diligence, had a liking unto him, and was reſolving with himſelf to take him into his ſervice for the affairs of his houſe; and more particularly for the keeping of his garden. Hereupon he demanded of him, whether he had any skill in that kinde? He told him, A little; and that the deſire that he had to do him ſervice, would in ſhort time enable him much more. He was well pleaſed both with his ſpeech and perſon; for he had found him in every thing, to be as ſufficient as he was carefull.

The Maſon had made an end of repairing the Wall, and *Ozmin* was now Gardiner to *Don Luys*, nor untill that day, was it ever poſſible for him to ſee *Daraxa*. But ſuch was his good fortune (Fortune being willing ſo to have it) that the Sun ſhone bright that morning, the ſky was clear, the heavens propitious, ſcattering the Clouds of his former diſgraces, and diſcovering a new light; by help whereof, he ſaw the joyfull Haven to his long indured ſhip-wracks.

And the very firſt evening that he exerciſed this his new Office, he ſaw his Spouſe coming all alone, ſoftly pacing her ſteps through a ſpacious walk, beſet all with Myrtles, Muſk Roſes, Jeſmines, and other flowers, gathering here one, there one, wherewith ſhe adorned her hair. Now by her artyre, he would never have known her, if the true Original had not well agreed with that lively counterfeit, which he had imprinted in his heart; as likewiſe that he did plainly perceive, that ſo great beauty could not belong to any body but her ſelf. He was much perplexed when he ſaw her, and debated with himſelf, whether he was beſt to ſpeak to her, or no: but his baſhfulneſſe being as great as was her prevention, being hindred by the ſhortneſſe of that time wherein ſhe paſſed along, he hung down his head, making holes in the earth with a Dibble that he had in his hand, for the ſetting of a few choice Slips.

*Daraxa* turn'd her head aſide, and when in the caſting of it, ſhe ſaw this new Gardiner, ſhe ſtedfaſtly began to look upon him: and viewing well that ſide of his face which did moſt conveniently diſcover it ſelf unto her, that place did repreſent it ſelf to her imagination, where ſhe had ſo often beheld her beloved, (ſo like did he ſeem unto her:) whereupon ſuch a ſudden ſadneſſe ſeized upon her, that fainting ſhe fell to the ground; and when ſhe came to herſelf, taking hold of the rayles of the Garden, which were wrought of well-ordered Canes, (according to the faſhion of that Countrey) ſhe ſent forth a moſt ſorrowfull ſigh, attended with infinite ſtore of tears; and leaning her hand on her roſie cheek, ſhe called many things to remembrance; wherein, if ſhe ſhould have inſiſted upon every particular, and perſevered in the recordation of them, ſhe might eaſily have been the authour of her own death. But ſhe did put them off as well as ſhe could, with another new deſire which ſhe had to entertain her Soul with his ſight; deceiving thoſe conceits with that little parcel of *Ozmins* face which repreſented it ſelf unto her.

Hereupon ſhe roſe, but accompanied with a generall trembling, (her whole body and heart, panting and ſhivering with an anguiſh-fit of Love) and turning again to contemplate anew the image of her adoration; which the more attentively ſhe beheld, the more lively ſhe transformed the ſame into her ſelf. It ſeemed unto her that ſhe had been in a dream, but when ſhe perceived that ſhe was awake, and that her ſight ſerved, ſhe was afraid it was ſome Ghoſt, or Fairy apparition. But afterwards, when upon better view ſhe ſaw it was a man, a very man, and no *Phantaſma*, ſhe wiſhed that it might be he, vvhom ſhe loved. Notwithſtanding ſhe vvas mightily perplexed in minde, and caſt many

doubts with herſelf, not being able to deviſe who this man ſhould be. For, his ſickneſſe had laid a paleneſſe on his cheeks, which had loſt their wonted colours, but in all other things beſides; as his favour, his feature, his proportion and carriage did aſſure her of the truth: yet his office, his habit, and the very place wherein he ſtood, made her diſcard all ſuch kind of thoughts, and to diſ-deceive herſelf: and again, it grieved her to be drawn out of this errour; perſiſting obſtinately in her wiſh, not being able to abſtain to diſcover her particular affections unto him, for the reſemblance which he had of him, whom ſhe ſo dearely loved: whereupon out of thoſe her doubtings and anxieties to know what he was, ſhe ſaid unto him; Friend, Whence are you? With that, *Ozmin* ſuddenly, and in a ſtarting manner caſts up his head, looking upon his Beloved, and ſweeteſt pledge, but his tongue being knit cloſe to the roof of his mouth with the fulleſt knot of Love, having not the power to ſpeak a word; and not being able, not for his life, (ſo great was his paſſion) to anſwer her with his tongue, he replyed with his eyes, watering the earth with that abundance of tears, which fell guttering down his cheeks, as if they had flowed from two clear fountaines. And with this, theſe two deare and faithfull Lovers came to have true knowledge of each other.

*Daraxa* anſwered him in his own language, diſtilling ropes of Pearls in round orientall drops down her lovely cheeks. And now were they ready to change imbracements, at leaſt ſome ſweet words of Love; when lo, in the inſtant there entred into the Garden *Don Rodrigo*, ſonne and heir to *Don Luys*, who being enamoured of *Daraxa*, did alwayes waite upon her ſteps, that he might thereby injoy the occaſion to contemplate on her beauty. Now, that they might avoid all ſuſpition, they no ſooner ſpied him, but *Ozmin* returned roundly to his labour, and *Daraxa* walked leaſurely along, as ſhe was wont to do. *Don Rodrigo* perceived (by her ſad ſemblance, and inflamed eyes, grown red with weeping) an alteration in her countenance, and preſuming that ſomewhat offended her, (for her looks did ſhew ſhe was not well pleas'd) he made towards *Ozmin*, and asked him what the matter might be of her diſcontent: who, albeit he was not fully as yet recovered of his fore-paſſed perturbation, yet forced by that neceſſity whereunto he was driven, told him; Sir, as you ſee her now, ſo was ſhe when ſhe came hither, ſhe did not exchange ſo much as one word with me; and therefore told me no part of her minde, nor do I know whence this her paſſion ſhould proceed. Eſpecially this being the firſt day, that I entred into this place: ſo that it was neither fitting for me to aske her the queſtion, nor diſcretion in her to open her heart unto me. With this anſwer he went his way, with purpoſe to learne it out of *Daraxa* herſelf. But the more he entertained himſelf in this diſpleaſing ſubject, the larger ſteps ſhe made, ſpeedily wheeling about to her Lodging, ſhutting the doors after her as ſhe went in.

Diverſe Evenings and Mornings theſe two Lovers luckily met, injoying upon ſeverall occaſions ſome flowers, and honeſt fruits from the tree of true love, wherewith they gave ſome eaſe unto their griefs; entertaining their true pleaſures, with the deſire and hope of that happy time, wherein without ſhadowes and interruptions, they might freely injoy each other. But this content of theirs was as ſhort as unſecure. For the extraordinary continuation of their companying together, and their cloſe diſcourſe, (and that in the *Arabicke* tongue) and her excuſing herſelf (for his ſake) from the converſation of her friend *Donna Elvira*, had already given ſufficient diſtaſt to all thoſe of the houſe, and *Don Rodrigo* himſelf was horne-mad, inraged ſo with Jelouſie, that he knew not what to doe. Not that he had any the leaſt imagination, that the Gardiner did treat with her any thing that was unlawfull, or made any love to her: but becauſe he ſaw, that he was made worthy to be entertained with ſo much frequencie in that ſweet converſation of hers, which ſhe did not exerciſe ſo freely with any other in the world.

THE ARGUMENT.

*Going on in the diſcourſe of the adventures of theſe two faithfull Lovers*, Ozmin *and the fair* Daraxa; *are delivered at large the troubles, jealouſies, and the ſorrows that befell them.*

MUrmuring being the naturall daughter of Hatred and Envy, is evermore buſily labouring to ſtaine the lives of others, and to draw a curtaine of darkneſſe over their bright-ſhining vertues. And amongſt people of baſe and vile condition, (where moſt commonly ſhe keeps her Court of Audience) it is the onely ſauce to move their appetite, without which their daintieſt diſhes have no reliſh, nor their beſt morſels any ſavour in them. It is a bird of the flippanſt wing, which as it moveth with moſt nimbleneſſe, ſo it doth the greateſt miſchief. There were not ſome wanting that toſſed words from hand to hand; ſome adding and others inventing matter upon this their ſo great familiarity, till the Ball at laſt came to ground, and this whiſpering to *Don Luys* his eare, by one who thought to work out himſelf a fortune thereby, and to grow into favour with the Lord, by this his ſuppoſed honourable piece of ſervice.

This is that which the world doth practiſe, ſeeking to gaine great mens love at other mens coſt, by tricks and lies, when in the naked truth there is not cloth enough to ſhape a garment according to their mind. An office, worthy thoſe, to whom their own worth is wanting, and have nothing either in their actions, or their perſons, that may deſervedly recommend them.

*Don Luys* attentively gave eare to theſe well compoſed words, and painted ſpeeches, on which ſuch fair colours were laid. He was a wiſe and diſcreet Gentleman, and therefore did not ſuffer them to dwell where theſe men had placed them, but gave them onely paſſage to his imagination, leaving a room empty for to receive the reaſons of the defendant, to whom he had left the door open, and would by no means give way to have his ears ſtopped, albeit he were ſomewhat offended with the occaſion of the ſcandall. Many things did he caſt into his minde; but ſtill the farther he went, the farther he was from the truth. But that which did moſt trouble him, was the ſuſpition which he had, that the Gardiner was a Moor, who was cunningly come thither to ſteale away *Daraxa*: and perſwading himſelf that it was ſo, his underſtanding was preſently blinded therewith. And that which is ill conſidered on, many times, nay for the moſt part, the execution of that advice is ſcarce gone out of doors, but that repentance preſently enters the houſe. Upon this ſurmiſe, he was reſolved to take hold of him; and clappe him faſt. *Ozmin*, without any reſiſtance or ſhew of Sorrow, or any other alteration of countenance, ſubmitted himſelf to be ſhut up in the Hall, the fitteſt place, the ſuddenneſſe of the ſurpriſe could afford for the preſent. And leaving him thus under locke and key, he made towards *Daraxa*, who by the hurry and tumult of the Miniſters and ſervants of the houſe, knew already all that had paſt there, having been ſome few dayes before a muttring of this matter about the houſe. She ſhewed herſelf much agrieved with *Don Luys* his manner of proceeding, forming complaints, how he had put in doubt the goodnes and unſpotted innocency of her life, ſetting the gate wide open to Suſpition; and that with this blurre, which he had given to her reputation, every one might think as he liſted, and as his fancie ſhould ſtand affected, to cenſure her honour accordingly; for there was not any ſuſpition ſo bad, whereunto he had not by this his unadviſed act, opened a gap to its entrance.

Theſe, and other well-ordered reaſons delivered with an affection of the mind, and freeneſſe of ſpirit, made *Don Luys* quickly repent himſelf of what he had done. He now wiſht with all his heart, (after *Daraxa* had thus newly moulded him) that he had never attempted any ſuch thing, being angry with himſelf, and much incenſed againſt thoſe, who had put this into his head. But that he might not ſhew his lightneſſe, in being thus miſled, and over-facile to be wrought upon by other mens perſwaſions, but that what he had done, he had done it upon due conſideration, and as the weightineſſe of the buſineſſe required, diſſembling his ſorrow, he ſpake thus unto her.

Dear *Daraxa*, I acknowledge the wrong I have done you, and ingeniouſly confeſſe that your complaint is not without juſt cauſe, in that I proceeded againſt you in this uncivill faſhion, without having firſt examined the Witneſs to the full, who have depoſed, (as it

ſhould ſeem) thus wrongfully againſt you. I am not ignorant of your owne worth, as likewiſe that of your parents and Anceſtours, from whom you are deſcended. I know that the merits of your owne proper perſon hath purchaſed of the King my Maſter, and his noble Queen, all that love, which a true and onely heir can gaine of his loving and tender Parents, having conferred upon you many prodigall and publique favours. To this I muſt give you to underſtand, that they placed you in my houſe; to the end that you might be ſerved therein with all care and diligence, according to your own will and pleaſure: and that I am bound to give account thereof, according to the truſt that was repoſed in me. For which reaſons, and for that which my ſervice deſerved at your hands, you ought to correſpond (that you may not be unlike your ſelf) with that fair carriage which is due unto my loyalty, and the conſideration of theſe things that are now in queſtion. I neither can, nor will conceive, that there can be any thing in you that may ſeem unbefitting your breeding, or give the leaſt blemiſh to your honour. But the great familiarity which you hold with *Ambroſio* (for that name had *Ozmin* put upon himſelf, when he firſt entred to ſerve as a day-labourer) together with his talking unto you in the Arabicke tongue, hath ſomewhat troubled mee, out of the generall deſire that all here have to underſtand what manner of man this fellow is, and what his firſt beginning, neither you nor my ſelf having ſeen or known him heretofore. And this being ſatisfied, you ſhall rid others of their doubt, and my ſelf of an impertinent and tedious trouble. I beſeech you (as you are worthy) that you will reſolve us of this ſcruple, aſſuring your ſelf for mine own part, that as much as in me lyeth, I ſhall ever be ready to ſerve you upon all occaſions that ſhall offer themſelves, wherein I may be ſerviceable unto you.

*Daraxa* ſtood curiouſly attentive to that which *Don Luys* had delivered, that ſhe might be able to make anſwer unto him, (albeit his good underſtanding had already prevented her with reaſons) in caſe that any thing had been diſcovered. But out of that ſhort terme of time which ſhe had to bethink herſelf (laying her former thoughts aſide) ſhe was driven to make uſe of other more materiall to that propoſition which was made unto her, wherewith eaſily (leaving him well ſatisfied) ſhe freed him of his care, making good uſe of it, to be more warie hereafter, that ſhe might enjoy herſelf as ſhe was wont, with her beloved; and therewithall ſhe thus ſaid unto him.

My Lord, and Father, (for ſo I may truly call you) Lord, for that I am in your power: and Father, for the tender care which you have of me. I ſhould ill correſpond with that obligation whereunto I am bound, and thoſe continuall favours, which I receive from their Majeſties by your means, and by your interceſſion daily augmented in my favour, if I ſhould not depoſite in the Cabinet of your diſcretion, my greateſt ſecrets; ſhelt'ring them with your ſhadow, and governing my ſelf by your wiſedome: and if with the ſame truth and plaineneſſe, I ſhould not fulfill all you juſt deſires. And albeit to recall things to my remembrance (which I may not forbear to recite unto you) cannot but be a great grief unto me, and even a matter of no ſmall martyrdome; yet with this will I repay your kindneſſe, and make you become a debtor to my ſorrows, and give you aſſurance thereby in how much I eſteem your love.

Sir, you have already underſtood who I am, for it is notorious to you, and all the world; and how my misfortune or good hap (for I cannot, till the fruit wax ripe, by ſeeing the end of ſo many troubles, condemne the one, or commend the other:) brought me to this houſe of yours, even at that very time, when a marriage was in Treaty for me with a Gentleman of the beſt both worth and ranke in *Granada*, being a neer Kinſman of thoſe Kings, and anciently deſcended from them.

This my husband (if I may ſo ſtile him) was bred up, being then about ſome ſix or ſeven years of age, with another child a captive Chriſtian, much about the ſame years, whom his Parents bought for his ſervice and entertainment. They ever went together, plaid together, eate together, and uſually ſlept together, out of the great love that was between them. See whether theſe were not pledges of friendſhip, which I have repeated unto you. And ſo well did my husband love him, that had he been his equall, or his neareſt Kinſman, he could not have loved him better. He truſted him with his perſon, for he was very valiant; he was the Feoffee of all his pleaſures, the Companion of his entertainements, the Treaſurie of his Secrets, and in Subſtance his ſecond ſelf. In concluſion, they were in all things both of them ſo like, that nothing did difference them, but their Religion, whereof (out of the greatneſſe of both their diſcretions) they never argued, that they might not diſ-brother themſelves. For no brothers in the World could love better than they did. And well

did

did this Captive deſerve his love (I ſpake amiſſe; the word Brother better befits him, and ſo I ſhould have call'd him) for his faithfull carriage, his compoſed behaviour, and his Gentleman-like proceeding; in ſo much, that if we had not known him to have been borne of meane parents that got their living by their handy-labour, in a poor Cottage, who were captivated and made ſlaves at the ſame time, we ſhould verily have beleeved, that he had deſcended from ſome Noble bloud, and generous off-ſpring.

This honeſt man (I ſhould ſay honourable, for his vertue deſerves that ſtyle) was the meſſenger of our entertainements, the Poſt that ran between us: for being ſo faithfull as he was, he was the onely man that was wholly imployed in that buſineſſe. He brought me letters and preſents, returning back by him ſuch due requitals, as in like caſes uſually paſſe betwixt thoſe that truly love.

Now, when *Baça* was delivered up, and he found there, he was ſet at liberty together with the reſt of the Captives that were at that time within the Citie. But I am not able to ſay, whether his joy to recover his freedome, or his ſorrow to forſake us, were the greater. This himſelf can beſt tell you, as alſo whatſoever elſe you ſhall deſire to know beſides, if it pleaſe you to aske him, which is no hard matter for you to doe: for this man I ſpeak of, is that very *Ambroſio*, which is now in your ſervice, it being Gods will that he ſhould come thither, for to be a comfort unto me in theſe my afflictions. I loſt him before ever I thought of it, and when I leaſt looked for him, I found him again. With him I ranne over the whole courſe of my misfortunes, ſince the firſt time that I was graduated and took degree in them; with him I did cheriſh the hopes of my adverſe misfortune, entertaining a painefull life, for to deceive the weariſomneſſe of a lingring and tedious time. If this comfort (for that it is in my favour) ſhall offend you, follow your own will, for mine ſhall ever be ſubordinate to yours, which you may diſpoſe of at your pleaſure.

*Don Luys* was ſtrucken with aſtoniſhment and tenderneſſe, as well for the ſtrangeneſſe, as the pittifulneſſe of her Story. Beſides, he was much moved with her manner of proceeding; for ſhe went on in her Diſcourſe without any pauſing, perturbation, or other accident; whereby he might conjecture that it was a made tale, or invention of her owne upon the preſent. Which carriage ſhe did credit the better, by letting fall from her eyes ſome effectuall tears, which were able to ſoften hard Marble, and to rent in ſunder the rocky Diamond.

With this ſpeech of hers, *Ambroſio* was looſed out of priſon, without being queſtioned of any thing, that he might not wrong the report which *Daraxa* had given of him: Onely laying his arme about his neck, looking chearfully upon him, he told him. Now I know (*Ambroſio*) that thou haſt ſome noble bloud about thee; and though this ſhould be wanting unto thee, thou art able to give it thy ſelf by thine own vertue and nobleneſſe. For by that which I have lately heard of thee, I am obliged henceforth to uſe thee with that fairneſſe as thy worth deſerveth. *Ozmin* told him; In this, Sir, you ſhall doe like your ſelf; and the good which I ſhall receive from you, I ſhall ever make it my glory, that it came from the largeneſſe of your hand, and from ſo noble a Houſe as this is. This paſt, he was permitted to return againe unto the garden, with the ſame familiarity as before, if not with much more licence and freeneſſe of liberty. So that now they talked together as often as they would themſelves, without any ſcandall at all.

In this *Interim*, the King and Queen had ſtill a care to know how it was with *Daraxa*, as well in the ſtate of her health, as otherwiſe; whereof particular advice was given them from time to time, who were very glad to hear of her well-doing; and did continually in their Letters recommend her very dearly to the care of *Don Luys*, with expreſſe charge to uſe her with all kindneſſe.

This favour of theirs wrought ſo much, that as well out of the deſire to ſtand in grace with their Majeſties, as out of *Daraxa* her owne deſerts; not onely *Don Rodrigo*, but moſt of the principall Cavallero's of that Citie, wiſhed in their hearts ſhe were a Chriſtian, that they might make love unto her, pretending to take her to Wife. But becauſe *Don Rodrigo* had her (as hath been ſaid) in his cuſtody, he was, in the common opinion of the World, amongſt all the other rivals, thought to be moſt favoured by her. The caſe was very clear, and this ſuſpition not without great likelyhood. For of his quality, condition, behaviour, and faire proceeding, ſhe had very good triall; and oſtentations of this nature, and apparences of ſuch commendable parts as theſe, are not wont to be of the ſlighteſt moment, nor the loveſt round in the Ladder, that climbs unto honour. For when a man ſhall have made publike demonſtrations of his vertues, and his noble carriage, it is to be preſumed he will be no leſſe beloved, than he is known; and ſo get advantage of thoſe, who (when it

ſhall

ſhall come to matter of oppoſition) ſhall be under-valued by opinion. But as if theſe lovers had exchanged their ſouls, and none of them poſſeſſed that which was his own, they were as firm in loving, as farre from offending.

*Daraxa* never gave way by any diſcomposture, or unjoynted behaviour, or any other occaſion whatſoever, whereby any one might preſume more than other upon her favour; howbeit, all of them adored her, left no means unſought to procure her love, nor no nets unſpred, ſeeking by trains to draw her within their reach, but none of them had any ground, whereupon to build their hopes.

*Don Rodrigo* perceiving how little his ſervices did availe him, how his labour was in vaine, and the ſmall remedy that he found, ſince after ſo many dayes ſpent in her continuall conſervation, he remained in the ſame ſtate as he did the very firſt day, neither better nor worſe, for ought he knew: It came into his conſideration to make uſe of *Ozmin*, thinking by his interceſſion to get into her favour; and taking this to be the beſt and ſureſt way to work his ends, being one morning in the garden, he brake thus with him.

Friend *Ambroſio*, Thou canſt not but know the obligations which thou haſt to thy Religion, to thy King, to thy Countrey, to that bread which thou eateſt of my Fathers, and to that deſire, which we have of thy good. I conceive that as a Chriſtian of that quality, which thy works doe publiſh, thou wilt correſpond with that thou profeſſeſt thy ſelf to be.

I come to thee, moved thereunto by a great neceſſity (which now offers it ſelf unto me) whereupon doth depend all the increaſe of mine honour, and the ſafety of my life, which wholly lyes in thy hands. If diſcourſing then with *Daraxa*, amongſt other reaſons, thou ſhalt work her by force of Argument, that ſhe forſake this falſe Sect, wherewith ſhe is now infected; and make her to become a Chriſtian, thou canſt not but ſee what good will come thereof: firſt, Salvation to her own ſoul; next, good ſervice unto God; thirdly, great content to their Catholike Majeſties; fourthly, honour to thy ſelf in thy Country; and laſtly, to thy ſelf perfect happineſſe. For, deſiring her to Wife, I meane to be married unto her, and the benefit ſhall not be ſmall which thou ſhalt make by this voyage: for it ſhall be as profitable, as it ſhall be honourable unto thee; and therefore ſtraine all the wits thou haſt to bring this good purpoſe to paſſe. For beſides that thou ſhalt be rewarded by God, for the ſoul which thou ſhalt gaine, I for my part, will with many requitals, and thoſe reall, recompence the life which thou ſhalt give me by thy good diligence in this buſineſſe, and if (exerciſing thy power with her;) it ſhall be my good happe to winne her by thy interceſſion. Doe not refuſe to doe me this favour, ſince thou canſt doe ſo much with her: And becauſe there are ſo many tyes upon thee, to induce thee hereunto, it is not fit that I ſhould preſſe thee any further, or to be too importunate with thee. To whom, when he had ended his exhortation, *Ozmin* made him this anſwer:

My very good Lord; The ſame reaſon, wherewith you ſeek to bind me, ought likewiſe to oblige you to believe, how much I deſire that *Daraxa* ſhould follow my Religion, which very earneſtly, divers, nay infinite times I have perſwaded her unto. My deſire is no other, than your owne; and therefore I will uſe all diligence in this particular cauſe, as in a thing wherein I am ſo much intereſſed. But loving her betrothed friend, and my maſter, ſo dearly as ſhe does to treat with her to turne Chriſtian, were but to double paſſion in her, without any other fruit at all: For ſhe hath ſome hopes yet alive in her, that Fortune may turne the wheel again, flattering herſelf with ſome accident or other, whereby in time ſhe may come to injoy her deſire. This is all that I can yet learne from her, ſhe is ſtill harping upon this ſtring, and (for ought that I can perceive) very conſtant in this conceit of hers. But that I may comply with that, which you command me, I ſhall (though I were ſure my labour ſhould be fruitleſſe) returne once more to treat with her in this kinde; and when I have done, I will acquaint you with her anſwer. The *Moor* did not lye in any one word that he ſaid, had he been rightly underſtood; but (not thinking on a thing ſo remote) *Don Rodrigo* gave credit, not to that which he truly, but to that he formally delivered. And ſo (though deceived) he had ſome confidence with him, and was not cleane out of hope. For *Quien de ver as ama, Se-enganna, con deſenganos*: He that truely loves, is deceiv'd with that, which ought to deceive him.

*Ozmin* (when *Rodrigo* was gone) remained ſo ſad to ſee the open inſtance which was made to his own hurt, that he was ready through jealouſie to runne out of his wits. Which did ſo afflict him, that from that day forward you could never get a cheerfull look from him, and making things impoſſible, ſeeme poſſible unto him, he did wraſtle and ſtruggle with himſelf, imagining, that this new Competitor (being powerfull in his own Houſe and Country) might

uſe

uſe ſome tricks and deviſes, wherewith to hinder his intent, being ſo ſollicitous as he was, and ſo earneſt in the buſineſſe. He feared again on the other ſide, leſt ſhe might be wrought to alter her former affection; for many batteries make a breach in the ſtrongeſt Walls; and with ſecret Mynes they are blown up, and laid level with the ground.

Out of this jealouſie of his, he diſcourſed in his thoughts of Tragical ends, and diſaſtrous accidents, which preſented themſelves unto his phantaſie; which he did not ſo much believe, as he did mightily fear, becauſe he was a perfect Lover.

*Daraxa* ſeeing how her deareſt beloved had for many dayes together continued in this melancholly mood, was very deſirous to know the cauſe of this his ſadneſſe: but ſhe could not wring it from him, nor did he ſpeak a word of that unto her, which had paſt betwixt him and *Don Rodrigo*, ſhe (poor Gentlewoman) knew not vvhat to do, nor which way to work him to be merry, howbeit with ſweet words, uttered from a daintier tongue, pleaſant ſmiles, and a conſtant heart, much augmented by thoſe fair eyes, whoſe warm tears did be-dew her tender cheeks with thoſe Cryſtal waters which did flow from them, ſhe ſoftly breathed forth (having firſt ſent forth many a ſigh, as Heralds of her ſorrowfull mind:) theſe few words unto him.

Lord of my life and liberty; my betroathed, whom I honour and obey, what thing can there be of that force, (I being alive, and in your preſence) that ſhould thus to my hurt torment and grieve you? May my ſelf peradventure be the price of your joy? or how will you be pleaſed to diſpoſe of it, whereby my Soul may be freed from this Hell of ſorrow, wherein for your ſake I am tormented? let the cheerfull Heaven of your countenance ſcatter thoſe clouds wherewith my heart is over-caſt, if I am able to do any thing with you; if the love which I bear you deſerveth ought; if the grief wherein I am, may move you to pitty; if you will not that my life receive its burial in your ſecrecy, I beſeech you to tell me the cauſe of your ſadneſſe. Here ſhe ſtopt; for her tears had choak't her utterance, ſorrow working on them both, one and the ſame effect; for he could not anſwer her otherwiſe, than with the ſcalding tears of love, each ſtriving with their own to dry up the other, ſeeming both to be one and the ſelf-ſame thing, as long as their tongues were thus tied, and the current of their ſpeech ſtopped.

*Ozmin*, with the oppreſſion of his ſighs, (for he cloſely ſmothered them) fearing (if he ſhould vent them) to be over-heard, did ſo long reſiſt them, by returning them back again unto his Soul; from whence they would have broken out their way, that he fell down into a ſwoon, and ſo deep an one, as that he lay for dead. *Daraxa* knew not what to do, nor how to fetch him again, nor which way to comfort him, nor could ſhe conceive what might be the cauſe of this ſo great and ſudden an alteration, having formerly been accuſtomed to ſhew himſelf merry and cheerfull. She was very buſie in wiping his face, in drying his eyes, putting her fair hands upon them; after ſhe had dipt a rich hand-kerchief, that ſhe had about her in the water, imbroydered with Gold and Silver, inter-woven with divers other glorious colours; and ſcattered here and there with Pearle, and other devices of wonderfull both worth and workmanſhip. So much was ſhe transformed into this pain of his, and her ſenſes ſo wholly taken up in ſeeking to recover him, that had this fit continued but a little longer, *Don Rodrigo* might have found them little leſſe than arm in arm; for *Daraxa* had his head leaning on her knee, and one ſide of his body folded in her Gown, when he firſt began to come to himſelf. Now when his ſenſes were come again into their proper places, and all was well, thinking to have taken his leave of her, *Don Rodrigo* on the nick comes into the Garden. *Daraxa* (though much troubled) came off as handſomely as ſhe could, leaving through haſte her curious hand-kerchief on the ground, which was quickly taken up by *Ozmin*, who preſently had it in his eye.

Now when ſhe ſaw that *Don Rodrigo* drew nigh, ſhe went her way, and left them two alone together: *Rodrigo* (when he ſaw the Coaſt was clear) ask'd him what he had done in the buſines? He told him, (as he had at other times) that he found her ſo firm in her love to her betrothed friend, that ſhe will not onely not be wonne, (as you pretend) to be a Chriſtian; but if ſhe were ſo, yet for his ſake, ſhe would willingly turn Moor; ſo extream is her own folly, the love of her Religion, and of her husband. I treated your buſineſſe with her; and to you, becauſe you attempt it, and to me, becauſe I propoſe it, ſhe beareth us both that hatred, that ſhe is reſolved, if ever I ſpeak word thereof again, never any more to ſee me; and as for you, you ſee ſhe no ſooner ſaw you, but ſhe went her way. So that I would not have you weary out your ſelf in this ſuit, nor ſpend any more time in it; for I ſee it will be but in vain, and a hopeleſſe piece of work. *Don Rodrigo* was ſtrucken deeply into his dumps,

with this ſo reſolute an anſwer, delivered with that ſharpneſſe, which made it the more ſowre and unfit for reliſh. From that time forward he began to ſuſpect that *Ozmin* was rather in his prejudice, than profit, and did rather diſ-advantage, than advance his pretenſion. Howſoever he thought at leaſt with himſelf, that though *Daraxa* might happily have given ſo diſtaſtefull a reply, yet it did ill become him to report it unto him, in that rough faſhion as he did, making himſelf, as it were, maſter and ruler of the roſte: but ſuch impoſſible things in their encounter are Love and Diſcretion; for evermore a man is ſo much the more confounded and troubled in himſelf, by how much the more he loveth and affecteth: hereupon did repreſent it ſelf unto him that ſtrict league of amity and friendſhip, which *Daraxa* reported to have been betwixt him and his old Maſter, he imagined, that love was ſtill alive in him, and could not be perſwaded, that the aſhes of that fire were yet grown cold. With this conceit (which was re-inforced by his paſſion) he was fully bent to put him out of the houſe, informing his father how unfitting it was; nay, how dangerous to permit (where *Daraxa* was) ſuch an one, as might entertain her in the diſcourſe of her former Love, ſtill putting her in minde thereof, eſpecially it being their Majeſties intent and purpoſe to have her turn Chriſtian: which would be hard to do, as long as *Ambroſio* was there. Let us, Sir, (ſaid he) make ſome trial by ſundring them ſome few dayes one from another, and then we ſhall ſee what effect it will bring forth.

*Don Luys* did no whit miſlike his ſons counſel, and preſently picking a quarrel, where no cauſe was, (for of great men we muſt not ask the reaſon of things; and a Captain with his Souldiers will be bold now and then to make fifteen of two eights) he diſmiſſed him of his ſervice, commanding him, that he ſhould not ſo much as once dare paſſe by the door. And he took him ſo on the ſudden, that he could not take his leave of *Daraxa*. And ſo obeying his maſter, faining leſſe ſorrow, than what he left, he removed his body from thence, (for the pledge he could carry whither he liſted) but for his Soul, that abode ſtill with her, in whoſe power it had formerly ſo long remained.

---

## The Argument.

*Continuing the Story of the love of* Ozmin *and* Daraxa, *are recounted the troubles and griefs that befell them both: as alſo thoſe publick Feaſts, that were made by divers Knights and Gentlemen, for to glad and chear up the diſ-conſolate* Daraxa: *and of the valour which* Ozmin *in diſguiſe and unknown, did perform in them.*

*Daraxa* ſeeing ſo ſudden a change; began to ſuſpect that his former ſorrow had its birth from that new ſucceſſe: and now by the ſequel aſſured her ſelf it was ſo: whereupon adding one evil to another, ſorrow to ſorrow, & grief to grief, wanting the ſight of her eſpouſed Lord; albeit the poor Lady did diſſemble it all that ſhe could, yet this was that, which did moſt trouble her. Give them leave to weep, howl, ſigh, cry, and talk that finde themſelves afflicted; howbeit they do not therewith take away the burthen of that pain which they indure, yet it doth leſſen ſorrow, and makes the load ſomewhat lighter. She was ſo deprived of all content, ſo heavily ſad, and ſo bodily afflicted, that you might read her griefs, not onely in her face and countenance, but throughout all the courſe of her carriage. Our inamoured Moor would not change his eſtate and condition of life; for as he went clad before, the ſame ſtile he ſtill continued, and in the habit of a day-labourer, he followed his painfull fortune: therein he had had good ſucceſſe, and he hoped the like with advantage. He dayly followed his work hard, where there was ought to be got, going in this ſort from place to place to prove his fortune, trying if by this means he could come to hear, or hearken out any thing that might import him, or ſerve his turn concerning *Daraxa*: for no other end, or intereſt in the world had he but this, to labour ſo hard as he did; for he had liberally to ſpend with a large hand for many dayes together, out of the means that he had brought from home in money and in Jewels. But as well for that which hath been ſaid, as alſo becauſe he was well known in that habit, that he might have the freer licence whereſoever he came, and himſelf remain ſafe in his perſon under this diſguiſe, leſt his deſigns might otherwiſe be overthrown, he continued his wonted wear.

Thoſe young *Cavallero's* that ſerved *Daraxa*, knowing the favour that ſhe bare to *Ozmin*, and that he was now no longer ſervant in *Don Luys* his houſe, every one did covet him

with

for himself and his own ends, and happy was he that could make the first purchase; so general was their desire to have him theirs.

But *Don Alanso de Cuniga* got the start of all the rest, being a Gentl. of that Citie; one that was born to a great estate, young, gallant, and rich, and one that was confident, that others want; and his wealth, by the help of *Ambrosio*, should carry the businesse. He commanded him to be sent for, entertained him in his service, did him many known good turns, made him more advantageous proffers, gave him many kinde and loving words, and in conclusion, a kinde of friendship was begun between them, (if any such thing may be found between master and man:) notwithstanding, in as much as man is compatible, it is commonly called by the name of Privicy, or Inwardnesse, whereunto men grow by some deserving service: with whom having run over some passages, he came in the end to discover his desire unto him, promising him great rewards: all which was but an opening unto him of his old wounds, and a ripping up of his sores, to make them greater than before: if he were jealous before of one, now he had two Corrivals, & within a short time after, he knew of many which his Master had discovered unto him, and which way they marched, and the means whereby they thought to prevail: but for his own part he neither sought, or desired any furtherance of others, save onely his good intelligence, believing (as he verily perswaded himself) that solely his intercession should be sufficient to effect it.

I am not able to imagine, much lesse to expresse the grief which he conceived, seeing himself now the second time to be made a Bawd to his own wife: and how fitting notwithstanding it was for him to passe through all those Pikes with a discreet kinde of dissimulation.

He entertained him with good words, for fear lest it might happen unto him, as it did with *Don Rodrigo*; and if he should carry himself violently and inconsiderately with the rest with whom he had to deal with, he should finde his hands too full, and give himself a great deal of trouble, and in the end lose all, and not come to the knowledge of any thing concerning his best beloved. And if we will peaceably enjoy the end of our desires, we must put on patience and sufferance in the atchievements of them.

He bore him fairly in hand, albeit his heart was all on fire, his various thoughts gave him many a shrewd battel, and assaulted him on every side, galling him in such cruel manner, that like a Bull inraged, he knew not how to help himself, nor whither to flie for succour, nor behinde whom to run, nor could he finde any comfort for to ease those intolerable torments which he indured. The Hare was single, the Grayhounds many, and all light-footed, they had certain Falcons too in their favour, that for all their high place, would not refuse to stoop to their Lure, for hope of reward: to these I may adde a number of shee-friends and acquaintance, coming to visit and banquet with *Daraxa*, who too too usually set fire to the honour of many a fair Lady, and blow the coals of Lust in many Noble houses of good report and honest fame: many Ladies and Gentlewomen enter (for such they are in appearance) and all forsooth, under the fair name of *Visiters*; some, out of the difficulty they finde at home in their own houses to effect their purpose; others, to work deceit, and to bring innocent Dames, by one device, or other into the same net, wherein themselves have been caught. Of these kinde of creatures there are great store, the world is full of them, and the practice too too common. Nay, out of the principallest and gravest sort of Ladies, the Devill hath not been careless in working them to become pot-lids, and covers to these boyling vessels of concupiscence. These are those silver Plates, that cover many a sweet morsel, after which your Gallants so eagerly long to lick the lips, and are so sharp set. All these things did he fear, and many more, but most of all *Don Rodrigo*, to whom both himself, and the rest of the rivals bare great hatred for his false arrogancy, whereof he cunningly made use, to have them thereby desist from their purpose: and the more to daunt and amate them, he made them all believe, or at least would fain have them so to think, that he was the onely man that was like to carry *Daraxa*, as having the best means and opportunity, (besides his own desires) to grow into her Love and favour. Hereupon they spake courteously unto him, but in their hearts they wish't him hang'd; they poured hony to him out of their mouths, leaving rancour and poyson in their breasts; they saluted him kindly, but curst his very bowels and intrails, desiring to see them burst in a thousand pieces; they smiled upon him, but as Dogs do grin at Wasps, they long to have a snap at him: this is the common fashion now in Court, and more particularly amongst those of the greatest rank and quality.

Now let us return again to *Daraxa*, and speak of the torments which she suffered; of

the care which she took to know what was become of her dearest Love, whither he was gone, what he did, how it was with him in his health, how he spent his time, and whether he had got him some other new Mistresse; and this did trouble her most: for albeit mothers have likewise some sorrow for the absence of their Children, yet notwithstanding the case is not alike: for they onely fear the life of their Childe, but a wife the losse of her husbands love, left some other woman, with fawning blandishments and smooth flatteries, should draw his affection from her. What dayes so sad as those, what nights so tedious, as for a woman to weave and un-weave her thoughts, like *Penelope's* Web, with the chaste desire of her beloved *Ulysses*?

I shall utter much by being silent in a passage of this nature; for to paint forth such a sorrow as this: small was that cunning, which a famous Painter used upon the death of a young damosell, who after he had painted her dead, stretcht out to the life, lying in her Coffin, he placed round about the Coarse, her parents, her brethren, her kinsfolks, her friends, her acquaintance, and her houshold servants in their proper places, and with that grief which was fitting for every of them in their several degrees: but when he came to her father and mother, he left off to finish their faces, giving every one licence and free liberty to pourtrait forth such a sorrow, according as he himself should therewith be affected; for neither words nor pensil were any way able to manifest a parents love, or the sorrow that they conceived, save onely some actions, which we have read of Heathen people. The same course must I take. The pensil of my rude tongue, shall be but a grosse unhewen stick, fit onely to form blots and blurres; and therefore it shall be wisdom to leave it to the discretion of the hearer: and to him that shall understand History, to referre it to his consideration in what manner such passions as these are to be apprehended. So that every man may measure it by his own imagination, judging others hearts by their own.

*Daraxa* was so surcharg'd with sorrow, that her outward remonstrances manifested her inward affections. *Don Luys* seing her so wholly taken up with melancholly, as also *Don Rodrigo* his son, both of them for to cheer her up, ordained certain feasts, as that of the running of Bulls, & their *juego de cannas*: And because the Citie was so well fitted for these pastimes, it shortly after took effect. Now those that were Actors in these sports, had every one of them a several device, wrought in different sorts of silkes and colours, expressing therein their diverse passions, one, his despair; another, his hope; this, his captivity; that, his jealousie; some their joy, some their sorrow, and some their being in love, and the like. All which and more too, did meet in poor *Daraxa*.

As soon as *Ozmin* knew that this appointed feast was to be performed, and that his master was one of the number; he thought with himself, that it were not time ill spent to see his mistris, by giving some proof of his valour, and setting himself forth that day amongst the rest. Which being come, just as the Bulls began to run; he mounted upon his horse, both he and it being in every point very well fitted. His face was scarfed with watched Taffata, that he might avoid the common eye, and his horse had his eyes vailed with a bend of black. He feined himself a stranger; his servant went before him, bearing in his hand a goodly strong Launce; he rounded the whole place, beholding many things of admiration which were therein: but above all, the beauty of *Daraxa* did out-shine the rest, as the day doth the night: and in her presence all the other Dames were but darknesse. He placed himself right over against her window; whither he was no sooner come, but he saw the place much altered, every man flying as fast as he could from a fierce Bull, which at that instant they had let out of the Paddock; it was a Bull of *Tarifa* well grown, cunning in the carriage of his head, as stout as a Lion, and as full of rage. Who was no sooner let forth, but giving two, or three nimble bounds, put himself into the mid'st of the place, making himself maister of all that round, to the great affright and terrour of all that were there. He turn'd his frizzled front from side to side, whil'st divers darts were thrown at him, which he did easily shake off, and used such art, that he would not suffer them to gall him in the flank, or other his inferiour parts: and this he did avoid, by using certain light friskals, which he performed so dexterously as they could not touch him. Now there was not a man in all the place that durst to encounter him on horse-back, and those that were a foot, durst not expect his coming, nor look him in the face, though he were never so far from them. So that for very fear they left him all alone, and not one man save onely *Ozmin*, and his servant was to be seen any thing neat him in all the circuit of ground.

The Bull, as if he had rode on the wings of the winde, ran with all the speed he could, directly towards this Gentleman; so that he was forced to betake himself suddenly to his Launce,

Launce, which he had not taken into his hand when the Bull was first let loose, and lifting up his right arme, bearing his Launce for his best advantage, whereat was fastened *Daraxa's* Handkercher, which she left behind her in the Garden (as you have heard heretofore) with a graceful kinde of activenesse, and a gallant aime in the carriage of his arme, he charged home upon him; and making way by his neck, he ranne his Launce quite through his body, which made no stay till the point thereof had nayled the hoofe of one of his farther feet to the ground, leaving him there for dead, without any motion in the World; there onely remaining in his hand the short broken truncheon of his Launce, which he casting away from him in a cuelerie fashion, he victoriously, but modestly quitted the place.

*Daraxa* was much rejoyced in the sight of him: for when he first made his entrance, she knew him by his man, who had sometimes also been her servant; as likewise by his handkercher, which after the Bull was slaine, he wore about his arme. All that were there present, with a generall murmure, remained full of admiration, giving him due commendation, indeeming the happinesse of the stroke, and the strength of this unknown Knight. Nor was any thing else in the mouths of the multitude, than the discoursing of the brave performance of the businesse, delivering the manner thereof one to another; and though they had all seen how it was, yet every one spake thereof afresh, and it seemed to them as a dreame; some in wonder clapping their hands: others highly extolling his valour: one speaks with his fingers, another stands amazed; a third blesseth himself; a fourth lifts up his arme; a fifth acts it with his hand, all of them having their mouths and their eyes full of joy: a sixth bowes down his body, and suddenly leaps up again in the air; some bend the brow, and some being ready to burst with content, make graceful Matachines, with many other pretty Antick-gestures.

All which to *Daraxa* seemed so many degrees of glory. *Ozmin* withdrew himself out of the Citie into certaine back-gardens, out of which he formerly came; and (leaving his Horse, and changing his cloaths, with his Sword under his arme, returning in the habit of *Ambrosio*) he came to the place: taking his stand where he might see what he most desired, and was seen again by her, who loved him more than her own life. They took great pleasure in beholding each other: howbeit *Daraxa* was very fearfull, lest some misfortune might befall him, standing there afoot amongst the multitude: she made signes unto him, that he should get up upon a Scaffold; but he made show that he did not understand her meaning, standing there still till the Buls began to runne.

By this time the evening was farre spent, and with the approaching of the night, those that were to foot out the *Iuego de Canas*, made their entrance in manner following.

First of all the Trumpets, Fifes, and Drums, accompanied with divers other sort of musick, presented themselves, being cladde in rich Liveries of sundry colours; after whom followed the *Acemilas*, or Sumpter Mules, laden with bundles of Canes.

The companies that were to maintaine this sport, were likewise eight, answering to the number of their bundles of Canes. Every one had a Sumpter Cloth of Velvet cast over the Canes, richly imbroydered with the Armes of their Master in silk and gold, the *Garrotes* belonging thereunto, being all of silver.

After these, entred two hundred and forty Gennets, richly furnished for 48 Knights, which were five a peece for every man, besides that which came in with the Canes, which made up six in the whole. But they that entred first on the right hand, came in two Files, opposing themselves against the adverse part. The first two horses (which as if they had been yoaked together, ranne on in an even and equall course) were assisted by five others of a side, bearing their Owners Targets at the Arson of their Saddles, offering their fairest show to the eyes of the Spectators; wherein were depainted their Emblemes and their *Motto's*, set forth with fair Scarfes, rich Ribboning, Tassels and Buttons of the best both silk and gold, with sundry other borderings and costly imbroyderings, every man suiting himself according to his own humour, and particular fancie. Most of the Horses had their Pettrels stuck full with Bels, all their other furniture and trappings being very rich and curious, they had sumptuous headstals of gold and silver, set with pretious stones, as thick as they could stand each by other: it shall suffice for the better amplifying of that I have spoken, that they were in *Sevill*, where there is no small store of them, nor make little esteem of such things; and that these Knights and Gentlemen were Lovers, Competitours, rich and young; and the Lady, for whom they strove, present among them. These entred in at one gate of the Place, and when they had given it a round, they issued out at another near unto that by which they entred. So that the one did not hinder the other either in their coming in, or in their going forth; and thus they put in very good equipage as could be desired.

The horſes having quit the place, theſe Gallants entred in againe, the whole eight ſquadrons running two and two together, well attired themſelves with their Liveries attending upon them (as before hath been delivered) and with their Launces in their hands, which they ſtrongly brandiſhing, made the ſtock and point thereof ſeem to meet together, whoſe nimble ſhaking cauſed every ſingle Launce to appear to be four. Preſently upon this, incouraging their proud Gennet, with their lowd ſhouts and cries, and wounding their Sattin ſides with their ſharpe Spurres, you would have thought them rather to flye, than runne; their maſters, and they, ſeeming but one joynt-body, ſo cloſely did they keep themſelves in their ſeats. Nor is this any Hyperbole, or over-indearing what was done, ſince that in all parts almoſt of *Andaluzia*; as *Sevill*, *Cordova* and *Xerez de la frontera*, they bring up their children (as it is commonly ſaid) from the Cradle to the Saddle, as in other parts they accuſtome them to carry Canes. And it is a wonder in ſuch tender years, to ſee ſuch hard ſteels, and ſuch dexterity and agility of body. For to doe theſe things, is an ordinary exerciſe amongſt them. They gave a turne about the place, running to and fro from all the four parts thereof: and then leaving the place for a while to recover freſh breath (and to give ſome pawſing to the Spectatours) they entred again, as before, (changing ſtill their Horſes) with their Targets on their armes, and their Canes in their hands.

Then they divided themſelves by ſix and ſix (as the manner there is) and in a handſome well ordered faſhion began their ſport. Wherein having continued for the ſpace of a quarter of an hour, or thereabours, ſome other Gentlemen thruſt in amongſt them to part the quarrel, beginning with their freſh Horſes a well-prepared skirmiſh, both the one and the other from all parts of the place, ranging and marſhalling themſelves in ſuch good array, obſerving ſuch due both time and meaſure, that it ſeemed a very fine contryed daunce: the beholding whereof, as it held the people in ſuſpence by poſſeſſing all their faculties; ſo did it give them ſingular content. But this ſport was interrupted, and wholly diſordered by the ſudden approach of a furious Bull, which they had let looſe from the other ſide of the place. Thoſe that were a horſe-back, changing their Canes into Javelins, (which they had ready at hand) began to caſt themſelves into a ring, ſeeking to ſhut him in on every ſide: but the Bull ſtood ſtock-ſtill in the midſt of them, not knowing whom he ſhould firſt ſet upon; he caſt his eyes upon them all, tearing up the earth with his forked feet; and whileſt every man ſtood in this manner expecting his chance; one bold Rogue amongſt the reſt comes athwart him provoking him to fury with his tottered Cloak, and his ſhrill ſhouts, but little needed any ſuch inſtigations: for the Bull preſently thereupon, like one mad with rage, forſaking the horſemen, made after him with all the eagerneſſe he could, who took himſelf to his heels as faſt as they were able to carry him; he flyes from the Bull, the Bull after him, and never gives him over, forcing him to take Sanctuary under *Daraz's* window, juſt there where *Oznin* then ſtood; who deeming it a place of priviledge for this fearfull young fellow, and reputing it a kinde of injury offered to his Lady and Miſtris, if there he ſhould receive any ill entertainment, as likewiſe to himſelf, if this poor Rogue ſhould ſuffer for his coming thither; as well out of this reſpect; as alſo for that he was incenſed againſt thoſe, who ſtrove to get the honour of the day, and to winne grace by doing ſomething bravely in her preſcence, breaking through the thickeſt of all the people, he went out againſt the Bull, who forſaking him he formerly followed, made directly towards himſelf. All that beheld this, thought him either fooliſh or mad, that ſhould ſo deſperately put himſelf forth to incounter with a Beaſt of that courage, and fierceneſſe, looking every minute when he ſhould take him up between his Hornes; and toſſing him up aloft, break every bone of him in pieces. All of them with lowd voyces cried out unto him, Take heed, for the paſſion of God, if you love your life look to your ſelf; for if you had a thouſand lives, they are all in danger of loſing. You may by this time imagine with your ſelves, what a poor taking his Spouſe was in: for mine own part I knew not what to ſay therein, ſave that ſhe was a Woman bereft of her proper Soul, and was become an inſenſible body through too much Sence. The Bull bowed downe his head for to faſten his blow upon him, but this was but an humbling himſelf to the ſacrifice, for he never came to lift it up again. For the *Moor* writhing his body aſide, and with extraordinary quickneſſe unſheathing his ſword, acting it all in an inſtant, he gave him ſuch a cut in the neck, cloſe under the horne, that parting the bones of the braine in ſunder, he left his head hanging by his winde-pipe, and there he lay for dead.

This done (as though he had done nothing) ſheathing his ſword, he preſently leaves the *Place*. But the common rout that love novelties, and hunger as well to hear, as to tell ſtrange tales (beſides many horſe-men, and foot-men that began to flock about him, to know who he was)

was) preſſed ſo hard on every ſide to ſee him, and ſo throng'd him both before and behinde, that they had almoſt ſtifled him, being ſcarce able to wagge amongſt them. In the Windows, and on the Scaffolds began a new murmur of admiration, like unto the former, there being a generall joy amongſt them all, for that this thing had happened at the concluſion of theſe feaſts, ſo that nothing elſe was talked of, ſave only thoſe two wonderfull accidents of that Evening, doubting which were the greater of the two; and taking in good part this ſecond courſe which he ſet before them, he left their palate well pleaſed, and their mouths ſeaſoned with a good reliſh, to recommend ſuch brave actions in perpetuall remembrance to all ſucceeding ages.

---

## The Argument.

*The ſtory continues of theſe two illuſtrious Lovers,* Ozmin *and* Daraxa, *wherein is declared her ſorrow, and his grief with diverſe other accidents: and how for to comfort and cheer up* Daraxa, *there was a Tourneyment, or Juſting performed by many Knights, and Gentlemen of worth, wherein* Ozmin *bore away the bell, and had the glory of the day: yet all this could not make* Daraxa *merry.*



His day *Daraxa* had (as you have ſeen) her pleaſures interrupted, her joyes intermixed with griefs, her delights falſe, and her contents unſavourie: for ſcarce had arrived the comfort which ſhe took in ſeeing that which ſhe moſt deſired, but on the ſudden it was overtaken with fear of danger: it did likewiſe torment her, to think with herſelf that ſhe knew not how, nor upon what occaſion to ſee him once again, nor how ſhe might feed her fill, ſatisfying the hunger of her eyes on the delicate food of her ſweet deſire. And becauſe pleaſure appears not, where Sorrow is in place, it could not be diſcerned in her countenance, whether their Feaſts had given her that contentment, for which they were intended: As well for this, as for that theſe Gallants were ſomewhat more heated than before, being ſet on fire with that beautifull fairneſſe, and fair beauty of *Daraxa*, deſirous more than ever to entertaine her with pleaſures, and that fitting occaſion might be offered to come again to the ſight of her; in this their pride of heart, and heate of bloud, they ordained a Tourney wherein *Don Rodrigo* was to be the Challenger.

And ſome few nights after, the Challenge was publiſht with great ſtore of muſicall inſtruments, and bright-burning Torches, that all the ſtreets, together with the great Place, ſeemed to be all on a flame: in this ſolemne manner they ſet up the Challenge, where it might beſt be ſeen and read of all that paſſed by.

There was a place for Tourneyment neer unto the Gate, which they call the gate of *Cordova*, adjoyning to the wall, (which I have ſometimes ſeen and well known, though now decayed) where the Knights and Gentlemen went to exerciſe Armes, and to prove their Lances: there *Don Alonſo de Zunniga*, being but a new beginner, did likewiſe practiſe amongſt the reſt, deſirous to ſhew himſelf in this Tourney, for the great affection which he bare to *Daraxa*. He was afraid he ſhould rather loſe than get honour in this Tourneyment, nor did he ſtick in all companies publikely to ſay as much; not becauſe he wanted either ſtrength, or courage; but becauſe in all things whatſoever, Uſe makes maſteries: for they that have onely the bare *Theorick*, and naked ſpeculation of things, be they never ſo skilfull in this their contemplative knowledge, they erre in their ayme, be they never ſo confident in their undertakings. And in this, of all other he was moſt unwilling to erre, the thoughts whereof did much afflict him, yet made him withall more carefull how to behave himſelf in the buſineſſe.

*Ozmin* on the other ſide deſired to have as few enemies as he could, and becauſe he might not Tourney, nor thought it poſſible to be admitted into the number, he would faine have ſome body to enter the Liſts, that might overthrow *Don Rodrigo's* pride, for that he was more jealous of him than of all the reſt: more to effect this his purpoſe, than any mind that he had therein to do his Maſter ſervice, he ſpake thus unto him:

Sir, if you be pleaſed to grant me free liberty of ſpeech, I may haply deliver that unto you, which may be of ſome profit unto you in this ſo honourable an occaſion. *Don Alonſo* dreaming of nothing leſſe, than that he would treat with him touching ſuch Gentleman-like

exerciſes

exerciſes as theſe, but rather ſuppoſing that he would entertaine him with ſome diſcourſe touching his Love, ſaid unto him; You are too ſlow in unfolding your ſelf, conſidering the haſte I have to hear thee, and the longing deſire which I have to know what it is thou wilt ſay unto me.

Sir, (quoth hee) I finde, that of force you muſt be preſent at this famous Tourneyment, the noyſe whereof, as it hath filled every mans eare, ſo it is now all their talk: nor do I wonder, that where the reward of a glorious name lyes at ſtake, men go on fearfully, out of their great deſire that they have to gain it. I that am your poor creature, will doe you the beſt ſervice I can, by inſtructing and inabling you in that, which you are deſirous to attaine unto in the exerciſe of Horſemanſhip, and the uſe of armes, and that in a ſhort time; no way doubting but my inſtructions ſhall bring forth good fruits of what I promiſe. Let not this ſeem ſtrange unto you, nor let my youth ſcandall my skill; for I muſt tell you, they being things whereunto I have ever been bred, they are familiar unto me, and I dare boldly boaſt my knowledge in them. *Don Alonſo* was much joyed in hearing him, and giving him many thanks for this his voluntary offer of his love and ſervice: he told him; If thou performeſt what thou ſpeakeſt, thou ſhalt bind me much unto thee. *Ozmin* made anſwer; He that promiſeth that, which he cannot performe, is as wide of his word, as he is from the work; and means nothing but deceit; but he that ſtands in thoſe tearmes, as I doe now, where tricks cannot ſerve the turne, he muſt of force (unleſſe he be a fool) accompliſh more in deeds, than he promiſeth in his words.

Take order, Sir, that Armes be provided for your own perſon, and mine, and then you ſhall quickly know, that by how much the ſlower I have been in my offer, by ſo much the ſooner I will bring it to effect: freeing my ſelf from this debt, but not from that obligation which I have to ſerve you. *Don Alonſo* preſently gave order to have all things neceſſary provided, and when they were fitted for the purpoſe, they went forth to a place apart, where that day, and thoſe that followed till the determined time of the Tourneying, they ſpent their time in the exerciſes which that ſolemne Feaſt required. So that in a very ſhort time, *Alonſo* learn'd to keep his ſeate ſo ſure, as if he had been lockt to his Saddle, bearing his Launce with ſo gracefull a carriage, and couching it in his wreſt with ſo comely a deportment, as if he had many years been practiſed in the Feats of Armes: whereunto were very good helps, his clean proportion of body, accompanied with a ſmart and nimble kinde of ſtrength, which gave no ſmall gracefull ſucceſſe to his performance.

From this dexterity in vaulting on his horſe, paſſing lightly from one Saddle to another, from his directions in his teaching, and from the ſhape, proportion, faſhion of his body, from his behaviour, beſides the garbe of *Ozmins* language, *Don Alonſo* began to think with himſelf, that it was impoſſible this mans name ſhould be *Ambroſio*, much leſſe a Labourer, unleſſe perhaps he laboured with his wretched Fortunes, whereof he ſeemed to make ſhew. He diſcovered by his actions the lively ſplendour of ſome principall perſon nobly deſcended, who by ſome various ſucceſſe of Fortune, wandred up and down in this diſguiſe: and not being able to containe himſelf in quiet, till he were rid of this doubt, taking him one day aſide, he ſpake thus in ſecret unto him.

*Ambroſio*, it is not long that you have ſerved mee, but in this ſhort time you have been with me, you have bound me much unto you: your vertues, and your noble kinde of carriage ſpeake what you are; and therefore it is in vain to ſeek any longer to conceale your ſelf; under the courſe vaile of theſe baſe and vile cloths, and under this poor habit, which thou now weareſt, lyes hid a nobler office, and a nobler name, (like Jewells lap'd up in leather Caſes.) I now know by manifeſt ſignes which I have noted and obſerved in thee, that thou doeſt, (or to ſpeak more properly) haſt deceived me: for, that a poor Labourer, whoſe perſon you are willing to repreſent, ſhould be ſo generall (eſpecially being ſo young) in all kinde of knowledge, but more particularly in the exerciſe of Armes and horſemanſhip, is a thing almoſt (let me call in that word againe, and ſay) beyond belief. I have ſeen in thee, and plainly perceived, that under theſe hard clods of earth, and muddy ſhells, is incloſed the fineſt gold, and the pureſt orientall Pearls the world can afford. What I am, it is already well known unto thee; what thou art, I am yet to ſeek; howbeit (as I ſay) the cauſes are known by their effects, and that thou canſt not any longer conceale thy ſelf from me. I ſwear unto thee by the faith which I have in Jeſus Chriſt, and by the order of Knight-hood which I profeſſe and maintaine, to be thy both faithfull and ſecret friend, keeping that under the Locke of Silence, which thou ſhalt depoſite in my boſome, aſſiſting thee in all that I am able, both in my purſe and perſon. Give me an account of thy fortune, that I may in ſome ſort cancell the

the debt, wherein I ſtand bound unto thee for thoſe real curteſies, which I have received from thee. Hereunto *Ozmin* thus reply'd.

So ſtrongly (Sir) have you conjur'd me; ſo ſqueez'd the Grapes in the wine-preſſe, that you muſt of force wring that from my Soul, which with any other ſtraining in the world, ſave by theſe the Preſſes of your Gentleman-like proceeding, were impoſſible to be drawn from me. Complying therefore with that which you command me, putting aſſured confidence, as well in your perſon, as your promiſe, I ſhall give you to underſtand, that I am a Gentleman; my native Soyl *Soragoca* in *Aragon*, my name *Jayme Vives*, which I borrowed from my father; for ſo likewiſe was he called. It is not many years ſince, that following an occaſion, (it being the nature of young men to be in action) I fell into the Moors hands, and was made a ſlave by a ſubtill kinde of treachery, and falſe play of certain fained friends; which, whether it were occaſioned through their envy, or my misfortune, is too large a tale to tell you. It ſhall ſuffice that I deliver unto you, that being in their power, they ſold me to a *Renegado*, one that had renounced his Chriſtianity; who, how he did uſe me, it is enough to have nam'd his condition. He led me along with him, till he had brought me to *Granada*, where a Gentleman bought me, called *Zegry*, one of the principalleſt perſons in that Citie. This man had a Son of the ſame years with my ſelf, whoſe name was *Ozmin*, who becauſe he was the very picture of my ſelf, as well in age, as in ſtature, feature, favour, condition, and all things elſe whatſoever: for that I did ſo truely reſemble him, he was the more deſirous to buy me: And to uſe me the better, that it might breed the greater faſtneſſe and friendſhip between us, I taught him all I could, or knew, according as my ſelf had learned of my friends at home in mine own Countrey, which was the more perfected in me by the frequent practice of ſuch like exerciſes, being of that common uſe with us, as nothing more. From whence I reaped no ſmall benefit; for, by converſing with my Maſters Son, my knowledge was thereby increaſed, which otherwiſe I might happily have forgot: and experience teacheth us, that men by teaching, come to learn. Hence grew to be refined both in the Son and Father that affection which they bore unto me; truſting me with their perſons and wealth, ſo much did they rely upon my truth and honeſty.

This young Gentleman was a Suitor to *Daraxa*, daughter to the *Alcade de Baca*; (my Miſtreſſe, whom you ſo much adore:) the Marriage was treated of, and upon the point to take the effect; for the articles of agreement were already drawn, and no doubt the match ere this had been concluded, had not the wars hindred it, and the preſent ſiege that was then laid unto it, whereby they were forced to defer it till ſome fitter time.

*Baca* was ſhortly after yielded up, by occaſion whereof, this intended marriage hung in ſuſpence. And becauſe I was then *Dominus Fac-totum*, and the onely man in favour and truſt with them, I went and came with preſents, and other interchangeable kindneſſes, from the one Citie to the other: it being my good fortune to be in *Baca* at that time, when it was rendred up; and ſo I recovered my liberty, together with many other Captives. I would fain have returned home to mine own Countrey, but I wanted money: In the end I had notice, that a Kinſman of mine was abiding in this Citie. Two things did concurre to draw me hither; the deſire I have to ſee this place, (being ſo noble and magnificent a Citie) and the ſupplying of my wants, the better to perform my journey. I continued here a great while; without finding him, that I ſought for: for hearing no news of him, but ſuch as were uncertain, it returned to my utter undoing; by finding that which I did not ſeek for: as in ſuch caſes it commonly falleth out. I went wandring up and down the Citie, and having little money, and much care, it was my hap to meet with a rare piece of Nature, and admirable beauty; (at leaſt in my eye, howſoever in other it might be otherwiſe) but that's all one, being that is onely fair, which moſt pleaſeth. To her I delivered up all my faculties, leaving to my ſelf not one of them to live with me: I made now no more any reckoning of my ſelf, nor poſſeſſed any thing which was not hers. This fair workmanſhip is *Donna Elvira*, ſiſter to *Don Rodrigo*, and daughter to *Don Luys de Padila*, my old Maſter. And becauſe counſell (as the ſaying is) ſpringeth from neceſſity, ſeeing my ſelf ſo wholly loſt in her love, and not finding any means to manifeſt my affection, together with the quality of my perſon, I held it my beſt courſe to write Letters unto my Father of the recovery of my liberty, and that I was indebted in a thouſand double Ducates; and that he would be pleaſed to ſupply me with ſo much moneys for my relief. Which buſineſſe ſucceeded well; for having ſent me the whole ſumme, and a ſervant with a Horſe for my journey, I put my ſelf into good Cloaths, and fitted my ſelf withall things neceſſary according to mine own minde. The two, or three firſt dayes I began to make that ſtreet my walk, giving many a turn at all hours of the

day, but could never have the happineſſe to ſee her. Now, from my continual walking that way, I began by ſome ſuſpicious people to be obſerved, who ſeemed to have a watchfull eye over me; wherefore, for the avoiding of Spies, I withdrew my ſelf from my wonted walk, and betook my ſelf to a more retired courſe of life.

My ſervant (to whom I imparted my Love-buſineſſes) thinking upon ſome courſe for me, adviſed me (as being elder and better experienced than my ſelf) finding a certain piece of work going forward in my Lords houſe, to ſuite my ſelf like a day-Labourer, and to change my name, that I might not be known, and ſo rank my ſelf amongſt the reſt, that are hired to digge and carry away the rubbiſh from the Maſons work. I began to conſider with my ſelf, what might happen thereupon; but becauſe Love overcomes all difficulties, and death is too weak an adverſary to withſtand it's force, all fear was laid aſide, every thing ſeemed eaſie unto me, I put on a reſolution to entertain his advice, and ſo I did accordingly. At that time there befell me an unexpected accident, which was this: When the work was finiſhed, they receiv'd me into the houſe to be their Gardiner. Then, and never till then was that happy day that I long looked for: my Moon was now come to her full; and I was now climbing to the height of my good fortune: for the very firſt day that I ſupplied that place, and had but newly ſet foot within the Garden, I luckily met with *Daraxa*; ſhe wondred to ſee me there, and I no leſſe to behold her. We gave an account each to other of our lives, relating our mutual misfortunes; ſhe recounting hers, and I mine; not ſticking to tell her, how far I was in love with her friend, and in what faſt Fetters ſhe held my heart: intreating her withall, that ſince ſhe had ſuch clear knowledge both of my parents and my ſelf, and how nobly I was deſcended, ſhe would be pleaſed to favour my pretenſion, and to work ſo with her by her good interceſſion, that I might come (by the holy Rite of Marriage) to injoy the fruit of my hopes. She promiſed ſhe would, and did (I aſſure my ſelf) all that in her lay to accompliſh my deſire. But becauſe Fortune was evermore too too niggardly-handed towards me, when thoſe our tender loves (like young Plants) began to gather a little ſtrength, and were in the way to ſhoot up higher; the ſprigs being rent off, the bud was blaſted with a ſharp Eaſterly winde, and ſome malicious Worm lay gnawing at the root, till at laſt it withered to nothing, and was quite conſumed: for I was on the ſudden baniſhed the houſe, not knowing why, nor wherefore; falling thus from the higheſt top of happineſſe, to the loweſt depth of miſery. He that with the ſtroke of a Launce kill'd the firſt Bull, he that with the edge of his ſword made the other fall dead at his foot, was my ſelf. She ſaw me well enough, and knew me to, and was not a little glad of it, which I did plainly read in her looks, and her eyes did expreſſe it to the life. And in this occaſion (if it were poſſible) I would likewiſe ſtrive to make ſome notable proof for to pleaſe my Miſtriſſe, who ſhall eternize my actions, by giving the World to underſtand who I am, and at what valuation I ought to be rated amongſt the reſt. My inability to execute this my deſire, makes me even ready to burſt with grief; and if I could purchaſe it with my blood, I would willingly let looſe the ſluces of my veins to obtain my wiſhed end. Thus (Sir) you ſee, I have freely laid open unto you the whole ſucceſſe of my love, I have given you a true account of it, there remaining nothing to my ſelf in the reckoning, ſave a groſſe ſum of diſgraces. And with that word he ſtopt.

*Don Alonſo*, who liſtned earneſtly all this while unto him, when his ears were let looſe (for the others tongue had tied them to his mouth) threw his arms about his neck, claſping him cloſe unto him with ſtreight imbracements: Whil'ſt *Ozmin* in the mean while ſtrove to kiſſe his hands, but he would not ſuffer him ſo to do, ſaying; Theſe hands and arms are to be imployed in thy ſervice, that they may thereby deſerve to gain thine. It is no time now to uſe complements, nor to alter as yet the courſes you have hitherto held, ſeeing your own will is not in diſpoſition to do otherwiſe. As for the Tourneyment, let that never trouble your thoughts, for you ſhall enter in with the reſt, and doubt you not of it, for it ſhall be ſo; therefore pluck up your ſpirits and ſet your heart at reſt. *Ozmin* once more made offer to kiſſe his hands, humbling his knee on the ground. *Don Alonſo* did the like, making many proffers of prevention: ſo forcibly did this new bond of friendſhip tye them each to other. Thus they paſt in large converſation the reſt of thoſe dayes that remained, till the very time and hour, wherein the Tourneyment was to be performed.

I told you before, how that *Don Rodrigo* for his great arrogancy, was ſecretly miſliked by moſt of theſe Gallants. And therefore *Don Alonſo* thought with himſelf, that he had now met with that he deſired. For *Jayme Vives* entring into the Tourney, he was well aſſured, that he would eclipſe his honour, and beat down his pride, *Ozmin* for his part likewiſe did

deſire

deſire it as much. And before the hour of arming was come, that he might ſee *Daraxa* enter the place, he walked up and down there awhile, wondring to ſee it ſo richly adorned: the Hangings of Cloath of Gold and of Silk, were ſuch and ſo many, as are unable to be expreſſed; ſuch variety was there in the colours; ſuch curioſity in the windows; ſuch beauty in the Ladies; ſuch richneſſe in their dreſſings, and their Cloaths; ſuch concourſe of all ſorts of Gallants, that all being put together, ſeemed to be one ineſtimable Jewel; and every particular by it ſelf, a precious Stone ſet therein. The Tilt-yard, which divided the Place into two equal parts, ran quite athwart the mid'ſt of it; and in a convenient place was a Scaffold ſet up for the Judges, right over againſt the which were the windows appointed for *Daraxa* and *Don Elvira*, who upon two white Palfreys, their furnitures being black Velvet, ſet with ſilver Oes, and ſuitably fringed, entered well attended: Who after they had rounded the Place, took their ſeats, where *Ozmin* leaving her, haſted away, becauſe anon after the Challengers were to enter; who within a little ſpace made their arrival, wonderfull well ſet forth, and in very good equipage. The Ho-boyes, the Trumpets, and other inſtruments of Muſick ſounded without ceaſing, till they were ſeated in their places. Afterwards entred the Defendants, and *Don Alonſo* was one of the firſt; who having performed his three courſes, and thoſe ſingular well (that few did better) he preſently returned home.

Having before obtained licence for a Cavaleer, a friend of his, whom he expected from *Xeres de la frontera*, *Ozmin* in the mean while attending his coming, they came in both together to the place; and *Alonſo* being his *Padrino*, preſented him unto them. This Moors Arms were all black, his Horſe ſuitable, without any plume in his Helmet; inſtead whereof with great curioſity, he had made a Roſe of *Daraxa's* Handkercher, which was an aſſured token, whereby ſhe might know him. He put himſelf in his poſture, and as good luck would have it, he was to run his firſt Launce againſt one of the Challengers Abettors: The ſignal was given, they made their Carreer, *Ozmin* hits his Adverſary on the Bever, where he brake his Launce; and giving him a counter-buffe with the Truncheon of his ſtaffe, he removed him from his Saddle, and befell with that ſtroke to the ground over his Horſe crupper, but he had no other harm, ſave what he ſuffered with the weight of his Armour. For the two laſt courſes, *Don Rodrigo* put himſelf forth, who lighted with his firſt Launce on the left arm of the Moor, near unto the ſhoulders, remaining wounded by him in the pouldrons on the right ſide, where he brake his ſtaffe in three pieces. With the laſt *Don Rodrigo* miſs'd, and *Ozmin* brake his near the ſight of his Helmet, where he left behinde him a great ſplinter of his Launce; ſo that it was generally thought, that he had ſhrewdly wounded him; but his Helmet defended him ſo well, that he had no great harm.

The *Moor* having broken his three Launces, went his way wonderfully joyed with his victory, but much more *Don Alonſo*, who had brought him as his Champion into the field, and could not finde any place large enough to intertain his joy, They quitted the *Place*, and went home to the houſe to diſarm himſelf, ſuffering no man elſe to ſee his face. And putting on his ordinary apparrel, he ſecretly went out at a poſtern door on the backſide of the houſe, returning to behold his dear *Daraxa*, and to ſee that which paſſed in the Tilt-yard. He had gotten ſo near unto his Miſtriſſe, that they might in a manner have ſhaken hands; they looked ſteadily each on other, but he evermore bare his eyes ſadly, and with a heavy cheer; but ſhe beyond all degrees of ſadneſſe, ſuppoſing that the cauſe of his ſorrow might be, that ſhe had not cheered him with ſome gracious caſt of her eye: Nor could ſhe tell what to think, ſo much was ſhe amazed, to ſee him tilt in black both Horſe and Armour, being it is a ſign amongſt them of evil luck. All this put together, wrought in her a moſt deep melancholy, and continued ſo extreamly paſſionate therein, and was ſo ſurcharged with ſorrow, that the ſports being ſcarce ended, her heart trembling in her body, ſhe left her window, and haſtned home. They which did accompany her did much marvel that ſhe went away no better pleaſed, ſeeming to take no contentment in what was done, and withall began to murmure and mutter amongſt themſelves, every one ſuſpecting that, which his own malice did ſuggeſt unto him.

*Don Luys*, like a wiſe Gentleman, as oft as he heard any reaſoning thereof, ſpake ſtill in her excuſe: the like he did with his Sons that evening, when he found them grumbling at her carriage, telling them that an afflicted Soul weeps in the midſt of mirth, and that there is not any thing that can miniſter matter of joy and gladneſſe to man, or woman, that is abſent from thoſe, whom they beſt affect. Good things are ſo much the more eſteemed, by how much the more we enjoy them with known perſons, and our particular acquaintance.

Towards ſtrangers, there may (no doubt) be many intertainments given to move pleaſure and delight; (but alas) they have no feeling of them; their thoughts are otherwiſe taken up, and in them the increaſe of ſorrow is ſo much the more, by how much in others they ſee the greater joy. I blame her not for it, nor doe I think it a thing ſo ſtrange; but rather imagine it to have proceeded from her great prudence, than any diſlike ſhe had of our ſports, and doe meerly attribute it to her grave and ſober behaviour; whereas the contrary would have argued too much lightneſſe, and an unſetled kinde of carriage, which imputation, women, that prize their vertue and goodneſſe, ſtudy to avoyd. Beſides, ſhe is farre from father or mother, and from her beſt-beloved; and (though free in her viſage) yet a Captive in her condition, and that in a ſtrange Country, not knowing how to remedy herſelf, nor when ſhe ſhall finde the means. Let every man examine his own boſome, let him but make her caſe his own, and then he will tell me another tale, and ingeniouſly confeſſe, that he ſhould finde himſelf affected, juſt as ſhe is now. And in doing otherwiſe, (as it is with him that is in health) to bid the ſick to eate and be well.

This diſcourſe having paſt in ſecret amongſt them, they treated afterwards in publike of the *Xerezano*, how bravely he had behaved himſelf that day; and how (albeit they deſired much to know who he was) they could never get any more out of *Don Alonſo*, than what he told them at firſt, and they beleeved it was true. *Daraxa's* melancholy increaſed daily more and more, but the cauſe thereof none could gueſſe aright: they were all wide of the mark, none came neer the But: of all that ſhot their bolts, ſome fell too ſhort, and ſome flew over. All did judge amiſſe, inventing in the mean time all the entertainments their wits could deviſe to give her content: but ſhould they have broken their brains in the ſtudy thereof, they had never been neerer their purpoſe: for ſhe was as farre from being capable of the delights they deviſed for her, as they were from entring within the Circle of her deſires.

---

## The Argument.

*Continuing the Story of the noble loves of theſe two diſconſolate Lovers, it is now recounted how* Don Luys, *for to cheer up the gentle* Daraxa, *brought her to a pleaſant Village, whither* Ozmin *repairing, was ſet upon by a company of Clownes. And in the defence of himſelf he ſlew four of them outright, and wounded many others. For the which fact he was committed to priſon, and ſentenced to death; together with the diverſe and ſundry accidents that inſued thereupon; and how in the end he was ſet at liberty, And how himſelf and* Daraxa *turning Chriſtians, their happy Nuptials were ſolemnly celebrated in the preſence of the King and Queen of* Spaine.

DOn Luys had an houſe in *Axaraſe*, and other poſſeſſions belonging thereunto, by the vertue of his *Mayoraugoſhip*, in a little Village appertaining to *Sevill*. The ſeaſon was temperate, being then about *February*, at which time the Fields ſeem to put on their new apparell; thither they agreed to go to make merry, and to recreate themſelves for ſome few dayes, that they might not leave this path untroden, to ſee if by this means they could divert her ſorrows. With this ſhe ſeemed ſomewhat pleaſed, and made ſhew of better cheerfulnes than before; ſuppoſing, if ſhe went forth of the Citie, ſhe ſhould finde ſome means or other, to ſee and ſpeak with *Ozmin*. They made ready their *Recamare*, and all fitting proviſion for ſuch a buſineſs: and it was good ſport to behold the hurly burly and confuſed noiſe amongſt them, as of him that had the charge of Grey hounds, of that other, that was to go along with the ſetting dogs, the Tumblers, and the Kennell or the hounds; of a third, that carried Hawkes a-field; of this man bearing the Owle, that his Piece on his ſhoulder; of ſome with Croſſebowes in their hands; otherſome with Mules laden with Bedding, Hangings, and other houſhold-ſtuffe, and all of them trooping together, laughing and making themſelves merry with the conceived joy of this Feaſt.

*Don Alonſo* having notice thereof, comes to *Ozmin*, and tels him that their Miſtreſſes were gone abroad into the Country to take the aire, and diſport themſelves, and that they were to remaine there ſome time: but when they would return again, that he knew not. This newes was nothing diſpleaſing unto them for two reſpects: the one, for that they might (happily) meet there with the fewer *Competitors* in the purſuit of their Loves; the other, that they might have the better occaſion not to be known. The nights were neither cleer,

nor

nor dark, nor cold, nor hot; but with a pleaſant noiſe of ſtilneſſe, and delicate dark clearneſſe, heaven and earth were both ſo over-ſpread, that the heart of man could not imagine a fitter night for the purpoſe.

Theſe two loving friends, and friendly Lovers, agreed to try their fortunes, and to ſee what prize they could make in the choiſe of two ſuch rich Bottoms as theſe were, laden with ſo much Honour, Beauty, and Wealth, the greateſt treaſure the world can afford. They diſguiſed themſelves, apparelling their bodies with good honeſt Country cloaths, like plain Husbandmen, and ſet forth about Sun-ſet upon two hackney Jades; and when they came neer unto the Village, ſome quarter of a League, or there-abouts, they alighted at a certaine Farme-houſe; to the end, that by marching thus on foot, the leſſer notice might be taken of them. Which might then have fell out very happily for them, if Fortune had not wheeled herſelf about, and turned her back towards them; for they arrived in very good time, even then when their Ladies were in the *Balcon* entertaining diſcourſe, wholly fitting themſelves for converſation, and mirth, as the company, or occaſion ſhould give cauſe.

*Don Alonſo* durſt not draw too neer, for fear of frighting the game; and therefore intreated his Companion to make the winde-laſe, and to negotiate alone for them both; becauſe he being beloved of *Donna Elvira*, and well known to *Daraxa*, he had no reaſon to hide himſelf from them. *Ozmin* then by degrees, (with a carefull kind of careleſneſſe) ſtole neerer and neerer, ſinging in a low Baſe as it were, humming between the teeth an Arabique ſong; which (to thoſe that underſtood the language) were clear notes: But to thoſe that knew it not, and were neglectfull thereof, it ſeemed no more than an ordinary *La, La, La. Donna Elvira* (hearkning unto him) told *Daraxa*; Even on theſe rude kinde of people God hath beſtow'd his gifts, if they knew well how to uſe them. Doe you not obſerve the ſavage fellow, what a ſweet and well-tuned voyce he hath; and how he reliſheth and ayreth his notes, and how merrily he chants it, as if his mother had brought him into the world with a prick-ſong? But this is in him, as water that raines it ſelf into the Sea without any profit. By this you ſee (ſaid *Daraxa*) that all things are eſteemed according to the ſubject wherein they ſubſiſt. Theſe country Clownes, if in their tender age they be not tranſ-planted into a politicall and Civill life: and if they be not removed and changed from their barren, to better grounds, and wholly ſtript of that rugged bark, wherein they are borne, it is a thouſand to one if ever they come to be well behav'd. Whereas on the contrary, thoſe that are Citizens, and naturally of good diſpoſition, are like the Vine, which if it continue a year undreſt and untrimm'd, it yieldeth fruit notwithſtanding, though it be but a little: but if you return to prune and husband it aright, it acknowledgeth the good it hath received, and renders a very large and thankfull recompence. But this fellow that ſings here now, is ſuch a knotty piece of Timber, ſuch an arrant Clown, that the beſt Carpenter in the world cannot with his Axe nor his Plainer, hew him into faſhion, or ſhave him to any ſmoothneſſe of civill carriage, but for ever remain an unprofitable block. It is a torment to me to hear this Turtle ſing; if it pleaſe you, let us go hence, for it is time to with-draw our ſelves, that we may take our reſt.

The Lovers well underſtood one another: ſhe the Song, and he her words, and to what end ſhe ſpake them. The reſt of the Ladies went their way, only *Daraxa* remained a little behind after the reſt, and ſpeaking to him in the *Arabicke* tongue, will'd him to ſtay there: where he ſtood waiting for her, and in the meane while, walked careleſly up and down, but ſtill with an eye towards the window, to ſee when ſhe ſhould make her return.

The baſer ſort of people, (by a ſecret kind of inſtinct) doe evermore bear a naturall hatred to thoſe that are Noble; as the Lyzard to the Snake, the Swan to the Eagle, the Cock to the Pheaſant, the Crab to the Cuttle-fiſh, the Dolphin to the Whale, Oyle to Pitch, the Vine to the Cole-wort, and the like. And if you aske, (as deſirous to know what is the naturall cauſe thereof,) I can ſhew you no other reaſon for it, more than that the Adamant draws unto it the Iron, that the Mary-gold follows the Sunne, the Baſiliske kills by looking, and Swallow-wort helps the ſight, for as ſome things naturally love one another, ſo otherſome hate and abhorre by a celeſtiall influence; the reaſon whereof mortall men have not to this day been able to reach unto. And that things of divers kinds have this property, it is no wonder, becauſe they conſiſt of differing compoſitions, diſpoſitions, and inclinations in nature: but that reaſonable men, both t'one and t'other, molded of one and the ſame earth, of one fleſh, of one bloud, of one beginning, created-forme, and the ſelf-ſame end, living under one ſelf-ſame Law, being of one and the ſame Religion, and all of them in all and every part, (as farre-forth as they are men) ſo one ſelf-ſame ſubſtance; that out of that Similitude, man naturally

loves man: that yet (I say) there ſhould be that contrariety and unſavorie taſte; that this Raskallity, and baſe off-ſcumme of the earth, more hard than Flint, or the *Gallician* Nut, ſhould perſecute the Nobility with that vehemency as they doe, is a matter to me of great admiration.

That night certaine young Lads of the Pariſh likewiſe walked abroad, and lighted by chance upon theſe two Strangers: and at the very firſt incounter, without any cauſe or reaſon in the world; no occaſion being given them, began to flock together; and gathering themſelves into a ring, began to cry amain. A Woolf, a Woolf, the Woolf is come: and throwing therewithall little ſtones by hand-fulls on their heads, (as they had ſhowred down from heaven) they ſhrewdly be-pelted their Pates: ſo that they were forced to flie, unable to make any longer ſtay, their entertainment was ſo bad. And ſo they returned without any more adoe, *Ozmin* being diſ-appointed (which did moſt grieve him) of taking his leave of his Miſtreſſe. They went thither where their horſes ſtood; and on them to the City, with purpoſe to return late again in the night, that they might not be diſcovered. But this forecaſt ſtood them in little ſtead: for if Lightning and Thunder ſhould have fallen from heaven, and though they knew it ſhould either burne or daſh them in pieces, their was one Rogue amongſt the reſt, that would rather loſe his life, then carry himſelf civilly towards them; and onely out of no other end but to doe miſchief and villany. Scarce had they the next night following ſet foot in the Village, but that a knot of theſe mad-caps being met together, and knowing them to be the very ſame whom they abuſed the night before, one with a Sling, another with a Yard, this man with a Bore-ſpear, that with a Batte, ſome with Staves, ſom with Spits, not ſparing ſo much as the Peel and Maulkin of their Ovens, (as if they were to go out againſt a mad Dog) they joyntly ſet upon them: but they found them better provided then they were the night before; for they had brought with them good Iacks of Male, and ſteel Murrians, and ſtrong Bucklers. On the one ſide you might ſee ſtones, Cudgels, and lowd ſhouts; and on the other, many ſtrong blowes, and cutting ſlaſhes with the ſword; and on both ſuch a tumult, and ſuch a ſtirre, that with the noiſe thereof, the whole village ſeemed to be up in arms; ſo like a little warre did this fierce fight appear. *Don Alonſo*, in croſſing the ſtreet, was unawares with an unluckie ſtone ſtrook on the breſt, and fell'd to the ground, wanting ſtrength to recover himſelf to return afreſh to the fight. Wherefore as well as he could, he crawled up, and with-drew himſelf aſide, while *Ozmin* in the meane time drave them up before him in the ſtreet, working them much harme: for ſome of them (and that not a few) were ſore hurt, and three left dead in the place. The tumult increaſing, all the whole Village came out at once, and ſtopt the paſſage, that he could not, though he would never ſo faine, have fled from them. There was got now on the one ſide of him a Turf-breaker, a ſturdie ſtout Rogue, who with the barre of a door ſtrook him ſuch a cruell blow on the ſhoulder, that he forc't him upon his knees; but it did nothing benefit him, that he was the *Alcalde's* ſonne; for before he could come to double his blow upon him, (which he was about to do) he gave him ſuch a ſlaſh, that he clave his head in twaine, as it had been of a Kid or a Calf, leaving him lying like a *Tunnie* on the ſhore, having rendred up his life in ſatisfaction of his Roguerie. So many charged him on every ſide, and laid ſuch load upon him, that being unable any longer to defend himſelf, he was taken by them.

*Daraxa* and *Donna Elvira*, ſaw and heard all that had paſt between them, (but with much ſorrow to ſee ſuch uncivill out-rage) even from the firſt beginning of the Fray, as alſo what a coyle they kept, when they had caught him thus alive, and had him in their hold, and how they bound his hands behinde him with a Cord, as if he had been one of ther fellow rogues. All of them on all ſides intreated him ill; one buffeted him, another puncht him, a third kickt him, throwing on him a thouſand diſgracefull affronts, wherewith they ſought to be revenged on him for all the wrongs he did them, who (before he was their priſoner) durſt not look him in the face.

What a beaſtly and ſhamefull thing was this, to uſe a man thus, when he was not able to make reſiſtance, his hands being bound to the peace? A thing never to be done by any, but ſuch baſe Villaines, and dogged Clownes, which kinde of courſe uſage is naturall and proper unto them. But what becomes now of *Daraxa?* how does ſhe brook this misfortune? how is ſhe able without ſwouning, to ſee his perſon thus baſely abuſed, who did ſo much love and adore his ſhadow? on the one ſide to ſee him priſoner, on the other, to ſee ſome wounded, and ſome ſlaine, and her honour lying in the midſt between them both? for ſhe knew well enough, when the caſe ſhould be layd open, *Don Luys* of force could not but aske, what *Ambroſio* made there, and what occaſion drew him thither.

In

In this confuſion, neceſſity drave her to ſit in counſell with herſelf what courſe was beſt to be taken. To prevent therefore farther miſchief, ſhe deviſed a Letter, which when ſhe had ſealed, ſhe lockt it up in a little Cabinet that ſhe had, to the intent that when *Don Luys* ſhould come unto her, ſhe might make ſhew thereof for her own diſcharge.

Now by this time the day began to appear, and yet the people were not quieted. They had ſent unto the City to give notice of what had happened, to the end that information might be taken how things had paſt, and to open the buſineſſe. And when the Notary was come, they began to examine Witneſſe; whereof many (without being called) made their voluntary appearance. For ill men, of themſelves invite themſelves unbidden, onely out of a deſire to do that is ill: and of enemies becomes friends, to condemne the innocent. Some ſware that *Ozmin* had ſix or ſeaven, beſides himſelf in his company; others, that he was ſeen to come out of *Don Luys* his houſe, and that ſome cryed out of the window, Kill them, kill them; Others that the people of the Town reſting ſecure and quiet, they willfully ſet upon them; others, that they came and challenged them out of their houſes; there being not one man amongſt them all that ſware a truth. God deliver us from ſuch Clowns, for they are as ſtiffe as Oakes, and of the ſame toughneſſe of nature, cruell, and hard-hearted: if you will have any fruit from them, they muſt be uſed like Akornes, beaten down with Cudgels and dry blowes; for they will ſooner ſuffer themſelves to be pluckt up by the roots, though it be to the utter ruine of themſelves, and their eſtates, than to bow, to ſtoop, be it never ſo little. And if they be once minded to perſecute a man, they will perjure themſelves a thouſand times, though the matter in queſtion be not worth a ſtraw, onely out of an inclination to do that which is evill. And the ill is ſo much the worſe, that theſe wretches think, that they do God good ſervice therein, and that their ſouls are ſaved by it: and it is a wonder, if they confeſſe their fault, and repent themſelves of this their rancour and malitious poyſon. The deaths and wounds received, were prov'd upon him, and the poor Gentleman laden with irons, and put in ſafe cuſtodie. *Don Luys*, as ſoon as he had notice hereof, haſtned to the Village, his daughter informed him of the buſineſſe, acquainting him truly with all that had paſt: he inquired likewiſe of *Daraxa*, who told him the ſame tale, and that ſhe had ſent for *Ambroſio* to come thither, for to diſpatch him thence with Letters for *Granada*, and before that he could get to ſpeak with her, they had theſe two nights together beaten him with Cudgels, and pelted him with ſtones; ſo that, though her Letters were written, and lay ready for him, ſhe could not come to deliver them into his hands. *Don Luys* deſired her that ſhe would ſhew him the Letter, as well to ſee the contents thereof, as alſo for his own diſcharge, ſhe being by their Majeſties committed to his cuſtodie, She (though ſhe ſeemed loth ſo to do) condeſcended at laſt to his requeſt, and gave him the Letter, howbeit little intreaty would have ſerved the turne; for ſhe deſired nothing more, than to have him ſee what ſhe had writ. And taking it from forth her Cabinet, ſhe ſaid unto him; I give it unto you, that you may perceive my truth, and conceive no jealouſie, that I write any thing worthy the hiding from you. *Don Luys* took the Letter, and going to reade it, found that it was written in the *Arabick* tongue, wherein he had no knowledge. He then made inquirie for one that could reade and interpret that Language; the Contents whereof were, that ſhe ſignified unto her father, what a grief it was unto her, to live thus divided from him; and that ſhe deſired to be certified of his welfare; and if the deſire ſhe had to ſee him did not overſway all other reſpects, ſhe liv'd otherwiſe in as full content as any woman in the world being more made of by *Don Luys*, than any of his own children: And therefore beſought him that in acknowledgement of this his kindneſſe, and courteous entertainment, he would be pleaſed to remember him with ſome preſent worthy his deſert.

And becauſe in ſuch like hurly-burlies as theſe, words multiply more and more, and together with the ſtirre, reports gather ſtrength and increaſe; and for that every one canonizeth his own preſumption, according as he is in love with it, they began to murmure againſt *Don Luys*, and the people of his houſe. The Muſtard was got up already into their Noſes, and their fingers began to itch, but he, like a wiſe and diſcreet Gentleman, (as he was) thought fit for the preſent to diſſemble the matter; and ſeeming to take little notice of their malicious proceeding, he removed his whole houſhold, and returned back to the Citie.

Now, whilſt theſe things thus ſucceded, *Granada* had yielded herſelf to the Conquerours, upon ſuch conditions, as the Chronicles mention, and as by our fore-fathers hath been reported unto us. Amongſt thoſe others Nobles that were found there at that time, where the two fellow-father in lawes, *Alboacen* father to *Ozmin*, and the *Alcayde de Baca*: both which beſought to be baptized, deſirous to become Chriſtians: which Ceremony being performed, the

the *Alcayde* intreated their Majesties he might have licence to go see his daughter *Daraxa*: which being granted, they told him he should be advised from them ere long, how and when it should be, *Alboacen* thinking that his sonne was dead, or taken captive, used all diligence to know what was become of him, but he could never get any inkling thereof. For the which (as he had good reason so to be) he was wondrous sad, not only as he was his onely childe, but being also such a sonne, so well qualified as he was, and descended of such rich and noble Parents, the onely hope of their House. The *Alcayde* had no lesse feeling of it than he, as well for that he loved him as dearly; as if he had been his own; as also for the grief *Daraxa* would conceive when she should come to hear the tydings of this heavy news. Their Majesties on their part had dispatcht a messenger unto *Sevill* with expresse command, that *Don Luys* should presently without delay repair unto them, and bring *Daraxa* along with him; with that respect and good usage, wherewithall they had put him in trust.

Upon the receipt of these Letters, she (being acquainted what order was given) was at her wits end, and ready to runne mad, because of force, upon this occasion, she was to depart grieving thus to go away, before she should see an end of this businesse, not knowing what would become of it; and sorrowing beyond measure that her dearest Love should be left behinde her in prison; and that now when he had most need of her help, she must in this his greatest extremity, be driven to leave him to shift for himself. Her thoughts were all in a confusion, her imagination was troubled, and her heart (through the weight of her griefs) as heavy as Lead, calling herself a thousand times more unfortunate, than misfortune it self, and of all other the most wretched woman.

She was resolving to finish all at once, and together with her Love, to lose her life with a perplexed, but almost setled minde, it was in her deliberation to have awed a most cruell errour upon herself, in token of that chast and true love which she bare to *Ozmin*. But *Daraxa*, whose passion had not quite out-gone her judgement, like a discreet Lady, (as she was) correcting her cruell determinations, taking up herself when she was in the height of her speed, she resolved to trust her misfortunes in the hands of Fortune her enemy, expecting what ever she would give them; and being that the utmost evill was death, she would not despair of the game till she see the last man borne. But this resolution of sufferance could not stop a sea of tears, which burst with a swelling Tyde from forth her eyes. The standers by, supposed this to proceed out of her over-joy, that she was to return to her own Country, but they were all deceived, so that every one spake to her, but none did comfort her. *Don Rodrigo* came to take his leave of her, who with a countenance bathed with those christalline tears which dropped from her heavenly eyes, spake unto him in this manner following.

Noble *Don Rodrigo*, I might very well seek to perswade you with abundance of reasons to that good work, which upon this present occasion I pretend to present unto you, and to crave your furtherance therein. Which in its own nature is so just, that I cannot forbear to aske it, nor you to grant it, being that your self is so much interressed therein: you know (though I should not tell you) the obligation we have to do good; which as a naturall and divine Law speaketh particularly to every mans soul and conscience. Nor is there any man so barbarous, that is ignorant thereof: and this carries so much the more force with it, by how much the stronger the reasons are that are alleaged; amongst the which a principall one, and not the least, is that we apply this good unto those, that have eaten of our bread, and been entertained in our service. And because I know you cannot be unlike your self, my intercession may seem the lesse needfull. But that which I shall intreat at your hands, is this: You know, that *Ambrosio* was servant to both our fathers, first, to mine, then to yours: and therefore we are both bound (but I the more) to doe for him; having put himself through my default in that necessity, wherein now he is, the cause in hand no otherwise concerning him, but as I was interessed in the businesse. By my hand he was thrust into this danger, I was the sole causer of it; and therefore I stand charged with it, and must put it to my account. If you will therefore free me from this debt; if you desire to give me content; if you purpose to binde me unto you, that I may for ever retain the thankfull knowledge of your love and kindnesse, it must be, that by laying upon your shoulders this weighty care of mine own desire, that you seek by all means to procure his liberty, which in the reckoning is mine, and my request unto you is, that you indeavour it with that earnestnesse, as I do desire it. *Don Luys*, (whom I have ever found my singular good Lord) will, before I go hence, use all possible diligence in his own person, with his friends and kinsfolk; that the one ayding the

other

other in his abſence, may free me of this debt, for the which I ſtand engaged. *Don Rodrigo* promiſed to doe his beſt, and ſo they parted.

Now, for that this poor Lady had left her beſt beloved in this great perill of his life; ſhe was much grieved: and by ſo much the more, by how much the farther ſhe was from him; ſo that when ſhe came to *Granada*, ſhe did not ſeem to be the ſame ſhe was.

*Don Alonſo* though he had eſcaped their hands, yet being ſore bruiſed in his breſt, he was forced to keep his bed, ſo ſoundly had the Clownes bang'd him. But when he afterwards heard, that his Companion was carried priſoner to *Sevill*, he got him out of his bed, poſted thither, took infinite pains, trotting up and down, and never ceaſing to ſollicit his friends cauſe, as if the caſe had been his own. Notwithſtanding, what with the complaint of the Plaintifs; the accuſation of Witneſs, the evill inclination of the Judges, (either upon information; or corruption, not favouring the Defendant) beſides the ſlain and wounded (which were many) he could not ſave him, together with diverſe other his good friends, from being condemned to be hanged at the common Gallowes.

*Don Rodrigo* was in a great rage, that his father and himſelf ſhould find ſo little reſpect, as to hang up a ſervant of theirs, that had not offended the Law, had he had equall bearing, and a fair tryall. On the other ſide *Don Alonſo* ſtood much in the maintenance of the Defendant, ſaying that it was not to be permitted; nor could the Law condemne a Gentleman, ſo nobly deſcended as his friend *Iayme Vives* was, to be hanged: And that in caſe the fault were far greater, yet the difference of quality ought to ſave his life: at leaſt it ought to priviledge him from hanging, it being the Law, that, in matters deſerving death, Gentlemen ſhould not be hanged, but beheaded. The Judges and the reſt of the bench were diſtracted in this Caſe, and knew not what they were beſt to do. *Don Rodrigo*, he ſtiles him his ſervant; *Don Alonſo*, his friend; *Don Rodrigo* pleades for him by the name of *Ambroſio*, and *Don Alonſo*, by that of *Iayme Vives*, a Gentleman of *Zaragoſa*; who, at the feaſt of their Buls, had made ſuch noble proof of his valour, as the whole Citie could well witneſs: And that in the turnament he (being his *Padrino* or Champion that brought him in) un-horſt one of th' Challengers, ſhewing that day great tokens of his worth and valour. The difference was ſo great, the names ſo contrary; the qualities alleaged ſo diſcrepant; that the Judges, to clear this doubt, reſolved with themſelves to take declaration thereof from himſelf. They demanded then of him, whether he was a Gentleman or no? He anſwered that he was nobly deſcended, and of Royall Bloud, but that his name was neither *Ambroſio*, nor *Iayme Vives*. Then they willed him, that he ſhould manifeſt his name, and the quality of his perſon. Whereunto he made anſwer that his puniſhment might excuſe him for not diſcovering himſelf; and being that he was undoubtedly to dye, it was no more neceſſary to tell it them, than it was materill, to ſuffer either the one, or the other death. Then they deſired him to deliver, whether he were the ſame man *Don Alonſo* had reported, which had ſo bravely kill'd the two Buls, and gotten ſuch honour in the Tournament.

He reply'd he was; but that he had neither of thoſe names; whereby they called him. And becauſe he was ſo loth to declare his Linage (conceiving him thereby to be a man of quality,) they demurred upon the buſines, to ſee if they could work the truth out of him, to know who he was, as alſo to winde out the reaſons, why theſe two noble Gentlemen ſhould ſo earneſtly undertake his defence. And which did not a little ſtartle them, they ſaw the whole Citie did generally deſire his liberty, and ſtood ſtrongly affected towards him. Hereupon they diſpatch'd ſome preſently away for *Zaragoſa*, that they might learne out the truth, and give knowledge of his birth. But having ſpent ſome dayes therein, and uſed many diligencies, they could not meet with any (for all their ſtrict inquiry,) that could give them notice who he might be, nor could deviſe what manner of Gentleman he might be, either by his name, or any ſignes or tokens by them given, who failed not to deſcribe him at full unto them. Being returned with this ill diſpatch, albeit his friends did much importune for him, and the Magiſtrates of Juſtice did often require him; that he would lay open his quality and condition, yet he would not do it, nor was it poſſible to perſwade him thereunto. So the Judges (the time limited being fully expired for farther reſpite) ſore againſt their will, much pittying both his Youth and Valour, not being able to croſſe the courſe of Juſtice, being preſt ſo earneſtly by the importunity of the adverſe party, they confirmed their former ſentence.

*Daraxa*, nor the two fathers were not a ſleep, whilſt theſe things were in doing; for they had made their Majeſties acquainted with the whole carriage of the buſineſs, and were by them informed of the truth thereof. Many petitions they put up, and no ſooner one memoriall given, but another was a drawing to ſecond their ſuit. *Daraxa*, ſhe in her own perſon did

ſollicit the life of her eſpouſed husband, begging it by the way of *mercy* and grace: But their Majeſties anſwered nothing thereunto. Yet ſecretly they diſpatched *Don Luys* preſently away, with their kingly proviſion to the Judges, that they ſhould deliver unto him the Bill of the whole inditement, in every point as it was taken from the beginning to the end, together with the priſoner, for that it did much concerne their Highnes ſervice. *Don Luys* poſted away (as he was commanded) with all the ſpeed he could; whilſt poor *Daraxa*, her own father, and father-in-law melted into tears, conſidering the haſte, which the Judges would make in diſpatching this poor, innocent Gentleman. Which they ſo much the more feared, for that their petitions received ſo ſlow an anſwer. They knew not what to ſay, or think of this ſo long a delaying of them, without giving them any anſwer off or on, either good or bad, or any the leaſt hope of life. This did exceedingly grieve them, but they knew not how to help themſelves, nor had they left any one ſtone unremoved, but made all the means, and friends they could. But that which did moſt daunt them, was, that the main danger did conſiſt in the delay.

Whilſt they were thus ſtrucken into their dumps, and doubts (for what comfort can there be in ſo dangerous a ſuſpenſion?) *Don Luys* (as you heard before) ſpurred on amain, with much both ſpeed and ſecreſie. And as he entred the gates of *Sevill*, *Ozmin* was led forth of the priſon, to be carried to his execution. The ſtreets, and every place through which they paſt, were full of people; all was tumult and noiſe, and not a perſon but wept and ſhed tears, to ſee ſo handſome a young man, ſo well favour'd, ſo valiant, and well belov'd for thoſe famous deeds, which he had publikly done, to be ſo untimely cut off: And the more was their ſorrow, to ſee him dye without confeſſion. Which made them all to think, that he did it to eſcape death, or to prolong his life: but he was ſilent, and ſpake not a word, nor ſhew'd any ſigne of ſadneſs in his looks, but with a ſmiling kind of countenance beheld them all as he paſſed along. They made now and then certain ſtops, to ſee if they could exhort him to confeſſe himſelf, labouring all they could to perſwade him, that he would not loſe body and ſoul both at once. But he anſwered them not a word, but held his peace all the while. The people continuing thus in this confuſion, and the Citie wayting on this ſad ſpectacle, *Don Luys* came, making the people give way, preſſing through the throng, to hinder the Execution. The *Alguazils* thought it was a reſiſtance of Juſtice, and out of very fear which they had of *Don Luys*, for that he was a ſtout and valiant Gentleman, and dared to oppoſe himſelf to any danger, they forſook *Ozmin*, who was under their guard and with great hurry and clamour, they ranne to give account of what had paſt, to the Magiſtrates, whoſe autority (they thought) it more nerely touched. Whereupon they came to know, what might be the cauſe of ſo great diſreſpect done unto them. He put his hand in his pocket, and taking out the Kings Order, he delivered it unto them, which was by them to their great contentments moſt willingly obeyed. And ſo they brought *Ozmin* (being accompanied with all the Gentlemen of that Citie, and the common joy of the people) to *Don Luys* his houſe; Where that night he was entertained with a gallant maske, ſetting up many Torchs and Creſſets in the ſtreets and windows for to give the more generall content: And in token of their great joy, they would have celebrated thoſe dayes he ſtayed there with publik feaſts; for now they knew who he was. But *Don Luys* would not give way thereunto; but tying himſelf to his Inſtructions, carried him as a priſoner, along with him the next morning, being kindly uſed, and well entertained upon the way, according to the greatneſſe of his rank and quality.

Being now arrived at *Granada*, he kept him ſecretly with him ſome few dayes, untill ſuch time as he had order from their Majeſties to bring him to Court. Who when he was come before them, they joyed much in the ſight of him; and whil'ſt he was ſtanding thus in their preſence, they commanded *Daraxa* to be called forth. Now when theſe two Lovers thus ſuddenly met in ſuch a place as that was, ſo unexpectedly, and ſo far beyond their hopes, every man may make his own heart judge of the wonderfull joy which they received in this happy (but unlooked for) incounter, and imagine with himſelf what each of them did think and conceive thereof. When each others eyes had fed their fill, the Queen made towards them, and told them that both their fathers were become Chriſtians: howbeit, *Daraxa* knew ſo much before. She deſired them to do the like, which ſhe ſhould receive as a ſingular favour from them, but that no other love, nor fear ſhould inforce them thereunto, ſave onely that of God, and their own ſalvation. But howſoever, whether they did ſo or no, (for ſhe would not compell the conſcience) her pleaſure was that they ſhould now inſtantly injoy their liberty, and diſpoſe of their Eſtates and Perſons, according to their own will and pleaſure.

*Ozmin* would fain have anſwered the Queen with all the joints and ſinewes of his body,

body, making them ſo many tongues, to render thanks to her Majeſty, for this ſo great a benefit; ſignifying that he was very willing to be baptized; and then addreſſing himſelf to *Daraxa*, in the preſence of their Majeſties, intreated her to do the like. *Daraxa*, whoſe eye was never off from her deareſt *Ozmin* (ſo hungry was ſhe in beholding him) ſhedding a few ſweet tears from her roſie cheeks, directing her looks and ſpeech unto their Majeſties, ſhe told them, that ſince it was Gods will to inlighten their underſtanding, and by many tribulations, to bring them to the knowledge of his truth, ſhe was diſpoſed, and that unfainedly, and with a true heart, humbly to ſubmit herſelf thereunto, and to the obedience of their Majeſties, under whoſe protection and princely hand, ſhe repoſed both herſelf, and all that ſhe had. So anon after, they were chriſtened with a great deale of Ceremony, naming the one *Ferdinand*, and the other *Iſabell*, according to that of their Majeſties, who as God-father, and a God-mother gave them their names at the Font. Within ſome few dayes after, their Nuptials were celebrated with a great deal of glory and oſtentation, many preſents and other courteſies being conferred upon them in that Citie, where they lived all their life-time, and left behind them an illuſtrious and noble off-ſpring, which continueth yet to this day in much honour and reputation in their Countrey.

We went hearkning to this ſtory, with a great deal of ſilence, being led on attentively with it, till we came within ſight of *Cacalla*: ſo that it ſeemed to have been meaſured juſt out for that journey; ſo truely did the one jumpe with the other. Howbeit, it was ſomewhat more enlarged by the Author, flouriſhed over with finer phraſes, and a different ſtile to that which I have delivered unto you.

Our honeſt Carrier, who remained mute from the beginning to the ending (which was no more than all of us did) began now to finde a tongue, and was the firſt that opened his mouth. Alight (my maſters) quoth he: For, here I muſt leave you: my way lies along by this path. And with that he cals unto me, Come hither, (my young Gallant) let us make up our reckoning before we part.

When I heard this, I was almoſt ready to hang my ſelf, it was the bittereſt draught, that ere went down my throat. Is it e'en ſo? (ſaid I to my ſelf:) Well, let it go: for I did verily beleeve, that all that paſt between us, had been in the way of friendſhip. Well, I diſ-mounted, & got not up ſo lightly before, as I now came down heavily: for I knew not in the world what anſwer to make him, ſave onely to aske him, how much I was to pay him for the riding of nine Leagues? See what theſe Gentlemen give, ſo muſt you. For your lodging and your diet, you are to pay me three Royals more. The Umbles of the Mule I now found to be dear meat unto me (and that they ſtuck a little alſo in his ſtomack:) but that which griev'd me moſt, was; That I had not money to pay for it. And therefore I came unto him, and told him, My friend; Lo, here is your money for the reckoning, ſo much you ſay is my part of the ſhot; but for my horſe-hire I owe you nothing; for you your ſelf, without any intreaty of mine, deſired me to get up, inviting me thereunto of your own accord.

What a Devill (quoth he) mean you by this? Marry g'up with a murraine, you are a fine Gentleman indeed; do you think to ride a cock-horſe on free coſt? you are a pretty Youth indeed. I replyd upon him; we fall to ſcuffling; the Clergie-men interpoſed themſelves, they were to umpire the buſineſſe between us: They condemned me to pay for the meat of my Beaſt for that night. I did ſo; making an even reckoning with my purſe, having no more left me in all the world, but twenty *Maravedis*, to bear my charges that night. The Muliter went about his buſineſs; the Clergie-men, and my ſelf, entred into *Cacalla*, where we take our leave, every man betaking himſelf to his own way.

# THE ROGUE:
## OR,
# THE FIRST PART
## OF THE LIFE OF GUZMAN
## DE ALFARACHE.

## The second Book.

Wherein is treated, how he came to be a ROGUE; and by being so, what happened unto him.

### CHAPTER I.

*How* Guzman de Alfarache, *going out of* Casalla *towards* Madrid, *proves the quality and condition of a miserable man; and upon this occasion gravely discourses of the effects of Want, of Shame, and of Castles in the Aire: And how he came to serve an Host; and of the wicked disposition of such kinde of men.*

THOU seest me here in *Casalla*, twelve leagues from *Sevill*, upon Munday in the morning, with my purse pennylesse, and my patience remedilesse: and accused (as you have heard) for a Thief, by way as it were of Propheſie, presaging what I should be hereafter. I suffered enough the first day I set forth; the second, more. For my care increased and it rained down hard upon him, who was too wet already; one mischief overtaking another. I had money lately in my purse, and meat to put in my belly: and *griefs* (as the proverb is) *are the better over-past with bread.* It is good to have a father, it is good to have a mother; but to have meat to put in a mans mouth is better than them both. The third day was to me, as it were, a day of death: for then I had my full load of miseries: I found my self then like a lean Dog, barked at by others; grinning with my teeth upon all those that came round about me; turning head against all, but not daring to bite any: my cares continued with me with them, their barking: and having hedg'd me in, set all upon me at once: but that which most troubled me, was; That I had not where-withall to spend, nor any means to defray my necessary expences. I knew then, what a *Blank* meant; and that he that doth not seek to gather doth not make any reckoning of it, nor know the worth thereof, till he feels the want of it. This was the first time that I lookt that Heretick *Necessity* in the face: I knew him then by his Character, but afterwards I did better consider him by his effects. How many dishoneſt actions doth it venture on? what cruel imaginations doth it present unto thee? what infamous things doth it sollicite? what disorders doth it drive thee into? and what impoſſibilities doth it not attempt? I weighed also with my self, with how little our mother Nature is contented, and having given much to many, yet none of them rest contented: all cry out, They are poor, publishing their wants to the world. O thou Epicure! O thou riotous Glutton! thou lavish Prodigall! why dost thou talke thus fooliſhly, that thou eatest and swallowest down so many thousand Ducates yearly? Say rather, that thou hast so much Rent coming in; and that thou keep'st it in thy hands, but not that thou eat'st it out: and if thou dost eat it out, why dost thou keep such a complaining? seeing thou art no more man, than my self, whom poor Lentils, dry

Fitches, old Beans, hard Peaſe, and Bisket that is fenomed and moth-eaten, keeps as fat, and fair, as thoſe that have daintier feeding. Thou wilt not tell me, nor canſt thou (I think) give me a reaſon, what ſhould be the cauſe of it. For my part I know not: but if ever thou haſt been in want, or ſhould (which is poſſible) be but to ſhift for thy ſelf, and be driven to need and to lack, thou wouldſt then be able to tell me another tale. I wiſh no man that ill luck, but onely lament mine own misfortune. She is the Miſtreſſe of all things, a ſubtill Inventreſſe, by whom your Thruſhes, your Pyes, your Jack-daws and your Parrats are taught to ſpeak. I plainly began to perceive, how Adverſity makes men wiſe: in that very inſtant, me thought, I diſcovered a new light; which as in a clear glaſſe, did repreſent unto me things paſt, things preſent, and things to come.

Till this preſent I was a meer Cockney, and well might that name ſuite with my breeding. For (as it is in the proverb) *Hijo de la vinda, bien conſentido, y mal dotrinad:* the Son of a Widow is well fed, and ill taught. I had many chips to be hewn out of me, and the firſt ſtroke of the Ax, was this trouble that did light upon me; which did ſo wound the main timber, and ſo touch me to the quick, that I knovv not hovv to indeer it unto thee. I ſavv my ſelf abandoned, and ſo dangerouſly ingulphed, that I knew not where to finde harbour, or to put into any port for to ſave my ſelf. My years were few; my experience leſſe, it being fitting, that they ſhould both have been greater than they were. And which was worſt of all, (knowing by manifeſt ſigns, that my ruin was near at hand,) being willing to ask counſell, I did not know from whom I might receive it.

I entred into a reckoning with my ſelf, and was making my account; which I found to be very bad; my charge was great, and my caſh ſmall: I was about not to have gone any farther, for to go on I wanted means, as I likewiſe did for to carry me home. I was aſhamed, being I was come away from thence, to become again (as it is in the proverb) an hinge to the door; (which, howſoever that open, or ſhut, it remains ſtill in the ſelf-ſame place) or to put my foot upon our own threſhold, in the open ſight of my Mother, my friends, and my kinsfolk. God help me, how many, from that day to this, I have ſeen to be utterly undone, and meerly out of this reſpect: I was (I ſay) aſhamed: how many Virgins have left off to be ſo, and have loſt their Maiden-heads, by thinking themſelves to be tied in thankfulneſſe for a paper of Sugar-comfets, and ſome Love-verſes; or becauſe ſome vain fellow had given her muſick at her window, and made her fall in love with him, by the help of another mans quality; with that very ſong, which with a ſweet air and gracefull voice another ſung for him? How many block-heads (out of ſhame of denial) have entred into ſurety-ſhip for others, and have paid the debt themſelves, being utterly undone thereby; and the Children (through the fathers folly) for want of maintenance, ſent to ſome Hoſpital? How much money hath been lent and borrowed, for the continuing of friendſhip and kindneſſe betwixt man and man; whereby in the end it ſo falls out that he doth not onely loſe his friend, but his money too? Nay more, many times it ſo comes to paſſe, that he that parted with his money, hath not meat to put in his mouth, and is ready to ſtarve for want of food; and he that had it of him, had over and above to pay him; and yet the other dares not ask it him, and all (forſooth) for that he is aſhamed to ſpeak to him.

I would have thee to know, (if thou knoweſt it not already) that ſhamefaſtneſſe is like unto a Web in a weavers Loom; if one thred be broken, it ravels the whole work. In thoſe things, whereby hurt may ariſe unto thee, and drive thee to narrow ſhifts, ſpoyl the work, and break the threds in ſunder, and I aſſure my ſelf thou wilt rather thank me for it, than think amiſſe of my counſel. And the inconvenience which thou muſt ſuffer, (having done that which is deſired at thy hands) let him ſmart for it that craves it, rather than thou, when thou haſt done it.

For modeſty and ſhamefaſtneſſe in ſuch a caſe, when it ſtands upon a mans making, or marring, is a thing that is onely proper unto fools. It is fit, that thou ſhouldſt have a kind of modeſty in thy ſelf, not to do (no not when thou art alone by thy ſelf) any foul, or ſhamefull act: but for any other, what knoweſt thou of what colour he is, or of what metal he is made? Free thy ſelf from him, in that which ſhall neatly concern thee; let him not tye thee up like a Dog, with a chain and a clogge, behinde the door of thy ignorance: cut, or ſlip the Collar: get looſe and run away from him, as faſt as thy legs will carry thee. Onely be aſhamed to do any thing (as I ſaid before) that is ſhame-worthy. For that which thou calleſt modeſty, is no better than meer foolery: if I my ſelf had not been aſhamed, I ſhould not have waſted ſo many ſheets of paper, as this volume contains, to acquaint thee with the ſad Story of my miſerable life: whereunto I might add many more; but I now ride poſt, and muſt

muſt haſten away, promiſing to deliver unto thee far greater things concerning my life, if God ſay Amen.

I tell you it would have grieved me very much to have returned home without a Cloak, eſpecially having come forth with one upon my back. Nor was I willing to be laught at, (which they could not chuſe but do) to ſee what a ſingle-ſole Gentleman I was, and how like a naked cottage I lookt, or a bare wall without hangings: Beſides, I made it a point of ſhame, and ſtood much upon it. And that having put on a reſolution at my departing, it had been puſillanimity in me, and baſeneſſe of minde, to have had but ſo much as a bare thought of returning back again. I thought, I ſhould never have the like occaſion again, (though I think, never any man but my ſelf, played ſuch an idle trick) and therefore when I was once on my way, it ſtood not (me thought) with my reputation to hang an arſe, and to pull that foot back, which had already ſet it ſelf forward: I made it a matter of ſhame, which turned afterward to my undoing; but am not now aſhamed to ſpeak this as boldly, as I did under-go it fooliſhly: for ſuch another Aſſe as I, was there never.

The good old Hoſteſſe ran ſtill in my minde, who, I make account, will fall ere long into my hands; whom, if it be my chance to light upon, I believe ſhe ſhall not get from me with her Kerchief on her head: I will make her walk with her hair about her ears, and throw her (Sir-reverence) in the durt. I have water enough in ſtore for her, to ſet her up to the chin: I am reſolved to be revenged on her, by treading on the very neck of her, and ſetting my foot on her old withered wind-pipe, throwing her firſt to the ground, as thou would throw a Diſh-clout.

Would to God (thou paltery proud boy, thou unruly young man, and thou ſenſeleſſe old Aſſe) that I had either then underſtood, or thou didſt not know, what manner of thing ſhame is, what point of honour and reputation, conſidering the great diſorders that thou doeſt, and the idle courſes that thou runneſt.

I ſaid with my ſelf, my reputatation lies upon't; my honour is ingaged; I muſt and will go on, my truſt is in *God*, and I hope he will not fail me. Having thus ſet up my reſt, I reſolved to paſſe forward, with purpoſe to make a journey to *Madrid*; for there was the Court, where was all the bravery and gallantry of the world, nothing to be ſeen, ſave Roſes and Lillies great plenty, and abundance of all things, with many Knights of the order of the golden Fleece; many Dukes and Grandees of *Spain*; many men of Title; many Prelates; many Knights of the Habit, with many principall Gentlemen of extraordinary rank and quality, and above all, a young King newly married.

I thought with my ſelf, becauſe I was a handſom young Lad, vvell ſhap't, and of ſome reaſonable good faſhion in my behaviour, that they would have gone together by the ears for me, ſtriving who ſhould have me away with him. O how many things did preſent themſelves at once unto me! How far, in this ſimplicity of ours, are our deeds, from our thoughts! What made diſhes; vvhat hot, vvhat cold, vvhat boyl'd, vvhat roſt? For it is eaſier to think, than to do. Buſineſſes may be ſoon conceived, but they are not ſo eaſily effected. Both vvhich in my imagination I thus paint forth unto thee.

To think upon a thing, I ſuppoſe to be like unto a pretty little boy, riding upon a Hobby-horſe, with a Wind-will made of paper, which he bears in his hand upon the top of a Cane, or ſome little ſtick, that comes firſt to hand. But to bring that thing to paſſe, I liken that to an old man, bald-headed, weak-handed, lame-legged, who leaning on two Crutches goes to the ſcaling of an high wall, that is ſtrongly defended. Have I ſpoke too much? I ſay it is no leſſe. For things oftentimes ſeem to be well diſpoſed of in the night, when the Candles are out, and all is dark, taking counſell with our pillow: But the Sun no ſooner appears, but they vaniſh away in an inſtant, like thin Clouds in the heat of Summer. He that could have ſeen me, when I made this account, might eaſily have perceived with what care, and breaking of my ſleeps, I framed theſe things in my thoughts. But they were Caſtles in the aire, and fantaſtical *Chimera's*, and had ſcarce put on my Cloaths when I had put them all off again, and thrown them from me. I plotted many things, but none of my projects did hit right, but fell out croſſe, if not quite contrary to what I had propoſed. All was vain, all lies, all illuſion, all falſhood, and deception of the imagination, and like *Duendes* Treaſure, all cold Embers, and dead Coals.

Now I go onward on my way, and having gotten me a ſhort Cane in my hand, inſtead of a walking Cudgell, me thought, all the while I had that, I had my Cloak on my back; but it did neither do me that credit, nor keep me ſo warm, as that would have done. Onely it ſerved me to underprop mine arm now and then, whileſt I gave breath to my weary legs.

As I was trudging along, a couple chanced to overtake me traveling that way on their Mules: I thought with my ſelf, Could I now hold out luſtly, and keep company with them, they could not in kindeneſſe but pay my charges. But *Peſcar con Maco, no es renta cierta.* To fiſh with a Pole, is no certain rent. Nor, is it to think, and to be wiſe, all one. They are two differing things. They had never a boy between them, to go along and look to their Mules; they did not ride very hard, though their hearts (as I afterwards found) were very hard towards me. They rode gently enough, but they were cruel minded men. Their pace was ſofter than their bowels, for any compaſſion that was in them.

I jogg'd ſtill along, and kept cloſe with them, and when we had gone ſome three leagues, or there abouts, it was near about noon. My heart-ſtrings were ready to break with trotting and gallowping after them, becauſe I would not be caſt behinde. For, though their gate were eaſie, yet it put me (conſidering my youth and weakneſſe of body) to the height of my ſpeed. Theſe were men, or rather beaſts in mens ſhape, for they ſpake not a word. And I believe they were monſtrous covetous; and ſome there are that are ſo near, that they will not part with their ſpittle, if they knew it would ſerve for a medicine. Theſe miſerable wretches would not exchange ſo much as one word with me, becauſe they would not help me (if need had been) with ſome entertainment on the way.

Had they entred upon ſome diſcourſe, or told me ſome ſuch ſtory, as did my honeſt Clergie-man, I ſhould not have been half ſo weary as I was, for good company (whereſoever we chance to light upon it) is a kinde of meat and drink to the Soul: it chears the hearts of Travellers; it recreateth their mindes; it refreſheth their bodies; it makes them forget their wearineſſe; it riddeth the way; it eaſeth our grief; it expelleth melancholly; it lengthens mans life, and by a particular priviledge that it hath, it makes horſ-men of foot-men. We came in together into the Inne where we were to bait; but I in that caſe, that there was but little difference betwixt me, and one that is dead, I was e'en quite out of heart, and clean tired out. But that I might get me a morſel of bread to put in my mouth, I was forced to buckle up my ſelf, to beſtir my ſtumps, to lay aſide all ceremonies, and to forget to ſtand upon my points. Moreover, I ſtrained my ſelf beyond my ſtrength; humbled my ſelf more than ſtood with my nature, applied my ſelf to wait upon them, to put their Mules into the ſtable, and to carry their Juggage into their lodging. They were ſound and luſty, and had their healths about them, but I had got the plague by meeting with them. For at the firſt daſh, one of them ſayes unto me: Stand aſide (my young Gallant) get you gone, we have no need of your ſervice.

O Traytors enemies to God (thought I to my ſelf) how uncharitable do theſe men begin with me? what hope can I have from them, that they will give me victuals; or if I ſhould faint on the way, that they would take pitty of me, and ſet me up behinde them? They are ſet down to dinner: I ſtood right over againſt them, but ſomewhat a loof off, thinking they would have been ſo tender-hearted, as to afford me one bit, or other from their trencher: but fell ſhort of my hopes.

There came thither at that time a *Franciſcan* Frier, who was on foot, and all in a ſweat. He ſate down to reſt himſelf, and anon after, pulls me out of his Wallet (which hung on his left ſhoulder) a Loaf of bread, and a piece of Bacon. I was ſo horrible hungry, that I could ſcarce ſtand upon my legs, or fetch my breath, ſo faint was I grown for want of food.

But not having (white-liver'd Whoreſon, as I was) the courage (out of a daſtardly kinde of baſhfulneſſe) to ſpeak unto him to relieve my want: I lookt pittifully upon him, and beſought him with mine eyes (which is a good dumb eloquence) that he would give me a bit of ſomething for Gods ſake.

The good Fryer, who read my Petition in my looks, (withall the haſte he could make, as if his life had lyen upon the ſpeedy doing of it) ſaid; Bleſſed be God, Though I ſhould want my ſelf; yet ſeeing thee in that neceſſity thou now art, I would rather go without my ſelf, than to ſee my poor brother lack.

Take this (my pretty boy) quoth he; and much good may it do thee. O to ſee the wonderfull goodneſſe of God, the eternal wiſdom, the divine providence; the infinite mercy, which in the bowels of a hard ſtone doth ſuſtain a poor ſilly worm, and provide it food, and filleth all things with his heavenly bounty!

They that were able and had wherewithall would not (out of meer covetouſneſſe) give me ſo much as one crumme from their table: and what relief I could not draw from them, by all ſerviceable indeavours, I had from this Mendicant, this poor beggarly Fryer, onely for Gods ſake, and out of meer charity, ſeeing in what extremity I was *Quien proprias neceſſidades*

no

*no tiene, mal ſe acuerda de agenas.* He that never knew what want meant, hath little feeling of another mans miſery, Mine was before them, they ſaw it, and with it my tender years, and that I had almoſt broken my heart, having ſpent and tired out my ſelf to keep company with them; yet were they not ſenſible of my wearineſſe, took no pitty at all of me, nor did commiſerate my wants.

My good honeſt Fryer, did freely ſhare his victuals with me, wherewith I fill'd my belly, and was well ſatisfied. If that good man, as he went towards *Sevill*, had been to go my way, he had ranſomed me from my miſ-fortunes, and had made me a happy man: but we were to run a contrary courſe, and to make ſeveral wayes: yet when he was to go his way, the good man (I ſhall ever call him by that name,) gave me half a Loaf that he had left, and bid me farewell, telling me, thou muſt content thy ſelf (my Childe) with this; had I more, more thou ſhouldſt have.

I put it in the lining of the lap of my Jacket, and fair and ſoftly ſet forward on my way. By that time I had gone three leagues more it was night, then did I ſupper my ſelf upon my bread, without any other meat in the world; nor was there any other that would give me ought elſe to eat.

It was the Carriers day, and ſome of them Inned there: Mine Hoſt of the houſe bid me go in, and ſleep upon the ſtraw, I did ſo, and paſt over my Travel as well as I could, being poor and needy, and muſt do as I might, ſeeing I could not do as I would.

I had made a light ſupper, (which you may well believe without an Oath) for I did not riſe the next morning with a full ſtomack. But when I was about to depart, and ready to leave the Inne, my Hoſt comes unto me, and demands a *Quarto* of me for my lodging, I had it not, and therefore could not pay it him: the cunning Rogue had a great deſire to have ſtript me out of my Jacket, which was of very good Cloath.

When I ſaw I was put to this ſtreight, and that he was ſo eager upon me, my eyes were brim-full, and ready to run over with water. One of the Carriers took pitty of me that was there, (for they are not all blaſphemers, and fellows that have no Souls) ſtept in between us and ſaid, Mine Hoſt: Let the poor Boy alone, I will pay it for him. His fellows askt me; Sirra, whence are you, and whither go you? He made anſwer for me, that he had paid for me. What uncivil people are ye to ask him that queſtion? Is that ſo hard a matter to be known? you may eaſily gheſſe, he is run away either from his Father, or his Maſter.

Mine Hoſt then ſaid unto me; how ſayeſt thou my Boy, wilt thou take wages, and dwell with me? As things then ſtood with me, me thought it was no bad bargain; yet it ſeemed harſh unto me, that I ſhould now learn to ſerve, who from my child-hood had been taught to command. I told him I would. Get you in then (quoth he) and reſt you here, for I will not imploy you in any other ſervice than the Stable, for the delivering out my Straw and my Barley, and ſee that you keep a good account, and ſcore up truely what every man takes, that neither you, nor they may be miſ-reckoned. Take you no care. Sir (quoth I) I ſhall do it to a hair.

And thus I remained there awhile, having victuals without allowance, and feeding (as they ſay) upon free-coſt; and for my work, that was rather a ſport unto me than otherwiſe, & did help well to paſſe away the time. For till thoſe nights that the Carriers came, there was little, or nothing to do; as for other ordinary Paſſengers; it was not a trouble, worthy the talking of. There I learned to ſteep Barley in warm water, to make it increaſe a third part, and to give falſe meaſure; I had the cunning ſtrike of the hand; I knew how to hollow it with mine arm, and to run over the Mangers; and if any man did put me in truſt to look to his beaſt, and to give him his provender, I would be ſure to coozen him of one third part of his meaſure. Some of my Youngſters would come in now and then very neatly in their trickſie Garters, and their trimme Mouchato's, as ſpruce as could be, carrying the ſhow of Gentlemen, but the Devil a Page, or Lackey that they had to attend upon them. It was good holding the Baſon to theſe, they are your onely *Dons*, to induce a fine ſhaving.

With theſe, we drove a good Trade. For we came unto them, and taking charge of their Hackneys, we did ſet them up in ſuch places as were appointed for them, where they had the remains of that the others had left, which went for one half of their allowance; and the other half they were preſently ſupplied with (though but bad meaſure;) but when they came to pay, we gave them a reckoning for the whole. And into the bargain we had our Hens, and our Pigges, if not now and then the Foal of an Aſſe that did help to ſhare with them. For bountifull natures, and mindes that are magnificent, never ſtick

for trifles, nor offer to ſtand for ſmall matters; ſo that we had all that we could ask, and they never made any more bones of the matter. Our mouths were the meaſures, never weighing the ſet prices of things, nor the Sizes ſet down in the Proclamation, nor what the Juſtices had ordered in that kinde, which were formerly hung up in every Inne, with a particular tax to every thing there ſpecified. For thoſe are never kept, and therefore made little, or no reckoning thereof at all.

Onely they are ſet up there at our doors, to the end that the *Alcalde* and the *Eſcrivano* may lick their fingers, and receive ſome monethly profit from the fees belonging thereunto. And to take occaſion to ſee, whether they had fixed up the *Cedula*, or no, with purpoſe to pick a quarrel with them, if they neglect the doing thereof, and ſo made them pay ſoundly for it. For the ſtable, it is already well known, what every horſes allowance is, and how much it comes to a piece, both for their ſtraw, their Provender and their ſtanding. For the Kitchen, that was ſport alone to us, it made us all merry, for we were quickly upon that call to come in, and nimble, (as having learned our leſſons afore-hand) in the bringing in of our reckoning. So many *Ryals* (Gentlemen) and ſo many *Maravedis*, mich ye God dich you, and you are heartily welcom. Being ever ſure to reckon rather a *Ryal* over, than a blank under.

Many (like good wiſe men as they were) would never examine the reckoning, but lay down their money preſently, ſaying, Lo (my friend) ther's your due. But ſome freſh-water-ſouldiers, that were but Novices and young Travellers, Plants of the firſt Leaf, would ask us therefore? How can it come to be ſo much, &c. But this was but to cut their own throats, and to make us to inhaunce the reckoning the higher; for when they once put us to that jump, (beſides the raiſing of our price in the general) we did alwayes finde a trick to add ſomething, though it were but for the boyling of their *Olla*, and ſuch like toyes, ſo that by this time there was money wanting to make up the full reckoning, which they were forced to pay in the end, by way of fine, or amercement of their folly. For had they (like others) taken their payment quietly, they had not been ſo ſoundly laſh't. For you muſt underſtand, that the word of an Hoſt, is a kinde of definitive ſentence; there is no appealing from it, but to the purſe. Nor is it ſwaggering, or roaring that can ſerve the turn; your bravings will little benefit you; for your Hoſt's for the moſt part, are a company of old Catch-poles, dogg'd Curres, who out of a ſcurvy condition that they have, will with a ſtill mouth hunt dry-foot after you, till he come to ſome good Town, & then he will bawl upon you (like an old Cryer) and when he hath ſet you up, will accuſe you to the Juſtice, That you would have ſet his Inne on fire, or that you did baſtonado him with a Cudgel, or that you would have forced his wife, or his daughter; and onely that he might do thee a miſchief, and be revenged upon thee. Beſides we had ſome Lures in our houſes to catch fooliſh birds withall, and had ſome ſhews of proviſion for poor Travellers which were ſuch, that no man that had come into the Inne a foot, would have ſtayed to go forth a horſ-back: if thou chance to forget thy ſelf, and to leave any thing behinde thee, give it thy good word, unleſſe thou have the better luck; for it ſhall be laid up ſure enough for thy finding.

What ſhall I tell thee of the Theſts, the Tyrannies, the Impudencies, and the Villanies, that dayly paſſe in your Innes and Victualling-houſes? There is neither the fear of God, nor his Miniſters amongſt them: and for matter of Juſtice, either there is none at all to be had againſt them, or elſe they take part with them: But God forbid, that we ſhould believe any ſuch things of them, for it is not to be ſuppoſed that your Juſtices will be corrupted: But be it ſo, or not ſo, take it as you will, the remedy therof was a matter of no ſmall importance. For it is a thing worthy the following, that many Wain-men, and thoſe that go up and down with Carriages, do refrain their Trading, through the great expence and charges of your Innes. Traffick ceaſeth every where, out of the fear that they have to be bitten by your Hoſts, and Victuallers, who receive good payment for evil uſage, profeſſing a kinde of publick Theft.

I have been an eye-witneſſe of ſeeing many things touching theſe kinde of inſolences, which to deliver, would require a large diſcourſe. And ſhould we hear the like amongſt Barbarians, we ſhould cenſure them accordingly; and yet when we ſee the ſame here at home before our eyes, we are not moved thereat. But I ſwear unto you, that the mending of the High-wayes, the repairing of Bridges, and the reforming of Innes, is not that which requires leſſe care, than matters of greater moment, in regard of commerce and traffick. Howſoever, when I leave this houſe, I have not far to go.

CHAP.

## CHAPTER II.

*How* Cuzman de Alfarache *leaving his Hoſt, went begging to* Madrid; *and coming thither, how he ſet himſelf to learn to play the Rogue, and to bear a basket; where by the way he diſcourſeth of hunger, of beggery, and of honour which hurteth the Soul.*

THIS being too lazie a life for me, I did not like it half well; and the leſſe, for that it did not ſort to my purpoſe. For I was no better (to ſpeak the beſt of it) than an Inne-keepers boy, which is ſomewhat worſe than a blinde man. I had a minde to be a Traveller, and thereon had ſet up my reſolution, and therefore would not, (though it had coſt me a thouſand lives) have been found there in ſuch a baſe Office, as that was. There did dayly paſſe by the door many haggard-hawks, young wandring Lads, much about my years and growth; ſome with money in their purſe, others begging an almes for Gods ſake: whereupon I ſaid to my ſelf, What a Devil ails me? or what ſcurvy metal am I made of, that I ſhould be more cowardly, and baſer minded than other men? in that I am not ſenſible, how much I wrong my ſelf; and that of faint-heartedneſſe, and like a Craven (as I am) ſhould ſtoop to pick a poor living out of ſuch a dung-hill kinde of life, as this? Hereupon I took heart unto me, and ſet a good face on the matter: and ſo bidding mine Hoſt God b'wy, I went forth to ſeek my fortune, carrying ſome Copper money along with me, gotten in a good war; and ſome other lawfull purchaſes that I made: but my ſtore being ſmall, it was quickly gone. When all was ſpent, I fell a begging: ſome would give me an *Ochavo*; but moſt would ſay unto me, pardon me (my boy) I have not for you.

With this poor *Ochavo*, and other his fellows, I did eat now and then with a *gaudeamus*, according to my gettings: but this pardon me (my boy) I have not for you, did me no good in the world: I might have ſate down with a *peream*, for any comfort that I found in it. Charity was very cold, and it was no marvel; for it was a dear year, and there was a generall ſcarcity throughout the Kingdom. And if there were a dearth in *Andaluſia*, how great then muſt the want be in the Kingdom of *Toledo*? and far greater in the In-land. Then I heard that proverb verified, *Librete Dios de la enfermedad que baxa de Caſtilla, y de hambre, que ſube del Andaluzia*, God deliver thee from the plague, that comes down from *Caſtile*, and from the famine that comes up from *Andaluzia*.

Now becauſe I found begging to be but a poor Trade, and all things elſe at exceſſive rates; food and rayment being dear commodities, I grew ſo out of heart therewith, that I reſolved to follow that occupation no longer, though my wants ſhould be never ſo great. Hereupon, I was minded to make the beſt I could of thoſe Cloaths that I had on my back: then I began to unbinde the book, and to divide it into leaves: that is to ſeparate one thing from another, that all might not go away at once; ſorting my Cloaths into ſeveral parcels, conſuming one piece after another, till all was gone; ſelling this, chopping that, and pawning the other, till I had not a rag left.

So that when I came to *Madrid*, I look't like one that had newly come from the Oar, or ſome gentile Rower returned lately from the Gallies, I was ſo lightly clad, having nothing on but a Canvas pair of breeches, and a courſe ſhirt; and that none of the cleaneſt, but as foul as foul might be; all to tatter'd and torn, and ſo rotten with age, that it was ready to fall from my back. And this I was forced to do, to keep life and ſoul together, and all little enough to ſerve the turn.

Seeing my ſelf thus out of reparations, and all to be rent and torn; howbeit, I ſought after ſervice, thinking to win credit with my good words, no man would truſt me the more for my fair tongue, but grew rather jealous of my evil conditions; inſomuch that I could not meet with any that would give me entertainment, admit me into his ſervice, or ſuffer me to come within his doors, becauſe I was without a Cloak, and ſo naſty in my other Cloaths that out of a very loathing, they were able to turn a mans ſtomack. They did think, that I was ſome Roguiſh little Thief, and that if they ſhould take me in, I would filch ſome thing from them, and betake me to my heels when I had done.

Seeing my ſelf in this deſperate ſtate, counting my ſelf, as it were a loſt man, I began to follow the Trade *de la Florida Picardia*, exerciſing all your Cony-catching tricks, knaviſh pranckes, fine feats, with ſlight of hand, and whatſoever Rogueries come within the compaſſe of that prowling office. The ſhame that I had to return home, I loſt it upon the way;

for travelling afoot as I did, it weighed ſo heavy, that I was not able to bring it along with me: or perhaps, they that ſtole my Cloak, carried it away with them in the Cape thereof; and this is ſure the likelier of the two. For ever ſince that time I have been troubled with a lazie kinde of yawning, and a Fever-lordane, which did Prognoſticate the diſeaſe I ſhould be ſick of to my dying day. A pocks upon ſhamefaſtneſſe, which hung ſtill upon me, and yet I have, none of it; for I began to free my ſelf from that irkeſomneſſe; and that little ſhame that was left me, I turned into impudencie: for hunger and ſhame could never yet be made friends. My former modeſty (I confeſſe) was meerly out of my ſhallowneſſe of wit, and now I finde, that it was even then a fooliſh kinde of ſimplicity. And in thoſe dayes, I plaid the Childe, as others of my age do: but now, like a Viper, that hath ſtung me unawares by the hand, I have ſhak't that Vermine from off my fingers ends. I fell in with other Taſſel-gentles, much about my ſize and pitch, that were high Flyers, and cunning in the catching of their prey. As I ſaw them do, ſo did I, as well as I could: but becauſe I was but newly entred, and was not yet come to that true flying, to ſeize the Patridge in foot, I did aſſiſt them with my beſt indeavours, refuſed no pains, followed their ſteps, and walked their ſtations; whereby I came to pick up my crums, and to gather a few blanks together. Thus I ſayled up and down, fetching my boords to and fro, ſtill ſounding as I went along, to ſee how many fadom I was off from the ſhore, and what new Countrey was upon diſcovery.

I could now hunt for my ſupper, as well as the beſt of them, and knew certainly where to have it; but I was to take heed, that I plaid the true Clock-keeper: for if I failed of my hour (eſpecially at your Monaſteries, and Religious houſes) and did not truely keep the due, time, limited and preſcribed by them, I was ſhut out, and left in the dark: ſo that I had now learned the faſhion, to ſhew my ſelf a mannerly Gueſt, by ſtaying rather for others, than that others ſhould ſtay for me. This loitering kinde of life was not without it's cares; and as idle as it ſeem'd to be, it was painfull enough unto me: for, while I led this Roguiſh life, I learned to play at Cock-All, at Handy-Pandy, and at Nine-holes: from theſe I went a form higher; I knew how to play at Noddy, One and thirty, Quinolas, and Primera: in a ſhort time I profited ſo well in theſe my ſtudies, that I paſt on to the upper Form. I could cogge a Dyeth andſomly, and if I had good luck, all was mine own, (eſpecially if I met with weak Gameſters.) Nor would I change this life of a *Picaro*, this roguiſh life of mine, for the beſt that any of my Anceſtors ever led.

I had a moneths minde to the Court; and I went daily refining my wit; I ſet a new edge upon my underſtanding, and enriched my brain with new Philoſophy. And ſeeing others of leſſer worth than my ſelf, to grow from a little to a great deal of wealth; and from mean beginnings, to come to mighty matters, and to eat their bread without begging, not expecting it from others hands, (which is the bread of ſorrow, and the bread of bloud) yea, though it ſhould be beſtowed upon thee by thine own father: out of a deſire that I had to attain to this glorious liberty; and that I might not (as many others) be puniſhed as a Vagabond, and run the cenſure of a wandring Rogue, I applied my ſelf to carry ſuch burdens, as my weak ſhoulders were able to bear.

The fraternity of Aſſes is a great brother-hood; for, even men have been willing to be admitted into this Company; and have been glad to yield themſelves to carry unclean and heavy loads, with as much patience, as the ſillieſt Aſſe alive, as if they had been born for no other end, but to eaſe them of their burthens. Now, if men are grown to that baſeneſſe, that they will quit the Aſſe of his Hamper, and clap it on their own backs, onely to gain a *Cumbre* more of Wine, that they may drink the freelier, when they have done their work: ſee in what ample manner their Aſſiſtneſſe extendeth it ſelf; what a ſtrong hand it hath in the world, and to what a mighty Corporation it is now grown.

But to let this paſſe, I confeſſe unto thee, that I was ſomewhat cold in the matter at the firſt, and fell to it with an ill will, but above all, I was wonderfull fearfull: for being a thing that I was never us'd to before, it ſuted ill-favouredly with me at the firſt, and worſe afterwards, when I was entred into it: for all beginnings have their difficulties; and are not ſo eaſie at the firſt as they ſeem to be: but after I had taken a relliſh of this Roguiſh life, and found the ſweetneſſe of it, I could tread the true Track of it, and was grown ſo perfect, that I could have gone blinde-fold to my work, and not have ſtept a foot out of the way.

What a fine kinde of life was it, what a dainty and delicate thing, without Thimble, Thread, or Needle, without Pinſers, Hammer, or Wimble, or any other Mechanicall inſtrument whatſoever, more than one onely bare Basket; like unto thoſe of your brethren of the Order *de Anton. Martin*, (though unlike to them in their goodneſſe of life, and ſolitary retiredneſſe.)

I had gotten me an Office whereby to live: and ſuch a kind of Office, as ſeemed to be a bit, without a bone; a back, without a burthen; a merry kinde of Occupation, and free from all manner of trouble and vexation?

I did often think on the life that my Parents led; and that, which I had made tryall of in this ſo ſhort a time; as alſo, that which they had undergone to ſo little purpoſe, and to their ſo great coſt. O! (ſaid I to my ſelf) what a burthen is the weighr of Honour? And what metall is there, that can equall it in poyze? To what a world of inconveniences is that man liable, who is driven to make uſe of it? How warily, and how circumſpectly muſt he go to work? What a deal of care, and ſudden paſſions come upon him? What high and ſlender ropes muſt he run up and down upon? Thorow how many thouſands of perills muſt he ſaile in this vaſte Ocean? Into what infinite troubles muſt he thruſt himſelf? And amidſt how many Brambles, and Buſhes, and pricking Thornes, muſt he imbryer, and intangle himſelf withall; and ſcarce get out of them, without leaving his fleece behind him, if not his skinne? What a thing is it, that my honour muſt be ſubject to the mouth of the diſſolute, and to the hand of the indiſcreet and unadviſed man? The one by word, the other by action. Againſt which, all the wit and force of man is not able to prevail, nor to turne that unruly tyde, when it ſhall break in upon us. What phrenſie of Satan, what malice of the Devill was it, to marry this foul Abuſe unto Man, which is able to make him run mad, and irrecoverably to loſe his wits? As if he did not know, that Honour is the Daughter of Truth. And ſee by how much a man is Vertuous, by ſo much is he Honourable, and no more. And it is impoſſible, that my honour ſhould be taken away from me, as long as my Vertue remaines with me, which is it's proper Center. Onely mine own VVife may take away mine honour from me (according to the opinion of *Spaine*) by taking away firſt her own: for ſhe being one and the ſelf ſame thing with my ſelf, my Honour and hers are one, and not two, as being but one, and the ſame fleſh, and whatſoever ſhall be ſaid in the contrary, it is but ſcurrility, meer wit and invention and the idle dreams of a fantaſtick brain. Happy is that mans life, that neither knows what honour means, or ſeeks after it, nor hath any thing to do with this Titulary toy.

I was ever of the minde, that if that man, that pretends to honour, ſhould but truely open his eyes, and look upon it without partialitie conſidering (not carried away with paſſion) the effects thereof, he would not ſtoop to take it up, nor touch that with his hand, whoſe burthen muſt either break his back, or make him ſink under the weight thereof to the grouud. O how troubleſom a thing is it, firſt to get it? how difficult afterwards to keep it? how dangerous to hold, how eaſie to loſe, as depending on the common eſtimation and opinion of men? But if it relie upon the vulgar, and that be the proppe that muſt uphold it, it is one of the greateſt torments that Fortune can give, or man ſuffer in this life, who deſires to end his dayes quietly, and to paſſe his Career peaceably, without being croſſed in his Courſe. And albeit men plainly perceive, that this which I ſay is true, and they ſee the experience thereof daily before their eyes, yet they will not ſtick to hazard their lives; nay, to give their very ſouls for it, as if that ſhould ſave them another day.

Thou think'ſt it no honour unto thee, to cloath the naked, to feed the hungry, not to exerciſe (as thou oughteſt) thoſe good deeds, that belong to thy function, and many other things, which I know, and am ſilent in; and thou knoweſt them to thy ſelf, though thou doeſt diſſemble them; thinking that others perceive it not, and that thou carrieſt things cloſely, when as indeed thou danceſt but as it were in a net, and all thy actions lye open to publike view, which my pen ſhall omit to ſet down, that I may not point them forth unto thee as it were with the finger, and whereof perhaps, when I ſhall have delivered thee my minde, thou wilt make no more, if not leſſe reckoning of it, than of a blaſt of winde, or puffe or ſmoak, that preſently vaniſheth, and is no more ſeen.

Canſt thou think it an Honour unto thee, that the Hoſpitall ſhould be maintained with the droppings of thy Tap, and the Scraps of thy Kitchen, (when there is not a Dogge, that waytes at thy Trencher, but fares better?) Canſt thou think it an honour unto thee, that thy Mules ſhould have their Linnen and their Woollen cloaths, whileſt Chriſt (in his members) dyes out of very cold, not having wherewith to cover his nadedneſſe? Canſt thou think it an honour to thee, that thy Horſes ſhould be as fat as their skins can hold, that they are even ready to burſt again, with the fulneſs of their feeding, while the poor fall down at thy gate for want of food, their weak legges not being able to ſupport their hunger-ſtarved bodies? No, thou canſt not. And I preſume, the practiſe of every good Chriſtian is farre otherwiſe. And this is that honour, which every man ought highly to eſteem, and may juſtly ſeek, and hunt after it. But that which thou calleſt honour, may more properly be termed

*Pride*, or fooliſh eſtimation, which makes men fall into a *Hectick*, and *Ptyſick*, and with a canine appetite to catch greedily at that Honour, which is no ſooner had, than loſt. And not onely that, but with it the Soul; (which is a thouſand pities) which every good ſoul ought to avoid, and bewaile.

## CHAPTER III.

Guzman de Alfarache *goes on in his Diſcourſe againſt vain* Honours: *Where by the way he offers unto Mans conſideration, what manner of perſon he ought to be, how to bear himſelf in his Office, and to governe himſelf in thoſe high places, whereunto he is called.*

ALbeit, (as being then but a Youth) and newly (as they ſay) crept out of the ſhell, this being the firſt flight that ever I made, I had runne thorow many miſeries, and ſuffered much want, yet I paſt them all over as eaſily, as I could, imagining ſtill in my minde, that *Honour* is like unto your early fruits, that are ſooner ripe than the reſt, and brought firſt into the Market, which, though they be exceſſive dear and not to be had, but at a high rate, and unmeaſurable Princes, yet all do equally buy them, and pay alike for them, even from him, that hath a purſe to bear it, as from him that hath not the like ability. What a great preſumption and ſhame is it, that a poor Husband-man ſhould buy half a pound of your firſt Cherries that come into the Market, which may chance to coſt him the price of ſo much bread, as would very well ſerve to ſuſtain himſelf, his Wife, and his Children? O holy Lawes, and O happy Kingdomes, that ſhould put a bridle to this abuſe, as a thing tending to the general hurt of a Commonwealth! For (there being no reſtraint in that kinde) they buy and eat thereof without limit, or moderation, never growing weary of buying, nor glutted with eating: Which too timely, or rather untimely fruits, breed no good nutriment, corrupt the bloud, cauſe raw concoction, and ingender evil humours, which afterward pay their bodies with ſound Agues, ſharp Feavers, ſtrange *Paroxiſmes*, and other the like grievous and painfull infirmities.

I ſwear by the Faith of an honeſt man, that ſuch a devouring of Honour, will coſt more than one purge. I was never ambitious in this kinde, never greedy of this honour, never gave it a good look, ſince I firſt knew it, eſpecially, when I ſaw Pages, Serving-men, and Prentiſes forſake their old Trades, to follow new courſes, and to get themſelves into ſome old Office, or other, as far repugnant from their nature, as heat, from cold, and as much differing from their diſpoſition, as Heaven is diſtant from the Earth. Yeſterday, thou wouldeſt have ſent thy ſervant to one of theſe fellows, to will him to come to thee, and when he had come, given him an *Ha*, or a Nod, or a plain *Vos*, which was aſmuch, if not more, than he deſerved. And now that he hath got but an Office upon his back, he ſends the next for thee by a Porter, when thou muſt ſue and intreat that he will be-friend thee in ſuch a buſineſſe, and ſtand with Cap in hand, crouching unto him, giving him the Worſhip with a Sir-reverence at every word, beſeeching him, that his Worſhip would be pleaſed to do you this, or that favour.

Tell me, is not that true of this man, which is ſpoken of that proud bird the Peacock, who t'other day having ſcarce ever a feather to cover his nakedneſſe, doth now boaſt his ſilken plumes, and ſpread abroad his golden train? If this be true, it muſt likewiſe then follow, that when this painted puffe ſhall have this tayl pluckt, all his gilded feathers, and rich imbroyderies taken from him, which natures richeſt hand hath ſo curiouſly wrought; if any miſ-fortune befall ſuch a man, and that he once come to be ſtript of his honours, down goes his goodly train, and his plumes being pull'd from him, is juſt the ſame man as he was before.

And if you ſhall but weigh and conſider this thing well, you ſhall finde ſuch men as theſe, not to be men of Honour, but men honoured; for they that are truely honourable, have their honour from, and in themſelves, and no man can ſo pill and pull their feathers, but that freſher and goodlier plumes will come up a-new in the place, and be more glorious to look to than before.

But the honoured, that receive their honour from another, one while you ſee them; another while you not ſee them. So long as the merry-moneth of *May* laſteth, ſo long as your flowers be freſh and fair to ſee to: As theſe flowers, ſo are thoſe flowers, which the Favourite receiveth from the Prince, or perſon that favours him: They ſoon fade they had but

their

their time, and that's gone, and they with it: And then they return to be the ſame men they were before.

Whileſt the ſap is in the bough, it is green and flouriſheth; but when it goes back into the root, it dyes and withereth for the time. So it ſtands with our Favourite; his Honour flouriſheth like the green Bay-tree while his Princes favour ſhines upon him; but when he calls this in again unto himſelf, as the Tree doth the ſap, and it returns to the Root from whence it came, his honour is nipt in the head, and is no better (if not much worſe) than he was before his riſing. So have I ſeen ſome men mounted on high, imployed in great affairs, and to have held great places of Dignity and Honour in the Common-wealth, which might have been put into the hands of Gentlemen of approved good judgement, and excellent parts, and thought themſelves happy, if they had been conferred and beſtow'd upon them.

To theſe men I have call'd, as I have lyen in my bed, and cryed out unto them. How now (my friends) whither away go ye with theſe Offices? Who (if they hear me) might very well anſwer: I vow to God, I know not my ſelf: I think they are therefore given us, that we ſhould make our profit of them, feather our neſts, and in-rich our ſelves, as well as we can. But thou doeſt not conſider (wretched as thou art) that the burthen which thou beareſt, thou neither truely underſtandeſt, nor is properly belonging to thy profeſſion; and that in loſing thine own Soul, thou overthroweſt withall another mans buſineſſe, and art bound in conſcience to make him recompence for the wrong thou haſt done him.

Doeſt thou not know, that there belongs more to the diſpatch of buſineſſe, and deciding of differences betwixt party and party, than there doth to the ſowing of a Garment, or the ſhearing of Cloath, or to lend ſuch a Gentlewoman your arm, when you Uſher her along the ſtreets; which grace ſhe vouchſafes to afford thee, for that hands ſake, which did advance thee.

Peradventure thou mayeſt have been ask't the queſtion, or thy ſelf mayeſt perhaps have made ſome ſecret ſcrutiny in thine own boſom, whether thou didſt finde thy ſelf of ability and ſufficiency to perform thy charge, or, whether thou hadſt the knowledge and underſtanding to do things well and handſomly, without wronging thy conſcience, going thy ſelf to Hell, and carrying him along with thee, that did conferre thy Office upon thee? But ſome babbling fellow hereabouts, which I ſuppoſe to be ſome one Barbers man, or other, (for they are commonly a kinde of Climacterical and dangerous prattlers) will give me this ſhort anſwer: We can, It is a ſtrange thing to ſee the humours of ſome men. Conſider with me (for Gods ſake) what buſineſſe hath with it ſo many tricks, ſo many ſhifts, and ſo many difficulties as this is? We are all of us men, (the beſt of us are no more) and when the wheels are once ſet a work, we imagine they muſt go well enough of themſelves, without any care, or looking to of ours. O what a pitty it is, that then thou ſhouldſt begin to learn an Office, when thou ſhouldſt come to uſe it! O what a grief, to ſee a mans practice out-run his knowledge! he being as unfit for the place, as the place for him.

The Pilot is fearfull of governing his Ship, (not onely in Tempeſtuous weather, but at all times, even in the calmeſt Sea, and faireſt ſeaſon of thoſe ſudden accidents and various caſualties, which hourly, nay, every minute may befall him) although he be his Art-maſter, and throughly underſtands what he hath to do upon all occaſions. And thou which never ſaweſt the Sea, waſt never taught thy Compaſſe, nor know'ſt what belongs to the Art of Navigation: Wilt thou, I ſay, venture to ſteer a Ship, and ingulph thy ſelf, thou know'ſt not whither, not into what danger? What wouldſt thou think, or ſay, when thou ſeeſt a boy fumble on the Cittern, and when he ſhould come to play before thee, not to be able to ſtrike a true note? what a tearing would this be to thine, or any other Muſical ear? O how harſh would it ſound? And yet all this while, thou doeſt not, or wilt not perceive, that when thy ſelf comeſt to underſtand thy place, or to think that thou underſtandeſt it (which is the truer of the two) for want of knowledge, thou haſt not onely loſt that, but thy Lords love together with it, and the time which thou haſt ſpent, and nothing left to comfort thee withall, but the fooleries, which thou haſt committed therein. Follow thine own trade, and exerciſe thy ſelf in thoſe things, thou well underſtandeſt, thruſt not thy Sickle into another mans Harveſt, and meddle not with thoſe things, that are fitter for others, than thy ſelf. But this is not ſo much thy fault, as of theſe that thruſt it upon thee, who have more then thou to anſwer for it: it is a Commutation that lies heavy upon the conſcience. But to proceed:

Ever now, but to day, have I known theſe kinde of men, mean, poor, and miſerable creatures; on the morrow after, they have riſen up in a ſtrange faſhion, utterly unknown to me (like him that dyes his Beard, or being old and ſtricken in years, grows to be young again,) exalted,

exalted, and ſet aloſt, looking big upon the matter, expecting to have the firſt Cap, and to be firſt ſaluted by thoſe, whoſe ſervants they might well have been, and that in mean and baſe Offices, and yet have thought it preferment good enough for them. I knew very well, which way he would go, that led the daunce, and whence this violence did proceed, by altering things, and putting them out of their due courſe, thruſting out the naturals, to bring in ſtrangers. I likewiſe was not ignorant that thoſe that did murmure and repine thereat, had good reaſon ſo to do; for by giving unto every one, that which of right belongeth unto him, the gall of envy and malice is thereby broken and ſplit in ſunder. For it is an eaſe to the ſick ſtomack of a State, when Offices ſeek men, and not men Offices, whence great ſcandal and infamy doth ariſe. For by how much the more, high places make them to be known, that do not deſerve them, by ſo much the more they make the owners of them to be contemned and deſpiſed. And theſe undeſerved dignities, go not away without their payment. For as they are an affront to thoſe that hold them, when they are unworthy of them; ſo they ſuffer diſhonour in themſelves, by being conferred on ſuch undeſerving perſons; Leaving him likewiſe, who did beſtow them, ſubject to Infamy, Detraction, and Obligation to make ſatisfaction to the State, for the wrongs occaſioned thereby.

Here I alight, and make a ſtand, ſhutting up my conceit within it's bounds, that it may not ſtraggle too far. This ware I ſell you as mine own, and recommend it unto you for good, unleſſe you under value it for the ſellers ſake. And I muſt needs confeſſe that this off-ſpring of my brain is worthy a better father. But do thou diſpoſe of it, and compoſe it, according as thy ſelf ſhall think fit, by mending ſuch faults as thou find'ſt amiſſe. And though it be a beggars Brat, and the ſon of a Rogue, yet conceive withall that we are all men, and have all of us underſtanding; and that *El habito no haze el Monge*: it is not the Coul, that makes the Fryer. Yet in this, as in all things elſe, I ſubmit my ſelf to thy cenſure, and am willing to receive thy correction.

Now by this time thou knoweſt my weakneſſe, notwithſtanding I would have thee to know, that there was not that day went over my head, wherein I did not run over my beads; beſides other devotions that I did. And although I hear the murmure, that it is a common practice amongſt Thieves and Ruffians, to have their *Roſario* ſtill in their hand, fayning themſelves to be very devoutly affected towards our Lady: Think, and ſay what thou wilt, I care not a ruſh, for I deſire not thy good opinion, nor ſeek to win any credit from thy mouth. Every morning, the firſt thing I did, was to go to Church to hear Maſſe; that being done, I afterwards began preſently to caſt about how I ſhould ſpend that day, for the getting of ſomething to ſuſtain my ſelf withall, and to keep me from ſtarving.

I once remember, that having layen ſomewhat long a bed, and finding my ſelf not half currant, I thought it not fit, that day, to take pains for my living: it was a Feſtival day, and to Church I went, where I heard high Maſſe, and a very good Sermon by a learned *Auguſtine*, upon the fifth Chapter of S. *Matthews* Goſpel, where it is ſaid; *Let your light ſo ſhine before men, that they may ſee your good works, and glorifie your father which is in Heaven*: where by the way, he beſtowed a little ſprinkling upon your Clergy-men, your Prelates, and ſuch as were beneficed: telling them, that they had not theſe great Rents given them for nothing; and that they were to look rather upon the greatneſſe of their charge, than into the greatneſſe of their Revenew; and that theſe good things were not conferred upon them, to fill the belly and cloath the back, and to waſte and conſume theſe good bleſſings of God in unneceſſary idlements; but in feeding the poor, and cloathing the naked, and in diſpenſing to the needy, and thoſe that are in neceſſity, over whom God hath ſent them as Stewards and no otherwiſe; or, to ſpeak more properly, hath appointed them his *Adminiſtrators* over this his *Hoſpitall*. And that in putting this Steward-ſhip, or Adminiſtration into their hands, it was more particularly thrown upon them, than any other, as on men of all other the moſt to be truſted, and (by reaſon of their profeſſion) leaſt intereſſed in the world: mercifull-minded men, wholy retired from the world, and from thoſe confuſions which accompanied it; to the end, that with the more care, and the leſſe trouble they may apply themſelves to this Miniſtery wherewith they were intruſted.

Would to God they would open their eyes, and look to whom they give, how, and on what they do diſtribute it; for it is anothers money, and not their own, whereof a ſtrict account will be taken of them. Let them not therefore abuſe the truſt that is repoſed in them; God never ſleepeth, he is ſtill awake and ſeeth all our actions. Nor will it boot them to uſe tricks and devices to defraud him but in a Farthing, or to coozen him of the leaſt Mite. For as it is the gain of *Judas*, ſo ſhall they receive *Judas*'s reward. He ſaid in general, that their man-

manners and behaviour ſhould be like unto the Lanthorne in the Admirall, to the reſt of the Fleet, by whoſe light all the reſt of the Ships ſhould ſtear their Courſe, and ſtill have an eye upon it, without troubling themſelves in other worldly affairs, and matters of profit to their purſe, which is contrary to their Profeſſion, and to that obligation, whereunto they are bound by Gods Word, which cannot lye.

I remember very well, I did then call to minde a certain friend of my fathers, how ill he diſpoſed of that which he had got, and the ill example which he left behinde him: this was his end; and with this the Preacher ended.

Many other excellent good things did he utter to this purpoſe, and ſtrongly confirmed what he delivered with forcible reaſons; which for the indecencie of my profeſſion, I willingly ſilence: nor is it fitting for a man of my faſhion to make mention of them.

That night my ſickneſs increaſed upon me; my bed was none of the beſt, nor much ſofter than a piece of an old Matt, that is full of holes, and thrown upon the dung-hill, as good for nothing. The cattell went grazing on the humane paſture of my miſerable corps; I awaked with their nibling, fell a ſcrubbing, and finding no diſpoſition in my ſelf to ſleep, I made a repetition of the whole Sermon to my ſelf: as one that underſtood very well, that albeit his ſpeech tended more particularly towards Church-men, yet it did in the generall appertain unto all; from the Myter to the Crown; from the moſt powerfull Prince, to ſuch a poor Caytiffe as my ſelf. Lord be merciſull unto me, I began to thinke with my ſelf, that this did as well concerne me as them: and that I was a kinde of Some-thing; that I had a ſoul to ſave as well as they; and that there was ſome reckoning to be made of me too. Then I began to examine my ſelf, What light am I able to give to others; or how can it be had, much leſſe, ſhine in a man, whoſe office is ſo vile, and ſo baſe as mine? Yes (my friend) quoth I: and it belongeth alſo unto thee, and therefore I ſpeak it unto thee; for thou likewiſe art a member of this myſticall Body, equall with the greateſt in ſubſtance, thoug not in quality. Bear thy burthens well and faithfully; make not your Vintage out of other mens Grapes; do not nimme and purloyne by the way; conveying from the Basket to the Breeches into privie Pockets, and falſe Linings, that which is none of thine. Do not ſhrink the ſhoulder, as if thou hadſt the dead weight of Plate upon thy back, and do not thou move as ſlowly, when thou haſt but two Loaves to carry, as when thou art laden with two beames, or maine pieces of Timber.

Make a conſcience of thy gettings; be moderate and temperate in thy gaines; not demanding more than thy labour is worth; uſe all men well, but beſtow thy pains on the poor for nothing: offer that freely, as thy firſt fruits due unto God. Be not diſhoneſt, be not vitious, be no glutton, nor no drunkard: call thy conſcience to an account, be ſure to keep a true ſcore and reckoniug with it: for, in ſo doing (like that poor old Woman in the Goſpell) thou canſt not want the comfort of lifting up thy heart, and thy eyes unto Heaven, ſaying: *Bleſſed be the name of the Lord.* For even in *Rogues* there is ſome vertue, ſome ſparke of goodneſs; and this in thee ſhall be thy Light.

But in my judgement, both now and then when I heard the Sermon, (that we may return again to our former conſideration) what he ſpake (beſides that which concerns the Clergy and the Communalty) had eſpeciall reference unto Princes, and their miniſters of juſtice; whereof I ſhould have ſpoken when I made this my Digreſſion. Theſe are truly ſaid to be the Light, and in that ſacred Chapter-houſe, or in the greateſt part thereof, all is Light, more and more light ſtill, to the end (to leave them the more inexcuſable) that they may not alledge hereafter, that they had not any Light at all. Conſider with me that the light ought to ſubſiſt (as the agent) in ſome ſubject (as the Patient) wheron to work. As for example, in the Waxe, be it Torch, or any other thing whatſoever. I ſay then that when any ſuch kinde of perſon, be it another, or be it thy ſelf, ſhall repreſent himſelf, as a Light unto me, thy good works, thy fair behaviour, thy civill carriage, thy zeale, thy holineſs of life, is that which makes thee to ſhine, and to give light unto others. What thing is it then, thinkeſt thou, to have an Office thrown upon thee, or ſome great dignity or other? It is, a putting of Waxe to this Light, to make it ſhine the more: but tell me then, what is the office of the Light; It is to go with his heate, drawing and ſucking the Waxe ſtill towards him, that it may burne the brighter, and maintaine it ſelf the better. Even ſo muſt thou do with thy Office; thou muſt drink it in, as it were, and incorporate it into this Light of thy vertues, and honeſt courſe of life, that all men may ſee it, and imitate it, bearing thy ſelf ſo uprightly, that prayers may not move thee, tears may not ſoften thee, gifts may not corrupt thee, menaces may not daunt thee, anger may not overcome thee, hatred may not diſturbe thee, nor affe-

ction deceive thee. Again, which offers it ſelf firſt to our ſight, the Light, or the Waxe? You will grant me, the Light: if ſo, then to behave thy ſelf, that thy Office, which is the Waxe, may be ſeen after thee; and that the Office may be known by thee, and not thou by thy Office. It often ſo fals out, that the Waxe is much, and the Light is little; whereby the Light comes to be drowned and quenched in it; as in caſe the Torch ſhould be great, and the Wike ſmall. Other times it happeneth, that the Light is turned down-wards; and ſo by melting the Waxe above, it is preſently extinguiſhed and put out.

So we ſee, that the good in thy ſelf is ſo little, and the Office which thou art put into, is ſo farre beyond the meaſure of thy Merit, that that little Light thou haſt, is ſmothered on the ſudden, and ſo thou remaineſt in darkneſſe. Other-whiles, thou turneſt theſe thy vertues towards the ground, by inclining thy ſelf unto evill: for thou doeſt make thy Office to melt as it were at the top, and to waſte and conſume its light, by thy robbing, by thy coozening, by thy over-commanding, and contemning the poor: uſing in his Cauſe delayes: in that of the rich, all poſſible ſpeed: with the poor thou deal'ſt rigorouſly; with the rich, gently and mildly: on the one thou frowneſt, on the other thou ſmileſt: the poor thou proudly trampleſt under thy feet: but the rich thou ſaluteſt with Cap in hand, boweſt thy body, uſing him in all the reſt, with a great deal of love and kindneſſe. And while this is in doing, Death comes on thee unawares; it ſeizeth ſuddenly upon thee, thy life is quickly at an end, but thy damnation remaineth for ever. Others there are, who (as I ſaid before) draw Light from their Office; and whereas they themſelves ought to be the Light, they are indeed but the Waxe. Wouldſt thou know the condition of theſe men, and what they do? I will tell thee: What I pray, is the property of Waxe? To go by little and little, wearing and waſting away; haling the Light violently after it ſelf, till they both go topling out, vaniſh away at laſt, and come to nothing. Juſt ſo is it with theſe kind of men; they live in that manner, (hiding their Lights under a Buſhell, concealing their good Works, and burying all vertue and goodneſſe in them) that they make no uſe of it, nor eſteem it: onely they eſteem the Office, which they have made their Light: this they go forcing, as it were by violence, they tugge and hale it unto them, that they may incorporate it into themſelves, that they may reape their profit by it, skimme the Creame from it; and not onely that, but to draw away its very heart-blood. And ſo by little and little, together with it, they themſelves likewiſe conſume away. Ill they lived, and ill they dye: as was their life, ſo was their end. What doth he think with himſelf, that ſuffers himſelf to be made Waxe, when he taketh from one that which is his right, or that which he juſtly deſerveth, and doth transferre it on a fool, or ſome unworthy perſon, whom he hath a deſire to pleaſure? Shall I tell thee what becomes of this man in the end? He melts and drips away like Waxe, not knowing how nor what way he comes to be conſumed: his health decayes, his honour diminiſheth, his wealth waſtes away, his friends fail him, his wife, his children, and his kinſfolk are taken from him by his death; on whom are the proppes of his houſe, leaned all his pretenſions: he is ſwallowed up with Melancholly, as it were in a grave, or ſome deep pit, yet knows not the cauſe why, nor whence it ſhould proceed. But the cauſe (my friend) is, that theſe are the whips of God, wherewith he ſcourgeth them temporally in this world, in that part which ſhall pain them moſt, beſides that which he reſerveth for their farther puniſhment in the world to come. And his divine majeſty, for the comfort of the righteous, is willing that thoſe, that do diſſolutely ſin by doing open and publike wrongs contrary to all right and reaſon, ſhould be corrected in the ſight of men, and in the open view of all the world, to the intent that they may magnifie him in his juſtice, and draw conſolation to themſelves from his mercy, which is alſo made known in the chaſtiſement of the wicked.

Wouldſt thou live in health? wouldſt thou be cheerfull, and merry? wouldſt thou continue free from thoſe diſturbances, which might give thee cauſe to lament? wouldſt thou abound in riches? and lead a contented life without melancholly? Take then this rule of me; make thy dayly account with God, confeſſe thy ſelf unto him every day, as if that very day thou wert to dye.

Let juſtice be obſerved by thee in that manner, as it is defined and ſet down unto thee, giving to every man that which is his due: Eate of the ſweat of thine own browes, and not of the labours of other men; and to this end, ſtore thou up ſuch riches, as are well and truly gotten; ſo ſhalt thou live contentedly, ſo ſhalt thou be happy, and every thing ſhall proſper and thrive with thee, and all ſhall go well with thee and thine.

In

In good ſooth I am half afraid, that this conſideration of mine hath led me on a little too farre, whereinto I have ſo far thruſt in my foot, that I had need of ſome help to pull it out. I have launched out too much into the deep, and ingulphed my ſelf before I was aware. I have almoſt loſt my ſelf in this buſineſſe, in dilating upon this point, and ſhould runne out much more at randome, if I ſhould go about to tell you, why, and how, ſome of theſe things are thus and thus carried, whether out of private intereſt, or affection, or paſſion, &c. But I will be ſilent and all ſhall be huſh with me; for I will not (in theſe tongue-controlling dayes) that the law take hold upon me. *Secreta mea mihi:* My ſecret I will keep to my ſelf; I will lock it up cloſe in mine own boſome: beſides, good and diſcreet ſilence is counted a holy thing: though in that which I have ſpoken, I acknowledge mine exceſſe, and confeſſe I have (with the Cobler) gone beyond my Laſt, this being a point of doctrine fitter to be diſcuſſed by a *Preacher* than a *Picaro*. Theſe barkings will require better mouth'd dogs. Let them ſtretch out their throats and yawle alowd, that they may diſcover the theeves. But alas, it happily may, or rather unhappily be, that they have their mouths ſtopt with a cruſt, which makes them to hold their peace.

## Chap. IV.

Guzman de Alfarache *Delivereth a learned and witty Diſcourſe, conceived by himſelf againſt the Vanity of* Honour: *touching by the way upon the Vice of Servants, of Shop-keepers, of Notaries of Proctors, of Judges, of Artificers, of Apothecaries, of Phyſicians, and of Lawyers.*



Have made a long and tedious digreſſion, and am well witting thereof to my ſelf. But I would not have thee make it a matter of wonder; for the neceſſity that enforced me thereunto, was very great. And if two or more hurts meet in one and the ſelf-ſame body, it is good diſcretion to ſuccour the more important, not being unmindfull in the mean while of the leſſer. So it doth often occurre in War, and in all other things whatſoever. I aſſure thee by the faith of an honeſt man, that I am not able to tell thee, which of the two were the greater, either that which I did let alone, or that which I took in hand, conſidering how much both of them imported, and of what conſequence they were. But let us redeem the pawn that ſtands ingaged, and return again to our former matter, following the purſuit of that Diſcourſe, of whoſe footing, we have found the pricks already.

It was my hap one day to bear in my basket, (which I brought from the Shambles) a quarter of Mutton, for a certain Hoſier, or Gentleman Taylor. I had by chance at that time about me, certain old *Coplas*, or Ballads, which (in a kind of broken tune) ſtill as I read this or t'other line, I fell a ſinging, as I went along. My good maſter having (as it ſhould ſeem) liſtned unto me, look't back on the ſudden, and ſmiling ſaid; how now (my tatter'd Raskall) a pox take you for a ragga-muffin, can you reade, you Rogue? Yes marry can I, Sir, (quoth I) I thank God; I can read reaſonable well, but my writing is better than my reading. Saiſt thou me ſo, boy? And with that he intreated me, that I would teach him to write his name, or to make ſome mark, that might ſerve for a ſubſcription, or under-ſigning (he cared not which) for either would ſerve his turn. I pray Sir (ſaid I) what good can this do you? What can you benefit your ſelf, by having learned to make a bare marke and no more? Me thinks you ſhould have no great uſe of that a lone, unleſſe you could write too. Yes marry I have Sir (quoth he,) for I have much work goes through theſe hands, of ſuch and ſuch great men, I make all the cloaths their children weare (and there by the way, he reckons me up a bead-roll of theſe and theſe Lords) and therefore I would very faine, (if I knew how) learn to write my Name, or to make my mark, that (if occaſion were offered) I might not be taken for an Aſſe, and ſay (like a fool as I am) when I am call'd to ſubſcribe, indeed, Sir, you muſt pardon me, I cannot write. And ſo this buſineſs broke off abruptly, as it began. And I making a large *Soliloquium* and meditation to my ſelf, went on a good while with the ſame after this manner.

Here (*Guzman*) thou ſhalt ſee what a kinde of thing Honour is, ſeeing it is conferred on ſuch as theſe: It is the ſonne of Nothing; the Child that knows neither father, nor mother; the Earths off-ſpring, being raiſed out of the duſt thereof; it is a frail Veſſel full of crackes, of flawes and of holes, uncapable of containing any thing in it, that is of any mo-

ment or worth. Favour hath endeavoured to mend this broken Bucket, and to ſtop the Leaks thereof with clouts and with rags; and putting thereunto the rope of private intereſt, they now draw up water with it, and it ſeemed to be very beneficial and profitable unto them. It is one of *Peter* the Taylors ſons, whoſe father, howſoever he got it, were it well, or were it ill, made a ſhift to leave him ſomething to live upon. Or like unto that other, who by ſtealing from others, got wherewithall to give, and wherewith to bribe, and ſuborn. Theſe are the men that are honoured now adayes, they ſpeak high language, and utter arrogant words, and preſſe into all your great aſſemblies, and principal meetings, as if they were the onely men, and none but they. Theſe now take the upper hand, ſit down firſt, and take place of all men, whom heretofore you might have ranked amongſt your Muletters, or ſcarce ſo good men as they.

Behold, how many good men have with-drawn themſelves from the Court, and live a private and retired life at home? How many habits of S. *Jago*, *Calatrava*, and *Alcantara*, ſown with white thread? How many of the ancient Nobility of *Zain Calvo*, and *Nunno Raſura*, troden under feet?

Tell me I pray, who is that that gives honour unto ſome, and takes it from other ſome? Marry, it is more, or leſſe wealth. O what a brave Canon is this to qualifie a man? what an excellent Rector? what a learned School-maſter? How diſcreetly do they graduate a man? what good examination do they take, before they prefer any? Tell me once more I pray; What difference is there in their Obligation, between him that cometh fairly (as thou ſaidſt before) by an Office; and him that buyes an Office, whoſe money onely (without any other merit) hath inthroned him in the *Sancta Sanctorum* of the world? Whence comes it to paſſe, that the man that is diſcreet, noble, vertuous, well deſcended, of a ſound and ſober judgement, long practice, and more experience, a true maſter of his Art, ſhould (by being deprived of his due preferment) remain poor and needy, ſhut up in a corner, excluded from buſineſſe, afflicted, and peradventure enforced to derogate from his own worth, and to do that which is not agreeable to diſpoſition, that he may avoid the incurring of a worſe inconvenience? Thou haſt put too hard a task upon me, conſidering that ſlender ſatisfaction, that I am able to give thee. But I ſhall tell thee, according to my talent, and as the poorneſſe of my underſtanding ſhall give me leave.

When I conſider thereon, as a thing properly appertaining unto God (whoſe judgements are inſcrutable, and hidden both from men and Angels) I ſhall not entermeddle, or ſtrain my ſelf any farther therein, than the ſhortneſſe of my apprehenſion ſhall be able to reach unto. Which is; that he very well knoweth, how to proportion his gifts, and to give unto every one ſo much as is needfull for him, for his ſalvation. And therefore when a man ſhall fail of ſuch, or ſuch an Office, or miſſe ſuch, or ſuch a preferment, God ſaw it was not ſo fitting for him, for cauſes beſt known unto himſelf, or for that he fore-knew that it would be a means to work his condemnation, whom he is willing to ſave, becauſe he hath predeſtinated him to a better place.

And this is as much as can be ſaid concerning him, who doth not obtain that, which he deſerveth. But for that Favorite, or perſon of power with his Prince, that ſhall either be a block in this mans way, or ſtrip him of the Office that he worthily holdeth, who is not a Judge of the inward intentions, nor of the hearts of men, neither is able to examine them; but muſt go upon truſt, and make his judgement by external and outward things, (which he can onely ſee and know) doth oftentimes tread awry, and pervert and wreſt things to an ill ſenſe: If it may be lawfull for us to ſpeak in a ruſtical phraſe; applying the language of Heaven, to that here on earth; I ſay, that upon the margent of this great mans account, God doth (as we uſe here to do, when we will mark a thing the better, and look more narrowly into it) ſhut one of his eyes, to make his ſight the ſurer, when he mindes to hit the mark he aimes at. I ſay then: I will demand of theſe men, what cauſe they had to do this wrong, knowing that my threatnings are out againſt them? O ye Judges of the earth, becauſe ye have judged unrighteouſly, I have prepared for you a hard and inſufferable puniſhment: I will reſide in the Synagogue of the gods, and I will judge them. O, what a grief is it, how many thouſand of pities, that theſe men (knowing this to be true) will adventure to come before that upright and true Judge, when the accuſation is certain, which is brought in to condemne them; and the reſtitution now wanting, which they ought to make; without the which, their ſin cannot be forgiven them; and yet would not, when time ſerved, take order to make amendment for ſo foul a fault!

True it is, that paradventure there were not ſome wanting, that would whiſper them in the

the ear, and ſay; Sir, you may do this very well, and not ſin, it is not a thing that ought to trouble your conſcience, you did well, (which is no more than every wiſe man would do, were he in your place) in beſtowing this Office, on that kinſman, that acquaintance, that friend, or ſervant of yours, which are neareſt unto you. But (to ſpeak the truth) thou couldſt not do it; for thou didſt remove it from its right place, and put it into that, which was unfit, and improper for it. Look over thy Cardes a little better, think well on this buſineſſe, and then thou wilt tell me (my friend) that it was an errour in thee, and that thou couldſt not do it; And becauſe thou couldſt not do it, thou didſt ſin; And becauſe thou didſt ſin, it was not well done. Do not liſten to the words of fools, nor of flatterers, in a thing that concerns thee ſo much as this doth: it were better for thee, that thou wouldſt gird up thy loyns, and look unto that which may do thee hurt, and ſeek in time to preeent it, leſt the remedy come too late. For there are ſome confeſſors, that will give large abſolutions, who are like unto the Taylors, who, tell thee, that the garment which they have made for thee, fits thee very well; but thou knoweſt better than they, whether it wring thee, or no, whether it be too ſtreight, and uneaſie for thee, and how it fitteth to thy body. And God doth permit, becauſe thou did it not ſeek after one (whil'ſt thou waſt living, and in place of authority) that ſhould tell thee the truth, at the time of thy death, when thou art in thy laſt agony and anguiſh of Soul, thou ſhalt not meet with that friend, that ſhall then tell it thee, but rather ſooth thee up to thy condemnation. Look about with thine eyes, open wide thine ears, and ſuffer not theſe buſie Bees of Satan, to put hony into them, nor there to ſwarm and in-hive themſelves. For theſe their ſweet words will but lead thee on in the high and ready way to damnation.

But to return again to theſe kinde of men, in reſpect of God, I doubt not of their puniſhment; And in regard of man, I muſt plainly tell thee, that they open the door to murmuration, and give occaſion to the people, to ſpeak thereof in publick, not ſticking to utter (as I ſaid before) thoſe ends, which I thought ſhould have been kept ſecret; taking pitie and compaſſion of ſo many merits, ſo ill rewarded; and of ſo diſproportionable an exchange as this, in ſeeing the evil, by evil means, to be in higheſt eſteem: and the good, by reaſon of their goodneſſe, to be excluded, and ſhut out of all. But I can aſſure you, that God hath numbered all the hairs of their head, and will not ſuffer one of them to fall to the ground. Though men therefore may chance to fail them, yet let them comfort themſelves with this, that they have a good God to friend, that will never forſake them. This is the world, & thus things go.

I therefore will neither have Empire, not Dignity; I will not have Honour, I will not ſo much as once look upon it. Keep thy ſelf as thou art (*Guzman*:) continue (my honeſt friend) the ſame man ſtill. Let others (a Gods name) be the Councell of the Commonwealth, the Oracles of the State; let them never think upon thee; enter not into that place, whence thou canſt not get out, when thou wouldeſt: Doe not put thy ſelfe into that danger which may bring a continual fear with it: Deſire not to have too much, leſt it chance to be taken from thee; nor too little, leſt thou be driven to begge; Do not pretend any thing by way of flattery: Do not intangle thy ſelf in many buſineſſes, leſt they ſhould diſquiet thee: Seek to be the Uſufructuarie, and free injoyer of thy life, that by uſing of it well, thou mayeſt live ſafe in thy eſtate. Why ſhouldſt thou keep a ſtirre, and trouble thy ſelf for that, which to morrow is to be no more, and when it is at the moſt, is of no long continuance? What doeſt thou, or any man elſe know, what is become of the *Mayor-domo* to King *Don Pelayo*, or of the Chamberlain to *Conde Fernan Goncales*? They had honour, and they held it, but neither of them, nor that, is any memory remaining. So ſhalt thou the next day be forgotten, as if thou hadſt never been at all. Why then is there ſo much greedineſſe, ſo much thirſt, and ſo much coil; one for his belly, (for to ſo great a vanity are we now grown, that to eat and waſte much, is held no ſmall reputation) another for his back, and a third for honour.

No, no, theſe things are not for thee, and if thou offer to trouble thy thoughts with them, thou ſhalt not live to be an old man, or elſe thou ſhalt be old before thy time. Leave, leave off, I ſay, the ſwelling pride of theſe huge Gyants, and thruſt them up againſt the Walls; let them ſtand there as Bug-bears to fright Children, as being good for nothing elſe.

Cloath thy ſelf in the Winter, with that which may keep thee warm; and in the Summer, with that which may cover thee, not going too ſlovenly, nor too pompouſly, rather decently than richly; Eat no more than may ſuffice nature, preferring moderation before exceſſe, for whatſoever is more than neceſſary, is meerly ſuperfluous. For by it neither the rich man lives, nor the poor man dies. But the diverſity and abundance of meats, is rather a diſeaſe than otherwiſe, breeding viſcuous and ſlimy humours, whence ariſe grievous ſickneſſes, and mortal Apoplexies.

Twice, thrice, nay, four times happy art thou, who riſeſt in the morning when thou wilt; and at what hour thy ſelf liſteth, without once thinking of ſerving, or being ſerved by any body: for although it be a trouble to have a Maſter, yet it is alſo a trouble to have a ſervant, as you ſhall hear by and by. At noon, feed freely, dine ſecurely, run not upon the ſcore with thy Cook, nor be indebted to thy *Diſpenſero*, ſend not for thy Coals from the Merchants Sellar, where they gather wet and moiſture, in ſtead whereof they will bring thee in duſt and ſtones, wherewith thou wilt be coozened; for there are more deceits in the world, than thou or any man elſe knows, ſave God alone: Seek not to excell in bravery, affect not too much neatneſſe; fear not every ſpot that may fall upon thy Cloaths, be not in love with rich Imbroideries; be not too carefull to keep, nor too fearfull to loſe. Be not envious nor ſuſpicious; Let no occaſion move thee to lie; Do not purchaſe preferment by undermining of others, nor work not another mans ruine, to work thy ſelf into favour. Think it fitter for thee to go alone, than accompanied; a quick, than a ſlow pace: rather laughing than weeping; eating than dancing; without being noted by any. That is the beſt Tavern to thee, where thou meeteſt with the beſt Wine: And that the beſt Cooks ſhop, where thou lighteſt on the beſt morſel: In the Market-place, thou mayeſt make choice of the beſt ſeat, and ſo thou maiſt the like at all publick Feaſts. In the Winter get thee into the Sun, in the Summer into the ſhade. Thou mayeſt cover thy boord, according to thine own minde: thou mayeſt make thy bed, according to thine own liking; without paying one penny either for the making, or ſtanding of it: And maiſt chuſe, whether any man ſhall ſee thee, diſquiet thee, or contradict thee. Keep thy ſelf aloof from Law-buſineſſes: live a ſtranger to Suites and Actions: free thy ſelf from falſe Witneſſes; for fear they ſhould part thy goods amongſt them, and become maſters of all that thou haſt. Let no man be able to ask thee a penny; keep thy ſelf ſafe from Decrees; Beware how, and whom you truſt, and upon what terms: but above all, (which will be no ſmall glory unto thee) take heed, how thou becom'ſt a ſurety for any man. Give no cauſe to have any executions come out againſt thee; nor thou to do the like againſt others: Shun all contentions and debates, and all manner of Suits in Law. Laſt of all, reſt thou ſatisfied and contented, ſo that nothing may oppreſſe thee, nor break thy ſleep, that thou mayeſt riſe betimes in the morning to think upon thoſe things that may turn to thy good by reforming what is amiſſe.

All men cannot do all that they would; yet our good God is not forgetfull of the poor, having opened a way unto him, whereby he may live contented; not giving him more cold, than his body is able to bear, ſuting his conſtitution according to his Cloaths; ſo that he may paſſe in this world, as well as the rich, if he will but order and govern himſelf aright. But this life is not made alike for all men: And undoubtedly, the firſt inventer muſt be a moſt famous Philoſopher; for ſo happy a repoſedneſſe, is to be ſuppoſed to have its beginning from ſome ſingular wit. And to ſpeak truely, that which is not ſo, coſteth much trouble. And thoſe, that do not ſo paſſe through this life, are the men that ſuffer and pay for all.

Walking through this world with many diſturbances, contentions, and moleſtations; flattering, idolatrizing, carrying things away with a ſtrong hand, plotting of tricks, violently haling by the hair, that, which neither ought to be ſuffered, nor is fit to be effected, nor any way in the world to be ſuffered, ſhutting their eyes all this while againſt that, which it concerns them to ſee; but are very ſharp-ſighted in looking to their profit, nothing ſhall paſſe by them then: They are *Linxes*, and Eagle-eyed, when their prey is before them, though it were better for them in theſe things, to be as blinde as the Beetle, or the Mole: For then they begin to lay their Nets, to pitch their Hayes, fall a ſetting of Lime-twigs, watching how to put themſelves forward, by making of Pit-fals, wherein to intrap men, thinking to raiſe themſelves, by the fall of others. For they doubt not of their own coming forward, if they can but once come to thruſt others back. Vanity of vanities, and nothing but vanity.

O what a grievous thing is it, that a man ſhould ſuffer ſuch a number of calamities, and for no other end onely, but to uphold his frail and unfortunate honour from falling? And he that thinks he hath ſureſt poſſeſſion of it, lives but with ſo much the greater care to repair and maintain it. I returned again and again to conſider thereon, never ceaſing nor never enough ſatisfied with the repeating of this ſaying: Happy, thrice happy thou, who haſt wrapt honour in a Coffin of Lead, and with ſtrong cords, tying heavy ſtones thereunto, haſt buried it in the Sea, whence it may never riſe up any more, nor appear unto the world.

I likewiſe began to think with my ſelf, what a hurtfull thing in a Family, is a villanous, an ungratefull, a coozening, and a lying ſervant: whereof now adayes the world is too full. And if we ſhall briefly decipher forth unto you ſuch a manner of ſervant, you ſhall finde him

to

to be a fool, a ſloven; a careleſſe companion; idle, lazie; a bagge fill'd with nothing but malice and roguery; a Funnel, to pour in all manner of diſcord, and diſſention; full of prattle, upon every ſlight occaſion; and dumb, in thoſe things that are of any moment: ignorant in ſpeaking, and impudent in grumbling.

Shall I character forth unto you a Maid-ſervant, or a Nurſe that will ſerve for any thing? You ſhall have her ſluttiſh, thieviſh: with a brother, a Parent, or a Kinſman, ever and anon asking for her, troubling thy houſe with dayly viſits; for, and with whom, ſhe returns ſo many nights, every week, by retail; dividing that time amongſt them in parcels, which ſhe ſhould lay out in the groſſe in thy ſervice; devoted onely to the love and ſervice of her ſweet-heart: earneſtly deſiring to ſee her ſelf made Miſtreſſe of a Mantle: ſhe will look for good maintenance, and be her wages never ſo good, that proportion will not ſerve the turn, but as ſhe ſees occaſion, ſhe will ſtill be gracing more and more upon thee: And you muſt over and beſides, allow her wine into the bargain, becauſe forſooth her ſtomack is weak, and cannot digeſt her meat without it. If we will but look out into the ſtreet, which way ſo ever we turn our eye, we ſee every thing want ſomewhat in the fineneſſe of its Loy and true touch, all is falſe, and without Law, nothing that is perfect either in weight nor in meaſure.

And that this is true, look into your Shambles, your Huckſters, and other ſhops of retail in the Market-place; and then you will tell me what a deal of cozzenage they uſe in the venting of their wares, and with what gainfull cunning they utter their commodities. Beſides, to what deſperation doth a falſe, or corrupted *Notary* drive a man unto? Againſt whom, even truth it ſelf hath not the power to prevail. For the ſtem onely of his Quill, and the very nip of his Pen, is more dangerous againſt whom it is bent, than a ſtrong-ſteeled Launce, or a Cannon of braſſe, with all his batteries.

What think you of a lying Attourney? a wrangling Lawyer? Both men of an evil conſcience, full of tricks and quillets, skilfull of deceiving, cunning in plotting, and above all, wonderfull lovers of delayes, making it their main ſtudy to put off and prolong ſuits, that they may lick their own fingers, and fill their hungry bellies at other mens coſt.

What ſay you to an obſtinate and head-ſtrong Judge? one of thoſe ignorant wilfull ones, who will not ſtick perhaps to ſay to himſelf; I underſtand my ſelf well enough; *I know what I ſpeak*; nor will I be taught what to do. When indeed, he neither underſtandeth, nor knoweth, nor doth any thing that is fit, nor is well underſtood by others. At the firſt he ſeemed milde and gentle (before he was warm in his Office) like a Bull amidſt a Herd of Cowes, but when he came forth he appeared fierce, and full of rage, as if he had been ſtuck with darts, and his bloud drawn from him, He wore a garment, which for the ſhaping of it into faſhion, ſetting the pieces handſomly together, and to make it fit for wearing, had need of more than a thouſand Scedules, and as many Paſ-ports, as alſo the thread of *Theſeus*; for it is a Labyrinth to enter into. O with what hunger is he affected! he thinks he ſhall never be full enough. So that I muſt ſay, nothing eſcaped his hand, were it little, or great; the bare Fell, or the whole Fleece. I found he offended in all: In this by an I, in that by an O: In ſome things; by doing, in ſome things by not doing: Offending, not onely in matters of Omiſſion, but in ſins of Commiſſion. Who like the Lyoneſſe, can with lowd roarings put life into theſe little Whelps, (theſe dead truths) to the end, that by taking breath, ſome remedy might be had.

Let us run through all occupations; Look I pray into your Taylor, with whom it is now grown to a cuſtom, that you muſt pay ſomething to the ſetting up of their ſign, elſe your work ſhall ne'r be made an end of; or if it be, it ſhall be ſpoyled in the making, or they will filch ſo much of your ſtuffe from you, as ſhall leſſen your Coat, and inlarge their Vails.

Your Maſon, your Smith, your Carpenter, and all other Tradeſ-men whatſoever, none excepted, do all ſteal, all lye, all coozen: none of them deals truely, no not one. And which is worſt of all, they take a glory therein, and think themſelves, in ſo doing, to be jolly wiſe fellows, and Maſters of their craft; holding thoſe that deal more honeſtly (if there be any ſuch) to be ſimple men, and poor ſilly fools, that want wit.

Let us look a little back, and ſee if we ſhall not finde an Apothecary in a blinde corner, becauſe he will not be ſaid to ſay I have not ſuch a thing, or ſo, nor diſcredit his ſhop; will not ſtick to give you contrary Syrrups, counterfeit Oyls, falſified waters; you ſhall not finde one Drugge that is of true and perfect goodneſſe, or any compound made according unto the rules of Art; they mingle, baptize and make confections (according to their own liking) of differing qualities, and divers effects, thinking (in their poor diſcretion) that there is but little difference betwixt the one and the other, though it be contrary to all truth and reaſon. And thus do they kill many a man, making of their Boxes, and their Viole, Dags and Piſtols,

and

and of their Pills, Pellets; wherewith (as with ſo many Bullets) they lay us dead on the ground.

But you will ſay, Maſter Doctor overſees him, and that there is not an ingredient, but carries his eye, and direction with it, and therefore the danger is ſo much the leſſe.

True: but if you do not ſee him well, he forgoes the cure; and if you do ſee him well, he prolongs it: And ſo by this means, ſome, nay, many times his ſick Patient miſcarries, and is ſent untimely to his grave.

And it is a thing worthy the noting, that Laws, being the daughters of reaſon, if you put a Caſe to a Lawyer, ask his opinion, he ſtudies it, and will not reſolve you, till he have well and truely conſidered thereon, becauſe it is a matter of goods, or of land, which may concern a making, or marring.

But your Phyſician no ſooner comes in to viſit you, but preſently by the touch of your Pulſe, as ſoon as ever his finger hath felt it, he inſtantly knows your diſeaſe, though it be utterly unknown unto him, and removed as far from his underſtanding, as earth from heaven. And then, (that he may not betray this his ignorance) he forthwith preſcribes, and applies ſuch remedies unto you, as are more truely means to bring you to your laſt home, than to reſtore you to your health. Shall it not be fit (if that *Aphoriſme* of theirs be true) that life is ſhort, the Art long, experience deceitfull, and the judgement hard and difficult, to go on by little and little, as it were by degrees, till they be throughly entred thereinto, and become maſters of that which they would willingly cure, by ſtudying that which they ought to do therein? To treat of this, would ask a long diſcourſe. All goes topſie-turvy; all Kim, Kam; all is tricks and devices: all riddles and unknown myſteries; you ſhall not finde man with man; we all live in ambuſh, lying in wait one for another, as the Cat for the Mouſe, or the Spider for the Flye: who roaming careleſly up and down, ſuffers her ſelf to be taken by a ſlender thread, whileſt that venemous vermine, ſeizing on her head, holds her faſt, never leaving her till ſhe hath kill'd her with her poyſon.

## Chapter V.

*How* Guzman de Alfarache *lighted on a Cooks ſervice, and with fair ſentences, and good leſſons, ſheweth, what he ſhould be that ſerveth. He blameth gaming, and Gameſters. He declareth a pretty theft performed by him; he relateth the Vices of* Diſpenſero's, *Cooks, Butlers, and other the like Officers. Of Lords, abuſed by their ſervants. Of Kings, and their miſerable condition. Of the vanity of Inferiours conteſting with their Superiours. He condemneth thoſe Maſters that ill intreat their ſervants: And how they ought to carry themſelves towards them.*



I Found my ſelf free from all theſe things, as ſubject to none of them, except infirmity, and ſickneſſe. In regard whereof, I had a determination, to have put my ſelf into a Hoſpital. I injoyed a free and flouriſhing kinde of liberty, praiſed by the wiſe, deſired of many, and ſo much applauded and re-applauded by the Poets. To whoſe true valuation, all the Gold and riches of the earth, are not to be compared, as things of too poor and mean a price. I had it once, but had not the wit to keep it. For it being my courſe of life (as a thing whereunto I was accuſtomed) to play the Porter, and carry burthens, and being now as well truſted, as I was known, all my care was, to come acquainted with ſome one falſe Cater, or other (Gods curſe and mine go with him) that was the Purſer, Diſburſer, Diſtributer, or Steward, or by what other ſtile, or Title, in that kinde you ſhall call him. This *Deſpenſero*, or Cater (as you pleaſe) had a good confidence in me, truſted me very far, and would often ſend me away alone by my ſelf to carry thoſe things home to his houſe, which he had bought in the Market. This my continued converſation & dayly commerecment with him, did (which it ſhould not have done) procure his good liking, and love towards me; Inſomuch, that he removed me from that Office, and preferred me to be Scullion of the Kitchin, which was as much as my ambition could then reach unto.

He would often-times tell me, (and one day amongſt the reſt, and I remember it was in the morning; he made me a long Oration, flouriſhed over with a great many of fair promiſes, ſo that by climbing from one round to another, I began to conceive with my ſelf, that I ſhould come at laſt to be a *Corregidor* at leaſt.) That if I would apply my ſelf to that Office, and

and take pains therein, behaving my ſelf well and honeſtly, when I was grown fit and perfect, he would be a means to place me in Court, and put me into the Kings ſervice; where, when I had ſerv'd ſo many years in the Kitchin, I ſhould be well rewarded, and might afterwards live richly of my ſelf, and be mine own man.

O how quickly did this vain blaſt puffe up my empty Pate; This giddy winde-mill of mine was ſet a work, and turn'd quite round with the breath of his word. The adventure I ſaw was ſmall, and the gain might be great.

Well he brought me to the Cook my Maſter (we being well known to each other.) When I came thither, (as if it had been the firſt time that we had ſeen one another) he ſpake to me in a proud commanding manner. How now (Signiour few-cloaths) what winde drove you hither? What make you here (goodman Shag-rag,) you *Cavallero de Illeſcas?* Have you any buſineſſe here? or do you come to abide with me? Sure I was ill adviſed; for when I ſaw he began in ſo high a key, I was about to ſhew him my back, and to leave him to himſelf, and his flie; (for Summer was now fully in.) I ſtarted, and ſtood as one aſtonied, not knowing what anſwer to make him, but when I ſaw there was no remedy; I replied; yes Sir. Come your wayes then (quoth he) in with me: And if thou doſt thy duty (ſaid he) and ſhalt deſerve well at my hands, thou ſhalt not loſe thy labour.

I told him, I was very well aſſured, that in ſerving his worſhip, I might gain by the bargain, but loſe nothing, becauſe I had nothing to loſe. Then he ask'd me; Do you know (Sirrah) what you are to do? All that (I mildly replied) that you ſhall be pleaſed to command me; or my ſelf either know, or am able to perform. For he that ſets himſelf to ſerve, muſt not refuſe (when need is) to do any thing, but that which more properly belongs to the duty of his place, he ought cheerfully to undergo it; and to apply himſelf as well to the one as the other.

He ſeemed to like well both of my ſpeech and underſtanding; and I hoping to be well rewarded, flew in like a Hawk for the prey. At my firſt coming I behaved my ſelf very reſpectfully towards him, and ſerved him as punctually as I could; and he again made much of me, and us'd me as kindly as heart could wiſh. But I did not onely ſeek to pleaſe my Maſter (who was a married man) and his wife my Miſtriſſe, even in the meaneſt ſervices, ſerving them in all things elſe beſides, both in Town and Countrey, at home and abroad; taking upon me the Office both of Man-ſervant & Maid-ſervant, (ſave onely that I had never a Gown to put on, nor a Mantle to cover me withall, to wait upon my Miſtriſſe when ſhe went abroad; But for all other ſervices of the houſe, as ſweeping, rubbing, ſcowring, ſetting the Pot over the fire, dreſſing of meat making of Beds, laying the *Eſtrado* in order, ſmoothing and plaining it, that not a wrinckle was to be ſeen, and other the like ſervices were my ordinary exerciſe; (And for that I was the onely man, all this was committed to my charge:) But I laboured beſides to give good contentment to all the reſt of my Maſters ſervants. So that my heels were as nimble to run upon the leaſt boyes errand in the houſe, as the Stewards, the Pages, as the *Mayor-Domos*; for him that rub'd the Horſes heels, as for him that was Uſher of the Hall. One would have me to buy ſuch and ſuch neceſſaries for him; another, that I would broſh, and make clean his cloaths; This man, that I would get his band waſht and ſtarcht for him; That, that I would carry ſome proviſion home to his wife: A third, to his wench. And all this I did without grumbling, or muttering, or any the leaſt unwillingneſſe in the world. I was never any Tale-carrier nor ſower of ſedition; nor did I ever diſcover any ſecret, or report again what I heard, though it were not delivered under the ſeal of ſilence unto me, or that the relators had laid their finger on my mouth. For I was not ſo ill bred, but that I knew very well, what, and when it was lawfull for me to ſpeak, and when to hold my peace. He therefore, (whoſoever he be) that ſerves, muſt have an eſpecial care to obſerve theſe two things; Wherein if he fail, he will quickly ruine himſelf, by drawing all mens ill will upon him, and making himſelf the moſt hated man in the world. Whereas nothing doth more recommend a man, than a fair carriage, and a faithfull heart. When I was chidden, I never replied; and made it my ſtudy, to give them as little cauſe as I could to finde fault with me. I would not willingly have any mans diſpleaſure; And all my care was, to do what I was commanded. And when there was need of my ſervice, or that my helping hand might do any good, I was ſeldom, or never wanting; I was *Jack* at a pinch, I was here, and there, and every where. And albeit theſe diligences of mine coſt me a great deal of labour and pains taking, yet I loſt nothing by it: for the good commendations that they gave me, and the kinde words that they ſpake of me behinde my back, and the hopes that I had to be well rewarded, when time ſhould ſerve, ſeemed to me a ſufficient payment, and I was well contented therewith.

Good uſage, is a great heartening to him that ſerveth: It is the ſpurre which prick's on the Will, and makes it go forward; it is the finger that beckens our affections, it is the Lure that calls our deſires, it is a Chariot, wherein our forces (like ſtrong Jades) draw on without wearineſſe, and tug ſtoutly through thick and thin; it is good ſerving of ſome men, and they deſerve to have ſervice done them *Gratis*; And there are ſome men again, that a man would not ſerve for any money. But of all others, I diſclaim that Maſter as unworthy to be waited on, that will neither give his ſervant good wages, nor good words. Kinde uſage will make a man work out his heart, but high language and poor payment, will kill any ſpirit living, and make a ſervant grow neglectfull, if not weary of his Maſters ſervice.

Then might I affirm, that leaving my roguiſh kinde of life, this *Picardia* of mine, (as a Queen whoſe name I am not worthy to take in my mouth, and whereunto any other politick courſe of life is not to be compared) all the bravery and gallantry of the curious method of living happily, and paſſing well away the time, which the world ſolemnizeth ſo much, muſt yield and give place thereunto. But this (though accompanied with much care) was exceeding good, good in the higheſt degree, for ſuch a one (I mean) as my ſelf, who had been daintily bred up in the midſt of delights. So that me thought, I was in a manner reduced and brought back again to my old byas, and natural courſe of life, as far as it concerned the Bucolicks: for my *Bocados* were of another kinde of quality and reliſh, than thoſe of the *Bodegon*, or a Pie-corner Tripe-wives ſhop; they were otherwiſe dreſt, otherwiſe ſeaſon'd. And in this, thoſe of S. *Gil. Santo domingo, Puerta del Sol, Placa Mayor, and Calle de Toledo,* muſt pardon me and have me excuſed; howbeit I cannot deny, but that their Liver-ſlices, and their raſhers on the coals, ran ſtill in my head, and were hard things for me to forget.

I did nothing, were it never ſo ſmall a thing, never ſo little, for the which I had not ſomething. All did give me one thing, or other; one, a *Taria*, which is a matter of penny halfpenny, another a Royal, a third a Doublet, a fourth an old Jacket to cover this poor fleſh of mine: I did not go ſo like a tattered Rogue as I did before; my meals were ſure and certain; and though I had not had any other thing to ſuſtain my ſelf withall, I might have liv'd very well upon the skimmings of the pot, and upon the tryal of my taſte, by eſſaying whether my boyld meats were ſod enough, and ſo likewiſe for my roſte, reſerving ſtill my own allowance whole and entire, I had no need to touch upon that that I made profit of. This good did me much hurt, as alſo did my Gaming, which I had learned in my looſer dayes; for look whatſoever I got by means of my place, for that I had no houſe to repair, nor rents to buy in, I plaid it all away. So that I may very well ſay, my good did me hurt. For ſee how much increaſe it bringeth to the good, (becauſe they know how to turn it to their beſt benefit) ſo it worketh as much hurt in the bad, for (when they fall once a loſing what they have got) they loſe a great deal more with it, it being with them, as it is with your venomous beaſts; who draw poyſon from that, from which your Bees ſuck honey.

Goodneſſe is like unto your ſweet waters, which if they be kept in clean Veſſels grow ſtill the better, but in bad, are ſtraightway corrupted, and quite ſpoyled. I was a learned Doctor in that Science, but yet I conſumed my Eſtate in following that trade. Within a few dayes, I grew a refined Gameſter, and could play well with my hands too, I had learned to filch and ſteal finely, which was the worſe Occupation of the two. Gaming, is a terrible vice; And as all Rivers have recourſe unto the Sea; So is there not that vice, which is not to be found in a Gameſter. He never does well, and alwayes thinks ill. He never tells truth but ſtill lies; He hath no man to friend; He keeps no good quarter with his kindred: He eſteems not his credit, but overthroweth the honour of his houſe; He leadeth a lewd life; He deſires the death of his parents; He ſwears without cauſe; He blaſphemes upon every little loſſe; He neither fears God, nor regards his own Soul. If he leeſe his money, he looſeth all ſhame to get it again, and ſo he may have it, he cares not with what infamy; he lives gameing, and he dyes gameing. Inſtead of a holy Taper, he holds a pack of Cardes in his hand, as one that is reſolv'd to loſe, Soul, life, and all that he hath at one dealing. I had very good experience hereof from others, but I ſpeak not that, which was told me by others, but what my ſelf ſaw with mine own eyes.

When my vails would not ſerve the turn, (that I might not vvant vvherewithall to game) I vvould caſt mine eyes like burning Torches, about the houſe, vvhere, and out of vvhat I might make my proviſion. For thoſe things, that belong'd to the Kitchin, I could make purchaſe there in the turning of a hand, but ever had a care to do it ſo handſomly, and to

carry

carry it ſo cleanly, that they might not have the leaſt ſuſpicion of me in the world. Many things which I ſtole, I bid in the ſelf-ſame room where I found them, with purpoſe, (if they ſhould chance to ſuſpect me) to pull them out in publick, gaining thereby credit to my ſelf for after-times, upon the like occaſion. And in caſe the ſuſpicion fell upon another, I preſently took hold upon that advantage; and putting it from my ſelf, transferred it on him. Once I remember, I lighted on a happy encounter, which was this:

My Maſter on a time brought certain friends of his home to his houſe, good fellowes, ſworn brothers to *Bacchus*, Pilots for *Gnadalcana*, and *Coca*, and he would needs forſooth in kindneſſe beſtow a Bever upon them, all of them plaid well upon the keyes of this Organ; the Jacks went up lively, but my Maſter he tickled it notably, he was an excellent Muſician upon a jarre of Wine: he was a brave bottle-banger, a ſingular toſſe-pot. He took me out of one of the cup-bords of his Ambry (which were ever ſtored with cold meats) a delicate piece of Bacon finely inter-larded, or (to ſpeak more properly) inter-laced with fat and lean, which lookt as freſh and as ruddy, as the bloud of a Lamb, that is newly kill'd. The game growing now hot, and the vies ſeen on all ſides, they were all *thirty apiece in Kings*, merry, rich, and contented: And with this new Shooing-horn to draw down their drink, they fell afreſh to their former play, drinking healths Helter Skelter, till at laſt (and my Miſtriſſe had her ſhare too, who did mince and gig it in this round, with aſmuch metal, and as nimbly, as the beſt dancer of them all) they grew ſo fine and ſo mellow, that you might have ſtript them (like Rabbets) out of their Caſes, and left them ſtark naked as ever they were born, and yet they never have known who had done them this harm. Their pieces were over-charged, the powder ſtrong, the charge too great; ſo that when the fire took them, the ſmoke and ſume thereof flew up to the higheſt part of all the chimney, wherewith the whole houſe was ſo ſhaken, that ſome fell down flat, others reeled too and fro; ſome tript both in their tongue & feet; others were full of their gameboll-tricks, each man having his ſeveral poſture.

My Maſter and my Miſtriſſe (as one of the Neighbours told me) ſcrambled (as well as they could) to bed, leaving all the doors of the houſe open, the Table untaken away, and the ſilver Goblet, wherein they drunk their healths, tumbled down on the ground, all which made much for the benefit of the Inventory.

I was by chance at that time in my Maſters Kitchen, ſcowring of the Pans and the Spits, piling up the wood, laying it handſomely together, and doing other things belonging to my Office. When that task was done, and I had made an end of all my work, I got me to my lodging, and as I paſt along, I found all out of order, every thing out of his proper place, all the doors open; the Cup that was faln down on the floor, I fortunately ſtumbled on; it ſilently ſeemed to intreat me, that I would do it that courteſie to take it up. I ſtooped down unto it, to do it that friendly Office, looking in the mean while round about me, to ſee whether any mans eyes were upon me, to ſpy what I was a doing: but when I ſaw the coaſt was clear, that there was not any body living thereabouts, ſo that no man could detect me, I put it up, and ſoftly ſtole away. But I had ſcarce gone four ſteps from the place, when my heart began to beat a falſe alarm.

Then I began to think with my ſelf, vvhether I heard any noiſe ſtirring, either vvithin, or vvithout the houſe, for I could not be too ſecure, and it did much concern me, to have a care to keep my skin vvhole, and not to indanger the loſing of much, for the gaining of a little, and ſo in the end get a vvhipping by the bargain. I got me in, I called twice, or thrice upon this, then that man, but not a word of anſwer that I had from any of them.

I went to my Maſters bed-chamber, where I found him and his vvife in that caſe, that they ſeemed to be dead, and ſure they were little better, for they were deeply buried in wine.

The ſnores and ſnorts that came from them, and other the like puffings and blowings, which they breathed forth, made me to imagine, that I had been newly entred into ſome famous drinking-ſchool, I had a great minde to have bound them with ſome whip-cord by the feet to the bed-poſt, and to have plaid the knave with them in that manner, to have made a little ſport with them. But I did not like ſo well of that jeſt, a greater buſineſſe was now in hand, and I thought it the better jeſt of the two, to content my ſelf with that ſilver piece of plate: whereupon, I made a ſafe work with that. And having now ſecured this theft, away went I back again to the Kitchin, where I found work enough to do till it was night, about which time my Maſter came thither, terribly pained in his belly, and his temples. And finding there but one onely fire-brand lying on the Harth, he would needs cudgel my Coat therewith, ſcolding and railing at me, telling me that I waſted too much wood, and that I would never leave, till I had fired his houſe. That night was not a night of profit; it was worth nothing

unto me; yet I ſupply'd (as well as I could) what was wanting, and covering my Maſters deſect, ſupper was made ready and orderly ſerved in, which being ended, and all things done that ſhould be done, we went to bed. But I found my Miſtreſſe in an ill taking, her countenance ſad and heavy; her eyes caſt down to the ground, and full of tears, her heart ſwoln with grief, all was out of tune with her, and not ſo much as one word that came from her, till my Maſter was gone to bed. And then I made bold to ask her, what was the matter that ſhe was ſo melancholly. She anſwered, O my *Guzmanico*, (ſon of my Soul) a great misfortune hath befaln me, wretched woman that I am, curſed was that hour wherein I was born, and in an unlucky time did my Mother bring me forth. By this time I knew where her ſhoe did wring her; My pocket was her Apothecaries ſhop. There lay the reſtorative: And my good will had been the beſt Phyſician, ſhe could have gotten for her grief. But all her pitifull complaints, and whatſoever elſe might work compaſſion, being all out together, could not move me awhit. For I have heard ſay; Let a woman weep never ſo much, though ſhe ſhould ſeem to weep her heart out; there is no more pitty to be taken of her, than to ſee a Gooſe go bare-foot. All her lamentations, her wringing of her hands, and other her demonſtrations of her ſorrow, could not ſtir up pitty in me, or take hold on the leaſt hair of a fellow-kinde of feeling.

But feigning my ſelf to be very ſenſible of her affliction, and that it grieved me much to ſee her ſo ſurprized with grief, I began to comfort her, and to perſwade her (all that I could) that her impatience might not force ſuch words from her, as I heard her but now utter; requeſting her, that ſhe would lay open the wound, and tell me what ſhe ayl'd, and make me a ſharer in this her miſery, promiſing (in all that little, that I was able to do) to do as much for her, as I would for mine own mother. O ſon (quoth ſhe) your maſter (in an ill hour) brought hither ſome of his friends to make merry this afternoon, and amongſt other things, my ſilver Goblet is wanting, and I know not in the world what to do. What will thy maſter ſay, or do, when he ſhall know it? O he will kill me (ſon of my bowels, mine own dear childe) he will kill me, that is the leaſt he can do unto me. And what I pray can he do more, ſaid I with my ſelf? Well, I put on a mourning-face, look ſad, ſhewing how much I was diſpleaſed with this roguiſh dealing, and how much it did vex me for her ſake. And then calling my wits together, I told her, that there was no other way in the world to ſalve this ſore; but that ſhe ſhould be ſtirring very early in the morning, and get her to the Gold-ſmiths, and buy another like unto it, and then tell her husband, that becauſe the ſilver Cup was old, and ſtained with many ſpots, ſhe had cauſed it to be new burniſh't over, and made as bright as it was the firſt day it was bought.

And by this means, this cloud, that threatens ſuch a foul ſtorm, will quickly be over-blown, and all be fair weather again with you.

I offered her withall, that if ſhe wanted money, ſhe ſhould make ſhift to take it up upon credit, ſhe ſhould have my allowance and my vails, till all was paid, if ſhe did not find means before of her own to diſcharge the debt. She did with a great deal of thankfulneſſe entertain what I had ſpoken, as well for my good counſel, as the ſpeed. But it ſeemed unto her, that it would be very unfitting for her to go from home, and that all alone, and ſo early in the morning, fearing leſt her husband might chance to know it, who was very jealous of her, and would think, ſhe had gone a gadding to ſome worſer purpoſe. Whereupon ſhe intreated me of all loves, even for Gods ſake, that I would go my ſelf to ſee, and I could get ſuch another as that was; and as for the money, ſhe had enough of her own ſtore to pay for it. This was e'ne as I would have it, it hit as pat as a pudding to a Fryers mouth, I could not had wiſht it to have faln out better; for I had already begun to deviſe and caſt with my ſelf, to whom, or how I might ſell it, and what chapman I might beſt finde out to buy it of me for if they ſhould come to ſcan my perſon, they might eaſily be induced to believe, that I had ſtoln it.

But this buſineſſe fallen out ſo luckily, and all things forting ſo well with me, I went amongſt the Gold-ſmiths, and ſpake to one of them, that he would make clean this plate, take out the ſtains, and beat out the dents, for it had taken ſome knocks in the fall; I agreed with him for two Royals, for which price he finiſhed his work, and made it look as freſh and as new as if it had been newly bought out of the ſhop; I took my cup and carried it home with me to my Miſtriſſe, telling her, that I had met with this piece at the *puerta de Guadalara*, and that it amounted in weight to ſeven and fifty Royals, and for the faſhion he would not abate a farthing of eight Royals.

And this ſeemed to her, as if it had been but one poor blank, conſidering the great deſire which he had to be freed from that trouble wherein ſhe was. She told me out the money upon

upon a Table, ſo that I ſold her her own again, as if it had not been the ſame, or that I had been the man that had not ſtoln it from her, Wherewith ſhe remained contented, and I was ſatisfied. But lightly come lightly gone. Two incounters carried it clean away from me.

Theſe pretty theſts of wit, I reckoned as things of nothing, and occaſion taught me the way: theſe were natural unto me. But thoſe of permiſſion, and of greater moment, I took great care in managing of them, when need did require: It was a common thing with me, to come near to the Butchers Chopping-block, where the portions allotted to every man for their allowance were cut out and divided. I did diligently obſerve that which paſſed, I learned the trick of the finger, the bounding of the ballance, and all the tricks of weighing, and many would ſay, I weighed paſſing well, yet ſo for mine own advantage, that every mans part ſhould dayly come ſhort two ounces in weight.

The *Deſpenſero*, he would anſwer for himſelf, that the fleſh did ſhrink and dry away, and though he received full weight, and the Scales true, yet there could not chuſe but be ſome loſſe therein, by cutting it out afterwards into ſo many ſeveral pieces for Commons, which might very well take up a ſixth part. Your *Deſpenſero*, your Cook, your Butler, your Purveyour, and moſt of all your Officers, they do all of them filch and ſteal, and ſtick not to ſay, it is their Fees, and that it belongs of right unto them, and this they ſo openly and impudently maintain, as if they had the Kings Letters Patents to ſhow for it.

There was never yet any Kitchin-boy ſo fooliſh, or ſo unlucky, but that he would make a ſhift to meet with the giblets of your Geeſe, your Hens, and your Capons, with the hocks of a Gammon of Bacon, your flaps, Kidneys, and fat of the ſhoulders and loyns of Mutton, your Pigs-pettitoes, your Calves feet, Livers, Giſards, Sweet-breeds, Sauces, Spices, Snow, Wine, Sugar, Oyl, Hony, Candles, Coles, and Wood, not ſparing the very Aſhes, nor any thing elſe, (were it Vinegar, Muſtard, Annis-ſeed, Carrowayes,) from that which was moſt neceſſary, even to thoſe of ſmalleſt moment, which are dayly ſpent in a great mans houſe.

When I came thither firſt, I confeſſe, there was no man would truſt me farther than he ſaw me, they had no great confidence of me; but by little and little, I got into credit by degrees, firſt pleaſing this man, then contenting that man, and in fine, being willing to ſerve them all, in all that I was able: for he muſt have a care to pleaſe all, that will have all men to pleaſure him. To gain friends, is a putting forth of money to intereſt, and the ſowing of ſeed in a fruitfull ſoyl. A man ought to venture his life, for the keeping of a friend, and the ſpending of his wealth, for the un-procuring of a enemy. For ſuch a one is a Sentinel, that ſees with a hundred eyes; he is like a Dragon that ſtands upon the Tower of his malice, to look into our actions from afar, and to watch us a miſchief, if we do amiſſe. It importeth much, not to have an enemy, and he that hath, let him carry himſelf ſo towards him, as though he were by and by ready to become his friend.

Wouldſt thou know who this is? Behold his name, and thou ſhalt finde him to be all one with the Devil, our mortal enemy, and both of them to be one, and the ſelf-ſame thing. Do thou ſow good works, and thou ſhalt reap the fruit of them. For the firſt (whoſoever he were) that did a benefit, wrought chains therewith to impriſon noble ſpirits, and to binde their hearts unto him in the bonds of love. In thoſe things, wherein I might put my ſelf forward, I was never ſlothfull; I did never give way to any juſt complaints to come againſt me; nor was I ever given to faction, or to the raiſing of calumnies and evil reports upon any; I did abhorre all colours of this nature, and above all, your ſcandalous and offenſive perſons, whom we properly compare unto Sponges, who what they ſuck in one place, have it wrung from them in another, if they do not drop it out of themſelves, which is too uſual with them. Such men as theſe, ſee thou truſt them not, ſhun their fellowſhip, abhorre their company, though thou wert ſure to get by them. For in the end, thou ſhalt ſit down with loſſe, and ſhame enough.

A private houſe cannot ſuffer a greater calamity; nor a Common-wealth a more contagious peſtilence, than theſe make-bates, theſe ſowers of diſcord, theſe Court-chamblets, that are ſprinkled over with holy water, whoſe gloſſe of words makes a very fair ſhew, but under that print (which is quickly gone) lies the Devil, and his foul deeds.

It was evermore my chief ſtudy, to have peace with all men, becauſe it is the daughter of *Humility*; And the humble minded man, that loveth peace, loveth, and is beloved of the Author thereof which is God: If ill company had not done me harm, I had begun well, and gone on better; I had wherewithall to eat, to drink, to laugh, and to be merry, and might have paſſed this carreer, of my life with a great deal of content. Many times (when I had ended my buſineſſe) I would take a nap in the ſweetneſſe of that Sun,

which ſhew'd it ſelf after dinner, and ſometimes I made my ſleeps by Moon-ſhine, remaining in the view of that fair light until the morning.

But when there was nothing to be done at home, your Lackeys and Pages of the Court, being a company of Crack-ropes and notable Wags, would make me free of the Frying-pan, fright me with Snakes, hang on my back, and weigh me down, crying, More ſacks to the Mill; If by chance they found me aſleep, then would they clap a Flie made of Wax upon the inſtep of my ſhoe, and letting it burn there, till ſhoe and skin were both ſcorched, and when I began to ſtir and ſtretch, then would their knavery break forth, and cry, Fire, fire, fire. Other-while they would roll up a Carde, or a piece of paper, Tunnel-wiſe, and then ſetting it a fire; (blowing out the flame,) they would put it directly under my noſe, till the pillars of ſmoke that aſcended to my noſtrils, had not onely awak'd me, but almoſt choakt me. I remember they us'd me ſo once in this manner, that I knew not in the world where I was, whether ſleeping, waking, ſtanding, or ſitting; I was even mad, I had loſt my wits amongſt them; and had I not been held faſt, I had faln againſt one of the corner ſtones of the houſe, and daſht out my brains in a thouſand pieces: yet I took all patiently, never opened my mouth againſt them, pocketting theſe and many other the like wrongs, which I paſſed over.

All which I did, that by correcting my ſelf, I might conſerve my ſelf: chooſing rather to kill my choler, than choler ſhould kill me. *Que el que todo lo quiere Vengar, preſto quiere acabar.* He that will revenge all wrongs, ſhall ſooner end himſelf, than them. *Larga ſe deveder a mucho, ſi no ſe quiere vivir poco.* The man that would live long, muſt not be too ſhort. This cuttedneſſe, hath cut off many a mans life before his time. But by ſlighting of injuries, and letting them quietly go by, he that does them, grows in the end both weary, and aſhamed; Whereas if thou ſhouldſt reſent them, and take them to heart, they would never leave perſecuting thee, but be vexing thee ſtill more and more. For mine own part, if I ſhould have complain'd of theſe Wags, or but made any ſtir in the buſineſſe, I am ſure they would have made an Anatomy of me. I (poor Scullion) muſt have turned *Skelliton*; There had been no other way with me. Sometimes, to make trial of me, they would lay baits for me, putting money in ſome ſuch place, where I could not chuſe but finde it; and then would they watch me, to ſee, whether I were light-finger'd, or no, and had the art of taking up, and were in the number of thoſe that ſtill take up, and ne're lay down. But becauſe I knew their meaning, and had found out the trick, that they would fain put upon me; I ſaid with my ſelf, It will not ſerve your turn, *A otro perro, con eſſe hueſſo*; I am too crafty a Curre, to be taken with this bone; you muſt throw it out to ſome other Dogge, you ſhall do no good with it on me: you have miſt your mark (my Maſters) you have lept a little too ſhort, you ſhall not go beyond me, nor ſhall you make your ſelves merry with my miſeries, nor make merchandize of my credit, nor furniſh your *Almoneda* with my infamies. Therefore it ſhould reſt there for me, till he that had laid it there, ſhould come himſelf and fetch it away. Still having an eye, that another ſhould not take it thence, leſt afterwards it might be ſaid, I was the man that did it.

Otherwhiles I would take it up my ſelf, and come and bring it to my Maſter, and give it him; having alwayes a great care to keep my wounds clean, and like a good Fencer, to come fairly off, without the leaſt Veny, or touch in the world: For to give another man a cut in the Legge, or a ſlaſh on the Arm, and to receive a home-thruſt, and full *Stocada* in his own boſom, ſhews himſelf to be but a fool in his Science. I filcht and ſtole whatſoever came in my way, but ſtill carried it ſo cunningly, that no man could have cauſe to ſuſpect me.

For thoſe things that appertained to my charge, I was wonderfull prompt and diligent, albeit my Maſter had been careleſſe in willing me to do this, or that; And when there was any work to be done, I never ſtood looking, when my Maſter would bid me go about it, I would ſave him that labour. I was the formoſt of all my fellows, when birds were brought in, to fall to plucking off their feathers; to ſcowre the ſpits, to make clean the Veſſel, to ſweep the houſe, to make and blow the fire, without ſaying to another, Do it you. For I did conſider with my ſelf; that ſeeing I was not to take my pleaſure, or to ſtand like a Loyterer, with my thumbs under my girdle; one was as much trouble to me as the other; And me thought it was a fine kinde of deceiving of the time; to do that by fair means, which I muſt otherwiſe have done perforce. And this made indifferent (ſo as I were a doing) whether it were this work, or that work, all was one to me, ſince firſt, or laſt, it muſt be done by one of us.

I did evermore do my uttermoſt endeavour, as far as my ability and knowledge would

leade me, reſerving alwayes the *Decorum* due to my office. I was ever in action; I had ſcarce made an end of pulling my Birds, but I preſently runne me to the Morter, and fall a pounding of Sawces, ſome for my Boyl'd meates, ſome for my Roaſt, all my Iron Utenſils about the Kitchin, as Spits, Andirons, Tongs, Fire-ſhovell, Pot-hooks, and the like, I kept ſo neat and ſo clear, that they lookt like ſo many Sword-blades, whereon the Cutlers hand had ſet a delicate glaſſe; my Pots and my Pans, why you might have wiped them with a Cloak of Velvet; my Skimmers, my Ladles, and my Fleſh-hooks, were (like Barbers Looking-glaſſes) curiouſly kept in their Caſes, and hung up upon ſeverall Nailes, as all things elſe that were of uſe, had their peculiar places appointed for them, that they might be ready ſtill at hand, when need ſhould ſerve, without being driven to ſeek for one thing in one corner, and another in another, bearing ſtill in my minde, how and where I had placed them.

In a word, every thing had its deputed place, with much diligence, and very good order. At my ſpare hours, when I had nothing to do (which were likely in the Evening,) for then I was uſually at leiſure, the Officers of the houſe would give me their Vailes, that I might go abroad and ſell them for them. I went with them to the Gate that belongs to the Shambles, which was our ſet place for that buſineſſe, whither came ſuch to buy as had need thereof: ſometimes that which I brought was good: ſometimes ſo ſo, and at other times ſtinking and ſtark naught. And all did ariſe out of that, which they call *Provechos y Derechos*, Fees and Duties, which is two out of every ten: a great deal better paiment I am ſure, than that of the *Almoxarifaſgo* of *Sevilla*; ſeldome or never were wanting unto us the *Menudillus* or entrals of your Birds, the mammocks of Veal, Partriges and Hens, which were ſpoiled or loſt in the ſpitting or the roaſting, or had clung in the boyling to the Pots-ſide, or fallen in ſunder by being over-ſod, in the ſtripping and uncaſing of Rabbets and Conies, and the Lard beſtowed upon them, being bordered about, and imbroydered as it were with Bacon, like unto one of your Gabardines of *Syago*, ſcarce leaving ſo much white as the bredth of my naile, through which their larding-Needles had not paſt. There were ſome other commodities, which being kept too long, before they came to be ſold, began to ſtinke; theſe they had a trick to diſguiſe in that handſom manner, that they ſhould ſeem to be freſh and ſweet. Every one did ſet forth his owne ware as well as he could. I ſold likewiſe Neats-tongues, Hogs-cheeks, powdered peſſels of Porke, Engliſh Paſties of Veniſon, and peeces of Bacon, three fingers thick of fat. Behold, what undue duties, what unprofitable profits, and what hurtfull and ungainfull gains theſe were, things able to undoe a Noble man, to make him waſte his Wealth, morgage his Lands, and ſell his Vaſſals.

I pitty ye (poor Lords, ye Gentlemen that keep good Houſes) who either cannot or know not, nor (to ſpeak truely) will not conſume this Locuſt, this Caterpiller by deſtroying ſo harmfull a moth. And thrice unhappy they, who for oſtentations ſake, will offer to throw the Barre, with thoſe that are able to out-fling them, and ſtrive in a bravery to over-doe their ſtrength, which may cauſe a ſprain, if not a rupture in their eſtates.

The Porter, as well as the Trades-man; the Trades-man, as the Merchant; the Merchant, as the Gentleman; the Gentleman, as the Knight, the Knight, as a *Grande*, and the *Grande*, as a King; all deſire to be inthroned and to out-ſtrip one another, by living above their compaſſe, and ſpending beyond their meanes. But in troth, the office of a King, that is no good place, there is no ſport in it, no mirth, no jollity. For a King never ſleepeth ſo ſoundly nor reſteth ſo quietly as the poor Porter doth; neither doth he eate his meat with that merry heart, and free from all care, as doth the Trades-man. The care of one crown afflicts him more, than that of many doth the Merchant. He is troubled more in making proviſion for his Armies, than a Gentleman in preparing his Armies: Nor is there any Knight or *Titulado* ſo much impawned, or ſo deeply in debt, but that his King is much more: Nor any *Grande* ſo great, but that the troubles and griefs which attend a King, are farre greater. He muſt keep watch and ward, when others ſecurely ſleep. His eyes (like your ſhops on worky-dayes) muſt be ſtill open, that thoſe of his Subjects may be ſhut up, and keep Holy-day. And therefore the Ægyptians, when they would Hierogliſſe a King, and by ſome myſticall Cyphers, expreſſe his vigilancie; they did put a Scepter in his hand, with an eye on the top of it. He travels hard when all other take their eaſe and laugh; for he is both Coach, and Coachman. He ſighs, and groans, when others ſport and play; yet few are they, that take pitty of him, or are ſenſible of his ſorrowes, unleſſe it be for their own private intereſt. Whereas indeed, only for his own ſake, and for the generall care that he hath of all, he ought of all to be both loved, feared, and reſpected.

Few informe him of the truth, for fear of drawing hatred upon themſelves: Few, if he be

in an errour will ſeek to put him out of it, and they know well enough, why, and wherefore they let him alone, and ſuffer him to go on in it; and ſo do we too: Onely forſooth to put themſelves forward, and that they may come to mount and ſoar the higher, and the ſooner, though it be with waxen wings, and muſt in the end, like *Icarus*, come tumbling down, and fall into the Sea, where they and their fortunes are to ſink for ever, never to be ſeen more.

But what do I talk of their tranſcendencies? I divine nothing. They are things out of my element, and therefore I will let them alone. It is mens fooliſhneſſe and their want of judgement and diſcretion (as I told you before) that leades them thus along (deceived with theſe vanities) to their deſtruction: and of all other, moſt miſerable are your great Lords, and other Noble Gentlemen, who ſpending where they need not, fall into need themſelves. For even ſmall and ſlight expences, uſed often and too abundantly, conſume the ſubſtance, their feathers begin to fail them, they fall away by one and by one: here loſe a principall, there a parcell, and ſo in the reſt: ſo that (having never a ſound feather left, neither in wing, or traine, wherewith to maintaine their flight: they are called *Pelones*, or *Pelados*, Peel'd Gentlemen, that have had their Plumes pluckt, Whereupon they are forced to retire themſelves home into the Country, to live upon ſome poor Farme or other, where they muſt ſpend their time in breeding of Cattell, as Pigs, Hens, and Chickens, and the like, reckoning the Egges that are daily laid, making account thereof, as of their chiefeſt living.

Hence therefore I ſet down this as a ruled caſe; That if a rich man will govern himſelf, he ſhall never be poor. And if a poor man will be thriving, he ſhall quickly be rich. Both of them applying themſelves in all things, according to the time, and as they ſee occaſion. For it is not alwayes fit for a Gentleman to ſave; nor for a poor man to ſpend. There are entertainments to be had, but ſuch as are rather to be had for entertainement than undoing.

Upon occaſion, every man ought to ſhew himſelf, like himſelf, according to the means that God hath given him. For to this end hath he beſtowed theſe his bleſſings upon him. But not that all men ſhould walk cheek by joul, foot by foot, ſide by ſide one with another, as if they were all fellowes and no difference of Eſtates, or Perſons.

If a Noble man ſhall be a great ſpender, let a meaner Gentleman hold his hand, and let him not be-foole himſelf to think, that he can do as much with three, as the other with thirty. He doth not conſider that theſe are abortive births; and things that are out of their naturall courſe: whereby he becomes, a by-word, and laughing ſtock among the people: and his wealth being waſted, turnes begger, and mewes himſelf up in a corner, and dares not be ſeen. That man doth not underſtand, (who is not of good ability) that he does ill, to ſeeme to be a cock, before he be out of the ſhell, and to ſtretch out his throat, as if he would over-crow all the World. If he be a Raven, and can but croke at the beſt, why will he offer to ſing and put forth his voyce? Or why, when ſome Flatterer ſhall tell him that he hath an excellent aire, and ſings exceeding ſweetly, doth he not perceive that he only commends him, to make him (as it is in the Fable) let fall his Cheeſe, and then laugh at him when he ha's done? The ſelf-ſame Leſſon I read to all, that every man would learne to know himſelf: let him try the temper of his Steel, and let him not go about to fyle iron with a fyle of wood, leſt he finde it loſt labour. And when he hears a man murmure at another, let him ſhut the door, leſt another may murmure at him.

It is fit, that we ſhould all ſleep upon one foot (as the Crane doth) when our wealth, (which is the life of this world) lyes upon it: caſting about (now that all is gone) how we may do, that we may not be driven to ſteal. For to let things run to waſte, is not liberalitie, but looſeneſs. And with that, which thy Caterer, thy Cook, and thy *Deſpenſero*, ſhall ſteal from thee, and never thank thee, (for theſe are your only three Cheaters,) thou maiſt reward half a doozen of the other Servants.

But I ſpeak no more of their theft, than others waſte; for they will all ſteal, all filch (ne're a barrell better Herring) look what is under their charge, they will be ſure to nimme ſomewhat out of it. One a little, and another a little: and many a little makes a mickle. So that what with a little, and what with a mickle, it mounts to ſo much in the end, and makes ſuch a deep hole in thy maine eſtate, that thou art much maymed by it; if not wholly ſwallowed up and utterly ſunk.

And here I muſt not ſtick to tell the Maſters themſelves, That a great part of this fault is theirs, for that Servants wages (uſually) are too ſhort, and ill paid. For, if they be ſerved by men, that are in neceſſity, and conſtrained by want, they ſhall finde few of them faithfull. Thou wilt not ſtick ſometimes in an humour, to play away at one caſt, all thy whole years Revenues.

Revenues. This is naught, give it over. Pay thy ſervants well, uſe them with courteſie, and ſpeake kindly unto them; for the rewarding and recompencing of ſervices, makes the Maſter to be eſteemed, and reſpected, according to his worth and quality, and incourageth the poor ſervant, (by requiting him for his paines,) to ſerve him the better, and with the more alacrity. There are ſome Maſters, that will not beſtow a Royall on the beſt ſervant they have, thinking it enough, that they have onely their bare wages, and that in giving them that and their dyet, they are very well paid.

No (my Maſters) this may not ſerve your turne, it ſtands not with reaſon to do no more: for this is but their due, and deſerves but little or no thanks at all. But by giving that wich is not their due, thou bindeſt them to do more than their due, and winneſt them to ſerve thee with the greater love. Whereas, if thou (being a Maſter) ſhalt not enlarge thy hand, and be better unto him, than the bare bargaine that is driven between yee, it is no great marvell, if thy ſervant hold back, and ſtep not a foot farther than thoſe bounds, whereunto his Covenant binds him:

As it hapened to a cowardly Gentleman, who (preſuming too much on his wealth, and the greatneſſe of his means) fell at oddes with another Gentleman that was very valiant; and finding himſelf farre inferiour unto him, both in ſtrength and in courage, was willing to entertain a proper young fellow, of good metall, and approved valour, to wait upon his perſon.

Now it hapned, that this Enemy ſetting one day upon him, this his ſervant drew in his defence, and behaved himſelf ſo well, that he made his adverſary retire with diſhonour, and held him play ſo long till his Maſter was quite out of danger.

In this fray, the Young man loſt his Cloak, and the Scabbard of his Sword. When all was paſt, and this fray (whereof I told you) fully ended, my honeſt Serving-man gets him home, but his unthankfull Maſter did neither make good this his loſſe, nor return him any requitall in the World. It was this Gentlemans hap afterwards, to meet with his Maſter againe, and having a good cudgell in his hand, he affronted him, and gave him the Baſtanado upon the former quarrell: his ſervant all the while ſtood ſtill and was content to be a looker on, while the other did beat him. His Maſter cried out unto him, that he ſhould come in and help him. Your *Worſhip* (quoth his man) did agree with me to pay me my wages Monethly, and I did covenant with you, to wait upon you for it.

And for ought I know, neither of us both are bound to any more. So that if thou mindeſt that they ſhould ſtrain themſelves for thee, and do thoſe things, that may advance thy ſervice; with that which thou ſo diſſolutely loſeſt, and vainly and idely throweſt away, gaine their good-wils, and thou ſhalt gaine this thereby, that they will not rob thee of thy wealth; that they will defend thy Perſon, illuſtrate thy Fame, and deſire thy life. O how often have I ſeen them carry away, and carried away my ſelf, whole Tarts of *Manjar Blancho*, Pigs, Pidgeons, Stock-doves, Cheeſes of a hundred ſundry ſorts, and other infinite things to ſell, which are too tedious to relate, and I fear me, both time and memory would fail me, if I ſhould go about to recount them unto thee! Onely I will tell thee that theſe diſorders, being a generall diſeaſe, whereof all of them were ſick, infected me alſo, and made me become as bad as the beſt of them. I lived amongſt a company of Wolves, and I learned of them to howle, and devour Lambs, as they did. I was a reaſonable good Scholer for my time, albeit in a different kinde of learning, but at laſt, I loſt all fear: I had learned now to ſwimme without Bladders; I was fluſh enough now to forſake their neſt; all did game and ſwear, all did ſteal and lurch, and I did, as I ſaw others do before me. From ſmall beginnings, great matters ariſe.

I began (as I told you before) to play a little, to lurch a little, and to ſteal a little; But at length, I began to inlarge my ſtrides like little children, when they have been taught a while to go alone. I was now perfect in my pace, and had the trick to take one in the hundred I no more held it ill (to ſuch paſſe was my innocencie come) but as a thing lawfull, and to be permitted. I bought therewith ſome few neceſſaries, that I ſtood in need of; the reſt I threw away at play; for in my gaming, I alwayes made choiſe of thoſe games that were moſt vertuous, either in Dice, or Cardes, ſuch as were the nimbleſt to rid a man of his money, that I might make an end of it quickly, and get me home to execute mine Offices.

I once remember, that conteſting about a chance with other young Lads about my pitch, we were ſo loud, in one of the Courts of the houſe where we plaid, that with the noiſe thereof, you would have thought, the whole houſe would have falne down about our eares. Our Maſter ſpake to the Uſher of the Hall, that he would go ſee what the matter was; who found

us together by the ears, which made the fault the greater. And (exceeding his Commiſſion) he baſted our ſhoulders with Cudgell-deaw, making the duſt flie out of our Coates, till he had beaten our bodies all black and blue; The marks whereof appeared afterwards, when we came to put off our Shirts; which likewiſe occaſioned the loſſe of my credit amongſt them; For, from that time forward they had an eye ſtill over me; and lookt a little more narrowly into my water. And this was it, that gave the firſt beginning to my utter undoing, as by and by I ſhall more plainly deliver unto you.

## Chapter VI.

Guzman de Alfarache *proſecutes that which paſt betwixt him and his Maſter, till being diſmiſt, he departed from him: And takes occaſion hereupon, to condemne Idleneſſe and evill Company, and thoſe inveterated vices in rich men. He reçounteth the ſpoiles, and* Trophies *of Cooks; and tells a merry Story, that paſt between himſelf, and the Cooks wife, his Miſtreſſe.*



That man is much to be commended, who knows to gain by his labours: But much more ought he to be eſteemed, who by his vertue knows how to keep that which he hath gotten. I did ſtrive all I could to pleaſe every body, albeit the ill cuſtome of my former lewd life, did now and then lead me awry; ſo that whatſoever I did, was like forced earth, that fell in ſhort time to it's old levell, and being all but counterfeit ſtuffe, were but Apiſh imitations, contrary to mine own nature, and that bent, whereunto I had been uſed. For that Glory that is falſely gotten, indureth but a while, it is not permanent, but quickly paſſeth away; I was like unto a drop of Oyle that falls upon a garment, which *Si freſca no parace, brevemente ſe deſcubre y crece*; If it be not preſently perceived, and taken off in time, diſcovers it ſelf, and goes increaſing. Now, they would no longer truſt me. One would call me, *Cadacillo nuevo*, the new little Sive, or the youth of three dayes ſtanding; For as your new married Wives, that buy a little Sive to ſtrain their Wine, or any other liquor, for ſome few dayes, are very carefull of it, hang it up upon a Naile, or ſome woodden Pin, but anon after, think no more of it, and let it lie tumbling on the ground; ſo is it with your new ſervants: you ſhall have them at the firſt very diligent and carefull, and like new Brooms, ſweep all cleane, but after a while they grow negligent and lazie, and are weary of well doing. Another would call me *La Gata de Venus*, one of *Venus* Cats; A crafty knave from the Cradle. But they were all deceived; For I was naturally good, and in mine own diſpoſition, I neither had read nor knew ſo much; but I depraved this good nature of mine, and I did ill diſpoſe of it. Vice and want altred this my good inclination, and made me otherwiſe than I would have been. And what knavery I had in me, I learnt it of the Officers there, and the other ſervants of the houſe. And theſe are they that I muſt thank; for they were the onely men that brought me to it? I was but courſe Sugar till they refin'd me.

There are ſome happy theeves, that come to be old men before they die; others are ſo unlucky, that for the very firſt robbery, that ever they committed, have been taken in the manner, and preſently hanged, without any more adoe. That which in others was but a veniall, was in me a mortall ſin. And it was fit it ſhould be ſo, becauſe I did degenerate from what I was, by doing that which I ought not to have done. I did undoe my ſelf by ill company; which is Vices Ladder, Vertues Hangman; the Wine that makes drunke; the Smoke that choaketh; the Sorcereſſe that bewitcheth; Marchs Sunſhine, a deaf Adder, and an intiſing Syrene.

When I firſt began to ſerve, I applied my ſelf to my work, and ſought to pleaſe; but afterwards, my ill-acquaintance (bad friends as they were) did ſweetly undoe me. Idleneſſe was a great help thereunto, if not the ſole cauſe of all my hurt. For, as unto him that is well occupied, no Vertue is wanting; ſo unto him that is idle, there is no Vice, which is not his Companion. Idleneſſe is the high way to deſtruction; it is that ſpacious field, that opens to perdition; it is that Plough, wherewith bad thoughts are ſown; It is the ſeed of Tares, caſt into the ground; it is that Woman-weeder that plucks up goodneſs by the roots; It is that Sickle that cuts down all our good works; It is that Flaile, which threſheth all honour out of us: It is that Cart, which comes loaden home with miſchief; and it is that Barn, wherein all the

the Vices in the world are mowed, and ſtored up. Mine eye was not ſet upon my ſelf, but on others; and look what I ſaw them do, (that me thought) was likewiſe lawfull for me: Nor conſidering, that becauſe they were in places of credit, (that were able to bear them out) and being old-beaten ſouldiers in all manner of theeveries, it might become them well enough to do as they did; for by this means, they were to make themſelves a Fortune, and to this end only do they ſeek to ſerve good Maſters. I was willing to be one of the number, and would fain rank my ſelf amongſt them, by doing as they did, being no way their equall, but a poor *Picaro*, a rag taild Rogue, out both of cloths and credit.

But if excuſes may prevail, and that I may ſay ſomething for my ſelf; When I ſaw that every man walkt ſo freely this way, without check or controule; it ſeemed to me to be the land of *Permiſſion*; and that I might paſſe up and down there as well as they: Being perſwaded, (as I told you before) that it was a work of Vertue, a very good deed, and very juſtifiable, howbeit afterwards I was beaten from that errour: My thought, though, was good, but my underſtanding was amiſſe: For the grace and favour of this *Bull*, did in eſpeciall words grant the uſe and exerciſe thereof to the elder brothers, that are free of the Incorporation of the rich and Potent; to thoſe that are Favorites to the Proud, to the Arrogant, to Flatterers, to thoſe that are never without Crocodyls tears; to Scorpions, which bite not with the mouth, but ſting with the tail; to ſmooth-tongued Paraſites, who with ſweet words cheriſh the body, but with ſowre works deſtroy the ſoul. Theſe were the men that might do any thing, all was well done that they did; but in ſuch as my ſelf, it was falſhood and roguerie, I was in an errour, and together with this my error, I became ſo diſſolute, and lived ſo diſorderly, that my diſeaſe, even a far off, might eaſily be diſcerned: howbeit all was not worth a ſtraw, as being things not to be reckoned of, or ſcarce worthy the talking of. It is a common ſaying; *Que el poſt rero, que Sabe las deſgracias, es el Marido.* That the good man, is the laſt that knows, what things are amiſſe at home.

Of all theſe my mad pranks, and croſſe fortunes that did befall me, ſcarce one of a thouſand came to my Maſters ears; Either becauſe being willing (as I was) to pleaſe them, and to get their good will, they would not have my Maſter to conceive hardly of me, and ſo put me away; Or elſe, becauſe (though now and then they would chide me, and tell me mine own) ſeeing all the world was like, and that it was every mans Caſe as well as mine; they did not much wonder at it. But for ſome negligence of mine, and other things that were two tranſparant; my Maſter grew ſomewhat angry with me, and ſpurred hard to overtake me. It ſo fell out, that he was one day ſent for to prepare a Feaſt for a certain Prince, that was a ſtranger, newly come to Court, and carried me along with him, that I might tranſplant the Onion; that is, take up all the leavings, Reliquies, Vailes, Profits or Fees, (as the cuſtome is) belonging to his Office.

We were no ſooner come into the Kitchin, but all our proviſion was brought in unto us. My Maſter fell preſently to work; and very nimbly and with a great deal of dexteritie began to chop this, to divide that, and break that other thing aſunder, putting ſomething apart by themſelves, others (eſpecially if they were all of a ſort) he heaped up all together, taking the like order in all the reſt of thoſe things that appertained unto him (as a lawfull taxe and due tribute, payable to his place) leſt he might, (being buſied about many other things) forget his own right, and confuſedly intermixe one thing with another, it being meet and juſt, to give unto *Ceſar*, that which is *Ceſars*, and that every man ſhould take poſſeſſion of his own, and quietly injoy what of right belonged unto him.

Now about the ſhutting in of the evening, when it began to be dark, my Maſter willed me to bring the Sacks. I brought them, and fell to filling; which (being well practiſed therein) I pack'd up every thing that was there, very handſomely, and very ſpeedily. And clapping them on my ſhoulder at ſuch a time, and in ſuch a manner, that I might not be ſeen, he made me make four returnes, in which journying to and fro, I could hardly fetch my breath, ſo heavily was I laden. All and every one of them ſeemed to me, to be like unto *Noahs* Arke. And I do uot know whether in it, there were ſo many individuall and ſeverall *Species*, or whether God did afterwards create them? Now, when I had made an end of this buſineſs, he willed me to make a fire, to hang over the Kettles, ſee the water ſeethe, pull Fowle, ſcald the Chickens, findge the Capons, ſcorch the Patridge; in which and the like I beſtowed a great part of that night. My maſters Cake (good man) did not bake half currantly, the byas did not run the right way, he was ſhrewdly out of tune, and much diſquieted in his minde; it ſtill running in his head, that his Wife was all alone; and that ſhe could not either well order ſuch a deal of wealth as he had ſent her in; or that haply ſome unexpected ſtorme might befall him in his abſence.

Here-

Hereupon whilſt his thoughts were thus troubled, he calls me unto him, and ſayes unto me; *Guzmanillo*, I pray thee hie thee home, and have a care to that which thou carrieſt hence, ſee that all be ſafe, nothing loſt, open thine eyes and look about thee. Tell thy Miſtreſſe that I ſtay here; have a care to the houſe, and as ſoone as it is day haſten again unto me. I did ſo: I deliver my meſſage to my Miſtreſſe. I call for Pinnes, and Pack-thread, I placed them up above in a Gallery, where they hung in a freſh and open aire. There did I fyle upon ſtrings the Trophies of that victory. It was a glorious and goodly ſight to ſee the ſeverall plumage, and diverſe coloured feathers of Capons, Patridges, Turtles, Hennes, Peacocks, Thruſhes, Veldefares, Pidgeons, Quailes, Chickens, Doves, and Geeſe. And taking forth from amidſt all theſe the Conies heads, they lookt as if they had come peeping out of their berries. I hung in another part of the Gallery Gammons of Bacon, joynts of Veal, Red Deer, wilde Bore, Mutton, Neats-tongues, Pigs, and Kids.

Thus all the Gallery was hung round with this kind of tapeſtry, upon very good Nailes and ſtrong Pins, that I had put up for that purpoſe. So that I aſſure thee by the faith of an honeſt man, according to that fair ſhow that it made there, I had brought home two parts of five: nor was this conqueſt yet fully ended, for there were yet wanting thoſe ſeaven *Infants de Lara*, to make the feaſt compleat. All the reſt was very well fitted, and I very weary, for I had wrought very hard, though little notice was taken of it, and my requitall leſſe.

My Miſtreſs lodged in a lower room, who like an idle Drone, left all the burthen on my ſhoulders, and got her to bed. It ſeemed ſhe had ſupped upon ſalt meats, for ſhe had her fore-head full charged, which was no new thing with her. I, when I had made an end of work, did the like, and went to bed. But the weather was ſo hot, that for a good while I lay ſcratching, and toſſing too and fro, till at laſt, (though ſome-what I confeſſe againſt my will) I let looſe the reines, that I might go ſoftly onward on my way to ſleep. In the end I fell a galloping, that I might quicklier come to my journeys end, and take my reſt. And lapping my ſelf in my Blanket, which God knows was a ſorry one, (for in that Countrey, they do not uſe to allow Sheets, nor any more ſave an old Straw-bed, to ſuch poor boyes as my ſelf) I was very carefull to riſe betimes, according as my Maſter had commanded me. When behold, (God bleſſe me) about three of the Clock in the morning (it being then the time between the two Lights) when it was neither night nor day, I heard beneath in the Court a cruell Skirmiſh among the Cats, which were making of a banquet upon a piece of *Poor Iohn*, a dry kinde of Fiſh, which they had drawn out by chance through the Tyles of one of our neighbours houſes.

And for that they are naturally of an ill condition (nor ſhall you ever know, when they are contented, no more than ye ſhall, when old men are well pleaſed) you ſhall never ſee them eate their meat quietly, and without noiſe, but ſtill purring and growling, though they have never ſo much. Whether it were that their Fiſh was good, and ſo lik't it too well: or whether it were over-ſalted, and ſo made them angry, or what a Divell the matter was, that they differed about, I know not: but ſure I am, that with the noiſe of this their Warre, they did awake me, and made me to liſten after them, ſaying with my ſelf, Sure the Divell is in it, his hand is in this buſineſs, if the quarell that was riſen amongſt theſe honeſt Cats ſhould fall upon the true mans Cloak, and make him ſmart for't, that is not in fault: and ſhould quartell now at this houre, in ſo unſeaſonable a time, about the portion of my goods, and then my bones to pay for the meat that they ſhould eate, making my Maſter thereby to mis-doubt my care, and ſo breed a difference between us.

I lay in my bed, as naked as ever I was when I firſt came from my Mothers womb: I did not think that any body ſhould have ſeen me; I ſtarted up in a trice; and as if the *Moores* had been come to have carried away all my kindred Captives, and this diligence of mine would have ſerved to ſet them free. I bye me with all the haſte I can, and come running down the ſtayres amaine, that I might be there in time, and might prevent that miſchief, which is wont to grow, when ſuccours are too ſlow.

In a buſineſs of that importance, I thought all delayes were dangerous. My Miſtreſs as ſhe was gone to bed before me, ſo ſhe had got up before me. Which ſhe might the better do, becauſe ſhe had nothing to trouble her head, and had taken four ſound ſleeps, was lapt up warm like the Silk-worm, ſo that ſhe had not more to do, but to rub her eyes, and ariſe. She She heard this ſtirre as well as I, and thought perhaps with herſelf (as very well ſhe might) that I was faſt aſleep, and did not hear the noiſe. She, though ſhe went to bed in her ſmock, yet as her faſhion was, ſhe would put it off before ſhe ſlept, and lye all night ſtark-naked; and ſo was ſhe now, having not ſo much upon her to cover her naked-

neſſe,

neſſe, as the inheritance of her Grandam *Eve*, neither Smock, nor any other covering in the world.

And thus ſtark naked as ever ſhe was borne, forgetting through her haſte, to clap any thing upon her body, ſhe came running down like one out of her wits, with a light in her hand, to ſave her goods. Her thought and mine jumpt both alike; the broile equall: the diligence, in *cauſa propria*, in a buſineſs that did neerly concern us both; and the noiſe on either ſide but little, for we both came thither bare-foot.

Now (if it will pleaſe you to behold us) we both of us meet in the Gallery, ſhe, ſtrucken with wonder, to ſee me there; and I almoſt frighted out of my wits, in looking on her. She ſuſpected that I was ſome *Phantaſma*, ſome Hob-goblin, or wandring Ghoſt, and letting the light fall out of her hand for fear, ſhe gave withall a great ſchrich. And I, that was affrighted as much with ſo ſtrange and foul an Apparition, and ſeeing her to make towards me with a Candle in her hand, I gave a greater ſchrich than ſhe, thinking it had been the ſoul of the Steward of our houſe, who dyed but ſome two dayes before, and that he was come thither to levell his accounts with my Maſter. She ſchricht out ſo lowd on the one ſide, that the neighbours might hear her all over the ſtreet, and mine was ſo ſhrill, that they might almoſt have bin heard all over the Town. She fled as faſt as ſhe could drive to her Chamber, as if the Devill had been at the tayle of her; I ſtrove to make as much haſt to mine; the Cats they began to fly, and as glad as we to be gone. But to ſee the ill luck of it, upon the very fuſt ſtayre as I was going up, I ſtumbled upon the Cat of the houſe, and treading upon her in the dark, ſhe ſcracht me by the legges with her nayles: then did I verily think with my ſelf, that ſome Ghoſt or other followed me at the heels, and was come to carry me away, and that he was now catching at my ſoul, and ready to tear it out of my body: wherewith being ſcared, I fell and brake my ſhins againſt the ſtayrs, having grated off the skinne even almoſt to bone, nor did my noſe ſcape free, that was broken as well as the reſt. Neither of us two could underſtand, or certainly ſuſpect, who the other ſhould be, all did ſucceed ſo in an inſtant, and were both called out at the ſound of one and the ſame Bell; till that I having falne on the ground, and ſhe having hid herſelf between her ſheets, we began to know one another by the lamentation and mourning that we made. With this fright that ſhe had taken (if the freſhneſſe of the mourning did not occaſion it) my Miſtris retentive faculty had ſhrewdly fayled her, and the lock of her belly being looſe, and the bolts of her breech none of the faſteſt, her poſtern door flew wide open, and before ſhe could recover her Chamber, ſtirted the excrements of her intrailes part in the Portall, and part in the open Court, that Whitepot of hers being ſtuck full of Cherry-ſtones, which it ſhould ſeem ſhe had ſwallowed down whole. I was a good while ere I could make all clean, I ſwept it, and waſht it, and did all that I could to make all handſome again, for the keeping clean of the houſe did properly belong to my charge, as a thing wholly committed to my care.

Then did I begin to know that the Ordure and the filthy ſavour of ſuch accidentall Stools, as theſe, do ſtink more and worſe by farre than thoſe that are naturall and ordinary with us. But the cauſe and reaſon thereof, I leave it to the Philoſophers to ſeek it out: It ſufficeth, that it coſt me a great deal of labour, to the detriment of my ſmelling faculty, and the great annoyance of my Noſe: and this I dare be bold to make good unto you out of mine own experience.

My Miſtris was much aſhamed of this foul accident, and I more: for albeit I did write man, yet I was but a young Lad to ſpeak of, and a meer Child in the knowledge of theſe things; I was as modeſt as any Maid of them all, and as tender ſtomack'd; and had I been more than I was, I ſhould have been aſhamed for her ſhame, and have bluſht, if not for mine own, yet for her ſake. It did grieve me very much, that I had ſeen her in this manner, as I have told you; for as I live, I would not willingly for all the world have lighted upon ſuch an uncouth caſualty as this was: But (do all that I could) ſhe could never be perſwaded, but it was my knavery, and my roguery, and that I did it of purpoſe, nor all the oaths that *I* uſed unto her, could make her to alter her minde, reduce her to reaſon, make her capable how and by what means this hapned, or give her any the leaſt aſſurance of my innocencie.

From that day forward, *I* utterly loſt her good-will; and *I* knew ſo much afterwards by a neighbour of hers; whom ſhe acquainted with all that had hapned. For that which did trouble her moſt, and did even vexe her to the heart, was, not for my finding of her naked, and un-array'd, but becauſe ſhe had betrayed herſelf. As for all the reſt ſhe did not care a Pin: for moſt women deſire nothing more, eſpecially thoſe that have a good opinion of them-

ſelves, have conſulted with the clearneſſe of their Skinnes, and are privy to their own perfections.

When I ſaw that nothing would ſerve the turn, and that neither perſwaſions, nor proteſtations would perſwade with her; I took it for an ill ſigne, and began to think with my ſelf, that ſome falſe witneſs or other would be raiſed up againſt me, to caſt me out of doors, putting her Husband into an evill opinion of me, as if this (poor innocent ſoul as I was) had been meerly my fault. Never did ſhe look ſtraight upon me afterwards; nor ever exchanged word with me good or bad.

When it was broad day, back went I to my Mill again, as *I* was commanded, that *I* might fall there afreſh to my drudgery. But when *I* came to my Maſter, not a word of what had paſt. *I* was Mum-budget, and durſt not open my lips to him (for my life) in that buſineſs. He askt me whether all thoſe things were ſafe at home? and whether *I* had ſet them handſomely in order? *I* told him, all was well, and well ordered. He imployed me in ſome things. And *I* can aſſure you, that my Maſter and his companions, and *I* and mine, ſuch as were helpers, and wrought there for him, had more adoe, to gather together, and hide what he had ſtolne, than we had in the dreſſing and ſeaſoning of all the reſt of our meats. And how was it poſſible, that it ſhould be otherwiſe, where there was no order taken, no agreement made, no account to be called unto? What did not we call for without controule? what was given us without grudging? what did we not receive with a great deal of glory? how little was ſpent, and how much was ſtolne? Sugar was demanded for our Tarts; and for our Tarts, Sugar. So as we had for every thing twice or thrice over. Theſe kinde of banquets, we termed *Iubilees*; becauſe the waters were Troubled, and there were ſtore of fiſh to be taken. The poyſon was thrown in, and they began to float.

This made me to think, ſeeing (as the common phraſe is) that this was my Goſſips bread, but at other folks coſt; that my fore-teeth were no leſſe able than other mens, to gain this indulgence. For *I* likewiſe had a Soul in my body, as well as the beſt of them; *I* wanted not a jot of any thing, that ſhould make me a man; My Armour was not without its Rivets, to buckle all cloſe. And if *I* had a minde to the Crums that were falne under the Table, (yet ſo, as not to ſeek, to make my ſelf equall to my fellows, or to enter into compariſon with them) it might (me thought) be lawfull for me, to make ſome profit of other mens liberalitie, and though I were no Gameſter, yet *I* might receive *Barato*, as a ſtander by. *I* waxed weary with pulling Fowle, blanching of Almonds, and the kernells of Pine-apples, with providing of ſcalding waters, and other things: *I* had then on at that time, an old Shirt, and a Doublet that was all torne.

Amongſt other things that came to my Maſters ſhare, was a Panniar of Eggs, *I* made thither, and took out a good company of them, ſome few of them *I* clapt in my boſome, betwixt my body and my ſhirt, the reſt *I* thruſt into my Pockets, and the linings of my Breeches. Now you ſee, *I* laid my hand upon that which wrought my wo. But (to ſpeak the truth) *I* did not do this ſo much for mine own private intereſt, but that *I* might ſay another day (if *I* liſt) that *I* kiſt the Bride, and that it might not be ſaid, that ſhe came forth a Maid: Or that it ſhould be twit in my teeth; that *I* had been at the Court, and not ſeen the King. The crafty Rogue my Maſter had found me out; and that he might ſanctifie himſelf by my ſinne, and juſtifie his honeſty by my theft, the *Mayor-Domo* being preſent, and other principall ſervants of the houſe, when *I* was about to go forth to put this poor purchaſe of mine in ſome ſafe place out of ſight, he fell upon me like a Lion, and laying hold on my Coller, he began to play *Rex* with me, taking me to *Coram nobis*, haling me by the hair of the head, and treading me under his feet.

You may very well imagine, how well conditioned this Marchandize was like to come home, being with his beating of me, he had broke them all to pieces, making both the Whites and the Youlks thus batted, both together to drop out at my knees. *I* could not but ſay to my ſelf; Sure, ſome Poulterers Planet doth purſue me, and my Choler had almoſt moved me to ſpeak it out aloud. But O (thou notorious thief) how canſt thou have thy houſe hanged with that, which thou ſtol'ſt, and *I* carried away, and yet keep ſuch a coile, and make ſuch a deal of do, for half a doozen paltrie egs that thou foundeſt about me? Doeſt thou not ſee, that thou wrongeſt thy ſelf, in wronging of me? But *I* thought it my beſt courſe, to hold my peace. For, in injuries, the beſt remedie is to neglect them. *It* did grieve me ſo much the more, that my Maſter ſhould uſe me thus hardly; had it been done by a ſtranger, or ſo, *I* could better have borne it. But *I* muſt be contented with my hard Fortune; *I* ſaw *I* was to ſuffer, and therefore I paſt it over without any alteration of countenance, or replying

otherwiſe

otherwiſe unto him, than by lifting up mine eyes unto heaven, which were brimme full of tears, and ready to runne over.

Now the heat and furie of the Feaſt was paſt, and we were going home; but as we were upon the way, my Maſter ſaid unto me, What I ſhall now tell thee (*Guzmanillo*) hearken unto it, and weigh it well, it is worth the noting. That beating, which I beſtowed on thee to day, did concerne me more than thou art aware: I know I had no reaſon to uſe thee as I did; but to morrow, I will give thee a new pair of ſhoes, which ſhall be better worth to thee, than thy eggs would have been. This was welcome news, and pleaſed me very well; for thoſe I then wore were old, and all to fitters. But I ſhrewdly ſuſpect, that my Miſtreſſe, after we were come home, had made her complaint unto him, and ſpoken ſome ill language of me; for from that time that we entred in adoors, my Maſter did ever after caſt ſuch a ſowre look upon me as if he had been newly taſting of Wine-vineger, ſo ſharp a countenance did he ſet upon me, ſo that now we hear no more words of our new ſhoes, they are forgot, and I muſt be content to go without them. When I ſaw he lookt awry upon me, and that I found his favour to be with-drawn from me; I ſought to remove all rubs, and to give them all the content I could, ſerving him with more care than ever; without committing any the leaſt offence, or being wanting in any thing that belonged to the buſineſſes of the Kitchin; I was not faulty in an hair, becauſe he ſhould have no juſt cauſe againſt me.

Upon a Feſtivall day, (as our faſhion was) we had made certaine Pies and Paſties, ſome of one ſort, ſome of another; whereof there was ſome (though not very much) of the Paſte left; And the Munday following, was the running of the Bulls. In the duſt-Basket, amongſt other refuſe-things out of the ſweepings of the houſe, it was my hap to meet with the ſhank-bone of a Heyfer, which was in a manner whole; I had need of a few of Blanks to make merry with, and preſently (a toy taking me in the head) in the turning of a hand, I had lapt up my Shanke in the Paſte that remained; which (as I had handled the matter) was to the outward ſhow a goodly fair Conie; that you could not diſtinguiſh the one from the other. Away went I with it to the wonted place, where I uſed to vent my other things, with a purpoſe to cozen ſome ſtranger with it: But becauſe I was in haſte, and could not ſtay long, I might not wait to make choiſe of my Merchant. There comes me to buy it of me a goodly grave Gentleman Vſher, (his head and beard as white as Milk) to do him a pleaſure, I was willing he ſhould have it. We agreed upon the priſe, and he was to give me for it three Royalls and an half. Me thought I ſaw the heaven opened, in having made ſo quick a Market. But the more was my haſte, the greater was his fleame.

He puts me firſt under his arme a Reportorie or little Regiſter book, about the bigneſs of an Almanack, which he had in his hand; Then he hangs me at his Girdle, his Gloves and his hand-Kercher; with a great deal of deliberation; After that, he takes me a caſe out of his pocket, wherein were his Spectacles: he pulls them forth, wipes them, and puts them on, wherein he ſpent two long hours. Then he went diſtilling out of a little leather Purſe one *Quarte* after another, and putting them in his hand, every half *Quarte*, ſeemed to be a *Quartile*, giving every one of them half a doozen turns at the leaſt, holding them againſt the Sunne. I had ſcarce received my mony of him, when lo, my Maſter was at my back, who miſſing me at home, came forth to ſeek me. And having thus found me napping, he took me faſt by the arme, and when he had me ſure, he ſaid unto me, what Pawn (my youth) have you redeemed here? My Gentleman-uſher was preſent at all this paſſage: the Devill (I think) kept him there all this while, for the diſcloſing of this my ſecret.

I ſaw my ſelf now in the ſuds, and knew not which way to get out; I could not quote my Author, nor yeeld any good reaſon for what I had done; ſo that it ſtood with me, as with prohibited books, or Merchandize forbidden to be ſold: and puniſhing me for my fault, he afterwards dives me into my pocket; and when he had fiſht out my money, he cries; Let go you Rogue; Let go, I ſay: Are you the man, that ſo many have commended unto me? Are you that dead Flie, that would do no hurt? Are you that faithfull ſervant, forſooth, whom I truſted with my goods, and all that I had? have I kept thee in my houſe? given thee of my bread? cheriſht, and made ſo much of thee, and all for this? I will no more be troubled with ſuch a Rogue as thou art. See thou comeſt no more in my houſe, and come not, I adviſe thee, neer my door; for he that will be falſe in a little, will (if occaſion be offered) be falſe in greater matters.

And ſo giving me a cuffe on the eare, and a kick on the breech, both at one inſtant, in the preſence of my Merchant, (whoſe dull fleam, (the worſe luck mine) would not diſmiſſe

him thence) he had almoſt laid me flat on the ground. I was ſo aſhamed, that I knew not what anſwer to make him, though I had ſtuffe enough in ſtore for him; but not holding it fit ſo to do, becauſe he had been my Maſter, I hung down my head, held my peace, and went my wayes. For it is a greater glory to avoid injuries by ſilence, than to overcome them by replying.

## Chapter VII.

*How* Guzman de Alfarache, *being put from the Cook his Maſter turnes* Picaro, *and proves a notable running Rogue. How he having a great deſire to ſee Italie, occaſion was offered unto him to effect his purpoſe, by the help of a theft, done upon a Grocer, and how he went ſheer away with it, and left* Madrid.



IN all chances whatſoever that may befall us in this World, *Mas vale Saber, que auer*; it is better to be wiſe than to be rich; For though Fortune ſhould play the Rebell, yet Knowledge never forſakes a man. Wealth may be waſted, but Knowledge increaſeth; and of more worth is that little, which a wiſe man knows; than all which a rich man enjoyeth. There is no man (I think) makes any queſtion that wiſedome excelleth Fortune, though both of them put forward, and haſten to one and the ſame end, which is, to adore and ſet forth men, and to raiſe them to honour.

Divers Philoſophers, did diverſly paint forth Fortune, becauſe in all things ſhe is herſelf ſo diverſe. Every one did draw her forth in that forme, as he found it did accord with himſelf, or as he did conſider it in another. If ſhe be good, ſhee is the Step-dame to all Vertue, if bad, the Mother to all Vice. And him, whom ſhe moſt favoureth, ſhe reſerveth for moſt miſerie: her courteſies ever ending in diſgraces. Shee is brittle, unſtable, reſtleſſe, *Tanquam Figura ſpherica in corpore plano*: like a Sphericall Figure, in a plain body. That which ſhe gives to day, ſhe takes away to morrow: ſhe is the flowing of the Sea, toſſing and tumbling us to and fro, till ſhe leave us at laſt upon drie land, on Deaths ſhore, from which ſhe never returns to recover us, And while we live, enjoyning us (like Players to con over our parts, and to learne daily new toyes and devices, to preſent them upon the ſtage of this World.) Every various accident doth diſorder her, and ſteal Wiſedoms praiſe from her. But Wiſedome doth quickly repair that which ſhe ruineth: And redreſſeth thoſe things, which ſhe deſpaireth of: She is a moſt rich open Mine, from whence, they that will, may exhauſt great treaſure; like unto the waters of a huge River, which can never be drawn drie. She honoureth a good fortune, and helpeth a bad. She is ſilver in the poor, gold in the rich, and a precious ſtone in a Prince. In the perillous paſſages, and in the troubleſome chances of Fortune, the wiſe man treads ſafely, and walks ſecurely, but the Fool ſtumbles and falls, though the way be never ſo plain.

There is no trouble ſo great on the land, no tempeſt ſo terrible on the Sea, no ſtorm ſo violent in the aire, that is able to withſtand Wiſedome, ſo that every man ought to deſire to live to be wiſe, and deſire to be wiſe, that he may live happily; Her riches are perpetuall, permanent, conſtant, and certain. But thou wilt aske me, whither away, *Guzman*, ſo laden with Knowledge? What thinkeſt thou to do with it? To what end doſt thou commend it with ſuch large eloquence? Why doſt thou ſo earneſtly indear it unto us? What doſt thou mean by it? Whither doth it tend? Since you aske me, I will tell you. All this ſpeech hath reference to my Basket, which was the Knowledge that I did ſtudie, for to get meat to my mouth, which is a good point of Wiſedome: For *Quien à Oficio, à beneficio*, He that hath a good Office, hath a good Living. And he that hath no other means to live in this world, and to paſſe over the neceſſities of this life, ſhall for me be eſteemed as much in theſe dayes, as *Demoſthenes* was in thoſe, for his eloquence, and *Ulyſſes* for his wit.

My naturall diſpoſition was good; I was deſcended both by Father and Mother of a Noble and Honourable Stock. This I could neither hide, nor loſe. And therefore I could not chuſe but ſhew of what Houſe I came, by ſuffering injuries with patience, the onely tryall of valiant minds. And as bad men, by good things become worſe; ſo good men, by bad things, are made better; eſpecially if they know how to make true uſe of the things of this world.

Who

Who would have thought, that ſo good ſervice as I had done, ſhould have received ſo bad a reward? And that upon ſo light an occaſion, and when I did leaſt expect, I ſhould be thruſt out of all? But in anſwer hereof, thou wilt haply ſay unto me; Such is the world now adayes, that for the ſame very action, for the which at this preſent, a man is accounted a good ſervant, an able Miniſter, well ſeen in his Office, and to have behaved himſelf therein as he ought, ſhall again at another time, for doing the very ſame thing, beneglected, ill thought of, diſgraced, and undone. And all to this end, that either herein we may ſee the worlds incertainty, and what errours it doth dayly run into; or elſe be brought to confeſſe, That God, to thoſe, whom he hath predeſtinated to ſalvation, after ſinning, ſends repentance. O would to God, that I might be ſo happy, as to receive onely a corporal puniſhment here upon earth.

My Maſter was now bent againſt me, his wife had ſet him on, and he thereby ſo incenſed, and ſo apt to take hold of any occaſion, that every the leaſt ſhutting of the eye, or but the wagging of a ſtraw, would have been matter enough of exception againſt me; and though I ſhould have ſerved him never ſo well, never ſo truely, and laboured (as if my life had lain upon it) not to give him any the leaſt cauſe of diſlike, yet all would not ſerve the turn, he was minded to put me from him, and I muſt be packing, faulty, or not faulty, all was one. Now I am thrown out into the ſtreet, perſecuted, and put away: What ſhall I do? Whither ſhall I go? Or what will become of me? Seeing I am thruſt out of doors for a Thief; who will now entertain me in his ſervice? Who admit me into his houſe? Then did I begin to think of my former troubles, and how well I bore them out, by bearing of a basket. I was wont to be a *Bunnolero*, a maker of Fritters, Buns, and Cracknels, and was now fain to follow mine old trade afreſh. It did not repent me, that I had been inured to troubles; for from them I received my relief; and it is good ſometimes to take them patiently, and willingly, to the end that they that are driven to neceſſity, may the better endure them, and not ſink under the burthen of them, as many do, becauſe they have not been formerly uſed unto them.

And becauſe they can never fail us in this life, but do ſtill wait upon us, it is fit that we ſhould be taught how to entertain them, that we may be the better able to bear them when they come. Beſides, they make a man ſubmit himſelf to thoſe things, wherein, afterwards he findes a great deal of good. There is no affliction ſo bitter, from which (if thou wilt) thou mayeſt not in the end ſuck ſome ſweet juyce; nor no pleaſure ſo ſweet, whereof thou mayeſt not fear ſome bitter end, ſave onely in that of vertue. If when I was ſo well accommodated to mine own content, I had not before indured ſome ſtorms of adverſity, never in that fair weather of Scullion-ſhip, ſhould I have known how to ſayl in my putting forth from the Kitchin, but have ſhewn my ſelf a raw Marriner, and freſh-water-Pylot, nor have found things ſo ready at hand, where-withall to help my ſelf in time of need.

What would then have become of me? Doeſt thou not ſee how troubled, how afflicted I ſhould have been? and what hard ſhifts I ſhould (poor wretch) have been put to, when my Office was taken from me, not knowing which way to turn my ſelf, what courſe to take nor where to put my head? All that I got, I either played it away, or unjuſtly ſtole it. I had bought me neither goods nor land with it, neither houſe, nor cloaths, nor any thing where-withall to cover me. All was ſpent and gone; As it came ſo it went; in at one door, and out at another; what I gain'd, that I loſt; what I ſerv'd for, that I waſted: And as the proverb is; I had *frutos por penſio*, my fruits allotted me. Of evil, whereof the leaſt is the beſt, for all my miſ-fortunes that befell me, my main ſtock was ſtill remaining with me, to wit, my loſt, ſhame. For what ſhould a poor man do with ſhame? Baſhfulneſſe brings no benefit. And the leſſe ſhame I had, the leſſe did thoſe errours grieve me, which I committed. I was now well known to all the Town, and I had money in my purſe to buy me a basket, but before I would reſolve to ſaddle it to my back, I did night and day viſit my Maſters friends and acquaintance, to ſee if any of them would have pity of me, and take me into their ſervice. For I had learned now a little skill, and would have been glad to have better'd my knowledge, that I might know how to live another day. Some of them did relieve me a little, entertaining me with a piece of bread, or ſo.

But it ſeemed, they had heard ſuch things of me, that they quickly diſmiſt me, having no minde in the world to receive me into their ſervice. Might overcomes Right: And where force prevaileth, there the Law goes to wrack.

With theſe diligences that I us'd, I had performed my duty, and complied with that, whereunto I was bound, that I might not accuſe my ſelf hereafter, of returning to my former courſe of life, out of meer idleneſſe, and for the avoiding of labour, and that I might not work and

take pains for my living. But I aſſure thee, that I loved it then, as one that had experience what Vice was, and knew very well, that by ſo much one man is more man than another, by how much the more he labours in ſome honeſt courſe of life. As the contrary may be ſaid of him that is idle. But a man can do no more than he can do, I did my endeavour. Nor do I know how it comes to paſſe, that we deſiring to be good, yet we never come to be ſo, and though we propoſe it dayly and hourly unto our ſelves, yet we do not put it in execution in many years, nay, not in our life-time are we able to reach unto it. And the reaſon is, becauſe, we either will not, or do not think upon any thing but the preſent. I began to bear my burthens, I did eat what was needfull, (for I never made my belly, my god) and a man ought not to eat more, than what may ſuffice for the preſerving of life. The exceſſe whereof is brutiſhneſſe. For it is the beaſt that gluts himſelf to grow fat.

By this my orderly dyet, and moderate feeding, my minde was not dull'd, my body was not weakned, I did nouriſh no ill humours, I did breed no diſeaſes, I had my health, I was ſound and luſty, and never wanted money to play.

In my drinking, I was very temperate, never uſing it but when I muſt needs, and then too very ſparingly, ſeeking to proportion my ſelf to what was neceſſary, and to moderate my ſelf in ſome meaſurable manner, as well, for that it was a thing natural unto me, and agreeable to my diſpoſition, as alſo for that drunkenneſſe, did (me thought) very ill become my Companions; Who depriving themſelves of the ſence and reaſon of men, fall ſick and ill, their heads turn to aking, their tongues to hoarſneſſe, their breaths to ſhortneſſe, if not to noyſomneſſe, their eyes to a ſwoln ſettledneſſe, and dulneſſe of look, their Legs to making of Congees and Honours, their feet to tripping of it this way, and that way, with counterpaces, now backward, then forward, as the Morris-bells in their brains ſhould deviſe them their tune. But (which exceedeth all other miſchiefs) this inhumane and ſottiſh Vice makes them a May-game to Children, a laughing ſtock to men, and a ſcorn to all the world. So as theſe are Rogues, and for ſuch let them go, for they are no better than Rogues. And I do not wonder at it. For all baſeneſſe whatſoever is ingraven on their fore-heads, and is made juſt fit to their meaſure, as being the off-ſcumme and refuſe of men.

But for men of worth, and ſuch as ſtand upon their credit, as great and noble perſons, and Gentlemen of quality, who ought to abſtain from theſe diſorders; let them take heed, how they give any ſuch ſcandal, to wrong their reputation.

But for a Church-man to diſorder himſelf, nay, but to go a hairs-breadth awry in this kinde: for ſuch a one (I ſay) it is not onely a diſorder, but he comes within the compaſſe of being noted for a ſcandalous perſon, and a wronger of his profeſſion, which cannot but reſound much to his reproach. Let them themſelves be their own Judges, and ſpeak what they think of it; when they ſee themſelves thus overtaken. Do they not, for to maintain their abſurdities, ſeek to excuſe themſelves by idle and fooliſh reaſons, and make, I know not what unjoynted ſequels, by which after one errour granted, they run into a thouſand: and yet perſwade themſelves, that they, and none but they, are in the right? It is a ſhame to treat of it; infamy to uſe it; villany to cloak it, and a thing unworthy men, not to hate, and abhor it.

We had in the place near unto *Santa Cruz*, our proper Manſion, bought, and repaired at other mens coſt. There were all the meetings and the Feaſts. I was up with the Sun, I diligently waited on thoſe ſhops, and attended often on the Bakers; and if I wanted imployment there, I got me into the Shambles, to ſee what good I could do there. I made my harveſt in the morning, to ſerve me all the whole day after. The Pariſhioners there-abouts, that had no ſervants of their own, for theſe buſineſſes, would hire me to carry home their proviſion for them. Which I did faithfully, and diligently, without wronging them the leaſt hair of my head. No man of my place had more credit amongſt them, or was better truſted than my ſelf. So that my Companions wanted work, whileſt I had enough for my ſelf, and ſome other good fellow my friend, whom I would make choice of to help me; who would be ſure to follow me cloſe at the elbow. Then we were but a few of us, and we went up and down from place to place: but now there are very many, the number is much increaſed, and all of them have their hands full, and glad is he that can catch them up firſt. And I can aſſure you, that there is not any eſtate, that hath more inlarged it ſelf, than that of the *Picaro's*, for all your Rogues apply themſelves to the bearing of baskets, and carrying of burthens, they count it a very good Trade, and theſe Rogues grow proud of it. And to this paſſe doth miſ-fortune bring a man, that his Infamy, he makes his glory, his baſeneſſe, he counts his honour, and earneſt, he turns to jeſt.

It

Nor doth that of your *Picaro's* ſleep in the mean vvhile, every Porter, and Basket-bearer vvill have a hand in the Government of the Common-vvealth as well as other men, they will fall in to diſcourſe of the buſineſſe, vent their opinions, and conclude, what things ought to be done, how carried, and who fitteſt for the managing of theſe great affairs. Nor do not thou think that becauſe they are baſe in their quality and condition, that therefore they are the farther off from the Truth, or their intelligence the leſſe certain. If thou do, thou art much deceived, for it is rather the quite contrary with them. For it oftentimes ſo comes to paſſe, that they know the eſſential points of things, and participate of the ſecrets of State; and there is a great deal of reaſon for it. For, in regard of the underſtanding, ſome there are, nay, very many of them, who if they would apply it well, and accommodate it, as others do, making the like uſe of it, have it ſtrong and good. Beſides, ſithence that they go all day long from one place to another, through divers ſtreets, and into ſundry houſes; and being that they be ſo many, and ſo ſcattered and divided over all the Town; of many they hear many things; and though it be uſually ſaid amongſt us; *Quot capita, tot ſenſus.* So many men ſo many mindes. And though happily one, or ſay a hundred, ſhould ſhoot wide of the mark, and diſcharge the follies of their idle brains; yet doubtleſſe there are others again that diſcourſe wiſely, and will come very near unto, if not hit the pin.

Now we (having raked together all the news of the whole Town) when we are met together, and are ſitting at our ſupper, every man opens his ſtore, and tells what hath paſt in Court, ſome relating one thing, and ſome another. Beſides, there is not that Victualing-houſe, or Tavern, but whatſoever hath been talked of there, is brought to our ears. For there likewiſe are held your open Courts, and publick Aſſemblies, where all queſtions and doubts are winnowed and ſifted to the full, nothing eſcapes their ſearch and inquiry; There they limit the Turks power, reform Councels, and tax your Miniſters of State.

In a word there all things are made known, there all things are treated of, and they are the Law-givers, that preſcribe rules to all; for they ſpeak all out of *Bacchus* his own mouth, having *Ceres* for their Aſcendent, converſing with a full belly, and a free heart, and if the Wine be new, the Veſſel will run over, it muſt needs work, and can no longer hold. With that then, which we have learned from others, we come afterwards to ſit and determine of every particular paſſage, every man according to his ſeveral opinion, ſetting down his ſeveral cenſure. One while we reſolve, that theſe Companies are to march towards *Italy*; and that went for good, and paſt the more currant amongſt us, becauſe their Banners were advanced towards *Mancha*, and were now far entred into that Countrey, paſſing from *Almodovar* and *Argamaſilla*, along the skirts of the Kingdom of *Toledo*, till they had got to *Alcala de Henares*, and *Guadalajara*, compaſſing all the way as they went the *Mediterranean* Sea.

Me thought, this was a very good occaſion for me to take hold on, for the executing of my former deſires, which with earneſt longing did mightily ſpur me on to undergo this voyage, that *I* might know mine own bloud, and whence *I* was deſcended, how *I* was allied, and of what quality my Parents and Kindred were. But *I* was ſo tatter'd and torn, and ſo utterly unprovided of all things for this my intended journey, that the bridle of reaſon made me ſtop upon my courſe, and held me back from going farther forward, it ſeeming unto me (upon better deliberation) a thing impoſſible to be effected. But notwithſtanding, my minde run ſtill on nothing elſe.

This was ſtill in my head, and *I* could not beat it out. In the day time it was my ſtudy; and in the night *I* dream'd ſtill on that, and nothing but that. And if that Roman proverb taketh place, (*Si quieres ſer Papa, eſtampalo en la teſta*) if thou mindeſt to be Pope, thou muſt have him to write in thy forehead: it was truely verified in me. For, as *I* was beating my brains about this buſineſſe, toſſing them a thouſand times to and fro, full of this ſolicitous care, *I* ſate me down on the one ſide of the place, near unto one of the ſhops, where my ſelf, and this my other Aſſociate were wont to make our Rendevous; And leaning on my cheek (in a melancholy manner) upon my hand, being fully reſolved to go, though it were but in the place of a ſtragler to wait upon the Souldiers, and to carry their luggage for them, thinking this would be a place good enough for me, if *I* could not light on a better.

Whileſt *I* was deviſing this with my ſelf, on the ſuddain *I* heard a voyce, which ſaid; *Guzman, Guzmanillo?* *I* lookt about, and turned my face towards the place, from whence the voice came. And *I* perceived at laſt, it was a Grocer, that ſtood under the walking place underſet with Pillars, that call'd me unto him, near adjoyning to the Butcher-row. *I* held up my hand, and made a ſign unto him, that *I* would haſten thither. *I* got me up, and came to ſee,

what

what he would with me. He ſpake unto me, and bid me open my basket. I did ſo. That no ſooner done, but he throws me into it, about ſome two thouſand five hundred Royals in ſilver and gold, and ſome few Quartes. I ask't him; To what braſier I ſhould carry this Copper? Copper, you Rogue? Come, up and away with it, for I muſt go pay it to a Merchant a ſtranger, that had ſold me ſome wares at my ſhop.

He ſaid one thing, and I thought another: which was, to ſhew him a trick at the next turning. And believe me, the joyfull news of a deſired birth, did never come more welcome to the ears of a loving father: Nor the Marriner beaten by tempeſt, did with more joy diſcover on the ſuddain the Harbour, that he ſought to put into: Nor any rendred Town, to that famous Captain that beſieg'd it, gave ſo much content, nor had ſo ſweet a ſound with it, or afforded ſo pleaſing an Accent; as I conceived then in my Soul, hearing that ſweet and melodious voice of my Grocer, when he ſaid, Open thy basket. Me thought it was a brave word, they were letters of Gold ingraven in my heart, leaving it full of joy, but much more when they had qualified themſelves, by actually putting me into a quiet and peaceable poſſeſſion of that, which I was perſwaded would be my beſt remedy.

Upon this lucky incounter, I began already to diſpoſe of this money, and to change my courſe of life. I laded my ſhoulders with it, fainting, that it did weigh very heavy, but my heavineſſe was the more, that there was no more of it. My honeſt Grocer, he (good man) goes afore, and I follow after, but with a wondrous deſire to meet with ſome throng, or preſſe of people in ſome ſtreet, or other, or to ſlip aſide into ſome houſe, where I might effect my purpoſe. Fortune (as good luck was) had, in the very nick, fitted me with one, juſt according to the meaſure of my deſire. For if I would have wiſht for an opportunity, I could not have deſired a fairer. For as I was entring into the principal Gate, I got me away ſome three ſtreets from thence by a blinde Poſtern door, and fetching bouts from one corner to another, with ſomewhat a quick, but not diſcompoſed pace, that I might better avoid all ſuſpition, I went away gallantly, winding this way, and turning that way, till I had got to *Puerta la Rega*, where I eaſed my ſelf of my load, and made down to the River. From thence I croſt over to *Caſa de Campa*, and being holpen by the night, I walkt (through a little thicket of Alder-trees, Poplars, and other weſt-grown buſhes of Thorn) a league farther: in the thickeſt part whereof I caſt Ankor, and had now pitcht my Standard, that I might with my mature counſel think upon things to come, and what fruit and benefit I might make of my late purchaſe. For it is not enough to begin well, nor to go on well, but to end well. For to little uſe ſerve good beginnings, and better proceedings, unleſſe they be crown'd with proſperous endings. What good would this theft have done me, if I had been taken with it, but to loſe that, and with it, perhaps my ears, if not to have been hang'd for my labour, if I had been of years? There I entred into conſultation with my ſelf, what I were beſt to do: I made tryal where the water was deepeſt, and where the buſhes were thickeſt, I made a deep hole; and wrapping the money in the linings of my breeches and my doublet, I put it in, covering it over very handſomely with ſand and ſtones; ſetting up a mark, that I might not forget the place where I had hid it, hankering thereabouts, that I might ever and anon have an eye upon it, for the ſpace of almoſt fifteen dayes: And all becauſe I would not trouble my ſelf hereafter in ſeeking for it ſome two foot nearer, or farther off, which would have been as bad as death unto me, if I ſhould not have hapned to light upon it, as ſoon as ever I had thruſt in my hand. And the rather for that ſome nights I went from thence to the neighbouring places thereabouts, to get me ſome victuals for three, or four dayes, returning preſently back again to my old haunt, keeping my ſelf cloſe, after the Sun once began to peep forth, in that wood adjoyning to the *a Parda*.

Hither in this manner as you ſee, had I withdrawn my ſelf, till the Hue and Cry were paſt and gone, which undoubtedly was made after me. Now by this time they had loſt my footing, and I conceiving with my ſelf, that the Coaſt was now clear, and that I might ſafely paſſe, that I might remove my Tent, and march forward, I made me up a little fardle of the old linings that were left of my Jerkin, wherein I had cloſely lapt up this my heart-bloud. So that I had nothing now left me, ſave the old linings of my breeches, poor ragged doublet, and a ſhirt all torn and full of holes, but all as white and as clean as a curd, for I had lately waſht them. So that I was apparelled all in white, being wonderfull well fitted for to make one in a Morris dance. I got me two delicate fine walking Cudgels, which I had cut my ſelf, and pil'd off the Rinde, and made as ſmooth and neat as could be deviſed. On the one I hanged the precious bundle which I bare at my back; the other I made a Truncheon of it, to carry in my hand. I vvas now fat and full fed, and began to be vveary of being any longer a

Cony

Cony in that Warren, fearing leſt one of the Keepers, or ſome other Ferreter ſhould finde me there in the Berry, and pull me out as a ſuſpicious perſon; To prevent that, I began to take my journey by night, when it was dark, going out of the rode-way, taking croſſe paths, by-places, and untroden tracks, paſſing through *La Sagra de Toledo*, a certain Territory belonging to that Kingdom, till I came two leagues beyond it, to a little place that ſtood in a bottom, called *Acuqueica*; whither I had reached betimes in the morning. There I reſted my ſelf under the ſhadow of certain Quince-Trees, where I meant to ſpend that day. Where, e're I was aware, I found hard by me a pretty young ſtripling much about my pitch. He ſeemed to be ſome Citizens Son, who out of ſome unadviſed conſideration, as mine was, had forſaken his Parents to travel abroad, and go ſee the vvorld; He carried his Fardle at his back, and being but a young novice, bread up daintily, and newly taken from his Mothers teat, the Milk yet hanging on his lips, was weary of his burthen, and himſelf ſeemed heavy, in having ſo heavy a load: ſure, he had no great minde to return home again to his friends; and as little, that they ſhould finde him out. He walkt as I did, in the day through Groves and thickets, and in the night along the high-way, ſeeking covert, where to ſhrow'd himſelf. Which the rather I gheſſe to be ſo, for that, from our arrival there, untill it were night, that we were to depart, he did not budge a foot from the place where I was. When we were to go our wayes, taking up his Fardle very heavily, he let it fall again to the ground, ſaying, Gods curſe go with thee, a little thing would make me to leave thee here behinde me.

Now I muſt tell you by the way, that we had had ſome talk together before, and exchanged (as occaſion offered) good ſtore of words, taking account one of anotner of our voyages, and what and whence we were, He did not deal truely with me, and *I* would not confeſſe my ſelf to him, For by mine own lies, *I* knew thoſe that he told me. And ſo we were both paid in own coin. All that *I* could fuck from him, was; that he acquainted me with his wants.

Now finding the conjecture good, and the diſtaſte great, which he had taken at that heavy burthen which he bore at his back; but much more, that his purſe was ſo light, *I* began to conjecture with my ſelf, that it might haply be a ſute of Cloaths: Whereupon *I* askt him, what luggage was that he carried, which did give him ſo much trouble, and made him ſo weary? He told me it was a ſute of apparrel. This ſuted well with my deſires; the induction (me thought) was good. Thereupon *I* proceeded farther, and told him, Sir, *I* could give you reaſonable good counſel, if you would be willing to accept of it. He intreated me to give it him, and that finding it to be ſuch, he ſhould be very thankfull to me for it.

My advice then unto him, was; that ſince he went laden with that, which as yet he had no great need of, nor would it much import him, if he had, that he ſhould rid himſelf of it, and have recourſe to that, which might be more neceſſary for him. Here you carry a wardrobe, or what elſe ſoever it be, about you; *I* would wiſh you to ſell it, and put it in your purſe; for beſides that it will weigh leſſe; you ſhall make your profit of the money, you ſhall receive for it.

The young youth diſcreetly replied, (for your *Toledanos* have paſſing good wits:) This advice of yours *I* like well, and would follow it, but *I* hold it impertinent for the preſent. And *Conſejo, ſin remedio, es cuerpo, ſin alma.* Counſell, without a cure, is as a body without a Soul. What doth it import me to ſell it, if *I* want a Chapman to buy it? *I* have no occaſion to go into any Town, either to truck for it, or to ſell it, and no body will buy it of me, that does not know me.

Then *I* demanded of him, what pieces they were that he had in his pack; He told me, they were certain Cloaths for change, when he was minded to ſhift thoſe others that he had on his back. I ask't him of the colour, and whether it had been much worn? He anſwered me, that it was a mingled colour, and reaſonable good. This pleaſed me better and better, I could not diſlike of it: Thereupon I offered him preſent payment, if the Cloaths did fit me.

The youth began to look ſadly upon me, as one that had been ſtruck into a muze, and fell to eye me from top to toe; for all that I had on my back, was not worth ſo much thred as would ſerve to binde up a farthing-worth of Saffron, it was not worth one poor ſmall Cominſeed, and yet I ſhould have the face to offer him money for his Cloaths.

This imagination was mine own, and it may be it entred into his conceit, that I was a little young Thief, and that I would put ſome trick, or other upon him. For he ſtood in ſuſpence, conſulting with himſelf, whether he were beſt to ſhew them unto me,

or no? For he knew not how to truſt me. And my faſhion was then ſuch, that he could not hope, or ſurmiſe, that any good thing ſhould come from me. So much difference is there between good and bad Cloaths, that it gives either a good, or bad preſumption of a mans perſon, according to that old Adage: *Qual te hallo, tal te juzgo.* As I finde you, ſo I take you. For where knowledge doth not inform, there the habit doth qualifie. But this proverb is oft checkt: *Que debaxo de mala capa ſuele aver buen vivider.* Under a thred-bare Cloak, lies many times much learning: And beggerly bottles oftentimes hold rich Wines. I did preſently apprehend his thought, as if I had been within him: And that I might reduce him to a better opinion of me, and alter his conceit, I ſaid unto him: My pretty little Youth, I would have you know, that I am as good a man as your ſelf, and every way as well born, though I have forborn till now to give you account what I am: but becauſe thou mayeſt lay aſide all fears and jealouſie, I am now minded thou ſhalt have it. My native ſoyl is *Burgos*, there was I born, and thence did I ſet forth, (as thou doeſt now,) reaſonable well accoutred. I have already done that, which I now adviſe thee unto, I ſold my Cloaths, as having then no need of them, and with that money which I had for them, together with that which I brought from home, I will buy me other, when I ſhall come, where I ſhall have occaſion to uſe them. And by being careſull in looking well to my money, (hiding it in ſome ſecret place about me,) and by travelling upon the way in theſe tatter'd rags, (which I now have on) I ſecure my life and paſſe freely to and fro.

For no man will ſet upon him that is poor. He lives ſafely and dwells in places un-peopled, and diſ-inhabited, without any fear at all of Thieves that ſhould come to rob him, or Murderers to aſſault him on the way, and take his life from him. If therefore you have any mind to it, ſell me what you have no need of, and doubt not my payment, for I am well able to do it. I am near to *Toledo*, whither I am bound; I would gladly go in a little handſomer, and not in this baſe and vile habit that I have now about me. The youth undid his Fardle, takes me out a Cloak, a pair of Breeches, a Caſſock, two Shirts, and a pair of ſilk Stockings, all as fit for me, as if they had been made of purpoſe for me.

I agreed with him for a hundred Royals, nor were they worth any more; for although the Cloaths were well uſed, and little worn, yet the Cloath was none of the fineſt, I ript open the one ſide of my bundle, and took out thence as many *Quarts* as ſerved the turn; which gave him no ſmall trouble, when he perceived the baſeneſſe of the money; for though it went againſt his ſtomack to bear any more burdens, yet he could by no means excuſe it. But he comforted himſelf with this, that it was lighter than the other, and more uſe-full upon all occaſions. The bargain ended, we ſhook hands, and parted. He went to ſeek his fortune, I know not whither. And I that night, though late, entred *Toledo*.

## Chapter VIII.

*How* Guzman de Alfarache, *cloathing himſelf like a Gallant in* Toledo, *makes love to certain Gentle women; He telleth how things paſt with them, and how there, and in* Malagon *they ſcorned him; He diſcourſeth of youthfull jollity, and of the craft and ſubtilty of your* Spaniſh *women; which may ſerve for an inſtruction, and warning to all young men.*



IT is a comman ſaying; *Que aunque viſt an a la mona de ſeda, mona ſe queda.* An Ape, though he be clad in gold, will be an Ape ſtill. And this is ſo infallibly true, that it admitteth no exception. A man may eaſily alter his habit, but hardly change his evil conditions. He may entertain and deceive folks with his Cloaths, though he himſelf be ſtark naked, and ſtript of all goodneſſe. I will preſently turn Gallant, and as ſoon return again to my old trade; be a Gentleman to day and to morrow a Porter. For, he that knows not how to live by the ſweat of his brows, muſt quickly fall into poverty, as you ſhall ſee in the ſequel of this ſtory.

The firſt thing that I did the next morning, was the altring of my doublet, my ſhoes, and my hat; I took off that Taffata, that was on the Cape of my Cloak, and put on other of another colour; I clapt new buttons upon my Caſſock; I took off the ſlieves that were of Cloath, and in their ſtead ſet two others that were of ſilk: ſo that with a little coſt, I had quite altered the faſhion of thoſe Cloaths I had lately bought; fearing leſt for my ſins ſake, or by ſome other miſ-fortune, I might be taken in ſome trap, & ſo come to pay both for this,

and

and the laſt years reckoning. For if (by chance) this young youths friends ſhould ſend after him, and make enquiry after him, and ſhould hap to light on me, and finde his cloaths on my back, they would preſently ſuſpect that I had kill'd him to get his cloaths, and ſo demand their loſt Childe of me, and drive me to give them an account, what was become of him.

When I had fitted my ſelf to my minde, I walk't up and down the Citie ſome two dayes together, making enquiry, where, or in what place were any Companies of Souldiers, that were to go upon ſervice, but could not of any hear any certain news. Thus I went beating the air, as one that was idle, and had nothing elſe to do.

And as I paſt by *Socodover*, (which I croſt but ſeldom, and that with fear: and if *I* went out of my lodging, it was againſt my will, and that late, not ſleeping three nights in one place, leſt if any man ſhould chance to know me, I might be apprehended and carried to priſon:) it was my hap to ſee a Gentleman mounted on a Mule, to croſſe the way, going (as it ſhould ſeem) to the Court, ſo handſomely clad, and ſo well ſuted, that I did envy his gallantry. His brecches were of Murry Velvet, cut with ſomewhat a long, but delicate fine cut, drawn out upon Cloath of ſilver: His doublet of Cloath of Gold, upon which he had a Buffe Jerkin, laid on with a coſtly Milane-lace, ſome three fingers broad. He had a brave Hat, anſwerable to the reſt, imbroidered about the brims, and well ſet forth with its Feathers, and was not a little graced by the Hat-band, which was ſet thick with Gold Buttons, inamelled with black.

This Gentleman rode *encuerpo*, in his hoſe and doublet. But in his *Port-Manteau* he had a Cloak, which (if I be not deceived) was of Raſh, or elſe of fine Cloath, of like colour to his hoſe, rounded about with a broad parchment Gold lace, ſutable to that of his Jerkin. Theſe good Cloaths of his ſet an edge on my appetite. And ſeeing I had not got my money by thraſhing, but came by it ſo eaſily, it began to laugh and tighy in my purſe, it geered and fleer'd, and (like a little young Devil) went, gingle, gingle, gingle.

When I ſaw my purſe was ſet upon this merry pin, I could hold no longer for my heart, but brake preſently with him, and told him in good earneſt, if you have a minde to dance, I ſhall not ſtick to pipe unto you: And if you will not lead on merrily of your own accord, I ſhall be as loth to keep you any longer company. And therefore I would wiſh you to accompliſh this my deſire, ſatisfying me herein, and that quickly, without any farther delay.

Hereupon I went forthwith to a Merchants ſhop, bought all things fitting, called a Taylor unto me, and cauſed him to cut out my Cloaths, who made ſuch good haſte, that he was (as the phraſe is) *ni oydo, ni viſto*; neither heard nor ſeen. It was finiſhed in a trice, before any words were made of it, or any eye had ſeen it. For in three dayes he brought it me home, and put it on my back; being juſt the ſame with the other, and as like as like could be, all ſave the Buff-jerkin, which becauſe I could not meet with a good one according to my minde, I made me one of Murrey Sattin, trimm'd with trenſils of Gold. My Garters were of ſtraw colour, fringed about with Gold-lace, and purled with ſpangles. So that now I did ſcarce know my ſelf; I was grown ſo fine on the ſudden; all was in very good order, and my ſelf not a little proud of it.

Now I had no more to do, but to ſet a good face of the matter, and to ſay the truth, for a good face, when I was a boy, there were few that had a better. For I was very well favour'd, my eye quick, and my countenance throughout very pleaſing. When I ſaw what a gallant Souldier I was grown. I did proudly jet it about the ſtreets of *Toledo*, in a very good Equipage, as if I had been the Son of ſome principal man of note. I likewiſe entertained to attend on my perſon, a pretty handſom Page, and well clad; and I fell into acquaintance with one that was well skill'd in the faſhions of that Countrey, and ſpake excellent language.

I conceited then with my ſelf (ſeeing my ſelf thus inthronized, and ſo well accoutred) that my Father was alive again, and that I was reſtored to thoſe proſperous times wherein I was born: I thought my ſelf the happieſt man in the vvorld, and took ſome delight in my gay Cloaths, that a nights *I* was loath to put them off, and a dayes *I* left no ſtreet untroden, to the end that all might ſee me; though *I* would not that any ſhould know me. I got me up betimes on Sunday morning, put on a proud and ſtately gate, and in all this my gallantry ſtept me with a jolly preſence into the Cathedral Church for to hear Maſſe, though (let me whiſper it in your ear) I went thither more (I fear me) for oſtentation, than devotion; not ſo much to hear, as to be ſeen. I walkt round about the Church ſome three, or four times at leaſt; *I* viſited the Chappels, (which were moſt reſorted unto) till

at laſt *I* came between the two Quires, where *I* ſtaid: There *I* ſaw many Ladies and Gentlewomen, and a great many of Gallants. But *I* did ſtrut and ſet forth my ſelf, as if *I* had been the onely Cock of the game, and all the reſt Cravens; none of their Combs nor Feathers were ſo goodly (me thought) as mine own, *I* did put them down all for a brave ſuite of cloaths. And like a bonny ſhepheard, made ſhow of all the whole fleece, as one that was very willing, that they ſhould take a general ſurvey both of my perſon, and apparel, not debarring their eyes of thoſe leſſer objects, as my girdle, garters, and ſhoe-ties, which were all *del Tudeſco*, curious and delicate work, right *Flanders*.

*I* ſtretcht forth my neck, bore out my breaſt, ſtood ſtiff upon my legs, advancing one while this, and then that other foot; carrying my ſelf in that vain and idle faſhion, that every one at laſt had found me out, and obſerving the ſtrangeneſſe of my looks, my Mimick geſtures, and often change of poſtures, they began to jeſt and ſcoff at my folly. But as long as they lookt upon me, *I* ne're lookt into that; nor did *I* ſo much as once perceive, that my faults were the ſtrings whereon their laughter plaid. But *I* rather thought with my ſelf, that they did admire my curioſity, and gallantry.

And this is all, that offers it ſelf to be ſpoken of concerning the men. But a pretty accident hapned unto me amongſt the women, not unworthy ſuch fools as my ſelf; and this it was: Two amongſt the reſt were preſent there at that time, one of the which (being born in that Citie, and of extraordinary beauty) fixed her eyes upon my perſon, (or to ſpeak more truely) upon my purſe; perſwading herſelf, that I that had ſuch good Cloaths, could not chuſe but have good ſtore of money. But for the preſent I took no notice of that, nor did I care to caſt an eye towards her, becauſe I had ſwallowed the others bait, that ſate on the other ſide. Who having made (as Children uſe to do) ſome ſigns unto her with my finger, ſmil'd upon me, and caſt a kinde of ſly look towards me. I thought that was enough, and that the Goal was already gotten. I perſevered in my ignorance, and ſhe in her cunning carriage, till that going out of the Church, ſhe went home to her houſe, and I after her walking leiſurely along. I ventur'd upon her, and falling into diſcourſe with her, vented ſome of my fooleries: but ſhe, (as if ſhe had been made of ſtone) anſwered me not a word, nor reſented nothing that I ſaid unto her: yet for all this ſhe did not ſtick now and then to turn her head aſide towards me, and to diſcover her face unto me, which was the fire that did burn me alive. At laſt we came to a ſtreet, near unto the *Solana* of S. *Cyprian*, where ſhe dwelt. And as ſhe entered into her houſe, it ſeeming (ſtooping to go in) that ſhe made me a kinde of reverence and courteſie with her head; and me thought her eyes laughed as it were upon me, and her countenance ſhew'd it ſelf very cheerfull. With this (for this time) I left her, and returned back to my lodging the ſame way I came. But I had not gone many ſteps, but it was my hap to ſpy a young wench that had taken up her ſtanding at the corner of the ſtreet, who had wrapt her ſelf up ſo cloſe in her Mantle, that you could ſcarce perceive the eyes of her. This Wench had dogg'd me, and putting onely forth thoſe her two leſſer fingers of her fair hand, with them and her head, ſhe called and beckned me unto her. I came unto her, to know what ſhe would be pleaſed to command me. Who made a long diſcourſe unto me, telling me that ſhe was ſervant to ſuch a married Gentlewoman, a woman of very good faſhion, and very good quality, to whom I was much obliged, and could not out of nobleneſſe, but think my ſelf much bound unto her, for the extraordinary love which ſhe bare unto me.

And therefore, as well in regard of this her good affection towards my ſelf, as alſo in reſpect of her own condition, (being ſo great and ſo worthy) and the ſtrength of her Alliance and Kindred, which were men of no mean power and eſtimation in thoſe parts; that I would be pleaſed to acquaint her where I lodged, becauſe ſhe had ſome earneſt buſineſſe to treat with me, and muſt needs ſpeak with me, for it did much concern her ſo to do. I was ſo taken with this, that I had much ado (as they ſay) to keep my ſelf from leaping out of mine own skin; nor would I have chang'd this good fortune of mine, with the beſt that ever befell *Alexander* the Great: Smoothing and flattering my ſelf with this vain conceit, That all the Ladies and Gentlewomen in the Town were faln in love with me, and now began to ſtrive who ſhould enjoy me firſt.

To this her meſſage I returned a very grave and demure anſwer, with a gratefull acknowledgement of this her offered (though undeſerved) favour, which when ſhe ſhall be pleaſed to make me worthy thereof, I ſhall think my ſelf not onely the moſt graced, but the moſt fortunate and happieſt man in the world. In this converſation by little and little, we draw near to my lodging. She took notice of it, and leave being taken each of other, I get me in to dinner, for it was more than time.

Now

Now for that I knew not what this Gentlewoman was, and had never ſeen her heretofore (to my knowledge) my longing was not ſo great to look after her, as was my deſire to ſee this other. I thought every hour a thouſand yeers till I might come to ſee her again; Time (me thought) was too ſlow of wing, his Glaſſe did not run faſt enough, his Sithe did not ſweep away the loytering hours half ſo ſpeedily as I could have wiſhed. Yet at laſt I hie me to the ſtreet where ſhe dwelt, beſtowing there more turns, and circling more rounds about her houſe, than a Mill-horſe, or a Mule that drawes in an *Anoria*; yet at laſt, when it grew ſomewhat late, and the day ſhut up, ſhe came forth (as by ſtealth) to talk with me from her window. Then did we enter diſcourſe, and exchanged many words; at laſt ſhe told me, that I muſt needs that night come and ſup with her. I commanded my ſervant to provide me a good fat Capon, a brace of Patridge, a baked Conie, a bottle of the Wine *del Santo*, and as good bread as could be got for money, fruits and other the like things for the later courſe, and that he ſhould make haſte and bring them away with him.

After that the night was well in, thinking it was now high time, I went to the place appointed, where I was kindly received, and entertained with all the kindneſs and courteſie that could be deviſed. It was now a fit hour for ſupper, and therefore entreated her, that ſhe would command the Table to be covered. But ſhe finding out freſh matter to work upon, and ſpending the time in new entertainments, ſpunne out the thread ſtill longer and longer, adding one delay to another; I marvailed a God what ſhe meant by it; I knew not in the world what to make of it.

At laſt, whilſt I was muſing upon it, ſhe puts me into a Labyrinth, beginning to tell me that ſhe was a Virgin, her deſcent Noble, her condition and quality of thoſe of the beſt rank, and that ſhe had a brother, an unruly young fellow, ill governed, and worſe conditioned, ſubject to ſwaggering, and to quarrelling, a kinde of roaring-Boy, one that never came within doors, unleſſe it were ſometimes to his dinner or his ſupper, and all the reſt both day and nigh, he ſpent in play, and other youthfull pleaſures.

Whilſt we were in this deep diſcourſe, behold one knocks aloud at the door. She cries out; Aye me! What ſhall I do? I am undone, I am undone. So much was ſhe moved, ſo diſtractedly troubled with this feigned perturbation, ſo good a face did ſhe ſet upon this falſhood, and did diſſemble this her paſſion ſo handſomely, that ſhe might therewith have deceived a wiſer, and better experienced man than my ſelf. And though this Gentle-woman knew very well both the end and the means, whereby all this buſineſs was to be carried, yet did ſhe play her part ſo well, that ſhe ſeemed to be mightily afflicted, as one that knew not which way to turn herſelf. And as if then preſently that remedy had occurred unto her, (as a thing ſuddenly thought upon) ſhe deſired me of all loves to put my ſelf for a while into a *Tinaja*, that had no water in it, yet was it not without ſome droppings, and a kind of ſliminеſs hanging about the ſides of it, and that none of the cleanneſt. This earthen Veſſel ſtood in the outward Court under the Porch. I got in as well as I could, as willing to do what ſhe would have me; ſhe claps a Lid over it, and when ſhe had ſo done, ſhe returns to her *Eſtrado*, ſhe was ſcarce ſet, but her brother comes in; who ſeeing ſuch a great ſmoke in the houſe, ſaid unto her; why how now ſiſter, what mean you by this? Are you turned Gallant, and think to out-brave me with this ſmoke? It is marvell you do not let the raine drip in to drive me hence. What have we to ſupper? ſo much ſmoke muſt promiſe much good cheer. It is not, I trow, a great deal of fire (as they ſay) and a little roaſt.

And as he went thus talking along, he entred into the Kitchin; where he had no ſooner ſeen our proviſion, but he gets him out again; ſaying, here is brave doings indeed, it is news to ſee this, Siſter. Which of us two, I pray, is to be married this night? How came this hither into the houſe, and when? What curious banquet is this, or who the gueſts that are invited unto it? Is this the confidence I have had of you? Is this the honour which I maintain? And this the reputation, that you give to your fathers houſe, and to me your unfortunate Brother? I muſt know the truth of this buſineſs, or elſe it is like to be a black night. She excuſed her ſelf unto him, but how or which way, *I* cannot tell you; for partly through fear, and partly becauſe the *Tinaja* was covered, *I* could not well either hear or underſtand more than the noiſe which her words ſent forth. And in this cholerick humour of his, being much offended with her, he willed her to ſit down at boord; And when they had ſupt, he in his own perſon went down with a Candell, and fell to ſearching of the houſe, and had made faſt the door, that opened out into the ſtreet: and they two entring together into their private chambers, remained there within, and I without in the *Tinaja*. All this while I was very attentive, to whatſoever was ſaid or done, and earneſtly betook my ſelf to my devotions, inſomuch, that

there was not any one prayer that I had learned all my life-time that I did not run over and over, that God might blind his eyes, and that he might not see where *I* was.

And finding my self out of danger, lifting up the cover, I thrust out my head a little to see whether my Mistresse were coming, or that *I* could hear her either cough, or spit, whether any Cat were stirring about the house, or any thing else whatsoever. Every thing that moved, my minde still gave me that it should be she. But seeing that she staid so long away, and that the house was wonderfull quiet, I leapt out of the belly of my *Tinaja*, like another *Jonas* out of the Whales belly, though not so clean as I could wish.

But it was my good hap, that for fear of such mischances, which are wont to happen, especially to young men, *I* had reserved my better cloaths for the day, making use a nights of that old Sute, which I had bought before, so that the care I took was not great, and it did so much the lesse grieve me. I ranged round about the house, and went from lodging to lodging, till I came at last to her chamber, where I began with my finger to scratch the door, like a Dogge and did the like upon the floor, and all that she might hear me: but this deaf Adder, was of that evill condition, that she had stopt her eares.

In this kinde of language the night wore away, and the day began to appear: which when I perceived, inraged, afflicted, desperate and ready to freez for cold, opening the street-door and pulling it after me, I went forth (like a fool as I was) cursing and blaspheming, fretting and fuming, and making crosses on the Wall, with a purpose never to come there any more.

Musing upon my mis-fortunes, I drew neer to mine own lodging, finding not far from thence a Cooks shop open, where I filled my belly with Pies, such as are eaten by such *Picaros* and Rogues as my self, which were to me more savory, than any other. And with them that rage, and wrathfull choller descended down into my stomack, which stuck before in my throat, and was ready to choak me. My lodging was neer at hand, I called to my servant, who (waiting there for me) opened the door; I came in, put off my cloaths, and got me to bed. But the remembrance of the wrong that I had received would not suffer me to sleep, or to take any rest. One while I condemned my self, another while my Mistresse, and by fits would lay the blame upon mine own ill fortune.

And while I was debating these things with my self, it being now broad day, behold one knocks at my Chamber door, and it was the Maid that had dogged me the day before, and her Mistress with her, who was no sooner come in, but she sets herself down in a chair, close by my bed-side, and her servant that waited on her, sate upon the ground neer unto the door. The Gentle-woman askt me a long Story of my life; Who I was? What my business? And how long I staid in town? But the devill a word of truth, that she could get from my mouth. All that I told her were errant lies, for I was made of nothing else. And thinking to deceive her, she caught me in the trap. I went satisfying of her demands, but fell short (I know not how) in that part of mine account, which concerned me most. For, whereas I should have said, That I was to reside there some certaine moneths. I told her that I past as a Traveller. And was shortly to be gone. She, that she might not lose the advantage of the Dice, and to shew what a poor gamester *I* was in seeking after such transitory sport, that was to last so little a while, (but a cast and away) made sure account if *I* would but set out her hand lively, to put a trick upon me. And thereupon she presently began to pitch the Hay, wherewith she meant to catch the Coney.

Thus resolved she carelessely, (or rather with a great deal of careless care) went discovering her bravery in her cloaths, which was neat and delicate, with rich abiliments of Gold, with other things under her gown, which was of Naples Grogoram, choicer Silk all *Italy* was not able to afford.

And taking out certain Beads of Corall out of her pocket, she made shew of playing with them in her hand, tossing them to and fro; and within a little while after, she faigned that she mist a Relick, which was fastned thereunto. She seemed to be much afflicted for the losse of it, saying that it was her husbands. And therewithall she suddenly rose up, as if it did import her to go back again presently to her own house, that she might lose no time for the finding of it again, if by chance she had there let it fall. And albeit *I* promised to give her such another, and perswaded her all that *I* could, and made her large offers, *I* could not winne her to stay any longer.

Away she went, yet passing her word unto me, that she would come again to visit me, and send her Maid back again unto me, as soon as she came home to advise me, if she had found her lost Jewell. It made me very melancholy, and grieved me much, that she should in that fashion

fashion go away from me; for that (as I told you before) she was marvellous beautifull, exceeding gallant, and wonderfull discreet. I had a great minde to sleep, and setled my self to take some rest, but I could not continue it for above two hours. I had too many cares in my head to take any ease, and therefore I arose that I might think the better of them when I was up.

By that time I had made my self ready, dinner came in, and while I was yet sitting at the Table, her Maid entred the roome. Who (being a witty Wench as she was) entertain'd me till dinner was ended. And then she told me, that she was once more come back again to see, whether her Mistris, playing there with her *Rosario* in her hand, had by chance let fall that peece? We were all down upon our knees, to see if we could have the good luck to find it; but it could not be found, because it was never lost.

When we had given over looking, I complemented with her, and told her, that I did not grieve so much for the worth of the thing it self, as for her sake, whose it was.

Then did she figure forth unto me the bigness, the proportion and the true fashion of it, obliging me with good words, to buy her such another; promising that her Mistresse should not fail to be with me the next day following betimes, making some fair excuse (the better to colour the business,) to go on Pilgrimage to our Ladies Shrine, or some other the like Visit.

Upon this I went along with her to the Gold-smiths, and bought her a dainty fine little golden book, curiously wrought, which her Maid had made choise of; and it may be she had her direction from her Mistresse, as having had her sight of this pretty toy but lately before. Howsoever I am sure they went clean away with it, for I could never after see either Mistresse, or Maid.

Now was it about three in the afternoon, and I had not yet digested the bread that lay in my stomack; I was ready to dye out of a longing desire that *I* had to know the occasion, and to search out the true reason of the last nights passage, and whether it were a matter of earnest, or a trick put upon me? And so putting this affront out of minde, as if there had never been any such matter, I returned to my former walk: Where I found my Mistresse looking very heavily on the matter, her countenance was sad and melancholy; and making shew, as if she had staid there for me, she beckned unto me with her hand to come unto her, putting her fore-finger upon her mouth, and casting her eye behind her, (as if she were afraid lest somebody should watch her,) she drew neer unto the door, and whispered softly unto me, that I should go gently on afore to the great Church, and so I did. She takes her mantle and hastens after me, meeting both, as it were at one instant between the two Quires; and she passing quite through them, went directly out of the Church, into the *Calle de la Capineria*, the street where all your womens *Chapines* are sold; and smiling upon me, and intising me unto her, with a lovely cast of her eye, she seemed to wish me to follow her. I made after her; she entred into a Merchants shop, in the *Alcana* and I with her. There she gave me satisfaction, vowing with a thousand oaths, that it was no fault of hers, and that she had no hand in that business. She filled my head with this winde: I beleeved her well composed lies, she promised this next night to make me amends; & though she were sure to lose her life, she would not spare it, to give me content. She made me so plyable, that she might now work me like Wex. She bought something, which came to about some hundred and fifty Royals, and when she was to pay for it, she said unto the Mercer; what shall I pay you weekly till this debt be out? He answered, Mistresse, see Ware, see money. I do not use to part with my Wares at this price, nor do I sell upon trust. If you deliver me my money, you may carry away what you have bought, if not, I must intreat you to pardon me.

Then I told him; Sir, This Gentle-woman is disposed to jest with you, for she hath money sufficient to satisfie for a greater matter than this. I am her Purse-bearer, and the steward of her house. So taking some Crownes out of my pocket, for to shew the greatness the more, *I* freed my self from basenes, and her from her debt: Apprehending then at the instant, that this was but a stratagem of hers, to be paid before-hand, and that she might not be mockt withall, as it often befalleth many women; nor did I repent me of what I had done; it seeming unto me, that by my fair proceeding, I had bound her unto me. Nor would I have given my two imployments of that one day; in the pursuit of these two Dames, for all the wealth of *Mexico*, and *Peru*. So I askt her whether she would keep true touch with me or no? And whether I might take sure hold of her promise? And at what hour I should come? She assured me that I might, and for the hour, she would not fail me at ten in the night. She went home to her house, and I to entertain the time abroad; Thinking with my

self,

ſelf, that *I* had ſeized on two preys at one flight, and took two Trouts at one ſtroke.

At the hour appointed, *I* put on my old diſguiſe, and got me to the Mill again. *I* gave the ſigne agreed upon between us, which was, to ſtrike certain ſtrokes with a ſtone underneath her window. But it was all one, as if *I* had beſtowed thoſe blows upon the Bridge of *Alcantra*.

*I* conceived with my ſelf, that the hour was not yet come, or that it was little more than ten of the clock, which made me dance attendance a little longer. And ſo hour after hour, I ſtaid waiting there, till it was twelve of the night, now and then making the wonted ſignes.

But what ſhould a man ſpend his time in talking to Saint *Juan de los Reyes*, being it is a *Statua* of Stone? It was but loſt labour, a wearying out of my ſelf in vain, and a meer mockery. For he, whom ſhe termed her brother, was her Gallant, and her Sweet-heart: and did maintain themſelves by theſe kinde of cheating tricks, and conſorted both together in all that they did.

They were of *Cordova*, proper in their perſons; and well accommodated; and amongſt other young Thruſhes, that they had brought into the Net, was a young Scrivener, but newly married, who being whetted on by this Gentlewoman, and tolled on by ſuch trains as ſhe had cunningly laid for him, had given her certain Jewels; and as ſhe dealt with me, ſo did ſhe lead him along with delayes, making him to wait upon her pleaſure, putting him to fine after fine to purchaſe his deſire. But when he found all was coozenage and roguery, he reſolved to be revenged on her.

That night *I* was quite tired out with a tedious expectation, (as you have already heard.) And when *I* was about to go my way, lo, *I* might diſcern a great troop of people making towards me, and ſuppoſing it to be the Juſtice, I got me a little aſide. At laſt *I* perceived, that they knockt at that door; *I* returned back, drawing neerer and neerer, a little and a little, to ſee what all this company did ſeek for. And one of the *Alguazils* (telling them within who they were) cauſed the door to be opened. When they were all gone in, I got me to the door, that I might the better underſtand how all things paſſed. The *Alguazil* ſearched all the houſe over and over, but could not finde that he came for. *I* was about to call unto them, to look into the *Tinaja*, and to have betook me to my heels when *I* had done. But the Scrivener preſently took that taske upon him, and ſaved me a labour, and had a care that no corner ſhould be left unſearcht.

But, as thoſe things cannot be carried ſo cloſe, but that they will ſoon be brought to light, if they be well followed, one by chance lighted upon a ſingle hand-cuffe that lay upon the ground, which at the time of the hiding of her brothers cloths, was let fall and left behinde out of haſte; and becauſe this was a buſineſs undertaken for a friend, and every one was willing to do his beſt, one of the *Alguazils* ſaid, This Cuffe muſt have a maſter, who ever it be.

The Gentlewoman would fain have ſalved up this matter: but having prickt the Hare, thoſe Hounds began to take a little more pains, and to hunt with more metall, in hope to have their game. And one of the *Alguazils*, ſeeing a great Coffer there, which (as he thought) might very well contain a man, commanded it to be opened; where they found my Gallant. Whereupon they were both willed to put on their cloths, and to make themſelves ready; which done, they were both for company carried to priſon together. *I* was both contented therewith and aſhamed. Contented, that it was my good hap not to be found there; and aſhamed that ſhe had gulled me, and made a fool of me. All the remainder of that night, *I* could not ſleep one wink, for thinking partly on this, and partly on that other Gentlewoman, upon whom, *I* thought to make my ſelf whole, *I* did conceit with my ſelf, that ſhe was a woman of another kinde of quality, and of a differing faſhion from the former.

All that day *I* ſtaid waiting for her, but ſhe did not ſo much as ſend me any meſſage by her maid, nor did *I* know where ſhe lived, nor what ſhe was. You ſee here how well *I* imployed my pains, and my purſe upon theſe two, and whether it had not been better for me to have laid out my money in the buying of ſome fifty young Lambs of a year old. *I* was now grown deſperate, and for my greater comfort amidſt theſe my troubles, at night when *I* came to my lodging, *I* met with an *Alguazil* there, a ſtranger, making inquiry for I know not what perſon. Now by this time you may imagine, in what poor caſe *I* took my ſelf to be, and how the world was like to go with me. *I* willed my ſervant to tell him, that if he had any thing to ſay to me, he ſhould be ſure to finde me there the next morning.

*In*

In the mean while I walkt out by the Gate *del Cambron*, where muſing and walking, I continued almoſt till it was day, framing Di courſes to my ſelf, what, or whom it ſhould be, that this *Alguazil* ſought for. But when the morning was come, I thought it a ſafe hour to go home, with purpoſe to change both my apparell and my lodging.

But by this time my care was ſecured; for *I* was not he that he looked for, as *I* afterwards underſtood. I went forth to the place of *Socodover*, where I heard two Mules cried for to go *Almagro*; I was ſlower in the hearing than the agreeing for them, or in my departing from *Toledo*. For every thing there me thought ſmelt of Broom, and the ſoles of old ſhoes. That night I reached to *Orgaz*, the next to *Malagon*. But being not able, out of the fear I had taken thoſe nights before, to take any reſt, I came thither ſo drowzy, and ſo ſleepy, that I was not able to hold up my head: But another new occaſion did awaken me, and made me to rowze up my ſpirits; which was: That as ſoon as I was entred into my Lodging, there came to take charge of my cloaths, and ſuch other things as I brought in with me, a young Wench, ſeeming to be ſomething more than a ſervant, and yet ſomewhat leſſe than a daughter; She had a good face of her own, a handſome feature, a pleaſant behaviour, and had both wit and tongue at will. Which ſort of creatures, (to draw both cuſtome and credit to ſuch kinde of houſes) your honeſt Inne-holders will be ſure to lay wait for, or ſeldome or never ſhall you ſee them unprovided of ſuch pretty Commodities to welcome, and cheer up their Gueſts. I talkt to her, and ſhe anſwered me; I could not ſpurre her that queſtion, whereunto ſhe did not kick me an anſwer. One diſcourſe drew on another, and we continued our converſation ſo farre forth that ſhe conſented unto me, and had peremptorily given me her promiſe, that ſhe would come and paſſe away the time with me, when her Maſter and Miſtreſſe were gone to bed and aſleep. She covered the boord; *I* gave her the brawn of the Capon; *I* drank a Health to her; and ſhe did pledge me; *I* would have held her faſt by the arme; ſhe flies off; I ſeeking to catch hold of her, and ſhe to get away from me: reaching at her, *I* fell down upon the one ſide to the ground. The chair was of Wood and had ſome turned peeces in it rib-wiſe, it took me juſt athwart the midſt of my body, whereby *I* received a ſhrewd blow. And it was a fair gift of God, that it was not far worſe; for if the Dagger that I had at my back, had by chance falne out of the ſheath, and picht with the Pummell on the ground, and the point have been upward, and had lighted between one of thoſe barres or ribs in the Chair, a thouſand pound to a penny, but that *I* had been ſlaine out-right in the place; and ſo there being an end of me, my Creditours had been paid. When *I* was up, and all was well, I put the queſtion again unto her, whether I ſhould depend upon her coming? She told me *I* ſhould ſee, whether ſhe meant to fail me or no? Uttering ſome other idle fooliſh ſpeechs, and ſo went her wayes.

You have heard already how ill *I* paſt thoſe nights before, which made me now ſo heavy headed, that it was impoſſible that *I* ſhould any longer bear up, and abſtaine from ſleeping. But I was deſirous to riſe betimes, whether *I* ſlept or no. And therefore I willed my ſervants, that they ſhould get them ſtraw and Barley, ſo much as our Mules were to be allowed the next morning, and that they ſhould bring it, and put it in the Chamber where *I* lay. Which being done, having ſet it neer unto the door, they pulled it after them, and leaving it unſhut, they went to bed. And albeit ſleep would fain have ſeized upon me, yet my deſire kept me waking; but not being able to hold out any longer, I was forced to yeeld my ſelf under the arreſt of *Morpheus* his Mace, in whoſe ſilken bands I was faſt, though ſoftly bound.

About mid-night a little ſhe-Aſſe had ſlipt her halter in the Stable, and got looſe (if ſhe were not left looſe before, as I verily perſwade my ſelf it was mine Hoſts, and went about the houſe to ſeek her Provant;) This Aſſe came to my lodging, and having ſmelt out the Barley, the little fool thruſt in her head, thinking to have met with a good mouthfull, and in preſſing to come where the Provender was in the Sieve, ſhe wagged, and wagged, this way and that way, and ſtriving to get in, the door began to creak, *I* that was mindfull of the buſineſs, a little thing would ſuffice to revive my remembrance: And now *I* was fully perſwaded, that *I* had the Buls ſure enough in the Place, and that they could by no means get from me. And becauſe *I* was all this while very ſleepy, and ſcarce half awake, *I* imagined with my ſelf that ſhe could not find the way to the bed, whereupon *I* raiſed my ſelf, and ſitting up in my bed, *I* called her unto me. When the Aſſe heard my voice, ſhe was afraid, and ſtood ſtill, ſave onely that ſhe did put one of her fore-feet in the frail wherein the ſtraw was. *I* thinking that it was the Wench, and that ſhe had ſtumbled by chance upon it, leapt out of my bed, and ſaid unto her, Come hither, my Love, come to bed, give

me thy hand. And becauſe ſhe ſhould reach me, I ſtretcht out my body at large unto her, and lifting up my leg, *I* hit her with my knee on the ſhout; with that ſhe lifted up her head, and ſmote me ſuch a blow with hers on the noddle, that ſhe almoſt ſet me on my breech, ſo much was *I* aſtonied therewith. And when ſhe had done, ſhe fled away from me, as faſt as her legs would give her leave. For if ſhe had ſtaid, I ſhould have had much adoe (conſidering the pain I was in) to have forborne to thruſt my Dagger up to the hilts in her guttes.

I bled mainly, both at mouth and noſe; and curſing Love, and all his cunning tricks to the pit of hell; *I* knew that this hapned deſervedly unto me: becauſe, being a wild ſimple Lad as I was, I was ſo eaſie of belief. But I quickly made faſt my door and got me to bed.

## Chapter IX.

*How* Guzman de Alfarache *liſts himſelf for a Souldier. He telleth whence that ill phraſe grew.* En Malagon, en cada caſa un ladron, y en lo del Alcalde, hijo y padre. *In* Malagon, *every houſe a theef; And in that of the* Alcalde, *two: The father and the ſonne. How in a ſhort time, through ill government, all* Guzmans *money is gone; How to his grief he is forced to ſerve a Captaine. Some leſſons are given to young men. To theſe are added the faults of bad Miniſters in matters of warfare.*

AS if love had not been a deſire of immortality, bred in an idle minde: without any beginning of reaſon, without any ſubjection to Law, which is entertained by the Will; but with it cannot be put off; eaſie in its entrance to the heart, but hard to be thruſt out again; I began to ſwear, that I would never more follow his Colours, nor be of his Company. But *I* was aſleep when I made this proteſtation, and knew not what I ſaid. My ſleepineſſe was ſo great then at that time, that all my pain could not keep me waking.

Which drowſineſſe of mine was the cauſe, that I could not riſe ſo early as I thought, but kept my bed till nine of the clock that morning. At which hour comes me in this my fiddle-faddle of the Inne, to give me ſatisfaction, vowing and ſwearing unto me, that ſhe lay within her Maſter and Miſtris, and that they had ſhut her up, and kept the key themſelves, that ſhe could by no means get forth: Though for mine own part, I did verily beleeve, that ſhe did purpoſely play the wag with me, and had never any ſuch meaning, but did lye in all that ſhe ſaid. Whereupon I told her? O friend *Lucia*, your love hath done me a great deal of hurt: it began in the Chair, and ended in the Saddle. I ſhall look hereafter a little better to your water. Take me with that fault again, and I will give you leave to hang me. Go about your buſineſs, go, I have no more to ſay to you. Make haſte, and bring in break-faſt, for I will preſently be gone. So ſhe roſted out of hand a brace of Partridge, ſerved in with a ſlice or two of Bacon, which ſerved both for our break-faſt, and our dinner, becauſe the day was farre ſpent, and our journey but ſhort.

Well, I was now upon going, my Mules were ready, and ſtayd for my coming. The Mule that I rode on, was an ill-conditioned jade, and ſomewhat skittiſh. When I was ready to put foot in the ſtirrop, *I* got me up upon a bench; thinking from thence to get with the greater eaſe into my Saddle; but by her going back, ſhe ſeemed to tell me, that I ſhould not doe it ſo eaſie as I thought; or elſe her meaning was, that I ſhould quickly get me thence, or elſe ſhe would ſee me going with a witneſs, and becauſe ſhe could not ſpeak my language, that ſhe might make me underſtand her by ſignes, jerking out her hinder legges, ſhe flings me out her heels, and doubling her ſides with two kicks that ſhe made at me, ſhe threw me a good wayes from her: But ſhe did me no harme, for I recovered my ſelf by and by, and got me up upon my legs. After this I was a little more wary, and took better heed. And with a loud voice I began to cry out: There is not any female (I think) in this Inne, even to the very Mules, which hath not her jadiſh tricks.

Well, I was ſeated in my Saddle, and my Mule was quiet, and being upon the way, (ſeeing what miſ-fortunes I had ſuffered) I acquainted my ſervants what had hapned unto me, with the Affe that came into my Chamber: They laught exceedingly, as if they would have burſt their hearts, and the more, at my weak and childiſh underſtanding, that I would give credit to a Wench in an Inne, who are never good but at their firſt coming, and ever after prove arrant jades, that a man cannot tell how to truſt to them.

We

We had now gone two long Leagues, and the boy that went a foot by us to look unto our Mules, would needs drink. I called, bring hither the Bottle, give me the bottle, but no bottle appears; for we had left it behind us. Peradventure my Hosteſſe (ſaid the boy) hath ſeazed upon it, and layd it aſide in waggery, becauſe we might ride the lighter, or be payd for her care in keeping it ſafe for us.

Nay (quoth my Page) I rather beleeve, that they amongſt them have ſtolne it from us, for to adde more fame to this Town, that they may not loſe that good name they have gotten.

Then was *I* very deſirous to know, how this bad report came firſt to be raiſed, and whence it grew. And becauſe they that uſe to carry merchandize from place to place, and travell often on the way, and now and then hear diverſe men diſcourſe of ſuch things as theſe, I thought with my ſelf, I were beſt aske the reaſon of it of our Foot-man, imagining he (if any man) could beſt inform us of it.

Thereupon I called unto him; and ſaid; Friend *Andres*: Since thou haſt been a peece of a Scholer, a Wane-man, and now a *Moco de mulas*, one that Lackey'ſt along with Mules, and lookeſt unto them, I preethe tell me (if happily thou haſt heard of it) how this Town came to have this ill name, and therefore it is commonly ſaid as a by-word, or by way of a Proverbe in every mans mouth: *En Malagon, en cada caſa, ay un ladron: y en la del Alcalde, hijo, y padre.* Every houſe in *Malagon* hath a theef of his own: And in that of the *Alcalde*, there are twain; the father and the ſon, both knaves in grain.

The Muleter made an anſwer, ſaying, Sir, your worſhip askes me of a thing, which I have been told of diverſe times, and that diverſe wayes, every one following his own opinion: which if I ſhould recount them all unto you, the way is too ſhort and the ſtory too long, and the deſire that I have to drink, beyond them both. For I am ſo dry, that I am ſcarce able to ſpeak a word. But be it as it may be, I will doe my beſt to ſatisfie your longing. Laying that therefore aſide, which hath no colour nor ſhaddow of truth, and conforming my ſelf according to the opinion of ſome; of whom *I* have heard it; upon whoſe judgement *I* ground mine, as more agreeable unto reaſon: For in that, for which we have no naturall reaſon, nor by tradition left unto us in writing, when time ſhall have buried theſe things, a good and ſound judgement muſt be the Law, which we muſt obey, and whereunto we ought to conform our ſelves. And ſo this had it's beginning, (which is now long ſince, time out of minde) in this manner, as I ſhall now deliver unto you.

*In* the year of our Lord, 1236. King *Don Fernando*, ſur-named the *Holy*, raigning in *Caſtilla*, and *Leon*, who gained *Sevill*, the ſecond yeer after the death of King *Don Alphonſo* his father, ſtayd one day at dinner in *Benavente* where he received news, that the Chriſtians had entred the Citie of *Cordova* and had made themſelves Maſters of the Towers, and Caſtles belonging to the Suburbs, which they call *Axarquia*, together with that gate and the wall. And for that the Moors were many, and the Chriſtians few, they were driven to great neceſſities for want of ſuccour.

The like adviſe was diſpatched by Poſt, to *Don Aluar Perez de Caſtro*, who was in *Martos*, and to *Don Ordonno Aluarez*, Principall Gentlemen of *Caſtile*, men of great power and ſtrength, and to many other perſons, to give them their beſt aide and aſſiſtance. Every one of theſe, that had notice of it, preſently raiſed Forces, and haſtened thither with all the ſpeed they could; the King likewiſe marched forward on his way, without any delay or protraction at all; albeit, that this news was brought unto him on the 28. of *January*, and that the ſeaſon was very bad, and painfull to travell, by reaſon of the great ſnows, and the extreme coldneſſe of the weather. But nothing could hinder him from this his deſigne, for he haſted away to their ſuccour, leaving order that the reſt of his Armie ſhould follow him, carrying no more along with him to attend his perſon, than a hundred Gentlemen of good quality.

The King had likewiſe given order to all Cities, Towns, and other places, that were able to afford aide, to ſend their Souldiers to thoſe Frontires and Borders, whither he himſelf was to go. Great ſtore of rain fell, the Rivers and other Foords by which they were to paſſe, were ſo mightily riſen, that his men were not able to go forward.

There met together at that time in *Malagon* a great multitude of Souldiers ſent from diverſe and ſundry parts, being in number ſo many, that though that place were very well peopled, and of great receipt, being one of the beſt Towns in all that quarter; yet in every houſe there was lodged one Souldier at the leaſt; and in ſome two or three.

The *Alcalde* did lodge one of the Captains of a Company, and a ſonne of his, that he

brought along with him, and was his *Alferez*. Their provision grew short, the wayes bad, there was no coming to Market; so that for want of relief, every one suffered necessity, every one was put to his shifts, and not a man amongst them, but sought to maintain and preserve his life by filching and stealing, robbing here and there, whence or for whom it made no matter, all was one to them: Life was sweet. Let others hang and starve; so as they had where withall, all was well.

A conceited Clown of that very Place, a shrewd witty fellow for a plain Husband-man, departed thence, to go to *Toledo*: And meeting in *Orgaz* with a brave troop of Gentlemen, they demanded of him, whence he was? He answered, of *Malagon*. They further askt him, what's the news there? He told them; Gentlemen, all the news in *Malagon*; is, in every house, a theef; and in the *Alcalde*, two; the sonne, and the father.

And this was the true Originall of that false report, which men put upon that Town, as not knowing any other certain ground, whence this bruit should be raised; and is now, in these our times, a notorious wrong done unto them, as being a fault whereof they are not guilty, and yet are most unjustly charged therewith. For in all this way, that we have come and gone or whithersoever else it shall be your hap to travell, I doubt me, you will hardly finde either better entertainment (I mean for Innes) or more civill and better behaved people (taking every man according to his condition and breeding) than are in this Town. Yet Sir, withall I could likewise tell you, of many notable theits, and very famous ones, that have been committed in *Malagon*.

Whilst we were thus discoursing on the way to passe away the time, and make our journey seem the easier, I lighted on a Traveller, of whom I learned, That in *Amagro*, I should meet with a company of Souldiers. Whereof having throughly informed my self, and well assured of their being there, I was wonderfull glad of it; for this was the onely thing that I did desire, and seek after for to cast off all care, and to give a farewell to all my former troubles.

In my coming into the Town, I was no sooner entred, but I might perceive in the high street a Banner hanging out at a Window. I past along by it, and went to lodge at one of the Innes there in the Market-place, where I supt betimes, and got me quickly to bed, that I might recover some of my lost sleeps, and repair the wrongs of so many ill-passed nights, as I had lately endured.

Mine Host, and those his Guests that he had in the house, seeing me come in so well accommodated, and so well waited on, made inquiry of my servants, who I was. And they (as not knowing any thing, but what they heard from my self) told thim; that my name was *Don Juan de Guzman*: Sonne to a principall Gentleman of the house of *Toral*. On the morning very early, my Page brought me my cloaths; I put them on, setting my self forth in all my bravest gallantry, and after that I had been abroad and heard Masse, I went to visit the Captaine, telling him, that *I* was come in search of him, to tender my service unto him. He received me with a great deal of courtesie, and with a cheerfull look; which was no more than my respect unto him might challenge; besides, the good fashion, that I came to him in, and the moneys which I brought along with me in my purse, (which were little lesse than a thousand *Royals*) might merit some respect; for the rest of the birds were flown, and, like *Noahs* Crow, were never to return again; they were spent and gone in gay cloaths, in courting of Wenches, and in good-fellowship upon the way. He admitted me into his own Squadron, made me sit and eat with him at his own Table, using me evermore with much love and kindnes.

In requitall whereof, I began to *Regalar* him; and to serve him; presenting him still with one thing or other, inlarging my hand like a Prince, as if I had for every Tuesday a new pair of ears; or were sure to meet (whersoever I came) with another Grocer, another River, and another Grove of Trees, wherein to hide my self. So fast did I spend my money without fear or wit, threw it away with so prodigall an hand, taking ames-Ace against seven, and deuz-Ace against eleven; I did so often visit the Drum-head, that at last getting little, and losing much, I was almost quite blown up.

In these kinde of entertainments did I consume my self, and my time, till we were to march away: And for to fill up the Company we were all of us put into a Church, whence we came forth one by one, and when they came to call me, the Pay-Master lookt upon me, in whose eye I seemed somewhat to young, in so much that he durst not inroll me amongst the rest, according to the instructions that were given him. Whereat I grew exceeding angry, and was so inflamed with choler, that I had much adoe to contain my

self,

ſelf, but was ready to break forth into paſſion, and to have laſht out into ſome liberty of language, whereof afterwards I might have repented my ſelf; becauſe it might have forced me to utter that, which would not have well beſeemed me, nor indeed had been lawfull for me to vent, conſidering the time, and place.

O what good Cloaths can do! I knew the time when men would kick me, and cuffe me about the ears, and I could be content to hang my head in my boſom, hold my peace, and take all patiently. But now I made reckoning, as if all heaven had lyen at the ſtake, of that which to ſpeak of, was not worth a ſtraw, waxing mad with anger. Then I began to know by mine own experience that no Wine can make a man ſo drunk, as the firſt fit of anger. And it much more blindeth the underſtanding, not leaving it any the leaſt light of reaſon. And if that heat ſhould not preſently paſſe away, I know not what fierceneſſe, or brutiſhneſſe may be compared to this fury of ours. I did quickly quench this flame, and my Hat being come again to his colour, and my Choler pacified, I ſaid unto him, Sir, you that are my pay-maſter, my years (I confeſſe) are few, but my courage as great as any mans. It is the heart that commends, and this arm knows how to brandiſh a blade, there is bloud and marrow enough in it, for to undertake great matters.

He anſwered me very gravely and wiſely, it may be ſo, Sir, and I do verily believe it, and with much more willingneſſe, than your ſelf can ſpeak it: but the order that I have given me in charge is thus and thus, wherein if I ſhould exceed my Commiſſion, my Purſe muſt ſoundly pay for it. No body ſhall ſmart for it but my ſelf. I knew not what to reply to ſo fair an anſwer, though the bloud that boyled in my breaſt, and the colour that ſhew'd it ſelf in my cheeks, could not ſo eaſily be allaid, till my Choler were a little better ſetled. My Captain was very ſenſible of this affront of mine, and took it as tenderly as if the caſe had been his own.

For being quitted of my place, he was perſwaded I ſhould then preſently forſake his company. And taking part with me againſt the Pay-maſter, he was ſomewhat round with him, inſomuch that neither of them having the patience to bear one with another, they grew to high words, and much adoe there was.

This ſtorm was laid, the Sea had done roaring, their ſtriſe was ended, and the Company was fully made up. The Captain came to viſit me at my Lodging; telling me in brave and gallant terms, how much this grief of mine did trouble him, and how ſorry he was for my heavineſſe; and with honourable, both words and promiſes, he gave me that good ſatisfaction, that I reſted very well contented. Such force had eloquence, that as horſes ſuffer themſelves to be ruled with good bridles and bits; ſo the fierce rage, and Cholerick humours of men, are bridled and governed by mannerly reaſons, and are brought to winde and turn their head-ſtrong wills, changing their violent reſolutions, being eaſily reduced in the end to a ſetled pace, and are well content to go forward fair and ſoftly on their way.

Whereupon, albeit I was reſolved to leave him, yet notwithſtanding his words were ſo powerfull with me, that he ſtopt me in my courſe, and ſuddenly took me up, when I was in the heat and height of my Carreer. We continued in this kinde of converſation a pretty while, and a great deal of good talk we had together; And if it be not dangerous to ſpeak the truth (for fear of being called in queſtion) we did murmure and mutine at the ſmall reckoning, and ſlight acknowledgement of Souldiers, and men of true worth and valour, and the baſe eſteem that was made of military Diſcipline and profeſſion of Arms; then did we rail at the ſlight remuneration of ſervices, and with how little truth ſome Miniſters did inform the State thereof, for their own proper ends: How things are quite out of order, and utterly miſcarry, becauſe buſineſſes are not well carried, and are not in a courſe, that ſhould direct them to a good end, every man tending his particular profit, preferring private before publick good.

And though ſuch an one know, that another man with a very good zeal and love to his Countrey, doth govern his Army well, and lead them on bravely, he wreſts all his good ſervices to the worſt ſenſe, and ſeeks to overthrow his well-deſerved reputation, laying Nets to intrap him, that he may be the onely Commander, joyning with his enemies, and falling croſſe with his friends, that he may bring the dance before his own door, and raiſe himſelf by the others ruine, propoſing to himſelf, by this prepoſterous dealing, to put himſelf into a better fortune.

And to effect this his unruly deſire, he will ſeek out a thouſand fetches, and as many winding Pipes will he lay before hand, to bring the water to his own Conduit. He would make

himſelf like unto the higheſt, and place his throne in the North, and ſuffer no man to ſit by him, or to be his equal. Such men as theſe exercise their voice onely in the ſervice of the King, not ſticking to cry out, This and this will make much for his Majeſties ſervice; but their works, and their actions, are directed to their own good. Like unto that day-labourer, who lifts up his arms to heaven, but ſtrikes his Mattock into the ground. Theſe make vvars at their pleaſure, break Leagues when they liſt, falling in their Obligation, ruining the Common-wealth, robbing men of their eſtates, and in the end damning of their own Souls.

How many errors have been committed? How many brave Commanders loſt? How many Armies utterly overthrown? The fault whereof is laid upon him, that doth leaſt deſerve the blame. And the ſole cauſe of this is, becauſe theſe men will forſooth have it ſo, that this ill ſhall make for their good. For if things ſhould ſucceed well, why then it ſhould go ill with them.

This is the common courſe now adayes, and this makes all out of joynt, and cauſes ſuch confuſion in the vvorld. Willl you ſee Sir, to what poor paſſe our ill fortune hath brought us, that thoſe brave Cloaths, gallant Feathers, and glorious colours; things that put life and ſpirit into a Souldiers heart, to make him venture couragiouſly upon all difficulties, to hew out his way with his ſword, and to undertake any brave and noble enterprize, in ſeeing us thus adorned, we are diſgraced in *Spain*, our habit ſcorned, and our ſelves flouted at? Thinking forſooth that we muſt walk the ſtreets in black, like a company of Soliciters, or like ſome Servitor, or poor Scholer, that waits upon another, and hath not a Gown to his back to hide his pittifull rags, or to cover our tattered Cloaths; (as your Students uſe to do) with black foot-cloaths, that the old rotten Saddle underneath may not be ſeen.

Now are we quite down the winde, and never ſo much as now; For thoſe that ſhould moſt honour us, do leaſt favour us. The onely bare name of a Spaniard, which heretofore did affright the enemy, and with the reputation of that one word, made the whole vvorld to tremble; now (for our ſins ſake) the glory of that is in a manner loſt and gone. And we are ſo faln off from what we were, that we are not able to do that now with our ſwords, which before we might have carried with our words. Yet ſuch as we have been, we are, and ſhall be ſtill. It is God, that muſt make us to acknowledge theſe our errours, and that muſt work amendment in thoſe that are the cauſe thereof; going (in that courſe wherein now they run) againſt their King, againſt the Laws of the Land, againſt their Countrey, and againſt themſelves.

I need not (*Sennor Don Juan*) to produce any other witneſſe, than the preſent times, for the truth of what I have ſpoken, and to prove unto you, that the main cauſe of all your great miſchiefs in a State, is a Favorites inwardneſſe with his King, ſuffering no man to *Privar*, or to be able to do any thing but himſelf, led on with the greedineſſe of his own private gain. From this his ill-ployed greatneſſe, groweth hatred; from hatred, envy; from envy, diſſention; and from diſſention, evil order: from whence you may inferre thoſe other inconveniences, that may follow thereupon. Let it not trouble you Sir, that we are now to march hence. In *Italy*, you ſhall finde another kinde of vvorld; and here I paſſe my word unto you, that I will make you an ancient. Which albeit it be a meaner place, than your merits may challenge, yet it may ſerve as a ſtep to advance you higher. I gave him many thanks for this his friendly offer. We took our leaves, he was very deſirous to go home alone; I earneſtly intreated him, that I might wait upon him to his Lodging, but he would by no means conſent thereunto. The next day following, the Company marched away without any ſtay, till they came near unto the Sea-coaſt; (the Captain ſpending liberally upon my purſe:) We ſtayed waiting there for the coming of the Gallies, but three moneths were almoſt ſpent, before we could have any news of them. In which time, and that which was already paſt, my purſe had ſpit his venome, and my rents began to fail me. My countenance at play, did likewiſe put a helping hand to my ſpeedier diſpatch: ſo that I was now quite out of Caſh, and all my money was gone; not all in one day, but all, at all theſe ſeveral times. I was (as your old pratling Goſſips uſe to ſay) reduced back again to my former ſtate, and might walk (as I did before) with a white Cudgel under mine arm. How much did I then reſent my former follies? How angry was I grown with my ſelf? What amendment did I propoſe unto my ſelf, now that I had not ſo much as one ſingle penny left me in my purſe? How many ſhifts did I uſe to conſerve my ſelf, when I did not know againſt what I ree to lean? who forced me to fall in love without diſcretion? Who made me turn Gallant, without moderation? Who taught me to ſpend without government? To what end was I ſo free in my play, ſo frank in my lodging? And ſo prodigal with my Captain? *Quanto ſe halla*

*traſero,*

*trasero, quien enſilla muy delantero?* How often is he caſt behinde, that is firſt in the Saddle? What a ſhame is it for a man to follow his delights? What a baſeneſſe to be captivated by his pleaſures? I was ready to run beſides my ſelf, and was almoſt out of my little wits, that when I had put my ſelf in ſo good a Predicament, I could not hold me there, and keep my ſelf well, while it was well with me.

Now in regard, as well of my youth, as theſe my youthfull vanities, I was no more eſteemed, or reſpected of any. The friends that I had in my proſperity, the free table that I kept with my Captain, the *Alferez* place, and the Enſign, that he told me he would beſtow upon me, it ſeemed that they were all ſtrooken with a ſudden lightning, which had burnt and conſumed them. They paſt as an Arrow, that makes his quick feathered flight through the aire; like a Thunder-bolt, that ſtrikes to death, before it be diſcerned; or to the twinkling of the eye, which opens and ſhuts in an inſtant.

When my money fell ſhort, all fell away from me: as long as I had that, I had them; that gone, they ſhook hands with me, and bid me farewell. Thus by little and little, piece after piece, all my ornaments were taken off, and poor *Don Juan de Guzman* was degraded. I was like that *Obiſpillo de San Nicholas*, that pretty little Biſhop S. *Nicholas*, reſpected onely for his Holy-day; and ſo I, while I had money in my purſe, and no longer.

Thoſe that heretofore did honour me, did viſit me, did entertain me, came to feaſt and banket with me, the heart-ſtrings of my purſe being broken, they forſook me, as being no man of this vvorld; Not a man that vvould talk vvith me, or converſe vvith me. And not onely ſo, but they vvould not ſo much as vouchſafe to look upon me, or once ſuffer me to come in their company. The perfume that did once ſmell ſweet, doth now ſtink in their noſes. They that knew not before how to be unkinde, do now take all things in ſnuffe. And I that honoured them, am requited by them with diſhonour, and all becauſe I am become poor. And as if poverty had been a great and heynous offence, I was conſigned over to the Secular power. My dealing and converſation was wholy now with the ſtraggling boyes about the Camp, ſuch as carried Wallets and Knap-ſacks for the Souldiers, and on this had I now ſet up my reſt. And it is good Juſtice, *Que quien tal haze, que aſſi lo pague.* As a man brews, ſo let him bake.

## CHAP. X.

Guzman the Alfarache *declareth the misfortunes, and the wants of one that is decayed in his fortunes: And how he followed a Captain, till he came into* Italy, *exerciſing himſelf in all kinde of theſts, great and ſmall; for the relief and help of his Maſter.*



How bitter was it unto me to begin; how troubleſome to go on; how grievous to endure this new dif-adventure? But I had been well acquainted heretofore with theſe kinde of miſ-fortunes, and had learned them long ſince to my great coſt. And becauſe theſe things were not new unto me, I preſently fell to my work, and lively beſtir'd my ſelf about my buſineſſe. And I can aſſure you it is a great happineſſe for a man to ſute himſelf to all occaſions, and to know how to turn his hand to all kinde of labour, not relying on theſe tranſitory goods of the vvorld, which like Buckets in a Well, are now full and then empty; and no ſooner up but they are down again.

But this one thing was my chief comfort, That in the time of my proſperity, I gained credit againſt the day of adverſity. And I did not count it my leaſt riches, ſeeing I was to become poor, that I had left a ſtamp and impreſſion in all mens mindes, that I was of a noble and free diſpoſition, by thoſe my former actions, which were able to ſpeak themſelves, though my ſelf ſhould be ſilent.

My Captain made ſome reckoning of me, acknowledging the courteſies, that I had uſed towards him, and was more willing than able to help me. For (poor man) he had ſcarce enough to ſerve his own turn. But he conſerv'd me at leaſt in that *buen punto* and good eſteem, which he had at his firſt knowledge of me, anon after that we were acquainted, bearing a kinde of reſpect to the houſe whereof I came, and to thoſe my ſuppoſed Parents.

I was inforced to ſtrip my ſelf, and laying aſide all my gallantry, I began to Cloath my ſelf again in a meaner and poorer faſhion, and to put on that rich (though unregarded) Robe of humility, which I did not think on in my bravery, and ſcorned (as a thing of nought) when I was flush, and full of money.

Con-

Conſidering with my ſelf, that *Vanity* and *Neceſſity* could not well ſute together. And that one Chair was not able to hold them both. For the rich man if he brave it, he is to be born withall, for he hath wherewithall. But that a poor man ſhould be ſo vain, is to be but like the *Cameleon*; who, whatſoever he draws and ſucks into him, is but aire without ſubſtance. And therefore as the rich man that is vain, ought to be abhorred; So the poor man that is proud, is not to be endured; it is inſupportable in the one, and ſcandalous in the other.

I ſaw, that I was not able to live of my ſelf, and therefore got to ſerve my Captain, making him now my Maſter, who but a little before was my Companion. And I waited on him with that care, as I did on the Cook. Howbeit, he commanded me with a kinde of reſpect, as conſidering who I was, and that my exceſſes, my childiſhneſſe, and ill-governed youth, had brought me to this low ebbe, that I was driven to ſerve him. And he did thus far aſſure himſelf of me, that I would not do any thing unworthy a Gentleman, and un-beſeeming my birth and Parentage, for any intereſt in the vvorld.

He held me to be as faithfull, and as ſecret, as I was patient. He made me Treaſurer of all his ſecrets; for which affiance I alwayes ſhew'd my ſelf thankfull unto him. He manifeſted his neceſſities, and made known his wants unto me, and what he had ſpent in his pretenſions; beſides the prolix time; and the exceſſive travel and pains, whereby he at laſt obtained them; as by intreating, bribing, flattering, ſerving, attending, crouching, creeping, making of legs, bowing the head to the ground, vvith cap in hand, and a quick and nimble pace, trotting up and down the ſtreets from morning to night; early, & late, vvithout intermiſſion.

I remember he told me, That going out of the Palace vvith the Kings Favourite, becauſe he put on his Hat, vvhileſt he vvas entring into his Coach, he lookt upon him, as if he vvould have eaten him; and ſhortly after, gave him to underſtand as much, by delaying his diſpatch, and making him dance attendance at Court many a fair day, till he thought he had ſufficiently puniſhed both his purſe, and his patience. It ſhall ever be in my *Letany*, *Good Lord deliver us*, when power and malice meet.

It is a miſerable thing, and much to be pitied that ſuch an Idol as one of theſe ſhould affect particular adoration; not conſidering, that he is but a man, a repreſentant, a poor kinde of Comedian, that acts his part upon the ſtage of this vvorld, and comes forth with this, or that Office, thus and thus attended, or at leaſt reſembling ſuch a perſon, and that when the Play is done, (which cannot be long) he muſt preſently enter into the Tyring-houſe of the grave, & be turned to duſt & aſhes, as one of the ſons of the earth, which is the common mother of us all.

Behold (brother) and ſee the Enterlude of our life is ended; our diſguiſes laid aſide; and thou art as I; I as thou; and all of us as one another. Some do ſo ſtrut and ſtretch out their bodies, and are ſwoln ſo big with the puffing winde of pride, as if they were able to ſwallow the whole Sea into their belly. They ſport and play, and follow their pleaſures, as if their abode on earth were to be eternal. They ſet themſelves aloft, and in-throne themſelves on high, as if they would get them out of deaths reach, and that it ſhould not be in his power to tumble them down. Bleſſed be God, that there is a God. And bleſſed be his mercy, that he hath provided one equal day of Juſtice for us all.

I did much grieve at my Captains poverty, becauſe I did not know how to remedy it. And by how much the more is the want and neceſſity of him that is Noble, by ſo much the more doth the poor man pity it, than the rich: he had ſome Jewels left, which he might ſell if need were, but thoſe were things to do him honour; and being that he was upon his departure, ready to imbark himſelf, where he ſhould have occaſion to uſe them, it went againſt the very heart of him, to marre much, to mend a little.

Now, while theſe Gallies were ſo ſlow in coming, we were fain in the mean while to go from one Town to another, to quarter our ſelves with the beſt conveniency we could. By that confeſſion, which my Maſter had made unto me, I underſtood his minde, and the end wherefore he did it.

I told him, Sir, I know by good experience, both good and bad fortune; proſperity, and adverſity, and wot well what they are.

In my younger years I have travelled far and near, and have ſeen ſomewhat of the world. I ſhall to the uttermoſt of my power expreſſe that loyalty and faithfulneſſe which I owe unto my Maſter, and to the Stock whereof I come.

Take you, Sir, no care, aſſuring your ſelf, that I will hazard my life in your ſervice, and will ſo order the buſineſſe (till better times ſhall befriend us) that for the preſent, you ſhall paſſe over the trouble you now are in, with a great deal more eaſe. Thus did I take a task upon me, that was far greater than my ſtrength, or wit could promiſe.

From

From that time forward, I did in this Office that I had undertaken to perform, things of admiration, and such as were beyond belief.

In every place, where we were to lodge our Souldiers, I had gotten a dozen Billets, whereof the least afforded no lesse than twelve *Royals*, and some did contribute fifty. My entrance was free into all those houses, where nothing was safe from my hands, no not so much as the water that was in their Wells.

I never suffered my Master to be without a Hen, a Chicken, a Capon, or a Pidgeon, both at dinner and supper, and a whole Gammon of Bacon every Sunday boyl'd in Wine. Never did I reserve any thing for my self of all these booties that I made. But look whatsoever I got, I put it all into his hands.

If by chance the Master of the house should take me napping, if it were of small value, it was passed over as a thing of nothing, and accounted onely a waggish trick; but if it were of any moment, my punishment was, to be brought by my Master before him that complained of me, & causing my hands to be bound, with the thin sole of a shoe he would give me my payment; which being of a hollow kinde of grain, it sounded loud, but did smart but little; the noise was more than the pain. Sometimes I should have the luck to get me Sureties, that should passe their word for me, that *I* should not do so any more, and then *I* was pardon'd. But though they should chance to fail me, the chastisement was not rigorous, it did not raise any Wheals or Blisters, nor left any mark of the stripes upon my body. And because *I* knew, they were given me more for fashion sake, than any ill will; and rather to satisfie others, than to hurt me, before ever the blow came near me, I would cry out, as if I had been kill'd; and set out such a throat, as if I would have rent the very walls of the house asunder.

Thus did my Master & I give good satisfaction; he, by complying with his obligation; & I, by supplying of his necessities: by killing first his hunger, & afterwards by giving life to his honor.

I would sometimes get me out into the High-wayes, and seaze upon all sorts of baggages; then would I seem to shew them the favour of the School, in selling them their own again; in-dearing to the Owners of them, that it cost me thus and thus much out of mine own purse, to get these their goods to be returned unto them, so that I had both money, and thanks for my pains.

Those commodities which we lighted on in the Villages where we lay, those that were able might chance to see them again, and redeem them for their money; but those that had not wherewithall, their goods were invisible, not a ragge to be seen; they that had taken them from them, were fled and gone, and no more news to be heard of them. At the Musters, when the Muster-master was to see if the Company were full, I would thrust in amongst the Souldiers, five, or six young fellows of the Town, well appointed, and made them to passe. Sometimes I would so handle the matter, that putting one single man in the Church, up above in the Charnel house that is made for dead mens bones, five times one after another, I received five payes. And for him that was to come last, I would clap a plaister upon his nose, that he might not be known. And every several time, I did change his Cloaths, because my knavery should not be found out, and my trick discovered.

With these Gigs, and others the like gulleries, mine own person was as good as four mens payes. My Master lov'd me as his life for these good services that I did him, but he was a great spender; and therefore both this, and all besides that I could do for him, was too little.

When we were come to *Bercelona*, & ready to imbark our selves in the Gallies, I found my Master much troubled, as being in a great straight, for that he had received no pay from the King, & how to procure monies, he knew no way in the vvorld; nor could mine that I brought him in, stead him to any purpose. *I* saw he was melancholy, sad and heavy; *I* knew streight what disease he was sick of, as being the Physician, that had often cured him thereof heretofore. *I* offered him to apply a sudden remedy for his sore. He had with him divers Jewels, *I* knew not well what my self, and amongst the rest an *Agnus Dei* of Gold, a very rich one: it grieved him to part with it. But I told him; Sir, if you dare to trust me, put this *Agnus Dei* into my hands, and *I* will promise you to return it again unto you within these two dayes much improved, and make it better worth unto you, than now it is. He was glad to hear me say so; and jestingly said unto me, What trick have you now in store *Guzmanillo?* Hast thou lighted peradventure (as thou wast wont) upon some new roguish plot, some feat villany, or other, and canst come finely off with it? Now because he knew, that he might trust his profit with my sufficiency, his honour, with my secrecy, and that his Jewel was sure enough, without farther questioning me, what *I* would do with it; he gave it me, telling me withall. God grant you bring it me safe back again, and that my wishes may take good successe.

Loe, there it is, take it, and do what thou wilt with it. *I* took it of him, put it in my bosom, lapt it safe in a little purse, knit it fast, & tied it sure to one of the butten-holes of my doublet. With it I went directly to a Goldsmiths shop; one that was a rich man and a great Usurer; I made a large relation unto him of my person, and how, and by what means I came to this Company, and what a deal of money I had spent in a short time, reserving (when I should see my self in some need) a very rich Jewel, for the supplying of my wants: And that if he would buy it of me, he should have it reasonable cheap, so as he did not offer me too little, and too much undervalue the worth of it. But withall, I advised him, that he should first inform himself of my person, and my quality, who, and whence I was; & in knowing of it, (without rendring any reason why he was so inquisitive, taking that for a sufficient satisfaction to himself) he should walk forth and meet me at the Sea-side, for there I would stay for him, and there he should finde me all alone, wishing him to make as much haste as he could.

This man who had a great minde to this piece, and was greedy of gain, inform'd himself of me from the Captain, the Officers and some other of the Souldiers; receiving so much satisfaction, as was sufficient to content him. For they did all of them witnesse one and the same thing; That I was the son of a principal *Cavallero*, rich and nobly descended, and that being desirous to see *Italy*, I came to their company with a couple of servants attending on me well clad, and with good store of Crowns in my purse; that I had spent it all (as young men use to do) which was the cause that I was now in that poor case, as himself might well see.

All this made as well for me, as my self could wish it; it fell out pat, as I would have it. My honest Usurer told me what they said, that he was very well satisfied therewith, and that he might safely deal with me for any thing that I should sell him. He desired my Jewel of me, that he might look upon it, & that he would give me as much for it, as it was worth. I told him that we would go aside by our selves into some secret place, & there he should have a sight of it.

We went a pretty wayes off, and when we had found out a fit place to my minde, I put my hand into my bosom, and took out my *Agnus Dei*, of whose price I was well inform'd, as one that knew what it cost. The Gold-smith lik't it well, and had a great desire to buy it. For, besides that the Gold-work was very well wrought and curiously enameled, it had diverse stones in it of great value. I demanded of him for it two hundred Crowns, which was little lesse than the price that was paid for it when it was first bought. He began to turn and winde it this way and that way, holding it one while upward, another downward, to see which way it shewed it self best, and gave the brightest lustre.

He found a hundred faults in it (onely to bring down the price) offering me a thousand Royals at the first word. I was resolved, that he should not have it under a hundred and fifty Crowns, and it was as well worth that, as one Royal; and under that I would not part with it. And here upon the By, let this serve by way of advice to him that is to sell, that he must never descend so low as the price for which he means to sell it; but that he should drive his bargain so, that the buyer may rise to his price; looking still, when he shall come higher and higher, & so by standing off, get as much for it as you can. We give & take; *I* offer, and bids; At last my cunning Merchant comes up to an hundred & twenty Crowns; *I* thought with my self I should never draw him higher, and that it was enough (if not too much) for that which *I* pretended; and for so much *I* sold it him. He was loath to leave me, till he had paid me; and would fain have had me to have gone with him: but *I* told him, honest Sir, God blesse your life, and send you well to do; if *I* should go hence alone with you, *I* am afraid, lest that money would be taken from me, which *I* purpose to keep till I come to *Italy*, to furnish me with Cloaths, that I may come in some good fashion, when I make my self known there to my Kinsmen & friends.

And if some Souldier, or other should hap to see me go with you, they would presently suspect, that it is rather to sell, than buy any thing of you. And if they shall perceive that I have any store of Copper, or Silver money about me (being but a boy as I am) they will take it from me, and I shall have no remedy against them. And therefore God be your good speed, go your wayes; I will stay for you here till you come, bring your Gold with you, so many Crowns, as we have agreed upon, and you shall have the Jewel away with you, and God send you as good luck with it, as I shall wish you.

He well approv'd my reason, and hastned home (like a young Colt in his full gallop) for to fetch them. I had given notice to a Companion of mine, (a confident servant of my Masters) that he should stay there waiting for me; and that when I had given him such a sign he should as secretly as he could haste in unto me. He laid close in ambush; The Gold-smith by this time is come, he counts me out my Crowns in the palm of my hand: I had the Jewel in my purse, I sought to untie it: but because the knots were knit so fast, I could not so easily do it.

My

My Uſuring Merchant had hanging at his girdle a pair of knives in an old greaſie ſheath; I deſired him that he would lend me one of them. He (not knowing why I borrow'd it) puls me out his knife and gives it me. I cut the ſtring aſunder, leaving the knot faſt knit to my doublet, as it was before, & I gave it into his hand together with the *Agnus Dei*. The man began to marvel; and ask't me why I did ſo, and wherefore I had put it there? I told him, that becauſe I had never a box, nor no paper to lap it up in, I had done as I did, and that the matter was not great, for the purſe was old and little worth, and I had no great need of it: and as for theſe Crowns that I had of him, I ſhould make a ſhift to ſew them up in ſome one ragge, or other about my Cloaths, where no body ſhould come at them.

He took the Jewel of me, juſt in the ſame manner as if I had given it him & after that he had put it in his boſom, we took our leave, & he went his way. I gave the ſign to my companion: he comes; I gave him the Crowns, and adviſed him that he ſhould hie him home with them, and give them to my Maſter, and tell him, that I would be with him by and by.

That done, I made after my Goldſmith, and though by reaſon of his large ſtrides, he had the advantage of me, and got ground of me, yet I ran after him, till the occaſion I expected did fairly offer it ſelf unto me. And ſo watching my time, when he was jump even with a company of Souldiers, that were ſtanding together, I took faſt hold of him with both my hands crying out, A thief, a thief, help honeſt Souldiers, for Gods ſake come in and help me, for the Rogue hath robb'd me, hold him faſt, if you love me, let him not go, take (and you be good men) O take, take quickly the Jewel from him, for my Maſter will kill me, if I come home without it, and this Villain hath violently taken it from me.

I was well known to all the Souldiers, and as ſoon as they heard me, & ſaw the pitifull moan that I made, they believed I ſaid truth. Hereupon they laid hold on the man, to know what the matter was. And becauſe he that complains firſt, the Juſtice commonly goes on his ſide; and that whining & crying out of wrongs received, many times overcome the right, more by clamour, than any good claim that they can make; I cried out more and more, and kept ſuch a ſtir, and ſuch a noiſe, that I would not ſuffer him to ſpeak, and if he did, then I was ſo loud again, and ſo clamorous, that they could not hear him putting this trick upon him in the playing of my game. I did implore their help with great exclamations, with my hands linked one within another, and lifted up to heaven, and with my knees, creeping and crawling on the ground, crying out unto them; As ye be Gentlemen, good my Maſters, take pity and compaſſion of me; for the Captain, my Maſter will ſurely kill me. This tribulation of mine did much trouble them, it did grieve them to ſee me in this pitifull plight.

At laſt, they began to ask me what the matter was? and how & wherein I had been wrong'd? Nor was I herein wanting to play my part, now I had the hand of him, I would be ſure to hold it; gracing my lye with all the credit I could, that I might leave the leſſe room for his truth to enter. For, mans *Hearing*, contracting Matrimony on the ſudden, upon the firſt word that is given, will hardly be divorced from it, but let it alone, and live and ſtick thereunto during life, be it for better, or worſe. So that all the reſt that come after, are but as Concubines, that come now and then to the *Hearing*, but have no ſetled abode there: They may perhaps like gadding Girles, touch at this ear, and that ear, and the t'other, (as at ſo many doors, or other folks houſes, but there is no dwelling for them, they muſt pack and be gone.

Having this ſtring to my bow, (ſetting a good face on the matter) I up, and told them; This morning, my Maſter left his *Agnus Dei* at his beds-head upon his pillow; he willed me to keep it, and look ſafe unto it; I took it, and firſt put it in my purſe, and then in my boſom, (thinking I had made all ſure enough) but meeting with this good man (you here ſee) by the Sea-ſide, I pulled it forth to ſhew it him; and becauſe he was a Gold-ſmith, I ask't him, what it might be worth: He told me, that the body of the Jewel was but Copper double-gilt, and and that the ſtones were counterfeit, no better than Glaſſe. Yet asked me withall, whether I would ſell it? I told him no; it was my Maſters. He demanded then of me, if my Maſter would ſell it? My anſwer was, Sir, I know not: you were beſt ask him, for he can beſt tell you. After this, he proceeded further in talke with me, asking me, who I was, whence I came, and whither I would: and ſo held me on in ſuch idle diſcourſe till we were both alone, out of ſight of any; and drawing a knife out of that ſheath of his that hangs there at his girdle, he willed me to make no words, for if I did but offer to ſqueak, though ne'r ſo little, or but wag a foot from that place, there was no way but one with me, he would preſently cut my throat, I ſtood ſhaking and quivering, while he was taking the Jewel out of my boſom, and becauſe he could not readily unty the knots, I had knit them ſo faſt, he made no more adoe, but cut the ſtring aſunder, and ſo went away with it. And I think he hath it ſtill about him; ſearch him I beſeech you (good honeſt Souldiers) for Gods ſake ſearch him.

The

The Souldiers seeing that the purse was cut indeed, turned towards my Goldsmith, and lookt somewhat strangely upon him, who was strook therewith so dead, that he had not a word to say for himself. They took the *Agnus Dei* out of his bosom, which he had carried away in the purse; as I had informed them, so did they just finde it about him.

Then did he begin to fall a cursing and swearing, vowing by no small Oaths that I had sold it unto him, and that I with mine own hands, with that very knife, cut the purse my self, and afterwards delivered it unto him, and that I had of him, for it a hundred and twenty Crowns in very good Gold. But for all his swearing and staring, they would never awhit the sooner believe him; Thinking in good discretion, that it was not likely, that he would venture to buy any such piece of me, for he might very well think that it was stoln ware. Besides (which made much for me) they had searcht me all over, from top to toe, but could not finde one penny of money about me.

Making this to serve as a strong proof against him, they used him very homely, both in words and deeds. And whatsoever he said unto them to justifie himself, it was all one, he had been as good to have held his tongue, for after that, they would neither believe, nor hear him. They had forcibly taken the Jewel from him; He complains thereof unto the Justice; I was brought before him; there I opened the case anew (as before you have heard) not failing so much as one syllabe in the relating of that, which I had formerly delivered.

The Witnesses were sworn, and justified both what they had seen and heard. And in the end, the business was brought so about, that it was concluded, the Goldsmith should be severely punish'd. But upon intreaty, he had a brotherly correction, and so sent packing. And as for me, I had my Jewel given me in open Court, with charge to carry it home to my Master I went with it to his lodging, and there in the presence of all his people, I delivered it unto him.

There are many that love treason; but few that like the Traitor. Well may an ill man, by working ill, please that ill man that sets him a work for the working of his ends. But when the deed is done, it can not be, but that in the breast of that man, there is so much mischief imprinted, and such known Characters of villany written in the forehead of him, that none of those that imploy him, will trust him, either any farther, or longer, than they have use of him to bring their purposes to passe. What I had done did nothing displease my Master. At that time he lik'd it well, yet it troubled him somewhat, and he could not well tell what to think of it. These tricks of mine did him good service, (and that he knew well enough) but he was afraid both of them, and me.

With these kinde of Cordials, I kept my Master in heart, till he came to *Genua*; where, (having dis-imbarkt) and having now but little need of my service, he shifted me off. Your Traitors and other such like wicked Villains, are like unto Vipers, or your Scorpions; which when you have taken the substance of that from them, which you seek for, take them, and throw them upon the dunghill. Onely they are nourished by all sorts of men (especially your great-ones) who make exceeding much of them, all the while they use them as instruments of their pretended ends; but those once effected, they bid you farewell, they will have no more to do with you, unlesse it be to undoe you, as you have others; and so let you go, for such an one as you are; caring rather to use, than to keep a Knave.

Some few dayes after our arrival, my Master called me aside, and said unto me; Youth, you are now in *Italy*, your service will be of little use to me, and your Rogueries may do me much wrong: Here is somewhat for you to help you on your journey, dispatch quickly & be gone, for you have free liberty to go whither you will. He gave me some moneys of small value, and some few Spanish Royals; all was a matter of nothing, scarce worth God a mercy; and with this poor pittance, I took my leave of him and left him. I walked along with my head in my bosom, musing in the street as I went, on the great force of virtue, which did never leave any man unrewarded; whereas Vice did never suffer any man to escape without punishment and shame.

I would fain have spoken then unto my Master, and have told him, that he might be pleased to remember, that I had reliev'd him in his wants, supplied his necessities, taken a great deal of pains in his service, to my great cost & hindrance. But I thought with my self, that he would twit me in the teeth with those things, and lay them to my charge, and that therefore he was the willinger to rid himself of me, as of a rotten Member, good for nothing, but to infect all the rest. And so I rested from that. Now seeing in what disgrace I was, and hoping to finde out my kindred there, I made the lesse reckoning of it. So I went dayly up and down the City, seeking by that means to learn the language, which as yet I neither understood, nor knew, out of the desire that I had to know, and to be known.

THE

# THE ROGUE:

OR,

# THE FIRST PART OF THE LIFE OF GUZMAN DE ALFARACHE.

## The third Book.

Wherein he treateth of his beggerly courſe of life, and what therein happened unto him, whilſt he was in *Italy*.

### CHAPTER I.

Guzman *diſcourſeth of Poverty, and of the wrongs and outrages, which a poor man endureth; As alſo of Riches, and of the honours that are done unto the Rich: As likewiſe of the naughtineſſe of this preſent world: And how not finding his kindred, which he ſought for in* Genoa, *he went to* Rome, *and of a jeſt that was put upon him, before he left that Citie.*

With Flatterers, no Rich man is a fool, nor a poor man wiſe. For they ſtill wear Spectacles of the largeſt ſight; by reaſon whereof, things repreſent themſelves far greater than indeed they are. It may truely be called, Wealths Moth, and Truths Worm. Flattery reſideth moſt with the Poor, being the greateſt enemie that he hath: For that Poverty, which is not the Daughter of the Spirit, is but the Mother of ſhame and reproach; it is a diſ-reputation, that drowns all the other good parts that are in man; it is a Diſpoſition to all kinde of evill; it is mans moſt foe; it is a Leproſie, full of anguiſh; it is a way that leades unto Hell; it is a Sea, wherein our Patience is overwhelmed, our honour is conſumed, our lives are ended, and our ſouls utterly loſt and caſt away for ever.

The Poor man is a kinde of money that is not currant; the ſubject of every idle Huſwives chat; the off-ſcumme of the people; the duſt of the ſtreet, firſt trampled under foot; and then thrown on the dung-hill; In concluſion, the Poor man is the Rich mans Aſſe. He dineth with the laſt, fareth of the worſt, and payeth deareſt: his Six-pence will not go ſo far, as a Rich mans three-pence: His opinion, is ignorance; His diſcretion, fooliſhneſs; His ſuffrage, ſcorne; His ſtock, upon the Common; abuſed by many, and abhorred of all. If he come in Company, he is not heard; if any chance to meet him, they ſeek to ſhunne him; if he adviſe (though never ſo wiſely) they grudge and murmure at him; if he work Miracles, they ſay, he is a Witch; if vertuous, that he goeth about to deceive; His veniall ſinne, is a blaſphemie; His thought, is made treaſon; His cauſe, be it never ſo juſt, it is not regarded; and to have his wrongs righted, he muſt appeale to that other life. All men cruſh him; no man favoureth him; There is no man, that will releeve his wants: No man that will comfort him in his miſeries, nor no man, that will bear him company, when he is all alone, and oppreſſed with grief. None help him, all hinder him; none give him, all take from him; he is Debtour to none, and yet muſt make payment to all. O the unfortunate and poor condition of him that is poor, to whom even the very hours are ſold, which the Clock ſtriketh, and payes cuſtome for the Sun-ſhine in Auguſt.

And as your rotten and refuſe-fleſh, comes to be meat for dogges, ſo as an unprofitable peece of fleſh, the diſcreet poor man comes to be eaten up and devoured by a company of ignorant Chuffes. But it is quite otherwiſe with the rich: How ſmooth doth the wooll go on their ſide? What a freſh gale of winde is ſtill in the poope of them? In how calme a Sea do they ſaile? What fair weather, free from the leaſt cloud of care? And what careleſneſs in thoſe ſtorms, which other men ſuffer? Their Granaries are full of corne; their Butts of Winde; their jarres of Oile; their Cheſts of money. In the Summer, he keeps himſelf from the heate; And in the Winter he cloths himſelf warm to defend him from the cold. Of all men he is well received. His fantaſticall tricks, are Gentleman-like carriage; His fooliſh ſpeeches, are wiſe ſentences; if he be malicious and hath a peſtilent pate to plot miſchief, then is he ſaid to be ſubtill, and to have a ſhrewd head of his own; if he be prodigall, they ſtile him liberall; if covetous, a wary wiſe fellow; if given to railing, he is a witty Gentleman; if fool-hardy, of a brave daring ſpirit; if impudent and full of ribaldrie, he is a merry man, and a fine Companion; if bitter in his taunts, and given to detraction, an admirable Courtier; if incorrigible, all metall; if ſcoffing, pleaſant witted; if babbling and full of prate, they tearme him ſociable; if vicious, affable; if a Tyrant, a powerfull man; if obſtinate, conſtant, if blaſphemous and full of oaths, a very valiant fellow; if dull, grave and fit to make a Counſellour. His errors the earth covereth; all are afraid of him; none dare offend him; Every mans eare is ty'd to his tongue, ſeeking by their attention to pleaſe his palate; and not a word that comes from him, but is entertained by them with as much ſolemnity, as if an Oracle had ſpoken unto them. He will not be ſaid nay, but will have what he liſt, making himſelf both Party, Judge, and Witneſs. When he will countenance a lye, his power makes it to paſſe for a truth, and, as if it were ſo indeed, it is ſo received. How is he accompanied, how viſited, how feaſted, how magnified of all men.

In a word, poverty is the poor mans portion; and riches, that of the rich. And therefore, where good bloud boyleth, and the pulſe of honour beats ſtrongly, want is held a greater loſſe than life; death is not ſo hurtfull, nor ſeemeth half ſo terrible unto him, as Neceſſity. For money warmeth the bloud, and makes it quick and active: Whereas he that is without it, is but a dead body that walks up and down like a ghoſt amongſt the living. A man cannot without it do any thing in its opportune and fit time, he cannot execute his deſires, nor accompliſh any thing, whereunto he hath a liking.

This is the courſe of the world, it hath alwayes kept this track, it is no new thing, but even from the beginning, to ſee men of baſe birth, and meaner parts, to wax proud and arrogant. There is no help nor remedy for it; So we found it, and ſo we ſhall leave it; we muſt not look for a better time, nor think that it was otherwiſe heretofore. All whatſoever, either hath been, is, or ſhall be, is ſtill one and the ſelf-ſame thing. Our firſt Father was credulous and light of beleef, our firſt Mother a Lyer, and falſe of her word: The firſt ſonne that was borne into the world, a thief and a *Fratricide*, one that kild his owne and onely brother.

What is there now, that was not heretofore? Or what can we hope for in that which is to come? If what is paſt ſeemeth better unto us, it conſiſteth onely in this, that we are more ſenſible of the ill that is preſent; and call to remembrance thoſe things of old, which being ſo farre off, are quite abſented from us: yet when your troubles are once over-paſſed, we are ſo glad, when we finde our ſelves to be well rid of them, as if they had never been. So your Meddows beheld from afarre, are very pleaſant to the eye, and delightfull to look upon, but when thou draweſt neerer unto them, thou doeſt not finde ſo much as one hands breadth of ground, where thou maiſt conveniently ſit thee down, all that thou ſeeſt, being nothing elſe but bogs, pits, and ſtones. We ſee the one, but never think on the other: it is as common, as ancient in the World, for every man to love proſperity, to follow after riches, to ſeek for fulneſs, to procure preferment, to purſue plenty, and to hazard our lives to get where withall to live, and to grow into money (which is the mother of abundance;) For where that is wanting, the father towards the ſonne, the ſonne towards the father, brother towards brother, and I my ſelf, even towards my ſelf, break my faith and my word, and abhor mine owne ſelf.

This leſſon time hath taught me, out of the diſcipline of his experimentall diſcourſes, having puniſhed me with an infinite number of miſeries and afflictions.

*I* plainly now perceive, that if (when I arrived at *Genoa*,) I had conſidered what I was, and but looked well into my ſelf; I would not have ventured ſo farre as I did. And if I had had but the wit to have reſerved that occaſion to ſome better fortune, I ſhould not haply have been ruined and undone by it, as you ſhall hear hereafter.

As soon then as *I* had left the Captain my Master, having made of all my tattered ragges and other old clouts, a kinde of scar-Crow (for they would scarce serve for any other use) to fray away birds from the Fig-trees; *I* would needs boast my self to be descended of the *Goths*; an ancient Gentleman, and neerly allyed to most of the Nobility of that City; giving out, that *I* was such a one, and come out of such a House; and making farther enquiry of my fathers ancient Family, and his great Alliance in that Citie, it caused such distastfulnes, and such a loathing in them towards me, that they did hate me to the death. And it is to be supposed, that if they could have done it without any prejudice to themselves, they would have given it me; And thou also wouldst have done the like, if such a guest should have come within thy doors. But they manifested their good meaning by those actions, which they used towards me. There was not that man to whom I made my self known, that did not releeve me with a box on the eare, a flirt on the lips, a kick on the breech; and he that did least hurt or disgrace me, did not stick to spit in my face, upbraiding me with the name of Villaine, Rogue, Moor, and the like. Art thou a *Genoves*? Thou art the son of some vild lewd woman, no better can be conceived of thee. And as if my father had been *terræ filius*, a son of the earth, a mis-begotten Bastard, or as if he had been dead some two hundred years a go, *I* could not finde so much as a foot-step of any friend or kinsman of his. Nor could I discover any thing, till one came unto me, and greeting me with a Serpents tayle, like a crafty old scab; (O that accursed old Villaine, that son of a Whore; O how did he coozen me!) closing fairly with me, up and told me.

I have heard much talk (my Boy) of your father, and *I* can bring you acquainted with those that shall render you a large relation of your Parents, and those none of the meanest; but (if I be not deceived) even the best and noblest in all the Citie.

And because I suppose ye have supt already, come and take a bed with me at my house, (for now the time is fit for nothing else) and to morrow morning we will walk a turne or two about the town, and I shall bring you to those (as I told you) that knew him very well, and had long conversed with him. The good presence that he carried, the gravity wherewith he uttered his words, his good proportion of body, his decent attire, his bald-head, his white Beard, which reached almost down to his Girdle, and the Staffe which he bare in his hand, represented (me thought) unto me another Saint *Paul*. I trusted my self with him, I followed him to his house, with a great deal more desire to sup, than to sleep: for that day I had made but a bad dinner, as well for that I had been chaft and angred, as also that it must have been at mine own cost, which made me to quake, as oft as I did but think upon spending but a farthing.

But because that which the rich give us is but little, and what we call for, must cost us money, we eate but little bread, and that (God knows) stale and hard though to us, that are almost hunger-starved, it seems a great deal and soft enough. Besides, *I* was now grown a pinch belly, and a very miser to my self.

*I* went along, but with feeble legges, ready to faint for hunger, after that I saw what an Host *I* was like to have, and how (like a *Cardovese*) he told me by way of prevention, that *I* had already supt: And had it not bin out of the fear that *I* had to lose so fair an opportunity, *I* would not have gone with him, untill *I* had first visited some tippling house. But the hope of that good which seemed to wait for me, made me to leave the bird that *I* had in my hand, for to follow the Oxe which fled too fast from me, for me to catch him. As soon as we were come into his house, a servant came to take off his Cloak; he willed him to let it alone, and they twaine having talked together a while in their own language, he sent him forth: so that now being left all alone to our selves, we walked many a turne, and sometimes talked of one thing, sometimes of another. At last he drew neer unto me, asking me divers questions concerning Spaine: and amongst the rest more particularly of my Mother, as how she was left, what was her Estate, how many brothers she had, and in what street she lived? *I* gave him a full account of all, as wisely, and as advisedly as *I* could for my life.

In this discourse I entertained my self the better part of an hour, untill, such time as his servant was returned. I know not what was his errand, nor what message he brought him back, but my old Fox turned about unto me, and said unto me; So, it is well enough for this hour, it is time for you to take your rest, get you to bed and to morrow we shall see one another again, and then we shall enlarge our minds more freely to each other. Then he cals, *O la Antonio Maria*, do you hear there? Come away, & conduct this Gentleman to his lodging. I went along with him from lodging to lodging, through this room & that room, *I* knew not whither my self; it was a great large house, wrought with many goodly fair Pillars, whose pavement was all of Alablaster, hewne four-square.

At

At laſt we croſſe through a Court, and enter into a lodging, that ſtood at the one end thereof, which was very well furniſhed, and fairly hung with Hangings of ſundry ſorts of colours, like unto your *Arambales*, but that they ſeemed to be ſomewhat better than they. The Beds-head leaned againſt the wall, and cloſe adjoyning thereunto ſtood a little low Stool. And as if he would have me to make my ſelf unready, the ſervant that was appointed to attend me, offered his ſervice to pull off my cloths. But they were ſuch, and ſo ragged, that I my ſelf knew not very well how to put them either off, or on, unleſſe I took a great deal of care, diſpoſing of one peece after another, for there was not any one part that was whole, or put in its proper place, ſo that it was impoſſible to diſcern or know, which was the Jerkin or the Breeches, when you ſaw them laid abroad, and ſtretched out upon the ground. So that I having undone ſome few knots, with the which I had faſtened them together for want of points, *I* let them ſlide off from me at the beds feet. And thus foul and ſlovenly as I was and ſo lowſie, as no man could well be worſe, I crept me in between the ſheets. The bed was ſoft and good, the ſheets clean and ſweet. And when I was laid, I began to think with my ſelf, ſure, this good old man is my kinſman, that he uſes me thus kindly, but will not make himſelf known unto me, till to morrow morning. It is a good beginning, it cannot be but that he will give me new Cloaths, and deal kindly with me, ſince being in that poor and miſerable eſtate as I was, he had given me ſuch good entertainment. Queſtionleſs it is ſo, and now will ſome fair fortune befall me. I was but young, I did not dive to the bottome of his drift, I only lookt upon the *Superficies*, I went no farther than the outward appearance. For if I had had either wit or experience, I might have conſidered with my ſelf, that great offers, have great ends, and that he that is full of courteſie is full of craft. For ſuch kindneſs as theſe, are not done for nothing, there is ſome myſtery more in it, than a man is aware of. And alwayes obſerve this for a *Maxime*, or generall rule, That when a man ſhall offer thee courteſies of an extraordinary nature, and ſuch as heretofore he hath not bin accuſtomed to do, either he means to put a trick upon thee, or elſe he ſtands in need of thee. The Servant when he had me to bed, went forth of the Chamber, leaving a candle burning by me, I ſpake unto him wiſhing him to put it out. He told me, I muſt hold him excuſed, and that he would not do ſo, for in the night time, there flye up and down in that Countrey (almoſt in every corner) certain Bats, or Rear-miſe of an extraordinary bigneſs to thoſe in other places, which are very offenſive, and do much hurt, and that the onely remedy againſt them, is to have a light ſtanding by ones bed ſide, for they can by no means endure it, but ſeek to avoid it by flying away from it into ſome blind corner or other.

He likewiſe told me, that this their Country was full of Hob-goblings, and Robbin-good-fellowes, which were all great enemies to the light, but in your dark lodgings, they did now and then play their parts, and do many a ſhrewd turne. All which I did beleeve with the greateſt ſimplicity in the world.

This ſaid, he went his wayes; and he was no ſooner gone, but I preſently go me up, and made faſt the door, not that I was afraid of robbing (for I had nothing to loſe) but out of a ſuſpition and jealouſie that I had, that ſome one miſchance or other might befall me; being young, unfriended, unknown, and in a ſtrange place, where I never was before.

Having (as I thought) made all ſure, I returned back again to my bed, fell preſently aſleep, enjoying (to my great content) a ſweet and quiet reſt; for the Pillows the *Colchons*, the Coverlets, and the ſheets did drink a Health unto me, and I (with a very good will) did ſoundly pledge them.

The better part of the night was now over-paſt, the beame of mid-nights ballance began to decline, and leaned a little towards the break of day, whileſt I, being in a dead ſleep, was wakened on the ſudden with a confuſed noiſe of four parts: Devils they ſeemed to be by their ſhape, their habit, their black curled hair, and by thoſe fearfull ugly Vizards, which they had upon their faces.

Having walkt their Stations awhile about the Chamber, they came at laſt unto the bed, wherein I lay, putting me in ſuch a fright, that *I* loſt my ſenſes for a time, and without any word ſpeaking, off they pluckt the Coverlets from me, anon after the ſheets. I wondered what a Gods name would become of me; I fell as faſt as I could for my life, to croſſing and bleſſing of my ſelf; I ran over my prayers, I called a thouſand times upon the name of *Jeſus* but they were *Demonij baptizati*, *Chriſten Divels*, and therefore drew ſtill neerer and neerer unto me; They had put upon the *Coltchon*, under the nether ſheet, a Blanket; every one took hold of his corner, and haled me forth in the middle of the room. I was much amazed, and extreamely troubled, when *I* ſaw that my prayers could not prevail, inſomuch, that *I* did neither

neither dare; and if I durſt, yet I was not able to open my mouth, nor to ſpeak ſo much as one word, if *I* might have all the world for my labour.

The room was high-roofed, and fitted for their purpoſe, where, when they had me out amongſt them, they began to blanket me, and to toſſe me up in the aire, as they uſe to do dogges at Shrove-tide, till growing ſo weary, that they could hold out no longer, they left winowing of me (being ſufficiently fanned already) and laid me down there again, where they found me, and leaving me for dead, they covered me with the cloaths, and went out that way they came in, having firſt put out the light: I was ſo diſ-joynted, and ſo broken as it were in peeces, and ſo beſides my ſelf, that when it was day, *I* did not know, whether *I* were in Heaven or here upon Earth: God, who was pleaſed to preſerve me, knew for what end he did it.

It was now about eight of the morning, and I was willing to riſe, for that I found my ſelf reaſonably able to get up. Me thought, *I* did not ſmell ſo ſweet as I ſhould, my body cleaving to the Sheets, no clay could be more clammy, nor any plaiſter cling cloſer.

This put me in minde of my old Maſters wife, the Cook. And althongh there are no perturbations without ſome one diſorder or other, yet this did much afflict me. But now the Crow could be no blacker, than were his wings: And therefore I rubb'd over all my body with the cleaneſt places, that I could meet withall in the ſheets; which when I had done, I began to buckle my harneys unto me, and fall a knitting of my old knots, to my older cloaths. And the longer I was in making of me ready, the more I did conſider with my ſelf, what a Divill that ſhould be, that had befallen me this laſt night: And if when I roſe up, I had not found my limb's almoſt ſhaken in peeces, my bones bruized, and in a manner out of joynt, I ſhould verily have thought, that it had been but a dream. I look't round about the room, but could by no means finde which way they ſhould come in. By the door it was impoſſible, for I had ſhut that ſure with mine own hands, and found it faſt lockt, as I left it.

Then I began to caſt with my ſelf, whether they might not be thoſe Hobgobblins and Robbin-good-fellows, which the young man told me of over night. But that (me thought) could not be; for if it were ſo, then had he done very ill, that he did not adviſe me before hand, that there were ſome of the ſame mad merry ſpirits, that delighted as much in light, as other more melancholly Divels did in darkneſs.

Whileſt I was muſing on this buſineſs, and deviſing with my ſelf, how or which way they could get in; I lifted up the Hangings, to ſee, if behind them I could eſpie any little out-let; at laſt I lighted on an open window, which did butt out upon the Court, thorow which we croſt. Then I preſently ſaid with my ſelf; This way were the Buls brought in, my hurt came in at this Window; And albeit every rib in my body, and all my bones throughout, did rattle in my skinne, making ſuch a noiſe for all the world as your Cheſſe-men do, when you ſhake them together in the bag, yet I did diſſemble it all that I could (in regard of that ſlovenly part, which I had playd againſt my will) till I ſhould ſee my ſelf quite clear of the houſe: I threw up the bed as handſomely as I could; covering all as cloſe as might be, that if any ſhould come in, they might not ſmell out my fault, and finde out the feebleneſs of my retentive faculties, and ſo the ſame Devils be brought in again, and torment me anew.

The ſervant, that brought me thither, came to me towards nine of the clock, and told me that his Maſter expected me in the Church, and that I muſt go thither unto him; And becauſe I would not willingly have his man ſtay behind in the Chamber, that I might get the ſtart of him, I intreated him that he would do me the kindneſs to bring me to the door, becauſe I was unacquainted with the houſe, and knew not the way out. So he brought me forth into the ſtreet, and returned back again.

When I ſaw I was come off cleer from him, as if I had been borne with wings at my feet, and my body had bin ſound and whole, I took *Villa diego* his Breeches, and tript away ſo nimbly, that he that had runne poſt, ſhould hardly have overtaken me. He runnes faſt that flies: Fear addeth wings and ſtrength; thought was not ſwifter than my flight. I bought ſomething by the way to ſatisfie hunger, and for to gaine time I eat as I went, and made no ſtay till I was out of the Citie. Where in a Taverne I called for a Cup of Wine where-with I refreſht my ſelf, that I might walk the ſtronger towards *Rome*, whither I had directed my journey, thinking all the way as I went upon that groſſe ſcorne, whereby they thought to baniſh me out of *Genoa*, to the end that my poverty might not diſgrace them; but I did not remaine their Debtor, nor had they any great cauſe to brag thereof in the end, as you ſhall ſee in the ſecond part.

## CHAPTER II.

Guzman *discourseth of the unhappiness, greatness, and commendation of Necessity and Want; And how after he was gone from* Genoa, *he fell a begging. And how keeping company with other poor beggers, he was instructed by them of their Statutes, and Lawes.*



FIed so fast out of *Genoa*, that if *Lots* wife had but done that which *I* did, she had never been turned into a Pillar of Salt. *I* never offered to look back, my Anger spurd me on, and put me up to the height of my speed; for when choler once begins to boyle, we hardly feel the wounds, that are given us, though they be never so mortall, never so deadly. Besides, by how much the more a man re-bringeth as it were himself to himself, and looketh home into his owne bosome, by so much the more he comes neerer to the recognition and knowledge of his hurt.

I escaped from the overthrow given at *Ronzes valles*, *como perro con bexiga*; like a Dog, that claps his taile between his legs, and through too much haste to be gone as farre as his feet will carry him, growes sur-bated, and stiffe in his joynts. There was not one firme ligament in all the whole Fabrick of my body. But I did not much feel it, till *I* came to rest my self, when I drew neer to a little Village some ten miles off from *Genoa*, where I sate me down, not knowing whither to go, being bruised in my body, naked of cloaths, without money in my purse, and black and blue all over, as if I had been beaten with a cudgell.

O *Necessity*; how dost thou abate mans courage? how doest thou take off his metall? How doest thou dis-hearten his body? And howbeit it be true, that thou dost sharpen the wit, and refine the understanding, yet thou destroyest the faculties thereof, by diminishing and taking off so much from the senses, that they are ready to be flaw'd and crackt in pieces through too much sufferance, and that intolerable patience, whereunto they be put.

There are two sorts of *Necessity*; The one shamelesse and impudent, which (like an unmannerly guest) comes of it self, without being called. The other, which being invited, strains a little courtesie, but comes upon intreaty at the first bidding. That which unrequested, bids it self, *God* deliver us from it: And this is that of which I treat. This is like a powerfull guest in a poor mans house, who out of his greatnes brings a thousand followers along with him; it is that man of Warre, wherein a multitude of mischiefs, (like so many Pyrats) stand ready armed, wayting to doe hurt. It is the framer and plotter of all kinde of trecheries and villanies; hard to be endured, amd worse to be corrected. It is that *Lucerna Navis Prætoriæ*, that Lanterne in the Admirals Ship, which all coozenages and deceits attend and follow; it is the sport of boyes and children; a fooliſh dance, a ridiculous Comedie, the sad and direfull Tragedie of honour and of vertue. It is fierce, foul, fantastick, furious, fastidious, faint, facile, feeble, false: onely she failes of being a *Franciscan*. And it is a wonder, if she affoord any other fruit but infamie.

That other, which we bid and invite, and comes not but when she is called, is Lady-like, liberall, rich, frank, powerfull, affable, generous, sociable, gracious, acceptable, and welcome to all. She leaves us a full and plentifull house, feeds us at her costs, and defraies all reckonings; she is a firme defence, an inexpugnable Tower, true riches indeed, and good, without hurt; That Necessity (I say) which necessitates it self, but is not necessitated, is the place of perpetuall rest, the house of God, and the way to Heaven. It lifteth up mens minds, it addes strength unto their bodies, it doth innoble their fame, it cheereth their hearts, it magnifieth their actions, and makes their names immortall.

Let renowned *Cortes* her truest lover, sing forth her praises. Her legges and feet are of Diamonds, her body of Saphires, and her countenance of Carbuncles, it shineth, it cheereth, and it quickneth, it is full of pleasure, lustre, and life. But that other neighbour of hers, looks like a filthy old sluttish Laundresse, where you shall see nothing but a heap of Spittle ragges, full of matter'd stuffe, and the soiles of ulcerous sores, which no eye is able to endure: it is so loathsome to look upon, and therefore (with a great deal of reason) abhorred of all. Behold and view me well, for *I* am one of those, with whom Necessity fell in love; she never left following me, but kept me company at bed and at board, living in deadly sinne, by being bound to seek out means to maintaine her. And to this end, she made me study the

Briviatick

Briviatick Art. This was the courſe I ran; I was to day in one place, and to morrow in another, begging an almes of all that I met with.

It is fit that we ſhould give every man his due. And therefore *I* muſt confeſſe unto thee, that there is much charity uſed in *Italy*, and indeed ſo much, that this new Trade, that I had betaken my ſelf unto, made me loth to leave it, I found ſo much ſweetneſs in it. For in a few dayes I grew luſh, and able to make wings to maintaine my flight; So that from *Genoa*, whence I came, till I ſaw *Rome*, where I ſtaid, *I* performed all that Voyage, without ſpending ſo much as one farthing. The money that was given, *I* kept that whole and entire, and for victuals, I had ever ſufficient, and more than would ſerve my turne. I was yet but a Novice, and therefore threw that away many times to the dogges, which afterwards, when I had more judgement, I ſold for money, which brought me in no ſmall gains.

I had a great minde (as ſoon as *I* came thither) to put my ſelf into new cloaths, that I might be ſomewhat again like my ſelf; but this counſell of mine (me thought) was not ſo good; and therefore repenting my ſelf of it, I ſaid thus with my ſelf; Friend *Guzman*, take heed, leſt this order do not prove like that of *Toledo*. And if being well clad, thou ſhouldſt not chance to meet with a Maſter, how wilt thou have bread to put in thy mouth? Content thy ſelf, and continue ſtill as thou art. For, if being well apparelled, thou ſhalt beg an almes, they will give thee nothing; Keep that which thou haſt, and leave off theſe thy vaine and idle humours.

This deliberation took place: and having now ſet up my reſt, I knit another knot upon my Purſe-ſtrings, and then I ſpake unto my money, and ſaid, Here reſt you quiet, for I know not what need I may have of your help. I began then in theſe my old rags, that were not good enough to make waſt Paper, hanging thoſe tatterd ſtreamers as handſomely as I could about me, (which ſeemed like ſo many little peeces of ravell'd Flannell, ſo full they were of jigges and jagges) to beg for my living.

Having recourſe ſtill at noone to thoſe places; where there was either bread, or porrage to be had; and ſometimes it would ſo fall out, that I ſhould get as much at once, as might very well ſerve three more beſides my ſelf. I viſited your Cardinals, your Embaſſadours, your Princes, your Biſhops, and other great mens houſes, not over-skipping any one of them. I was directed unto them by another young youth of that Countrey, he was my guide, who was well skill'd in that craft, and was the firſt Tutor that ever read any Lectures unto me in this kinde. He taught me the firſt grounds and Principles of this learned Science, and the different *Species* and forms of begging, how this man was to be ſought unto, how that; what phraſe of language to be uſed towards ſuch a ſort of people, and what a differing faſhion to thoſe of another kinde. For we muſt not have all one tone, for all ſorts of perſons, but muſt vary our note, alter our ſtraine, and apply our ſelves to that ſtile, which we ſhall think will take beſt, and moſt move and affect the party, whoſe devotion we crave.

Men doe not care for curious words and choiſe phraſes, they love not the ſmoothneſs or flattery, and as little can they abide to be beaten about the ears with loud exclamations: that which they like beſt, is an honeſt plain kind of begging *Por amor de Dios*, Good Sir, for Gods ſake, beſtow one poor penny upon me.

Your women they are wonderfully devoted to the Virgin *Mary*, to our Lady *del Roſario*, and the like; with theſe you may be a little more liberall of your Language, beſeeching God that he will direct all their Actions to his holy ſervice, that he would deliver them all deadly ſinne, from the accuſation of falſe Witneſs, from the power of Traytors, and the malice of evill tongues.

This being well pronounced, and repeated over and over, with a great deal of vehemency of words, and a ſtrong and earneſt delivery, makes their purſes preſently flye open, and happy is ſhe who can firſt ſupply thee with an Almes. He taught me how to work the rich to compaſſion, how to move the poor ſort to pitty, and how to oblige the religious devout man, that he ſhould not be able to get from me, before he had given me an almes. He inſtructed me ſo well in ſuch a company of fine cunning tricks in this kind, that I got a great deal in a little time.

There was not that man, but I did know, even from the very *Pope*, to him that had never a Cloak: that is, from the higheſt to the loweſt. *I* did runne over all the ſtreets of *Rome*, and that I might not be too troubleſome by begging too often in one place or of one perſon, I did divide the whole City into certaine quarters, every working-day walking my ſeverall Station; but on Sundayes and Holy-dayes, I was wholly for your Churches, I never miſt, but punctually kept my hours, and there I made good purchaſe. But that which I made moſt

profit of, were the pieces of bread, that were given me: These I sold, and they yielded me many a fair penny. Part whereof those poor men did buy, which did not go up and down a begging, but were fain for it, being (as they say) the next door to it, who out of their poverty, were fain to trade with me, because I could afford them a good bargaine.

And some I sold to poor Country-folks, such as make a living of feeding Pigs, and fatting of Poultry. But those that were my best pay-masters, were your *Turroneros*, for to make their *Alaxur* or *Alfaxor*, as they call it in *Castile*. I did help my self besides, with some old house-hold ragges, who, for that they saw I was young, and naked, did in pitty bestow them upon me, which were something worth to me, though to them they were things of nothing.

Afterwards, I fell in company with some other of more ancient standing in that faculty (for they had their distinction of degrees, and priority of forms as in Schools) for the better encreasing of my knowledge, and that from them I might learne how to governe my self wisely and discreetly. These Rogues had been admitted into the Livery long ago and had borne Office of Renters and Wardens, men that had held preheminence amongst them, and deserved to be masters of their Company. With these I went to some known Doles; there being some men that did daily (out of meer devotion) distribute almes every morning to the poor in their particular houses. Going once to receive this Dole in the French Embassadours house, I might hear other poor beggars, that were behind me, begin to murmure, saying, This Spanish unhappy Boy, which beggeth now here in *Rome*, is newly come, and a meer stranger in this place, he is not acquainted with this course of life, and for want of knowledge, (by that which I have observed in him) he is likely to beat down the market, and if some order be not quickly taken with him, he will undoe us all. For having once filled his belly, in the most places where he comes, if they give him any victuals, he refuses to take them, and tels them (God be thanked) he hath dined well enough already. He will quite overthrow the Art of begging, by giving the world by this means to understand, that we poor Rogues have more given us than we can well tell what to do withall. So that if he run this course a little longer, he will hurt us and do himself no good.

Another of their comrades, that was there with them, Tush (quoth he) hold ye your peace, let me alone with this Lad, I will take him to taske, and ye shall see how I will work him, I will instruct him how to understand himself, and how he may not easily be understood by others. Leave him (I say) to me. With that, speaking softly unto me, he called me unto him, and we went out alone by our selves from all the rest of the Company. He was an excellent Proficient, and a very ready and dexterous man in all that appertained to that Art.

The first thing that he did (as if he had been the *Protopobre*, or Prince of Beggars) was, to examine my life, asking me, Whence I was? What was my name? When, and to what end I was come thither? Then did he deliver unto me the great obligation, that Beggars had to keep a *decorum* in all their actions, to hold correspondence one with another, and to linke in love together like sworne brothers, and that I should informe my self of certaine curiosities, and secrets, and some Principles, which I did not as yet know. For in very truth, that which I learned of my Youth afore-mentioned, and of other poor Rogues of lesse talent, and farre inferiour both in knowledge and experience, were all triviall things, and of no esteem, in comparison of those precepts, which I received from this Grand-master of his faculty. He gave me certaine Rules, which I shall never forget as long as I live.

Amongst the which, one was, that I should unfold three or four leaves of my stomack, and open the book to a plain vomit, yet to be so well read therein, that it should not appear to the world, that it proceeded from any surfet, or that I had over-charged my stomack. He taught me a trick how to turne up my stomack in some by-corner; which brought two good effects.

First, it moved the people to compassion, thinking that I was sick: Secondly, though afterwards I should swallow down two Platters of warme pottage, there would be room enough still for more. And so by this means the infamy and misery that the poor endured, would the better be published and spread abroad. I knew how many bits I was to eate, and how I was to look upon the bread that they gave me, how to kisse it, and how often, and what kinde of countenance to cast upon it: What fashion of behaviour I was to use, and how to carry my self upon all occasions, differing the form, according to the diversity of mens dispositions. I knew the true tune of my voice, when I was to rise, and when to fall with it. I knew the set hours wherein I was to repaire to such or such a place; in what houses, I might

enter

enter in even, to the bed-side, and in what, I might not presse no further than the door. I knew whom I might be bold to importune, and be earnest withall in my craving; and whom again I ought not to sollicit, or speak unto above once. In conclusion, he gave me in writing all the Statute-Laws, and Orders ordained by that free Common-wealth of beggars, instructing me in the observation of them, for the avoiding of scandal, and the better informing of my understanding. And these are they that follow.

*The Laws and Ordinances, which are inviolably to be observed amongst Beggars.*

FOrasmuch as all Nations have their propet method of begging, and are distinguished and known by their sound, and by a differing form from all others; as are your *Almanes* by their singing, and going in Troups; your *French-men*, by their praying; your *Flemmings*, by their making of leggs, and their low and frequent Congies; your *Gypsies* by their importuning; your *Portugals*, by their weeping; your *Italians*, by their long Circumlocutions; and your *Spaniards*, by their big looks and high language, as if they would swagger out of a man an Alms whether he will, or no: whereby they make themselves hatefull to their own hurt, being held no better than vain babblers, and a kinde of insufferable proud Rogues: these therefore we more especially will and command, that they reform this disorder, bear themselves civilly, that they do not curse, nor blaspheme, (as too commonly they use to do) but that they keep good order, according to our Statutes and Ordinances in that case provided.

*Item*, We will and command; That none of our brother Rogues, or beggers whatsoever, either wounded, or lame, of any these Nations, whence, or whatsoever, shall joyn and unite himself with those of another Countrey, and that not any person, or persons of all, or any one particular, shall make any Covenant, Compact, or Alliance, with any blinde men, that go saying their prayers from door to door, nor with any Mounte-banks, Musicians, nor Poets, nor with Slaves set at liberty, though our Lady her self should have released and set them free from the power and tyranny of the Turks, nor with old Souldiers, which being tatter'd and torn, have forsaken their Colours, and fled from their Captains; nor with Marriners that with one storm are dis-heartned, and have no more minde to go to Sea. For howbeit all and every one of them do suite and agree well together in all kinde of cheating, and Roguish tricks, and would make excellent beggers, yet the Art it self of begging, and the language are much differing. And therefore we will, and command every one of these to keep his own quarter, and strictly to observe such orders as are set down and ordained in that case.

*Item*, We will and command, That the poor of every Nation, especially in their own Countreys, have certain Taverns, and known victualling houses, where shall ordinarily preside and govern, three or four of the more ancient amongst them, having staves in their hands, as Ensigns of their precedency, and authority: Whom we depute, to treat in those places of all such accidents and other things that shall happen there, or shall otherwise be brought to their knowledge. That they shall sit in Councel, and give their opinion thereupon. And when they have so done, they may afterwards play at Fox mine Host, or some other drinking Game, at Cards, or Dice for recreation, and to wash away care. They may sit over the Cup, and tell old stories: they may recount the famous Acts done either by themselves, or others, as also of their Ancestors, and boast of those wars, wherein they have serv'd, and whatsoever else they shall think fit for entertainment.

*Item*, We will and command, That every Begger carry a good Bat, or Cudgel in his hand, and those that are able, to put a good Pike at the end of it, that they may be armed and provided against all casualties, that may befall either their purse, or their persons. Which they are to do upon penalty of their own hurt.

*Item*, That no begger may, or do wear any new garment, or but half worn out, save such as is rent and threed-bare, and full of patches, by reason of the ill example, that may grow thereby, and the general hurt that may come of it. Alwayes provided, that if any such Coat, or Cloak be given by way of Alms, that then it shall be lawfull for him to wear it that day onely wherein it was given him, without any farther limitation of Licence, but the next day following to put it off, and never wear it more, but forthwith to alter the property, upon pain of our general displeasure, and his own particular hinderance.

*Item*, We will and command, That in the taking of their places, and their seats, they do all and every one of them observe, *antiquitatem possessionis, non personæ*, the antiquity of

poſſeſſion, and not of the perſon; preferring the ancienter in ſtanding before the elder in years. And that no man ſhall dare, or preſume, to uſurp, or defraud one another in this kinde.

*Item*, We will and command, That two ſick, or two lame perſons may joyn and go together, and call brothers, but with this condition, that they beg by turns, and ſtrain their voices as high as they can reach; the one ſtill beginning where the other leaveth, obſerving equal time and tune, every one keeping his own ſide of the ſtreet; and not uſing any artificial phraſes, or affected form of ſpeeches: let each of them expreſſe, as ſignificantly as he can, his particular grief; and let them afterwards part and ſhare the gains between them, upon pain of our Worſhips diſpleaſure.

*Item*, We will and command, That no Begger carry from the knife upwards, any Arms, either offenſive, or defenſive. That he wear no Gloves, Pantofles, Spectacles, his Hoſe truſſed, or his Stockings gartered, upon pain of all his temporalities.

*Item*, It is farther enacted, that they may wear a foul filthy clout knit about their heads, inſtead of a Kerchieffe.

They may alſo bear about them a pair of Sizars, a Knife, an Awle, Needle and Thread, a Thimble, a wooden Diſh, a Gourd, a little Hand-basket, a Scrip, a Wallet. Be it alwayes provided, that they bear no Sack at their back, no basket of burthen, no *Alforjas*, or Knap-ſack, which Travellers uſe to put their proviſion in, when they are to go ſome great journey, nor any ſuch like kinde of things as theſe be. But it ſhall be onely lawfull for them to walk with two Crutches, and a ſore Leg, with a long and deep Tent in it.

*Item*, We will and command, That all beggers bear two purſes about them; one little one, and another of a bigger ſize, beſides certain private pockets for cloſer conveyance, that may ſafely endure a ſearch; and that they put the Alms that is given them into their Hat. And we farther will and command, that they neither may make, nor do make any Pouch, or Budget, in Coat, Cloak, Frock, Gabardine, Caſſock, or Mandilion, upon forfeiture, it being once eſpi'd and found out, they may chance to loſe it, and ſtand regiſtred ever after for fools upon record.

*Item*, We will and command, That no man diſcover the ſecrets and Myſteries of our Trade, nor divulge and publiſh them abroad, ſave onely to thoſe that are Profeſſors of the ſaid Art. And he that ſhall invent, or finde out any new trick, or cunning device for the common good, ſhall be bound to manifeſt the ſame to the incorporation of Beggers; to the end that it may be underſtood and known of all, forasmuch as ſuch good things as theſe, are to be accounted as common, there being no prohibition to the contrary; and more eſpecially, not to be concealed from thoſe that are our Countrey-men and naturals of the ſame Kingdom. But for the better encouraging of others, and that notice may be taken of our good government; We give priviledge, and plenary power to the firſt Inventor and Author thereof, that for the ſpace of one whole and compleat year, he make his beſt benefit of the firſt impreſſion, not ſuffering, or permitting any, without his ſpecial and particular Licence, to uſe, or exerciſe the ſame, upon pain of our heavy diſpleaſure.

*Item*, We will and command, That all Beggers ſhall manifeſt and make known to one another, all thoſe houſes where any Alms are to be had, eſpecially thoſe, where there is any Gaming, as alſo ſuch places, where your Gallants uſe to meet, and court their Miſtreſſes; for that is a certain rent, and ſeldom faileth.

*Item*, We will and command, that none ſhall carry a Dog about with him, making him to dance and leap thorow a Hoop: nor ſhall it be lawfull for him to have, or hold any place to beg at the door of any Church, any ſtation, or Jubilee, onely he ſhall have free leave to beg as he paſſes along by the ſtreet, upon pain of being counted contumacious and rebellious to our Laws and Ordinances.

*Item*, We will and command, That no begger preſume to come to the Butchers ſhambles, or to the Fiſh-market, to buy either fiſh, or fleſh, ſave in caſe of extream neceſſity, and Licenſe of the Phyſician; nor that he ſing, play upon any inſtrument, leap, or dance, by reaſon of the ſcandall that may ariſe by ſo doing.

*Item*, We Licence and permit, That ſuch Beggers as are ſo diſpoſed, may rent certain Children, to the number of four (but not above) their ages being firſt examined; and if two of them be taken for twins, born of one womb, at one and the ſelf-ſame time, it ſhall not be thought amiſſe of, in caſe that the elder of the two be not above five years old. And if it be a woman that goes about with theſe Children, ſhe ſhall bear one of them ſucking at her breaſt, and if a man, he ſhall carry one of them in his arms, and lead the other along by the hand, and no otherwiſe.

*Item*,

*Item*, We will and command, That thoſe Beggers that have any Children, they make ſetting Dogs of them, to lie watching cloſe at your Churches, and have ſtill an eye upon thoſe that come in and out, for whom it ſhall be lawfull to beg an Alms for their poor Father or Mother, that lie very ſick and keep their beds, and have nothing to help themſelves withall, having four, or five ſmall Children, that are ready to ſtarve for want of food. Alwayes provided, that it be ſo taken and underſtood, that this Patent extends not to any that is above ſix years of age; for if they ſhall once exceed and paſſe thoſe years, then are they to ſhift for themſelves, and like birds that are fluſh, to forſake the neſt, and like hounds that are ready to be entred, noſe out their own living, and go abroad, and bring home their prey at uſual and ordinary hours.

*Item*, We will and command, That no Begger give conſent, or ſuffer his Children to ſerve, to be bound Prentice to any Trade, or to wait upon any man, whom he ſhall acknowledge for his Maſter. For their gains will be little, and their labour much: And therein they ſhall greatly offend, by not following the ſteps of their fore-fathers, and running a courſe quite contrary to that good way, wherein they have been born and bred.

*Item*, We will and command, That by ſeven in the morning in the vvinter, and at five in the Summer, no Begger be in his bed, or keep his lodging, but by break of day, as ſoon as the Sun ſhall be ready to peep forth, or ſome half hour before, they go abroad to gather Honey for their Hive. And likewiſe, that ſome half an hour before the ſhutting in of the evening, he by all means, and at all times retire himſelf, and get him home; ſave onely in ſome caſes reſerved, and that with our eſpecial leave and Licence.

*Item*, We permit and give leave, That they may break their faſt in the morning, eating a morſel of ſome thing, or other, if they have laboured for their living, and gotten any thing the ſame morning, and not otherwiſe. For therein they loſe time (which is a precious thing) and ſpend upon the ſtock, by diminiſhing the principal. But with condition, that he waſh and cleanſe his mouth, that the ſent thereof be not perceived; as likewiſe, that he paſſe not up and down the ſtreets, or by any mans houſe, playing with a Clove of Garlick in his hand, a ſliced Onion, or that his breath ſmell of vvine; upon pain of being held incapable and unfit to beg.

*Item*, We will and command, That no man dare to play the Impoſtor, or commit any groſſe villany, as to ſteal houſhold-ſtuffe, or help to convey it away, or exchange it for other, or to untyle houſes, or ſtrip Children of their Cloaths, or to commit any the like baſe action, upon pain of being excluded from our brother-hood, and put out of our incorporation, and to be remitted over to the ſecular power.

*Item*, Our will and pleaſure is, That every Begger, when he ſhall be of full age; that is, (three years after twelve, being fully compleat and ended) having legally and worthily laboured in that courſe of life, and attained to the true Art of this our free and noble profeſſion, he be held, taken, known, and underſtood (be it any ſuch manner of perſon, or perſons) to have fulfilled the Law, and comply'd with the Statute: notwithſtanding, that two other years to gain experience, and to learn how to drive the fiſh into the Net, have alwayes to this very day and preſent hour, been thought very neceſſary and expedient; and ever after to be held as a Graduate, that hath performed his exerciſe, and taken degree amongſt us. And having thus profeſt himſelf, and made proof of his learning and manners, we farther will and command, that he have, hold, and enjoy all the Liberties, Priviledges, and exemptions granted by us under our great Seal; but with this condition, that he neither may, nor at any time do forſake our ſervice, and that he ſhew his obedience unto us, by obſerving our Laws and Statutes, and by ſubmitting himſelf to our Cenſure, in caſe he ſhall offend againſt them.

## Chap. III.

*How* Guzman de Alfarache *was not onely reprehended by a learned Rogue, and Doctor in his faculty; but likewiſe how he learned of him ſome new Orders and Capitulations, concerning this his roguiſh kinde of life, and that which hapned unto him in this his upright courſe; And of many precepts and leſſons delivered unto him upon this point by a* Cordoveſe, *an old cunning Croſſe-biter.*

BEſides theſe Ordinances, they had many other which they duely kept and obſerved, not worthy at this time to be ſpoken of, which were preſcribed and compiled by the advice and counſel of the famouſeſt Rogues in *Italy*, every one (in his time) ſetting down ſuch Laws, as then ſeemed moſt convenient. So that it might be ſaid of them, that they were another new Recopilation, or gathering together of thoſe of *Caſtile*. Theſe were much illuſtrated in thoſe dayes by one, whoſe proper name was *Alberto*, whoſe ſurname *Mizer Morcon*: Whom in *Rome*, we had made choice of for our General; Who, for his ſtature, ſhape, proportion of body, his faſhion, converſation, and commendable carriage, deſerved to have the Imperial Crown ſet upon his head. For he far ſurpaſſed all his Predeceſſours, who were no way to be compared unto him, ſo far did he out-ſtrip all them that had gone before him. He might deſervedly be ſtiled the Prince of Roguery, and the Arch-begger of Chriſtendom. He would devour you at one meal, all the tripes and entrals of two good ſheep, together with the Puddings that were made of them, beſides the Trotters, a whole Cows Udder, ten pound of bread, unboulted and unſifted, between the beginning and end of Dinner; allowing himſelf thereunto in drink, two *Acumbres* of vvine. And albeit himſelf alone got more Alms in one day than any ſix of thoſe ordinary Beggers, which gained moſt; yet had he never any over-plus left, nor did ſell any of thoſe ſcraps, that were given him, nor did receive any money, which he did not preſently drink. And he did go ſo far beyond us, and was every way ſo much our ſuperiour, that we muſt of force (as Vaſſals to his good, or bad fortune) ſuccour and relieve him all that we could. I never ſaw him button'd, nor covered from the girdle upward, never to wear any girdle, nor ſo much as half a hoſe, or ſhoe upon foot, or leg; His head was evermore bare, his beard cloſe ſhaven, and his skin all over his body did ſhine and gliſter, as if it had been anointed and baſted with Bacon. This upright man did ordain, that every poor body ſhould carry about with him a wooden diſh in the crown of his hat, or ſome other convenient place, and the dried rinde of a Pumpion, wherein to put his vvine, clapping it in ſome cloſe place, where it might not be ſeen.

That no begger ſhould carry any Jar, or pot about him, wherein to drink his water. But when he came to drink, he ſhould ſup it out of a Caldron, a Kettle, a great earthen Pan, ſome broad Tub, or huge Vat, or the like, and then too, to thruſt in his head, like a beaſt, and not in any other manner.

That he, that ſhould not drink a ſound draught after his Sallet, ſhould be made incapable to drink afterwards, as long as that ſupper, or dinner laſted, and to riſe up a-thirſt.

That no begging Rogue ſhould buy, or eat any Comfits, Conſerves, or the like ſweet things.

That every one ſhould eat either Salt, or Pepper with his meat; unleſſe it hath been therewith ſeaſoned before. In that caſe, the doing, or not doing of it, ſhall be left to his own liberty.

That your poor Rogues ſhall be bound to ſleep upon the ground in their Cloaths, without Pillow, or Bolſter, lying upon their backs, with their faces up to heaven.

That having gotten enough to ſpend that day he goes a-begging, he ſhall trouble himſelf no farther, nor begge any more for that day, but give way to others to glean, where he left off.

This our *Mizer Morcon*, when he did eat, would lie lazing all along upon the ground, and would ſleep both Winter and Summer, without any covering of ſheet, blanket, or any thing elſe that might keep him warm.

Ten moneths of the year, he never went out of Taverns, and victualling houſes. We had (as you have heard) our Laws and Orders amongſt us, all which I committed to memory, and was perfect in them, but did obſerve no more of them, ſave ſuch as appertained to good government, and of theſe I was every way as religious, and obſervant, as if my Sal-

vation

vation had depended upon the true keeping of them. I made it my chief happineſſe, and placed a kinde of felicity therein, that my action might credit my Profeſſion, and become abſolute in my calling. For things, that are once imitated and begun by us, when we have taken them in hand, are not eaſily to be forgotten, nor to be given over, till they be fully finiſhed, and ended. For it is a note of ſmall prudence, to enter upon many things, and to end none of them.

I did not put my hand to any thing, that ever I took it away, till I ſaw my labour ended, and had fully effected what I had undertaken. But becauſe as yet I was but green fruit, and not come to my full ripeneſſe, whereby I wanted much of my true reliſh, I failed much in the practick part of my profeſſion, and fell ſhort dayly in ſuch caſualties as did uſually offer themſelves unto me, and in many of them I did much erre.

Upon a Feaſt-day about the beginning of *September*, towards one of the Clock in the afternoon, I went forth into the Citie in that great heat, and ſuch a ſcorching Sun, that I am not able to expreſſe it, perſwading my ſelf, that whoſoever ſhould hear me beg at that time of day, would verily think, that I was wondrous hungry, and taking pity of me, would relieve me with ſomething, or other.

I would needs (meerly out of curioſity, and no other end elſe in the vvorld) ſee what I could get at theſe unſeaſonable hours. I walkt my Stations through ſome ſtreets, and viſited many houſes, but could get nothing from them, ſave evil words, giving me foul language, & many a bitter curſe, asking me in a Devils name what I made there? And ſo roming about from houſe to houſe, I came at laſt to one, where I knockt at the door with my ſtaff, but no body would anſwer me. I knockt the ſecond time, and the third, but all was one. Then I enlarged my voice, and began in the higheſt key I could reach, to ſet out my Throat, and to beg as loud as I could for my life. For the houſe was very great, and ſtood far within, and therefore ſuppoſed they could hardly hear me, unleſſe I ſtrained my note a little higher. Whileſt I was thus balling at the door, a roguiſh boy of the Kitchin, who (as it ſhould ſeem) was ſcouring of diſhes, came juſt to the ſame window, under which I directly ſtood, & threw down upon me a great bucket of ſcalding water; & when he ſaw it had fairly lighted upon me, he leiſurely utters: *Aqua va, quardaos debaxo.* Ware water, look to your ſelves there below. With that I began to cry out, that all the ſtreet did ring of me, grievouſly complaining, that I was kill'd by ſome in that houſe, and that it was impoſſible I ſhould live. True it is, that I was ſcalded, but not in that cruel manner as I made my crimination.

With this vociferation of mine, and the lamentable exclamation that I made, the people flockt about me, and every one ſpake what he thought: One ſaid it was ill done; another, that it was mine own fault; and that though my ſelf had no minde to ſleep, yet *I* ought in good manners to ſuffer others to take their reſt.

There were ſome others, that did comfort me the beſt they could, and of thoſe that were ſomewhat more tender-hearted than the reſt, I made a ſhift to pick up ſome money amongſt them, and with the help of that, I went firſt where *I* might dry my ſelf, and afterwards got me home to take my reſt; muttering to my ſelf, as *I* went along, who (with a pocks) made me ſo curious, as to go about to remove the River out of his bed? When ſhall I be able to contain my ſelf? When ſhall I learn to content my ſelf with that which ſhall be fit and neceſſary for me, without incroaching upon that, which is not convenient for me? What Devil did deceive me, and drew me out of that ordinary track, which I was wont to tread, by making me to be more forward than the reſt of my fellows, I drew near at laſt to mine own lodging, and there hard by dwelt an old poor man, about ſome threeſcore and ten years of age, who was born of beggerly Parents, that had born Office in our Incorporation, and had left his Trade of begging unto him by inheritance, wherewith he made a ſhift to live, and to paſſe his life away here upon earth.

He was of *Cordova*, there was he born: Which I the rather tell you, that you may know that he was di'd in his wool, a notable Rogue in grain, whom his mother brought to *Rome* ſucking at her breaſt, in the year of *Jubilee*.

When he ſaw me paſſe by in that miſerable pickle, looking for all the world like a Diſh-clout, all wet, all to be moyl'd, foul and full of greaſe, and all to be ſpatter'd with the refuſe leaves of Colewortes, and the over-ſodden empty huſks of Peaſe, wherewith my garments were imbroidered all over; he aſkt me what had happed unto me? I acquainted him with the whole ſucceſſe of the buſineſſe. He was ready to burſt himſelf with laughing, and having made himſelf merry a while at my miſ-fortune, compoſing his countenance, with a ſetled kinde of gravity, in the end he ſaid thus unto me.

I fear me (my friend *Guzman*) that you will prove another *Benitillo*, you are ſuch a Hot-ſpur, & your young bloud boyls ſo faſt with in you, that you would fain come to be a Maſter, before you have attain'd to be a Scholler. Doſt thou not now perceive that thou haſt done ill, in exceeding thy Commiſſion, and in breaking thoſe cuſtomes that are ordered and ordained by the Company? Yet, becauſe thou art my Countrey-man, and a young Lad (and therefore apt to erre) I will teach and inſtruct thee what thou oughteſt to do, and how to behave thy ſelf. Sit thee down by me, and hearken well to that which I ſhall ſay unto thee.

And firſt of all, I would have thee to conſider, That thou muſt not go a begging in the Summer time preſently after dinner, when moſt men are diſpoſed to *Seſtear*, and to lye down and take a Nap, in ſome place of ſhade, or ſome cool room; and leſſe at Noblemens houſes, than thoſe of your Trades-men and Citizens. The hour is improper, and unfit, and all of them then either do, or at leaſt are deſirous to take their reſt. And it would be as ſtrange, as troubleſom unto them, that any ſhould then offer to wake them. And importunities at that time of all other, are moſt irkſome, and unpleaſing unto them.

Next, I would have thee take this rule of me, (and it is a true one.) That when you have call'd, or knock't at one door twice, either there is no body within, or they will not be within, becauſe they are not willing to anſwer. When thou perceiveſt that, get thee gone, and ſtay there no longer; for thou mayeſt well loſe thy time, but thou ſhalt get no money.

Never offer to draw a Latch, or to thruſt open a door that is put to, nor to enter within the houſe. For it hapneth ſometime in the opening of a doors that (without the knowledge of thoſe of the houſe, not once dreaming of any ſuch accident) a Dog may ſuddenly ruſh fiercely forth upon thee, and carry away half a Buttock at a bit. Nor do I know how theſe ſcurvy Curs ſhould come to know us, ſo well as they do, but I am ſure we are hated of them, and they will never let us paſſe by them, without barking, or biting. And if the Dog ſhould be miſſing, ſome deſperate Roguiſh boy, or other will not fail to fall upon thee, telling thee that, which thou wouldſt be loath to hear. And it is well if thou ſcape him ſo.

When thou beggeſt for an Alms, thou muſt not laugh, nor change thy note, but ſo tune thy voyce, that it may carry the ſhow of one that is ſick, though thou have health enough for thy ſelf, and ſome to ſpare for thy Neighbours; having a ſpecial care, that your face keep an even correſpondence with your eyes; your mouth it's equal and juſt compaſſe, and your head bending towards your boſom.

Rub thy face a morning, when thou riſeſt, with a cloath that is rather dankiſh, than dung-wet, that when thou goeſt abroad, thou mayeſt ſeem neither fair, nor foul. And on thy Cloaths, clap many patches, though they be never ſo whole; and let them be of divers colours. For it much importeth, that a poor mans Cloaths ſhould be rather patch't, than neat and cleanly: yet ſo, that they be not ſo ſlovenly, as to cauſe loathſomeneſſe.

It will ſometimes ſo fall out, that coming to a man to beg an Alms, he will take off his Glove, and put his hand into his pocket, whereof thou wilt be glad, and laugh to thy ſelf, thinking that he hath a purpoſe to beſtow an Alms upon thee, when as in the end thou ſhalt ſee him onely pull out his Handker-chief to blow his noſe. But for all this, thou muſt not be angry, nor ſeem to grumble at the matter, for it may be ſome other may be by him, which will give thee ſomewhat, though he do not. Whereas, if he ſhall perceive thy proud and ſullen carriage, he will give thee nothing.

Where thou ſhalt finde thy ſelf well uſed, ſee thou repair thither dayly: For as devotion ſhall abound, ſo ſhall thy ſtock increaſe. But ſee, that thou never depart from his door, till thou have pray'd for his friends that are deceaſed, & to intreat of God, that he will be pleaſed to bleſſe and proſper him in all his actions.

Anſwer evil language, with milde words, and to rough ſpeech, apply ſoft terms; For thou art a Spaniard, and for our pride (being ill belov'd) we are abhorred of all, whereſoever we come; And he that will draw money out of another mans purſe, muſt rather beg than brawl; crave, than curſe; pray, than blaſpheme. For a gentle Calf ſucks milk from a ſtrange teat, as well as from his dams.

When they ſhall not give thee an Alms, anſwer with devotion, God be thanked. God bleſſe your Worſhip, and grant much health, peace, and content to this houſe for the great good, and mercy, that you dayly do, and ſhow unto the poor. This trick got me a great deal of money; for anſwering them ſo gently, and ſo mildly, holding up my hands, and lifting up my eyes unto Heaven, they would call me back again, and give me of that they had.

Be-

Beſides all this, he taught me how to fain my ſelf a Leper, to make wounds in my fleſh, to raiſe a ſwelling in my leg, to benum an arm, to ſet a counterfeit colour on the face, to alter the whole body, and other curious principles of his Art; to the end that ſome might not twit us in the teeth, & upbraidingly ſay unto us; that our limbs were ſound, and our ſelves ſtrong and healthy, that we ſhould work for our living, and that it were no charity, to relieve ſuch luſty ſtout young Rogues. He did me many friendly Offices, he had many curious ſecrets of nature, whereof he made good uſe; Nor did he hide any thing from me; for he found me very capable, and apt to receive whatſoever he ſhould put into me; and then he began to ſay unto me, you ſee my foot is already in the ſtirrop to go unto my grave, and I would willingly leave a Chaplain behinde me to pray unto God for me. And it fell out true as he ſaid; for within a ſhort time after he died.

We did ſome of us meet many times together, to repeat our parts, and to make ſhew, what manner of exclamations would beſt become us, and make moſt for our profit; theſe were ſtudied by night, inventing divers methods and forms of benediction. There was a poor man that got his living onely by making this forme for us, and did ſell them unto us, at the rate of ſo many Comedies, or Tragedies. And all was little enough, and no more than needed to move mens mindes, and to ſtir them up to compaſſion.

On feſtival dayes we would be up betimes, where the Pardons and Indulgences were ſtiring, that we might provide us ſome good place in the Church: for it was no ſmall benefit unto him, that could get neer unto the Font where the Holy-water was, or that little Chappel, where they were to make their ſtation.

We would now and then go a Progreſſe, and run over all the Countrey, not leaving out a Village, nor ſo much as a Cottage bordering there-abouts, which we did not go unto; whence we came very well furniſht: For they would give us Bacon, Cheeſe, and Bread, Eggs in great abundance, beſides Cloaths to cover our nakedneſſe, pitying very much our poor and miſerable condition.

We would many times beg a draught of vvine for Gods ſake, complaining much of the pain and weakneſſe of our ſtomack. As much as you will would they ſay, if you have any thing wherein to put it.

We alwayes carried a little Jar with us, under colour of drinking water in it, which held ſomewhat leſſe than half an *Acumbre*; that would evermore fill it brim-full, before they gave it us; but we were no ſooner gone from that door, but we did preſently empty it into a *Bata*, which one of our Company carried behinde him at his girdle, which would well hold ſome four *Acumbres*. And I remembred it was once our hap to fill it full in one ſtreet alone, ſo that we were inforced to go home, and pour it forth into a little earthen veſſel (which they call a *Tinajuela*) and then came back again to get more.

We uſually went ſhod, but as good have been unſhod, our heads covered, but as good have gone bare. So that we had ſhooes, and no ſhooes; hats, and no hats. For our ſhooes were ſandal-faſhion, old enough, and torn enough, and our hats were ſutable unto them; the one would ſcarce hang on our feet, the other ſcarce ſit on our heads.

We ſeldom wore any ſhirt at all. For, when (according to our accuſtomed humility) we ſhould crave an Alms at ſuch a door, they would ordinarily ſay, Pardon me (my friend;) I have not for you. God help you, I will give you ſomething at another time. Then we begin anew, and cry; An old pair of ſhooes, or an old hat (good Maſter) for this poor Soul, that hath never a ſhooe to his foot to bear him out of the durt, nor never a hat to defend his head from the Sun and the Rain; Gods holy name be praiſed. The Lord bleſſe your Worſhip, and deliver your good Worſhip from ſuch a deal of miſery and wretchedneſſe, as we poor creatures indure. God multiply his bleſſings upon you, and free you and yours, and all that you love, from the power of Traitors and Villains: *Chriſt Jeſus* guard your Worſhip, and give you health both of body and Soul, which is the greateſt wealth of all, and the trueſt riches.

If after this he ſhall reply: Indeed (brother) I have not for you, I can not pleaſure you at this time, excuſe me.

Then, upon the neck of that comes another replicant, and he layes about him, beſeeching him to beſtow upon him ſome old ſhirt, though never ſo ragged and torn, for to cover the fleſh, and to cure the wounds of this poor miſerable man, and that he ſhall finde it again in Heaven, and that God will one day cover him again with the cloathing of his mercy, and put upon him a newer and whiter ſtole of innocency and righteouſneſſe, that ſhall never wear out. I begge it of you for *Jeſus Chriſt* ſake, he knows my wants, and that I am not

able to work and labour for my living. The Lord help me; And the Lord reward you. And praised be that pure unspottednesse of our blessed Lady the Virgin *Mary*.

Now tell me, what heart is there in the world, though of Jasper, and what bowels, though as tough as Iron, and as hard as steel, which will not be made malleable with this hammer, and melt into compassion with the heat and warmth of so many good words?

Few houses did escape us, without some one purchase, or other. And never a pair of shooes could be so bad, no hat so vile, and no shirt so old, that was given us, but yielded us more than a piece of three pence. To us it was much, but to him that parted with it, of no profit, and lesse reckoning. It was to us a mine in the *Serro de Potosi*: We had Merchants and Brokers for every one of these things, who would lay us down money for them on the board, perfumed and washt over with the water of Angels.

We had upon the way certain little Asses, whereon we did ride by turns, when any store of rain fell, that we might the better passe over the Rivers, when the waters were risen. And if we did light by chance upon any person, that seemed to bear the face of authority, we began to call upon him afar off, many a large step before we came at him, to the end that he might have leisure enough to pull out his purse, and take forth an Alms; for if we should stay our begging till we did just incounter each other, many would forbear to give us, least they might be hindred in their journey, and so we should go without it. And taking this course, we did seldom misse.

Other whiles, when we saw it fit occasion and time for it, upon discovery of some company of people that came trouping together, we would prepare our selves to put on a counterfeit lamenesse, to fall a halting, and betake us to our Crutches: we would change our looks, alter our countenances, take one another up upon our backs, writhe our mouths, turn the lids and balls of our eyes up to Heaven, some feigning themselves dumb, others some crippled, and blinde, making shew that we could not go but upon Stilts, when as indeed we were as nimble and light-footed as the Buck. We would clap our feet in a trice in certain Swathes, that hung at our necks for that purpose, and carry our arms in a string, so that with these counterfeit tricks, and the help of good language, desiring God to send them well on their journey, and that he would preserve their limbs, and blesse their eye-sight, and bring them safe to their journeys end, did alwayes bring us in money. And these we did call our Adventures, because these good fortunes befell us abroad in strange Countreys, in places that were desart and unpeopled, and because commonly it succeeded well with us. But otherwise, we did go no farther than what was precisely set down unto us, and was held to be necessary for the performance of our progresse.

We had one excellent gift above all the rest. That there was not any Feast, where we were not present, getting us some one good place, or other, nor any Banquet, whereof we had not a part; Our Noses were so good that we could smell such things some ten streets off.

We had no House at all, yet every House was ours; For either a Cardinals, an Embassadours, or some Noble mans Porch, or other did never fail us; And if all, or any of these did fail us, the Church Porches were free, and no body could there put us out. So that having no property in any thing, we did notwithstanding possesse every thing.

There were some likewise, that had old ruinous Castles, decayed buildings, and other poor lodgings not worth any thing, where we did make our Rendevous: For all were not permitted to be Adventurers, nor all allowed Pipkins to boyl their meat in; But I, (who was but a young stripling) look where I was over-night, I would be sure to be there again the next day; So that albeit I had many times bad lodging, yet my youth bore it out, and it seemed to me as good as the rest.

CHAP.

## Chapter IV.

Guſman de Alfarache *diſcourſeth of the Charity, that we are to uſe towards our neighbours; He reconnteth what befell him with a Gentleman: And of the free life, and great liberty which a Begger enjoyes.*

ONe true ſigne, and aſſured token of our predeſtination, is the Pitie and Compaſſion which we have of our neighbour. For to have a fellow-feeling of another mans miſery, (as if the caſe were our own) is a deed of Charity, which covereth a multitude of ſinnes; and where there is love, there is God, and he evermore plentifully dwelleth in thoſe hearts by his Holy Spirit, where Charity and mercy aboundeth. All things, with it, have life and being; without it, dye and come to nothing. For, neither the gift of prophecie, nor the underſtanding of myſteries, nor the knowledge of God, no nor faith it ſelf, without charitie, is any thing at all, but is all as nothing. To love my neighbour, as I love my ſelf, is of all other, the richeſt and the greateſt Sacrifice; becauſe it is offred up in the Temple of the ever-living God. And the merit is as great (through the mercy of our Saviour Jeſus Chriſt) to be truely ſenſible of our brothers miſerie and undoing; as is the pleaſure that we take, that our ſelves ſhould be ſaved.

Charitie is the end of the Commandements, it is the only mark, whereat the precepts of the Law do ſhoot. And he that ſhall be charitable, ſhall finde the Lord mercifull unto him in the day of his tryall. And becauſe without God, we are not able to merit any thing of our ſelves, and for that Charitie is the gift of God, it is very fit and neceſſarie, that we ſhould begge it at his hands with teares, and do works worthy the obtaining of it, moyſtning with thoſe precious drops, the great drought that we ſuffer in our ſouls, and mollifying therewith the hardneſs of our hearts, that they may bring forth the fruits of good Works, which are the effects of a true and lively faith. For, the humble and contrite ſpirit ſhall never be forſaken, but God will rather ſtill ſuccour and ſupply him with his grace, beſtowing his beſt favours upon him, and enriching him with many notable and known benefits.

And albeit Riches (being ſo neer a neighbour as it is unto Pride) be an occaſion of Vice, weakning and infeebling thoſe our other Vertues, though it be dangerous to it's Owner; though it be a tyrannizing Lord, and a trayterous Slave; yet notwithſtanding it is of the nature of Sugar, which hath this condition and property belonging unto it, that (if it be ſweet and good, and hath not loſt his ſavour) with warm things, it warmeth and giveth heat, and with cold things, it cooleth and refreſheth. To the rich it ſerves as an inſtrument and meane (by the helping hand of Charity) to buy eternall bleſſedneſs. And that man ſhall be charitable, and truely rich, who making the poor man rich, ſhall make himſelf of a rich man, poor For thereby, he ſhall make the world to know, that he is a true Diſciple of his Saviour Jeſus Chriſt.

I ſtood one day in the outward Court of a Cardinals houſe, hard by the Porch, cloſely wrapt and muffled up in a great Ruſſet Cloak, juſt of the ſame colour as it came from the Sheeps back, without any other dye in the world; which was ſo full of Patches one clapt upon another, which I had ſowne ſo of purpoſe; that (where it had leaſt) it was no leſſe than of three threds, ſo that you could not at all, or very hardly diſcerne the ground of it's own true colour. It was as hard and as ſtiffe as any boord, and for all weathers, far better than your faſteſt Felt, or your cloſeſt-wrought Rugge, or any other frized cloth in the world; for it was wondrous warm, and no ayre, water, nor cold would paſſe thorow it, and I was about to ſay (pleaſe it you to excuſe the exceſſe of the phraſe) that no arrow was able to pierce it.

Whilſt I was thus waiting, there comes me in a Cavallero to viſit the Cardinall, ſeeming both by his Perſon, and his Attendants, to be a Gentleman of principall ranke and quality. Who, when he ſaw me ſtanding there in this manner, thought verily with himſelf, that I was ſick of an Ague; and that I had then my cold fit upon me: when as indeed the cauſe that I lookt ſo pitifull was, that I had layen there in the Porch the night before; and becauſe it was winter time, and that the ayre was freſh, and the wind blew cold, I was willing to keep me where I was, till the day had advanced it ſelf a little more forward.

He look't earneſtly upon me, and after he had well viewed me, he ſtood ſtill, and beckned me unto him. I ſneak't out my head, when I came near unto him, and being amazed on the ſudden, and much aſtoniſhed, to ſee a man of his worth approach ſo neer unto me, my

countenance did come and go, and began ſtrangely to change and alter it ſelf, not knowing why, or wherefore, or what ſhould be the cauſe of this ſudden alteration.

He (good Gentleman) thought that *I* did ſhake and tremble, and kindly ſaid unto me; Put on thy Hat, my Boy, put on, I ſay, and cover thy head; God comfort thee and ſend thee well: And with that putting his hand into his pocket, he took out all that he had, which was a matter of ſome thirteen *Royals* and a half, and gave them me. I took them, and was ſo raviſhed therewith, that I was almoſt beſides my ſelf, as well in regard of the liberalneſs of the Almes, as to ſee how he went away from me, lifting up his eyes unto heaven.

And I verily beleeve, that he ſaid to himſelf, as he went along; Let (O Lord) the Angels bleſſe thee, and all thoſe Courtiours, that wait on thee in thy heavenly Kingdome. Let all the Spirits of Heaven praiſe and magnifie thy Holy name, for men do not know how to honour thee, they are rude, and ignorant creatures. O Lord, how much am I bound unto thee! that I being made of no better metall than this poor man, and perhaps borne of no better bloud than he, ſhould ſleep and take my reſt in my ſoft bed, whilſt he is forced to lye on the hard ground; ſhould go ſo well clad as I do, whilſt he remains naked, and comfortleſſe; ſhould be thus rich, as I am, and he ſo poor; that I ſhould be ſound, and he ſick; I admitted, and he deſpiſed: and whereas thou might'ſt (by exchanging only of our places) have beſtow'd all that upon him, which thou haſt conferr'd on me; Yet (O Lord) thou haſt been pleaſed to deal otherwiſe with me; and thou thy ſelf beſt knoweſt why, and wherefore. Save me (ſweet Jeſu) by that precious bloud, which thou ſheddeſt for my ſins. For that ſhall be my true riches, to lay faſt hold upon thee: For having thee, I have all things, and not having thee, I have nothing. I ſay, that this Gentleman knew very well how to imploy thoſe Talents, which God had put into his hands; not conſidering ſo much to whom he gave, as for whoſe ſake he gave. Looking well upon me, and looking well into himſelf, weighing my wretched, and his happy condition, he gave me all that he had, with a frank hand, and a free heart; the one being as full of bounty, as the other of compaſſion.

Such good ſouls as theſe, did (in the exerciſing of their Charity) gaine heaven by our hands, and we (wicked Villains) have loſt it by theirs; ſince, through the greedy deſire we have to receive, being ſtill craving and begging when we have no need, we rob thoſe thereof that are in true want, ſuffering this Vice of ours to uſurpe upon anothers Office. We went ſtill full gorged, greater gluttons and drunkards the world did not affond, our ſides were ready to crack with gurmandizing, and our brains to burſt with bowzing; your Senators of *Rome* could not live more merrily than we did, for we were as tall trencher-men, and as good Epicures as the beſt of them. And albeit we are not ſo much reſpected, nor live in that repute and eſteem as they do; yet our manner of life hath a great deal more eaſe in it, and I am ſure, a great deal leſſe trouble.

And we have beſides two ſuch Priviledges, as none of them all; no not the beſt man in *Rome* hath the like. The one is a kinde of liberty that we have in begging, yet nevertheleſſe do not looſe our liberty, which is not ſo with your better ſort of men. For miſery hath no greater miſery with it, than when a man is forced to be beholding to ſuch or ſuch a friend to ſuccour and relieve his wants, though this help ſhould come from the free hand of his own naturall brother. For he buyes at a dear rate, that receives this kindneſs, and far more dearly does he ſell, who gives to him that is of a thankfull nature. And if on this point of begging, I might ſpeak mine opinion, it is the worſt mis-fortune, that can befall a poor mans life, when he once comes to be driven to beg out of meer neceſſity. For although it be freely given, yet the very craving therof doth coſt him much. Moreover, I ſhall tell thee what is the cauſe, that begging doth ſo much vex a man, and why it goes ſo much againſt his ſtomack; which is: That man being a perfect reaſonable creature, like unto God himſelf (as himſelf ſaith) for when he was to make man (the moſt bleſſed Trinity aſſiſting at that Creation) God ſaid, let us make man after our own Image and likeneſs. (And I could alſo tell thee how this is to be underſtood, but it is not proper for this time and place.) Well, man was made, and coming forth into the world, we are all of us naturally inclined to deifie our ſelves, ſeeking as much as in us lyeth, to come near unto God: nay, (if it were poſſible) to be gods. And with this thirſt we ſtill grow drier and drier; and with this hunger, wax weaker and weaker.

We ſee that God created all things: we would fain do the like. And ſeeing we cannot do it, as his divine Majeſty did of nothing, we would do it of ſomething, as farre forth as our ability hath power to ſtretch, ſeeking to conſerve *individua Speciorum*, the individuals of every *Species*, or ſeverall kinds upon earth. The bruit Beaſts, in the Fields; the Fiſhes, in the Waters;

Waters; the Plants, in the Earth: And ſo every thing in it's nature, that is in the world. He beheld thoſe works, which he had made with his own hands, and they ſeemed to him very good, as proceeding from thoſe bleſſed and powerfull hands of his. He took delight in looking upon them, for they were made to his minde. This paſſeth currant at this day, as it is ſet down in the letter. And we likewiſe are deſirous to do, or at leaſt to counterfeit the like; ſtriving to imitate him all that we may.

How well do I like that Bird, that I have bred up in mine own houſe? That Lamb, which hath been reared in mine own Farme? That Tree, which hath been planted in mine own Orchard? That Flower, which hath ſprung up in mine own Garden? What comfort do I take in looking upon them? How does it joy me, to ſee them to thrive and proſper? Inſomuch, that what my ſelf have not bred, made, or planted with mine own hands, although it be otherwiſe very good in it ſelf, I will not ſtick to pull it up by the roots, and caſt it away from me, and never grieve thereat, it ſhall never trouble me: whereas that, which is the work of mine own hands, the dear child of my induſtry: the fruit of my labours, though it be not ſo good as the other; yet becauſe it is my own handy-work, I like it, and love it. From my neighbours or my friends Tree, I will not only take away the flower, and the fruit, but I will not ſo much as leave a leaf, or a ſprig thereupon, and if I have a minde thereunto, I will not greatly care to cut it down to the ground. But if it be mine owne, and that I have planted it with mine own hands, it would grieve my very ſoul if I ſhould find but a *Piſmire*, or a *Caterpiller* upon it, to do it any hurt, or to ſee a bird but to peck at it, and all becauſe it is mine. In a word, we do all of us love our own works. And ſo, in wiſhing well unto them, I am like to him that made me, and have it from him by inheritance.

The like is true in all other actions. It is very proper to God to give; and very improper, to crave. Unleſſe when he requireth ſomething of us for our own good. For that which he asketh of us, it is not for himſelf, neither hath he any need thereof; for he is *Remedium totius neceſſitatis*: the onely reliever of all our wants, and the onely ſatisfier of the hungry. He hath much and therefore is able to give much, and nothing can be wanting unto him. He doth communicate and impart unto all according to their ſeverall neceſſities, eaſilier than thou canſt take water out of the Sea, and with a far larger hand; ſo great an equality is there betwixt thy miſery, and his mercy.

We would likewiſe be like unto him in this; he made me according to his own likeneſs, and I ought accordingly to be like unto him; even as the thing inſtamped, ought to be like unto the Stampe. How mad, how eager, how deſirous, and how fooliſhly are we all bent upon giving? The Covetous, the Saving man, the Rich, the Uſurer, the Begger, all do keep and hoord up for to give. But the moſt of theſe men underſtand leſt (as I told you before) when they are to give, for they do not give till they be dead. If thou aske theſe men, why they maſſe up money, and why in their life-time they bury it under ground, and to what end they do it? ſome will anſwer thee, that they lay it up for their heirs; others for their ſouls; others, that they may leave ſome thing behind them, and all of them ſure, that they can carry none of it away with them. Thou ſeeſt then how they are willing to give, and how out of its due time and ſeaſon; like an untimely birth, which comes not to perfection. But in the end, this is our end, this is our deſire.

How God-like does a man find himſelf, when with a generous minde he hath wherewith to give, and doth give? how ſweet and pleaſing is his hand unto him; how cheerfull his countenance; how quiet his heart; how contented his ſoul? His gray-hairs are removed, his blood is refreſhed; his life is inlarged. And (queſtionleſs) ſo much the more, by how much he knows, that he hath ability to do it, and is not afraid, that he ſhall ever want. If we be willing therefore to do that which he did; (for ſo did he with us) let us take as much pleaſure to give, as it would grieve us at the heart to aske.

And thoſe, towards whom Gods hand hath been ſo frank and liberall, and having made them (which likewiſe is another particular gift of his) of a noble minde, if they find themſelves oppreſſed with want, and deprived of theſe their worldly goods, they will rather endure any miſery whatſoever, than begge of another to relieve their wretched eſtates.

Theſe are the men, of whom there is great pitie to be had, and theſe the whole world ought to relieve with a full hand. For by this it is known, who does them friendſhip, and ſhews them any kindneſs, when ſeeing them in neceſſitie, they ſuccour them, before they crave their help. For, if they ſhould be put to that puſh, and be driven to ſue unto them, they will neither give, nor lend them. It is a debt which they pay them, and yet put it forth to Uſurie with advantage. This is a friend indeed, which ſuccours his friend in time of need:

And

And this I call ſuccour, when *I* concur and run along with him. It becomes me to give, but beſeems not him to aske. I am to run equall fortunes with him. I muſt keep an even pace with him, neither be too far behind him, nor too much before him.

If *I* have entertained thee too long in this ſubject, and have not given thee ſatisfaction, pardon my ignorance, and accept my good will. So that the liberty of craving, is permitted only to the poor; And in this we are equall with Kings and Princes, whoſe particular priviledge it is, to demand Subſidies, and Ayde-money, which is no baſeneſs in them, howſoever it may be in others. But the difference is, that Kings crave of the Commons, for the Common good, and for to ſupply their neceſſary occaſions; But the poor, for themſelves onely, out of an evill cuſtome, which they have gotten.

That other Priviledge, which *I* told you of, is that of the five Senſes. Who is he now adaies in the world, that with larger licence, and freer liberty doth enjoy them, than the poor man, or with greater ſecurity, or more content? Who doth ſo thorowly and ſo feelingly taſte them as he? And becauſe I have named the word Taſte, I will begin firſt with that.

There is not that pot, which we do not Skimme; not that meat, which we do not prove; nor that banquet, wherein we have not a ſhare. Whether did that poor man ever come, that the houſe that deny'd him to day, did not give him to morrow? He runs thorow all mens houſes, he begs of them all, and he taſtes of all: and he is beſt able to ſay, which houſe hath the beſt meat, and the beſt dreſt.

For the hearing. Who hears more than the poor man doth? For being diſ-intereſſed in all kind of things, none are jealous that he ſhould hear them in the open ſtreets in private houſes, in publike Churches, in the Market place, & in every place every man treats freely of his buſineſs, without any ſuſpition of him, though the matter be never ſo important. Sleeping beſides a nights, upon ſome bulk or ſtall in the ſtreets, what muſick have they beſtowed upon them, which we hear not? What Love-tricks are they privy to, which we know not? Nothing is kept ſecret from ſuch poor beggerly Raſcalls as we be. And for publike affairs, we have by a thouſand parts better intelligence, then all the world beſides. For we hear that treated of in more parts, than all men elſe beſides put all together.

For your ſeeing likewiſe: how freely may we enjoy it, without being noted? nor aske the queſtion why we gaze upon them, nor offer to hinder us from looking here, and looking there. How often have I accuſed and condemned my ſelf, when begging in the Church, mine eye hath been wandring and roving about? and chuckt and hugg'd my ſelf, with the delight and pleaſure that I have taken therein? Or to ſpeak down-right Engliſh, and to declare my ſelf more plainly, feeding mine eyes greedily on thoſe Angelicall faces of your fineſt Ladies, whoſe Lovers did not dare to look upon them for fear of being noted: all which was freely permitted unto us.

For matter of ſmelling; who can ſmell better than we, who are called by the name of Smell-Feaſts? Beſides, if any ſmell be ſo much the better, by how much it is the more profitable, to us, our own Amber, and our own Muske, is better and truer than all the reſt, which is a clove of Garlick, which ordinarily we never go without; as being a Preſervative againſt all contagious corruption whatſoever. And if we be deſirous of any other odours, we then get us to the corner of ſome one ſtreet or other, where theſe things are commonly ſold, and there we ſatisfie our ſence of ſmelling with the ſweet perfumes of Jerkins, and of Gloves, ſome civited, and ſome powdred, that are there laid out for ſhow, till the duſt and powder of them come flying into our eyes, and our noſtrills.

Will you happily ſay, that the ſence of Touching is wanting unto us? And that never any good thing came yet to our hands? Lament your ignorance. What ſuch difference I pray, is there betwixt poverty and beauty. We poor beggers touch and handle as good ware as the rich, and enjoy as pretty Commodities; but all men do not underſtand this Myſterie. There be ſome poor men, which for all their beggerie and poverty, maintain ſuch a handſome *Dear*, as many a great rich man would be glad to enjoy with all his heart. And yet ſhe had rather have this poor man, that doth truely pay her her Tribute, and is not wanting unto her in his love, than a rich man, that ſhall defame, and miſuſe her. And how often have ſome women given me an almes with their own hand, (I know not what others have done) but I out of my youth, would make bold to take hold of hers with mine; and in a kinde of devout acknowledgement, would never let it go, till I had kiſt it.

But theſe are but toyes to ſpeak of, and meer fooleries, but above all theſe things, the taſte, the ſight, ſmelling, hearing, and touching, the chiefeſt and trueſt of all the five Senſes, put them all together, was that of thoſe ruddy cheeks of your golden Ruddocks, your Spaniſh

Piſtolets,

Piſtolets, your plumpe and full-fac't *Portuguſe*, and your clear-skinn'd pieces of eight of *Caſtile*, which we kept ſecret to our ſelves, and did privately enjoy in a plentifull manner; For to have them for to pay them away, is not to enjoy them; To enjoy them is to have them lying by us, having no other need of them, then to uſe them for the clearing of the eye-ſight, and the comforting of our ſenſes. Howbeit, ſome ſtick not to ſay, *Que el dinero, nunca ſe goza, haſta que ſe gaſta.* That he enjoyes not his money, that does not ſpend it. Theſe we did carry about with us, ſewing them in ſome patches of our doublets near unto the heart, and as cloſe to the skin, as we could handſomely quilt them in, holding them to be reſtorative. There was not any one piece of a patch about us, were it never ſo foul, and never ſo vile, which was not worth a reaſonable good ſute of cloaths. We were all fluſh and full of gold; For, having our diet *gratis*, and feeding on free coſt, the money which we got, we never ſpent. And as the Proverbe is; *Eſſe te rizo rico, que te hizo el pico*; He made thee rich, who gave thee whereon to pick. And *grano a grano, hincha la gallina el papa.* Grain after grain, the Hen fills her craw. VVe grew many of us to increaſe our talent, till it came to a good round ſumme, wherewith many an honeſt man might have lifted his feet from the ground, and not have ſtuck in the mire. Reſt thy ſelf awhile in this Inne; for in that our journey, which we are to make to the Chapter following, you ſhall heare what hapned in *Florence* to a poor man that died there, of the ſame time and ſtanding with my ſelf. Wherein you ſhall know, whether our touching be not as good as other mens.

## CHAP. V.

Guzman de Alfarache *diſcourſeth of the quality of mens Conſciences, and recounteth what hapned in his time to a notable Rogue, and famous begger in* Florence, *who at his death made the great Duke his heir. He treats of the ambitious man; And delivers in the end, how he was thruſt out of* Gaeta *for his counterfeiting.*



IT is an ordinary thing with your poorer ſort of people, to become Plotters and Contrivers, watching night and day, and beating their brains to ſeek ſome poor means how to live, that they may not go a begging from door to door, and ſtill to lie (like *Lazarus*) at rich mens gates for relief, and yet ſtarve perhaps in the end for want of a morſell of bread. This every where befalls poor folks. They (poor ſouls) are put to their ſhifts. And albeit it be ſaid; that in matter of cruelty, *Italy* bears the bell; and in *Italy*, thoſe more particularly that are in, and about *Genoa*, yet I am not of belief, that the fault lies ſo much in the ſoyl of that place, as in the neceſſitie, and covetouſneſs of the people. I mean thoſe, that are of the right ſtampe, your miſerable and hard-hearted Uſurers, whom they that are the native Citizens, and naturall Inhabitants of thoſe parts, call by way of Nickname, *Moros blancos*, white Moors. Now they, to revenge themſelves of them, and to returne it home upon them again, ſay, *Que quien deſcubere la alcanala, eſſe lapaga.* Let him pay the toll, that firſt invented it. For this was not (ſay they) ſpoken of them, nor is it ſo to be underſtood; but of thoſe great Dealers and Negociators of *Genoa*, who carrie their conſciences in torne pockets, that are ript and unſewed, whereby they quickly come to be loſt, and ſcarce one amongſt them all, that hath a good and a ſound conſcience. But one ſaid, that this was not ſo, but would needs fetch the water a little farther off that ſhould drive this Mill; And therefore (ſaid he) it was thus: That when the *Genoueſes* ſend forth their children to ſchool, they carry their conſciences along with them, there at firſt they begin to play with them, then to wrangle and fall out about them; ſome forgetting that ever they brought any thither with them; and others (having loſt them there at play) leave them behind them, and never think on them after.

Now, when the ſchool comes to be ſwept; and theſe conſciences be found again, they give them to the Maſter, who carefully layes them up in a Cheſt, and there locks them up cloſe, that they may no more be loſt. And he that hereafter ſhall have need of one (if he can call to mind where he either left it, or laid it aſide) he were beſt go ſeek it out himſelf, to ſee if he can light on the right one.

Now, becauſe the School-maſter hath the keeping of ſo many, and ſo mixed one amongſt another, that he doth not know which is which, he gives him that which comes firſt to hand, and ſo the party goes away with it thinking verily that it is his own conſcience, that he

carries thus away with him, when as indeed it is not his, but either his friends conſcience, or his kinſmans, or ſome one or other of his acquaintance. And hence it comes to paſſe, that no man, bearing his owne conſcience in his owne boſome, every man looks and pries into that of another mans. And ever ſince that time, hath this ill report runne of them.

O *Spaine*, *Spaine*, my beloved Countrey, Faith's true keeper, God uphold thee with his hand: And as thou haſt much of this in thee; ſo likewiſe, thou haſt thy School-Maſters too, that truck one conſcience for another; and men, as well as they, that having chopt conſciences, go away well contented, preſuming all is right and ſtreight, and that which they have is their own.

How many forgetfull of themſelves, buſie themſelves in thoſe things, which appertaine not unto them? How unadviſedly reprehend, ſollicite, and cenſure another mans conſcience? My friend, this ought not to be ſo, Look well into thy ſelf, with-draw this chopping and changing: Firſt, throughly examine thine own, do not ſeek for a mote in another mans eye, till thou haſt pull'd the beame out of thine own; and then thou wilt tell me another tale.

That which thou thinkeſt is a diſcharge to thy conſcience, is a meer jeſt, and an idle toy, and therein thou doeſt but put a jeſt upon thy ſelf. Do not cloak thy ſin (thou Uſurer) ſaying; Such a one is a greater Uſurer than I am: Nor ſeek to excuſe thy ſelf, by ſaying; Such a man is a worſe thief than my ſelf. Meddle not thou with another mans conſcience; let that alone, and look well into thine own. This is that which concerns thee; This is that which imports thee moſt. Let every man put that away from him, that is not his own; and wherewith he hath nothing to do. Let him not meddle nor make with it. Let him not ſettle his eyes upon other mens ſins, but caſt them aſide off. For it is neither the Idolatry of *Salomon*, nor the Sacriledge of *Judas* that ſhall excuſe the like in thee: But every man ſhall bear his own burthen; and receive ſuch puniſhment, as his own ſinne hath deſerved. Why doeſt thou incline, and leane unto that, which is not only ill, but alſo hurtfull unto thee? Why doeſt thou not rather imitate that, which is good, and vertuous? following the example of him that faſteth, confeſſeth, communicateth, repenteth him of his ſinnes, and perſormeth many other actions of holineſs, and of a good and honeſt life? Is he peradventure more man than thou art? Thou forbeareſt (like him that is ſick) to take that, which ſhould cure thy ſickneſs, and do thee good; and feedeſt on that, which impaireth thy health, and doth thee hurt. I therefore aſſure thee, and give thee my honeſt word, that it will make much for thy ſalvation, *acordate de ti, y oluidarte de mi*, to forget me, and to think on thy ſelf.

Amongſt thoſe many Schools for little children, and thoſe many School-Maſters, which have the keeping of conſciences, (howbeit, as I ſay, no Citie, Town, nor Village eſcapes them in all the world) *Sivill* is the onely place for my money; and therein, thoſe that imbarke themſelves to paſſe the Seas. For, the moſt part of them, as if their conſciences were of that great burthen and extraordinary weight, that they were able to ſinke both the Ship and themſelves, do either leave their conſciences at home in their own houſes, or with their Hoſts, to keep them from them till their returne. And if afterwards they chance to recover them again, (which in my opinion is a hard matter, for that the Countrey is very ſpacious and large, where there is no ſuch great reckoning made of theſe things) it is well and good: if not, they do not greatly care; or if they take them with them, and leave them there behind them, as little, if not leſſe. And for this reaſon. Conſcience goes a begging in that Citie, in regard of the great ſtore and plenty of that commodity; becauſe thoſe that left them there behind them, when they went away to the *Indies*, or ſome other far place, did never returne back again to fetch them.

I will not offer to walk in the Exchange, nor the Burſe, nor have any thing to doe in the ſtreet of *San Francisco*, nor hazard a drowning in the Sea. Let all trafficke (for my part) be laid aſide; Let there be no trade driven, nor commerce had, no buying, nor ſelling, nor exchanging of commodities. For I fear me, if I ſhould once begin to be a dealer therein, I ſhould never be able to give it over. But let me here make a full point, taking this only as but a note by the way, and not think ſo much on what I ſay, as what I would have ſaid, and ſhall perhaps ſay hereafter, when I ſee my time. And ſo I will proceed to my promiſed Story.

There was a certaine man, that was borne neer unto *Genoa*, a perſon of great account, for his rare invention, & ſubtileneſs of wit. His name was *Pantalon Caſteleto*, a poor Begger, who, for that he was married in *Florence*, and his wife had borne him a ſonne, after that the Mother was delivered of this Child, the Father went plotting and deviſing, how he might

leave

leave him well to live, without tying him to ſerve any man, or to binde him prentice to any trade or occupation.

It is commonly ſpoken there amongſt them by way of Proverbe: *Happy is that ſon, whoſe Father goes to hell.* Howbeit, I count him unhappy. For it is not poſſible, that ſhould thrive with him, which he left him, nor that it ſhould come to the injoying of a third Heir. This is my opinion. For, to leave his Child well provided for, he provides ill for himſelf, and to make him, marres himſelf. For he cannot but runne his ſouls hazzard, who hunts after ungodly gaine.

And albeit he were married, and had the charge of a wife, but this is a (particular benefit, and a large I beame to treat of, that one begger ſhould marry with another, and be both of one profeſſion) they had (God be thanked) reaſonable well wherewithall to live; they wanted nothing, that they had need of, and ſufficient ſtore of wealth they had beſides, to leave unto their heir in ſome competent meaſure, eſpecially for one, that was of ſo mean a condition as he was.

But this man would not put himſelf upon Fortune. But had entertained in his imagination, one of the greateſt and moſt unnaturall cruelties, that the wit of man could deviſe. He maimes me this his poor innocent infant, (as many more of all Nations do in thoſe parts:) where when they be young and tender, they writhe their joynts, and break their bones, making them as plyable as VVax; then taking them in hand anew, molding them after this or that manner, as they have moſt minde unto, forming and faſhioning of them (I know not) into how many monſtrous ſhaps, and ugly poſtures, only to move the people to take the more pity and compaſſion of them.

With theſe abuſed Babes, whilſt they are little, they get wherewithall to live in their old age; and afterwards, thus maimed and mangled as you ſee, they leave them a good patry-money. But this wicked Rogue, for his greater increaſe of gain, would marturize this poor tender Infant, with new kinde of torments; He did not put him to theſe cruell tortures all at once; but ſtill as he grew in years, ſo did he vary and change them, as men ſhift their Shirts, or change their Bathes, one dry, and the other wet; till he had left him thus carved and ingraven, as I have painted him forth unto you.

Some naturall gifts he had, that his father either did not, or could not touch. So that notwithſtanding this his unhappineſs, he had a very happy wit, and was a good ſpeaker and his words became him very well. But that which he had from his Father, which was his outward fleſh; to begin firſt with his head, he had writh'd it in that ſort, that it ſeemed to be ſet quite backwards, his face falling on t'one ſide upon his right ſhoulder. That both beneath, and above the lids of his eyes, was all one over-grown lumpe of fleſh: the fore-head and the eye-browes ſcorch't and burned with a thouſand wrinkles: He was crook-backt, his whole body like a bottome of Yarne, all one lumpe, without any ſhape or faſhion of any one part, that might ſtile him man: His feet turned backwards, and perching up over his ſhoulders, being diſ-joynted, and withered. The onely ſound parts that were about him, were his armes and his tongue. The one left him to talke, the other to take. He went, as if he had been clapt into a Cage, being thruſt into a little kind of woodden Cheſt, ſet and made faſt to a little Aſſes back, which he did rule and guide with his hands; ſave that to get up or down, he was faine ſtill to ſeek for ſome help, which he did ſeldome or never miſſe of, having one or other ever at hand for that purpoſe.

He was (as I told you before) a pleaſant conceited fellow, had a good wit of his own, and many good things ſhould you hear to come from him. Beſides he went ſo tatter'd, ſo torne, and in that ragged and wretched manner, that all *Florence* took pitie of him, and as well for his poverties ſake, as for thoſe good parts that were in him, they gave him much Almes, wherewith he was relieved.

After this manner, he lived ſome ſeventy and two years, or much thereabouts, at the end whereof he fell into a grievous ſickneſſe, whereof he certainly knew, that he ſhould dye.

Seeing himſelf at this point, and that he now ſtood upon the jumpe of his Salvation, or condemnation; being (as he was) very diſcreet, he began to conſider a little better of the matter, thinking with himſelf, that it was no time now to jeſt, but rather to confeſſe his ſins, and to ſend for the Parſon of the Pariſh and to make his Will. Which as it was to be the laſt that ever he was to make, ſo was he carefull to make it as ſtrong and as good as the ſtrength of his wit could deviſe. He deſired, that a known confeſſor of his might be ſent for; one, that was a very learned man, and in very good eſteem, as well for the honeſty of his

life and converſation, as for his learning and manners. With him he treated touching his ſins, and fully imparted his minde unto him. And when he had communicated what he thought fit unto him, he was very deſirous to have his Will made, but with the ſhorteſt and moſt compendious words, that poſſibly could be imagined. And the beginning being drawn, (which belonged to the publike Notary to do) what was fit on his part, he briefly thus ſet it down.

*Imprimis*, I commend my ſoul unto God, who created it, and my body to the earth, to be buried in mine own Pariſh.

*Item*, My Will is, that my Aſſe be ſold; which money ſhall be beſtowed upon my buriall. But the Pack-Saddle I bequeath unto the great Duke my Lord and Maſter, to whom it rightly appertaineth, and properly belongs, whom *I* nominate to be my ſole Executor, and make my generall and univerſall Heir.

This done, after that he had ſettled and ſealed this his laſt Will and Teſtament of that his indiſpoſition, anon after he dyed. And becauſe every man held him to be a merry-conceited fellow, and one that was full of his witty jeſts, they did all verily thinke, that he would make his death equall with his life, and ſhut up his life with ſome odde jeſt or other for a farewell, as it uſually befalls ſuch kinde of gyddy-headed fools, when they once take a toy in the head, and are wedded to their humour.

But when the great Duke underſtood of this Will, (which was not long kept from his knowledge) having formerly heard of the Teſtator, and that he was held to be a wiſe and diſcreet man, he did from thence collect, that this Clauſe was not without its myſterie. Whereupon he gave order that this Legacy he had left him, ſhould forthwith be brought unto the Palace, and when he had it before him, he commanded it to be ript in ſunder, piece after piece, and ſtill as they went along, they took forth divers different ſorts of coyne: and when they had ſorted out theſe ſeverall kinds of moneys (which were all in good gold) they amounted in the whole to three thouſand and ſix hundred Spaniſh Crowns, every Crown bearing the full value of four hundred *Maravedis*. This poor man, whether he had conſulted with his Confeſſor or no, I know not; or adviſed with himſelf, which is not unlikely; It ſeemed he thought with himſelf, that that was none of his, and that he had no other means to make reſtitution, then to leave it to the naturall Lord of that Signorie, who had the charge of all the poor committed to his care, and with this he conceived he had diſcharged his conſcience. The great Duke being ſo powerfull and ſo noble a minded Prince as he was, gave order to have this Will entred, and to remaine upon record to after-ages, and that the Legacie that he had given him, ſhould be imployed for the good of his ſouls health; Wherein he ſhew'd himſelf a worthy Executor, but a far more worthy Gentleman.

What ſay you now to the feeling of this poor Begger? what think you of his ſenſe of touching? Thine is farre ſhort of it, nor half ſo good and delightfull as this, though thou ſhouldeſt injoy the imbracements of another *Venus*. Of theſe two Priviledges (before ſpecified) we were the ſole and only Lords, for none beſides us, did injoy them ſo freely, as we did; together with many other liberties and immunities which (if I liſt) I were able to relate unto thee.

When I do but think upon thoſe times, which I injoyed heretofore, and the merry life that I then led, which is all now paſt and gone with me, (not that I either long or look for any more ſuch happy dayes, or that *I* would call them to minde, to make me forget my miſeries,) or whether the recordation of them did make thoſe ſorrows ſeem either greater or leſſe, which I ſuffered in the Gallies, I will not now diſpute; but ſure I am, that I take great delight in the remembrance of them. As that having of our Table ſtill provided for us; our bed ready made to our hands; our Chamber without incombrance; our Scrip well furniſh'd; our goods about us; our ſtocks ſure on foot, without fear of theeves, or any dread of raine, without Aprill's care, or May's fearfull jealouſie, which two are the husband-mans moth: Not troubling our heads with new faſhions, with the pompe of apparell, with ceremonious complements, and the like froth of fooleries, ſcum'd out of forraine Countries: Living without the prevention of flatteries, without the compoſing of Lies, ſcorning to get either money, or to ſeek to grow into credit by ſuch baſe inſinuations.

How would we ſuffer that men might the better eſteem of us? How viſit them, that they might not forget us? How attend them, for to bind them unto us? What occaſions would we not ſeek out, that we might come to ſpeak with them, and be ſeen by them? How early would we be ſtirring, to the end they might think we were carefull and ſollicitous how to live? And evermore the more early up, the colder and ſharper the weather

weather was. And every one of theſe had it's pleaſure and delight, for the ends for which they were done.

How often would my ſelf fall a diſcourſing of other mens houſes and their gentility, onely of purpoſe to ſet my own Pedigree a foot, and to ſhew that I was a Gentleman well deſcended? How often would I diſcover another mans deſect, and finde fault with it, and onely to this end, that by taxing ſuch a vice in another, I might be thought to be free from the ſame my ſelf? How often would I hold converſation, onely for oſtentation ſake, and no other end in the vvorld? How would *I* wheel about, and fetch in things afar off, onely to vent my wit, and to make my words to take place. To what good meeting did not I go? I was the onely Cock there that crowed lowdeſt; and when I went away from them, and left their company, they would not cenſure me, as I would them, but let me alone.

O theſe conventicles of lewd Company, theſe meetings, where mens mouths fall a murmuring and traducing of others! O how large a hiſtory would it require? Who is able to expreſſe, how ill it beſeems a Gentleman, to be the Taylour that muſt cut out ſuch ill work? There is no Clergy man, whoſe Surplice they will not cut; Nor honeſt woman, whoſe Kirtle they will not make a hole in. They cloath the Saint & the ſinner after a large kind of faſhion. But let it reſt as it is; if we live, he ſhall be ſerved with the like ſawce. By how ſtraight a rule, by how even a line, and by how juſt a Compaſſe, muſt that Pretender carry himſelf, who is to ſayl through the Sea of this vvorld; hoping for a fortune from another mans hand? If it be good, how ſlowly doth it come? if bad, how ſoon doth it light upon us? And the Scale can never be made ſo upright and even, but that there will be ſomething wanting of it's true weight. And the better a man deſerves, often-times he fares the worſe. If a man have not a minde to do him good, every Molehill is made a mountain, and every the leaſt obliquity, is obſerved and noted in him. If he ſpeak much, (though never ſo well,) he is too laviſh of his words; if little, he is too ſhort and obſcure, and knows not how to expreſſe himſelf. If of high and dainty things indeed, he is too raſh, and too preſumptuous; and undertakes to diſcuſſe thoſe things, that are too deep for his underſtanding. If of things of leſſer conſequence, and of a lower ſtrain, he is too ſhallow, and hath no ſtuffe in him. If he humble himſelf; he is baſe; if ſtand upon his worth, he is proud; if he will fight and take no wrong, he is ill govern'd, and a Royſter; if pocket a wrong, and hold his hands, he is a coward: if he have a bold look, he is impudent; if a modeſt countenance, he is an Hypocrite; if he laugh, he is condemned of levity; if grave, he is counted a *Satyriſt*: if affable, ſlightly regarded; if auſteer, mightily abhorred: If juſt, cruel; if mercifull, a ſilly ſheep.

Now againſt all theſe and the like cavils (which are no ſmall misfortunes) the poor have a Paſſe-port, as being Lords of themſelves, free from all taxes and tallage. They are out of the Gun-ſhot of their Competitors, they quietly injoy this life, without being troubled with promooting Knaves to inform againſt them; ſnipping Taylours to take them ſhort; or ſnarling Dogs to ſnap at their good name.

Such was my happy condition, if time and fortune (conſumers of all things on earth, who ſuffer not things to continue in one and the ſelf-ſame eſtate) had not tumbled me down from this height of my happineſſe, declaring by the colour of my countenance, and the ſoundneſſe of my limbs, that I was rich in wealth, and not ſo maimed, nor ſo poor, as I made my ſelf to be, by my pitifull moans and lamentations.

For, as I was ſitting one day begging of Alms, in the Citie of *Gaeta*, hard by the Church Porch, whither (out of curioſity) I would needs go to, ſee if their charity and devotion did equal that of *Rome*? There I ſate bare, made ſhew of my head unto them, (for I was but newly come thither, and had not as yet fitted my ſelf with neceſſaries) ſo that I was forced on the ſudden to make uſe of a kinde of ſcurf, that I had clapt thereon: in the counterfeiting whereof I was excellent cunning. The Governour of the Town coming to Church, as he paſt along by me, caſts his eye upon me, and gave me an Alms. With this trick I paſt reaſonable well for awhile. But becauſe, *la Codicia rompe el ſaco*, too much covetouſneſſe makes the bag to break & I had not the wit to ſee when I was well; I thought fit upon a Feſtival day to appear in publick with ſome new invention. I had my preparatives ready, my proviſion at hand, I ſet them before me, and then dreſt me ſuch a leg, that was very well worth more than a very good Vine-yard. This was the farm that I meant then to live upon.

Well, away go I to Church with it; there I began to ſtretch my Throat, and to thunder out my voice, ever and anon lifting up the cloath with a tender finger, to ſhew unto them, what a grievous ſore leg *I* had, wherein *I* was ſo ready and ſo perfect, that *I* had need of no

body to teach me my leſſon. But whether it were my ill luck, or mine own own indiſcretion, (for from ignorance and fooliſhneſſe, all your miſchances for the moſt part proceeded) I cannot tell which to impute it to: But certain I am, I ſhould not have ſought to have eat better bread than is made of Wheat, nor have gone a chopping of horſes in ſo ſmall a Village. I might have kept me ſtill to my ſcabbed head, and have paſt well with it, (for it found me meat to put in my mouth) and not have gone ſeeking after new tricks, and new inventions.

The Governour came that day unto the Church to hear Maſſe, and becauſe he knew me, he will'd me to riſe, ſaying unto me: Come along with me, and I will beſtow a ſhirt on thee to put on thy back. I did believe him, and went along with him to his lodging. If I had but known before how he would have uſed me, he ſhould not have reach't me with the beſt Culverine he had, nor have made me come within his clutches, with all his fair words, nor all the wit in his head. But when he had me there, and ſaw I was ſafe from getting from him, he lookt me ſteadily in the face, and ſaid unto me, Thy colour being ſo freſh, thy skin ſo clear, thy body ſo ſound (for thou art fat, plump, and fair, thy complexion good, thy limbs ſtrong, and the reſt of thy skin ſmooth and ſleek) how comes it to paſſe that this thy Legge is as it is? Me thinks this doth not ſute and hang well together with the reſt.

I anſwered him, but with a troubled kinde of delivery: Sir, I know not; it hath pleaſed God it ſhould be ſo. Preſently he knew thereupon upon what Legge I halted, he had found me out; whereupon I had an eye to the door, to ſee if I could ſhew him my heels, and get away from him. But I could not, for the door was made faſt. He willed a Chirurgion to be ſent for, that he ſhould ſearch my wound, and ſee what I ailed. He came and lookt, and lookt upon it again and again, and at laſt very leaſurely and tenderly went to work with me, with a ſoft and gentle hand, as never a Lady in the land could more handſomely have gone about it. At the firſt it did ſomewhat puzzle him, for he knew not vvhat to make of it, but within a little while after he ſaw his error, and then he told the Governour; Sir, this youth hath no more hurt in his Legge than I in mine eye, and that you may perceive it is ſo, I will plainly demonſtrate it unto you. With that he began to unſwath me, and taking off rag after rag, and ſuch ſlibber-ſlabbers as I had bedaubed it withall, he made my Legge to appear as whole as any fiſh, as indeed it was.

The Governour bleſt himſelf, and ſtood amazed to ſee me in that manner, but that which did aſtoniſh him moſt, was how I ſhould have the aptitude and wit to do ſuch a thing as this. I was in a trance, and ready to ſwoun, not knowing what either to ſay, or do. And if my youth had not born me out, none but God could have freed me from exemplary puniſhment.

But this youth of mine did reſerve me for greater chaſtiſement. And in ſtead of the ſhirt which he promiſed me, he ſent for the Beadle of beggers, and there (in his preſence) willed him to give me a ſtript doublet, which I was to wear under that torn one which I had to my back. Commanding me, that I ſhould preſently pack out of the Citie, and come there no more. Which command, though he had not laid it upon me, I ſhould have been carefull to ſee it performed my ſelf; for I would not have ſtayed there if he would have made me Lord of *Gaeta*. I got me away full of fear, trembling, and quaking, ſhrinking up my ſhoulders, looking ever and anon behinde me, being jealous and ſuſpicious, that if they ſhould chance to bethink themſelves, that they had not given me ſufficient payment, they would make after me, and bring me to a ſtricter account.

Hereupon I haſtned away as faſt as my Legs would carry me, making no ſtay, till I came into the *Popes* Territories, calling my *Rome* ſtill to minde, and throwing a thouſand bleſſings upon it; for there, they did not ſtick upon trifles, nor did not buſie themſelves to examine colours, but let every man (without more ado) make the beſt of his living. To conclude, *Tierra larga*: a large Countrey for my money. Let me live (to chuſe) in a ſpacious Countrey, where a man may have Sea-room enough, and not be driven to run through narrow ſtreights and Creeks, ſayling ſtill in the Channel, where there is few fetching of boords, nor any danger of being caſt away upon the Coaſt: Whereas, in your narrow Seas, every little guſt of winde, every ſmall flaw, or leaſt Tempeſt in the vvorld, will caſt you upon quick-ſands, or throw you upon the Rocks, till you be either ſwallowed up, or daſht in pieces.

CHAP.

## CHAPTER VI.

Guzman de Alfarache *diſcourſeth of Alms: And being returned to* Rome, *he fals afreſh to his old trade of begging. He feigns himſelf to have a ſore Legge. A Cardinal taking compaſſion of him, takes order to have him cured in his own houſe, and to be laid in his own bed. He diſcovers the knavery of Chirurgions, having a bad conſcience: And how being cured he becomes the Cardinal's Page.*



IT is a known and natural truth; That thoſe that are young, are very ſhort-ſighted in your choiſer ſort of things, which require gravity, and carry any weight with them. Not for any defect of underſtanding, but for want of wiſdom, which requireth experience; and that experience, Time. As your green fruit, that is not come to its ripeneſſe, hath not any perfect reliſh, but is tart, and ſowr; ſo a young man, before he come to his maturity, lacks his true taſte, and fails in the ſpeculation of things, and comes ſhort of the true knowledge of them. And therefore, it is no wonder if he erre; but 't were rather a wonder, if he ſhould not erre. Notwithſtanding, he that hath good naturall parts, is commonly more capable of theſe conſiderations, and readier to receive the impreſſion of them.

This I know by my ſelf; for many times the greatneſſe of my ſpirit did tranſport me farre beyond that which ſorted with my years; ſetting (as the Eagle doth with her young ones) my eyes fully fixt againſt the Sun of Truth; conſidering with my ſelf, that all my cunning tricks, and ſundry manner of deceivings, was but a kinde of coozening my ſelf, by ſeeking to rob him, that was truely poor, and indeed maimed, and not able to work, to whom thoſe Alms did of right belong. For the poor man indeed never deceiveth, nor can he ſo do, though it be his end ſo to do. For he that giveth, regardeth not to whom he giveth: and he that beggeth, is that Quail-pipe, or Whiſtle, that calls thoſe birds unto him, whileſt he ſits ſecurely on his perch. The begger, with the call and cry of his lamentations receiveth the Alms, which he converteth to his profit, taking God in his mouth, whereby he makes him the debter, binding him to repay it. On the one ſide I was glad, when they gave me any thing; On the other ſide, I did quake and tremble, when I took account of my own life. For I aſſuredly knowing, that that was the way to my condemnation, I was bound to make reſtitution, as did that *Florentine*. But when I did ſometimes ſee and obſerve, that ſome powerfull and rich men would curiouſly put themſelves to ſearch in every corner of their purſe, for to look out a poor blank, a ſingle-ſol'd piece of money (God he knows) and had there been a leſſe coyn, I think they would have been well enough contented with it to give unto the poor, *I* could by no means indure it, my bloud would riſe at it, and *I* was ready to looſe all patience. And even now (me thinks) whileſt *I* am now ſpeaking of it, my buttons ſwell; the coals of my choler revive and quicken afreſh, and ſuch a fury of rage aſſaileth me, and ſets me on againſt them, that *I* cannot contain my ſelf, but muſt needs ſay ſomething, though *I* know not what, nor where to begin.

Hear'ſt thou me (thou my rich friend) art thou not yet wearied out, or waxen deaf, with ſo often hearing what hath been ſaid unto thee, (it having been ſo often beaten in thine ears, and inculcated unto thee) that whatſoever thou ſhalt do for any poor body, that ſhall begge an Alms of thee for Gods ſake, thou doeſt it for God himſelf, and he is ty'd unto thee for the ſame, and ſtands bound for the payment, by taking the debt upon him, and making that his own, which is another mans? We that are poor, are like a Cipher in Arithmetick, which of it ſelf is nothing, but with the addition of a figure is ſomething, and the number is ſtill the more, the more Ciphers are ſet before thoſe figures. If thou wilt ſtand for ten, ſet a poor man by thee, and ſee how many the more poor men thou ſhalt relieve, and how many the more Alms-deeds thou ſhalt do, they are ſo many figures, to make up a greater reckoning for thee with God, when thou ſhalt be called before him to make thine account.

What ſhouldeſt thou ſtick upon the matter, and begin to debate and conſider with thy ſelf, whether I get, or not get, whether men give me, or give me not? But do thou give me that which I ask thee, if thou haſt wherewithall, and art able to do it. And if not for Gods ſake, which commands thee to do it, yet out of that natural affection, which thou oweſt unto me. And do not flatter thy ſelf, or ſo much as offer to think, that the wealth, which thou enjoyeſt, and the riches that God hath given thee, is, that thou art better Wool than

we; but that thou art better carded. And he that made thee thus fine, and me thus course; by giving to thee, and taking from me, may change hands, and may beſtow his bleſſings on whom he pleaſe, and on ſuch as he ſhall think worthy thereof, and ſhall do more good with it, than thou doeſt. Be not a pryer into the poor, nor too ſtrict an examinant: demur not what thou ſhalt do for him, ſtand not a hinching and a crinching with him: for if thou look well into thy ſelf, thou wilt finde covetouſneſſe to be the cauſe of all this, and that they are but meer excuſes, becauſe thou would'ſt not give him any thing, and ſo ſhift him off from thee: I know it is ſo; and therefore let me perſwade thee (for thine own good) to inlarge thy minde, and that will make thee to inlarge thine Alms. And for this end, as alſo that thou mayeſt ſee the good effect of Alms, hear that, which *Sofronius* recounteth, cited by *Caniſius*, a very learned man.

A Widow-woman, having one onely daughter, being a very fair and beautifull Damozel, *Zenon* the Emperour fell mightily in love with her, and was exceedingly inamoured of her; and by force (quite againſt her will, and utterly with her diſlike) he deflowred her; and with a ſtrong and tyrannous hand, kept her and enjoyed her.

The Mother of the Maiden, finding her ſelf much afflicted for this her ſo much wronged and abuſed daughter, bearing great devotion to a particular image of our Lady, as often as ſhe preſented her ſelf before it, ſhe would ſtill recommend this her cauſe unto her, ſaying: O bleſſed *Mary*, O ſweet Virgin, I here upon my knees beg revenge and puniſhment for this force and affront, which that Tyrant *Zenon* the Emperour hath, and doth ſtill offer us. It is ſaid that ſhe heard a voyce, which ſpake thus unto her; Thou hadſt been long ago ere this revenged on him, if the Alms-deeds of the Emperour had not bound our hands.

Looſe thou thy hands, that are too faſt bound; ſtretch them out to the poor and help them therewith (as well as thou canſt) out of the miſery, wherein they lie. For it is thy duty ſo to do, it is required at thy hands; and it much more concerneth thee to give an Alms, than the other to receive it. God did not ſo much make the rich man for the poor, as the poor man for the rich. Not ſo much for his as thy good. And therefore do not thou ſtand off, and intertain thy ſelf with ſaying, One man merites more than another; This deſerves ſomewhat, and this not. There is but one God, and they ask of thee in his name; to him thou doſt give it. All is one, thou art to make no difference. Thou canſt not underſtand, how much another mans neceſſity doth wring him, nor is it poſſible that thou ſhouldſt come to know it. It is the outward man onely, that thou canſt judge of. And thou thinking, that ſuch a man is ſound and in health, it is not fit (as thou ſuppoſeſt) thou ſhouldſt give him an Alms.

Do not ſeek ſtarting holes, to hide away thy Devotion; ſeek not excuſes, to put away the poor from thee; leave that to the Lord and Maſter, thou haſt no Commiſſion to examine them; it is not given thee in charge. There are other judges, to whom this ſcrutiny belongeth. And if, looking upon me thou wilt let thy judgement ſlip, and ſay, that God hath been too ſlack and negligent in puniſhing of me; conſider, that the ſelf-ſame God hath done the like by others.

Do not (O thou man of evil bowels, thou unmercifull-minded man) do not thou, I ſay, lye in wait to do miſchief. The Ambuſh is diſcovered, and I ſee thy meaning. I ſay then that Charity, and diſtribution of Alms, hath its method and order, as in other things. Nor do I ſay, that thou ſhouldſt not order thy Charity; but *I* ſay, that thou ſhouldſt exerciſe thy Charity; That thou ſhouldſt give freely, and not pinchingly; That thou ſhouldſt not make ſuch a deal of ſcrupuloſity with thy ſelf, whether he ſhould have an Alms, or not have an Alms? whether he have need, or not need? Troubling thy ſelf with this, and with that, and I know not what. If thou wilt give it him, give it him quickly; if thou canſt not, ſay thou canſt not, and ther's an end. Yet let me tell thee by the way; if a poor man beg of thee, then, even then, doſt thou owe him an Alms, and it coſt him dear too, as I told thee before.

And let me farther tell thee, That thy Office is onely to give. Let the Rulers and Magiſtrates, the Biſhops and their Vicars, open that door to look into', it is their eyes that muſt ſee who is poor, and who is not, and accordingly appoint the puniſhment.

This is for men of Office, this, for men of Authority; yet it is a croſſe unto them; yet it is a trouble unto them. Nor were they made Governours, or heads over others, for to eat the beſt morſels, or to feed on the daintieſt diſhes, but to take more pains and cares than other men. Nor to laugh and make themſelves merry with their Fools and Jeſters, but to lament and bewail the wretched eſtate of the poor? Nor for to ſleep and ſnort, but to watch

and

and ſigh, having continually (like unto the Dragon) the eye-ſight of the Spirit clear. So that it onely appertains unto thee to give an Almes: And do not think that thou doeſt then perform that duty, when thou giveſt that thou canſt not well tell what to do withall, and haſt kept it ſo long in ſome corner a moulding, that it is fitter to be thrown out upon the dunghill than any thing elſe. And as if the poor were that dunghill, thou giveſt him thy mouldy and thy ſtinking meat; not ſo much out of charity, or any devotion thou haſt to give it to the poor, as becauſe thou canſt not eat it thy ſelf, and wouldſt have thy houſe fain rid of it. But this, I tell thee, is the ſacrifice of *Cain*. That which thou wilt offer, muſt be of the beſt things that thou haſt, as did that good and juſt man *Abel*, with a deſire and will that it were much better, wiſhing it may do him much good. Not, as though thou did'ſt give by conſtraint and compulſion, nor yet for oſtentation, having (like the Phariſee) the Trumpet to go before thee, to ſound forth thy praiſe; but onely out of meer Charity, that thou mayeſt reap thereby that fruit that is promiſed thee, God accepting of thy ſacrifice.

I was now a pretty way off from *Rome*, whither I was bending my ſteps. But I no ſooner came thither, but my tears trickled down my cheeks for joy. I did wiſh in my heart that mine arms had been ſo large, as that they might have been able to have embraced thoſe ſacred vvalls. The firſt ſtep that I ſet within thoſe holy Gates, I fell down on my face, and kiſt that hallowed ground. And becauſe that Countrey, which a man knows, and where he hath his means, the ſame is to be accounted his Mother, I did much joy to ſee it. I knew this Citie well, and was as well known in it. I began (as I had done before) to ſeek ſome courſe to live, and to maintain this life of mine: I fallly call it life, being it was my death, though it ſeemed unto me, to be my proper Center.

O alas, how ſtrangely are we wedded to our paſſions, and how ſtrange doth that ſeem unto us, which doth not anſwer thereunto, be it never ſo true, never ſo certain! This ſeemed to me, to be my onely happineſſe; holding (in compariſon thereof) every other thing, as a miſ-fortune. And though I did ſee all, yet I inclined ſtill to the worſt, thinking ſtill, that that was the beſt.

I was ſtirring one morning betimes, according as I had formerly been accuſtomed, and trudg'd along with my ſore Leg, with which I ſate me down to beg at one of the Cardinals Gates. And he coming forth for to go to the Palace, ſtay'd to hear me, in how loud a voice and extravagant a Tune, I beſought his pitie: not uſing thoſe plainer notes of eight, but ſaying; *Give me ſomewhat (noble Chriſtian friend of* Jeſus Chriſt*) take pitie of this ſore afflicted ſinner, maimed and pained in his Members; Look upon theſe wretched limbs: conſider my unfortunate years, and take ſome compaſſion of this miſerable Creature! Oh my moſt reverend Father, my moſt Noble* Lord, *ſhew ſome ſenſe of ſorrow, have ſome little feeling, I beſeech your moſt illuſtrious Lordſhip, of this young wretched* Youth, *and pour forth your fatherly compaſſion upon ſuch a pitifull piece of miſery and wretchedneſſe, as you ſee here before you. I beg it at your noble and charitable hands, in that glorious Name of the bleſſed (though moſt painfull) paſſion of our dear Maſter and Redeemer* JESUS CHRIST.

My Lord Cardinal (after that he had heard me with a great deal of attention) was extreamly moved therewith, and conceived an extraordinary pity towards me, inſomuch that I did not ſeem unto him to be a man, but that I repreſented unto him even God himſelf. Thereupon he forthwith gave order to his ſervants, that they ſhould take me up in their arms, and carry me into the houſe, and that ſtripping me of thoſe old and rotten rags, they ſhould lay me in his own bed, and in another Chamber adjoyning thereunto, they ſhould make his. All which was done in a moment.

O the great goodneſſe of God! O the largeneſſe of his noble condition! They ſtript me naked, for to Cloath me; they would not let me begge, but were ready to give me; and to make me likewiſe able to give unto others. God never takes any thing away from us, but when he means to beſtow greater bleſſings upon us. When God will give thee any thing, he will firſt ask ſomething of thee. He comes weary about noon to the Fountain, ſits him down, asks thee a little water, whereof the beaſts of the fields do drink. Thou giveſt it him: In exchange whereof, he gives thee the water of the well of life, the drink of Angels, whereof be that drinketh, ſhall never thirſt any more. This holy man made him his pattern, who ſending preſently for two skilfull Chirurgions, & promiſing to ſee them well rewarded, committed my cure to their charge, and that they ſhould do their beſt to make me a ſound man. This care being taken, leaving me in the hands of theſe two Hang-men, and in the power of my Enemies, he gets him away to the Palace.

Although we uſed many, & ſundry counterfeitings of ſores, yet that which I had then made me, was rubb'd over with a certain Herb, which cauſed it to look ſo ill and ſo vile, that whoſoever had ſeen it, would have thought the ſore incureable, & that great remedies muſt be uſed, as to a thing that was ſhrewly feſtred, and grown to a Canker: yet if the uſe of this roguiſh Herb be but left off for three whole dayes, nature it ſelf, without any other help, will reduce the fleſh to that perfection and ſoundneſſe, that it was in before. To theſe two Chirurgeons, it ſeemed at the firſt ſight a thing of much moment. They threw of their Cloaks, they call'd for a Pan of Coals, freſh butter and other things; and when they had all that they would in a readineſſe, they unſwathed me, and unbound the clouts that were about my leg which they performed very neatly and handſomly. That done, they askt me how long I had had this ſore, if I could gheſſe whence it ſhould come, if I did uſe to drink wine, what meats I did moſt uſually feed on, and ſuch other queſtions as theſe. Which thoſe that are skilfull in that art, are wont to do on the like occaſions.

All theſe I anſwered with ſilence, lying along as if I had been dead, for I was not almoſt my ſelf, nor was I indeed for a pretty while, ſeeing ſuch a deal of preparation to cut, to cauterize and the like; and in caſe I ſhould eſcape all this, I was at my wits end, to think that my malady would be found out, & ſo my roguery be diſcovered. That which I ſuffered in *Gaeta*, ſeemed but a flea-biting unto me. But now I lived in fear, that the Cardinal would inflict ſome notable puniſhment upon me, for this cheating trick that I had put upon him. I knew not how to help my ſelf, nor what to do, nor whom to make uſe of in this my extremity. For, neither in all the *Letany*, nor in *Flos Sanctorum*, could I finde any Saint, that was a defender and Protector of Villains, or that would ſeek to excuſe me.

By this time they had viewed me again and again, a hundred & a hundred times, & turn'd me to and fro, this way and that way, that I thought they would never have made an end; when at laſt I brake forth and ſaid; I am undone, I am undone; yet there is ſome life left in me: I'le die if you ask me any more queſtions, or if you meddle with me any more. Two hours of trouble have I already endured under their hands, if they do not bury me now in *Tyber*, (thought I) I will paſſe over the reſt as well as I can. And ſay they ſhould agree to cut off my leg, the condition were better, and the gain more certain, ſo as I did not die in the doing of it. But ſuppoſe alſo that this ſhould befall me, I ſhould then be before hand with death, and I ſhall not be put to endure that brunt another time. What can I do more? (unfortunate man as I am) I was born into the world, here I muſt ſuffer, patience muſt be my beſt comfort, ſhuffle the Cards therefore anew, and ſee whether we ſhall have any better luck. For my reſt is up, and the care is already taken.

While I was thus doubtfull what would become of me, the covetouſneſſe of theſe Churgions, and their greedineſſe of gain, opened the door to my remedy. The one of them, (who was better experienced then the other) came to know at laſt, that this ſore was a counterfeit ſore, and that by the ſigns and Symptomes of it, it proceeded from the effects of that very ſelf-ſame Herb which I had uſed. But this he kept cloſe to himſelf; telling his fellow, This fleſh is canker'd all over, and therefore it is neceſſary, that to hinder it from ſpreading any farther, and that other new fleſh may come up in it's place, to cut it all away to the quick, and then there was no doubt of the well curing of it.

The other ſaid unto him; This cure will ask a great deal of time; all this filthy matter muſt be taken away, till we come to the very belly, as it were, wherein the very pith and Core of it lies, before we can well tell what to ſay to it. Howſoever, we have here a fair occaſion offered to ſhew our skill, and to pick out ſomething of it, for the better paſſing over of this hard year. He that was the more expert man of the two, took the other by the hand, and led him forth aſide into a withdrawing room, that joyned cloſe to the Chamber. I, when I ſaw them thus go forth together (ſuſpecting ſome ſecret conſultation) I ſtole me out of my bed after them, that I might liſten to their talk, and it was my hap at laſt to hear the one of them ſay to the other; Maſter Doctor, I do think (be it ſpoken under correction) that your Worſhip doth not rightly and truely underſtand this young mans malady; for you ſhall ſeldom meet with the like kinde of cures, and there is ſcarce one of a hundred, when they do meet with them, that doth know them, or can tell what to make of them; yet ſhall I acquaint you with what I know: we are partners in this buſineſſe, and therefore I will hide nothing from you; but it is a great ſecret, that I have to communicate unto you. What (for Gods ſake) ſaid the other? I ſhall tell you, Sir: and with that he ſaid; This Begger is a notable diſſembling Rogue, a ſubtill Villain; theſe ſores that you ſee, are feigned ware, counterfeit ſtuffe. What ſhall we do in this caſe? Let me be adviſed by you. If we leave him

off

off thus, the bird will eſcape our hands and ſo we ſhall loſe both the credit and profit of this Cure. If take upon us to cure him, we have no cure to work upon, and then this Raſcal will befool us, and laugh at our ignorance: and if we cannot one way, or other come off fairly to our beſt advantage, the beſt courſe will be (in my opinion) to acquaint the Cardinal, how the caſe ſtandeth, and what a counterfeit Knave we have under our hands.

No Sir, (ſaid the other) I hold not that ſo fit. Let us hold the Bird faſt, while we have him: it is a leſſe evill, that upon this young fellow (that is no better than a *Picaro*, and an errant Rogue) we ſhould gain us a little reputation, and come off with ſome good opinion, than to let ſlip ſo fine and ſo fair an occaſion. Let us therefore take no notice of theſe his counterfeit ſores, but rather lay ſome plaiſters thereunto, that may entertain and delay the time: And if need be, we ſhall afterwards apply ſome Corroſives, that ſhall eat into the ſound fleſh; in the cure whereof, we will ſpend ſome few dayes. Nay, then (quoth the other) the beſt way will be, Sir, (as I take it) to begin firſt with fire, canterizing that part which appears thus infected.

Now, which of theſe two remedies they ſhould firſt begin withall, as alſo now they were to ſhare the gains between them, a great quarrel there was, they could not agree upon the point; for he that firſt found out the nature of my ſore, would have the greater ſhare, or elſe he would acquaint the Cardinal with the whole buſineſſe.

When I ſaw upon what they ſtuck, and that it was a matter of little, or no moment, and that upon their difference, which was occaſioned by my miſerable poverty, I might run the hazard of my utter ruine, I ruſht in between them, and throwing my ſelf down at their feet, I ſaid thus unto them: Gentlemen, on your hands, and tongues depends my life, or death; my remedy, or my ruine. From my hurt, no good can come unto you; but from my good, you may reap aſſured both profit, and credit.

I know you are not ignorant of the neceſſity and want which the poor ſuffer, and of the hardneſſe of rich mens hearts, in ſo much, that to move them to the more compaſſion, and the eaſilier to get an Alms from them, we are inforced to wound our fleſh, with theſe kinde of ſores and martyrdoms, induring much trouble, and ſuffering much pain; yet neither theſe, nor greater miſeries that we abide, are of power to prevail with them. It were a great misfortune in others to endure that out of neceſſity, which we willingly ſuffer, for that poor and miſerable maintenance which we draw from thence. I beſeech you (for Gods ſake) to take pity on me, ſeeing that you are men that run through the troubleſom ſtreet of this vvorld, and are made of fleſh and bloud, as well as my ſelf; and that which hath driven me to this hard exigent, may likewiſe light upon your ſelves.

Do not (I beſeech you) bewray me, work your will upon me, and wherein I may ſerve and help you, I will not be wanting to do as you will have me, and in all things to be ſo ruled by you, that you may gain much by this your cure. You may be confident of me, and truſt me as you would your own lives; for if there were no other means to make me ſure unto you, the feat of mine own puniſhment is ſufficient of it ſelf, to binde me to be ſecret. Nor let not the reſpect of gain reſtrain your kindneſſe; for it is better to get than to loſe. We are three of us, let us all play booty and joyn together to cozen the Cardinal; for he is rich, and ſomething is better than nothing.

Theſe intreaties, ſeaſoned with a few tears, and uttered with that earneſtneſſe as I delivered them unto them, were ſufficient to make them approve of my counſel; and ſo much the rather, for that they ſaw that I had hit the nail right on the head. Wherewith they were ſo well pleaſed, that they were ready for joy to take me up upon their ſhoulders, to carry me to my bed. And ſo they and my ſelf grew fully agreed to play every man his part as well as he could.

Whilſt this buſineſſe was in debating, they were ſo long before they could agree upon the matter, that I was ſcarce put into my bed, and the Cloaths caſt upon me; but that my Lord Cardinal was come to the Chamber door; who when he was entred, one of the Chirurgeons ſaid unto him.

This young mans malady (may it pleaſe your Lordſhip) is a very grievous one, and we muſt neceſſarily apply great remedies thereunto. For the fleſh is feſtred and canker'd in many places, and it hath taken ſuch deep root, that it is impoſſible for the plaiſters that we are to apply, to work any good effect, without ſome long tract of time; but I am very confident, and dare be bold to aſſure your Lordſhip, that (by the help of God) we ſhall make him as ſound a man, as ever he was in his life.

Then ſaid the other; If this youth had not thus luckily faln into your Lordſhips pitifull and charitable hands, within a few dayes, theſe his ſores would have been ſo putrified,

and have ſo corrupted the whole body, that all the vvorld could not have ſaved his life, but he muſt have periſhed and dy'd. But we ſhall ſo ſtop this Canker, from ſpreading it ſelf any farther, and uſe ſuch good means for his recovery, that I make no queſtion, but within ſix moneths, if not ſooner, his fleſh ſhall come to be as whole and as fair as mine.

The good Cardinal (whom charity had onely moved hereunto) told them; Be it in ſix, or in ten, let me have it throughly healed and cured as it ought to be cured, and I ſhall take order that you be provided of all things neceſſary for it, you ſhall want nothing. With this he left them, and withdrew himſelf into another room. This did put new life into me; and as if they had drawn my heart out of the one ſide, and had thruſt it in on the other into my body again, ſo did I then feel my ſelf. For even till that very inſtant, I did not reſt aſſured of theſe two Trayterous Chirurgions. I ſtill feared, they would have wheeled about another way, and have been the cauſe of my undoing. But by that which I had heard them treat in my preſence, I was ſomewhat cheared, and began to be of good comfort.

But the cuſtom of ſwearing, gaming, and begging, are things that are hard to be left off. It could not chuſe but grieve me very much, that I was hindred in my courſe, mew'd up, debarr'd my liberty, and made unable to enjoy thoſe good and plentifull Alms, which I gain'd by begging. Which loſſe notwithſtanding did ſeem the leſſe, in regard of that curious entertainment, choice diet, and good lodging that I had, that mans deſire could not have wiſht it to have been better. For I was waited on, like a Prince, and cured with that care, as if I had been the Cardinal himſelf. And ſo had he given commandment to the ſervants of his houſe; beſides his dayly coming in his own proper perſon to viſit me. And ſometimes he would ſit down and make ſome ſtay with me, talking of ſuch things, wherein he took pleaſure to hear me.

At length, being healed of this infirmity, (when the Chirurgions ſaw their time,) they were diſmiſſed, receiving a great deal of pay, for a little pains. And I was commanded to be new cloath'd, and to be liſted in the Roll of the Pages; that as one of them, from the time forward, I might attend, and wait upon his Lordſhip.

---

## CHAPTER VII.

Guzman de Alferache *diſcourſeth, how all things have had their time of Empire; He delivereth ſtrange things, touching truth and lying. As being Page to the Cardinal; he declareth the vertues, and the vices, wherein Pages exerciſe themſelves. He relateth a pleaſant ſtory of his ſtealing of ſome Conſerves; and how he was puniſhed for it.*

OF all things created, none can complain to have paſt without its Empire. They have all of them had their day, and have taken their turn. But becauſe time changeth all things; theſe are paſt and gone; and thoſe have finiſhed their courſe.

And firſt to begin with Poetry, it is apparant to all the world, how much that in it's time was celebrated.

Let ancient *Rome* report, in what reverence were your Orators held, that were skil'd in the Art of *Rhetorick*, and had the gift of ſpeaking well and eloquently.

And let our *Spain* ſpeak, what honour is now at this day given to thoſe ſacred Letters of holy Writ, ſo many years ſince, ſo well received by her; And in what eſteem ſtand both the Laws, Civil, and Canon.

The faſhion of Apparel, and wearing of Cloaths in *Spain*, cannot eſcape amongſt the reſt; wherein we dayly finde new changes, and new alterations, after which ſtrange faſhions all run as faſt, as ſcatteringly, and as much out of order as Goats do one after another; and as one Sheep leaps after another; ſo do men and women leap into faſhions. He is no body that is not in the new faſhion, and nothing now ſeemeth well, but what is in uſe; notwithſtanding that it hath been already uſed, and that lately, and approved for good: And that ſottiſh ignorance of the common rout, and baſer ſort of people, is come now to that paſſe, that they will all forſooth be alike; the tall man as the ſhort; the Quack-belly as the *Scranio*; the fat as the lean; the ſick as the ſound; the deformed as the well-proportioned man will have (if not one and the ſelf-ſame meaſure) at leaſt one & the ſelf-ſame faſhion; putting themſelves into ugly and monſtrous ſhapes, and into an indecent and ill-becoming wear of Cloaths, and onely becauſe they will follow the faſhion, and be in the ſame cut as others be, as if one kinde of Syrrup, or Purge, were fit of all diſeaſes.

The

The words likewiſe and phraſes of our ſpeech, have been corrupt by uſe and thoſe, which once were ſyled phraſes, and pure language, are now accounted rude and barbarous.

Meats alſo have their ſeaſon, and their time; For that doth not pleaſe us in the Winter, which we have a great deſire unto in the Spring; nor that like us in the Autumme, which we have a minde unto in the Summer.

Your buildings, and your Engines of Warre are daily renewed. Your Manuall works, and thoſe that are wrought with the hand, have their turnings too; as your Seates, your Chaires, your Benches, your Cupboords, your Cabinets, your Tables, your low Stools for Women, your Lamps, your Candle-ſticks, and the like: Your ſports, your games and your Dances, have alſo their changes. And even in Muſick, and in Songs, we find the like.

For ſome are much taken with the *Zaravanda*; and others may come hereafter, that will utterly miſlike it, and make it grow out of date. Who have ſeen your Mules in former times, how much Velvet they have drawn along with them in their Foot-cloaths, may now in theſe behold how incapable they are of any ſuch courteſie, being not ſuffered to have any ornaments of Silk or Gold.

We are all witneſs, when the time was, that my little pretty *Sardinian* Aſſe, was your womens only *Regalo* and delightfull companion, when they performed their Stations, or went up to their Viſits. But they are now all for their *Sillas*, and eaſie Chaires carried with hands, which heretofore were well contented with good honeſt Pack-Saddles.

Let your Ladies now tell me, how eſſentiall a thing it is, and how much it importeth them, to have little ſoyſting Hounds, Monkies, and Parrakitos, for to entertaine the time; who in times paſt did ſpend thoſe idler hours at the Reele and Spindle, and exerciſing their Needle in ſome curious, yet neceſſarie works: But theſe are falne into diſgrace, they are grown out of faſhion, their time is paſt and gone, they have their courſe, and are vaniſhed with the reſt.

The like hath hapned unto truth, that alſo hath had it's time: Inſomuch that it was anciently much more uſed than now: And ſo much, that it was a generall ſaying in thoſe dayes that was reſpected above all other Vertues; and he that told any Lye, were it of more or leſſe importance, received puniſhment accordingly, even to the loſſe of life, by being publikely ſtoned to death.

But becauſe we are quickly weary of well-doing, and what is ill, well never be tyred out; men growing worſe and worſe, ſo holy a Law could not keep it ſelf a foot amongſt ſo many wicked perſons, Whereupon, it came to paſſe, that a great Plague and Peſtilence coming amongſt them, all thoſe that were touched with it (if they eſcaped with their life) remained with ſome offenſive mark or other to their perſons: And as it befalleth, that one generation paſſeth, and another comes in the place, one ſucceeding another; they that were borne ſound and whole, reproched thoſe other with their faults and defects, wherewith they were notably grieved to ſee themſelves thus diſgraced, and took it very offenſively at their hands.

Whence it came to paſſe by little and little, that Truth began to be heard with an unwilling eare. And becauſe men were thus unwilling to hear it, they grew at laſt to be unwilling to tell it. For by the firſt round, we come unto the ſecond, and by the ſecond, by degrees to the top of all. And a little ſparke ſomtimes ſets a whole Citie on fire.

At laſt they grew ſo bold as to break this Statute, and not contented therewith, they baniſhed *Truth* at laſt into perpetuall Exile; and in her ſtead Lying was entertained, and ſeated in her throne.

*Truth* being thus condemned, ſhe went from among them to perform the tenor of her Sentence. She went all alone, poor, and naked; as it uſually hapneth unto thoſe that are ſunke, and falne from their fortunes: (for every man is valued according to that that he hath, or as his ability is; and thoſe which formerly have been our friends, in time of adverſitie turne tayle, and become our enemies.) And having gone ſome few dayes journeys from thence, ſtanding on a high Mountaine, ſhe might perceive, paſſing over the edge of a little Hill, a great companie coming along, and the neerer ſtill they drew, the greater did their number appear. In the midſt of a Squadron, compaſſed about with an Armie, came Kings, Princes, Governours, Prieſts of that profeſſion; Men of command, and Rulers of thoſe Provinces, every one according to his qualitie, either more or leſſe, neer to this triumphant Chariot, which they had placed in the midſt, with a great deal of Majeſtie, which was wrought with admirable Art, and extreame curioſity.

In this Chariot, was there a high Throne erected, whoſe ſeate was of Ivory, Ebonie, and Gold; wherein were inchaſed many precious Stones, and a woman ſitting thereupon, with a Crown upon her head like a Queen; her face moſt beautifull; but as you drew neerer and neerer unto it, it did loſe much of it's fairneſſe, and at laſt appeared moſt foul and ugly. Her body when ſhe ſate ſtill, and did not ſtirre, ſeemed luſtie, neat, and handſome; but when ſhe roſe up, and ſtood upon her feet, or walked up and down, ſhe diſcovered many defects. Her Robes were of changeable Taffaties, exceeding rich and glorious to the eye, and full of varietie of colours, ſtrangly diverſified, and cunningly intermingled one with another, but the threeds ſo ſlender ſo ſubtle, and of that little or no ſubſtance, that the very ayre would puffe it in pieces, and every the leaſt thing, either make bracks in it, or break and tear it to fitters.

*Truth*, ſhe ſtood ſtill (poor ſoul) till this Squadron was paſt admiring to ſee ſo much greatneſs and State; but when the Chariot came right over againſt her, the Lady *Lye* took notice of this poor honeſt Dame *Truth*, and commanded thoſe about her to ſtay. And cauſing her to come neerer unto her, ſhe began to aske her whence ſhe came, whither ſhe would, and what ſhe went about? And *Truth* plainly told her all.

The Lady *Lye* thought it fitting out of ſtate and greatneſs, and for a farther addition of honour, to lead her along with her: For every one is ſo much the more powerfull, by how much the greater are the enemies, whom he overcommeth; and is by ſo much the more eſteemed and reputed of in the world, by how much the mightier the forces are, againſt which he makes reſiſtance.

Hereupon ſhe commands *Truth* to wait upon her. There was no remedy, ſhe could not avoid it, ſhe muſt along with her, whether ſhe would or no; but in the tayle of all the troop, being commanded to come laſt, for that was her known place, and at that time did (as it ſhould ſeem) properly belong unto her.

He that will ſeek for *Truth*, ſhall not find her with this great Lady *Lye*, nor with any of her Miniſters, for ſhe comes in the Reer laſt of all, and there ſhe manifeſts her ſelf to thoſe, that make inquirie after her.

The firſt dayes journey that ſhe march't, ſhe came to a goodly fair Citie, where *Favour* went forth to receive her, a very potent and powerfull Prince, who invites both her and all her traine to his houſe.

The Lady *Lye* accepted of this his kindneſs, giving him many thanks for this his courteous offer, but would needs go to lodge at the rich and ſumptuous Palace of *Wit*, where a great feaſt, and a curious banquet was provided for her.

Afterwards, when ſhe was to go from thence, and to paſſe on forward with her Troops, my Lady *Lyes* Steward, which was *Oſtentation*, tall of perſon, with a long beard, a grave countenance, a ſettled gate, and words well placed, came to mine hoſt, that had given them this good entertainement, and ask't him, what was to pay? The reckoning was ſumm'd up, and the Steward, without contradiction, or abatement of any thing, told him it was well.

Then the Lady *Lye* called *Oſtentation*, her Steward, unto her, ſaying; See you pay this man well, out of that money which you gave him to keep, when you came in hither. Mine hoſt ſeemed to be amazed thereat, and began to wonder with himſelf, what money this ſhould be that they talked of; and thought at firſt, that they had but ſpoke in jeſt. But when he ſaw that they ſtood ſo ſtiffely in it, and that the ſame was affirmed by ſo many of good (as they ſeemed to be) condition and qualitie, he did very much complaine, ſaying; That till now, he had never been ſo ill us'd before in all his life. Upon that my Lady *Lye*, for the juſtifying thereof, preſents theſe for Witneſs; *Jaleneſſe*, her Treaſurer; *Flattery*, her principall follower, and chief Attendant on her perſon; *Vice*, her Chamberlaine; And *Wily beguile-you*, one of her maides of Honour, together with diverſe other of her ſervants. And that ſhe might convince him the better, ſhe commanded *Intereſt*, mine Hoſts Son, and *Covetouſneſſe*, his Wife, to be brought forth before him: All which avouched to his face, that it was ſo.

*Wit* ſeeing himſelf in this ſtreight, did rend the ayre with his Exclamations, calling upon the heavens, that they would make the truth known; For they had not only deny'd him that which they ow'd him; but they demanded that of him, which he ow'd them not.

*Truth*, ſeeing him thus afflicted, as being one that ever wiſh't him well, came to him, and told him; My friend *Wit*, you have reaſon on your ſide, but I know not how to help thee; for ſhe that denies this debt, is the Lady *Lye*, and here is no body on your part

part but my ſelf, and all the ſervice that *I* am able to do you, is, to declare my ſelf for you, as I do.

The Lady *Lye* was ſo ſtartled, and ſo abaſht at this her boldneſs, that ſhe commanded her Miniſters, that *Wit* ſhould be pay'd, but with *Truths* wealth; which was accordingly done, and ſo they ſet forward, taking up, as they went along, Innes and other lodgings, as ſuch kinde of people uſe to do, letting no place ſcape, where they did not purloine and ſteal. For one wicked Villaine is commonly the hangman to another. And evermore, (take it for a generall rule) one thief, one blaſphemer, one ruffian, and one damn'd fellow, ends his life by the hands of one that is as bad as himſelf: And theſe are a kind of great Fiſhes, which feed upon the leſſer Frie.

They arrived afterwards at a place, whereof *Murmuration* was Miſtreſſe, a great friend to the Lady *Lye*, who came forth to meet her, cauſing all the great perſons of her Kingdome, and her own private ſervants, to leade on the way afore. Amongſt the which went *Pride*, *Trecherie*, *Deceit*, *Gluttony*, *Ingratitude*, *Malice*, *Hatred*, *Negligence*, *Sloth*, *Obſtinacie*, *Revenge*, *Envie*, *Injurie*, *Folly*, *Vain-glory*, *Madneſſe*, *Self-will*, beſides other her familiar friends and acquaintance. She invited her to be her Gueſt, and that ſhe would be pleaſed to make her palace her Inne, and with that freeneſſe, as if it were her own. The Lady *Lye* accepted of her kindneſs, but with this condition, that ſhe might only have the uſe of her lodging, and in all the reſt, to be at her own charge. *Murmuration* was very willing to have ſhowne her greatneſs, and withall to have given her the beſt entertainment ſhe could; but becauſe it was *Lyes* pleaſure to have it otherwiſe, ſhe reſted contented, and thanked her that ſhe would be pleaſed to do her houſe that grace, which ſhe eſteemed as a great favour; and ſo without any farther reply on either part, they went hand in hand together to the Palace. *Solicitude*, who was Steward; and *Inconſtancie* the Caterer, made proviſion of victuals; the fame whereof was ſo great, that many came from all the bordering places thereabouts, with a world of all ſorts of dainties, and whatſoever elſe was neceſſary for the ſetting forth of ſo great a feaſt; all which was taken up, without any hucking or ſticking upon the price; look what they askt, that they were agreed withall to have. But after dinner, when they were to depart, and go their wayes, the Owners of theſe things demanded money for what they had ſold. The Treaſurer ſaid, that he ow'd them nothing; and the Caterer, that he had paid them all. Whereupon there was great ſtirre, and much adoe; inſomuch that the Lady *Lye* was faine to come forth her ſelf amongſt them, and ſaid unto them; my friends, what is it you would have? Are you mad? or what's the matter with you? Sure you are either out of your wits, or I do not well underſtand my ſelf. You are all of you paid already for whatſoever you brought hither; and I my ſelf ſaw with mine own eyes, when your moneys was paid you before *Truths* face, and in her preſence. Let her ſpeak if ſhe may be taken for a witneſs, whether it be ſo or no: I will be content to be tryed by her. They going then to ſeek out *Truth* to decide this difference, and to award what was to be done in this buſineſs; ſhe faigned her ſelf to be a ſleep, they called aloud unto her. But ſhe bethinking her ſelf, how ill ſhe had been dealt withall before, was in a doubt what ſhe ſhould do: at laſt ſhe reſolved with her ſelf to faigne her ſelf dumb, and had loſt her ſpeech, that ſhe might not pay for that, which others had bought, and were her profeſſed enemies: Whereupon ſhe hath continued that cuſtome ever ſince: And now truth is grown dumb, for that ſhe had pay'd ſo ſoundly for not being mute before. And therefore he that ſpeaks the *Truth*, let him pay for't by my conſent. For as the world now goes, he is worthy ſo to do.

But it ſeemeth unto me (as I have painted it in my Imagination) that *Truth* and *Lying* are like the ſtring, and the Wreſt or Peg in ſome inſtrument: The ſtring hath a delicate ſound, ſweet, and pleaſing to the eare: But the Peg doth ſkreek, ſqueak, and creak like a Cart-wheel, and can hardly be turn'd and wreſted. The ſtring gently yeelds, willingly ſtretching, and inlarging it ſelf, till you have ſtrained it to your liking; but the Peg goes ſtill twirling and turning being wrung, wrinched and pinch't upon by the ſtring. Juſt ſo ſtands the caſe for all the world, betwixt *Truth* and *Lying*. *Truth* is the Peg, and *Lying* the ſtring: Well may a *Lye* go working and winding it ſelf upon *Truth*, which is the Peg, and leave ſome print, or ſigne therein, making it to ſound harſh and untuneable to the eare, but in the end, it goes (although with ſome difficulty) turning and winding a *Lye* ſo long, till *Truth* remaine whole and ſound, like the Peg: and *Lying* crack't and broken, like the ſtring.

If I had treated *Truth*, all thoſe torments, affronts, and afflictions which I had run thorow and indured, could not in the end, but have ſet me ſafe in ſome one good Port or other, and have brought me with joy to the fortunate Ilands. But the whole courſe of my life, was lying, coozenage,

cozenage, and roguerie, and ſo like the ſtring of an inſtrument, when it came to be put in tune, it could not indure any the leaſt ſtraining, and ſo preſently brake, it was not able (I ſay) to reſiſt and withſtand *Truths* ſtretching hand, but went ſtill turning and twirling, from one miſchief to another, and from one evill into a worſe. So one Deep calleth up another, and one Wave comes head longly tumbling in upon the neck of his fellow.

The Pin is now turn'd; and I am rais'd up to be a Page, God grant I may come down no lower. That thing which receiveth violence, and is ſtrained to a courſe contrary to its nature, it is impoſſible, but it muſt revert and returne to it's center, be it low or be it high; for that is the place, which it doth naturally affect and deſire. They took me from the height of my glory, and brought me down ſo low as to ſerve, which (being ſo oppoſite as it was to my diſpoſition) you ſhall ſee how long I continued in that courſe.

He that walks too faſt, will be quickly weary; and to paſſe ſo ſuddenly from one extreme to another, as it cannot be done with ſafety, ſo it is conſerved with difficulty. If a tree take not deep rooting, it will never bear any fruit; but quickly dries and withers away; So he that is newly put into an Office, cannot ſuddenly take any deep rooting; and ſay he ſhould be ſettled therein ſome years, he will hardly thrive in a ſtrange ſoyl, that doth not ſort with his nature, and ſo will prove in the end as unprofitable to himſelf, as unfruitfull to others. It was too great a leap, to riſe from a *Picaro*, to be a Page, (though in a manner they are correlatives, and have a kinde of relation one to another, only their habit doth differ, and diſtinguiſh them) and I could not chooſe but grieve, as oft as I thought upon it. That which was common with others, fell out quite contrary with me. For it is ſaid, *Que las honras, quanto mas crecen, mas hambre ponen.* That the more honour a man hath, the more he deſires. But I was ſo far from that liking, that it was rather to me a loathing. Such high places did not pleaſe me; Thoſe that I had profeſt, thoſe were for me. *Cada uno, en lo que ſe cria.* Let every man betake himſelf to that, wherein he hath been train'd and bred up. Is it fit (think you) to take the fiſh out of the water, and to breed Peacocks therein? To put an Oxe to flie, and an Eagle to plough? To feed a horſe with ſand? To ſup a Falcon with ſtraw? And to take from a man his Riſibility (to ſpeak like a Logician) and facuky of laughing? I was bred up among the Fleſhpots of Ægypt; my Center was a good victualling houſe; my Circle, a good honeſt Taverne; and my end, Vice; whereunto I did bend amaine, in that I took pleaſure, that was health and life to me; and what was contrary to that, I took no joy in it, it was not for me, nor was I willing to make it mine.

My mouth was now daintily fed; my back delicately clad; my eyes ſwolne with too much ſleep; my hands (for want of work) as ſoft as ſilk; my belly, with too much pampering) as hard brac'd as any Drumme; my buttocks brawny, and thick-skind with too much ſitting, and my chaps (like a Monkies) nimbly walking on both ſides, when I was at my meat. Tell me how was it poſſible for me to content my ſelf; how endure to be put to a ſet Penſion, to ſtay waiting all day long at a door, at nights to ſtand with a Torch in my hand, leaning againſt a wall, and ſtanding upon one legge like a Crane, till it be almoſt day-break? Sometimes, (if not for the moſt part,) ſupper-leſſe but frozen (I am ſure) with cold, expecting the Viſits that go out, and come in, being like a Ladder for others to go up and down; or like a Smiths paire of Bellows, aſcending, and deſcending, to bear others company, waiting upon my Lords Caroche early and late; not only at ſome ſet ſeaſons and certain times, but at all hours both of day and night; being mired in the Winter with durt, and choaked in the Summer with duſt; holding a Trencher between my thumbs at meals; my belly growing leane and lank through a longing deſire, feeding on the beſt diſhes with my eyes, and wiſhing in my ſoul, that every dainty morſell at the boord, had been meat for my mouth. Beſides, going upon one meſſage, and returning with another, tyring out my legges, and wearing out my ſhooes, and being allowed but every Moneth a pair, we were forced to go fifteen dayes of the thirty bare-foot. Theſe are the things that yearly paſſe from the firſt of *January*, to the laſt of *December*. And he, who at the end thereof ſhall aske us: How have you thriv'd this year? What have you got?

The anſwer is at hand, Sir, I reſt upon my Lords love and favour, I referre my ſelf to his diſcretion and goodneſs; I eate of his meat, and drink of his drink, in Winter feeding on that which is cold; in Summer, that which is hot. And what I have in that kind, is but a poor pittance, and that little, none of the beſt, and commonly ſome-what of the lateſt, that a man were as good go without it. I wear what cloaths he gives me, ſuch as you ſee, as a Livery rather of my ſervitude, than of devotion to cloath me; not given me to keep me warme, but to do my Lord honour: And thoſe too muſt be made to their-minde, and our coſt. So that our money payes for it, and they chooſe the colours.

Our

Our greater gains did consist in cold fare, for there was not one of us that could finger a full Trencher: scraps, and picking of their teeth, we had in some abundance, and with these we entertained our selves, and the like poor Relicks that they left, and some refuse fruits that were not worth the eating, and such things as these, or worse, were all the fruits of our labours.

When the Wind blew, fresh, and that we had got a matter of some tenne or twelve *Quartes*, which with us was a great summe, we rais'd this money out of so many drops and flakes of Wax, which we took off from our Torches, which we sold to some old Cobler or other. He amongst us that could get up a little stock, that were worth any thing, though it were never so small, this man had a sufficient Patrimony, and did great things with it, he might buy him a penny-pasty at the Cooks; and other the like odde kind of Junkets: but if he were taken in the manner, he was sure to be whipt for his labour. This was his Judgement, Only it was permitted unto us to steale. *I say (if we had stolne)* it was held the lesse evill of the two. For if it had been permitted, and that we might have been suffered so to do, I would so cunningly have imployed my wits in that kind, that I would in a short time have been able to set up a Chandlers shop. But if I did make benefit of mine owne Torch, or filch now and then from my fellows some of theirs, that was all that I did. But they were so base, and so crafty withall, that I never saw them busie themselves about any other thing, being more desirous to lose their meat, than that; for victuals are consumed in the belly, and cannot afterwards be sold to profit; and yet for these things too, they had a thousand shifts and rogueries.

For I saw one of them once take a Honey-comb from the table, and presently wrapt it in his Handkerchief, and clapt it into his Pocket. But because he waited at the table, and for that he could not carry it so speedily as he would have done to the Haven of Safety, nor land it in so good a place as he desired, it hapned that the heat of the weather, and the warmth of the pocket, melted the Honey, which in great hast came trickling down his Breeches, and drop't out at his knees. My *Lord* spied it, as he sate at table, who could scarce forbear laughing; at last to make himself merry, he called him unto him, and commanded him to put down his Hose. The Page did so. And when his hands came to touch upon the honey, it clung fast to his fingers ends, whereat they fell a laughing, & he went away ashamed. But he had sowre sauce to his sweet meat; for that besides he never tasted of the Honey, he was so soundly lasht, that his breech drop't Wax as fast as the Comb did Honey. Which misfortune should never have befalne me, for I was perfect in all kind of roguerie, and would never have been to seek of some slight or other for cleanly conveyance. And that my sword might not rust in my scabberd, but that I might still keep my hands in ure, I was evermore a practising upon some toyes and trifles, petty things not worth the talking, only to set my fellows wits a work, and to give them a bone to gnaw upon.

The Devill (I think) brought Fools and block-heads to the Court, who let every good morsell slip besides their mouths: a troublesome and wearisome kind of people to treat withall, unfit for the managing of business; insupportable in their carriage, and tedious in their conversation. A man should be like to a good Horse, or a good Greyhound, upon all occasions to take his carreer, and to make his course; and moreover he must carry himself in a cool and quiet manner.

There were Pages good store, but I must tell you, that the most of them, nay I will inlarge my speech a little more, and say, That they were all Chips of one and the same block, a company of beetle-heads, dull-spirited fellows, that had no wherry in them, not onely when they were in their Lords presence, but likewise, when they were out of his sight. They were as slow in executing his will, as they were lazie in getting up from their beds; they were idle, retchless, careless, all set upon loytering, exercising neither their bodies nor their brains, which made me the more willing to play the Wagge with them, and for my better pastime, to put one pretty trick or other upon them.

I did store my self with Stockings, Garters, Bands, Hats, Handkerchiefs, Poynts, Cuffes, Shoes, and whatsoever I could rap or wring from them, which I hid between the straw of one of my fellows beds, because, if any search were made, they should not find them in mine. I altered the properties of these things in an instant, they never lay long by me, I would chop them for old iron, rather than be troubled with the keeping of them. It behooved them to look well about them, and to see that they had all safe and sure under lock and key, for if they should carelessely leave any thing abroad, those eyes that found it gone, did never see it return again.

Many of theſe waggiſh parts I plaid, which were but tricks of youth, and nothing elſe. But I fell afterwards into a fault, which I would have ſworne of all others (ſo far was it from my thought) I ſhould never have offended in. It was a licoriſh ſinne, even the ſinne of Gluttony. Which I do not know, whether it proceeded from my eating by meaſure (as being ſtinted) or whether that my longing did provoke and ſtirre up my appetite; or whether it were now muing time with me, and that I was to change my old feathers, and get me new, for they ſay, that men, while they live here in this world, do at certaine times and ſeaſons (as other creatures ſhed their hairs, and recover new coats) change and alter their manners and conditions.

I was now grown ſo licoriſh, and ſo ſharp ſet upon ſweet meats, (for the pleaſant taſte they had, while they paſſed down my throat) that never any blind man was halt ſo forward to go repeating his Letanies, and other his ſet prayers, from door to door, to get an Almes, as I was to pleaſe my palate: and look whatſoever came within the reach of mine eyes, were it as far as they could ken, and ſafe enough (as it might be ſuppoſed) from catching, yet could it not eſcape my Eagles-talons.

And as the Hart with his breathing draws your Snakes out of the bowels of the earth: So I, if I could but once come to ſet mine eyes upon ſuch, or ſuch a dainty, it was ſure mine own, they rendred themſelves at firſt into my hands, they turn'd them over to my mouth; and my mouth committed them cloſe priſoners to my belly, where theſe ſweets remained, till they were no longer ſweet.

My Lord Cardinall had a great Cheſt (which kinde of Cheſts are much uſed in *Italy*) of white Pine; and I have likewiſe ſeen good ſtore of them in *Spaine*, which they uſually bring from thence, ſtuft with Merchandize, but eſpecially with glaſſes, and earthen cups and diſhes, the better to keep them from breaking.

This Cheſt ſtood in a with-drawing Chamber, for to *regalar*, and cheer himſelf withall, being full of diverſe ſorts of Conſerves; there I ſay, were your dry Suckets delicately candyed, your *Bergamota* Pear of *Aranxues*, your *Genoa* Cherry, your Melon of *Granada*, your *Sevillian* Cytrons, your Oranges, and Pome-Citrons of *Plaſencia*, your Lemons of *Murcia*, your pretty little Cucumbers of *Valencia*, your buddes of the Ilands, your *Berengenas* of *Toledo*, your *Orejones* of *Aragon*, your *Potatas* of *Malaga*: your Pippens, Parſneps, Carrets, Pompeons, beſides a thouſand ſeverall ſorts of Comfits, and an infinite number more of ſundry different kinds of Sweet-meats, which did diſquiet my ſpirit within me, not ſuffering my ſoul to take any reſt.

As often as he made any Collation, or did eate any of theſe things, he gave me the Key, himſelf ſtanding by while I took them out, never truſting me with them alone by my ſelf.

This diſtruſt of his, begot anger with me; and this anger, a deſire of revenge This (though I were broad awake) did I ſtill dream on. I thought with my ſelf (God forgive me for it) how I might poſſibly come to have a fling at this Cheſt, and open this Myne, which was more precious unto me, than all the gold in the *Indies*.

I told you already, that the Cheſt was a very great one, being to my ſeeming two yards and a half in length, one in depth, and another in breadth: it was as white (if not more) than any paper; the barres and all the reſt of the Iron-work about it, as ſmall as your fineſt threads of Cambrick, curiouſly wrought, ſmooth and neatly poliſhed, ſtrengthned with good ſtrong plates at the corners, ſet with ſtuds very handſomely; the Lock ſtood in the midſt, there being but one Key to open to this ſweet Paradiſe, and that was in my Lords cuſtodie. If thou know'ſt what it is to ſteal, or haſt ever heard tell of it; or woul'dſt faine learne how to rob a Cheſt; and to take what thou wilt out of it, without either falſifying of a Key, ripping open of a Lock, taking off the Hinges, or breaking up the Boards; Liſten but to me, and I will tell thee how it may be done.

When it was my turne to wait, and that there were any Viſits, or other neceſſary buſineſs at home, whoſe preſent being in action, might promiſe me ſecurity; I had certaine Iron tools in a readineſſe, which I had prepared of purpoſe, with the help whereof I did by little and little heave up the lid of the Cheſt, till I could thruſt in a pretty little wedge of wood, and then heaving it up a little more, I did put in a round ſtick, about the bigneſs of the head of a reaſonable good bigge Hammer, and this I went wreſting in by degrees, turning and winding it fair and ſoftly towards the lock, whereunto, the neerer and neerer ſtill that it grew, the more and the more did it ſtill heave up my corner, ſo that being (as I was) but a youth, and having a ſlender hand, and a ſmall arme, I took out ſuch Sweet-meats, as

I had

I had moſt mind unto, wherewith I fill'd my pockets as full as ever I could ſtuffe them: But when I could not reach now and then to thoſe that were farther off, that I might meet at laſt with this their contumacie and rebellion, I did clap upon the end of a Cane, or ſome little ſtick, two Pins, one having a ſharpe point, and the other made crooked like a hook, and by the help of theſe two I brought them to their due obedience.

And thus I became Lord and Maſter of whatſoever was within the Cheſt; without the help of any key. In which theft I carried my ſelf ſo cunningly, that though I had ſtolne much, yet there was nothing found to be miſſing. At laſt I lighted upon a *Melacotone* of *Caſtile*, which being as fair, and as goodly a one (for it's greatneſs) as ever I ſaw in all my life, and gilded all over, my appetite was much provoked therewith, it ſeeming to be one intire piece of Gold, when I firſt taſted it: the reliſh whereof (me thinks) remaineth yet ſtill in my mouth; me thought I never taſted any thing better, nor had I ever ſeen the like before.

Now, becauſe this was a known piece, when it was once diſcovered, that this curioſitie was wanting, there was preſently a generall ſuſpition conceived; but not any the leaſt thought or jealouſie, that it had been taken out ſo, as indeed it was, but was rather imagined, that it was done by ſome counterfeit key. And this did much trouble my Lord the Cardinall, that he ſhould have any in his houſe, that ſhould dare to falſifie his locks, eſpecially in ſo private and ſecret a room as this was, which he reſerved for his own uſe. Whereupon he forthwith called unto him his principall ſervants, to the end that he might ſearch out the truth of this buſineſs. But as good luck would have, it fell out ſo happily, that all that I had ſtolne thence, was down my throat, and thorowly digeſted, not any the leaſt remembrance thereof remaining any more in my poſſeſſion. Now my Lord had to his Steward a melancholy Chaplaine, a fellow of an ill concoction, who wiſht my Lord, that all his ſervants ſhould be cal'd together, and afterwards have them ſhut up in one chamber, where they ſhould be thorowly examined, one by one, to ſee what could be got out of them, and their chambers likewiſe be ſearcht; for ſuch a piece of work as this could not proceed from any man of reaſon, but from the lickoriſh mouth of ſome of his Pages, or ſome other his younger boyes about the houſe, which had a ſweet tooth in their head.

Well, we were all lockt up cloſe, like birds in a cage, but to no end and purpoſe in the world; for they found us to be all true blades, not one falſe one amongſt us all, but according to theright mark, juſt and even to a hair. This ſtorm was over-paſt with us, but not my Lords care; For, I can aſſure you, our Maſter was wonderfull deſirous to come to the true knowledge hereof; And by reaſon of the great ſtir that was made about it, I did refraine for ſome few dayes, till this buſineſs might be over-blown, and that the matter was in a manner quite forgotten, *y huvieſſe otro aſno verda*; And that I might have ſome fair occaſion to have another fling at them.

Well, I durſt not for a pretty while after, put my hand to the Cheſt, nor once offer to caſt ſo much as an eye towards it. But that crookedneſs, which a tree once taketh in it's tender growth, the bigger it growes, the crookeder it is, waxing ſtill worſe and worſe; and therefore thoſe knaviſh tricks, which I had learned in my youth, were ſo deeply imprinted in me, that they could not be blotted out. So that I was as able to live without them, as without drawing ayre, and fetching of my breath: Eſpecially in thoſe things, whereunto I had been accuſtomed from a Child; for I had been long practiſed in them, and they pleas'd me paſſing well, and I took ſuch delight and pleaſure in them, as in nothing more.

In a word, I muſt up into the Saddle againe, though it coſt me another fall. I could not chooſe but go viſit my ſweet friends, to ſee how they did; I got me again to my old haunt, to ſee what good game *I* could find.

One day then amongſt the reſt, when my Maſter was at play, I thought with my ſelf, that my maſter could not (would he never ſo fain ſhift them off) but keep thoſe Cardinalls companie, that were come in kindneſs to ſee him. This Cheſt ſtood in a by-room, within his bed-Chamber, much after the manner of a Cloſet.

Now, I had no ſooner truſt up my doublet, and tuckt up the ſleeve of my ſhirt, and thruſt in mine armes as far as I could reach, but my Lord had liſt to make water. Whereupon he roſe up, and came into his Chamber, and not finding any of his Pages there, he went and took the Vrinall himſelf, which ſtood at his beds head; and whilſt he was making water, it was my ill hap to hear him: which ſudden and unexpected accident did ſo ſtartle me, and affright me, that going about to get out mine arme quickly (that *I* might not be taken in the manner) making as it ſeemed more haſt than good ſpeed, my round Rouler fell tumbling on the floor, the Cheſt, that preſently ſhuts it ſelf upon me, while mine arm like a Sparrow in a Pit-

fall, or a Mouſe in a Trap, is taken priſoner, betwixt the lock and the lid, where it was held too faſt to get forth in haſte. At the noyſe of the fall, my Lord askt, Who 's there? I could do no leſſe than make anſwere to his call, but the Devill a foot that I could ſtir to come forth unto him. Thereupon he comes in, finding me upon my knees ſtealing the Hony-combs out of his Hive. He demanded of me, what I made there? I confeſt the whole matter how it was, and without any more adoe (for I ſaw there was no fence for it) I told him the whole truth of the buſineſſe. But when he ſaw how prettily I was taken, the more he look't upon me, the more deſire he had to laugh, and to make his mirth the fuller, he call'd to thoſe that were in the next room at play, that they likewiſe might come and ſee how the Bird hung by the wing, and could not get looſe. When they ſaw how I was caught, they all fell a laughing, as though their hearts would have burſt for want of breath; yet had they ſo much left at laſt, as to intreat his Lordſhip, that this fault might be forgiven me, as being the firſt that I had offended him in; and the rather, for that it is given to all youth, to have a liquoriſh tooth. My Lord ſtood off, and would by no means be brought to yield; no intreaty would ſerve the turn, I muſt be whipt, there was no remedy, but I muſt be brought to the block.

Well, when they ſaw they could not procure my pardon, then they grew to a new conſultation, touching the number of the ſtripes; whereon they were ſo long a deviſing, as if it had been a thing contained in the Decretals, or ſome pontifical Act, that they had ſeriouſly ſate on. In the end, the number concluded on in this Conclave of Cardinals, was twelve, a full dozen I was to have, neither more nor leſſe. And the care of this payment was committed to Sir *Nicholas*, my Lords Secretary, my mortal enemy, who preſently carried me away to his Chamber, and laid them on ſo ſoundly, and with ſo good a will, that for a fortnight after I was not able to ſit on my breech. but he did not go ſo clear away with this buſineſſe as he thought he ſhould, for it was not long e're I did cry quittance with him, and returned this payment ſeven fold into his own boſom; ſo that he had no great cauſe, by that time I had done with him, to brag of his bargain. And that I may not delay you any longer, this trick anon after I put upon him.

My Gentleman was much troubled with *Moſquitos*, which did ſo perſecute him, that he could not ſleep for them, they did ſo diſquiet and torment him; All *Rome* did ſwarm with them; and in our houſe we had reaſonable good ſtore.

Whereupon, (hearing him complain much of them, and how he was bitten and vexed by them) I told him I would give him a remedy, which we uſe in *Spain*, wherewithall to deſtroy this troubleſome Vermine. He thankt me for it, and intreated me very earneſtly, that I would do him the kindneſſe to give it him. I told him that he ſhould get him a good bundle of *Petroſelinum*, and having ſteept it well in good Wine-vineger, he ſhould put it at his beds head, to the ſmell whereof all the *Moſquitos* would come, whereupon, as ſoon as ever they lighted, they would preſently fall down dead. He believed me, and preſently puts it in practiſe. But when he was gone to bed, and had laid himſelf down to ſleep, ſuch a ſwarm of theſe buzzing buſie flies came flying about his ears all the night long, and did ſo plague and torment him, as if they had pull'd out his eyes with Pincers, and held him by the noſe with corn-tongs, as Saint *Dunſton* did the Devil.

Whileſt they were thus nibbling on his noſe, eyes, and all the other parts of his face; he beſtowed a thouſand buffets on his cheeks, thinking with thoſe ſmart claps to kill theſe angry Creatures; and perſwading himſelf that they would die at laſt, when they lighted upon the receipt, that was prepared for them, he paſt away the time as well as he could untill the morning.

But the next night after (becauſe this remedy had not drawn onely thoſe of the houſe thither; but all the reſt of the *Moſquitos*, that were bordering there-about) they did ſo bepeps him, that not onely his face was moſt vilely diſ-figured therewith, but all the reſt of the parts of his body, whereunto they were able to reach, (for ſome they could not come at for the Cloaths,) were taken in that exceſſive manner, ſo be-pimpled, and ſo be-ſpotted, that he was forced to forſake his lodging, and to get him gone with all the ſpeed he could.

The Secretary was madded at the matter, and could have found in his heart to have kill'd me.

But my Lord, when he look't upon this ill-favour'd faced knave, and ſaw that he ſeemed ſo like a Leper (for he had not one free place about him, but like a Leopard ſpotted all over) and that I durſt not appear for fear, but plaid leaſt in ſight, he was ready to burſt himſelf with laughing, when he heard that *I* had put this jeſt upon him.

Where-

Whereupon commanding me to be called in, when I came, he askt me, why I had offered the Secretary ſo great an affront, and had thus plaid the wagge with him?

Whereupon I anſwered? Your Lordſhip may be pleaſed to remember that you commanded him to give me a dozen laſhes about the buſineſſe of the Sweet-meats. His Commiſſion reacht no farther. But I remember very well, how he then uſed me. For what he gave me in groſſe, I told out by retail, one by one, as a matter much importing my *poſteriors*. Beſides, I know it was not your Lordſhips pleaſure (as a thing) contrary to your milde and gentle diſpoſition) that they ſhould be the ſtripes of death: but ſuch as my tender years were able to bear. But *el Domine Nicolao*, my Worſhipfull good friend Sir *Nicholas*, that he might not be taxed for a bad pay-maſter, gave me twenty good ſound laſhes, the laſt being more cruel than the firſt. And ſo having exceeded not onely his Commiſſion, but common humanity, I thought I had juſt cauſe to cry quittance with him: And thus as you ſee (whereat I hope your Lordſhip will not be offended) I have revenged the Wheals on my breech, by returning them on his face. He was the man that ſtung me, and I got others to ſting him. And I hope, my Lord, this is but one for another. Onely the difference is, that he did proſecute this ſuite againſt me in his own perſon, and I againſt him by my Attourney.

This was paſt over as a jeſt, and I heard no more of it. And for that, by reaſon of my former bold attempt, I was not onely beaten, but baniſhed from the ſervice of his Lordſhips Chamber; I waited in the mean while (during this his diſpleaſure) upon his Lordſhips Chamberlain.

## Chapter VIII.

Guzman de Alfarache *revenges a trick which the Secretary had put upon the Chamberlain, whom he then attended. He tells a tale of ſhame and fear; What it is, and how painted forth. He is received again into the Cardinals ſervice. And how finely he cozened him of a barrel of Conſerves.*

MY new Maſter was a merry pleaſant Gentleman, without any Gall, or Malice in the World, ſet all upon ſport and good fellowſhip, there was no harm in him in the earth, no fraud, no deceit; but was a man of the old making, an honeſt true *Troian*, without any tricks, or jigs, juſt in his dealings, and as plain as any Pack-ſtaffe. I knew no fault in him, unleſſe it were a little choller; he was ſomewhat too touchy, and would (which was the tenderneſſe of his nature) quickly be tinded. Whereunto I may add his over-jealous and ſuſpicious nature, which would make him many times to imagine things to be otherwiſe than they were meant, it being the condition of ſuch diſpoſitions to interpret all things to the worſt. Quit him of theſe two qualities, (which were not overmuch inherent in him) and there was not a fairer condition'd man to converſe withall; if you would have ſought a whole Countrey, you could not have met with his fellow.

This *Bonus Socius* had but poor Parents, to whom he dayly ſent his own allowance, and now and then he would either Dine, or Sup with them, as he did the night before that hapned unto him, which you ſhall hear by and by.

What with his drinking of water, and eating certain *Taxarinas* (which is a kinde of meat made of paſte, cut out into ſlices, boyled with the fat of Birds, and ſeaſoned with Pepper) he came not home half well, and complaining of the crazineſſe of his ſtomack, he went directly to his Chamber, and got him forthwith to bed.

Now his Lord, miſſing him at ſupper, asked for him: They told him how it was with him. He ſent one of his Gentlemen to viſit him, and to bring him vvord how he did.

To which meſſage he made anſwer, that he did not finde himſelf well, but he hoped in God, he ſhould be well the next morning, being much comforted that his Lordſhip had been pleaſed ſo far forth to grace his ſervant, as to ſend unto him to know how he did, for which favour he reſted much bound unto his Lordſhip, returning the Meſſenger, with all humble thanks and the beſt remembrance of his love and ſervice.

Thus this matter paſſed for the preſent. The morrow after I went to the houſe of his Parents, with ſome proviſion for their Dinner, one of my fellows remaining with him, who was bruſhing of his Cloaths, againſt his Maſter ſhould riſe.

He and the Secretary uſed to break many jeſts one upon another, and many merry paſſages paſt between them; And becauſe they were harmleſſe, and without any prejudice to either, my Lord was ſo far from miſliking them, that he took much delight and pleaſure in them.

The Secretarie, as ſoon as he was up and ready, went towards his Chamber, and meeting with my fellow, who was there ready at hand, waiting when he ſhould be call'd for, askt him how his Maſter did? He made anſwer, that his Maſter was newly falne aſleep, and that he had not taken one hours reſt all that night, but that now (God be thanked) he ſlept ſoundly, and well hoped that the worſt was paſt.

It is well (ſaid the Secretary) and ſeeing it is ſo, its pity to wake him; but in the mean while, till he be ready to riſe, (which I preſume will not be with the ſooneſt) I prethee let me intreat thee to go a little way vvith a ſervant of mine, to help him to bring home a certain commodity for me, vvhich he cannot vvell do alone, and make all the haſte I pray that you can, for I vvill tarry here till you come, leſt your Maſter might chance to vvake and call for you. The young Lad did as he deſired, and vvent his vvay.

Now the Secretary, taking hold on this occaſion, that his friend had that night ſupt abroad, and was not in his Lordſhips preſence, (as he was wont to be) that he might have him in his eye, as he ſate at ſupper: deviſed with himſelf how he might put ſome pretty jeſt upon him: and at laſt the conception of his brain, brought forth this merry babe. He dreſſes me a pretty Youth in vvomans apparel, attired in the habit of a Curtizan, and places this Boy ſoftly and ſecretly behinde his bed. Now this honeſt man vvas all this vvhile faſt aſleep, and the enterance vvas free and open unto him, whileſt the Secretary, for the more ſurety, vvent in firſt himſelf vvithout being heard; and afterwards taking this Youth by the hand, led him ſoftly along, and there he hid himſelf cloſe behinde the bed, as he had been before inſtructed, and there he remained quiet, not ſo much as offering once to ſtir.

This being done, the Secretary went forth, and going to ſeek out his Lord, he found him a walking, ſaying of ſome prayers to himſelf, as his manner was; who as ſoon as he ſaw him, his Lordſhip demanded of him how the Chamberlain did? Who told him; I enquired thereof but now, and his ſervant told me, that he had not been well all this night; And I doe not much marvel at it; for being with him laſt night before I went to bed to ſee how he did, I talkt unto him, but me thought he anſwered me with an ill will. What ails him, I know not. There is ſomething in it more than ordinary, what ever it be; farther I cannot inform your Lordſhip.

The Cardinal (who was charity it ſelf) preſently thereupon made haſte to viſit him. And when he had ſet himſelf down by him, cloſe to his beds head, the Youth comes me out from behinde the hangings of the bed, and cries out; Woe is me, moſt wretched and unfortunate vvoman; what ſhall I doe? Pardon me (good Sir) for I muſt be gone, for it is late and I am afraid my husband will miſſe. And with that, ſhe went her way, paſſing through the midſt of all the Cardinals ſervants, attending there upon his L. ordſhip.

The Cardinal, who thought him to be a Saint, began to bleſſe himſelf, and was much amazed thereat. And the Chamberlain, he on the other ſide, was as much aſtoniſhed, taking it to have been ſome Viſion, or ſtrange Apparition. He croſſes himſelf, then cries out, *Jeſus*! The Devil, the Devil: and therewith lept out of his bed in his ſhirt, running up and down the room, as if he had been out of his wits.

The Secretary, and ſome other that were privy thereunto fell a ſmiling, and had much adoe to forbear laughing out-right; whereby the Cardinal perceived, that it was meerly a jeſt, and they did not ſtick to confeſſe as much, telling the whole truth of the matter, and how it was carried.

But the Chamberlain could not ſtand ſtill, but ran up and down from place to place, not knowing which way to turn himſelf. And albeit they did all labour to quiet him, yet for all that they could do, they could not in haſte bring him to himſelf again: but was much abaſhed, and mightily aſhamed of his ſcoffe and jeſt that was put upon him; and the more, for that it was in the preſence of his Lord. But in the end (like a good Courtier) he diſſembled it as well as he could. And the Cardinal went away bleſſing himſelf, and laughed heartily as he went along at this conceited merriment.

Now, by that time I was come back, all this buſineſſe was over-paſt: But I was as ſenſible of it, as if they had given me ſo many ſtripes. And the Chamberlain would with all his heart have parted with the beſt eye in his head, to be fully revenged on him.

But when he ſaw that I looked ſomewhat ſad upon the matter (himſelf being likewiſe ſo

leſſe

ſelfe heavy) be ſaid unto me; What thinkeſt thou (*Guzmanillo*) of the wrong that theſe Villains have done me? To whom I made anſwer; They have done well, Sir, and plaid their parts with you very finely, what would you more? But if they had uſed me ſo ſcurvily as they have done you, I verily perſwade my ſelf, that his *Holineſſe* ſhould not need to injoyn them any penance for this offence; nor would I leave it to mine Heirs in my laſt Will and Teſtament to repay this debt, but I would quit ſcores with them my ſelf, and pay them home with advantage: and ere I had done with them they ſhould very well put that in their eye, which they ſhould get by the reckoning. They all knew me to be a notable wagge, and that I had an unhappy wit of mine own for all kinde of knavery.

But why do I ſpend the time in talk, when my Lungs are ready to leap out at my throat, and ſwell with fulneſſe of breath, out of the deſire they have to vent ſomething? But I kept my ſelf aloof, and was tender to touch upon that ſtring, as being loath to advice and counſel him what to do, not holding it lawfull for a Page to revenge the injuries of a grave Miniſter upon another that is his equal, *Aude cada oveja conſupareja.* Like with like doth well. For it is no good jeſting with a mans betters. One was enough for me, which might the better be born withall, becauſe it was in *cauſa propria*; I was toucht in mine own perſon, and therefore had the more reaſon to right my ſelf.

But in this particular, why ſhould I wilfully intangle my ſelf in that Net, whence I ſhould not afterwards be able to eſcape, with loſſe than the laying on of many ſound laſhes; or to come forth with mine ears four fingers longer when they went in, or with the loſſe of the hair of my head? I therefore held my peace, and kept me quiet. But I, who was naturally of a hot and boyling ſpirit, being often importuned by him, he making me great offers and large promiſes, giving me beſides to underſtand, that the Cardinal ſhould know, that it was a Childe of mine own begetting, and the workmanſhip of mine own hands, in defence of him who was then my Maſter, I reſolved with my ſelf to enter into the Action, and to undertake this buſineſſe in his behalf, and to be the ſole plotter and contriver thereof my ſelf. And ſo I let ſome few days paſſe over, waiting for ſome fair occaſion that might give warmth for the hatching of this bird.

When I had found (as I thought) a fit time, and that the ordinary Poſt of *Spain* was to depart, the Secretary was very buſie about his diſpatches, which required haſte. I bought me then a little Roſin, Frankinceaſe, and Maſtick, I pounded it, and ſifted it altogether, till I had wrought it fine, and as ſmall as any Meal. The Secretaries ſervant was that morning buſied about his Maſters Cloaths, bruſhing and making of them clean with all the ſpeed he could. To him go I, telling him; Doſt thou hear (honeſt *Jacobo*) I am come to tell thee, that I have a dainty piece of Bacon on the ſpit, it is now ready, bread I have likewiſe provided, there is nothing wanting but vvine, if thou wilt finde that, thou ſhalt ſhare with me; if not, pardon me, for I ſhall ſeek out one that will. He quickly replied: No, (good *Guzman*) no, do not ſo, for I will give thee wine to it. Go to then (quoth I) ſtay thou here; for I will preſently be with both it, and thee.

Whileſt that he went to the *Diſpenſe* for vvine, I took forth my paper of powders, and turning the inſide of the breeches outward. I be ſprinkled them with a little vvine, which I carried about me in a little round glaſſe Vial, & threw good ſtore of theſe my prepared powders upon them: which when I had done according to my minde, I turned the breeches again, putting them juſt in the ſame order they were in, when the youth left them. He returned anon after with a good Jar of vvine, and before he could ſpeak unto me, his Maſter call'd for him to come in, and bring him his Cloaks, for he would riſe. He left the vvine with me, and I him within. Where they were both ſo buſie about their Papers, that it was noon before they had diſpach't, and were ready to come forth. The Secretary was a very hairy man of his body; and the powders began to play their part, and to work their affect. The Dog-dayes were then come in, and with the extremity of thoſe heats, they wrought ſo upon his body, that from the girdle downwards he was as if it had been a Sear-cloath of Pitch, which clung ſo cloſe unto him, and was grown ſo ſtiff withall, that he was terribly tormented therewith, for every hair did give him ſuch a twinge when he did but move, or when with ſome ſudden reach they did rend and unroot themſelves from the fleſh, that the tearing of every ſeveral hair ſeemed unto him, the plucking out of ſo many eyes out of his head.

When he ſaw in what caſe he was, he began to call his people about him, to know the cauſe thereof, but none of them could tell, nor were able to anſwer to that account, till the Chamberlain came in, and told him; Sir, this is *Quid pro quo*; one for another; *Qui moccat moccabitur.* Harm watch, harm catch.

This,

This, Sir, is call'd, The beating of the Fencer out of his School. You see for all your cunning, you may take a knock as well as another man. It is but blow for blow; you have given me one Venew, and I have given you another. And let us shake hands and be friends.

Well, (and to be brief) the jest ended in this, that they were fain to get a pair of Sizars, and go cutting hair after hair, which was work enough for two of his servants, and yet were forced in the end to unrip his breeches that they might come the better to clip away the hairs.

This jest took better than the former, because it was a little tarter than the other, and stuck closer unto him. By vertue of this, I received the confirmation of my knavery, and was taken ever after for the same man I was; So that all did seek to fly from my jests, as they would fly from the Plague.

Two moneths of my banishment were now past and gone. After which expiration of time, I returned again to my former Office: but with the same little modesty, and fear of doing evil, as before. You may haply have heard tell of that tale, when *Modesty*, the *Aire* and the *Water* took leave one of another. Who at their parting, asking where they should meet again and see each other: the *Aire* said, that they should finde her on the tops of Hills; The *Water*, that they should be sure of her, in the bowels of the earth. But *Modesty*, that she being once gone from them, it was impossible to meet with her any more. I have lost her, she is quite gone from me, and without any hope of ever returning. But it makes no matter. *A quien le falta, la Villa es suya*, Where she is away, the Town is ours.

Who would not have been feared with those former proceedings, and fully resolved with himself never to do the like again? But what my amendment was, I shall deliver unto you; and what hapned unto me thereupon. I had certain sweet Guts in my belly and so made and accustomed thereunto, that those dayes that I mist of my sweet meats, was a taking of water from the sick, or wine from a drunkard. I would have ventured the breaking of my neck from the top of *Santo Angelo*, rather than I would not down to steal them, if they were to be had upon the face of the earth. And hence is it; *Que quien teme la muerte, no goza la vida*. That he that fears death doth not injoy his life. If fear would have made me turn Coward, I had never tasted that so sweet a life. I cast up my account, and made this reckoning with my self, suppose they should take me again with the like? What can they do unto me? or what hurt can come of it? I have always observed, that fear is painted feeble, lean-visag'd, staring-hair'd, pale-coloured, sad countenanced, heavy, melancholy, naked, fearfull, and not daring either to say, or do that, which it fain would, and most of all desireth.

Fear is a servil Act, onely proper unto slaves; it enterpriseth nothing: nor doth any thing succeed well, that it undertaketh; and is like unto a cowardly Cur, which knoweth better to bark than to bite. Fear is the Souls hang-man, and it is but foolishnesse to fear that, which cannot be avoided.

In a word, it was impossible for me (such was my condition) to abstain from being in action; I was not able to contain my self. Happen what may happen. Come what will come; all was one to me. I said to my self; *Audaces fortuna juvat*; Fortune befriends brave spirits. Let the worst come to the worst fall back, or fall edge. I am sure to pay for it onely in my person, & not in my goods, either moveable, or unmoveable for it was not Gods will, that I should have any Land of mine own, whereon to settle my self, & make my certain abode; nor any *Semovientes*, such things as could move of themselves, and keep me company, whither-soever I should go. My Lord was a great lover of your moist Suckets, and such liquid Conserves, as they use to bring from the *Canaries* in little Barrels, or from the Islands of the *Terceras*; which Barrels, when they were empty, were thrown aside, and no reckoning made of them, lying here and there in every corner as good for nothing. I had got me one of these, containing about half an *Arroba*, which served me instead of a Trunk, wherein I kept my Cards, my Dice, Garters, Points, Cuffe, Hand-kerchiefs, and other things befitting a poor Page.

The Cardinal (as he was sitting one day at Dinner,) commanded his Steward that he should go among the Merchants, and buy him some three, or four *Quintals*, of those that were the newest and the freshest, and but lately brought in. When I heard him say so, I began presently to cast about with my self, how I might make my self Master of one of these Barrels. The Cloath was taken away, the Cardinal risen, all gone to Dinner; and whilest they were busie at their victual, I Got me in to my Chamber, and in the twinkling of an eye, before you could well say this, I clapt me within that Barrel which I had as many old

rags,

rags, duſt, gravel, or whatſoever other traſh came firſt to hand, till I had fill'd it brimfull, and thruſt it down as hard as I could for my life to make it lye the cloſer. This done, on went the head, then the hoops, making all faſt and ſure, ſo that it was now as handſomely fitted up as heart could wiſh, and no man that ſhould have ſeen it, but would have ſworn (it was ſo artificially handled) that it had been newly brought from the Indies ſtuft with Roots of *Tragopagum*, or Goats beard, (as ſome call it) which is good againſt poyſon.

When I had trimm'd it up, and made it feat and fit, I let it alone, having ſtill an eye, and ſtanding as Sentinel, to watch what ſucceſſe this project of mine might take.

Now, (as good luck would have it) behold about the evening I did deſcry two *Azemilas* which came along laden with Conſerves, who were no ſooner entred within doors, but they were eaſed preſently of their burthen. The Steward commanded the Pages to carry them into the Cardinals lodgings.

I had now a ſight of Fortunes foretop, and boldly told her, you ſhall not go from me, till I have taken hold of your hair. And as I was ſpeaking, I took one of the Barrels, and laid it upon one of my ſhoulders, as the reſt of my fellows did, but lagging a little behinde, giving them leave to go before me: as ſoon as I was come right over againſt mine own Chamber door, I ſuddenly ſlipt in, when I ſaw the coaſt was clear, and took out that other which I bare to my Lords lodging; and ſo I made my three returns, giving a good account of all my lading.

When the laſt was come up, I ſtood very ſoberly in the Hall where my Lord Cardinal was, who ſaid unto me: what think you of this fruit *Guzmanillo?*) you cannot put in your hand here, your wedges will not ſerve your turn. I reply'd to that point, and told him; My good Lord; *Donde non valen cunnas, aprovechan unnas.* Where the wedge nought prevail, we muſt make uſe of our nail; if one thing will not do the deed, another muſt. And though mine arm cannot get in, my hand may, and that's enough for me, I will deſire no more.

Very good Sir (ſaid my Lord) but as they are now, neither your arm, nor your hand will ſtand you in ſtead.

There lies the skill, quoth I to my Lord; for if they were otherwiſe eaſie to be opened, I would not care a button for them, there is no pleaſure in ſuch a purchaſe. In matters of difficulty, your good wits come to their tryal, which onely ſhew themſelves in things of great importance, and not in driving a nayl into the wall, or pulling on of a pair of ſhooes, things eaſie to be done, and which naturally offer themſelves unto us at the firſt ſight.

Say'ſt thou me ſo (quoth my Lord?) well, I will once ſet your wits a working. If within theſe eight dayes you ſhall ſhew your ſelf ſo nimble witted, as to ſteal one of theſe from me, I will beſtow it on thee for thy labour, thou ſhalt have another beſides into the bargain: but if thou ſhalt fail therein, thou ſhalt then binde thy ſelf to receive ſuch puniſhment as ſhall be agreed upon.

My Lord, ſaid I; eight dayes? Why, eight dayes is a mans life; it is time enough of conſcience. The buſineſſe will be too long a doing; and it may be, by putting it off to ſo large a time, we may either grow cold in the bargain, or the memory of it dye, and be no more thought upon.

I accept the favour offered me by your Lordſhip, and if to morrow by this time I ſhall not finiſh this buſineſſe, I ſhall willingly reſign up my ſelf into the Secretaries hands, to be puniſhed at his diſcretion; becauſe I aſſure my ſelf, that he would willingly have the tawing of me, that he might revenge himſelf upon me for the late paſſage that I put upon him to his great grief: for the ſent of the Pitch is not yet gone from him, nor his hairs come again.

My Lord laught, and ſo did they that were about. And thus the bargain was driven between us for the next day following. But becauſe I was already on the fore-hand, and was well aſſured of the buſineſſe, I could, if I would have preſently cleared my ſelf of this debt, but I was willing to let the bond run on, till the time it was due.

The board was covered, and my Lord was now ſet down to Dinner, feeding on ſuch things at firſt, which I brought in, to procure him the better appetite to his meat; and looking me in the face, he ſmilingly ſaid unto me, *Guzmanillo*, it is but a little now to night; That come, your time is paſt. What will you give me now to be freed of your bargain? Maſter *Nicolao* hath rods in piſſe for you, and is provided for your payment. And me thinks that he is plotting how he may be revenged of thee, and thou, how thou mayeſt ſatisfie thy ſelf upon him. If I might adviſe, my counſel ſhould be, that he ſhould not deal with thee, not ſo

much for thy ſake as his own. Whereunto I anſwered; I am ſure (my Lord) that my puniſhment is in the Secretaries hand: But I am not yet ſure that the Conſerves are in mine. Yet if I had ſtore of money to ſet upon this caſt, and had ought to loſe more than the pooreſſe of my perſon, I would venture it all for this once, becauſe I am very confident of my Chance.

Thus Dinner paſt on till the laſt courſe was almoſt ended, and ready to be taken away; at which time I went to the Court-cupboord, and taking from thence a Silver Plate. *I* fill'd it with the Conſerves of that Barrel which *I* had ſtoln, and therewith *I* came to the Table, and ſet them down before his Lordſhip.

When my Lord ſaw what *I* had brought him, he bleſt himſelf, and began to wonder much at the matter, for he himſelf had the Barrels in his own cuſtody, they were within his own lodgings, and there he kept them (as he thought) ſafe enough. He would truſt no body with them, in regard of the bargain that was driven between us: He kept the Key himſelf; he bore it alwayes about him. At laſt he calls the Chamberlain unto him, and wills him to go in, and to count the Barrels, and to ſee if any of them were opened, or ill-conditioned.

He went in, and finding them both in number and place, to be juſt the ſame as at their firſt putting in, he came forth again, and told his Lordſhip the tale was whole and intire, not a Barrel that was miſſing, and that they were found and well conditioned, and not the leaſt ſuſpition to be had (for ought that he could perceive) amongſt them all, no not ſo much as the leaſt hair of his head. Ah, ah, ah, ſaid my Lord, this trick will not ſerve your turn; this is a very poor one. Thou would'ſt make us believe, that thou haſt taken that out of one of the Barrels, which thou haſt bought with thy money.

With that he turned himſelf towards the Secretary, and told him, *Domine Nicolao*, I aſſign *Guzmanillo* over unto you, to do what you liſt with him, and to puniſh him as you think fit, for that he hath loſt his wager.

The Secretary made anſwer, May it pleaſe your Lordſhip to take the correction of him into your own hands, and to diſpoſe of him as you pleaſe; for I for my part will have no more to do with him, I will not come near him, nor his ſhadow, I dare not; I have had too much of him already: And if I ſhould now tickle upon a new ſcore, and make him pay for the old and this together, I ſhould get nothing by the reckoning; for I hold him to be of that unhappy and dangerous, both wit and nature, that he would in revenge, convey the next time a neſt of Hornets into my breeches, or ſome other venemous vermine that ſhould either poyſon me, or ſting me to death. And therefore if your Lordſhip put him over unto me, and leave his puniſhment to my diſcretion, I freely abſolve him thereof, and am willing to imbrace his friendſhip.

I have not as yet (ſaid I) offended in that degree, that I had need of abſolution. Where there is no matter to work upon, it is needleſſe to ſeek to introduce a form. I am as good as my word, have performed what I promiſed; the wager is mine, I have won it. And if this be not true that I ſpeak, and that I make it not plainly to appear unto you, puniſh me at your pleaſure, I ask no favour at your hands. *De que ſirven las palabras, donde ay obras?* What need words, where there are works? I ſay, and ſay it again, and that confidently, that this Conſerve is of that which was brought in yeſterday and not onely this, but a whole Barrel thereof is now at this preſent whole and untoucht in my Chamber, ſave this little that I have ſet before his Lordſhip.

The Cardinal croſt himſelf and wondred how this ſhould be. And untill Dinner was done, and the Table taken away, he did nothing elſe but bleſſe himſelf with both his hands. And being deſirous to be certified of the truth thereof, he roſe up, and went into his lodging to be an eye witneſſe of it himſelf. He lookt upon all the Barrels, whereon he had ſet certain marks, he found them faithfull and true, the number full and juſt, the Key in his own cuſtody, and could not deviſe how this ſhould be.

Hereupon he did verily believe, that I had bought a Barrel of the very ſame Conſerves as his were, and ſaid unto me; *Guzmanillo*, doſt not thou thy ſelf know, that thou brought'ſt in thus many hither? count them now, and ſee if they be not right. I did ſo; And when I had done telling, I told him; My Lord, here is the full number. *Pero de lo contado, come el lobo.* But it is like the Shepheards number of his ſheep; whereof, when he hath caſt up his reckoning, he ſhall finde that the Wolf hath met with one of them by the way. I ſee they are well, but not all ſo well as they ſhould be. And that you may ſee I tell you no lye, let that be brought hither which is in my Chamber, and let this be opened that ſtands there, and you ſhall finde that I have changed the one for the other.

They

They opened it, whereby they diſcovered as well the truth, as the wit *I* had uſed therein. For the duſt, the gravel, the old rags, and the like trumpery which *I* had fill'd it withall, did manifeſt as much.

They remained all, as men amazed, not knowing what to think of it, nor being able for their lives, to imagine how this ſhould be brought about. They did all ask me the queſtion, but *I* would not acquaint any of them with it: But preſently beſought his Lordſhip that he would be pleaſed to perform his promiſe with me. He did ſo. So that *I* had that and one more, which were two in the whole.

And becauſe they ſhould know that *I* carried a Noble minde, as it was delivered to me with the one hand, ſo *I* gave it with another to my fellow-Pages, who divided it amongſt them. And howbeit, my Lord was ſomewhat offended at the fineneſſe of my theft, yet he did much more wonder at my liberality, and thought the better of me for this my free diſpoſition. He was much afraid of theſe cunning and ſubtill tricks of mine, and queſtionleſſe would have then put me away, but that he was ſo good and holy a man; and therefore conſidered with himſelf; if *I* ſhould now caſt off this young fellow, ſome great miſ-fortune will befall him, by reaſon of his miſ-demeanour. Theſe things hath he done here in mine own houſe, are but idle tricks of his youth, and *I* am ne're a whit the poorer for them. It is leſſe harm that he ſhould hurt me in a little, than through want, offend others in much. And out of this apprehenſion, he did (the better to diſſemble what was paſt) make of this Vice a Vertue. And it is great wiſdom in any man, when a hurt may be healed, for to cure it, and to remedy thoſe things that may be remedied: if not, to diſſemble it the beſt he can. He made himſelf merry with it: And as often as any Princes and great Lords came to viſit him, as occaſion was offered, he would not ſtick to make report thereof unto them.

## Chap. IX.

Guzman de Alfarache *treats of Charity: Diſcourſeth of Maſters, kinde, and unkinde: telleth of another theft of Conſerves. His exerciſes, and diſtaſtes, being a Page. He recounteth the tricks he uſed at* Primera. *That it is good to know play; but better not to uſe any gaming at all. And how for playing he was put out of the* Cardinals *ſervice. And how proud ignorance is the cauſe of all evil.*

THe Ordination of Charity (howbeit I have pointed at it heretofore) had its firſt beginning from God. Next in order follows that of Fathers and Mothers, then of Children, and after them of Servants; who if they be good are more to be made of, and to be better beloved, than Children that are bad. And becauſe my Lord had no Children, he did dearly love thoſe that ſerved him, and was very tender over them; placing (next after God and his Image, which is the poor) all love upon them.

He was generally charitable towards all men; as being the firſt fruit of the Holy Ghoſt, and the firſt fire that inflameth mans Soul. It is the prime good of all other goodneſſe that flows from our actions; it is the firſt beginning of a happy ending. It contains in it Faith and Hope; it is the way that leads to Heaven; it is the bond that bindes God unto man; it is the worker of Miracles; it is the ſcourge of Pride; and the fountain of wiſedom.

My Lord did deſire ſo much my amendment, as if his own had lyen upon it. He ſought to oblige me unto him by love, that he might not affright me with fear. And for to try, if he could reduce me to a vertuous courſe of life, he did (that he might remove from me all occaſion of longing) *Regalar* me at his own Table, feeding me from his own Plate with all the choiſeſt dainties and delicates, and with all manner of ſweet Meats; there was not the thing that he did eat of, whereof I had not my ſhare, telling me in gentle tearms: *Gueſmanillo*, I give thee this to be at truce with thee, in token of peace and amity: Behold that I, as well as my Secretary, will hold no contention with thee. Content thy ſelf with this morſel, whereby I acknowledge my ſelf to be thy Vaſſall, beſtowing this upon thee by way of Tribute. This would he ſmilingly utter, and with a ſmiling countenance, without reſpect of whoſoever ſate at Table with him, were they never ſo great perſons, or of what quality, or condition ſoever. He was a marveilous kinde Gentleman, he treated, and eſteemed his Servant well, he favoured and lov'd them exceedingly, doing for them as far as

his ability would reach, ſo that all of them did love him with their very heart & Soul, and did do him all true and faithfull ſervice. For without all doubt, the Maſter that reſpecteth his ſervants, is well ſerved by thoſe ſervants: and if he pay them well, they will deſerve their payment: but if he be loving and kinde withall, they adore him as God. Whereas on the contrary, if a Maſter be proud, a bad paymaſter, and unthankfull to his ſervants, he ſhall neither have truth, nor love with them. They neither ſerve him with fear, nor entertain him with their love. He is abhorred, hated, ſcorned, made a common by-word in the Market-place, in the ſtreets, in the Tribunals, and every publick Aſſembly, diſcredited by all men, and defended by none.

If Maſters did but know, how much it did import them, to have good and honeſt ſervants, they would ſpare the meat out of their own bellies to beſtow upon them; for they are true riches indeed; and he that hath a good ſervant hath a great Jewel. And it is impoſſible, that a ſervant ſhould be diligent, with that Maſter that is not loving unto him.

There were brought to my Lord from *Genoa* certain Boxes of Conſerves, very great and large, they were richly gilded, and curiouſly wrought upon the top, as poſſibly could be deſired, they were freſh and fair to look to, as being but newly finiſhed; which Boxes upon the way had taken a little wet. When they were brought before him, it did me good to look upon them, and the rather, for that they were made and ſent him by a kinſ-woman of his, who did ordinarily uſe to ſend him ſuch kinde of dainties. I was not in the houſe when they came, and vvhile I vvas lacking; they entred before my return into a conſultation, vvhat they ſhould do vvith them, and how, and vvhere they vvere beſt to dry them, that they might have a ſafe conduct from my perſon, that I might not ſeaze upon them: and the rather, for they muſt be forced to lay them abroad in the Sun, vvhich vvould have run ſome danger, if they had clapt them up cloſe in that *Urne*, vvherein *Julius Cæſars* Aſhes vvere put. Every one broached his opinion, but not one good one amongſt them all. My Lord himſelf lighted upon one, and ſaid; It matters not much, to ſtudy for a place, vvhere to keep them ſafe, if vve give the keeping of them to one, that vvill look vvell unto them, they vvill that vvay be ſafe, and no vvay elſe.

They did all allow of my Lords reaſon; And as ſoon as I came in, his Lorſhip call'd me unto him, and ſaid; *Guzmanillo*, what were we beſt to do with theſe Conſerves, which are come thus wet, that we may preſerve them from being ſpoyl'd? The beſt courſe (my Lord) ſaid I, in my poor opinion, is to eat them preſently.

And durſt thou adventure (quoth he) to eat them all? I anſwered; It were no great matter ſo to do, if a man had time enough. But I am not ſo great a glutton, that now at this preſent I dare to venture alone upon ſo great and honorable a Muſter, as is here made before me.

My pleaſure then is (ſaid he) that thou look unto them, and keep a true reckoning of them, laying them out every day abroad in the Sun. And here is no evaſion for you, for they ſhall be delivered unto you by tale, and by tale I will look you ſhall return them unto me. Here you ſee them laid open before you, and how fair and full they be; and if any harm come unto them, or ought be miſſing, I ſhall eaſily know where the fault lies, and call you to account for it.

I told him, that I was neither Maſter of my ſelf, nor them: I knew not what to do in this caſe, I was not mine own man; I had not power over my ſelf; and that I was one of *Eve's* Sons; and that being put into ſuch a Paradiſe of Conſerves, the Serpent of the fleſh might tempt me to eat of this forbidden fruit.

His Lordſhip reply'd then again, and told me; See (ſirrah) that you look well to your charge; for I will expect, that you give them me, as I gave them you: I muſt not have a piece miſſing, neither in number nor in weight, quality for quality, quantity for quantity, all whole and ſound, or elſe you ſhall ſee what will come of it, and therefore *I* would wiſh you to look well what you do, and to uſe your beſt care.

*I* then made bold to tell him; The Plea (my Lord) that is between us, depends not on this point; this is not the hinge, whereon it hangeth; For to return them unto you as they are, without finding any miſſing, or perceiving any hurt they have taken, that is a very eaſie thing, *I* can do that preſently. But it is another point (my Lord) that *I* ſtand upon. What point *I* pray (ſayes my Lord?) *I* told him, *I* put my ſelf into great peril; for *I* am privy to mine own inclination and weakneſſe, no man ſhould better know mine own ability and ſtrength than my ſelf, and therefore (to deal plainly with your Lordſhip) if you will have

me to comply with your Lordſhips command, if my life lay on it, I ſhall not be able to hold my hands, I muſt needs taſte of them, if not fill my belly.

My *Lord* marvelling much at me, Well (quoth he) ſeeing it will be no otherwiſe, *I* will for once make tryall how diſcreetly you will behave your ſelf; *I* ſhall ſee by this what manner of man you be. *I* give thee therefore free liberty, that thou eate as much as thou haſt a mind to for once, and no more, and that one time, *I* allow thee to fill thy belly as full as thou wilt thy ſelf; but with this condition, that thou deliver them up afterwards unto me, without any defect or fault; and in caſe the contrary ſhall appear, thou ſhalt make me ſatisfaction in ſuch payment, as *I* ſhall be pleaſed to appoint.

*I* accepted of the condition of this obligation; and thereupon they were all delivered up into my hands.

The next day following, I layd them out in the Sunne in an open walk, and amongſt the reſt of theſe ſweet meats, there was one of the flowers of Oranges and Limons, which offred it ſelf to my view, it lookt very lovingly upon me, as if it did deſire to be better acquainted with me, and I, who was loth to be behind hand in matter of courteſie, made towards it, took it in my hand, and with a little knife that I had about me, looſening thoſe little tacks with which it was faſtened beneath, and heaving it up daintily by degrees, till I had turn'd it up-ſide down, and that the lid lay downward, with that very knife, I took out almoſt the one half, from forth the bottome of it returning to make it faſt again as before, putting in place of the Conſerves ſo much waſte Peper, cut out ſo juſt to the ſame meaſure and proportion, that no man was able to perceive it.

My *Lord* that night being minded to make a collation, I brought to his boord four of the ſaid Boxes, and asked him when I ſet them down, whether I had not looked well unto them? He told me; if the reſt be like unto theſe, he was well contented with them. Whereupon I brought them all before him, and he was very well pleaſed when he ſaw them, becauſe they were much dryer than they were before, and better conditioned. With that I preſently, ſtept aſide, to go fetch a Plate, and on it I brought him all that *I* had ſtolne; for in very deed I had not taſted thereof the quantity of a Nut, having only done it for the oſtentation of my wit.

When he lookt upon it, he ask't me What's this? I told him; *I* now devide with your Lordſhip, part of my theft. He reply'd; I will'd thee, that thou ſhouldſt fill thy ſelf, and not filch. And therefore now you have loſt.

I anſwered, I have neither filled my ſelf with it, nor ſo much as taſted what it is, nor do I think that I have loſt by doing of this; for this is that, wherewith I mean to fill my belly. Beſides, all that was ſtolne out of the Box, is yet whole, and intire, as you may very well perceive; but if, becauſe I have ſhew'd my ſelf honeſt, I muſt ſuffer for it, which way ſhall I walk to go right, if you barre me of the path wherein I ought to tread? My puniſhment does not trouble me; nor does it grieve me that I have loſt, as long as *I* am perſwaded *I* have wonne, howſoever *I* may be over-borne. But *I* will be wiſer the next time, and be ſure to loſe no more upon the like match.

Nay (*Guzmanillo*) be not angry (ſaid my Lord) *I* would not thou ſhouldſt grieve or complaine for this, *I* confeſſe *I* have done thee wrong, and have blamed thee without a cauſe; but *I* pray thee tell me (ſaid he) out of which of all theſe Boxes did'ſt thou take this forth? *I* put forth my hand, and told him; This is it (my Lord) and *I* ſhew'd him how and which way *I* did it.

He was well pleaſed with the ſubtilneſs of my wit, but he could have wiſht that *I* had not had ſo much fineneſs in me, for he was afraid, leſt one time or other, *I* would mis-imploy it to my greater hurt. He willed me to take the Box notwithſtanding for my pains, and to carry it away with me.

Many ſuch things as theſe came from me; and he took pleaſure both in them and me, as being ſleights of the hand, uſing theſe juggling tricks more for ſport than harme. If any of my fellows ſhould chance to fall a ſleep, when he ſhould waite and give attendance, they might the next day go buy them new ſhoes and ſtockings, for Flyes of Wax were ſure to be their Cocks to wake them. Our exerciſe, was every day two hours in the morning, and two in the Evening, to hear our School-maſter reade unto us, of whom *I* learned (for the time that *I* ſtudied there) the Latine tongue, which *I* had reaſonably perfect; *I* had a little Greek too, and ſome Hebrew. The reſt of that vacant time, which we had from ſerving of our Maſter (which was, God knows, very little) we beſtowed in reading of books, telling of tales, and in gaming. If we went forth a doors at any time, it was only to coozen the *Bunne-*

*leros*. and amongſt the Cooks our credit was very good for Pye-meat. We would go a nights to play the wagges with the Curtizans, and to exerciſe our wits upon them, and to ſing ſongs at their doors, and thus did *I* ſpend my time, till my beard began to bud.

And howbeit it may ſeem perhaps to thee, a life of entertainment, and full of mirth, yet it was to me as if *I* had been ty'd to a ſtake, with a collar of iron about my neck, expoſed to ſhame. All this was a ſtinke in my noſe; none of theſe things could content me; night and day *I* did ſigh for the loſſe of my former delights.

But when *I* once began to write Man, and was able to gird a Sword to my ſide, *I* would have been glad of my augmentation of honour, whereby *I* might have gained ſome hope to have proceeded farther. And *I* verily perſwade my ſelf, that if my actions had deſerv'd it, *I* ſhould not have wanted the means.

But in ſtead of getting Judgement, and doing things that were vertuous, for to gaine mens good wills, and thereby to bind them unto me, *I* fell to gaming even to the loſſe of my cloaths from my back; and as *I* was ſomewhat of the freeſt; ſo was *I* too liberall in my play.

*I* made it my ſtudy, to benefit my ſelf by all tricks and cheating devices, that *I* could invent or learne; and eſpecially when *I* plaid at *Primera*. How often when *I* went upon two Cards, would *I* take three, and conveying five now and then into my hand, would ſet up my reſt upon the three beſt? How often would I take the laſt Card, and clapping it underneath, would ſee whether it were good for me or no, and in an inſtant look on the other already ſeen, and then make my beſt advantage of them, which was all one, as if *I* ſhould have robb'd a man upon the high-way? How often would I have a friend ſit by me, which ſhould ſeem as if he were a ſleep, and ſhould ſupply me with Cards under the boord to ſerve my turne? How often had I a Copes-mate that ſtood by looking upon the others games, who would tell me what Cards they went upon, and what their game was? all which he ſignified unto me by ſuch ſecret and cunning figues, that it was impoſſible for them to find it out. How often would I ſo ſet and pack the Cards, that I would deal to him that playd againſt me two and fifty, and having an Ace to help me, would make my ſelf five and fifty, or elſe with a five encounter four and fifty, and ſo either winne the Game by one peepe, or by the elder hand.

Now when we were two againſt one, and plaid bootie, and dealt the Cards one to another, how often taking the diſcarding Card, and clapping it on the top, would we play on till we could make our advantage of it? how by a beck or a nod, did we know how the world went? how to ſhuffle and mixe the Cards ſo, as to make our game ſure? how to ſet ſome privy mark or ſigne upon them; whereby to know them? how to know them by the corners, being bigger or leſſe, and a thouſand the like, which we made good uſe of, either by the help of a ſtander by that ſhared with us, or by corrupting him that ſold the Cards, which are ordinary things? O how many lewd pranks did I play in that kind? how many rogueries? how many villanies? there was not that cheating or coozening trick, which I was not acquainted withall, and had at my fingers ends. And as I was perfect in the knowledge of them, ſo did I put them in practiſe when time ſerved. For ſuch is the blindneſs of play, that thoſe that are crafty and cunning in their gaming, have a large field wherein to expatiate themſelves, and to ſhew their skill.

And if it might be lawfull (I ſay, lawfull) that as in the Common-wealth, houſes of ſinne are permitted, for the avoyding of greater inconveniences; there were appointed in every principall Citie or Town, Maſters of this coozening and cheating Science, of whom, thoſe that are addicted and given to play, might be taught and inſtructed, it were very good for avoyding of deceit, and many a Gentleman would not be ſo eaſily fool'd out of their mony and means, as now they daily are. For our Senſualitie ſuffers it ſelf eaſibly to be overcome by vice, and that is turn'd to an ill habit, and becomes a bad cuſtome in the end, which at firſt was invented for a lawfull exerciſe, and to paſſe away the time. And with reaſon may it be called a bad cuſtome, when it ſhall be diſorderly followed, and that men are too much wedded to gaming, altering the true intent and meaning thereof, and putting it out of its right bias.

Gaming was firſt of all invented for the recreation of mans mind, and for the refreſhing of himſelf, when he found himſelf wearied with the troubles and turmoyles which accompany this life; and when it breaketh this rule, and paſſeth beyond its due bounds, it is wickedneſſe, infamy, and theft. For it ſeldome hapneth, that it is not attended with theſe Attributes.

I ſpeak

I ſpeak of thoſe that are profeſt Gameſters, who make their living of it, as a man would do of an Office or a Trade, and make a continuall practiſe of it. Notwithſtanding, I could heartily wiſh, and it is one of my moſt earneſt deſires, that thoſe would leave it off, and give over this exceſſe of play, which are of the nobler ſort, conſidering the hurt which may inſue thereupon, eſpecially ſeeing that ill is ballanced with good; and that if he win, and the other loſe, he is bound to give the loſer leave to ſpeak: to indure many bold and intemperate actions; to bear with many indiſcreet both words and deeds, and other ſtrange kind of geſtures, and uncivill behaviour, which he is tied to ſuffer, only as he is a winner, not as he is a man of honour, who in things of another nature, will reſent the leaſt wrong that is done unto him. Other things there are of like quality vvith theſe, vvhich I dare not preſume to preſſe any farther, that not only for them, and thoſe already mentioned, they ought to abhorre gaming, but even thoſe houſes and Ordinaries, where play is maintained.

But being that our appetite is ſo unbridled, and our naturall inclination thereunto ſo exorbitant, that it cannot in this kinde altogether contain it ſelfe it ſhall not be amiſs, but rather good and fitting, that a young man ſhould know the lawes of play, learn the skill thereof, and underſtand all the tricks and cheatings that are uſed therein, that he may perceive when he meets with a Cony-catcher. And if ſuch cheating companions once begin to loſe, and that their metal melts away from them, let him pour the reſt of his own moneys into his Boots, Breeches, Hand-wreſt, Collar, Girdle, Boſome, Sleeves, or any other part about him, whether he can cleanlieſt convey it, that he may not loſe his money like a beaſt. For beſides the getting of it from him, they will laugh at him when they have done. One thing I was ever careful to obſerve, I would never ſit down to play with a little money, nor for a little, nor with that man that would not adventure to get much, playing my money freely, without either offering or taking of wrong.

Well, I was ſo wholly given to gaming, and ſpent ſo much time therein, that I committed many faults. Nor is it poſſible, that a Gameſter ſhould perform thoſe duties which belong unto him, much leſs he that ſerves, and is tied to attendance. Neither do I know that Maſter that will give bread to that ſervant that is a Gameſter. For if he manage his maſters affairs, and have either moneys of his in his hands, or other his goods committed to his charge, and that he chance to loſe his own, he will play then upon his Maſters purſe, hoping to recover himſelf; and if peradventure he continue ſtill on the loſing hand, and have not afterwards wherewithal to pay, he runs himſelf into greater danger than before; that thinking luck will turn, and ſo come to relieve his loſſes. But ſay, he is not truſted with any thing of his Maſters, nor hath any thing of his to loſe; yet it is not poſſible that he ſhould aſſiſt at thoſe hours, when he ought to do him ſervice; nor will he be in the way to be found, when need ſhall require, as it happened unto my ſelf.

My Lord was greived thereat to the very ſoul, nothing could prevail with me, neither admonitions, nor perſwaſions, nor words, nor promiſes, to remove this evil cuſtome from me. And being one day (in my abſence) with his houſhold-ſervants about him, he told them, how well he wiſht me, and the great deſire that he had of my good. And ſeeing that I could not be reclaimed by fair means, his purpoſe was by ſome one device or other to bring me to be a reformed man. And the plot was, that by diſcharging me from his ſervice, and putting me out of his houſe for ſome certain dayes; it might be, that calling my lewd courſes to minde, and ſeeing mine own errours in the end, I might come to a truer feeling of my miſery, and by that means be drawn to amendment of life; yet would he not, that my allowance ſhould be taken from me, leſt for want of means, I might through neceſſity be driven to ſome diſhoneſt act or other. O how ſingular a vertue was this in ſo great a Prince! how worthy of eternal praiſe, and how fit to be imitated by all thoſe that deſire to be well and truly ſerved! And certainly, it is impoſſible, but that ſervants (unleſs they be ſuch as I was) would be willing to lay down a thouſand lives (if they were Maſters of ſo many) to give but any the leaſt content to ſuch kinde loving Maſters.

Well, I was driven by this means to my ſhifts, and wanted meat to put in my mouth. O Lord, let it ever be in my *Letany*, that thou wilt deliver me from this evil. Other wants have ſome trouble with them: but when a man hath a good ſtomack, and wanteth meat, is extream hungry, and hath not wherewithall to fill his Maw; to ſee the hour of eating come, and he to remain faſting; to paſs over the day from morning to night, and not to finde whereon to feed; theſe (I ſay) are ſuch things as would make a man do any thing, be it never ſo diſhoneſt; Cloaks, Hats, and all walk then, (though it be but for half they are worth) what ſhift ſoever we make to come by other.

This

This misery befel me, and that in a very troublesome time: for having spent a whole day and night in play, and having lost all the money that I had; and when that was gone, all my cloathes, having nothing left me to cover my nakedness, but a poor thin Doublet, and a pair of white linnen Drawers; when I saw my self in this poor taking, I retired my self into my Chamber, not daring for shame to come abroad.

And albeit I would willingly have fain'd my self sick, I could not do it; for my Lord was so careful of his servants health, and that they should have all things necessary and fitting for them, that he would presently have sent for Physicians to see what I ailed. Besides I saw it was a needless remedy to use any such dissimulation; for by this time it had past from mouth to mouth, how, and in what case I was, and what was the cause of my grief.

Now, though that I had been wanting so many dayes from the service of his table, yet would he still ask and inquire, what was become of me, and where *I* was, that I did not wait? He could not indure Ale-carriers, nor such as would complain of their fellows, and make things worse than indeed they were, by mis-reporting of them; he did hate it to the death, to have his house like your Lawyers Courts, full of clamours and untruths; and therefore that they might not grieve or disquiet him, they would mildly tell him: He is here (Sir) about the house, I saw him but now, or some such like excusive answer. But this would not serve the turn. For now he began shrewdly to suspect, lest some misfortune had befalne me. And therefore pressing them hard to acquaint him where I was, and how I spent my time, they were forced (for the giving of his *Lordship* satisfaction) to deliver unto him the truth of the business.

This evil inclination of mine did much afflict his *Lordship*, when he saw how dissolutely, without fear or shame, I proceeded on in my lewd courses. Whereupon to put his former project in practice, he gave order that I should have some new cloaths made me, and that then they should presently dismis me, and rid me out of both his house and service, accordingly as he had formerly ordered the business.

So his Steward cloathed me, and then turned me out of doors. Which I took in that foul scorn (holding it as a due debt, that my Master was still bound to keep and maintain me, and to bear with all faults) that in a kinde of sullen and dogged fashion, (shewing more stomack than wit) I left the house, with a resolution (come what would come) never to return thither again, of all other places in the world; notwithstanding that I had received many messages from the Gardinal at sundry times, and by several messengers, with many goodly offers and fair promises, delivering unto me the end why all this was done, and that there was no other drift in it in the world, save only what should make for mine own good; thinking by this means, when I had champt a little upon the bit, and tasted what hardness was, and known the loss of so good a Master, I would have reform'd my manners, reclaim'd my self from lewd courses, and proved afterwards a better servant than ever I had been before. They also signified unto me, how much his *Lordship* loved me, and what he had spoken of me in my absence. But all would not do; they could never get me back again. For I was stiff and obstinate, and too foolishly self-will'd; thinking that I should revenge my self in so doing; and so as I might spight them, I did not care how I sped my self I brew'd ill, and bak'd worse; *I* began in pride, and ended in folly. And what could follow thereupon, but my misery and ruine, seeing that I was unthankful for those favours and benefits which God had been pleased to bestow upon me by the hands of that good and holy man my Master, who had justly given me my doom, and pronounced this sentence of expulsion against me. For he that cannot be won with good works, nor moved with fair and gentle words, it is pity but he should smart for it; and that rigour and chastizement should work that upon him, which rewards and fair usage were not able to effect. I had now quite lost those little wits that I had, making little or no account of all these things, as if I had wanted nothing. How did I scorn and contemn those many good things that were done for me, without any why or wherefore, being things beyond the reach of my capacity; unbefitting my service, and altogether unworthy of me, by reason of my unthankfulness? How unwise was I in conserving that present good, and in seeking to increase the hope of farther favours, which undoubtedly I should have futurely received, if *I* had but endeavoured to deserve them? Hovv forgetful vvas I of that kindness, vvherevvith *I* had been cured? Hovv unmindful of that care, that vvas taken about me? Hovv ungrateful to that charity vvhich vvas used tovvards me? Hovv careless of that diligence, vvherevvith I vvas taught? Hovv stubbornly proud against that mildness, vvherevvith I vvas admonished? Hovv perverse against those svveet vvords, vvherevvith I was persvvaded? Hovv deaf against

grave

thoſe grave, yet loving tearms, wherewith I was reprehended? How ſurly againſt that patience, by which I was ſupported? How incorrigible againſt that favour, by which I was defended? How rebellious againſt thoſe means, which were ſought for my good? How uncapable of that good uſage, wherewith I was treated? How neglectfull in amending thoſe faults, which for my ſake were ſo kindely diſſembled? If any of thoſe two, that took me for their Son had been alive; nay, if they were both now abiding here upon earth, and might return to their former proſperity, they could not have done more for me, or with more love, or would have born half ſo much with my ſo many, and prejudicial knaviſh pranks, which I did ſo dayly, and ſo diſorderly play, and with that liberty and freeneſſe, as if I had not been in my Lords, or in my Fathers houſe, but in mine own. I was more bold in his preſence, than I ſhould have been amongſt my equals, and he, imitating God in the ſweetneſſe of his diſpoſition, had the patience to bear with me.

Certain I am, that he that begat me, would have abandoned and abhorred me, ſo weary would he have grown of my ill goverment. But my Lord was ſo good a man, that he was never weary of me, never angry, never offended with me, and would not have caſt me off (had not I caſt off my ſelf) becauſe he loved me.

O the Noble and Princely condition of this worthy Prelate, given him by inheritance from the true Father of love and goodneſſe, that he could be ſo kinde-hearted, in doing ſtill more and more good to ſuch a one as I was! He looked ſtill when *I* ſhould return unto him, he tarried for me, a day, a week, a moneth, a year; nay, many years; in all which time, he was not wanting to exerciſe his works of mercy towards me to the end, that he might leave me without excuſe: And that touch't at laſt with ſhame of mine own folly, *I* might pronounce that ſentence againſt my ſelf, which the heynouſneſſe of mine offences had deſerved.

But *I*, for all this followed mine own humour, which was the rule by which *I* directed all my actions: To all that was ſaid unto me, *I* put on Merchants ears, was ſtill deaf to all good counſel, appealing from good advice to mine own fleſh, which being ready ſtill at hand in favour of my Vices, *I* did utterly undoe my ſelf, by following of her ill counſel. For to execute her ſuggeſtions, *I* had force enough: to ſeek out occaſion of ſin, ability ſufficient: to perſevere in them, an untired conſtancie: and in not leaving them, a firmneſſe not to be removed. *I* was as well acquainted with all manner of vice, as *I* was a ſtranger to all kinde of virtue. And to lay the fault upon Nature, *I* have no reaſon for it in the world. For *I* had no leſſe ability for good, than inclination to evil The fault was mine own; for ſhe never did any thing out of reaſon. She was alwayes the Miſtreſſe of truth and modeſty; ſhe was never defective in what was fitting, but as ſhe hath been corrupted through ſin; and mine were ſo many, that I produced the cauſe of this bad effect, and and became mine own hangman.

## Chap. X.

Guzman de Alfarache *diſcourſeth of ill company; of Hoſpitality, of Patience; And how being put out of the Cardinals houſe, he placed himſelf with the Embaſſadour of* France, *where he played ſome knaviſh pranks. He relates a Story, which he heard from a Gentleman of* Naples. *And ending with that, he gives an end to the firſt part of his life.*



I Could not (as I told you before) juſtly complain; or finde fault with any body but my ſelf, that my Lord had thus diſmiſt me, and turn'd me out of his ſervice. For the very truth was, he made earneſt ſuite (through the importunity of his ſervants, who were very inſtant with me) to have me to come back again unto him; but becauſe my bloud (whoſe heat was not yet allay'd) ſtill boyled in my breaſt, and was not come to it's wonted coolneſſe, I did ill conſider mine own good: or ſhould rather have that I did well, ill, in not conſidering my ill, well.

Being thus diſcarded, I wandred up and down at mine own pleaſure, (as my fancy did lead me) through the ſtreets of *Rome*. And becauſe in my proſperity, I had purchaſed ſome friends of mine own profeſſion, they ſeeing me un-provided for, and that I went up and down like a Maſterleſſe-hound, here one would invite me, and there another, howbeit it coſt me dear; for that meal that is made in ill company, though it give nouriſhment to the body, yet it filleth the Soul with ill humours, to it's utter overthrow and deſtruction. Nor did thoſe good morſels ſo well ſatisfie hunger, as their ill counſel and lewd converſation did

undoe me; whereof nothing now remaineth, but repentance. For I began then, (and never till then) to know in what danger I was, when I ſaw the water was come up to my chin, and ready to run into my mouth.

Vices, come ſtealing in upon a man, they enter with ſilence, they are a ſmooth ſtill File, that cuts without any noiſe; they are not heard, till they have wrought mans ruine. They are as eaſie to be received, as they are hard to be rejected.

And ſuch kinde of friends as theſe, are thoſe Bellows, which kindle that flame, which ſets the whole Soul on fire, and with a little ſpark raiſeth a great blaze. I might very well have recovered my allowance, and had meat of mine own to put in my mouth; for the Steward told me, that my Lord had given him order, that I ſhould dayly come and fetch it, or ſend for it, as I would my ſelf. But I was ſo obſtinate, that I would none of it. For I was ſo lewdly given, that *I* had rather indure hunger with ill company, than feed upon the beſt meat with honeſt and civil people. But they quickly paid me home, who firſt gave counſel to refuſe my boord-wages, as *I* did, relying upon them and their advice; for they were ſoon weary of helping me any longer, and they did not onely not relieve me, but becauſe they would not do it, they did ſhun and avoid me. So that *I* might ſtarve for any ſuccour that *I* was to look for from them.

This ſame thing called Hoſpitality, and entertaining of friends and gueſts carries a kinde of myſtery with it; *I* evermore found in his mouth that inviteth, Honey, but in his hand, Gall; they promiſe liberally, but give ſparingly; they bid with joy, but eat with ſorrow. He that will be another mans gueſt, muſt be content to be ordered, as he will have him; beſides, he muſt be rich and well to paſſe, otherwiſe he ſhall not be welcome; he muſt not tread many ſteps in the houſe, his breech muſt ſcarce vvarm his Chair, nor muſt he ſit long at boord, for fear of being too troubleſom. Do not flatter thy ſelf, that thou art liberally and freely vvelcom, becauſe a man gives thee good vvords, and ſpeaks kindly and lovingly unto thee, and tells thee thou art heartily vvelcom. For *I* have ever obſerved, it as a true rule amongſt other the *Laws of Hoſpitality*, that a man may dyet vvith his kinſman a ſeven-night, vvith his elder brother a moneth, vvith his friend a year, and with a bad father all his life-time.

The Father onely is not weary perhaps of entertaining his Son, but all the reſt take diſlike, if not a loathing of his company. If thou ſhalt ſtay vvith them beyond that time, they vvill hate thee to the death, and pick one quarrel, or other againſt thee; and if that vvill not ſerve the turn to ſet thee packing, they vvill put crooked pins in thy bread, or lay baits to poyſon thee, that they may once be rid of thee.

But admit, that thou art invited by a married man, and that his wife be cloſe-fiſted, a very Crib, her wealth her own, and ſhe ſomewhat proud and ſcornfull, ſay, ſhe be thy Mother, or thy Siſter; in fine, ſhe is a woman, who for the moſt part are all of them greedy and covetous, ſo that they will whine for anger to ſee thee there, look ſcurvily upon thee, grudge thee thy meat; chaſe with her husband for bringing thee thither, curſe both him and thee, and wiſh you both choak't; better is a hard cruſt in thine own houſe, than a cram'd Capon in another mans. It is a miſerable thing to ſet thy foot under another mans Table.

My friends growing now weary of me, I needed not out of ſhame to leave them; for they had already caſt me off, ſtreightning more and more their hand towards me, who were ſo far from giving me any thing, that now they could ſhamefully deny me without bluſhing. They needed no mask nor diſguiſe to diſſemble the buſineſſe. They could boldly bid me, Go by. I was therefore driven to ſeek out ſome Wall, where againſt to lean, and betake my ſelf to ſome Tree for ſhelter, under whoſe ſhadow I might quietly take my feeding. For I was now in that extream want, that like the Prodigal Son, I would willingly have turned home, and been content with all my heart to be one of the meaneſt mercinary ſervants in my Lords houſe. But ſuch was my miſ-fortune, that he was now dead and gone.

Beaten with the rod of affliction; I began to be humbled, and was fully reſolved to turn over a new leaf, and betake my ſelf to a better courſe of life: but it was all too late, I came a day after the fair; And fit it is, that he that will not when he may, when he would, he ſhould have nay.

And it ſtands with very good reaſon, *Que pierda poder mal querer, el bien poder.* That through the badneſſe of will, we ſhould loſe the goodneſſe of power. There went the diſtance of ſome two moneths between my good and bad fortune. And if I had been a ſtay'd, and well govern'd youth, as I had a running head, and a giddy brain, the leaſt good that could have befaln me, would have been (though the meaneſt of his ſervants) an honeſt

provi-

proviſion during my life, and might have run the venture of ſome better fortune. But ſeeing it fell out as it did, yet muſt we thank God as well for the bad, as the good. I cannot ſay that my malignant Star was the cauſe thereof, but that mine own evil inclination was the worker of my woe; For the Stars, *non compellunt ſed inclinant*, they incline, but not conſtrain: They make men apt, but they do not coact. Some ignorant fooles ſtick not to ſay; O Sir, Deſtiny is not to be avoided. That which ſhall be. And it is in vain to ſtrive againſt it. I tell thee (my friend) it is a vain thing to ſay ſo; and thou doeſt not underſtand the truth thereof aright; for there is no neceſſity, that it is, or ſhould be ſo; it is thou thy ſelf, that makeſt it ſo to be.

In theſe Moral and outward things, thou haſt a kinde of free-will conferred upon thee, whereby thou mayeſt (if thou wilt) govern both thy ſelf, and thy actions. Thy Star cannot conſtrain thee, nor all the Heavens joyned together with all the force and power that they have, cannot compell thee againſt thy will.

It is thou that forceſt thy ſelf to leave what is good, and to apply thy ſelf to that which is evil, following thy diſhoneſt deſires, whence theſe thy croſſes and calamities come upon thee.

I was now entered into the ſervice of the French Ambaſſadour, with whom my Lord (who is now in glory) held ſtrict amity; who in his life-time took likewiſe great pleaſure in my witty jeſts, and merry conceits. He would fain have had me ſerve him before, but he was loath to entertain me, leſt it might be taken unkindly to receive another mans ſervant, conſidering the good love and friendſhip that was between them.

Well, I was now with him, and he uſed me well, but with a different end. For my Lord directed his actions to the profit, and benefit of my perſon, but he onely for his own private ends, and the pleaſure which he took in my jerks of wit, the merry tales that I would tell him, and the pleaſing meſſages that I ſhould bring him now and then, from thoſe his Ladies and Miſtreſſes to whom he made love. He did ſettle me in no ſet place, or Office about him; I was his ſervant at large; and he as largely paid me. For either he would give me my payment himſelf, or elſe I my ſelf would take it in his preſence with ſome pleaſant jeſt, or other; or to ſpeak more plainly, I was his chief Minion and Favourite, though it pleaſed ſome to call me his Buffone and Jeſter.

When we had any Gueſts (as we ſeldom, or never wanted) we were very complemental with them, and waited punctually upon them, our eyes ſtill attending on theirs: but if they were either impudent, fooliſh, or troubleſom Gueſts, which came thither unbidden, upon ſuch as theſe we would put a thouſand jeſts. Some we would make to ſit all Dinner-time without drink, that you would have thought, that they had been ſo many Melons ſowne in a dry ground; to others we would give very little, and that in pinching Glaſſes; ſome had their vvine over-watered, other-ſome over-warm without any ſnow. When they were ready to eat their meat, we would take away their Plate from them, & ſet ſome ſalt meats before them, ill ſeaſoned, with a little Oyl that was none of the beſt. We would dayly invent new devices, to abuſe their palates, that they might take diſlike, and come there no more.

It hapned once upon a time, that an Engliſh-man claiming kindred of the Ambaſſadour, and it being a common cuſtom with him, to come dayly to our houſe, my Maſter grew weary of him; for (beſides that he was not his kinſman) he was neither Noble in his bloud, nor indued with good qualities, and above all, in his converſation full of impertinencies, that it was a kinde of captivity, to keep converſation with him.

There are certain kinde of men, that a mans heart will riſe againſt them, and grow into a diſlike of them, though he never ſaw them before. And again, there are another ſort of men, that will ſteal thereinto, and thruſt themſelves into our affection, and good liking, upon the firſt ſight, winning our good will from us, and procuring our beſt wiſhes; this, either hatred, or love, not being in the hands of the one, or the power of the other. But this was a meer lump of lead, a man of no metall in the vvorld, a dull and heavy piece of fleſh; in a word, a meer block-head.

One night when they were newly ſet to Supper, he began to lay open his vanity, with telling a thouſand lyes one upon the neck of another, wherewith the Ambaſſadour was much offended, and not being able to ſuffer ſuch an one to go on in their fooleries, he ſpake to me in Spaniſh, (which the other underſtood not) and ſaid unto me. I would I could be rid once of this fool; for I am as weary of him, as ever I can be. He did not ſpeak this to a Dolt, or an Aſſe: I had his meaning in the wind. Whereupon I took my friend to task; I followed him with ſalt-meats, that were ſmart and ſharp, and left behinde them a kinde of tart-

neſſe, or tang upon the tongue; wherewith being bitten, he call'd for his coolers, which he took almoſt faſter than I could fill them.

The Wine that he gulped down, was the gulf that ſwallowed him up. The glaſſe was great, his draught anſwerable, and thoſe often, and this powder took ſo well, that at laſt he was powdred with a witneſſe, and quite blown up.

When I ſaw he had yielded himſelf priſoner to his pots, and that he was above one and thirty, being many peeps out, I took off one of my Garters, and knit a ſliding knot upon the inſtep of one of his feet, and faſtned it unto the ſtool whereon he ſate. And when the Table was taken away, and that he offered to riſe to take his leave, and to go home to his lodging, he was no ſooner riſen from his ſeat, but that he fell all along on the floor, his mouth, his teeth, and his noſe being ſhrewdly hurt, the bloud guſhing out again. So that when he was come to himſelf the next day, and ſaw in what ill caſe he was, and how his face was battred with the fall, for very ſhame he would never more come near the houſe.

This buſineſſe was well carried, for it ſucceeded even as I would have it.

But all darts do not hit right, nor all angle-rods ſtrike ſure. There are ſome fiſhes that bite and carry away the bait with them, leaving the Angler deluded, and the hook empty, as it hapned unto me with a Spaniſh Souldier, that was longer than the mark.

O the whoreſon Traytor, how crafty and ſubtill a Rogue he was! How full of his cunning ſhifts! Hearken well, I pray, unto that which paſſed between us.

This wily raſcal came into the houſe about noon, when the Ambaſſadour was ready to ſit down to Dinner, and coming unto him, he told his Lordſhip that he was a Souldier, and born in *Cordova*, and a principal Gentleman of that place, though now he were in want, and therefore beſought him that he would favour him ſo far forth, as that he might taſte of his bounty. The Ambaſſadour took out a little purſe, wherein were ſome Crowns, and without offering to open it, he gave him both the purſe and the Gold that was within it, becauſe he ſeemed to be the ſame, he had expreſt himſelf to be.

But not contenting himſelf with this, he continued ſtill with him, recounting what he was, and the ſervices wherein he had been. And ſo running on from one thing to another, the Ambaſſadour ſetting himſelf down to Dinner, he makes me no more adoe, but doth the like. And pulling a ſtool to him, ſets himſelf cheek by jole with his Lordſhip.

I was then gone to fetch in meat, when lo, by the way, I might perceive two other Jer-Falcons like the former, which were newly entred within the Court; and when they underſtood, that this other was at Dinner with my Lord, the one ſaid to the other; As I am a true Souldier, either the Devil, or ſin hath clapt gyves upon our legs; for this cheating Raſcall ſtill gets the ſtart of us, and wins all that he playes for by the elder hand.

When I heard them thus mutter and maunder againſt him, I came unto them, and asked them; whether they knew that Gentleman within, or no? One of them told me, I know that Tavern-hunter, whoſe Father hath many a time and oft pull'd on my Buskins in *Cordova*, where he keeps ſhop under the wall of the great Church.

This is our unhappineſſe, that if ſome twenty Gentlemen of us go for *Italy*, there return an hundred ſuch infamous fellows as this is, that will equal themſelves with the beſt, and boaſt themſelves to be deſcended of the ancient *Gothes*: and when they come where they are not known, they think that with the gumming of *Mouchatos*, and making them bear up as ſtiffe as if they were ſtarcht, and with the wagging of three, or four feathers in their Hat, they are grown into nobleneſſe of bloud, and purchaſed the name of valour, being no better than notorious Cowards. For it is not feathers, and ſtarcht-beards that fight it out in the field, but ſtout hearts, and men of ſtiffe courage. Come, let us go, I will make this effeminate Raſcall, the next time I meet with him, leave off coming into our Quarter, and file himſelf in ſome other rank.

With that they went their wayes, whil'ſt I went conſidering with my ſelf what kinde of Cattel theſe three were, that thus ſought to grace and ſet forth themſelves.

But I was ſomewhat angry at thoſe other two, taking them to be but *Braggadoccios*, and meer puffs, as well for the vaunt they made of themſelves, as for the ill language they uſed, in defaming him, who ſought to honour himſelf, without any coſt, or prejudice to others.

I was likewiſe not a little moved againſt this new-come gueſt for his bold and inſolent carriage, who might very well have contented himſelf with that which was given him, and ſo gone his wayes, without being ſo impudent to ſit down at Table in that ſwaggering and uncivil faſhion; I had a moneths minde to be at him, I long'd to break one jeſt, or other upon him,

him, and ſo put it ſo home, that he ſhould not be able to avoid it; but thinking to go forth to fetch wood, I was forced to come back with my fleece ſhorn, failing very much in this my intent and purpoſe. He intreated me to give him ſome drink. I made as if I did not underſtand him. He beckned unto me with his hand. I drew nearer unto him. He made me a third ſign. I turn'd mine eyes another way, looking very demurely, and carrying with me a ſober and compoſed countenance, (though I had much ado to forbear laughing.) He looking well upon me, and perceiving that I either plaid the fool, or the knave with him, he would not ſpeak, or beckon any more unto me, but turning himſelf towards the Ambaſſadour, he thus ſaid unto him:

Sir, I beſeech your Lordſhip, that you vvould not think it over-boldneſſe, or too much preſumption in me, that I have offered (though unbidden) to ſit at your Lordſhips Table, in regard of thoſe many excuſes which I can render to your Lordſhip, which may (if I have offended therein, and broken the rule of good manners) plead ſomewhat in my favour.

Firſt, the quality of my perſon, and the nobleneſſe of my Houſe, doth deſerve any common, or ordinary courteſie.

Secondly, my being a Souldier, makes me worthy of any Princes Table whatſoever, becauſe I have purchaſed that honour by my ſword and profeſſion.

And laſtly, I may add thereunto the neceſſity I now am in, which is common to all, and may befall any man, as well as my ſelf.

And I preſume that your Lordſhip keeps this ſo free and honourable a Table for to relieve ſuch as my ſelf; and therefore conceive, that your Lordſhip holds it not neceſſary, that ſuch Souldiers as my ſelf, having any worth, or good parts in them, ſhould expect to be invited to your boord.

And therefore I ſhall deſire your Lordſhip to be pleaſed to command one of your ſervants to give me ſome drink; for being a Spaniard, I perceive they do not underſtand me, though I have often called for it.

My Lord thereupon commanded us to give him drink, ſo that I could not otherwiſe chuſe but do as I was bid; yet I would have ſworn, he ſhould not have thus gone away with the Bucklers.

Well, I brought him drink, but in ſo poor and penurious a glaſſe, and mixed ſo much vvater vvith his Wine, that I left him in a manner as drie as he vvas before. But becauſe a little vvill ſerve a Spaniards turn, and that they are inured to ſuffer ſuch hunger and thirſt, vvith that little pittance, vvhich vvas rather a drop than a draught, he paſſed therewith as vvell as he could, till Dinner vvas done.

We that vvere Pages, having conſpired altogether, not to look him any more in the face vvhile he vvas eating, leſt he ſhould ſpeak again unto us by ſigns, to give him more drink, and ſo binde us to bring it unto him. But he was an old beaten Souldier, and knew well how to uſe the Weapon of his wit, and being too hard for us, did likewiſe beat us from this ward, which we thought had been too ſure an one, to be put from. For when he had fill'd his belly, and well ſatisfied himſelf, and that the laſt courſe was ſerved in. And your Lordſhip will give me leave (quoth he) I will now go drink. And ſo riſing up from boord, removing his ſtool from him, he went to the Court-Cupboord, and taking from thence the biggeſt glaſſe that was there, he pour'd forth as much Wine and water as himſelf thought fit; and having quenched his thirſt, putting off his hat, and making a legge to his Lordſhip, got him out of the room, and ſo went away without ſpeaking any one word, or other. My Lord was ready to burſt with laughing, to ſee how he had put me beſide my trick; and after that he had wondred a while at the reſolution and boldneſſe of this fellow, he ſaid unto me; *Guzmanillo*, this Souldier favours ſomewhat of thee, and thy Countrey, where all is carried away with *Bravado's*, and an impudent kinde of behaviour.

Now whileſt we were talking at Table of the liberty and free kinde of carriage, which the Spaniards aſſume unto themſelves, there was newly come into the houſe a Gentleman of *Naples*, who had no ſooner ſaluted my Lord, but he told him, that he was purpoſely come unto his Lordſhip to acquaint him with one of the cruelleſt, and ſtrangeſt accidents, that hath hapned in theſe our times, which now very lately fell out in *Rome*.

The Ambaſſadour intreated him to relate it unto him; And that I might the better hear it, I did deferre taking away, and brought in a Chair, wherein, when he was ſet, he thus began to ſpeak.

In this Citie, there dwelt a young Gentleman of the age of twenty, or one and twenty

years, more noble in blood, than rich in wealth. He had a goodly preſence; he was vertuous, able, active, and in his own perſon very valiant. This Gentleman fell into love with a Damſel, a young Gentlewoman here in *Rome*, about the age of ſeventeen; being wonderful both fair and honeſt; they were both equal in ſtate and condition, but more in their good will and love to each other. For if the one did love, the other did burn. His name was *Dorido*, hers *Clorinia*. Her parents bred her up ſo retiredly, that they did not ſuffer her to treat or converſe with any, from whence any danger might ariſe unto her; neither did ſhe ſo much as ſhew her ſelf at the window, and did ſeldome look out, unleſs it were by chance. For ſuch was the exceſs of her beauty, that it was able to be a Loadſtone, to draw all the youthful Nobility of *Rome* to deſire her love. Her Parents, and one onely brother that ſhe had were very jealous of her honour; inſomuch, that theſe two Lovers could not enjoy each other as they would.

True it is, that *Clorinia*, as one that was truly in love, could by no means be hindred from ſhewing her ſelf to *Dorido*, as often as he paſt that way. For neer adjoyning to her own window, there was another of a friend of hers; who (for that ſhe was married) might with more liberty ſtand there, when ſhe was diſpoſed ſo to do. And for that ſhe had acquainted her with her love, as often as *Dorido* paſt that way, ſhe would give her ſome ſigne or token thorow a little hole, that they had made of purpoſe in a partition wall that was between them, whereupon ſhe would preſently make haſt to the window to ſee him; and ſo received from her Lover that ſhort, yet full content, which the covetouſneſs and ſtrictneſs of thoſe times could afford.

This continued thus a good while, for other comfort had they none, than what they took in this fugitive pleaſure, ſeeing each other onely *in tranſitu*, as he paſt along the ſtreet; which (like a ſhadow) was as ſoon gone as ſeen. But *Dorido*, impatient of this poor content, and deſirous to improve theſe favours he received from her, ſought means, how he might with more convenience enjoy ſo ſweet a ſight, ſeeing he might not be permitted to proceed any further. Whereupon he began to enter into a ſtrict league of amity with her brother, whoſe name was *Valerio*; into whoſe friendſhip he had wrought himſelf with that faſtneſs and fervour, that *Valerio* could not live without *Dorido*. Which was an occaſion that moved him many times to carry him home with him to his houſe, wiſhing him to be Maſter thereof, and to make as bold therewith (if he wanted any thing) as if it were his own, and to command it with the ſame freeneſs. So that by this means, he had both liberty and leaſure to contemplate the divine beauty of his deareſt Love.

With theſe baits, their loves were led along, gaining ſtill more ground, and gathering more ſtrength unto them, manifeſting more and more their loves, by their looks. But *Clorinia* being the weaker of the two, and peradventure more inflamed, opened her minde to a maid of hers, called *Scintila*; who deſirous to do her Miſtreſſe ſervice, went to ſeek out *Dorido*, whom when ſhe had met with, ſhe ſaid thus unto him:

*Dorido*, it is bootleſs to diſſemble the buſineſs any longer, it is now no time to hide thy ſelf from me, for it is not unknown unto me, what good liking there is betwixt you and my Miſtreſs, and what good love ye make each to other: And that you may ſee, that *I* do not go about to deceive you, my Miſtreſs her ſelf hath revealed ſo much unto me, intreating me, that *I* would be a means to lay open her heart unto you, and to ſignifie unto you, how much ſhe loves you: and for farther declaration thereof, hath by me ſent you this green ſilk Riband, as a hopeful token, deſiring you for her ſake, that you will honour her ſo much, as to wear it about your arm. *I* aſſure my ſelf, you are perſwaded, that it comes recommended unto you from her own hand, for that your ſelf have ſeen it many a time hang in the dreſſing of her hair. So that from hence-forward you may reſt confident of my faithfulneſs towards you, ſo great is the deſire that *I* have to do you ſervice.

When *Dorido* heard this, it ſtrook amazement into him, neither did he ſeem to like well of it, for that he had never any great good conceit of this Wench, as being jealous of her diſcretion, not holding her to be a fit inſtrument for a buſineſs of that great truſt and conſequence as this was; fearing leſt their loves might, through her weakneſs, come to be diſcovered: But ſeeing there was no other remedy, and that it was *Clorinia*'s own Act, and none of his, he diſſembleth his diſlike, and in the beſt manner that he could, made ſhew unto her, in how much he did eſteem this her love and ſervice; and how ready he would be upon all occaſions, to deſerve this her free and voluntary offer.

Some few dayes being paſt, and *Dorido*'s deſire increaſing to ſpeak face to face with his Miſtreſs, and finding no means how to do it, Love, that can overcome all difficulties; and

make

make those things facile, that seem almost impossible, opened a way thereunto: shewing the means unto him, whereby he might come to compass his desire. There was fastened to the Wall of that house where *Clorinia* dwelt (which butted on the open street) a piece of an old wall, whereof the one half was fain down, and run into decay, being scarce so high, as to reach up to the window belonging to the house; and a little beneath that, was a hole stopt up with a moveable stone that might be taken out and put in again at pleasure. This did serve *Clorinia* sometimes instead of a Lattice, viewing thorow it (without being seen) those that did pass to and fro in the street.

This was well known to *Dorido*, for that he had often seen his Mistress peeping out at that hole. This opportunity seemed to be favourable to his desire; whereupon he brake with *Scintila*, and intreated her, that she would stand his friend, telling her: Since (*Scintila*) my good fortune hath been such, that I have found you well affected to our *Loves*, and willing to pleasure me all that you can, and to afford me your best furtherance therein, I will not refuse to put my self into your hands, assuring my self, that you will always, and in all things have that care, which the love you bear to your Mistress, and the desire you have to do me any courtesie, doth oblige you unto. You know, that since the time that I surrendred up my soul to *Clorinia*, and put her into the possession of my heart, making her the true Lord and Owner both of it, and of my life, I have got no other thing thereby, save a correspondency of affection, expressed onely by looks, having as yet no other interpreters of our mindes, but the eyes, and all for lack of better commodity, and more fit and convenient means. Which the more I am debarr'd of, the more it augmenteth my desire. For evermore privation ingendreth appetite.

Now there is a thing come into my head, how by your good help, my desire may rest honestly satisfied. You cannot but know the hole that is underneath the window; this must be the place, and thou the Instrument of my good fortune. Thou shalt speak unto *Clorinia*, (intreating her, as from me) that she will be pleased to correspond with me in this my just request; and in case she should refuse, as not daring out of fear to venture so far, thou mayest then labour to perswade with her, and to guide and rule her will, to be brought to yield to this so easie a condition; and that this night, seeing that the darkness thereof is so much our friend, when all the people of the house shall be a-bed and asleep, she will be pleased but to speak with me at that hole. As for any other thing, I neither intreat it, nor pretend it.

This suit seemed to *Scintila*, very easie, and without any danger in the world; she puts him in good hope, promises him to sollicite it, till she had effected it; she complied with her obligation, and pointed him the hour when he should come, giving him a certain sign, what he should do when he came to the window.

*Dorido*, when night was come, disguising himself, went to the place appointed, where he stood waiting for a good occasion.

When all those of the house were sure and safe enough, as sleep could make them, *Scintila* went to the window, and opened it, taking occasion to throw out a little water; which being seen by *Dorido*, who had got upon the wall, standing there to wait a good hour, and knowing that it was *Scintila*, he said softly unto her, Here I am. She willed him to stay a while, and shutting the window, in she goes.

*Dorido*'s heart in the mean while fell a leaping in his bosome, beating and thumping thereat, as if it had sought to get out, being ready to burst with desire, inflamed with the fire of love, fearful of the various success of things, lest some cross accident might interpose it self betwixt him and this his glory, whereunto he was now so neer, studying with himself what words he were best to use unto her, and in what kinde of phrase he should begin his Courtship. His thoughts ranne thorow a thousand several things, and his eyes were never off from that hole, looking as far there into, as that ill placed stone would permit him.

He might one while hear *Clorinia* talking with *Scintila*; another while with her father and mother; now perceive how she rose from the place where she sate, and by and by again past to and fro, one while to this, another to that side of the house, till that (her parents being a-bed) I saw her approaching to the place appointed, whither she came so troubled (such a conflict was there betwixt Love and Shame; Modesty and Affection) that she was about to go back. But inforced thereunto by *Scintila*, at last she came.

Now, when they were come to this interview, and saw themselves thus happily met together,

together, *Dorido* was ſo tranſported therewith, that although he had premeditated before-hand what he would ſay unto her, he was ſtrucken quite dumb, and had not a word to ſay. And ſhe no leſs trembling, not having any by in that conjecture, which might give breath either to the one or the other, to bring them to pronounce but ſo much as one word either good, or bad; at laſt by little und little, when their frozen tongues had recovered a little warmth, they made a ſhift to exchange ſome few words on both ſides, where-with they ſaluted each other.

*Dorido* intreated her hand, and ſhe willingly gave it him; he took it, and kiſt it again and again, bleſſing and ſtroking his face therewith, never ſuffering it to depart from his mouth. After he had thus taken his pleaſure of her fair hand, he ſtretched forth his to her, pleaſing his touch with the delicate ſoftneſs of her beautiful countenance, unable to injoy any other pleaſure, nor could that place and time afford him any further content.

In this ſweet exchange of mutual love they entertained themſelves a great while. And while their hands did ſpeak, themſelves were ſilent. For the talk of the one did hinder the ſpeech of the other. And becauſe *Scintila* made haſt to part them, for fear of being diſcovered, if they ſhould dwell any longer upon theſe complemental kindneſſes, *Dorido* with many intreatings of his love, took leave of his *Clorinia*, intreating her, that the next night following, at the ſame hour, and the ſame place he might enjoy the ſame *Regalo*, and ſweet comfort again. She promiſed him he ſhould. And ſo for that time they took leave of each other, both of them remaining wonderful well contented. But much more he, who was ready to leap out of his skin for joy. And wiſhing that night and the next day would poſt away apace, he went home to his lodging.

Where offering to ſit down, he could not reſt himſelf there; and ſeeking to eaſe himſelf by riſing up, he fought ſome place where-againſt to lean; and when there likewiſe he could not be at quiet, he romed up and down the room, walking to and fro on the unſteddy legs of *Diſ-reſt* and *Deſire*; ſo that nothing could give him eaſe and content.

Thus did he ſuffer, and thus wear out that wearieſome time, till the night following, and the time appointed, whoſe minutes he meaſured out by thoſe glaſſes, which diſtinguiſh the houres, giving himſelf over to this idle curioſity.

The hour being come, he went to the place appointed, expecting when the ſigne ſhould be given; he had placed himſelf in the hollow nook of an old gate, which joyned to the wall neer unto the window; and being about to get up to the hole, he ſaw two Gallants paſs by, which were in love with a couple of Gentlewomen in the ſame ſtreet, who walked there up and down, giving many a turn to and fro, waiting when the ſtreet ſhould be clear, that they might make benefit of the like occaſion. They were *Dorido*'s very good friends, and were not ignorant that he was inamoured of *Clorinia*. They were well acquainted the one with the other. But becauſe *Dorido* was ſomewhat more reſerved in the love that he made to *Clorinia*, he would not diſcover himſelf unto them, for fear of giving ſuſpition of that, which he was not yet Maſter of. And therefore, whileſt they continued walking there, he durſt not mount the wall, leſt haply they might chance to ſee him. For albeit that the night was very dark, yet the bulk of his body might (like a confuſed lump or maſſe, be diſcerned by thoſe that walkt up and down in that ſtill and prying faſhion, though by thoſe that walkt along the ſtreets at large, and minding no ſuch matters, it was not ſo eaſie to be perceived. And therefore, becauſe they ſhould not know him, getting him thence, he removed himſelf a little farther off, looking ſtill when they would be gone, or elſe entertain themſelves in their own ſtandings, that he might betake himſelf to his.

But when he ſaw that they ſtayd there ſtill, and that his hour was now come, he thought with himſelf, that if his Miſtreſſe ſhould come, and not finde him there, not knowing the cauſe thereof, ſhe might taxe him of too much careleſneſs; or accuſe him of his lack of love.

This drave him, (holpen on by choller) into that deſperation, that he was fully reſolved to ſet upon them, meaning to chaſe them away, if they did not make head againſt him; and if they did ſtand to it, and ſeek to defend themſelves, then to kill them if he could. Which he might well have done, as well in regard of the greatneſs of his ſtrength and courage, as alſo for that he was every way well provided for them. Beſides, that his anger, which had now ſet him all on a raging fire, (being the whetſtone that ſets an edge on Fortitude) would have added greater force to his Valour, eſpecially when he ſhould ſet upon them (which is no ſmall advantage) unawares.

But conſidering not ſo much the peril of his own perſon, as the preſent eſtate of his buſineſſes that he had now in hand, that they might not be overthrown by being ill managed,

and

and by rash and inconsiderate courses he paused on the matter, and grew a little cooler, biting his lips, wringing his hands, casting his eyes up to heaven, and beating the ground with his feet like a madman.

And when he perceived, that the time was past, he was now as sad and melancholly, as the night before he was merry and jocond.

The very next day after, these two Gentlemen went to look out *Dorido*, whom they had no sooner met withall, but they told him: You know, Sir, that we two are your friends, and that we truly love you; and being such, (as we unfainedly profess our selves to be) it is neither fit nor just, that we should conceal any thing from each other, but be free and open-hearted to one another. And it is likewise meet, (if you be the same to us, as we be to you) that you do the like on your part, telling us the truth of that which we shall ask you, if it be no way unlawful, or prejudicial unto you so to do.

Yesterday, some four hours after night was in, we two walking through our street (for so we may term it) in regard that both our hearts have there their abode; seeking (I say) our adventure at that time of night, we might perceive a third man, which dogged us all the way, following us almost close at the heels, scarce losing sight of us all the while, so long as a man might say his *Pater noster*.

We had a great desire to know who this should be, but we let him alone, because we would not cause any scandal. We could not so much as suspect, much less conceive, who this should be, till we were afterwards certified (by that which succeeded) that you were the man. And the assurance that we had thereof, was; that we having staid a while about your Mistresses window, we might hear it open, and perceive *Scintila* put forth her head, who seeing our outward bulks, and not knowing who we were, spake in a low voice, and said:

*Dorido*, why do not you come up? When we heard her say so, out of an impertinent curiosity (relying on your friendship) I answered, Which way? This word was no sooner uttered, but without replying farther unto me, she clapt to the window, and away she went. From whence we imagine, you had made some match; and because we would not hinder you of your purpose, we presently departed thence, and went to look after you, but could not find you. So that we could not till now acquaint you with what had past.

But because we desire to serve you, and that (by conserving this good love and friendship between us) our particular pretensions may the better proceed, without any hindrance or impediment each to other, let us divide the night between us.

We will take our time from mid-night, till it be day, leaving the former part of the night free to you; and if you will exchange turns with us, liking perhaps better of ours, than your own, be it as you please, and take which of the two you have most minde to, for to us it is indifferent, being all one in the reckoning.

*Dorido* would fain have dissembled the business with them; but finding himself by these pregnant proofs and forcible reasons too fast tied to get loose from them, he could not so much as shift them off. And therefore accepting their friendly offer, he made choice of the former part of the night, according to their own agreement.

And with this plain proceeding he prosecured his Visit the third night, though without hope of obtaining it, doubting she would not do him that favour, in regard of that unlucky accident that fell out the night before.

But for that *Clorinda* lov'd, (and that she truly lov'd) nothing could detain her from him, but with a great deal of care, was still inquiring, whether her Gallant meant to come again, to glad her heart with his cheerful and comfortable looks, being very inquisitive to know, what should be the reason, that caused him so to fail the last night of his promise.

Now, whilest her Father and Mother were at supper, rising from the Table, she went to the foresaid hole, which she might safely do, for that the chimney, neer whereunto they supp, stood on the one side of the Hall, (being a very large one) and the vvindovv vvhere the hole vvas, on the other side, neer adjoyning to the corner; in the midst vvhereof, vvere certain things placed betvveen, vvhich did shadovv and hinder the sight from the one side to the other. Her Father and her Mother sate so, that she might easily go thither, and speak softly, vvithout being heard of any.

The truth is, she vvatcht an occasion (having vvell advised vvith her self vvhat might happen) to make quick dispatch, and to rise from Table as soon as possibly she could. Who came thither so opportunely, and in so good a time, that *Dorido* vvas there ready expecting her comming, for from out the street, he might hear the footing of certain steps in the Hall,

which was a ſure ſigne unto him, that thoſe paces were not trodden by his Miſtreſſe, ſo that he made all the haſte he could to get up to ſee her. And becauſe this was the ſecond time of their meeting, they were a little better fleſh'd, than they were before, and met not with thoſe ſtoppages, which heretofore had hindred their ſpeech. So that they now diſcourſed more boldly, and more freely, as far forth as the time would give them leave, (which that night was but ſhort, and in a manner ſtoln) and afterwards they took their leaves with a great deal of tenderneſſe on either part, having agreed between themſelves, that as long as the Moon was in her wain, they would enjoy the fulneſſe of their loves, which increaſed now apace, till ſome better means ſhould be found for their freer acceſſe.

In this *Interim*, a young Gentleman, a very great friend of *Dorido*'s, called *Horatio*, fell in love with *Clorinia*: He courted her, he ſerved her, and obſerved her, as became a Lover, notwithſtanding, that he knew, that ſhe was his friends Miſtreſſe. But he knew withall, that he did not treat with intent to take her to wife, but himſelf did.

Relying therefore upon this their great friendſhip, the juſtneſſe of his requeſt, and the honeſty of his cauſe, he entreated him of all loves, that he would deſiſt from making love to *Clorinia*, and give way to him, ſeeing their ends were ſo different.

*Horatio*'s affectionate words, and lawfull requeſt, were of that power, and prevailed ſo much with *Dorido*, that he told him, that for his part he was well contented therewith, promiſing him, that if his Miſtreſſe ſhould ſo like of it, and that ſhe could finde in her heart to fancie and affect him, he would give over his ſuit, leaving the field open unto him to take his pleaſure without any contradiction in the vvorld: and that he ſhould reſt himſelf aſſured, that he would no way ſtand in competition with him. For the better effecting whereof, he would do two things: The one, to diſ-deceive *Clorinia*, by delivering plainly unto her, that by reaſon of a certain vow, that he had made to himſelf, it was not in his power to be married unto her, which he would not break for all the vvorld. The other; the better to make her forget him, he would go about to make love elſe-where. Yet, for that great friendſhip, that was betwixt himſelf, and *Valerio*, he muſt hold him excuſed, if he did not forbear now and then to viſit her, which might turn much to his good, but no hurt at all; being that his true intent and purpoſe was, to favour his pretention upon all occaſions that ſhould offer themſelves unto him.

Herewith *Horatio* reſted content, and was wonderfull well ſatisfied, gave *Dorido* many thanks; not conſidering, that having left it to *Clorinia's* choice, and putting himſelf upon her Election, till that he knew her minde, and had gained her good will, he had negotiated little, or nothing at all. And the offer made by *Dorido*, was upon the confidence that he had, and to ſpeak thereof unto *Clorinia*, was no other, than the tearing of her heart from forth her breaſt. But *Horatio* carried away with vain confidencies, and various hopes, intreated *Dorido*, that he would ſpeak a good word for him. He promiſed he would, that he might ſtill maintain his friendſhip with *Horatio*, and not give any note, or ſcandal to their love.

To comply thereof with his promiſe, and to make good his own offer, when he met with his Miſtreſſe, he made a long diſcourſe unto her of all that had paſſed between them; Telling her, that if ſhe could finde in her heart to love *Horatio*, and be brought to ſettle her affection upon him, God forbid that ever he ſhould go about to hinder ſo honourable an intent. But in caſe ſhe could not, yet at leaſt was ſhe bound in thankfulneſſe to accept of this his good will, by not ſhewing her ſelf coy and ſtrange unto him; and if he paſt by the ſtreet where ſhe was, ſhe ſhould not ſcornfully ſhut the vvindow againſt him, and fly from his ſight, and ſhould ſhew him a chearfull look, though it were but fained.

To this *Clorinia* anſwered betwixt anger and ſcorn, telling him; that he ſhould ſurceaſe, to lay any ſuch command upon her, and that he ſhould ſpeak no more thereof unto her; for if for this cauſe, he ſhould leave and forſake her, ſhe would rather be content to be hated and abhorred by him, than to wrong either him, or herſelf, by placing her love elſe-where: Who as he had been the firſt, ſo he ſhould be the laſt as long as ſhe lived; which life of hers, ſhe would preſently ſacrifice unto him, for to take away all occaſion from him of commanding her to love another, or to forget him: as for the reſt, he might do as he ſaw cauſe, ſhe would not hinder him, let him take what courſe it pleaſed him, ſo as it liked him, ſhe would not ſtand againſt it.

*Dorido* took wonderfull contentment in hearing this anſwer come from her; for theſe words of her, were the true Chriſole wherein the Gold of their loves was refined, and that Touch-ſtone that tried the pureneſſe of their affections, and gave aſſurance that it was

not

not counterfeit metal. So he treated of this matter no more, but followed his wonted Visits doth day and night, having first given an account to *Horatio* of what he had done. He would not believe it, yet waxed wondrous sad when he heard it. But for all this, he did not leave off to serve her, but could never find her in a disposition to do him the least grace, or favour, but rather to use him with all sharpnesse and rigour.

Whence it came to passe, that seeing himself disdained, and *Dorido* preferred before him; fury provoketh his patience, setting his heart on fire with an infernal rage; insomuch that his love was now turned into hatred. And whereas before he was always desirous to do her service, from that time forward he laid wait to do her a mischief, beating his brains, and bending all his wits and study to work her overthrow; or at least to put some foul disgrace upon her. So that this *Horatio*, having dogg'd *Dorido* divers times, till he had learned the hour, the place, and the means how he got up upon the vvall, and the manner of his carriage and fashion when he came to speak with her, and she with him.

One night amongst the rest, he did anticipate and prevent coming of the true Lover, and faining himself to be *Dorido*, he clambered up to the place, and made a little noyse, by jogging the stone that was in the hole of the vvall, as he had observed him to have done the like divers times heretofore. Now *Clorinia* taking notice of the sign, but not considering the great anticipation, and prevention of the time, came presently at this call, and taking out the stone, with many sweet and kinde words, she received this fained Lover, who remained silent all this while, which loving language of hers, did but the more encourage *Horatio* in his intended treason; and putting his hand into the hole, took hold on *Clorinia's* fair hand, and took it forth, faining that he much desired to kisse the same. And holding her fast thereby with his left hand, and with his right, plucking out a sharp knife, which for that purpose he bare about him; with little difficulty, but a great deal of impiety, he cut it off, and carried it away with him, leaving this poor afflicted Damsel lying in a swoun upon the floor, by striving to suppresse her sorrow, which she ought to have vented with her voyce, and with her cryes and lamentations; but she did smother them, offering force, as it were, to this her womanly weaknesse; and did shut them up close in her heart, and so offending the vital spirits, she remained in a manner dead. And there questionlesse would she have breathed her last, if she had not had present help; for her Father and her Mother missing her, and not seeing her in the room where they were; they called unto her, and because she returned no answer, they marvelling much thereat, went forth to seek her: they found her weltering in her own bloud upon the ground, hard by that hole, which was left open in the vvall, and trickled down with the bloud that came from her, which streams of bloud were as so many proofs and evidences of the cause of her death; for so they deem'd her to be, because they could not finde in her any signe of life.

Her sorrowfull Parents, seeing this cruel and dolefull spectacle, and the trunk of her arm without an hand, being unable to bridle their grief, fell down in a swoun close by their unfortunate daughter, no lesse breathlesse than she was. But coming presently to themselves again, they began with the greatest lamentations that were ever heard, to bewail this so great a misfortune that had befall'n them, being able to move any other eye to pity, and to powre forth tears in abundance, to see so young and handsome a Gentlewoman so butcherly and so unhumanely abused. But in the midst of this their excessive sorrow, they began to consider with themselves, that if the life of their daughter should be lost, with it they should likewise lose their honour, which in their discretion they held not fit to hazard together with her. They resolved therefore with themselves to keep this deed secret, and so leaving off their lamenting, drying their eyes, and smothering their sight, they likewise quieted those of the house, and bearing *Clorinia* from thence, after many remedies, which they applied to her, they had somewhat brought her to her self: Who, when she saw her self in the midst of her mournfull Parents, and in that pitifull manner, her sorrow redoubled upon her, which receiving increase from her shame, she swouned anew. Wherewith her Parents grief was afresh renewed in that terrible manner, as if their hearts had been rent from their bodies by the roots. And with the tendrest and kindest words they could use, they did seek all they could to comfort her, speaking unto her in the sweet and loving language of such a Father and Mother, that so dearly loved a daughter, endeavouring by those soft and gentle phrases, to cure the wound of her minde, which was more than that of her body: With this, poor wretched *Clorinia* began to gather breath, and bewailing her misfortune (which till then she was not able to do) she did move the very stones to compassion, and to take pity of this her woefull and miserable condition.

Then they presently began with great secresie to treat of her Cure. *Valerio* her brother went forthwith to fetch a Chirurgion, a friend of his, of whose secresie he was confidently assured. The night was exceeding dark, and therefore he took a Lanthorn along with him, and as he was crossing the street, it was his hap to descry *Dorido* afar off, who in a careless kinde of fashion was coming along the street, with purpose to go see his Mistresse, being ignorant of what had passed. He began to call unto him with a sad and mournfull voice, and when he drew near unto him, with an heavy chear he said; O my true friend! Whither art thou going? Goest thou peradventure to condole with us our great disaster, and that Tragick sorrow, which must shorten our life? Hast thou either seen, or heard of the like mishap unto ours, and of the unfortunate accident that hath befaln our deareſt sister *Clorinia?* Woe is me; yet to thee, that art our true friend, I cannot conceal that, which we must hide from all the world besides. For I know assuredly, that thou wilt bear a part in our sorrow, and be a Companion of these our miseries; nay, I know thou wilt, as one of us, use all diligence in revenging this wrong, and labour all thou canst to finde out him, that hath been the cruel murtherer of my sister. Wilt thou *Dorido?* I am sure thou wilt.

*Dorido*, whileſt he was hearing this sad story, stood amazed like a man that had been bereft of his senses: And it was a wonder he was able to stand upon his Legs, being so word-strucken to the heart as he was, but recollecting himself by degrees, which was holpen on by the desire which he had to understand how the world went, striving to fortifie himself against this fierce assault, which had already shaken the very walls of his heart, with a troubled voice he began to enquire what the matter was.

*Valerio*, from point to point delivered unto him all the particulars, and told him that he was now going to call a Chirurgion; entreating him, that he would go along with him, fearing left the life of *Clorinia*, through too much delay, might runne some hazard. *Dorido* accompanied him; and albeit he had more need of comfort himself, than to give comfort unto others, yet notwithstanding, framing himself thereunto as well as he could, at length he brake thus with him; Friend *Valerio*, this dolefull misfortune of yours, and the lamentable case of your unfortunate sister *Clorinia*, doth so nearly touch me, and work that true sense of sorrow in me, that no lesse than to your self, they may give me the *Pesame:* and come and condole with me this disastrous mischance, for I am so truely sensible thereof, that I dare avow, you have no advantage of me, nor can your sorrow exceed mine.

But seeing our grief can do us but little good, and that it is to no end to weep, and take on for that, which cannot now be holpen; My advice is, that you would consult what is to be done in this case, and if I may perswade, I would have all diligence used for the finding out of that Traitor which hath done this villanous act, to the end that vengeance and full revenge may be taken of him, which was never yet executed upon any other. This task you shall put upon me, I will take this charge to my self, and doubt not, but by one means, or other I shall come to finde it out. Go you, and call the Chirurgion: For it is not fit, where so many things are to be done, we should be all busied about one and the same thing, especially, that that which belongs to my charge, being a businesse, which will require labour. Let every man take his Qu and perfect his own part. Follow you yours, and I will follow mine; and so farewell; for I have not the patience to deser it any longer. And so they parted.

Now *Dorido* had a strong belief, and did confidently assure himself, that *Horatio*, and none but *Horatio*, could be the Author of so great wickedness and falshood, induced thereunto by those many reasons, which did concur to confirm this perswasion, the least whereof was a manifest token, and apparant evidence that it was onely his act, and none but his. Whereupon he resolved with himself, to inflict such a punishment upon him, as should be equal to that his just disdain, and answerable to the hainousnesse of his offence.

With this determination he went home to his own house; and being entred into his lodging, shutting the door to him, he let loose the reins to his tears, grievously lamenting this sad mischance that had thus unhappily befaln his Mistresse.

O *Clorinia* (said he) the delight of mine eyes, and the joy of mine heart, I see what harm thou hast suffered for my sake; I (unfortunate I) was the cause thereof. It was that Traitour *Horatio*, that thus deceiv'd thee, whom thou supposedst to have been beloved *Dorido*.

O unhappy Mistresse of my life, I have brought thee to this miserable passe, it is I that have kill'd thee, and no body else; for it was I that did disturb thee of thy rest; it was I, that drew thee out from thy retired and reserved course of life. O accursed chinck! O accursed

curſed eyes, that ever ye peeped thereinto! O accurſed tongue, that madeſt the motion, that we ſhould there meet, and talk together! O my dear *Clorinia*, *Clorinia*, my life; yet not my life, but my death: ſince that mine muſt follow thine: I was the cauſe of all this ill. Yet will I ſpare my ſelf ſo much life, as to live to revenge this notorious wrong; and live thou too, *Clorinia*, till thou ſee the vengeance that ſhall be done upon this Traitor, which ſhall be as exemplary, as juſt: that it may remain as a memorial to all ſucceeding ages.

And here I ſolemnely vow to ſacrifice to thy ſacred and innocent aſhes, the impious bloud of that vile Traytour *Horatio*. For that one hand which he hath taken from thee, I will give thee two of his. He cut off one, that was innocent and harmleſſe, and I will cut off two that were wicked and ſacrilegious. Let Heaven lengthen thy life ſo long, till I effect this my purpoſe, and ſuffer thee to enjoy that recompence, which I do owe unto thy love.

And thou (ſweet *Clorinia*) pardon ſo much of the fault, as was in me. And if my death will do you any pleaſure, or that it ſtand with your liking, mine own hands ere this ſhould have made way thereunto, and laid it down at your feet.

With theſe and other pitifull complaints, did he bewail this heavy accident, worthy of eternal tears; and ſurely ſorrow would there and then have made an end of him, ſo extreamly had it ſeazed upon him, and with that violence of paſſion, if his afflicted Soul had not been under-propt with the deſire of revenge; and thus between death and life he did ſpend that night.

The next day following he went to viſit *Clorinia*; whither when he was come, her Parents, and her brother began afreſh to renew their tears, imbracing and weeping one over another, till at laſt the Father of *Clorinia* began as well as his grief would give him leave, to to ſay; O ſon *Dorido*, what misfortune can be ſo great, ſo miſerable as ours? What rigour of the Heavens hath conſpired againſt us? What infernal fury ever invented the like miſchief? What think'ſt thou of this ſad chance? What deem'ſt thou of our honour? What Cloak will cover ſo foul a ſpot? And what revenge may mitigate ſo great a wrong as this? and give ſatisfaction anſwerable to theſe our ſorrows? Tell us (I pray) what comfort can we look for? Or how can we live without her, who hath given us life? *Dorido*, not being able to abſtain from tears, comforting her afflicted Parents, and brother, told them: We are not now to ſpend the time in tears and lamentations, but in that which may import us moſt.

And albeit, that which I am willing to propoſe, ought rather to proceed from any body elſe, than my ſelf, yet the occaſion, and the ſecreſie wherewith it is fit it ſhould be carried, obligeth me thereunto.

You all know very well, and have ſeen to your griefs, the general misfortune that hath befaln us all, being as well yours as mine; and rather mine than yours, for that your ſorrow is joyned unto mine; which addition makes but the heap of mine own the bigger. Beſides, I ſee the threed of my life cut off before my face, that now I expect a death as bitter, as I thought it would have been pleaſant unto me, if it had made an end of me, before *Clorinia*. Ye are not ignorant what I am; and I likewiſe know your great worth and quality; which if it ſhall not overſway mine, it is the ſingular love and friendſhip ye have born me, that muſt equal the Scales, laying an everlaſting obligation upon me to deſerve the ſame. This caſe then I make to be mine own, I challenge it as a thing proper unto me.

And that the World may ſo underſtand it, and ſo take it, that which hereafter I ſhall intreat you for by a third perſon, I will now demand of you by way of grace and requeſt: Which is; that you will be pleaſed to give me *Clorinia* to wife. Wherein you ſhall do theſe two things: Firſt, you ſhal thereby recover your honour. Secondly, ye ſhall execute your revenge by this hand of mine. If Heaven ſhall be ſo propitious and favourable unto me to bleſſe me with her life, ſhe ſhall live and remain with me, though not according as her worth deſerveth, yet anſwerable to that deſire which I have to ſerve her; making that up in my love, which is wanting in my means. And if ought ſucceed hereafter in the righting of this wrong, it is fit the World ſhould take notice, that her Husband did that whereunto he was obliged; and not *Dorido*, her Parents friend. Make good therefore this my reqneſt, for the good which from thence may redound to us all.

To the Parents, as alſo to the brother, this did ſeem to be a very juſt and honeſt motion, and gave him many thanks for this true teſtimony of his love both to them, and their

houſe. But becauſe there was one as yet un-askt, which was to be a principal party in this buſineſſe, which was *Clorinia*, they would ſee if they could draw her to conſent thereunto. Which when it was broken unto her, the tears guſhed out of her eyes for very joy, and ſhe ſaid unto them:

This is that alone, which I hope will keep life in me: and if I ſhould buy it at as dear a rate as death, yet I ſhould think it cheap enough, and that I had a good penny-worth of my bargain. I truſt in God that I ſhall live contentedly, and dye comfortably. And therefore, I beſeech you, that I may be eſpouſed to *Dorido*, according as he hath deſired. Preſently hereupon they call'd him in, and (when they came to ſee each other) for a good while, they were neither of them able to ſpeak a word, both their hearts were ſo full, and their Souls overwhelm'd; hers with joy, and his with grief.

That fit over-paſt, they plighted their troths, and were made man and wife, uſing thoſe diligencies therein with the beſt ſecreſie they could, till the time ſhould come, that they might be openly eſpouſed in the Church.

Three dayes were ſpent in this Solemnity, and with this content *Clorinia* ſeemed to be upon the mending hand. But 'it was but a lightning before death: for through the ſtore of bloud which ſhe loſt, ſhe liv'd not long after. *Dorido* perceiving, that it was impoſſible that his Spouſe ſhould eſcape with life, to the end that ſhe might dye fully contented and ſatisfied, (if there may be any ſuch thing in death:) on the fourth day, holding it now a fit and convenient time, to put that in execution which he had deviſed and plotted with himſelf, on the fifth he invited *Horatio* to his houſe, as he had done at other times heretofore. Who truſting in the ſecreſie wherewith he had committed this foul offence, and that there was no talk thereof in the Town, nor ſo much as a word ſpoken of it, went thither as ſecurely and as boldly, as if he had done no ſuch matter, and without any ſuſpicion, or jealouſie at all.

*Dorido*, to lull him the more aſleep, and to make him more ſecure, feigned, not to know of any ſuch thing, he entertain'd him with a cheerfull look, he laught, and was merry with him, that growing thereby the more confident, might the willinglier accept of his invitation. *Dorido* had put ſuch a kinde of Confection into one of his Bottles of Wine, that it ſhould caſt him that drunk thereof, into a moſt deep and profound ſleep. Which he ſecretly commanded he ſhould be ſerved withall at the Table, as oft as he called for any Wine. And as he had commanded, ſo was it ordered. And when he had even now dined, the laſt morſel being ſcarce out of his mouth, he ſate me in his Chair like one that had been dead.

*Dorido*, when he ſaw he was ſure enough now in his hands, and that the Fowl could not eſcape the ſnare, binding his Legs and Arms as hard as he could for his life, to the Legs and Arms of the Chair, and having made faſt all the doors of the houſe, he put to his Noſe a kinde of a little round Ball (like a Pomander) made for that purpoſe, which he had no ſooner ſmelt unto, and taken the ſent thereof up into his head, but that he preſently awaked from that deep ſleep, wherein he had before been buried. And finding himſelf bound in that manner, without being able to wag, he knew then that his puniſhment was at hand, for that hand which he had ſo cruelly cut off. *Dorido* was as quick in cutting off both his hands, as he was nimble in unjoynting that of hers. That done, throwing a cord about his neck, making uſe of one of the corners of the Chair, he gave him the *Garrote*, wherewith he was ſtrangled to death. The next morning, before it was peep of day, he drove him along before him in the Chair upon a Horſe, till he came to the houſe, where *Clorinia* dwelt, and putting a piece of Timber, Gibbet-wiſe, into that hole in the Wall, where he had committed this odious and un-manly act, he left him there hanging with his hands ty'd about his neck in a ſtring, (like a Childes pair of Mittons,) and ſome verſes hanging at his Hempen Chain, to give ſatisfaction to the vvorld, upon what reaſon this was done. And ſo *Dorido* when he had thus revenged himſelf upon *Horatio*, left *Rome*, with purpoſe never to ſee it again; thinking with himſelf, that without his *Clorinia*, neither Countrey, nor life, nor any thing elſe could be comfortable unto him. And about the break of day, when this ſpectacle began to be ſeen and talkt of, *Clorinia*, within a little after, finiſhed her life.

This lamentable accident cauſed both great ſorrow and admiration in the Ambaſſadour. But his hour was come, that he muſt to the palace, which made them break off for that preſent, and to take their leaves. I thank God a thouſand times, that he made me not a Lover: And if I had not been a Gameſter, peradventure I ſhould have done worſe, as

you

you ſhall ſee in the ſecond part of my life, whereunto (if my firſt have pleaſed thee) I invite thee.

The Verſes which were hung about *Horatioes* neck, turned into our vulgar tongue ſound thus:

*I was raſh He; blinde with jealous love,*
*Seeing my friend preferr'd in my Loves choiſe,*
*(Counterfeiting his Signal, Cloaths and voice)*
*VVhom deep diſdain did ſo foul hatred move.*

*To Heavn and Men, I cruel Traitor grew;*
*Fair* Clorinia *with innocence bedeckt)*
*I wrong'd (urg'd by my love, and her neglect)*
*VVhoſe Story may all eyes with tears bedew.*

*Her hand and life (that I on her might wreck*
*Revenge) I did cut off: Cauſe of her end,*
*Her hate to me, and love unto my friend,*
*He hung theſe hands of mine about my neck.*

*VVas Party, Witneſſe, and Judge: Whoſe ſentence*
*VVas too ſmall a puniſhment for my offence.*

FINIS.

you shall see in the second part of my life, Wherewunto (if my first have pleased thee) I leave thee.

The Verses which were hung about Heroicus neck, turned into our vulgar tongue sound thus:

Thou walk'st, drink'st with jealous love,
Scorning my friend preferr'd to me Love's chief,
(Contemning his Signal, cleanly and curious)
Whom next diadain did to foul hatred move.

To Heroicus and Alen, I cruel Traitor grow,
Fair Clorinda with immortal hatred
I wrong'd (urg'd by my love, and her neglect)
Whole Story may all eyes with tears bedew.

Her hand and life (than I on her might wreak
Revenge) I did cut off: Cause of her end,
Her hate to me, and love unto my friend,
He hung thick bands of mine about my neck.

Vile Perry, Writwell, and Judge: Whole Lecture
Vile too small a punishment for my offence.

FINIS.

# THE ROGUE:
## OR,
# THE SECOND PART
## OF THE LIFE OF GUZMAN
## DE ALFARACHE.

## The first Book.

Wherein he recounteth what befell from the time that he ſerved his Maſter the Lord Ambaſſadour till he left *Rome*.

### CHAPTER I.

Guzman de Alfarache *excuſeth the Proceſſe of his diſcourſe, craveth attention, gives notice of his intent; ſheweth, that lying, of all other things is the worſt. He treats of the ill government of great men; of Courtiers, and their Vices. Of the Spaniards love to Radiſhes. Of the order and end of this work.*

COme, let us away. Thou haſt now baited and refreſh't thy ſelf in the Inne; Come, I ſay: Ariſe, and let us be gone, if thou beeſt willing to have my company, and that I ſhould do thee ſervice in this journey; though there is another journey that I muſt go through with, for whoſe happy end I go travelling through theſe ſtony and deſart places.

Through theſe craggy Rocks, and un-even wayes, beſet with Buſhes and Bryers, I doubt not but I ſhall make this journey ſeem eaſie unto thee, with that aſſured promiſe, which I ſhall be able to make unto thee, of bringing thee ſafe to the end of thy deſire.

Pardon my bold proceeding, and tax me not of incivility, that I treat with thee in this manner; I confeſſe that I fail in that reſpect which is due unto ſuch a one as thou art.

But conſider, I pray, that what I ſay, it is not ſpoken to thee: but that thou ſhould'ſt reprehend others, who perhaps have as much need of reproof as my ſelf.

I go talking at random, (like thoſe that play at blind-man-buff) and thou mayeſt very well tell me, that my tongue runs riot, and that I talk like a fool, or a mad-man, becauſe I ſhoot my bolts without feat, or wit, and unadviſedly throw the ſtone out of my hand, not knowing where it may light, or the harm it may do.

But I ſhall anſwer this, with that which a fool once ſaid, that *fell* a throwing of ſtones, who as oft as he threw, would cry out a loud, ſaying, Take heed, take heed, my Maſters, for it cannot fall amiſſe; where-ever it light, it muſt needs hit right. So I likewiſe tell thee, *Que como tengo las hechas, tengo ſo ſpechas.* That if I have ſate upon any bodies skirts, or ſhall chance to ſit cloſer unto them, I have reaſon to ſuſpect, that they will pay me home if they can. For he that reprehends other mens faults, cannot but live in fear of being told his own.

I imagine with my ſelf, that all men are juſt ſuch men as I am; weak, facil, and full of natural paſſions; nay, ſometimes ſtrange and extravagant humours. But it were a thouſand pi-

ties, that all Sacks ſhould be alike. But being bad my ſelf, I think no man good: ſuch is my wretched condition, and of as many as bear the ſame minde. I convert Violets into poyſon, throw durt upon Snow; and in my thought, trample the freſh and fragrant Roſe under my feet. It might in ſome ſort have been happy for me, that I had ſtaid when I was well, and had not gone on with this my diſcourſe.

I know, that albeit I have been troubleſom unto thee, thou wilt hold me excuſed, and therefore I ſhall not need to crave thy pardon, and to begge thy good word and attention; the purchaſing whereof, is that which I principally pretend: And albeit many, and peradventure all thoſe that have taſted of the Apple, will deem it to be impertinent and ſuperfluous.

But me thinks it is not poſſible that it ſhould be ſo. For albeit I ſhould be as bad as thou wouldeſt make me to be, or that I were ſuch an arrant Aſſe and Coxe-comb, as you forſooth in your *Idea* would form me to be, yet cannot I perſwade my ſelf, that thou hadſt ſet thy figure right, or that thy judgement were truely grounded. For no man thinks himſelf to be the ſame man, that other men would make him to be; nor judges himſelf by anothers opinion. I think of my ſelf, as thou thinkeſt of thy ſelf. Every man holds his own faſhion the beſt; his own life, the uprighteſt; his own cauſe the juſteſt; his own honour, the greateſt; and his own conceits, thoſe that hit righteſt. I took counſel of my pillow, it ſeeming unto me (which indeed is true) that a prudent conſideration doth evermore beget happy events; and that too much haſte is the Mother of various and unfortunate iſſues; whoſe Hand-maid is repentance. For do you grant but one abſurdity, and a thouſand will follow upon it. And therefore, that the ends may not erre, (as too too uſually it happeneth,) it is fit that we make a faithfull examination of the principles; which being found out, and well choſen, they affoord us that help, that we may boldly ſay, that the better half of the work is already finiſhed, reaching forth ſuch a reſplendor and luſtreſſ of light unto us, that afar off, by natural ſigns and tokens, they diſcover thoſe things unto us, which are likely to happen hereafter.

And howbeit in themſelves, they are in ſubſtance ſmall, yet in their vertue and operation they are great, and are in a diſpoſition to matters of much importance.

And therefore, when we will experiment them, we muſt propoſe all the difficulties, examining them with all diligence, ſeeking to draw all the goods out of them that we can, and the ſoundeſt counſel; but when we are once reſolved that they are actions of prudence, and ſo generally taken and eſteemed, they ought in all mens judgements to be bravely followed, and put in execution: and by ſo much the more, by how umch the more noble ſhall that enterprize be, which we pretend to undertake.

And it is an imperfection, and a notable note of lightneſſe, to enterprize thoſe things, which we cannot effect, eſpecially if they be not croſt by ſome ſudden and unexpected accident, or ſome great impediment, or other; for in their end conſiſteth our glory.

My purpoſe onely was (as I told thee before) to benefit thee, and to teach thee the way, how thou mighteſt with a great deal of content and ſafety, paſſe through the Gulph of that dangerous Sea wherein thou ſayleſt. The blows I ſhall receive, thou the good counſels; The hunger is mine, but the induſtry muſt be thine, that thou mayeſt not ſuffer hunger. I endure thoſe affronts, from whence thy honour riſes. And ſince thou haſt heard it ſaid, *Que a que ſe te hizorico, que te hizo el pico.* That is, that he that made thee rich, made thee likewiſe to open thy beak, that thou mighteſt be ready to receive a bleſſing.

And therefore thou muſt ſtrive to imitate that diſcreet ſon in Law, who knows by the ſweetneſſe of his behaviour and courteous carriage, how to gain the good will of his hard-laced father in Law, and to draw him gently along, to pay his houſe-rent, to beſtow upon him his dyet, and his lodging, to put money in his purſe, and for an up-ſhot, a fair wife in his bed; And theſe are thoſe father in Laws which (like ſlaves, and common jeſters) breed, ſerve and entertain their Children.

I am now imbarkt, I have ſet foot a Ship-boord, and cannot go back. The Dice are thrown; my promiſe is paſt, and I cannot recall it. I have begun, and I muſt go on. The ſubject is mean and baſe; the beginning ſmall. But that which I intend to treat of, if like the Ox, thou wilt ruminate thereupon, and chew the Cud, ſuffering it to paſſe from thy ſtomack to thy mouth, it may prove important, grave and great. I will do all that I can to ſatisfie thy deſire; knowing, that I ſhould have rather given thee trouble then content, in unfolding one part of my life, and hiding the other from thee.

I perſwade my ſelf, that many will, or have already ſaid it; But had it been that God had

had never given it thee, and by consequence, that thou hadst never spoke of it; for being notoriously bad and wicked, it had been better for thy self to have smothered it, and for others, that they had not known it. Thou art far wide of the truth; thou hast no good ground for that thou sayest: much lesse therefore can I be perswaded, that thou meanest well, or that thy drift herein is so fair and honest, as thou wouldst seem to make shew of: but I am rather afraid, and do shrewdly suspect, that because they touch thee to the quick, the very wagging of the rod doth (though it ne're come near thee) much affright thee; thine own guiltinesse makes thee to shrink; and it is the gall'd back, that makes the Horse winse, before the Saddle touch him.

There is no *Disciplinant* that whips himself in the holy week, that doth at any time complain of his own lashing, nor doth half so much feel the smart of those stripes which he gives himself, as he doth the pain and anghish of anothers hand, when he comes to dresse and cure his wounds.

I either tell thee truths, or lies: not lies, would to God they were lies. For I know, that out of thine own natural inclination, thou wouldest be well content to hear them; nay, to play and champ upon that bit, it would make thee carry a white mouth, pleasing thy self with the some and froth of untruths. But I deliver truths unto thee; and these are as bitter Pills unto thy Palate. Thou findest fault with them, because they lay open thy faults. Onely displeased, because they please thee not. If thou finde thy self sound and in health, and thy Neighbour sick and weak, if the lightning shall light upon another mans house, and thine own scape the flame, thou wouldst the better bear it, so as thou be left untoucht, no morsel is unsavoury to thy mouth, all is Phesant and Partridge, and I shall be well received, and kindly entertained by thee. But that thou mayest not (like the Eel) slip out of my hands, I will seek out some Fig-leaves against these your slippery tricks, I will hold you fast while I have you; you shall not for this once, so easily (as you think) escape my hands.

I tell thee, (if thou art willing to hear me, if thou wilt not, thou mayest chuse) that this general confession that I make; this publick opening of my Pack, laying before thee all my Knacks, and my Trinkets; I do not therefore shew these things unto thee, that thou shouldest either imitate me, or my evil actions: but rather, that (when thou shalt come to know them) thou mayest learn thereby to correct thine own. If thou seest me fall, because I was wilfull, and would not be ordered; look thou so well to thy steps, that thou mayest hate and avoid those occasions that wrought my fall. Set not thy foot, where thou hast seen me slip before thee; but let my trippings and my stumblings serve as so many marks to make thee more wary. For thou art a man, mortal as I am, & peradventure neither stronger, nor wiser than my self.

Look well into thy self; run over very leisurely and carefully, the house of thy Soul, and see if thou have not made there, even in the greater, and better part of it, Dung-hills of filth, and all manner of beastlinesse; and do not sift and prie so narrowly into thy Neighbours, to see if thou canst finde but the feather of some bird at the foot of the stairs, whereat thou mayest pick a quarrel.

But here I know thou wilt tell me, that I preach unto thee, and that he is a fool, that will seek his cure, from a sick Physician. And that he that cannot help himself, can hardly give health to others.

What wholsom Medicine, or good Cordial can a man have from a Vipers tooth, or the sting of the Scorpion? How shall he, that is ill himself, advise another not to be ill? I do not deny, that I am such a one as thou sayest: But that will befall me with thee, which betideth some nimble and cunning Carver at his Lords Table, who curiously cutteth up the Brawn, the Wing, or the Leg of some dainty Fowl, and having respect to the quality of the Guests, whom he is to serve, gives every man his several plate; studying to please and content them all; They all eat, all rest satisfied and well contented, whilest he himself goes away both weary and hungry.

At mine own cost and pains, I discover shelfs, quick-sands, and dangerous Rocks unto thee, to the end that thou mayest not fall upon them, and dash thy self in pieces against them, or run thy self on ground, where there is never any hope of coming off.

Your Arsenick is not altogether unprofitable, but that it will serve for some good use, or other; it is worth money, and it is sold in Apothecaries shops. And though it be bad to eat, as it may be applied, it will prove good. In a word, with it those Worms and Vermine are poysoned, which bring hurt and prejudice to mans body.

My example might serve as Treacle to a Common-wealth, if these fierce beasts that govern it were poysoned; not excuting house-keepers, though never so much in appearance,

in seeming familiar and friendly unto us, as being one of the worst qualities that they have. For, figuring forth our selves unto them, to be men of flesh and bloud, kinde-hearted, and subject unto passions, we deposit our secrets in their bosoms, and trust them with all that we have, as relying on their faith and their love, and they cunningly shed feigned tears in a seeming commiseration of our miseries, when in the mean while notwithstanding, they rend our hearts, and tear our very sinews from the bone with their tyrannies, injuries, and violency.

O that it were in my power to consume and destroy another sort of cruel beasts, as those that look big, and grow proud of their ease and plenty, go vaunting and boasting of their valour, tearing up the stones in the streets, world-wanderers, vagabonds from Countrey to Countrey, from Parish to Parish, and from house to house, making themselves skimmers of other mens Pots, being no way of any profit, or serving for any other use, then the Porters in the *Alhondiga* of *Sevilla* to lay in one burthen, and to take out another; venting lies in one place, and taking them up in another, carrying news to and fro, reporting those things, that he ought to have silenced, being trusted therewith, and will'd to be secret, uttering them in prejudice of the person to whom he revealeth them, who cannot but take it ill; maliciously causing differences, and relating things worse than they were meant; bearers of false witnesse, raisers of dissension, robbers of mens honours, defaming the good, persecuting the just, stripping men of their wealth, and murthering and martyrizing the innocent. It were a pleasing sight to see all such perish, and to be made a publick spectacle to the world. Nor is there in all *Bruxels* any such good hangings, that do either so much adorne, or half so well become any Noble mans house, as these would the Commonwealth, if they were hung up one after another by the Common Hang-man.

For it is very fit that there should be *Pœna & premium*. A punishment and a reward. For if all were good and honest, Laws had been superfluous and impertinent. And if all men should have been wise, writers had been fools. Physick was made for the sick; Honours for the vertuous; and the Gallows for lewd livers. And because I likewise know, that Vice is so powerfull, for that it rises out of a desire of liberty, without acknowledgement of any Superiour, either humane, or divine. I am much afraid, that these my written labours, and my many indured misfortunes, will not be of force to bridle thy unruly appetite, and to bring forth that good fruit which I could wish; holding that pains vain and fruitlesse, which is undertaken upon any respect whatsoever, if it doth not in that it pretendeth, obtain it's desired end. But because that the Rhetorician doth not alwayes perswade; nor the Physician cure; nor the Pilot arrive safely at this Port; I must together with them comfort my self, in that I have performed my duty, by giving thee good counsel, and by affoarding thee light, being therein like the Flint, which being strooken, gives fire to others, to be kindled in this of that place, though it self remain without: In like manner, the lewd liver loseth his life, receiveth punishment, and indureth affronts, making himself an example to all those that shall look upon him.

But here I will betake me to that way, which presents it self unto me in this place; imitating therein your rude Clowns, as also your nice Courtiers, who passing along by the *Roperia* (which is a publick place where all sorts of Cloaths are to be sold;) if by chance they lift up their eyes, and look upon them, those Merchants that sell these commodities, (like your *Birchen-Lane* men) fall presently a balling and plying of them; one draws him this way, another that, and keep such a calling, and such a tugging of them, that they know not well which way to turn, or winde themselves; they are so distracted by them.

For they having an opinion (if not a thorow perswasion) that they do all deceive, all, conzen, and lye, they go warily to work, when they buy any wares of them; and I well wot the cause why, which I need not tell you, because that which they sell, will speak it out aloud, without any other bodies help.

Well let us now give them way, and suffer them to passe by, if for no other reason, at least for those favours and courtesies which I have had from them in the buying of things that were never bought, giving me good money for that which I brought, and sold unto them, and for teaching me from over night against the next morning, how to make Cassocks of Cloaks, selling them by shreds, for to soot Stockins, and to make soles to keep the feet warm, and free from wet.

Or shall I here tell thee, that the same is like to befall me, which usually happens to the carelesse Traveller, who not knowing the way, goes from home, never inquiring how he may hit it, which hand to take, or what turnings to make; so that when he hath gone

some

ſome half league on his journey, he chanceth to come to the foot of a Croſs, where he meets with three or four ſeveral wayes; and ſtraining himſelf upon his ſtirrops, writhing his body, he turns his head about, to ſee if he can eſpy any body, that is able to direct him in his way.

But ſeeing none there at hand, he falls to a Coſmographical conſideration with himſelf, chuſing either this or that, which ſhall ſeem likelieſt unto him, to lead directly towards that place, whither he intended his journey.

I ſee here preſent before me ſo many divers diſpoſitions, and ſuch various and ſundry ſorts of taſks, all of them hanging about me, every one ſtriving to hale and pull me as it were by force, to come into their ſhop. But God he knowes, why, and wherefore they do it.

One would have ſweet and pleaſant things; another, thoſe that are tart and ſowre; this man will have his Olives fried; that will no ſale, no not with an egge.

And if one man have a minde to eat the leg of a Lark roſted in the ſnuff of a Candle; another would not be wanting, who ſhall make no bones to tell thee, that of all the pulſe and roots that God made, there was never any yet that could compare and come neer to the Radiſh for goodneſs.

The truth whereof was to be ſeen in a certain *Papeliſtical* Miniſter, a kinde of Officer (as I was to tearm betwixt a Clerk and a Scrivener, that is converſant in Paper-buſineſſe;) a fellow wonderful ill beloved, a notorious liar; and above all extreamly covetous; who removing from one houſe to another, after that he had carried his houſhold-ſtuff, and other old moveables belonging thereunto, he ſtayed there behinde alone by himſelf, ſearching and prying very diligently into every nook and corner thereof, rifling and ranſaking it from the floor to the roof, not ſo much as leaving a nail to the walls, for to hang a Hat on, or the like neceſſary uſe.

At laſt, it was his hap to come into the Kitchin, where he lighted upon an odde hole in the chimney, wherein were three or four Radiſhes, which had lien there a long time, being dry, tough, withered, and good for nothing. Theſe he charily ties up in one bunch, and very carefully brings them home to his Wife, and with a Black-ſmiths face, looking frowningly upon her, he ſaid unto her; Is this your good houſe-wifery, this your care of my houſe and goods, to let things run to ſpoil? Is money ſo eaſily come by (think you) that you make no more reckoning of ſaving a peny? But as you brought me nothing in Dowry, ſo you care not (it ſeems) which end goeth forward; ſink, or ſwim, all's one to you. See you this waſte of yours? Look I pray upon theſe Radiſhes, they coſt money I can tell you. You have done well, have you not, to look no better unto them? Keep them, I pray, againſt I call for them. I think there is not a more waſtful woman in the world; but I am the worſt of the two, and may thank my ſelf, that I would be ſuch an unthrift as to bring a whole bunch into the houſe at once, when a fewer would have ſerv'd the turn.

His Wife laid them up ſafe, as he had willed her, and that very night (that they might not fall out any more about them) the crafty Hielding, very demurely, and with a ſober countenance, without any the leaſt ſhew of choler or diſlike, ſets them down before him, when he was ſitting down to ſupper, who falling earneſtly unto them, ſpake to his Wife, and ſaid:

Now in troth (Wench) I ſwear unto thee, there is no meat in the world can reliſh better, or hath half ſo good a ſavour and taſte with it, as an old Radiſh. I proteſt unto thee, I like them better a thouſand times being thus lyther, and withered as you ſee, than when they are freſh, and cripſie. I prethee Wife prove one of them, and then tell me, if it be not as I ſay.

The poor woman had as little fancy to make trial thereof, as ſhe had faith to believe it; but my Spaniard, (carrying as they do all a kinde of high hand over their wives) forcing her in a manner thereunto, by his ſtern both looks and words, made her to eat one, ſore againſt her will and much againſt her ſtomack.

There are a certain kinde of men, which are not contented only to commend that, which they themſelves like, (be it what it will) but they will (and are angry and offended, if it be otherwiſe) that others do do the ſame, preſſing them, as it were, to follow their humour, and contrary to their own will, ſeem to approve it; at leaſt, not ſtick to praiſe it.

And there are likewiſe another ſort of people, which diſcommend other mens taſtes; not conſidering, that *de guſtibus non eſt diſputandum*, for that they are divers and various, as are the conditions and countenances of men.

For though peradventure two may be found, that may reſemble one another; yet it is impoſſible, that they ſhould be ſo like, that you may not perceive ſome difference. And therefore I muſt be driven to do that here, which was my hap once to do at a Comedy; where, for that I was one of the firſt, it was my fortune to be one of the foremoſt upon the Stage.

Now theſe that came after, being nothing ſo well fitted, ſpake unto me, that I would lean a little on t'one ſide. I did ſo; but in this my moving ſomewhat aſide, others thought much of it, complaining that I hindered their ſight; for whom likewiſe to give them content I have forced to ſhift a foot. So that, both the one and the other made me to ſtand where they would have me. For they were all willing to ſee. Inſomuch, that not knowing how to accomodate my ſelf for pleaſing of them, I put on Merchants ears, not vouchſafing to give them the hearing; and ſtanding ſtiffely on my right leg, gave them leave to ſhift for themſelves, to hear and ſee, as well as they could.

The Melancholly man, the Sanguine, the Cholerick, the Flegmatick, the Civil, the Swaggerer, the Rhetorician, the Philoſopher, the Religious, the Reprobate, the Courtier, the Clown, the Rude, the Diſcreet, nay, even my Lady *Ninny-hammer* would that I ſhould only write for her pleaſure words finely pleyted, and curiouſly folded, and that I ſhould apply my ſelf to her conceit, and conform my ſelf according to her ſtile, making her Miſtreſs both of my pate and pen.

It is not poſſible for me to ſecond ſo many humours, and to ſatisfie ſuch different deſires: For then had I need (beſides the making for every particular man his ſeveral Book to live ſo many mens lives, as there are ſundry opinions.

I have lived but one only; and that which they would falſly entitle me withall, is a teſtimony againſt ſome of the great wrong they have done me therein.

My true life, I ſhall onely ſet it down my ſelf. I will go proſecuting of that, though they go perſecuting of me. For there will not another *Gill* be wanting for the third Part, to come forth againſt me, as in the ſecond; and charge me with that, which I never either did, ſaid, or thought.

That which I intreat at thy hands, is; That thou wilt neither fear me ſo much, nor be angry with me in ſo high a meaſure, that (I know not out of what humour) thou ſhould'ſt wiſh me hang'd; for I finde not my ſelf fit for it at this time, neither indeed do I deſerve it. Suffer me therefore to live, ſince it hath pleaſed God to give me life, that I might correct my errours; and time, that I may amend my faults.

For my puniſhments, and my miſfortunes, if thou wilt truly inform thy ſelf of them, will ſerve thee inſtead of a looking-glaſs, whereby thou mayeſt ſee how to link a little better together the paſt, and the preſent, with that which is to come in the third part; to the end, that thou making it all one continued piece of work, weaving it well and handſomly, running along in even threeds, thou mayeſt the better (which is no more than becomes thee) be inſtructed in the truth of things.

And this is that mark whereat I have aimed, and the white, which I ſeek to hit. Nor am I dainty in diſcovering my conceits, to thoſe that will be pleaſed to ſave me this trouble: yet, let it be ſo carried, that they may boaſt them of that's their own. For I hold it as a thing undecent, and unſeemly, for a man to deny his own name, and to put forth his works under that of another, which hath and ſhall, upon the like occaſion, oblige me at any time, to write ſo much again as this, that I may not be taken for a Fool, by taking upon me other mens over-ſights. But let this reſt, leſt I might ſeem to ſome to ſpeak more out of paſſion than reaſon; though the Judicious (I am perſwaded) will excuſe this my juſt complaint, and not think it in this place to be impertinent to the purpoſe.

But to return again into the way, whence we have ſtept a little aſide, I ſay, that I would have every man to make choice of his own Plate, and to fall to that Diſh (amongſt thoſe many, that we ſhall ſerve into this boord) which he hath moſt minde unto, leaving that unto others, which ſhall not pleaſe his palate, or not agree with his ſtomack. Nor would I have my gueſts to think, that this book of mine ſhould be like unto *Heliogabalus* his banquet, whoſe boord was furniſhed with many and ſundry ſorts of meats, yet all of them only ſerving for the food and ſuſtenance of man, whether they were Peacocks, Chickens, Phefants, wilde Boar, Fiſh, Milk, Sallets, or Conſerves, it was one onely kinde of Vyand, but like Manna, differenced by mens ſeveral taſts; howbeit, thoſe of Manna were as every man would have them, to reliſh as himſelf deſired; but theſe other, according as the Cook was willing to ſeaſon them, ſeeking therein to pleaſe the filthy luxurious throat of his Maſters.

With

With variety nature is adorned; this is that that beautifies the fields, to ſee here Hils, there Valleys; in this place Brooks and Rivers; in that Fountains, ſprinkling and ſparkling forth their pearled drops.

Let not men be ſo covetouſly minded, as to deſire to have all to themſelves, I have ſeen the beſtowing of many Liveries in my life-time, and the little Page, (I have perceived) was as well contented with his, though it were not ſo full of Silk, as the talleſt man, that had twice as much as he, in regard of the largeneſs of his ſtature. I am reſolved to follow that path, that ſhall ſeem beſt unto me, for the more direct bringing of me to the end of my deſire, and to that place whereunto I intend my journey. And thou (my diſcreet Hoſt) who ſtayeſt looking for me, ſince thou doeſt ſo well underſtand and know the miſeries, that he ſuffers and indures, who (like my ſelf) goes travelling abroad to ſee the world; do not look ſcornfully upon me, when thou ſhalt meet with me in thine own Countrey, and though I come to the Gate like a Rogue, poor and penileſs, diſavoured by fortune, and forſaken of my friends, yet do thou vouchſafe a cheerful countenance, and give me that kinde entertainment, which thou oweſt unto thy own worth. For my errand is onely to thee, thee onely do I ſeek after, and for thy ſake have I undergone this journey, not for to put thee to any charge, nor with purpoſe to oblige thee to more than thy good will and affection, which thou naturally oweſt unto him, who offers thee his love: Which if I ſhall receive from thee, I ſhall reſt fully ſatisfied, and remain beſides, in requital of thy good will indebted unto thee in an infinite number of thanks.

But if they which take pleaſure in hearing me talk, if they ſhall likewiſe be deſirous to ſee me, let them beware, that do not befall them, which is wont to happen to thoſe that are over-curious, who watch and liſten, to hear what is ſaid of them; Which kinde of men do alwayes *Male audire*, hear no great good ſpoken of them. For with the fineſt gold is the bittereſt Pill covered. And oftentimes that moveth ſome to laughter, which indeed ought to draw tears from their eyes.

Beſides, if any man ſhall long to know the life that I lead, and the place where I live, he ſhall therein bewray his own needleſs curioſity, and give me juſt cauſe to ſuſpect the unjuſtneſs of his intent, and the little good love that he bears me.

Let him firſt apply himſelf to conſider my ſtate and condition, and the great miſery, whereunto my diſorder brought me. Let ſuch another as I am be ſet before him, or let his own imagination repreſent it unto him, and then ſhall he preſently be able to go diſcourſing with himſelf, what paſs-time may be made with him, who doth paſs his time, (being a Priſoner, and laden with Irons) with a *Renegado*, or ſome ruffianly blaſpheming Officer, that looks to the ſure chaining of the ſlaves in the Gallies, unleſs happily he will take pleaſure in my miſeries, and make himſelf merry with them, as ſome do with the Bull that is brought into the Market-place to be baited, whoſe Darts ſticking in his ſides, whoſe ſtroaks and wounds glad the beholders; though I for my part hold it an inhumane act. And if thou ſhalt twit me in the teeth, and tell me, that either I cauſe nauſeouſneſs in this my Diſcourſe, or that I ſell it unto thee at too dear a rate, ſeeking forſooth to be intreated, or that I ſtrain too much courteſie, or that I am a little too coy, and too nice with you, making my ſelf more dainty than needeth, or that by my indearings and flatteries, I ſhould commend it for good unto thee; it would grieve me, that thou ſhouldeſt have that conceit of me.

For albeit it be well known, that I alwayes ſerv'd my Lord Ambaſſadour, as a merry companion, and to make his Lordſhip laugh at my pleaſant and witty conceits: for I could then make him ſport, when I knew not ſo much as I do now; and now that I know more, I cannot do it. For it is a thing that coſts a man dear, and the times are not ſtill alike.

But that thou mayeſt well underſtand what I ſay, and know what my jeſts and merriments were then, and what now ſhall be thought neceſſary in that kind; hearken, I beſeech you with attention to that, which I ſhall deliver unto you in this inſuing Chapter.

## Chapter II.

Guzman de Alfarache *tels what place he ſerved in, in the houſe of his Lord Ambaſſadour: and that Fools and Jeſters are both fit and profitable for Princes: falling into a deſcription of their conditions and qualities.*

From the great power, and little vertue now adayes in men, it ſo cometh to paſs, that faithful ſervants are not ſo much rewarded for their good ſervices, and perſonal pains-taking, as for the ſweet words flowing from their vain tongues; for the one they think to be due unto them, out of their powerfulneſs and their greatneſs, and therefore are not pleaſed to accept it in good worth, or thankfully to eſteem and acknowledge it. And for the other; they afford them, (for their wits ſake) many graces and favours; and becauſe they want it themſelves, they buy out this default with their money. It is great pity, that theſe men ſhould think, that vertue ſhould derogate from Nobleneſs; and by their ill-conceived opinion of it, will not (as a thing abhorred by them) uſe and exerciſe the ſame.

And for that it is likewiſe to be purchaſed and gotten with a great deal of difficulty, and by hard and ſharp means, (things that are contrary to their ſenſuality, and quite repugnant to their power and greatneſs) they are never without flatterers at their ears and elbows, ſmoothing up vice, and ſtroaking their evil actions with a ſoft and gentle hand.

This is that milk which they have ſucked; theſe, thoſe ſwathing-cloaths wherein they were wrapped; They made it their natural Center by uſe, and by abuſe it continueth ſtill with them. Hence ariſeth thoſe ſuperfluous and exceſſive expences, thoſe profuſe prodigalities, and thoſe vain magnificencies which are ſoon paid, and quickly told out, (when the money is poured forth on the table) but with a great many ſighs and tears, when they ſee how they have fool'd it away.

It is a lamentable caſe to ſee, that a Noble-man ſhould beſtow a rich ſuit of cloaths upon a Fool and common Jeſter, and ſcarce give a caſt hat to the vertuous to cover his head. But this is a reciprocal kinde of giving, a chop and change, that runs currant among them. For they apparel their bodies with good cloathes, and theſe in requital cloath their mindes with toyes, and idle vanities: they throw many favours on thoſe, who ſoftly ſmooth their humours, with ſweet and pleaſing words, ſuch as ſhall ſound handſomly, and have their cadence and conſonancie correſpondent to their diſpoſition.

But they buy this their pleaſure at too dear a rate, and not unjuſtly neither, for that their praiſe paſſeth thorow the mouths of ſuch kinde of men, leaving their gate carelefly open, for the better ſort to publiſh their vanities; they falſly conceiving, that they ſhall redound greatly to their honour and praiſe, which in truth and in very deed they ought to eſteem as a reproach and ſhame unto them. Yet will I not therefore ſay; that great Princes ſhould not have their paſtimes; it is fit, that they ſhould have their entertainments and recreations; but withall, in their due place and ſeaſon: For all things have their time and their reward.

A witty Jeſter is ſometimes as neceſſary, and as uſeful as a wiſe Counſellour. Nor do I think it meet, that their hands ſhould be bound from giving, gratifying, and favouring of them; For money, (as *I* ſaid before) *Nunca ſe goza, ſi no quando ſe gaſta.* We never enjoy it, but when we ſpend it. And it is never ſaid to be ſpent, when it is well and wiſely beſtowed. For I my ſelf (in puniſhment of my ſins) have had experience of the one and of the other, and can make this good unto you out of mine own proper actions, the ſmart whereof I have ſince ſoundly felt. For at that time as I ſerv'd my Lord Ambaſſadour (as you have formerly underſtood) I was his Favourite, and as it were the apple of his eye; And I can aſſure thee, that any other corporal labour would have been of leſs trouble unto me, and not have lain half ſo heavily upon my ſhoulders, for to utter pleaſant conceits, witty jeſts, and to give a frump or a flout with a grace, that it may take handſomly, there muſt many things concur and jump well one with another.

Hereunto will be required a particular gift of nature, which ſhall give credit and grace thereunto, with a joynt conjuncture in the carriage of the countenance, ſhape, and motion of the body and eye; So that the one may help the other, and every one by it ſelf, have its particular grace, that meeting all together, they may move the more.

For

For one self-same thing may be delivered by two different persons; The one after such a manner, that he will make thee unbutton thy Doublet, and be ready to burst with laughing. The other, with that ill grace, that thou wilt think the door too far off, and too narrow to get out quickly, and be gone. And let such a one strive all that he can, to give his jests that life, and that grace, that is fit and necessary for them, yet it is not possible (if they do not well become him, and come cleanly and nimbly from him) that he should hit the mark he aims at.

There will likewise be required a continual reading, to know how, and when; and from what he is to form his conceits. He hath likewise need of a strong and able memory, for the keeping in minde of those accidents that have and do dayly happen abroad in the world, and the knowledge of all sorts of persons, that he may know how to apply and accommodate that which is to be said, with that of whom it shall be said.

He must take a great deal of care in the inquiry of those things, that are most worthy the reproving of other mens lives, and most of all, in those that are most noble. For, neither making of faces, freenesse of tongue, gestures of the body, life and quickneſſe of the eye, sundry sorts of *Matachins*, and mimick actions, nor all the skill and wit in the world shall be available to move the minde of one that is vain, if they be not seasoned with the Pepper and Salt of Murmuration.

That little touch of tartnesse, that corn of Salt, those drops of Vinegar, are those which gives a good relish, and a pleasant farewell to all the rest, be it never so simple, never so unsavoury. For what is otherwise, is accounted but a dull Picture, a course piece of work, and the plain artifice of a poor wit.

It will also much concern him to consider the opportunity, and the time, when, and wherein he is to break his jests. For being delivered out of season, and not to the purpose, they utterly lose their grace. For men will not alwayes be willing to hear them, neither are they alwayes, and at all times to be vented; nor they themselves alwayes able to broach them. Ask but this question of him that hath the strongest and ablest wit amongst them; Take the best Jester of them all upon the sudden, and put him to exercise his jerkes of wit, and to play his pleasant pranks; and you shall finde him frozen, and not able to open his mouth.

This befell *Sisneros*, (a most famous Comedian) talking with *Mancanos*, (who was no lesse famous then himself, and both of *Toledo*) being a pair of wits, not to be paralel'd in their time; to whom *Sisneros* said: Thou seest, *Mancanos*, that all the world doth take us for two of the pleasantest and happiest wits that this present age affordeth.

Tell me doest thou think, that upon this fame that goes of us, the King our Master will cause us to be sent for, and to come before him? But say it should so fall out: then let you and I come in together, and when we have both done him that due reverence that becomes us, if we shall afterwards stand solemnely before him (having sent for us upon the opinion of our wits) it is a thousand to one, that the first question that he will ask us will be this; Are you *Mancanos* and *Cisneros*? Then you shall make answer and say, Yea, and it like your Majesty, for I will not speak a word. Then will he (as it is very likely) say again unto us; Come, let us hear some pleasant conceits come from you.

Now, I would fain know of thee, what we should do in this case, and what answer we shall make him? *Mancanos* told him; Brother *Cisneros*, when it comes to that (which God forbid) there is no other to be made, but this; That they are not yet fry'd. So that, neither to all, nor of all, nor at all times are they to be spoken; when they are to be in request, they are not worth a Fig, nor the least hair of my head, unlesse they be nipping ones, and dipt in the sawce of Murmuration. And I held this to be one of my greatest unhappinesses, that like a setting Dog, I was driven to winde out other mens weaknesses.

But because this was the fifth element, without the which those other four cannot well subsist; and that repugnancie and contrariety doth conserve them; I was continually carefull in seeking out that, which to that office, which I now professed, was necessarily required, that I might still go getting of ground, and accommodate other mens tastes to mine own. For the better and more essential part is, to win the good will of those that hear him, that they may the more willingly commend that, which by him is either said, or done. So that those indowments which nature had deny'd me, I was forc't to make good by tricks & devices, assuming to my self illicit Licence of language, and using prejudicial darings and boldnesse, which were much holpen by a particular kinde of vivacity, livelinesse, and quickneſſe, both of wit and spirit that I had in me, having (God he knows) no learning at all. For then I had no

more knowledge but of a few languages, which I had learned in my Lord Cardinals house; and those too were as yet but raw in me, in regard of my green years.

Consider therefore I pray with me (which you may easily gather out of that I have told you) what I might have in me, and what was wanting unto me, being not left to mine own liberty, and living in necessity.

In those my younger dayes, and in that Spring-time (as I may so term it) of my flourishing years, all went currantly with me; all that I did, became me well, and to all did I fit and apply my self.

For these, and other the like things annexed thereunto, I was alwayes well clad, much made of, I was the Favourite, the Familiar Friend, the Master of my Master, as also of all those that were interessed in his friendship.

I was the principal door whereby they entred into his grace and favour, and onely I the LORD of his will. I kept the golden Key of his secrets. He had sold his liberty unto me, and I was bound to look well unto it, and to take care thereof, not onely out of that, but even for charities sake, and the respect I owe to the Law of Nature, as also of the particular love that he bare to me, and I to him; For he was not ignorant, but he had made often tryal of my secresie, and with what sufferance I did ever silence those things that he committed to my bosom; which I would none should unlock but my self, who onely had that Key, to open and shut at his pleasure.

It comes now into my minde, and so lively represents it self to my thoughts, that me thinks I was then like a trump-card, which every one uses, when, and how he list; or as a common pack-saddle, that serves for all Horses. All did make use of me, though after a diverse and different fashion; some of my actions, for their own proper interest; and others of my words, for their pleasure and delight; onely my Master drew in the same yoke with me both in words, and deeds.

I have taken occasion to speak thus much, that men may not conceive this opinion of me, that I go about to tax those Princes, that keep Fools and Jesters in their Palaces, for their entertainment, and pleasure.

Nor shall it be amisse that they entertain them in their houses, not so much for sport and pastime, as by that conduit-pipe, to draw something to their knowledge, which would not so well and so cleanly be conveyed otherwise to their ears. And such occasions often offer themselves, whereof these kinde of men may make very good use, by advising, counselling, and revealing grave and weighty matters, under the colour of foolery, which wiser men dare not adventure to utter in earnest.

There are some witty discreet Jesters, which speak sentences, and are able so soundly to deliver their opinions, that their Masters will not stoop to ask advice of any of his other servants, although it might much concern them, and were great Statists, and very well able to give counsel. Nor indeed will they consent, that they of all other, should give them counsel, that they may not to their inferiours confesse their ignorance, or to seem to understand lesse than they. For even in this, they would fain shew themselves to be Gods.

And such kinde of servants as these, are those Parrats, which *Jupiter* desired to have shut up in a Cage; Nor is this mischief of a day old, or was born but yesterday, that great persons should scorne and contemne the counsels of wise, understanding, and well qualified men. So great in these men is their pride, and ambition, that they seek to aggregate and draw all things to themselves, making themselves Masters and absolute Lords, both of our spiritual, and temporal good, and bad; without controulment. Insomuch that they think with themselves, that by their onely breath, they give grace unto others, and not doing them any good in the vvorld, they look to be praised and extolled, as if they were the onely men, of whom they did hold their life, their honour, their wealth, and also their understanding, which is the utmost blasphemy, whereunto in this case their folly can reach.

There is also another great inconveniency, which is this; That as in a Chappel of Miracles, we must hang up to sooth their vanity, the spoyls, and Trophees of our miseries. For if we recover our lameness, and be once able to go, we must offer up our Crutches unto them, whereof we made use, when we were benummed, and oppressed with poverty.

If we escape any dangerous sickness, or mischance, we must sacrifice unto them that winding sheet, which fortune had cut out for us, burn Tapers, and set up Images of Wax, declaring to the vvorld, that this Miracle was wrought by them, and must hang up those

thoſe chains in the Temple, wherewith we came forth from out the captivity of our miſeries, and were now brought home, and landed in a ſafe Haven.

But this were not altogether ſo much to be blamed, if theſe things did onely occurre upon vertuous occaſions, and that they had truely done theſe men good.

For there is a kinde of thankfulneſſe, due to every good turn that is done us. And then we make it known that we have received a benefit, when rendring thanks unto God, we do likewiſe publiſh the vertues of thoſe men, that did do theſe good deeds: becauſe with an ardent zeal, and fervent affection, they did uſe their beſt induſtry, imployed their perſons, ſpent their friends, took hold of all occaſions, let ſlip no time, and therein waſted and conſumed their money. So that things being once fairly carried, thoſe that are benefitted by them, ſhall worthily deſerve much blame and reprehenſion, if they ſhall not render them all fitting and convenient thanks. But they fall as ſhort of theſe good things, as they do excell in all filthy and beaſtly vices; wherein they ſtrive and exceed, and be counted the onely men.

As was to be ſeen in a certain Noble-man, that was exceedingly given to lying, and to laſh out ſo unreaſonably in that kinde, as no man could out-ſtrip him, who one day talking in converſation with diverſe other Gentlemen of quality, told them that he had killed a Stagge, bearing ſo many branches, or antlets on his head, that it did plainly appear to be a Lye, though he carried it very handſomely. They all admired it, they ſaid; (but not gain-ſaid it) that it was one of the ſtrangeſt things that ever was ſeen, or heard of.

This lik't the Nobleman vvell: But vvhileſt he and the reſt vvere thus vvondering at it; Why (quoth an ancient Gentleman, a near Kinſman of his that vvas there then in company, after a pretty kinde of faſhion bringing it forth;) doth your Lordſhip and theſe Gentlemen make ſuch a vvonder at this? This is nothing, my Lord; For, vvithin theſe few dayes I my ſelf did kill one in the ſame Forreſt, that had two more than this that you talk off.

When he heard him ſay ſo, the Nobleman bleſt himſelf, ſaying; It is not poſſible: and looking angerly upon him, (ſcorning as it ſhould ſeem to be out-ly'd) ſaid unto him; Sir, ſpeak no more of this, tell it no farther, for it is ſuch a thing, as was never yet ſeen, nor will I for my part ever believe it, though I hold it a courteſie ſo to do.

The Gentleman with a ſtern countenance, and undaunted courage, (his Age and Alliance heartning him on) in a diſcompoſed kinde of voice, boldly brake forth, and told him; Zownds (my Lord) me thinks your Lordſhip ſhould content your ſelf, that you have ſixty thouſand Crowns a year coming in more than I, without ſeeking to out-ſtrip me in lying, as you do in living, let me (I pray) though I am a poor man) lye as I liſt: I beg nothing of you, nor any man elſe; nor do I rob any man either of his wealth, or his honour.

There are likewiſe a certain kinde of witty conceited fellows that are naturally ſimple and ignorant, from whoſe mouths oftentimes drop myſticall ſayings, and worthy the conſideration, which God, (it ſeems) permits them to bolt forth now and then, making them alſo to keep in ſuch things as are fit to be ſilenced: who (though ſimple as they ſeem) have an extraordinary grace in the delivering of them. Which happineſſe lighted upon one, that was a ſimple ignorant fellow from his Cradle; in whom one of the greateſt Princes in Chriſtendom took much pleaſure, who for ſome ſecret cauſes, beſt known to himſelf, had diſcarded one of the graveſt, and chiefeſt Miniſters; and this ſimple fellow, coming one day into his preſence, (which was ſhortly after the other was diſmiſt the Court) he was no ſooner entred in, but the King askt him: What news in Court? He told him, that his Majeſty had done very ill in putting *N. D.* away: And that it was without any reaſon, or Juſtice in the vvorld.

The King imagined, (that cauſe having been juſtified by many other of his Miniſters) that this had proceeded ſimply out of his own mouth, and told him, Thou ſpeakeſt thus for him, becauſe perhaps he was thy friend, not that thou haſt heard any man elſe ſay ſo beſides.

The Fool reply'd: My friend? In faith thou lyeſt. Thou art more my friend then he: I ſay nothing, but what all men ſay. The King was offended, that any ſhould dare to queſtion his actions, or to examine his breaſt. And being deſirous to know, if any man of worth had preſumed ſo far to trench upon what he had done. He reply'd and ſaid; ſince thou profeſſeſt that ſo many have ſaid it, and that thou art my friend, name one of thoſe unto me, of whom thou haſt heard this complaint.

The Fool paus'd upon the matter. And when the King thought that he had been cal-

ling to memory, whom he ſhould name unto him, he angerly made anſwer; The bleſſed Trinity told it me. Now ſee which of theſe three perſons thou dareſt apprehend and puniſh. The King thereupon thought that it was a buſineſſe of Heaven, and ſo forbore to ſpeak any more of it.

There are another kinde of pleaſant companions, which are good for nothing elſe but to dance, to play upon inſtruments, to ſing, to murmure, to blaſpheme, to ſwagger, to lye, and to devour victuals, good drinkers, and bad livers. And of theſe, ſome are onely good at one of theſe qualities; other ſome at all. Wherein ſome great ones take ſuch delight, that they ſhall have what they will of them, doing them many extraordinary graces and favours, which is a moſt grievous ſin.

To theſe, (and onely for theſe Jigs) they give Jewels of great value, Rich Suits of Cloaths, and hand fulls of Gold; which is more than they will do for a wiſe, vertuous, and honeſt ſervant, which ſhall treat with them of the ordering of their eſtates and perſons, illuſtrating their names, and honouring their houſe with glorious Titles. But rather when it ſo falleth out, that theſe come unto them about matters of importance, and which nearly concern them, they reject them, and will not be adviſed by them.

Your Preſidents, Governours, Counſellors, and every other Officer in Court, or that have ought to do in the Palace, being greedy of honour, and blinded with paſſion, if they be called to ſpeak their opinion, they often ſay that in publick, which their own private opinion approves not, though it be never ſo good; becauſe they conceive that in ſo doing, they ſhall conform theirs, to that of their Lord and Maſter, and ſo mannerly ſeem to run along in the pleaſing of his humour; as alſo, for that it would grieve them to the very heart, that another ſhould get the ſtart of them, in gaining their Princes grace and favour from them. So that many are not admitted thereunto, for that they had not this trump in their hand, and would not play the like tricks, theſe getting more by their foul, than they by their fair play. By reaſon whereof, many things remain without remedy and redreſſe; and great buſineſſes often-times overthrown.

And if conſultation ſhall be had of ſuch things, whereof great profit may redound to themſelves, or to the State, they will tell the Author thereof coldly and drily, becauſe they will neither thank him, nor reward him; We knew this before; but there are a thouſand inconveniences in it.

But curſed be thoſe Counſellors, who, becauſe they were not the firſt in delivering that ſound opinion in ſuch a buſineſſe, blame the Author thereof, and carried away with the winde of their vanity, and greedineſſe of gain, ſend him away empty: but uſing them firſt as Apothecaries do their ſimples; who firſt diſtill, or pound them in a Morter, and when they have ſqueez'd all the juyce, and wrung the ſubſtance out of them, throw out the cake on the dung-hill. They will firſt inform themſelves thorowly of the buſineſſe, the beſt that they can; and when they finde they are well and fully informed, they take it to themſelves, caſting from them the true Author thereof; and that good counſel of his, they ſell for their own; and this they do *cum privilegio*.

Some there are, that are like unto thoſe glaſſes, or other veſſels, that have great bellies and little mouths, they underſtand things amiſſe, and fill their ſtomack with all that they hear, and whatſoever is ſaid unto them: But although man tell, and pour into them never ſo much, and though they be as full as they can hold; yet becauſe they know not how to conceive things well, they cauſe others to comprehend as little. And for this reaſon their buſineſſes miſ-carry and take not ſo happily as they ſhould; for they cannot be ſo well inform'd of that they treated upon, as thoſe that were the proper Authors thereof, and had beaten their brains about it many dayes and nights, breaking their ſleeps, and loſing many a meal, for the better examining of all the contrary objections, and for the advancing of their pretended profitable ends. Much good may it do them, let them go beyond me in this way, and ſpare not; for I would be loath in the end to rent ſuch kinde of gettings, or to farm them out of their hands.

My Maſter took pleaſure in hearing me, and liked me for ſomething elſe too beſides my talk. For like a good Gardiner, he did gather thoſe flowers together, which ſeemed fitteſt unto him for the making up of his Noſe-gay, picking out the beſt and the choiſeſt for his particular uſe, and the reſt (which were but as it were the riff-raff and refuſe flowers,) he reſerved onely for entertainment.

He treated with me of that in private, which others did not ſtick to ſpeak in publick. And theſe his ſecrets he did not onely communicate to me alone; but when he deſired to know

know any thing, and to attain to the true understanding of businesses, that he might not erre, he would consult with men of wit, and those that had the best abilities, he would make very much of them, favour and honour them; and if they were poor and needy, he would supply their wants as well as he could, and more particularly in those things whereof he knew they stood most in need. And this he fastened upon them in that wise and discreet manner, that it should not seem to be bestowed upon them by the way of Almes, leaving them thereby well contented, fully satisfied, and above all, exceeding thankfull. It was his fashion to have two, or three of these usually at his Table, where were propounded grave politick questions, and businesses of State; and especially touching those things, which did presse and import him most, and neerest concerned his own particular ends. By this means, without opening and discovering of himself, he received their opinions, and reaped the chiefest fruits that their wits could afford him.

The like course he took with the Officers in Court, particular Gentlemen and some Citizens of the best esteem in *Rome*; with whom he holding friendship, came to know the wrongs they received, the remedies to be applied, and how and which way they stood affected. And then afterwards having a good judgement of his own, he did so dispose of things, as might make most for his advantage, and the King his Masters service: so that he did seldom erre or fail in those things that he undertook. He was very discreet, of a setled and well composed behaviour, vertuous, courteous, well studied, and a great lover of those that had in them such commendable parts of learning, as were worthy the recommendation. He was indued with all those good qualities, which were to be required in a person of his place and imployment; he was like a goodly room, furnished with all those rich Ornaments, which might set it forth, and make it appear fair and beautifull in the eyes of the beholders, but in the midst thereof, even in the very best part of all the room, there was a choak-pear sown and grown up, which did much blemish it.

The Apple was our general ruine, this Pear the perdition of every particular. He was an *Enamorado*; one that was over head and ears in love. For there is no flesh so sound, that hath not some corruption; nor no body so free, that hath not some one infirmity, or other. And his was, that he did but love too well; yea, even to excesse. But in a matter of this nature, let every man judge, as shall seem best to his own liking. Howbeit, many wise men have said, that a man cannot be absolutely perfect, unlesse he have once in his life-time been in love.

And of this opinion, it seemeth, was that pleasant-conceited Countrey fellow, that was the common Cryer in his Parish, who having often cry'd an Asse that another Countrey fellow had lost, and could by no means hear any news of him, (for it should seem some Gypsies had stoln him, who that he might not be known again, had put new marks and colours upon him) did earnestly intreat him, that he would do him the kindnesse to cry him once more upon the Sunday following, after high masse was ended; and if he should chance to hear any tidings of his Asse, he would for his labour give him a little young fat Pig that he had at home.

The knave Cryer greedy of the Pig, did as he had requested him. And all the people being met together in the Market-place, he stood in the midst thereof, and cry'd out with a loud voice: To all manner of people, that are dwellers in this Town, or Borders thereabout, be it known, that if there be any man, or woman, that hath never yet been in love, let them come in, and tell their name, and they shall have a fine young Pig for their labour. And God save the King.

There was placed right against the same, leaning himself against the Wall of the Councel house, a lubberly Lad of some two and twenty years of age, with long shag hair, a russet Cassock on his back, welted with the same cloath, open about the shoulders, and close before: Breeches of white Cotton Bayes, gathered and plaited beneath at the knees, a Shirt with a band thereunto, so hard quilted throughout the stock, that a Turkish bow with a very sharp Arrow, was not able to pierce it: a poor thread-bare Cloak: a pair of high shooes of Neats-leather, knit together with two strings of twisted Hemp, and bare-legged, who coming in all haste to the Cryer in his Clowniſh kinde of language, said unto him; Brother *Sanz*, give me the Pig; for by these ten bones I vow unto you, that I was never yet in love, never had my head puzled with it, nor ever paid any Tole to that Mill.

Then the Cryer calling the Owner of the beast in all haste, and pointing to this Choploth with his finger, said unto him, *Anton, Berrocal*, give me my Pig, and take you here your Asse.

But that this may be proved, and that truly by ſome Preſident of theſe preſent times wherein we live: There was in *Salamanca* a principal Doctor of the Chair, one of the famouſeſt and graveſt Advocates in all that Univerſity, that often viſited (for his entertainment) a certain Gentlewoman, that had profeſt her ſelf a Nun, very fair ſhe was, well deſcended, and wonderful diſcreet. And he being inforced to abſent himſelf from thence for ſome few dayes, he went his way without taking his leave of her, thinking that he had now attained to the perfection of his love, and that there was no need of theſe fineneſſes, and niceties between them.

Afterwards, when he was returned from his journey, he went (as he was wont) to viſit her. But when he ſaw, that ſhe would not admit of his Viſit, he became very penſive and ſad thereupon; becauſe he could not imagine what ſhould be the cauſe of this ſudden ſtrangeneſs, having alwayes heretofore ſhewed her ſelf very kinde and loving unto him. But when he came (by ſome diligences that he had uſed) to know the reaſon of it, he was wonderful well contented therewith, it ſeeming unto him, that this in ſome ſort was rather a kinde of grace and favour of hers, than otherwiſe.

Well, he ſent unto her to excuſe himſelf, earneſtly intreating her, that he might be ſo much beholding unto her, as to ſee her, uſing therein the means of ſuch Ladies and Gentlewomen as were friends to them both.

At laſt (through much importunity) ſore againſt her will, ſhe came forth to receive his viſit, but with that anger and diſdain, that ſhe could not contain her ſelfe, but muſt needs ſhew it: for the very firſt words that ſhe let fly at him, were theſe;

Baſe, and ill-nurtur'd as thou art; for ſuch baſe thoughts argue no leſs than baſeneſs of blood; which is confirmed by thy ungentlemanly proceeding, whereof to thy ſhame thou haſt made too open ſhew. For having thy being as it were from me, and for my ſake, and having come thereby unto that height, wherein now thou art, forgetting all the good I have done thee, and all the charge that I have been at to qualifie thee, and put thee forward in the world, thou haſt loſt all that due reſpect and thankfulneſs, which I deſerved at thy hands; but ſince the fault was mine in raiſing thee, it is no marvel, that mine ſhould be the puniſhment.

To theſe ſhe added many other more ſharp and bitter words; ſo that the poor Gentleman being daſht quite out of countenance, becauſe many were there preſent when ſhe us'd him thus courſly, and gave him ſuch a ſound ratling; incenſed with the exceſs of this her rigour, he made her this ſhort and cutted reply:

Gentlewoman, touching this complaint of yours, be it with, or without any juſt cauſe, I will not ſtand to diſpute it. And for your accuſing of my unmannerly proceeding, let that likewiſe paſs; For *Cada uno ſciente como ama.* Every man beſt knowes, how, and how much he loves. And I acknowledge, that all this ariſeth from the many and great favours, that you have been pleaſed to confer upon me.

But whereas you touch me in my reputation, (being forced thereunto by you) it is fit and neceſſary that therein I ſhould ſatisfie thoſe that are here preſent, I muſt be ſo bold with you, as to tell you plainly; That ſince God hath been pleaſed to raiſe me to that I am, I come not thereto either by corruption, or favour, but by mine own great pains, and continual ſtudies have I procured my preferment. She then interrupting him, and not ſuffering him to go on, returned him, but with a great deal of choler, this quick anſwer.

Thou lyeſt like a Villain. Thou riſe by thy learning? Thou had'ſt not come to that great knowledge that thou haſt, nor had'ſt ever had ſo much wit, as to learn to amend ſo much as an old ſhooe, if I had not put ſpirit into thee, quickned thy wit, and perfected thy underſtanding, by giving thee leave to make love unto me. This whet-ſtone put an edge upon thy dull ſconce, and but for this thou might'ſt have ſunk, and never been able to lift up thy head.

By this then we may ſee, how much it may import a man to love; and that it is not ſo great a fault as ſome would make it. Miſtake me not; I mean, when the ends are good and honeſt.

But in my Maſter it was taken in the worſer part; for his ends did exceed and paſs their bounds; and the blame of all that ill was laid upon me; every man conceiving, that I was the cauſe thereof: Complaining, that ſince I came to ſerve him, I had opened his ſcull, and put into his head nothing but Hawks-bells and Rattles: All that he took delight in, were merry tales, idle jeſts, and the like vanities: which till then he had never formerly been given unto.

It

It might very well be, that with my heat I might cauſe ſome buds or little ſprigs to ſprout forth. But for to ſpeak the truth (ſeeing the Parties are not here to be examined, and I am the man whom they thus accuſe) I aſſure you, that others had the handling of him before, that wrought him this harm.

For when I entred into his ſervice, and that he came to put his cure into my hands, the Phyſicians deſpaired of his recovery, and had given him quite over, and would have no more to do with him. I will not deny, but that I might miniſter much thereof unto him; for by reaſon I was in ſuch favour with him, I had likewiſe the freedome to uſe many old fooliſh jeſts, and prejudicial liberties of ſpeech.

I was familiarly acquainted with all *Rome*, I had as free acceſs into every houſe, as into our own; excuſing my pretentions, that I only repaired to ſuch and ſuch places, to give leſſons to ſome to ſing to the Gittern, and teach other ſome to dance.

I did entertain your young Wenches in good converſation with merry and pleaſant jeſts; and your Widdowes, with whiſpering tales in their ears. and entring into a league of friendſhip with your married men, I got likewiſe the good will of their Wives, to whom they would bring me to laugh and make ſport, wherewith they were well pleaſed, for the good contentment they took in my harmleſs mirth.

And all this I did, to the end, that from this good ground my Maſter might take occaſion to declare and open himſelf more freely to me. For I relating unto him, what, and how things paſſed abroad, it was an eaſie matter for me to kindle with the breath of my words, the fire that was in his heart, by blowing firſt away the aſhes from off thoſe coals, that were already throughly tinded alive, and very quick within him. He was in a good diſpoſition thereunto, and therefore any the leaſt occaſion would ſerve the turn. He was a kinde of houſe made all of thatch, ſo that a little ſpark was enough to raiſe a great flame, having ſuch combuſtible ſtuff to work upon, being ſtill affectioned to that, which himſelf had moſt minde to, without having reſpect to that diſcreet carriage, which he formerly obſerved in all his actions.

I do ingeniouſly confeſs, that I was an inſtrument of his exceſſes and flying out, and that in regard of my being ſeen to walk here and there to and fro, to enter into his houſe, and to come out of that, many houſes, and women of good quality were ſpotted and branded with infamy.

But let us here leave my Maſter, as a man, to whom albeit theſe things did cauſe him to be noted, and to have his good name called in queſtion, yet was not he ſo much to be blamed, as thoſe who did know well enough, what manner of fellow I was.

I would many times demand of them, what honour or profit *I* did reap, by being intereſſed in theſe buſineſſes? Why ſhould Widdowes take delight in hearing of tales & pleaſant jeſts? Why Parents bring ſuch ſtragling wanderers home to their Daughters? Or why Huſbands make their Wives merry with ſuch dangerous entertainments? What other good can be expected from your neat Pages (ſuch as I then was) who do ſcarce touch the ground that they tread on? What do your Princes witty Jeſters, and your great mens Dwarfs ſerve for, but to talk with Ladies and Gentlewomen, and to indear unto them their Maſters love? who again inquire of them, what good tables they keep, how gallantly they live, how much they ſpend, what in Amber, and other odours and ſweet perfumes, what in the pomp of apparel, and what in Muſick, that they daily beſtow upon their friends and Miſtreſſes.

Why do they talk and give ear to ſuch things, whereby they afterwards give occaſion to others to open their mouths, and to utter with their tongues all that they either know or imagine? Do not they perceive, that in ſo doing, they build but their own priſon, and weave that winding ſheet, wherein their good names muſt be winded and buried? What benefit can the content they take in hearkening to merry tales bring them? which are to no other end in the world, but to give way unto them, that they may report to their Maſters, what they take moſt pleaſure in, beſides the queſtioning of their good names amongſt their neighbours? Let theſe a Gods name make themſelves merry with the reward of their errours: and if they be lovers of jeſts, it is no ſmall marvel, if they be jeſted withall. They deſire a life to have muſick play at their windows, whileſt others in the mean while are making Ballads of them, to ſing forth their ſhame at every mans door.

A Widdow, that ſuſpects her honour, and will have a care of her credit, muſt keep her door ſhut, her daughter chambr'd up, and her caſement cloſe, and above all, not ſuffering her to have her own will, and to do what ſhe liſt; that ſhe be viſited but ſeldome, but be alwayes occupied; for, of idleneſs growes wantonneſs. And it ſtands with good reaſon,

Que

*Que la madre holgazana, ſaque hija cortesana.* That a light mother ſhould breed a looſe daughter. And if ſhe love to have her train plaid withall, that her daughter will prove a Wag-tail. And if ſhe happe to be married, ſhe will turn ill houſ-wife, becauſe ſhe had been ill taught.

By this you may ſee, what obligations the Parents have to look well unto their Children: let them take away all occaſions of ſcandal; let them weigh with themſelves, what (upon the like occaſions) they murmur and whiſper of others. And then let them conſider, how much better it were, that their Wives, Siſters, and Daughters, ſhould rather learn to handle their Needle, than to play on the Gittern; to govern well, rather than to dance well: for hence it comes to paſs, that many women, not knowing how to look ſo well as they ſhould into the corners of their own houſes, buſie themſelves in working ſtrange alterations in thoſe of others.

Speak the truth, or no? I know, ye will tell me that I do. For ſuch truths as theſe are not to be treated, or mentioned, but upon neceſſity, and urgent occaſion.

I confeſs it to be ſo, and for my part I approve it. But becauſe that which I have ſaid, toucheth none of thoſe that hear me; it is therefore well ſaid, to the end, that when it ſhall be needful, and men ſee their time, they may be the better able give good counſel unto others; when they ſee them ſtep out of the way, and go awry.

*Malo es la mala, que nunca puede ſer buena.* Ill is that ill, that never can be good. It was not good, I confeſs, that I ſhould be a Bawd to my Maſter; but every man would fain live. And this office I performed by thoſe tricks and devices I told you of before, taking occaſion by my familiar and general acquaintance in *Rome*, to go as boldly into every mans houſe, as I would into mine own, excuſing this liberty of mine by thoſe pretenſions I made, of teaching ſome to play upon Inſtruments, and ſome to dance; entertaining in the mean while Maidens with merriments; Widdowes with old wives tales, and what was whiſpered abroad; and entring into amity with married men, good honeſt kinde Cuckolds.

But I was in ſome ſort to be excuſed, (if not born withall) for that my wants and neceſſity drave me to do as I did, and opened that door unto me, whereat I might get forth to ſeek my living.

But what excuſe can they have, who for the light toyes of this world, will venture the loſs of their reputation upon earth, and thoſe rich treaſures that are laid up in heaven for thoſe that live well? which two things every man ought moſt to eſteem, and have ever before his eyes. But what I did herein was to wedge my Maſters affection unto me, and to work my ſelf into his favour; both which I came to be poſſeſt of; and not with intent and purpoſe to reclaim him for this his weakneſs, and to perſwade him unto better courſes, but rather to ſpur him on in this wretched race that he ran.

But he that would truſt me in ſuch like buſineſſes as theſe, and communicate himſelf unto me in this kinde, what could he look or expect from me? I know there are many men, who think it is a great credit unto them, that they do nobly, and get a great deal of reputation and eſteem, by theſe their viſits, their ingreſſes and their egreſſes, when indeed, it is quite contrary.

For your women that entertain chat with your crack-rope Pages, with your giddy-headed Poets, that never go without a musk Comfit in their mouth, or chewing the rinde of a Lemmon, with your flat-Capt Citizens, your Countrey Lads, and the like; ſome perhaps may hold them diſcreet; but I am ſure they loſe the name of chaſt, which is an ineſtimable Jewel they ought highly to eſteem, being for their labour ever after accounted fools.

Now the profit that I made by this my occupation, trading with this perſon, and with that, with t'other and t'other, this my converſation being ſo general, it was the onely means that kept me from being diſcovered to be a Bawd.

But (to ſay the truth) they might very well have put the implumed hat upon my head, which I have ſeen worn by many others in my dayes, vvho did leſs deſerve it than my ſelf, in token they vvere *Love's* Ambaſſadour; vvhom he imployed in his chieſeſt and moſt ſecret affairs.

Here, in me, may you ſee hovv misfortunes fall to men by inheritance. Hitherto it hath been delivered vvith out any diſguiſe or masking, hovv I led my maſter along, never ſuffering him to take any reſt or quiet, and hovv he made me another *Adonis*, in the neatneſs and gallantry of my cloaths and delicacy of perfumes, for the great care and diligences that I uſed in theſe and the like buſineſſes.

But true and certain it is, that murmurings and vvhiſperings attend ſuch Actions. And

if

if a good man be now and then bitten, what wonder is it, that a bad man ſhould be bruſſed and cruſht therewith to pieces? *Y que aya ſoſpechas, donde no faltan hechas*; And that there may well be ſuſpition, where deeds make confeſſion.

It were a great deal of ſimplicity and ignorance in me, and other ſuch as I am, for to ſeek after any better name, or to go about to make (as they ſay) a ſtone Wall of mudde; thinking to ſtop mens mouths, and to hinder their ill imaginations and bad conceits of us, when as we our ſelves give them ſuch evident occaſions to conceive amiſſe of us.

None can impoſe, or ſet any feſſing or ratable fine upon mens cenſures and opinions; for that were, *Poner puertas al campo*, to ſet up gates to ſhut in ſuch a vaſt circuit, as is *Salisbury* Plain.

Thou canſt no more limit a mans thoughts, than thou canſt number the ſands of the Sea It is not I that can make them to think, or not to think as I would have them; I cannot be maſter of their thoughts; nor will it boot any one man to deny that which all men affirm. It will be but trouble without profit, a needleſs and endleſs piece of work; wherein we ſhall ſhew our ſelves as fooliſh as he was, who went about to lock up the ſmoke, to make doors to ſhut it in, and to keep it cloſe priſoner.

But what ſhall we now ſay of our fooliſh Maſters, who perſwade themſelves, that this their buſineſſe paſſeth ſecretly and ſafely thorow our hands? Shall I deal truly with you? I will. Take it then from, and I know it to be true, *Que no ay ciencia, que corrija un enamorado*. There is no ſcourge of wit or learning, that will laſh a wanton lover out of his luſt.

For matters of love, there are no *Bartuli*, no *Ariſtotles*, no *Galens*; their counſels fail them; their wiſdomes are too weak; and their Medicines can do no good upon them. Nor there is not any thing that doth more publiſh and manifeſt this truth, than mens ſolicitude and care in theſe things, from the which none (that are taken therewith) can contain themſelves. For with two Viſits of ours, and one inter-courſe of theirs, or but a paſſing by their door, make the little children (thoſe ſhrill trumpets of truth) to ſound forth their lightneſs aloud thorow the ſtreets.

The greateſt puniſhment that lighted then upon me was; that my hairs began to ſprout, and my Chin to put on a beard, the which the more I ſhav'd, becauſe I would not have it perceived, the thicker it came, and grew the faſter. And for that it is a peculiar Office belonging to handſome and witty Pages, to be *Venus* and *Cupids* cheſeſt Miniſters; the more diligence I uſed in tricking, adorning, trimming, and ſetting my ſelf forth in a laſcivious manner, the more occaſion I gave the world thereby to talk and judge of me accordingly. I ſtudied to be neat and handſome in my cloaths, but took no heed how foul the faſhion of my behaviour was; and therefore it was no marvel, if they threw durt upon me with their tongues. In a word, either actively or paſſively, every one would beſtow upon me *El nombre de las paſquas*, and force me to wear his Livery, you know what I mean; and though I told them, they lied like a company of Rogues and Villains as they were, they would laugh and hold their peace, giving by this their myſtical kinde of ſilence, a more open way unto the truth. Their taunts againſt me were true, and ſtrook deep, but whatſoever *I* replied upon them, they made but a jeſt of it; my words were but as the picking of ſtraws, theirs as the piercing of darts.

There are a kinde of conſiderate and diſcreet men, which take the ſayings of men, not as the words ſound in themſelves, but as they are, from whom they come, regarding more the ſpeaker, than the thing ſpoken. And this is a great point of wiſdome.

Again, on the contrary, there are ſome (I know not whether *I* may be ſo bold to call them fools or no) who from ſome diſ-favour of their Miſtreſſes, form an injury, and as if it either were, or might be ſo, they will be revenged of them; and laying ſome imputation upon their honour, ſeek to ſcandal and defame them, without any reaſon or cauſe in the world. I was not able to ſtand againſt ſo many, nor could my Sword cut out his way thorow ſuch a multitude that ſet upon me; I ſaw they had reaſon on their ſide, and therefore I was willing to behuſh, and to pocket up theſe vvrongs vvith patience.

And albeit it be an act of true humility, patiently to ſuffer reproach; yet in me it vvas covvardize, and dejection of the minde. For that I held my peace and ſaid nothing, there vvas good cauſe vvhy; becauſe I knew all the ſpeaking in the vvorld could not help it. It might vvell have made matters worſe, but never a vvhit the better. And ſeeing that I had not one ſpark of ſhame in mine own houſe, I vvould not for ſhame go ſeek it elſvvhere; the fire of

my zeal to good was quite out, there was no recovering of it. And therefore (making a vertue of necessity) I was forced to passe over all these bobs and jerks they had at me, sometimes with a smile, sometimes a jest, and sometimes with both.

In conclusion, howbeit, I ought rather to have indured any the greatest hurt that could come unto me, then submit my self even in the least degree to base gain; yet notwithstanding, I had, like the *Melon* my bed made for me. I saw I could not well be worse thought of than I was already, and therefore casting aside all thought of amendment, I counted it a credit unto me, and took rather a pride in it than otherwise, and so making light of it, and jesting it out, I did set a good face on the matter, when they said any thing to me, that I might not seem to be dasht out of countenance, or bound to give them an answer, which would but have made them to vex me the more, and done my self no good. So that by this they persecuted me the lesse, and I past the more quietly along by them.

And why should I take (seeing this did serve my turn, and that I past well enough with it) any other course with them? Which in these dangerous cases, if I should have attempted any other way to pacifie them, I should never have been able to do it; and should thereby have but made the fire more to flame, by seeking to asswage it with Flax and Rozin.

Let him therefore, whosoever will take upon him to set open a shop to Vice, provide himself of a *Tortoyse* shell, arm his back with patience, and keep his ears and his mouth shut. And let not any man flatter himself, that having foul conditions he shall get him a fair report. For, *El nombre, sigue al hombre*; As is the man, so is his good name. And as every one deserves, so shall he be esteemed.

## CHAPTER III.

### Guzman de Alfarache *recounteth that which hapned unto him with a Captain and a Doctor at a banket, which the Ambassadour his Lord made.*



THere is so thin a Pale put betwixt deceiving and lying; and are so near kin the one to the other, that I know not who can tell, or is able to distinguish and difference the one from the other: for though they are different in name, they are one in identity, and of the same patity in effect, and in essence alike. For there is no lye without deceit, nor no deceit without a lye.

He that will lye, doth deceive; and he that will deceive, doth lye. But because they are commonly received after a different manner, and for different purposes, I will take them as they stand in use, and accordingly discourse thereof.

Deceit then, in respect of truth, is as truth, in regard of a lye: or as the shadow of a glasse, and that natural form which it representeth. It is as aptly disposed, and is made as facil to effect whatsoever great hurt, as it is hard and difficult to be found out at the first; for that it is so like unto good, that representing the very self-same figure, fashion, motion, and proportion, it doth the easier destroy it. It is a most subtil net, wrought of the slendrest and smallest threeds, in comparison and likenesse whereof was framed that other, which the Poets feign, was made by *Vulcan*, when he caught him that cuckol'd him.

It is so imperceptible, and so fine, and thin, that there is not any sight so clear, any judgement so subtil, nor any discretion of that discerning, nor any wit of that nimble apprehension, that is able to discover it; nay, scarce to perceive it.

It is so artificially wrought, that though it be spread out abroad, and laid forth as plain, as may be to our view, yet are we not able to escape it, in regard we walk on securely, not so much as once dreaming of any fraud, or deceit. And by this means it is so strong, that few, or none do break it, without leaving some sign of the harm that they have taken. And for this cause, it is justly called *Maximum vitæ damnum*, the greatest hurt that can happen unto us in this life. For under a tongue of vvax, it carries a heart of Diamond; it cloaths it self with Hair-cloath, though it never come near the skin; it keeps a chupping and sucking in of the cheeks for to make it seem lean and meager, when its belly is ready to crack with good cheer. And having store of health to sell to others, it speaks pulingly, and pitifully; and onely that it may seem to be sick, it puts on a sorrowfull countenance, powrs out its tears, offers up its bosom, and with open arms, runs to receive us, but as *Joab* did *Amasa*; imbrace to kill.

And

And as birds give the Empire to the Eagle, beasts to the Lion, fishes to the Whale, and Serpents to the Basilisk: so amongst all other mischiefs, there is none greater, or more powerfull, than that of deceit. As an Asp, it kills us sleeping; it is that *Syrens* voyce, whose delight (like a Butchers Cur) first seizeth on the ear, and next on the throat; its ravishing, is murthering; it offers a fair assurance of peace, and with a great deal of smoothnesse professeth friendship; but neglecting all humane and Divine Laws, breaks them at her pleasure, leaving us with as much wrong as glory.

She promiseth cheerfull contentments and certain hopes, which she never performeth, nor do they never come to passe, because she goes chopping and changing them from Fair to Fair, to make her own market. And as a house is built of many stones: so one deceit is an addition of many other; and all of them serve for one and the same end. It is the Headsman of all goodnesse, for with a seeming kinde of sanctity, it makes every man secure; and there is none that are either aware of it, or fear it. It comes unto us in the habit of a Hermit, the better to execute its ill intents.

This contagious infirmity is so general, that not onely men, but beasts and birds do likewise therein suffer with them. Also the fishes in the waters exercise deceits, and this they do the better to preserve themselves. Trees and Plants do deceive, promising pleasant flowers & fruits, which fail us at their time, passing bravely away with it. Stones, though they be but stones, and without sense, trouble our sense with their counterfeit splendour and lye, in that they seem to be that they are not. Time, occasions, our senses deceive us; and above all, our best and most considerate thoughts. In a word, all things deceive, and we do all deceive, one of these four manner of wayes.

The one is, when one useth a deceit, and goes cunningly away with it, leaving the other deceived: As it hapned to a certain Student of *Alcala de Henares*; who, when the Feast of Easter was drawing near, and having nothing wherewith to make himself merry against that good time, he called to minde a Neighbour of his, who had a Court, or yard, with great store of Hens in it, with the which he did himself no good at all.

He was a poor beggerly fellow; and as he was very poor, so was he extream covetous; an errranter miser was there not in all the Countrey. He fed them with the bread that was given him of Alms; and a nights he shut them up in the same lodging where he lay.

This Student went plotting with himself, how he might steal them away, but lighted upon none that did yet like him. For in the day time it was impossible, and in the night they roosted in the same room where he himself lodg'd.

At last he bethought himself of feigning a packet of Letters, and to put thereupon two Ducates Port, directing it to *Madrid* to a certain principal Cavallero, and a Gentleman very well known: and before the break of day he very secretly laid it on the threshold before his door, that as soon as he opened it, he might presently finde it. He got him up in the morning, and as soon as he saw it, not knowing what it was, he took it up.

This Student passed that way in the mean while, as it were, by chance: Whom this poor man espying, came unto him, and intreated him to tell him what those papers were. The Student told him: Marry such (said he) as I would be glad with all my heart I could light upon the like.

These (quoth he) are Letters directed to *Madrid* with two Ducates Port upon them, to a rich Gentleman that resideth there, who shall no sooner receive them, but will see you truely paid for your pains.

The poor man began to look up, and was so over-joyed therewith, that the tears did trickle down his cheeks. He thought with himself, that one dayes travel, was a thing of nothing; especially being that he might perform his journey by noon, and though he went thither on foot, he might in the evening, without any trouble, return home in some one Cart, or other that was to go for *Alcala*. Whereupon he went and fed his Poultry, shut them up safe, leaving out such food as he thought sufficient for them, and so hies him away with his Letters.

The Student that night made a shift, by getting over some back sides, and out-courts, to get into that yard where the poor mans house was, and leaving the door off the hindges, he gets me in, taking nothing away thence but the Hens, leaving no more but one onely Cock behinde, with a mourning hood on his head, and a Mantle of black Bayes, so surely sowed on, that they could not fall off: which done, he withdrew himself homeward to his lodging.

When the poor man was come home to his house the next morning, and saw the mi-

fortune that had befalne him at home, and that he had bestow'd his labour in vain; for there was no such Gentleman to be found in all *Madrid*; he, and his Cock did bitterly bewail their solitude and widow-hood, making lamentable moan each unto other; the good man with his mournful words, the poor Cock, with his mourning weeds.

Another kind of deceit is; When together with the deceived the Deceiver is also deceiv'd. As it hapned to this Student in this very case. For he being not able to effect this businesse alone by himself, and that he must needs use the help of some body else, he took unto him one of his *Comrades*, whom he acquainted with the businesse, promising if he would assist him in this theft, he should share half with him.

This his Companion discovered it to a friend of his; he, to a third, so that the word past from one to another, till it came to the ears of certain mad wags of *Andalusia*; And, for they were old *Castilians*, (and their Opposites for this cause) they agreed together to skip them of their Hens, by another pretty device.

They knew the house from whence they were to come, and the streets, through which they were to passe; They feigned themselves to be the Justice, and they watched till they should return, at the turning of the street; whom they had no sooner espied, but they issued out upon them in form of a Circle, bedging them in on every side, with Lanterns, Swords, and Bucklers, having appointed the formost man to ask, Who goes there? What are ye? Stand. Upon this, they verily thinking, that he was one of the Justices servants, and being loath to be either known, or taken with that bad word of bidding them stand, they threw down their Hens, and began to take them to their heels, as hard as they could drive. So that there were not some wanting, who did also coozen, and deceive them.

The third kinde of deceit is; When it is without prejudice. Neither deceiving others, together with themselves; nor deceived, when they go about to deceive. And this may be done two manner of wayes; either by works, or by words. Words, by recounting Stories, telling of Tales and Fables, and other things of entertainment. Works, as by juggling, sleights of the hand, tricks on the Cards, and other the like devices, which are done without any harm, or prejudice to any.

The fourth kinde is; When he that thinks to deceive, is himself deceived; that trick that he would put upon another, being put upon himself: As it befell a great Prince of *Italy*, though some report the same of *Cæsar*: Who, that he might grace one of the famousest, Poets of his time, carried him home to his house, where at first he used him wonderfull kindly, made exceeding much of him, did him many favours, and bestowed many gifts on him, as long as his humour was pleased with those Poems that he presented unto him.

But this lasted not long, the Princes affection falling off by a little and a little, till at last the poor Poet was fain to content himself with his bare lodging, and some short allowance. So that he suffered much want and necessity; and was grown so poor both in his purse, and his apparel, that he durst not go abroad for shame, because he had not where-with to cover his nakednesse.

The Poet weighing and considering this his unhappinesse; and seeing himself shut up, as it were in a Cage, and that neither (which is permitted unto Parrats) the Prince himself, nor any about him, would vouchsafe to hear him speak, he resolved with himself to rouse up the Princes long sleeping favour, and waiting an opportunity do it, understanding such a time, that he was to go abroad, he attended at a certain place, which he thought fittest for his purpose, and when the Prince drew near, he made toward him, and kneeling on his knees, when he came at him, he presented him with a Poem that he had made; which the Prince receiving, he thought by this means to revive that remembrance of him, which had so long lien dead. He continued in these kinde of diligences so long, that the Prince being wearied out with these his importunities, was determined to put some jest, or other upon him, to make him to desist from giving him further trouble in that kinde.

And having himself made a Sonnet, and going out, to walk one evening, when he saw the Poet was coming towards him, preventing him in the presenting of his Poem, he drew the Sonnet out of his bosom, and clapt it in the Poets hand; the Poet understanding the trick, as one that was discreet, feigning to have read it, highly commended both the Verse, and the invention, put his hand in his pocket, and plucked out a Royal of eight, which he had there, and gave it to the Prince, telling him withall; Such a good wit well deserves a reward, I give you all that I have, had I more you should have it.

With this the Prince was fast, being caught in the same snare, and paid with the same trick that he purposed to put upon him. And from that time forward he favoured him as he had done before.

There

There are many other kindes of these deceits; and one above the rest, which is a very dangerous one, which is that of those who would make us so believe that the Gospel, when as our own eyes and knowledge do both see, and know the contrary.

A fellow that is basely born and born, and well enough known to be such an one, will see by his haughty carriage and proud looks, to gain unto himself the name of a great man, though (God he knows) he is scarce worth four *Maravedes*; giving (by his ill proceeding) occasions to others, to scoff and laugh at him: And to say, what fellow is this? What was his beginning? Of what continuance his Ancestours? Whence doth he fetch his Pedigree? What did his Gentility, or his Office cost him? What Trade was his Father of? And of what occupation his Mother? These men think to deceive others, and they deceive themselves. For not by this means (that is to say, by pride) but by humility, affability, and fair behaviour, they go by degrees, throwing in their earth, till they come in time to fill up those Ditches, and to be level and equal with the best.

Others seek to deceive with their fierce looks, thinking thereby to be counted valiant, as if we did not know, that they are the onely men, that dare not meddle with a Mouse, or tread upon a Worm, if he should but offer to turn tayl.

Others with their too much prattle, and quoting of Authors, seek to be held wise men, and learned Clarks, not considering that many Stationers have far more in number, who notwithstanding in matter of knowledge are meerly ignorant men. For neither the long Gown, nor the broad-brim'd Hat, nor the Mule, for all his grave Foot-cloath, shall be sufficient to cover the disease they are sick of, but at three, or four shakings of the Urinal, we shall discern those rags, and cloudy streaks that are in their Urine, and then they will plainly be discovered what they are.

I have said of some, that they repute themselves wise and learned, because they have store of books, and that your Stationers have many more than they; but many of them are worse than those block-headed Doctors, who with a great deal of pains, and by tradition, understand the *Frontispieces* of books, and yet notwithstanding being often therein deceived, they fall headlong into the pit of ignorance; now would I have thee to tell me which of these two do deceive most? I shall tell it thee. They are both of one grain, sown and reaped under one and the same Moon, bread of the same meal, whereof most men do eat, and is their onely nourishment.

But out of the number of these, do I except *Paulus* and *Aldus Manutius*, *Henricus*, *Robertus*, and *Carolus Stephanus*; *Adrianus Turnebius*, *Franciscus Sansonius*, and many other like unto them, not onely meer Stationers and Printers, but learned and famous Schollers, and of great note in the world, whose works and labours do and shall ever render thereof a perpetual testimony. There have been divers other worthy understanding men in this their profession, who in their life-time have published and brought to light many most noble and excellent Authors, who, if they had not by them been revived, had been buried for ever in the Church-yard of Oblivion. Whereas now many of them by these mens great pains and industry, are raised from their graves to immortality.

Others are grown so foolish, (and indeed are accounted no better) who being now grown old, decrepit, and unable for any kinde of use, or exercise, and this their weakness being notorious and well known to all the World, and this their rotten building ready to fall, yet are they willing to deceive themselves, and every body else (if they could) contrary to all truth and reason, by dying the hairs of their heads and beards; as if any man were so ignorant, and did not know that there are none of these changeable coloured beards, but at every motion of the Sun, and every cast of the eye they present a different colour, and never a one perfect, much like unto those in the necks of your Doves and Pigeons; for in every hair of these Cox-combs, you shall meet with three divers and sundry colours; white at the root, yellow in the middle, and black at the point, like unto one of your Parrats feathers.

When women do the like, there is not any one hair of theirs, which hath not it's different colour. There was a certain Gentlewoman in the world, that shall be nameless, (which of mine own knowledge, I am able to affirm) who did use this dying & colouring of her hoary hairs, which one day I did diligently mark and observe; and believe me (for let me not live if I lye unto you) some of them seemed green unto me, some blue, some yellow, some vermilion, and others of divers other colours; and in some one odd hair, all these colours did conjoyn and meet together. So that seeking thus to deceive time, and to dissemble her age, she discovered her folly, and became a laughing stock to as many as looked upon her.

That ſome young folks ſhould uſe the like deceit, who by inheritance have been born with gray haires, (who like the fruits that grow in the fields of *Palencia*, grow ripe before their time) it is no great marvel. Yet even theſe too (though better to be born withall) give occaſion of having that freely ſpoken of them, which they willingly would avoid, whereby it comes to paſſe, that as they increaſe in years, they decreaſe in credit.

O thou unfortunate, miſerable, and wretched old age, thou ſacred Temple, thou Sanctuary of ſafety; thou ſtop to the deſperate careers of this life, thou Inne of reſt to our weary bones; How is it that thou art ſo much abhorred in this life, being that thou art the Haven, which all men deſire to attain unto? How is it that they, who reſpect thee afar off, when they come nearer unto thee, ſtick not to prophane thee? How is it, that thou being the veſſel of Prudence, thou art derided as fooliſh? How is it, that thou that art Honour it ſelf, Reſpect and Reverence, art by thoſe that are thy beſt friends reputed infamous? How is it that thou being the Treaſury of knowledge, art deſpiſed and contemned? Either there is ſome great defect in thee, or ſome evil diſpoſition in them: whereof the latter is moſt certain. They come unto thee (wanting the ballaſt of grave counſel and ſound advice) like a Ship without Sand, or Gravel in the Keel of her, to keep her ſteady; through lack whereof the Bark goes roulling and tottering to and fro, becauſe their ſhallow brains want that due weight and counterpoyſe, that ſhould ballaſt their underſtanding, and keep it ſtraight and upright.

To this purpoſe I will tell you a tale, worthy of long conſideration, though the diſcourſe be ſhort, and feigned for this effect.

When *Jove* had made the Fabrick of this univerſe, it ſeeming unto him, that all was fair and perfectly good; before he created Man, he formed all other living Creatures; amongſt the which, the Aſſe being deſirous to be the moſt remarkable and renowned of all the reſt, (which had he not done, he had not been an Aſſe) as ſoon as he had ſcarce newly opened his eyes, beholding this glorious and beautifull frame, he was wonderfull jocund and merry; began to leap and to skip from one place to another, and to bray (as they uſe to do) aloud (being the firſt Trumpeter, that ever was in the world) till being quite wearied out, and glad to take his eaſe, being a little gentler and cooler than he was before, it began to come in his minde; How, from whence, and when he was an Aſſe; for that he had not been an Aſſe from the beginning, nor begotten by an Aſſe. Which made him to examine with himſelf why, and to what end he was created, and what place ſhould be provided for him, where he might take his reſt; it being a thing proper unto Aſſes, to take the ends of things into their conſideration; when they are already paſt all remedy, and (as we ſay) at the laſt caſt, when the jollity of their youth is paſt, their merry dayes ſpent and gone, and their pleaſures at an end.

And yet would to God, that ſome would come to this amendment, and perſevere therein, *Que temprano ſe recoje, quien tarde ſe convierte.* For he recals himſelf in time, that returns at laſt. In this melancholy humour, my honeſt Aſſe comes me to *Jupiter*, humbly beſeeching him, that he would be pleaſed to reveal unto him who he was, and for what end he had created him? *Jupiter* told him, for the ſervice of man, and told him by piece-meal one after another, all thoſe duties and ſervices belonging to his charge, and what manner of burthens he was to bear.

Which news was ſo unpleaſing unto him, that upon the very hearing of it, there ſuddenly came bruiſes and gallings upon his back, and hardneſſe of hoofs, with his head and eyes hanging down to the ground for very grief. And out of a conceited fear of his future labour, (for evils not yet indured, out of the noiſe and rumour that they make, do, at the firſt nomination of them, fear us more than when we afterwards prove them) he remained in that ſad and melancholy dumpiſhneſſe, as we now uſually ſee him, conceiting that to be a moſt irkſome and painfull kinde of life whereunto he was deſtinated.

Whereupon he farther entreated of *Jupiter*, that he would be pleaſed to tell him, how long he was to lead this miſerable life? *Jupiter* told him, he was to continue therein, the full term of thirty years.

The Aſſe hereupon began to mourn and grieve anew, it ſeeming unto him, to be as it were a perpetual and eternal ſlavery, if it ſhould laſt ſo long: And therefore once more he humbly beſought *Jupiter*, that he would have compaſſion of him, and not ſuffer him for ſo long a ſeaſon, to indure ſo hard a ſervitude. And being that he had not yet diſmerited of him, by any fault that he had committed againſt him, nor would (if otherwiſe he could chuſe,) ever offend him, that ten years might ſuffice for his living in this baſe faſhion: all

which

which time he would faithfully promise unto him, to serve man well and truely, like an honest Asse, with all meekenesse and fidelity. And those other twenty, which were over and above remaining unto him, that he would bestow the over-plus of those years upon some one that were better able to bear them.

*Jupiter* being moved with these his humble and earnest intreaties (looking, poor silly fool, most pitifully) granted him his request. Whereupon the Asse was not altogether so sad as he was before.

The Dog, whose nature it is, to winde and sent out things, stood all this while attentively hearkning to all that had passed betwixt *Jupiter* and the Asse. And being desirous likewise to know something concerning his good, or bad fortune; albeit he carried himself here, in like a Dog, seeking to nose out that which was not lawfull for him: to wit, the secrets of the gods, which are onely reserved to themselves, (of which nature are future things, and such as are to fall out hereafter;) yet notwithstanding his errour therein was worthy some excuse, because he had the manners to crave this kindenesse of *Jupiter*, and did not, as some women do, and some of those peradventure that now hear me, who without God, (but not without the Devil) seek after Witches and Gypsies, to tell them their fortunes.

But how can they tell thee any good, who themselves are so bad? They tell them a thousand lyes, and fraudulent inventions, and steal from them (be it good, or bad) all that they can finger, leaving them afterwards amazed, ashamed, mocked, and deceived, and laught at for fools as long as they live.

But to return to our Story that we have in hand; The Dogge came to *Jupiter*, and besought him, (seeing that he had proceeded with the Asse, his Companion, so graciously, giving him upon the hearing of his Petition, satisfaction to his demands) that he would likewise afford him the like favour.

Who made him this answer; that his Office must be to run a hunting, and to kill Hares, and Conies, but not to touch, or eat one bit of them, but with all faithfulnesse to resign them up unto his Master. And afterwards, when he should return home weary and stiff with hunting, and following of his Game, he must be content to submit himself to be tyde to a post, to guard the house, where he should wait the eating of late and little suppers, feeding on a few cold scraps, and be glad to gnaw upon a bone, that had been already pickt and thrown away. And besides, (which was worse than all the rest) he should have many a bang about the loyns with a Cudgel, and many a spurn and kick with the foot.

Then did he ask him again, for how long a time he should indure all this pain? *Jupiter* told him, thirty years.

The Dogge, when he heard this doom, was very much daunted, and discontented, as thinking it too intollerable a thing to be indured; but relying on that grace and favour, which *Jupiter* had shew'd the Asse (hoping that he should taste as much of his goodnesse, as his fellow before him) intreated him to take pity of him, and that he would permit, that he should receive so much wrong, and be so hard and courtsely used; for he was the workman-ship of his hands, and no lesse his creature than was the Asse: and besides, he was more loving and faithfull, than all the other beasts of the field. And that therefore he would vouchsafe the favour, if not to lessen the time of his troublesom life, yet at least to equal him with the Asse. *Jupiter* condescended. The Dogge, in token of his thankfulnesse, bowed his nose to the ground, remitting into his hands the remainder of those his other twenty years.

Whilest these things were a doing, the Ape did not sleep, but lay close, and listened very diligently to all that had past, longing to see what would be the end and successe of these their supplications. And because it is a peculiar property belonging to the Ape, to imitate that, which others do, he would likewise in this follow his fellows, being desirous also to know, what should become of him? Perswading himself, that he that had shewed so much mercy to the Asse, and the Dog, would take no lesse pity of him.

Hereupon, he goes me to *Jupiter*, and humbly intreats him that he would deign to give him some light of that, which was like to befall him in the passage of this life, and for what end he had created him; for it was not a thing to be doubted, that he had made him in vain.

*Jupiter* signified unto him, that it should for the present be sufficient for him, onely to know, that he must go trayling of a chain upon the ground with a great clogge at the end of it, that should continually accompany him, and be bound as a Surety for him, in case he were not ty'd fast to some post, or the bar of a window; where, in the Summer he should

suffer

ſuffer heat, and in the Winter, cold; indure hunger and thirſt, eating his meat, leaping and skipping, and fetching many a friſcal. And that for every bit they gave him, he muſt firſt make a thouſand chatterings with his teeth, and as many mowes and mops with his mouth, in requital whereof he ſhould receive ſo many laſhes with a whip, onely to provoke others to laughter, and to make them merry.

He thought this was hard touching, he did not half like it, it was too curſt a School for him to be trained up in, and would then, (if he could) have made ſhew thereof by his many tears; but putting a good face on the matter (as your Apes can when they liſt) and patiently brooking his hard fortune, he would fain likewiſe know, how long he muſt be tied to that hard courſe of life? He received that anſwer from him, as the reſt had before, to wit, thirty years.

Grieved with this anſwer, but comforted with the hope that he had in the all-merciful *Jupiter*, he beſought him that they might not be more than thoſe of other beaſts, and even thoſe few he thought were too many to be indured.

*Jupiter* made good his requeſt, and granted him what he deſired; and the Ape kiſſing his hand (as if he had been born a Courtier) with a low Congee took his leave, and went away with his other companions and friends, the Aſſe and the Dog.

After theſe things were thus finiſhed and ſet in order, *Jupiter* at laſt created Man; making him a more perfect creature than any of the reſt, giving him an immortal and diſcurſive Soul; He gave him power and dominion over all that he had created upon earth; making him the uſu-fructuary Lord thereof. Man was very well pleaſed therewith, and took great delight in beholding how goodly a creature he was; how fair and beautiful; how curiouſly organized; how handſomly ſhap't; how ſtrongly ſet; how great and powerful a Prince; inſomuch that he began to think with himſelf, that ſuch an excellent fabrick, was worthy immortality. And therefore he intreated *Jupiter* to tell him; not, what ſhould become of him hereafter, but only, how long he was to live? *Jupiter* replied, That when he firſt determined the creation of all kinde of living creatures, and more particularly of Man, he was then reſolved to have given every one of them thirty years of life apiece.

Man hereupon began much to marvel, and wonder at the matter, that for ſo ſhort a time, he had made ſo admirable a piece of work; for in the opening and ſhutting of the eye, like unto a flower, his life ſhould paſs away, and ſhould ſcarce bring his feet from forth his mothers womb, but that he is entring with his head into that of the earth, rendring up his body to the grave, not injoying his age, nor that delightſome and pleaſant ſeat, wherein he had been created.

And therefore conſidering with himſelf what had lately paſſed betwixt *Jupiter* and thoſe other three beaſts before-mentioned, he humbled himſelf before him, and with a lowly (but pleaſing) countenance beſpake him thus:

Supream *Jupiter*: if my demand ſhall not be troubleſome unto thee, and againſt thy Divine Orders and Decrees, (for my intent ſhall never extend it ſelf to any the leaſt breach of the leaſt of them; nor ſhall I ever require any thing of thee, but what ſhall be fitting for me to crave, and ſhall ſtand with thy willingneſs to grant, alwayes conforming my will to thine) I humbly beg this boon at thy hands, that thou wilt be pleaſed, (ſince that theſe bruit beaſts, unworthy of theſe thy favours, have refuſed that life which thou gav'ſt them, the happineſs whereof, as being deprived of reaſon, they did not well underſtand, in that they have every one of them ſurrendred twenty years of thoſe, which thou granted'ſt unto them) to beſtow thoſe years upon me, which they have refuſed, that my life may thereby be inlarged, and thou by me the better ſerved.

*Jupiter* gave ear to this his Petition, and granted unto him, that (as man) he ſhould live but his own thirty years. Marry when they were ſpent, he ſhould inherit thoſe of the other three in their order.

Firſt, he ſhould injoy the Aſſes twenty, ſupplying his Office, in moiling and toiling in the world, tumbling and toſſing to and fro; firſt to one place, and then to another, carrying and re-carrying home, and out again, carking and caring to provide for the neceſſaries of this life. This thou muſt do, (if thou mean to live another day) from thy thirty to fifty.

Now from fifty to ſeventy; thou ſhalt live like a Dog, barking at one, ſnarling at another; grumbling at this, and growling at that, vexing thy ſelf, and offending others.

And laſtly, from ſeventy to ninety, thou muſt play the Ape, counterfeiting thoſe thy defects of nature, and uſing of tricks and toyes, and I know not what fooliſh and fantaſtick devices.

And

And hence it is, that we often ſee thoſe that come to this Age (for all they be ſo old) would fain ſeem young. Tricking themſelves up ſo neatly and ſo ſprucely, jetting it (like young Gallants) up and down the ſtreets in gay clothes, viſiting this Lady, making love to that Miſtreſſe, and undertake, I know not what impoſſibilities, that they may be accounted jolly ſtout Gentlemen, repreſenting that, which indeed they are not, even juſt for all the world, as the Ape doth, who is never quiet, nor thinks himſelf well pleaſed, but when in his actions he is imitating man, though he can never come to be a man.

It is a terrible thing, and not to be indured, that men will, in deſpight as it were of Time, (which diſcovers all deceits, and ought likewiſe to put them out of this their errour) apply themſelves to runne a courſe contrary to the truth, and that with their tinctures, plaiſtrings, lees, and ſlibber-ſlabbers, ſhould play as it were with a Juglers box, to cozen others, and diſcredit themſelves.

As if by theſe Artifices, they could eat the more, ſleep the ſounder, live the longer, or be troubled with the fewer infirmities and diſeaſes; or that by this courſe they take, the teeth, which they have ſhed, would come again, or to keep thoſe from falling from them, which are yet remaining. Or as if by this means they could repair their feeble limbs; recover their natural heat; quicken anew their old and frozen bloud; or as if thereby they did think they had the power in their own hands, to make themſelves what they liſt, and as luſty as they liſt: In a word, as if they were ignorant what the world talks of them; when as they themſelves talk of nothing elſe, than which is the better lie, and which the better die; which either this or that other man makes. Nor is all this, which I have now delivered unto you, much amiſs from the purpoſe; being that I am to make my concluſion touching this point; the Propoſitions conſiſting of two Gentlemen, both free-men of this fooliſh Company, for whoſe ſake you have had the Premiſes.

My Lord, the Ambaſſadour, (as you have already heard) kept a free Table, was rich, and took great pleaſure in keeping a good houſe. And becauſe all gueſts do not alwayes give content; it one day happened, that he made a feaſt for the Spaniſh Ambaſſadour: and amongſt divers other Gentlemen, there came two to dinner unto him, that were principal perſons: the one, a Captain; the other, a Doctor of Lavv: but to his Lordſhip both troubleſome and wearisome alike, for the great pleaſure that they took to hear themſelves talk. Of whoſe impertinences, and frivolous diſcourſes, my Lord had in private ſome ſpeech with me heretofore.

For albeit he took great delight and contentment in hearing men of wit and learning, ſpeakers of truth, and ſuch as were diſcreet in their carriage and behaviour; ſo on the contrary, could he by no means indure any kinde of falſhood, or lying, though it were but in jeſt and merriment.

He could not abide an Hypocrit, or a flatterer, plain dealing with him was a Jewel: He would, that mens words and works ſhould be ſimple, without ſophiſtication, and truly noble, without any manner of doubling, and diſſimulation.

And howbeit in theſe two men, there were very good motives and reaſons to cauſe men to hate and abhor them; yet I am of the minde, and hold it infallibly true, that in the liking or diſliking of this, or that man, one more than another, there is ſome Celeſtial Influence conſpiring therewithall, and on theſe two had it wrought with great efficacy, and ſtrong effects; for there was no man but did hate them.

My Maſter would fain have rid his hands of them, and have ſhak't them off, but he could not, for that they met him in the ſtreet in his way homeward, and would needs wait on him to his houſe; as men that did much honour his Lordſhip, and did owe him a great deal more ſervice, than this their willing attendance upon his perſon, whereunto they owed all reſpect. So that my Lord (being ſo noble a Gentleman as he was) was driven by force to invite them to ſtay dinner, who had as it were by force accompanied him to his houſe. Nor is there any vexation, that can vex a man more, than ſuch petty vexations, which a man would fain put off, but knowes not handſomly how to do it. O this incroaching kindneſs, what a croſſe it is, when it ſhall be inforced upon a man, whether he will or no, unleſs the one will be as uncivil, as the other is impudent!

As ſoon as I ſaw my Lord enter within the gates, I perceived preſently by his countenance that ſomething, what ever it were, did trouble him. I looked earneſtly upon him, and he underſtood my meaning. He told me what it was, (ſpeaking unto me with his eyes, by caſting them upon theſe two Gentlemen) and I needed no farther inſtruction to direct me, what I had to do.

I held my peace for the preſent, and diſſembled my anger, beginning to caſt about vvith my ſelf, what courſe I were beſt to take, to make thoſe men (who had ſo diſtaſted my Maſter) a ſport and laughing-ſtock to all the reſt of the company, and ſo to make them pay dearly for their dinner.

I had no ſooner entertained this thought, but there came preſently into my head a pretty odde prank, that made fit for my purpoſe. Nor did I take much pains in the finding of it out; for they came thither handſomly interlarded, and the jeſt, themſelves had brought it along with them ready dreſt, and very well ſeaſon'd. Onely I expected a fit occaſion to ſet it before them, which was now near at hand. But I did refer it, till the laſt courſe ſhould be ſerved in, and almoſt ended, that it might take the better. For the mouth that will be filled with laughter, muſt not have it's belly empty. A merry heart and an hungry maw, ſeldome meet. *Tanto ſerie, quanto ſe come.* As a man likes his fare, ſo he laughes; proportioning his mirth, according to his meat. The Cloth was laid, meat on the boord, the Gueſts were merry, healths went round, and when I ſaw their bloods grew vvarm, and that they were ſet upon the merry pin, talking and laughing on all hands, ſome of one thing, ſome of another, a little before they were to waſh, the Towel being not yet thrown on the boord, nor the Baſon and Ewer ſet down, I came cloſe to the Captains ſide, and rounding him in the ear, told him a notable *non ſequitur*; He laught heartily at it, and being bound to requite me with another, made me bend down my head towards his boſome, that he might the better tell it me in mine ear; and ſo in ſecret, vve made tvvo or three paſſages one upon another; and when I ſavv my time, and that it ſerved fit for my purpoſe, I began to raiſe my voice a note higher, and vvith a cheerful look, ſmiling merrily upon him, (as if we had talked all this vvhile of that vvhich I ſhall novv tell you, when (God he knows) vve had never a vvord of any ſuch matter) I told him, No, my *Sennor Capitan*, no, you ſhall pardon me, I vvill not, if your Worſhip vvill vent it your ſelf, you may better do it than I, for you have a good tongue to put it home, and a better arm to maintain it. I vvill hatch none of your eggs (good Captain) forth vvith them your ſelf. For theſe are no fit and ſavoury Jeſts for ſuch a poor youth as I am, and being ſo great a ſervant of Maſter Doctors, as no man in the vvorld can be more.

With that, my maſter, and all the reſt of the Gueſts beſides, began to cry out unto me at once, How now *Guzmanillo*, what's the matter? I know not Sir, unleſs my noble Captain here long to ſee my crown ſhaven, and to have me to take my Degrees, which it ſeems he would fain have me to do, ſeeking to ſet the Doctor and me together by the ears, and put us to the paring of each others nails, till we be both toucht to the quick.

The Captain, when he heard me ſay ſo, was froſt-bitten, and marvelling what the myſtery of this roguery ſhould be, ſuſpected, there was ſome knavery in it, though he knew not what. And not knowing what to do, fell a laughing, without ſpeaking any one word at all.

But the Spaniſh Ambaſſadour call'd unto me, and ſaid, Friend *Guzman*, now by my life you ſhall not ſmother it; what's the matter, I prethee? Let us knovv of theo, why at one and the ſelf-ſame time, thou laugheſt, and yet ſeemeſt angry? It muſt needs be ſome good conceit or other, and therefore out with it.

Seeing your Lordſhip hath laid down ſo great a pawne, as your life, I ſhall (though loth, and much againſt my will) tell you what it is; and I proteſt unto your Lordſhip, that I had rather have held my peace, and had you not ſworne by your life, I would ſooner have had my tongue drawn backwards out of the nape of my neck, than to utter the leaſt ſyllable of that which I ſhall now fully deliver unto you. Your Lordſhip ſhall therefore underſtand, that my Captain here laid his command upon me, that I would break a jeſt upon this Doctor, my worthy and noble friend; girding at the cut of his beard; for he ſaith, that the faſhion of his beard is juſt for all the world like one of thoſe upon your Flemiſh Jugges, and that a-nights he puts it in a Preſs, made of two thinne Trenchers ſcrew'd wonderful cloſe, that no Ghittern can be cloſer ſhut up in its Caſe, that it may come forth the next morning in even corners, bearing in groſſe the form of a Broom, narrow above, and broad beneath, his Muchato's, Ruler-wiſe, ſtrait and level as a line; and all the other hairs, as juſt and as even as a Privet hedge, newly cut; anſwering each other in an uniform manner, having the point thereof in form of a Quadrant, drawn neatly out, that it might make the fairer and larger ſhow. For ſuch a goodly Beard, accompanied with a Roman Bonnet (like your Briefes and your Larg's in a Singing-mans Book) doth grace his leſſer and groſſer notes. As if this were ſufficient to make him be held a great Scholar: As

if

if this fair outside were a qualification for him: as if men had not seen your *Cavallos Argeles*, some horses with one only white foot on the far side behinde, having all the other parts of their body of another colour, and yet come of a very good race. And some great block-heads, (though bred up in Universities) whose ignorance is a great deal larger than their Gowns; being like herein unto some kinde of Melons, which cozen us with the gloriousness of their colour, seeming to be good Melons to the show, but indeed are worse then Pompeons; no stuff, no goodness in them. And this was it which my Captain would have had me said, as from my self. And this was it which made me cry, No, no; and that he should tell it himself, and he would, for I would none of it. This is all, my Lord: if there be more behinde, your Lordship may be pleased to lay your Command on the Captain, who (I know) will be ready in this, or any thing else to do your worship service.

The Captain blest himself, when he saw whither I had driven the nail, wondring at this my subtilnesse of wit, and cunning conveyance, himself and all the rest of the company laughing at it, but none of them witting whether it were a truth or a lie, that had past thus between us.

But my Doctor, having his head well warmed with Wine, knew not whether he were best to be angrie, or to turn it to a jest? But because they lookt still more and more upon him, and every ones eyes was fixed on him, he pawsed a while, and carrying a countenance betwixt anger and shame, at last he vented himself, and spake thus unto them.

My Lord, if my profession would permit it, that I should give my selfe that satisfaction, which such an impudency as this deserveth, your Lordship might easily believe, that I would comply with that obligation, wherein I stand bound to my progenitours, and the honour of my House.

But being that your Lordships presence doth priviledge this insolent boldness, and that this place will afford me no other weapons than my tongue, your Lordship may be pleased to give me leave to demand of this Captain, How old he is? For if that be true which he sayes, that he served the Emperour, *Charles* the first, in his wars, being with him at the battel of *Tunez*, how comes it to pass that he hath never a white hair in all his beard? nor black one in his head? And if he be so young, as he would seem to be, why doth he say, that he was present with him, at such an ancient piece of service, and so long ago as that was? Let him tell us, I pray, in what *Jordan* he hath washed, or to what Saint recommended himself; to the end, that we may all offer up Tapers to his shrine, and have recourse unto him for help, when we shall have the like need? Let him first declare this, and then let him goe on with his game, and I will play mine as well as I can. And since he hath first trumped about, let us try, who can soonest beat out one another, and winne most Trickes. For there is no reason he should so carry it away, nor shall he get any thing by his crossing of me, while I have a trumpe in mine hand.

All the whole boord fell a laughing afresh, but especially my Master, for that two things were then treated, which of all others he did hate and detest, and desired the reformation of them, as no man more.

And having well observed all that had passed herein, he said unto me; Now tell me, *Guzmanillo*, what thou doest think of this? Since thou hast proposed the Argument, I will have thee to resolve the Question. I then told him, All the answer that I can make your Lordship, is onely this: That they have both said Truth, and yet both of them Lie in their beards.

## Chapter IV.

*The Doctor finding himself agrieved, that* Guzmanillo *had wronged him in the presence of so many Gentlemen, would be revenged of him. The Spanish Ambassadour takes up the quarrel: The French causing another of the guests, that was there at Table, to relate an accident that befel the Constable of* Castile, Don Alvaro de Luna.

They did all highly commend the jest; and some did indear it so far, that the Doctor thereby was the more inraged; insomuch that they were sorry they had prest it so far, and given it so great an applause.

But the Ambassadour of *Spain*, through his great wisdome, threw in his *Warder*, and took up the quarrel, making it (by his discreet handling of the matter) a merry meeting onely of friends, where no exception was to be taken at any thing that should merrily pass amongst them.

The Captain was a good natur'd man, well behav'd, an old beaten Souldier, and a good fellow, who laught heartily at it, let it pass as a jest, and blessed himself, vowing and protesting that he never spake any one such word unto me, nor was it ever in his thought to touch upon any such point. And though he were nipt, yet because he was a discreet Gentleman and a Souldier, (amongst whom now and then jests are broken, as well as Lances) should the Doctor have used him worse than he did, he would either not have heard it, or seem to set light by it, for that he thought he had some reason so to do, because what he then spake, came from him, as one that had been much injur'd and abused.

But when the Doctor certainly knew, that I had been the onely Author of all this mischief, he did set upon me in that fierce and terrible manner, that he did cut his words with his teeth, not being able to pronounce them plain through his too much eagerness, and heat of choler. And he would fain have risen from the table to have had me by the ears, and to have pummeld me soundly about the head and the nose, and to have buffeted my cheeks; but they would not suffer him so to do.

And seeing he could not be revenged on me, as he would; and having no other weapon to beat me withall but his tongue, he roundly laid about him, and letting the reins loose to his rage, he bestowed his livery upon me, calling me by all the vile names he was able to reckon up; whereof I made little reckoning; but did rather help him on, by teaching him what he should say.

This madded him more than all the rest, to see me thus mock and scoff at all that he said, which made him break out worse than before, and to grow farre more violent and outragious with me. For as if this bitter jest had been some Excommunication, that by a joynt consent, and a general Councel, as it were, had gone out against him, and that every one of us had a finger therein, he car'd not whom he paid; and almost, nay, more than almost, (if my Master had not stopt him in this furious course, as one that knew well, what an huge dust a foolish cholerick fellow will sometimes raise, both to his own and others hurt) this business had grown exceeding foul.

He sought to pacifie him with the best reasons he could then use unto him, as one that would fain turn the water another way, and divert these his evil intentions towards me; Which that he might the better do, he began to shuffle the Cards anew, sundring the one from the other; and that he might wholly cut off all that former offensive conversation, he turned himself towards *Cæsar*, that Neapolitan Gentleman, who had told him of that sad accident, that had befaln *Dorido* and *Clorinia*, (who was likewise one of his guests) and said unto him.

*Sennor Cæsar*, since the hard hap and untimely death of the fair *Clorinia* is now known to all *Rome*, and to these Gentlemen that are here present, let us intreat you to do us this favour, to deliver unto us, what became of constant *Dorido*; for I have a great desire to know how he sped. That, and it may please your Excellency (said *Cæsar*) you shall hear in its due place and time; for this is no fit season for it; it being not meet to mingle such misfortunes amidst our merriments, nor will it suit so well with this day of feast and jollity, especially considering what hath passed here already, to the disturbance of this good company, that are met here of purpose to be merry.

But since that we have now dined, and the time of each mans taking his nap, draws on,

I will recount another Story unto you, which this preſent occaſion repreſents unto me: Which, for that it is a true one, I doubt not but ye will be much delighted therewith. They all kindly entertained his proffer; and when he ſaw they were attentive to him, he thus began.

The Conſtable of *Caſtile*, *Don Alvaro de Luna*, in the time of his greateſt Greatneſſe (his Honours increaſing dayly more and more) reſiding in *Valladolid*, took great pleaſure in the Summer to riſe betimes in the morning to go abroad to uſe ſome exerciſe, and to take the freſh air of the fields. And after that he had been walking thus abroad, he would (before the Sun ſhould be able to offend him) with-draw himſelf home to his houſe.

But having one day amongſt the reſt inlarged his walk, and entertained himſelf longer then he was wont to do, in a pleaſant Garden, near adjoyning to the River *Piſuerga*, recreating himſelf in beholding the variety of Walks, and the beautifull Flowers, the delicate Arbours, the ſhady Trees, and ſavoury fruits, the heat entred in ſo far, before he was aware of it, that what out of his fear of not returning back with conveniency, and the content that he took in this his ſweet and delightfull recreation, he was reſolved to remain there, and to take his full pleaſure of that place untill ſuch time of the evening, as the heat ſhould be overpaſt.

And whileſt his other ſervants were buſie in providing all things neceſſary for his dinner, that he might the better in the mean while paſſe away the time, he intreated two Gentlemen, that accompanied him thither, the one *Don Luys de Caſtro*; and the other, *Don Rodrigo de Montaluo*, that each of them would tell him ſome Love-ſtory, whoſe ſucceſſe had been full of dangers, and full of cares, as none could be greater. For, he very well knew, that theſe two Gentlemen were the onely Gallants then in Court, and great Lovers of Ladies, being both of them, beſides Noble in their name and bloud, diſcreet, valiant, active in their perſons, of fair both feature and behaviour, curious in their Cloaths, witty in their jeſts, un-offenſively pleaſant in a word, ſo generally well qualified, and ſo adorned with all thoſe ornaments, that might grace either their ſpeech, or their actions, that they were very well able to give him that ſatisfaction upon this ſubject, as more could not be deſired. And the better to animate them on, he promiſed, in reward, a rich Diamond Ring, that he then wore upon his finger, to him, whoſe tale, for the ſtrangeneſſe of the ſucceſſe, ſhould beſt deſerve it, *Don Luys de Caſtro* was firſt to begin, and thus he proceeded:

It may be (my Lord Conſtable) that other Lovers, in the recounting of their misfortunes, go painting and ſetting of them forth, with feigned ſorrows, Hyperbolicall amplifications, ſuch delicacy of phraſe, and tenderneſſe of words, to work compaſſion; that with the ſmoothneſſe of their ſtile, and the meltingneſſe of their language, they move many to pity: and of theſe in this kinde much hath been written. But that really and truely ſtript naked of all kinde of dreſſing, and the neat cloathing of eloquence, there ſhould happen in theſe preſent times a buſineſſe of the like nature, as is mine, that I have now in hand, is a thing impoſſible. For it is one of the ſtrangeſt, and the moſt to be wondred at, of all that ever I yet read, or heard of. And becauſe your Excellency is to be my Judge in this caſe, I am very well perſwaded you will acknowledge as much, when you know my ſufferings.

I loved a certain Lady of this Kingdom, that was a Virgin, and fulfilled with all thoſe laudable and notable qualities, which might be found in any other whoſoever; being as fair and beautifull, as ſhe was diſcreet and honeſt, whereof, (and much more than I will now ſpeak,) I make *Don Rodrigo de Mantaluo* here preſent, my witneſſe; as the onely friend that bare me company, and was throughly acquainted with all that which paſt between us. I ſerv'd her many, (and thoſe the beſt part) of my years with that punctuality and ſecrecy, that there was never any the leaſt notice taken of it, yet ſtill obſerving her with that diligence, as the like was never known; and indeavouring alwayes to give her all thoſe contents, which ſhe could poſſibly deſire from me. For her I ran at the Ring, & ever made my ſelf one; at the *juego de toros, y cavas*, maintained Turneys, and Tiltings, ordained royal Feaſts and Masks; and what not? And for to quit all ſuſpicion, and to carry the buſineſſe ſo handſomly, that none might finde me out, and diſcover this my love; nay, that they might not have any the leaſt preſumption thereof; at all theſe great and ſolemne meetings, my eyes were never placed upon her, but ſome other of the Ladies that were there, though ſhe notwithſtanding did really and truely know, that thoſe of my ſoul were never off her, but ſtill waited upon her, and that ſhe was the ſole Miſtreſſe of my heart, and that for her ſake onely, and none but hers, I invented all theſe honourable pleaſures, and delightfull entertainments for her.

Upon theſe kindes of Feaſts and Sports, and other the like occaſions, directed onely to this end, I ſpent ſo much, that I waſted and conſumed a great deal of wealth, letting my mony fly the faſter, in hope it might make her come the ſooner; and ſelling away my poſſeſſions, that I might compaſſe the poſſeſſing of her; which was to me a treaſure of more worth than all the world beſides.

My Father (it is well known) left me wonderfull rich, both in goods, and in lands, but in ſhort, I ſent it packing; and paſt away one thing after another, till in the end I became ſo poor, that your Lordſhips favour is the onely prop that doth uphold me, without the which I muſt have faln. And though this (I muſt tell you) be none of the leaſt griefs, to ſee a Gentleman of ſuch parts and qualities as my ſelf, to be outed of all that he ha's, to become ſo poor and needy, that neceſſity muſt tye him to ſerve, who was wont heretofore to be ſerved; (howbeit, I acknowledge it a happineſſe unto me, that I am your Lordſhips ſervant.) Though I muſt confeſſe withall, they are the happier men, and the more beholden to fortune, who lead a quiet and ſecure life, free from other mens commands, not beating their brains, nor breaking their ſleeps, in ſeeking means, how to creep into this mans favour, and to ſerve himſelf into that, or t'other Lords good grace and opinion.

But of all my misfortunes, the greateſt that ever befell me, and which ſits cloſeſt to my heart, and doth fret the very ſoul of me, and fill it with anguiſh, was, That my Miſtreſſe having entertained me with falſe hopes, and vain promiſes, vowing, that ſhe would never beſtow her favours upon any other, but that in recompence of my conſtant love, ſhe would be Married unto me, whereunto ſhe plighted me her faith and troth. But whether theſe were the words of a woman, or the works of my ſhort fortunes; now when ſhe ſaw my means were ſpent, and my ſelf grown poor, un-mindefull of all thoſe indearments, vows and proteſtations that had paſt between us, ſhe ſhook off that hand of hers from mine, to whom ſhe had firſt given it, and gave it to another, and forſaking me, married him; failing (falſe as ſhe was) in her faith, and quality: for ſcorning my poor condition, and not eſteeming thoſe my other good natural parts, ſhe made choiſe of thoſe goods of fortune, taking a husband far unequal to her ſelf; for, as he exceeded in wealth, ſo he did in years. But ſuch is the force of money that it can ſupply all defects, and drive unequal matches, to draw in one yoke.

Thus have I briefly diſcovered unto your Lordſhip, touching my love, ſhewing you how happy the beginning was, and how diſaſtrous the end. And although (that I might not weary and tyre out your Lordſhip) I have been ſo brief, that the ſhortneſſe of my diſcourſe may ſeem to leſſen my misfortunes, and the miſeries that I then indured; yet I preſume, your Lordſhips diſcretion will ſupply that want, and fully conceive what, and how great they were; As alſo take into your conſideration, how many troubles they have ſuffered, and how many perils they dayly run thorow, who wing their thoughts with ſuch high-flying feathers, and who uſe ſuch great diligence and ſecrecy in the carriage of their love, to the end that nothing on their part ſhould be wanting, which they thought belonged to their duty, in that behalf. Which my ſelf had ſpecial care of.

I do not think that either *Don Rodrigo*, or any other Gentleman whatſoever can inſtance in a ſucceſſe of more misfortune then this of mine; for that loving her with that firmneſſe and conſtancy, (as I did) and ſerving her with that love and faithfulneſſe, (as none poſſibly could be more;) I loſt my time, I loſt my means, and laſt of all (to make the roll of my miſeries the fuller) I loſt my Miſtreſſe. Onely there is left unto me by fortune, (in exchange of theſe my many miſchances) the receiving of this Ring, by way of reward.

And here *Don Luys* made an end of his amorous diſcourſe, and *Don Rodrigo de Montalvo* entred upon his, in manner following.

The Ring (*Don Luys*) is none of yours, you have loſt it, and I ought of right to have it. And turning himſelf towards the Conſtable, he thus went on in his ſpeech:

Moſt noble Sir, Though I confeſſe that to be true, which *Don Luys* hath delivered unto your Lordſhip, for that I was an eye-witneſſe of all this buſineſſe, in regard of that great love and friendſhip, which was ever between us; yet now at this preſent, he hath no reaſon to pretend the Diamond; for if he would but free himſelf of paſſion, and put on temperate conſideration of the paſſages in this his love, and that he and I might but change places, I do aſſure my ſelf, that he would judge this cauſe in my favour, and give ſentence againſt himſelf. But being that he is now blinded ſo with paſſion, that he cannot diſcern things with indifferency; your Excellency may be pleaſed to judge firſt of his Love, and afterwards to cenſure the bad ſucceſſe of mine: which ſhall take it's beginning from the end of his,

which

which your Excellency hath already heard him recount. And thus (may it pleaſe you to give me the hearing) did things paſſe.

It is not long ago, that he and I went walking abroad near to this River-ſide, where now we are, talking and diſcourſing of ſome things far out of the reach of our hopes; when unlooked for, there came to *Don Luys*, an ancient ſervant belonging to this Gentlewoman his Miſtreſſe, from whom he ſecretly delivered him a Letter. Which he having opened, and read it over, when he had done, he gave it me, that I likewiſe might peruſe it. Which I did again and again, wondering very much at the Contents thereof. For which cauſe, (as alſo having a reaſonable good memory) I carried it all away; which ſpeaketh after this manner:

*DEar Sir, you have little reaſon to accuſe me of ingratitude, onely becauſe it ſeems unto you, that you have ſome juſt cauſe ſo to do. For it is not poſſible that any one ſhould forget (as you have thought of me) him, whom he truely loves. And ſince I know mine own Obligation, and your conſtancie, I would have you likewiſe to underſtand (though perhaps you will not acknowledge ſo much) that I neither now do, or have heretofore committed any fault againſt you. And that my actions did not correſpond with your deſerts, the reaſon was, becauſe they could not ſtand with that* Decorum, *which was due to my Maiden ſtate, and the danger that might enſue thereupon. My marriage with you (which I deſired more, than I did mine own life) the obedience of a Daughter did diſturb, and the Commands and earneſt importunities of my Parents, who were violently carried away, moved thereunto by vain intereſt, and the Title of a Counteſſe, which I hold againſt my will, ſince they did force me to yield my body unto him, to whom I could never ſurrender my Soul, being in condition and years ſo contrary unto me, I have been yours, I am yours, and ſhall be yours all the dayes of my life. I ſhall give you to underſtand, that the Count my husband is to undertake a long journey; haſten hither unto me as ſoon as you can, and bring no other perſon along with you, ſave your friend* Don Rodrigo. *And when you ſhall come to this Town, you ſhall finde in a Hermitage adjoyning thereunto, order given you for that which you are to do. Love me with all your heart (as you were wont) and as I do you. And live you as happily, as I wiſh you; Concluding my Letter with dear embracements, which attend your coming.*

Theſe were the Contents of the Letters; which *Don Luys* having well ſeen and conſidered, did expect nothing leſſe, than what was therein contained, which was the onely thing he wiſhed and deſired above all other happineſſe in this world. So that if I would, yet I ſhould not be able to expreſſe unto you, thoſe amorous paſſions which he then felt. He read it over and over; dwelling upon every word and ſyllable of this Letter. He looked upon every line, more than once, or twice, weighed them as a man would weigh Gold, and when he had ballanced them in his judgement, and found they were not light, but bare their full poyze, putting them to his mouth, he kiſt them a thouſand and a thouſand times over. He firſt look't earneſtly on the Letter, then on the bearer, and my ſelf, as if he ſtood expecting that we ſhould ſpeak our mindes, and with a loud voice proclaim the certainty of this his promiſed good, and the great content that he took in this fortunate, but unexpected news. For as yet he doubted thereof: but at laſt, when he had recollected his ſpirits, which had been all this while a wool-gathering, with ſomewhat a troubled, but more cheerfull countenance, he ſaid unto me, What is this (*Don Rodrigo*) that we ſee? Am I out of my wits? Or is this a dream? Art thou ſure, that it is thee and I, that have read this Letter? Is this happily the Counteſſes Letter, this her own hand? and that, her old Servant? Doth my judgement peradventure fail me? Or, as an afflicted Lover, growing on to deſperation, do I feign imaginations to my ſelf, to deceive my phantaſie?

After that he had thus continued a while, driven to and fro with theſe diſtractions, as a Boat that waves this [illegible] that way, having the tide with it, but the winde againſt it; I aſſured him, that the[illegible]re not illuſions, or idle apparitions, but things really true, and that carried along with them aſſured hopes of recovering and enjoying his loſt Jewel. And thereupon I heartned him on, that he ſhould haſten his departure with all poſſible ſpeed, that he might comply with that, which his Miſtreſſe had given him in charge. This was preſently put in execution, for we ſtraight took horſe, and away we went. And when we came to the Hermitage we found therein a very grave and reverend Dame, who, for that ſhe had notice given her before hand, of the day and hour that we were to come thither, ſtayed there, expecting of our coming.

Now,

Now, when ſhe knew that we were the men ſhe looked for, ſhe delivered us a Meſſage, the effect whereof was this; That her Lord, the *Conde*, was gone forth upon his journey, but was now newly returned, by reaſon of a certain indiſpoſition of body that ſeized on him upon the way: But intreated us notwithſtanding, that we would have the patience to ſtay there, till ſhe went to the Palace, to acquaint her *Lady* the Counteſſe of our coming. She went; we ſtaid; I much amazed, and *Don Luys* quite out of heart: I for thoſe difficulties, which might offer themſelves; He in conſidering his croſſe fortune, which did never leave off to perſecute him.

Now, while this good woman was gone upon her errand, in the mean while, till ſhe ſhould make her return, we ran over many ſtories, and I know not what idle tales and diſcourſes, which being of different Subjects, are not fit to be inter-ſerted with this that we have now in hand.

Well, about eleven a Clock at night, ſhe came back again unto us, and told us, we muſt follow her. We did ſo. The darkneſſe of the night did much befriend us, ſo that by this good help, ſhe brought us unſeen, and with much ſecrecy into a lodging in the Palace, where we no ſooner were, but the Counteſſe comes forth, and receives us with extraordinary tokens of joy and gladneſſe. And after that ſome few ceremonies were ended, and that the *Para bienes* had paſt to and fro of this long deſired inter-view, which Complements were very ſhort and brief, the Counteſſe ſaid unto me, *Don Rodrigo*; the time, that is now offered unto us, to enjoy this fair occaſion, you, in your own diſcretion may judge, how ſoon it will be gone. You know likewiſe the obligation of true friendſhip, and the firm affection, which you have alwayes made ſhew to bear unto *Don Luys*: but ſay, this ſhould fail (which I no way miſ-doubt,) yet for my ſake; who beg it at your hands, you are bound in courteſie to grant me my requeſt. You have already underſtood, how the Count my husband not finding himſelf half well, returned (being well advanced on his way) back from his journey, who came home ſo weary, that he preſently got him to bed, where I have left him faſt aſleep. But becauſe it may ſo fall out, that in turning, or waking, he ſhould ſtretch out a legge, or an arm, towards that ſide of the bed where I lye, and ſhould finde my place empty, and no body there, it muſt be a great deal of danger, that I muſt run, beſides the great ſcandal that would grow thereby to the houſe, that therefore, whil'ſt your friend *Don Luys* and my ſelf ſhall entertain the time in talk, (which at the moſt ſhall be but ſome quarter of an hour, or thereabouts,) you would be pleaſed to go lye down in my place, and remain there in bed, that I may in the mean while abide the ſafer here. And I will aſſure you on my honeſt word, that you ſhall not thereby incur any danger. For beſides that the Count is old, and that he never wakes a-nights, untill it be broad day, and doth ſeldom, or never turn above once, and then preſently fall aſleep again; He is ſo tyred with his journey, and of that indiſpoſition of body at this preſent, that there is no fear to be had, that he will ſo much as but offer to ſtir, or move himſelf at all. But ſay he ſhould, and that he ſhould turn and touch you, for the foreſaid reaſons, he will not dream of any bodies being there but my ſelf.

God he knows (and your Excellency may conceive) how much it troubled me, that the Counteſſe ſhould put me upon ſuch a perilous piece of ſervice. But becauſe the actions of cowardize are ſo foul in themſelves, and ſo ill-beſeeming a Gentleman, it ſeemed unto me, that if I ſhould now fly off, and refuſe to undergo this buſineſſe, I ſhould not give ſatisfaction either to mine own honour, or my friends Love, or the Counteſſes requeſt, I told her, I would very willingly, and with all my heart do her this ſervice: but withall, did very earneſtly intreat them, that they would not ſtay too long in the entertaining of their loves, ſeeing they were not ignorant of the danger, whereinto for their ſakes I did thus voluntarily thruſt my ſelf. They promiſed; nay, ſwore unto me, that they would not; and that at the moſt ſhe would not tarry away above half an hour.

The Counteſſe put me into a night-dreſſing and a Smock: and when I had put off all my Cloaths, ſhe led me along to her with-drawing Chamber, a[illegible]wards made me to lye down in her bed. There was no light at all in the Chamber, all [illegible] dark as Hell, and in a ſtill ſilence. I ſoftly laid my ſelf down upon the very edge and brim, as it were of the bed, as far from the Count, as I poſſibly could deviſe, and in that manner, I remained there, not a quarter, or half part of an hour, but five good long hours and more, till it was break of day.

Now let every man conſider and think with himſelf, in what a poor caſe I was, being in ſuch a place as this, and at ſuch a time; with what a deal of care that I might not be known, and with what a deal of fear, leſt this deceit ſhould be diſcovered, and did leaſt of all think

on

on that, which did moſt concern me, which could be no leſſe than death, if the Count ſhould chance to awake. For in regard that I went in thither naked, and warmed, I muſt fight it out with my fiſts onely, and try how the ſtrength of my arms would help me; and admit I ſhould have ſtruggled with the Count, and had the fortune to eſcape his hands, yet could I not thoſe of the ſervants of his houſe, becauſe I knew not how, nor which way to order my flight.

But theſe were not all the griefs I then indured, they went on a little farther. For *Don Luys* and the Counteſſe did laugh and talk ſo loud, that I might hear every word almoſt that they had ſaid, as I lay in the bed, wherewith my fear was much increaſed, leſt happily their diſ-compoſed carriage might chance to awaken the Count; and it did mightily vex me, and almoſt mad me; that I could not call unto them to keep leſſe noiſe, ſeeing they would not yet break company, it grieving me to the very Soul, that they ſhould ſeem as forgetfull of themſelves, as they were of me. This made me to bite my fingers ends for very anger; as alſo, that I durſt not for mine ears ſtir a jot from the place where I lay; for fear of ſpotting my honour; and leſſe did I dare to call unto them, for fear of waking the Count.

After all theſe lingrings, and fearfull paſſages, when they ſaw that day was now ſo nigh, they came both of them laughing hand in hand to the beds ſide, with a light in their hand, (I being frighted almoſt out of my little wits) where they ſportingly friſked and skipped about me, making a great noiſe, as well with their tongues, as their feet.

Then I began to imagine with my ſelf, that through too much content, they had both run mad: So that now, I was as ſorry for their misfortune, as mine own; for that the infamy and puniſhment was like to be general, and to light upon us all, not permitting any to eſcape; upon them, for offending; upon me, for conſenting. I was in that pitifull taking, that within a very little ſpace, I had a thouſand imaginations in my head, but not one that could do me any good, or ſtand me in ſtead.

And whileſt I was thus puzled, in the midſt of my greateſt conflict, they drew nearer to the bed it ſelf; and the Counteſſe drawing the Curtain, that we might now plainly ſee one another, then was I quite out of my ſenſes; inſomuch that I would have fain fled away, had *I* well known whither: but *I* quickly came to my ſelf again. For *I*, who had hitherto thought, that *I* had the Count lying by me, the Counteſſe lifting up the Cloaths of the bed, cleared that error, and gave me to underſtand, that it was not he, but the Counteſſes ſiſter, a pure Virgin, yet as fair as *Venus*. Whereat, as likewiſe the jeſt, (which I now perceived they had put upon me) I was ſo aſhamed, and daſht out of countenance, that for my life I was not able to ſpeak a word, nor knew not what in the world to do, but to riſe up in my ſmock (for in that caſe was I then) and to get me over to look my Cloaths; ſo that my fear before was not half ſo much, as my ſhame was now. Let your Excellency therefore be pleaſed now to conſider in what danger I did put my ſelf, and then to give judgement, which of us two doth beſt deſerve the Ring

The Conſtable laughing heartily hereat, ſaid in the end, That *Don Luys* had no reaſon to complain of his Love; ſeeing, though late, with a great deal of coſt and trouble, yet at length he had obtained his deſire; ſo that he could not be a deſerver of this promiſed reward. And *Don Rodrigo*, as little, for that he was not in any danger by ſleeping with the Count; howbeit, the jeſt they had put upon him, was a witty and a good one. And therefore his Sentence was this, that neither of them deſerved the Diamond; yet taking it off from his finger, he conſign'd it to *Don Rodrigo*, with condition that he ſhould ſend it as a token to this Gentlewoman, by whoſe ſide he lay; for that ſhe onely had incurred the danger, and had alſo run the hazard of her honour, if ſhe had been known what ſhe was.

With this, they gave an end to their Love-diſcourſes, they all remaining very well ſatiſfied. And it being afterwards diſcuſſed, whether the Conſtables Sentence were diſcreet and juſt; all the Courtiers highly commended it. And ſo every mans buſineſſes, calling ſome one way, ſome another; this converſation was broken up, and taking their leave of my Lord Ambaſſadour, they went whether their occaſions call'd them.

## Chapter V.

*A Roman Matron, not knowing how to free her self (without suffering in her Honour) from the perswasions of* Guzman de Alfarache, *who sollicited her in his Lords behalf, the French Ambassadour put a jest upon him, which was the occasion of a second disgrace that afterwards befell him.*



They that write of lightning, report, (and we see the same confirmed by experience,) that so great is it's pride, that scorning the weaker, it works it's effects on the strongest. It breaks the steely hardnesse of the sword, and leaves the scabberd whole: it splits in sunder, and rendeth up by the roots the strong and sturdy Oak; and not once toucheth the feeble and yielding Cane. It overturns the tops of your highest Towers, and levelleth your stately buildings with the ground; and pardoneth your poor Shepheards humble Cottage, that is made of ill composed twigs. It killeth your biggest beasts, and cracketh man, as if he were but Potters Clay, in pieces; it bruiseth and breaketh the bones, and leaves the Cloaths untoucht; it melteth Silver, Gold, Metall, and Money, and yet hurts not the Purse wherein it is put. And albeit, if it be of this proud nature, and haughty condition, yet is it's force broken in it's coming to ground. This onely is that, which makes its resistance against it. And therefore, in such tempestuous times, those that do fear it's terrible effects, do use to get themselves into Caves, or to hide themselves deep under ground, because that they know, they are there safe and free from danger.

The violence of youth is such, that we may truely compare it unto *Lightning*; for it never bends it's force against things that are fragile, soft, and gentle; but doth commonly aspire to things of greatest difficulty, and such as are beyond all reasons of atchievements. it observeth no Law; it excuseth no kinde of Vice; it is a Horse that runs on in his Carreer, without any eye to it's way, or once thinking on the place, or the end, where, he is to take up himself, and make his stop. It alwayes follows it's own fury, and like an untamed Colt, will not suffer himself to be sadled by reason; and without it, disturbs both himself and others, not induring any burthen, be it never so light: in such sort it flies out, that it will not (no though you let it have it's own will) be at quiet with it self. And yet this being so furious a beast, as we have here set forth unto you, it is onely corrected by humility; this (and nothing but this) tames and keeps it in order. This is that earth, against which it's force cannot prevail; this that Dock, that drives out the Nettle; and this that Port, where it findes it's safety. In so much, that there is not any good to be hoped from that young man, who shall not be humble. For that youth in it self is the enterance to evil, and the door that opens unto sin.

I was wantonly bred up, suffered too much to have mine own will: I would not indure reproof, much lesse correction. And for that wisdom is the Daughter of experience, which is gotten by the transcursion of time, it was not much, that I should erre as being a youth. But that having befaln me (which you heard before) in the love that I made at *Malagon* and *Toledo*: And being that I should, like the Dogge which is scalded with hot, fear also cold water; after all those fair warnings, it may seem somewhat strange, you will say, that I should give any more credit unto women, and that I should suffer my self to be taken anew in their snares. That I should be such an Asse, as not to know, by my many the like experiences, that they alwayes go subtilly to work with us, and deal deceitfully; which must either be imputed, to our too much simplicity, or must otherwise be attributed to the intemperate passion of our appetite. And would to God this foolishnesse of mine might here take it's stop, and here in this Port set up my *Plus ultra*, by erecting the pillars of my woefull proofs, and often skarrings, without (as you shall see hereafter) my frequent fallings into the like weaknesses, being unable to make my vaunt, that I once got of them by the hand, and made my party good with them. But because he that loves, doth alwayes make a free donation to the party, whom he loveth, of his will, and of his senses; it is no marvel, if being stripped of them, multiplying my errours, I commit a thousand fooleries.

My Lord Ambassadour fell in love with a principal Gentlewoman, nobly descended, whose name

name was *Fabia*; her husband, a Gentleman of *Rome*; before whose house I did often use to walk; whereof, no small notice was taken, and he himself began to conceive some suspicion of me, though without any just cause; for she for her part never gave consent thereunto. But because every man may love, protest, and run his head, if he will, against a vvall, and none shall hinder him; my Master did that, which his passion did dictate unto him, and she that, which was befitting both her own, and her husbands honour.

True it is, that we were not so blinde, that we could not see thorow the holes of a five; for although we were deprived of the clearer kinde of light, yet we had some glimpse and glimmering thereof, though it were but little. Her husband was old, poor, and ill accoutred; three strong and powerfull enemies against a vvoman, that was young, fair, and well brought up. For these reasons, and by the help of a Maid of hers (which had been a Virgin heretofore) but was now my sweet-heart, and mine own dear Love, I was verily perswaded, what by the means that she, and what by those, that my self should use, as also by making benefit of the afore-said occasions, we should easily get the game. But who, (save such an unlucky and unfortunate Rogue as my self) could have lost so fair a set, having such a store of sound Trumps, and other good Cards in my hand? But I had wonderfull Crosse-carding, and every trick that I plaid, fell out to the worst, so that; *No es todo facil, quanto se parece*; A man may be deceiv'd, when he thinks himself most sure. Vertue will trip up the heels of Vice, and win the Goal away from him, play he never so cunningly; Nor is there any thing in the vvorld that can make a vertuous woman to spot her honour.

When this Gentlewoman understood, what had passed betwixt my self and her servant, she began to devise with her self, how she might be revenged on us both, without any hurt to her self, but as much prejudice as might be both to my person, and the plot that was laid between us, for the effecting of my Lords desires. And this she did the rather, for that she saw, that her waiting-Gentlewoman, for my sake, did so earnestly sollicite this cause, and that for my interest, and to do me a pleasure, she did follow this businesse with all care and diligence, taking her fit times to put her often in minde thereof, not suffering a Card to passe without a Vie, and sometimes making many false ones, using many other tricks, wherein she was skill'd in them, and knew handsomely how to put them home: insomuch, that when this honourable Matron saw, she could not be in quiet for her, but was thus hardly set upon in her own house, and barked at abroad in the street by a company of malicious mouths, she made no Vociferations, nor Out-cries, no squeamish replies, no cunning impostures, which some vvomen use to do, for to qualifie their honesty, that under that shield, they may ever after the more safely offend. For, an honest vvoman will by honest means mannage her affairs; not beating the aire with her clapper, not ringing out the bell that hangs in her mouth so loud, that all men may hear the sound thereof, and censure her accordingly, and give every one occasion thereby to construe her actions, as they list themselves. For in regard the good are the fewest, the most do judge amisse: And the reason of this ill is, because they themselves be ill. And this common voyce choaketh a good name, as your Tares do corn.

Now, as this Gentlewoman was Roman, so did she perform a Roman act. She knowing, that we went about to work her overthrow, she wisely sought to prevent it, feigning her self to be somewhat touched with Loves passion, and that she was now upon the point of yielding, if not wholly overcome.

One day, when as her Maid was making of her ready, and was instant with her in this businesse, looking upon her with a smiling and cheerfull countenance, she said unto her. *Nicolera*, (for so was she called) I assure thee, that if thou hadst not wrought upon me, using so many strange inventions, and hadst not spent so many elaborate and well studied words in this suit of thine, thou hadst ere this made that will of mine to yield, which hath hitherto stood out so long. For I wish well unto *Guzman*, and approve his discreet proceeding in this businesse. Besides, his Master is of that merit, that any vvoman whatsoever, be she of never so honourable quality, without being so much sollicited as I have been, ought to embrace his love and friendship, and offer her service unto him. But as thou thy self both knowest, and seest, I do not know how this will be possible, that this our Treaty shall be secure from scandalous tongues, being that now upon no just cause given, and I for my part having as yet yielded no consent unto that, which perhaps I so much desire, that is whispered already in every corner, nay, thorow all *Rome*, which neither in mine own house, nor with thee, (which canst onely be the instrument of our pleasure) did I ever yet communicate. And

ſince it is now come to this paſſe, that the popular voyce runneth on with ſo great liberty, and that I am not able any longer to hold out in withſtanding the love of this noble Gentleman, all that I would intreat at thy hands, is; that thou wilt diſpoſe and order it, with the greateſt ſecrecy that may be. Speak therefore to *Guzman*, that he wait and attend hereabouts for ſome few nights, for I will finde opportunity ſome one night, or other, to give him entrance, that I may ſee him, and talk with him concerning the carriage of our loves.

*Nicoleta* fell down upon her knees to the ground, not knowing which ſhe ſhould kiſſe firſt, her feet, or her hands, with a face ſet all on fire with too much joy: for a great while together, ſhe never left giving of her thanks, qualifying the eaſineſſe of effecting it, and diſgracefully laying open the faults of her old Maſter. Then did ſhe reduce unto her remembrance thoſe former diſtaſters, which ſhe had received from him; in what wretched eſtate, through his miſery, ſhe lived in; his baſe kinde of carriage, and what dry fodderings he did give her; and all, that ſhe might incourage her the more to go bravely on in this her reſolution, which ſhe did ſimply believe, ſhe had now entred into.

Hereupon ſhe came forthwith flying unto me, flinging her arms abroad, and ſtrongly twining them about my neck, ſhe claſpt me as hard as ſhe could for her life, demanding *Albricias* at my hands, which when ſhe had received, ſhe would relate unto me what had paſt between her and her Miſtreſſe. I took her by the hand, leading her along with me, (as thoſe that carry with them the ſpoyls and tropbees of ſome famous victory) into my Maſters with-drawing Chamber, where, with a great deal of joy we celebrate this gladſome news; plotting and contriving with our ſelves touching the hour, how and where I might finde enterance to ſpeak with *Fabia*. And my Maſter giving to *Nicoleta* a little Purſe which he had in his pocket, cramm'd with Spaniſh Piſtolets, ſhe made as if ſhe were unwilling to take them of him, but did not all this while cloſe her fiſt, nor pull back her hand, but out of modeſty held it between forward and backward like a Phyſician, when he is offered more than his fees, and with a jocund ſmile, gave him thanks for this his courteous liberality; and with this ſhe took her leave both of him and me. But my Maſter continued with me, rendring me an account of his love, and I giving him the *Para bien* thereof, in which kinde of diſcourſe, and the like, we ſpent all that evening. And when it was night, at the appointed hour, I took up my ſtanding, gave the watch-word, and made ſuch ſigns, as were ordered between us, but neither that night, nor ſome three, or four more following, could this agreement, made between us, take effect.

One day amongſt the reſt there hapned to fall a ſmall, but withall a ſhrewd driving rain, wherein at my wonted hour I was to make my accuſtomed walk, being dabbled (as they ſay) up to the girdle, I came thither reaſonable well wet, the night being very dark, which ſuited not amiſſe with my fortunes. It was was my hap (but would to God it had never hapned) to have the end of my deſires. And for that, in things of intereſt, and matters that concern our pleaſure and content, it importeth much, to caſt off all fear, and to undergo all difficulties with a daring reſolution, I did ſhow more courage at that time, than became diſcretion, in that I was ſo forward to come to the Call, beating my fore-head againſt the vvalls and corners of the houſe, when the rain poured down on my head from Heaven, and my feet ſtood up to the ankles in durt. As ſoon as I had given the ſign, it was known who was there, yet notwithſtanding they made me to wait a good while in the rain, till I was ſo thorow-wet, that the water that came in at my Poll, dropt out at my knees, and went guttering down into my ſhooes, and then at laſt, after I had been a long time in this cold bath, they called unto me, and willed me to have the patience to ſtay yet a little longer.

In the end, when all my Cloaths and my ſelf were dung-wet, and that I had not a dry thred about me, I might perceive the door to open very ſoftly, and *Nicoleta* to call unto me. And then (me thought) that very breath which came from that voyce, brought that comfortable heat with it, that I was thorow-dry all over on the ſudden. Now did I no more think on my fore-paſſed troubles, being cheered up with the ſight of the *Fregoncilla* of my Soul, and the comfortable hope of enjoying the beloved *Fabia*. *Nicoleta* and I exchanged but a few words; for ſhe had ſcarce bid me welcom, when lo, her Miſtreſſe came down, and calling to ſervant, ſaid; Do you hear (*Nicoleta?*) Get you up, and ſee what your Maſter is a doing, and if he chance to ask for me, come and call me, whileſt I in the mean while ſtay talking with *Sennor Guzman*.

Now, all this *interim* we were in the dark, ſo that we could ſcarce diſcern one another, and if we did, it was as much as poſſibly we could do. Then did ſhe begin to queſtion me con-

concerning my health, and how it was with me, as if ſhe had ſeemed to wiſh very well unto me, or as if my welfare had been a matter of importance, and much to her contentment. I replied unto her with the like demand. That complement performed, I delivered her a large meſſage from my Maſter, in acknowledgment of thoſe many thanks which he did owe unto her, for the undeſerved favours which ſhe had vouchſafed to ſhew unto him, and how great a ſervant he was of hers, inlarging this Theame with an elegant Oration, which I had ſtudied of purpoſe onely to this end. But before I was come to the concluſion thereof, and when I was in the greateſt force of this Argument, and my words began to gather ſtrength, for the gaining of her good will, I could not faſten her farther attention, nor like Wax, work her as I would; becauſe ſhe ſeeming to be amazed and ſtartled with ſome ſudden perturbation, abruptly ſaid unto me.

*Sennor Guzman*, as you love my life, let me intreat you to hold me excuſed; for with a conceived fear, that at this very inſtant hath ſeized upon me, me thinks, every bodies eye is upon me, all in the houſe watch and obſerve me. And therefore for Gods ſake let me intreat you to enter in here this way, and there right over againſt you, you ſhall finde a Lodging-chamber, get you quickly into that, and tarry there till I have given a turn or two about the houſe, to ſee if the coaſt be cleer, and all my people ſafe, and I ſhall preſently return again unto you; but I pray, have an eſpecial care in the mean while, that you ſtand ſtill, and make not any the leaſt noyſe in the world. I gave credit unto her, and went ſtraight on, as ſhe had directed me, and thinking that I had gone athwart a little open Entry, making more haſt than good ſpeed, I lighted ere I was aware into a huge beaſtly Hog-ſty, that ſtood in a filthy durty Court, where I had no ſooner gone ſome two or three ſteps, but I ſtumbled (through too much haſt) upon a great dung-mixen, and fell with my head juſt againſt the wall, giving my ſelf ſuch a ſound knock, that I lay there for a while ſenſleſſe. But with that little life that was left me, by little and litle I came to my ſelf again, and ſcrambling up again as well as I could, I went groping along the walls with my hands, (as children do when they play at blind-man-buffe) to ſee if I could finde no other out-let, ſave that whereby I had made my entrance. I rounded it once again, imagining with my ſelfe, that by reaſon of my new received blow, I could not haply meet with it ſo upon the ſudd[illegible]

And wandring thus up and down this Maze, it was my hap to light upon a little narrow Lane, as it were, whereat there was no going forth, having an houſe of Office at the end of it, ill covered, and that not wholly, neither over head, where was onely the one half of an old broken great Pitcher, which was full of Ordure, being fixed faſt to the ground, and beaſtly berayed round about, yielding no very ſweet ſent, whereby I began to conjecture the danger I was in, and to conſider with my ſelf the many miſ-fortunes that had befaln me.

Well, when I ſaw how the world went, I ſought to get out where I came in: but I found the door was faſt ſhut upon me, and that there was no hope of getting forth. It rained extreamly, and ſhowred down ſo faſt upon me, that I was forced to ſhelter my ſelf under that poor miſerable old ruinous open, I cannot tell whether I ſhould tearm it rather Hovell, than Houſe, ſtanding up to the knees in durt, vvhoſe perfume vvas none of the pleaſanteſt.

There I did paſs over the remainder of that night, vvhich vvas far vvorſe than that I indured at *Toledo*, and of no leſs peril to my perſon, than that which I vvas put to in the houſe of the proud *Genoves*, my kinſman. Nor was it onely the falling of the rain, that did now afflict me, which came not driſling or miſling down upon me, but with a full & open gutter, and, when at leaſt, with drops as big as Peaſe. But I began to think with my ſelf what ſhould become of me: for I could not but imagine, that ſhe that had made that Mouſe-trap for me over night, would the next morning deliver me over to the Cat.

After this conceit had run a little while in my head, I entred into other diſcourſes, wherewith I might comfort my ſelf, ſaying; Free me (O God) from the ſtormy bluſtring Northern windes of this tempeſtuous night, and give me leave to eſcape with life till it be day, that when the Maſter of the Ship ſhall find me here, all that I will ſay unto him, ſhall be, that his Maid brought me hither, and that I am her husband. For it would be the leſſer harm unto me of the two, to be married unto her, then to ſee my bones marr'd with torment, to make me to confeſs what I made there; and I would rather ſeek to content them with this anſwer, than that they ſhould kill me, and bury me afterwards in the ſtinking Church-yard, and ſo end my life in this miſerable manner.

Thus I went beating my brains about, diſcuſſing to and fro, what would be the iſſue in

the end of this buſineſſe; when lo, anon after two of the clock in the morning, I perceive that the door was opened, wherewith all the miſery that I had ſuffered was turned into joy and flowers of comfort, thinking that *Fabio* was now returned. But when I came to the door, and found it unlockt, and no body living thereabouts; I began to be more afraid than I was before, and my heart began to miſ-give me, conceiving that behinde ſome wall or door of the houſe, they ſtaid waiting for my coming forth, that they might with more eaſe and ſafety rid me of life. I unſheathed my ſword, and taking that in one hand, and my dagger in the other, I went by little and little, taking notice (by that poor little morning light) of all thoſe ſteps which I had trod (which were not many, nor very hard to be hit again) by which I entred. So that, with more fear, than ſhame, I got at laſt to the ſtreet door, which I likewiſe found was open.

When I had once ſet my feet upon the threſhold, I opened mine eyes, and then plainly perceived, that what already paſt, was in puniſhment of my over-boldneſſe; and albeit this trick that had been put upon me was not ſo eaſie to be digeſted, yet this jeſt might have fallen out far worſe. I comforted my ſelf as well as I could, looked into my error, and acknowledged my fault, and champing upon theſe things, as I walked along the ſtreets, I came at laſt home to our own houſe, and opening my Chamber door, I put off my Cloaths, and got me in between the blankets to recover ſome heat, which through the waters and the windes I had loſt.

In this manner I did lye, till it was about ten a Clock in the morning, tumbling and toſſing, not being able for very ſhame to fall aſleep, thinking and deviſing with my ſelf, what anſwer I ſhould make unto my Maſter. For if I ſhould deal plainly and truely with him, and acquaint him with the whole paſſage of this buſineſſe, it would be a great affront unto me, and that I ſhould be plaid upon every moment with whole Vollies of jeſts, and move even the very Children in the ſtreet to ſcoff and laugh at me. And to deny it, and entertain his Lordſhip with vain and idle hopes, methought that likewiſe was not fitting. For *Nicaleta* had already recovered her *Albricias*, and was well rewarded for her good news; and therefore this might ſeem unto him to be a meer invention to defeat him of his mony. *Todos eran matas por rozar.* All the fat, I ſaw, was in the fire; and that this buſineſſe did not go on well and handſomly, but had many inconveniences in it; it went ill on the one ſide, and worſe on the other. Which way ſoever I ſought to winde me, was but a leaping out of the Frying-pan into the fire.

And whileſt I was thus muſing with ſelf, how I might invent ſome means to ſet all right, one of the ſervants of the houſe came knocking at my door, and told me, that my Lord would have me come to him. O wretched and unfortunate man that I am (ſaid I to my ſelf) what ſhall I do? For they have now found me with my finger in the Cream-pot; they have taken me in the manner, the theft is diſcovered, I am put to my ſhifts, and muſt anſwer for my ſelf as well as I can. *Coragio* then (quoth I) *Coraglo Guzman!* When were thy ſpirits wont to fail thee in this manner? When wert thou as yet ever put to that plunge, from which at length thou didſt not fairly come off? The Sun is as yet clouded; and time will diſcover the true path. And who took thee by night out of the yard, will bring thee as well out of my Lords with-drawing room.

Well: I got me up, ſhifted my Cloaths, and put on a freſh ſute, the beſt that I had; and being then as fine and as gallant, as if no ſuch diſaſter had hapned unto me; I hy'de me up unto my Lord, who expected my coming, and had no ſooner ſeen me, but preſently aſkt me, how the world went, and how chanced it, that I had no ſooner come to give an account of what had paſt betwixt *Fabio*, and my ſelf? I told him; That they made me ſtay waiting in the ſtreet until it was midnight, expecting a fair birth of this buſineſſe, but it prov'd in the end to be a ſlutten-ars'd Girle; ſo that I was diſmiſt with a *Non licet*; telling me, that ſhe could not poſſibly either ſpeak with me, or open the door.

I alſo then ſignified unto him, that I would go and lye down awhile, upon my bed, to ſee if I could take ſome reſt, for I did not finde my ſelf half well. He gave me leave ſo to do. Whereupon, I went to my Chamber, put off my Cloaths, got me to bed, and there fell to my victuals, where I remained till it was almoſt night, hatching a thouſand conceits in my head, waſting my wits, and limbecking my brains, without drawing any joyce, or ſubſtance thence at all. And becauſe, what in regard of my rage and anger, as alſo the ſundry thoughts and imaginations that troubled my minde, I was not able to take any reſt on either ſide, but lay tumbling from t' one to t' other; if I lay on my back, I ſtraight-way waxed weary; if I ſate up in my bed, my hips were too feeble to bear up my body. Whereupon I reſolved with

with my ſelf to riſe. And J had no ſooner taken my cloaths into my hands, and put my feet out of my bed, but one of the Grooms of the Stable came into my Chamber, and told me. *Seunor Guzman*; There are ſome pretty Wenches beneath at the ſtairs foot which inquire for you, and ſtay waiting your coming in the Portal within the gate. A pox upon them, quoth J: what have J to do with them? The Devil take them for me. Go down, and either bid them go to the Stews, or elſe tell them, that I am not within. For I imagined with my ſelf, that all *Rome* by this time had rung of my diſgrace, and that theſe were ſome roguiſh harlotries, that came to laugh and ſcoff at me, and to make themſelves merry with my miſfortunes. I was very jealous that they came of purpoſe to play the Wags with me, and therefore willed him to diſmiſs them, and ſo they went their wayes.

That night my Maſter willed me to continue my wonted Station. I told him, that I found my ſelf not half well; whereupon he adviſed me to get betimes to my lodging, and that I ſhould call for any thing that J wanted; and if need were, he would ſend a Phyſician unto me. I kiſt his hands, thanking him in the beſt faſhion I could, for this his great favour and love towards me; and got me forthwith to my lodging, where I remained retired, and all alone, as I had done the reſt of that day.

The next morning, I was no ſooner up, but I received a Letter from my *Nicoleta*, complaining of me, that having come to viſit me the day before, J would not be ſpoken withall, nor give her notice of that, which had paſt the other night betwixt my ſelf and her Miſtris, and what great buſineſs I had, that I did not round that ſtreet the next night following, telling me, that ſhe had waited there for my comming, till it was after midnight.

Unto theſe, ſhe added ſome other words, which left me no leſs perplexed than confounded. And that J might clear all doubts, J wrote her an anſwer; telling her, that J would not fail ſometimes to come and viſit her in the back Lane, that was behind the houſe. For *Fabia's* houſe ſtood as it were between two ſtreets; on the back-ſide whereof, right againſt the principal gate, was a little Poſtern door, and over that a pretty little Lodging-Chamber, with one little window belonging unto it, from whence *Nicoleta* might very conveniently talk unto me even in the day-time, for that the Lane was little frequented, as being ſcarce paſſable, for that it was very narrow, and full of dirt and mire. And even then at that time, it was ſo bad and ſo foul, that very hardly and with much ado (conſidering the late rain) could J get to that place where J was to ſpeak with *Nicoleta*.

Well, when J was come thither, and ſhe ready to receive me, ſhe began to ask me; what was become of me? What great occaſions did hinder me, that J had not come and ſeen her the night before? And if not for her, yet for her Miſtreſſes ſake might have taken that pains. She formed many complaints againſt me, accuſing the inconſtancy of men, who made love unto women, not ſo much for any good affection that they bore them, as to get the Conqueſt and Maſtery of them; and when they had gotten what they deſired, and received ſome Pledge from them, they did quickly ſlight them, if not wholly forget them.

By this, as likewiſe by that profeſſion which ſhe made of her love unto me, J knew her innocency, and *Fabia's* ſubtilty, who went about to deceive us both. Thereupon J told her; My *Nicoleta*, thou art quite out of the way, and ſo mightily deceived, as no man can be more. For I would have thee to know, that thy Miſtreſſe hath plaid the Jack with us both. Then I up and told her all that had befain me, and how vilely ſhe had us'd me She bleſt her ſelf, croſſing and recroſſing her ſelf over and over, thinking it to be a thing impoſſible. I ſtood thus talking with her, being gallantly clad, and in my beſt bravery, ſtanding my legs abroad, ſtretching out my neck, and diſcourſing of my miſfortunes, being careleſs of that preſent diſgrace, which my evil fortune had too neer at hand for me. For it ſo fell out, that whileſt I was thus diſcourſing with her, by that little Poſterne; (through which there was a way to go in and out to the Stable) it hapned, that there entred in thereat (whileſt the Grooms had led the Horſes forth to water) a huge big Boare; this Boare one of the Grooms found nuzling in the litter, which he had made ready for his horſe, turning it topſie-turvy, and ſcattering it all abroad the Stable. He being much moved thereat, took up a great bat in his hand, and belaboured his back and ſides, as hard as he could lay on for his life. He was a fat ougie and a great; and like a Bull that is baited, came running forth, as hard as he could drive. And for that theſe kinde of beaſts, either out of ruſtineſs, or nature, uſe to run alwayes fore-right, and ſeldome or never turn aſide; he came directly upon me, and took me ſo on the ſudden, that I could by no means avoid

him,

him, and perforce made his way juſt between my legs; ſo that I rode as it were a-ſtride on horſe-back, but the clean contrary way, and to keep my ſelf from falling, I took hold on his tail with both my hands, uſing that inſtead of a Bridle, which I held as faſt as poſſibly I could. I was not able all this while to recover my ſelf, and had my life lain upon it, I knew not for the preſent how to quit my ſelf handſomly from his back, and whileſt I was deviſing with my ſelf, how I might come fairly off, he ran with me thorow the midſt of a durty puddle, that was nothing but mire and filth, ſo that to ſave my ſelf from falling, and that he might the better bear me thorow the durt, I was forced to let go his tail, and to claſp my arms about the ſides of him, with all the might and force I could. And as if we had plaid at binding of barrels, or *a punta non cabeca*, giving him many a rap at the wrong door, flinging up his ſnout, and huffing and puffing with his noſtrils, he carried me (in ſpight of my teeth, for I was forced to hold faſt, for fear of falling in the durt) in his hoggiſh kinde of gallop, ſome three or four ſtreets from off that place, grumbling and grunting as he went along, and with his whining and crying, calling the people together to ſee what he ail'd, whileſt I perceiving the ſhame and danger I was like to run, fell off from his back of mine own accord, not regarding when or where I ſhould light. And much better had it been for me, had I done this before in mine own little durty Lane; for beſides, that I ſhould not have there received ſo much harm, the diſgrace would not have been ſo publick, and I ſhould have met with a remedy for this miſchief neerer at hand.

Well, I got me up as well as I could on my legs, but all bemir'd and beray'd with durt, being hooted at by the people, and affronted by all the women and children in *Rome*, my face being all beſmeard with durt, and my cloaths from top to toe all plaiſtred over with mire, that I ſeemed to have been thrown out of the belly of ſome Whale. The people from out their doors and windows ſhouted out ſo loud, and the boys did ſo flock about me, that as one that was out of his wits, and deprived of judgement, I ſought where I might beſt hide my ſelf. At laſt, I ſpied out an houſe hard by, where I thought I ſhould finde ſome good entertainment. I entred there-into, and made faſt the door, and ſo barrocadoed my ſelf up cloſe againſt all that company, that were deſirous to ſee me. But it did not fall out ſo well with me, as I could have wiſht; For it is not fit, that any thing ſhould ſucceed well with the wicked. It is a puniſhment of his fault; and ſo it fell out with me, by that bad entertainment, which I there received, as you ſhall hear more at full in the Chapter following.

## Chapter VI.

Guzman de Alfarache *recounteth, how in the houſe, where-into he had withdrawn himſelf, to make himſelf clean, another diſgrace befell him, and many other misfortunes. And that which paſſed afterwards between him and his Lord the Ambaſſadour, with whom he diſcourſed of politick and grave matters.*

THe night was now dark, but much more my heart. Every houſe was full of lights, but my ſad ſoul was fuller of darkneſs. I did not weigh and conſider with my ſelf, that it was now late, nor that the Maſter of the houſe was not willing that I ſhould ſtay there, but reviling me with odious tearms, ſought to drive me out with evil language, thinking every hour a year, till he had thruſt me out of doors. For, he was jealous of me, and began to ſuſpect, that this was but ſome trick or ſtratagem of mine own plotting, having taken hold on that occaſion to get into his houſe, and to bring my purpoſe more eaſily to paſs. Nor was this my honeſt Gentleman much out of the way. For the Gentlewoman his wife wore the Breeches, ſhe was Maſter of the houſe, a friend to her own will and pleaſure, very head-ſtrong, and not ſure of foot. So that it was no wonder that her husband would ſee Viſions, and dream of ſtrange apparitions, taking every ſhadow to be ſome fearful ghoſt, and conceiving (out of his jealous humour) that all the world went about to cozen him. So that every the leaſt apprehenſion (though of never ſo far-fetcht a ſuppoſition) made him preſently to take the Allarme. Whereupon, he no ſooner ſaw me within his doors, but he called all his people about him, and leaving me all alone in the outward Porch to the great Gate, would not ſuffer his ſervants to do me ſuch kindneſſe, as to afford me a bucket of water to waſh my ſelfe withall. So that I (poor man) with my cloaths all to be bemir'd, my hands all to bedurted, and my face ſo foully beſmeared, that there was not one white ſpot

to

to be ſeen, I went entertaining my going forth with a great deal of fear, leſt ſome might chance to be ſtill waiting at the gate to look upon this my new Livery, which might better bear the name of Leproſie. And for that they, who beheld this my misfortune were not a few, the company increaſing, and ſtanding in a round thick together, they related it afreſh to them that were newly come into their company; and for that they had a general diſlike of me, they detained all that paſt by, relating unto them the diſgrace that had befaln me, whereat they all laughed out aloud, making great ſignes and tokens of joy. And it may be, that moſt of them had reaſon ſo to do; and by this their rejoycing, did revenge themſelves of thoſe wrongs, which they had heretofore received from me. There might you ſee that verefied of me, which is commonly ſung up and down the ſtreets.

*Mas enemigos, que amigos, tienen*
*Su cuerpo cercado;*
*Dizen unos, que lo entierren,*
*Y otros, que no ſea enterrado.*

More foes than friends, his body have
Incompaſt round about;
Some crie, to put it in the grave,
And ſome, 't ſhall lie without.

The ſtreets was full of men and boyes, which did perſecute me with ſhrill ſhouts and loud cries, calling in a ſharp and high key; Thruſt him out; Thruſt him out; Why do ye let this foul beaſt abide with you? Put out this ſame pickled Pig amongſt us. O theſe baſe Raſcals, how had they almoſt made me loſe my patience and my judgement! There were ſome honeſt folk amongſt them, that took part with me; and all thoſe that were ſuch as I was, ſhewed themſelves on my ſide. Theſe ſought to defend me from their fury, labouring to pacifie that rude rabble with threats and menaces; for that they were grown ſo ſhameleſs, and ſo impudent, that they began to throw ſtones againſt the gate, being very deſirous to have me come forth againſt them.

But I neither blame them, nor excuſe my ſelf. For I would have done the like my ſelf, upon the ſame occaſion againſt mine own father. For, thoſe things of curioſity, which do not (like Shrove-tide) come once a year, I do not hold it any great exceſſe to be deſirous to ſee them. And I aſſure thee (nor do I ſpeak this, to make the matter ſeem more than it is) that if for to make profit, I would have ſuffered my ſelf to be ſeen, I might by this means have got a good ſumme of money; For I was nothing all over, but a meer lump of durt, having like your *Negro's*, no more white about me to be ſeen, ſave onely my eyes and teeth; this misfortune befalling me in the moſt liquid kennel, and rotteneſt mixen that was in all the ſtreet.

True it is, that with the knife that belonged to my Sword, I ſcrap't away as much of it as I could, but all was but a thing of nothing, being either little or nothing the better; for the mire, by reaſon of its liquidneſſe, had ſoaked it ſelf quite thorow my clothes, ſo that they remained as wet about me, as if they had been ſteeped in ſome bath. And *I* held it ſome happineſſe unto me in this my miſery, that I did not go dropping through the ſtreets, like a basket of Buck-clothes, when they are taken from the waſhing-bole, and carried forth to be dried in the Sun.

In this pitiful manner, it being now late, and all the people gone, I ſneaked out in that lamentable pickle, as I could have wiſht them to have been in, who took moſt pleaſure therein. If there be happineſſe in unhappineſſe, in regard of the comfort which we receive from thence; this day it ſhould ſeem that fortune did play the wanton, and went ſporting her ſelf at the *juego de Cannas* with me; for, though ſhe had diſ-favoured me with theſe and like troubles, that you have heard; yet did ſhe afterward aſſiſt me with the night; yea, and with ſuch a dark night, that the people went their way, giving me leave to depart thence, ſound, ſafe, and free from the clamour of the boyes and children, which ſtaid watching for me. I got me forth, throwing my Cloak over my face, without being known by any, and making large ſtrides, ſeeking (if it were poſſible) to fly from my ſelf, in regard of that ſtore of durt, and that evil ſavour which I bare about me in my cloaths. But this could not be diſſembled; for which way ſoever I went, I left ſome ſigne thereof behind me, beſide the heat of the ſent, which might very well be followed afarre off, it was

ſo ſtrong. And none that paſt by me, would turn back to look upon me, becauſe they did ſuſpect no harm. And if any did chance to finde fault with me, others would excuſe me, and ſay; Let the poor fellow alone, it is but a little ſlipperineſſe of the Guts, a looſeneſſe of the hilts, a little laxative oil that is come from him, which upon occaſion may be every mans caſe, as well as his: He would have hope it and he could, and therefore you muſt pardon him. Others would ſay; Inquire no farther into the matter, make no more do about it, but give over the haunt; for the Crow cannot be blacker than are his wings. Others, ſtopping their noſes as they went along by me, would cry out, *Foh*; There hath more ſtore of rain faln, than we are aware of. Others, This *Diſciplinante* muſt needs have given himſelf ſome great wound, he ſtinks ſo vildly, (for they ſaw we muffled up in my Cloak, like thoſe which come from whipping themſelves in the Holy week.) Let me adviſe you, friend, to make all the haſt you can, and call quickly for ſome water, before you begin to ſwound.

I had matter enough for all of them to work upon, and there was not any that paſt by me, but had a fling at me. And ſome would not ſtick to ask me; Tell me (friend) how ſell you a pound of this Wax? And others; What's the price of your Honey-combs? And a third; Sure this muſt be ſome perfume or other, ſince he ſmels ſo ſweet. I anſwered them all with ſilence, and replied not a word unto them, by which means I paſt the better along by them, though ever and anon they would be girning and ſcoffing at me. But for thoſe that cried, A pox on me, and bid the Devil go with me, calling me Pole-cat, and the like ſtinking names; mumbling ſoftly to my ſelf, as your young Novices do their Mattens in a Monaſtery, I paid them again in their own coyn; And ſo hanging my head in my boſome, I hied me homeward as faſt as my durt-loaden legs would carry me.

That, which did moſt trouble me, was, to ſee the Dogs in every ſtreet come barking after me, who the faſter I went, did ſo much the more fiercely ſet upon me, and eſpecially your Mongrel Curs, which followed me cloſe at the heels, and would now and then give me a nip at the Calves of my legs. I would fain have fraid them away, but I durſt not, fearing leſt by making that defence, greater Dogs and more in number, hearing the noiſe that they would have made, would thereby have been drawne forth of doores, and come mainly running upon me, and have torne me (like another *Acteon*) all in pieces.

At laſt, after theſe my many miſ-fortunes, like a Ship that comes from the Weſt-Indies, beaten at Sea, and rent and torne by Pirats, I arrived ſafe at *Sevil*. I was now come to my old home, and being unſeen and unheard of any, had got me up to my lodging. And I ſhould have held it no ſmall happineſſe, if I could have got in as ſoon as I came to my Chamber-door. I put my hand in my pocket, to take out the Key, but could not find it. Then did *I* feel for it in the other pocket, but could not meet with it. I cut two or three capers in the air, hoping to hear it gingle; but all was one; then did *I* fall a ſearching of my breeches, to ſee if haply it had got in betwixt the linings of my Hoſe; but the Devil a Key that was there. I rummaged every corner about me that I could ſuſpect it to be in, but all to no purpoſe. For queſtionleſſe I loſt it in that houſe, whither I had withdrawn my ſelf when I took out my Handkerchief to wipe my face and my hands. This was a great grief unto me, and did vex me more than all the reſt; in which agony and anguiſh of minde, lifting up my eyes to Heaven, as a man in deſparation, *I* breathed forth theſe words of complaint.

Poor, miſerable man, as *I* am; What ſhall *I* do? or Whither ſhall *I* go? What will become of me? What courſe ſhall I take, that my Maſters ſervants and other my Companions and fellows of the houſe, may not come to the knowledge of this diſgrace that hath thus unluckily befaln me? How ſhall I cloak and diſſemble this buſineſs, that I may not be made a laughing-ſtock amongſt them? *I* may boldly tell all the world beſides, that they lye, but I cannot do ſo to thoſe of the houſe, if they ſhould hap to ſee me. To others I might deny it, either in part, or in whole, as ſhall ſeem beſt unto me: But here, if they chance to light upon me, I am openly taken in the matter, the theft found about me, the cauſe opened, and my mouth ſhut, not being able to alledge any thing in mine own defence, nor can *I* invent that Lie, that will be able to give them ſatisfaction, and make good what *I* ſhall ſay in mine own excuſe. Thoſe that envy my inwardneſſe with my Maſter, will bathe themſelves herewith in Roſe-water; it will be meat and drink to them, and they will not ſtick to call their friends about them; who, like ſwarmes of Bees, will flie in preſently upon me, and come buzzing about me, to work my

my more ſhame and amazement. I am utterly undone, my Bark lies all at the one ſide, and is ready to be drowned, becauſe it hath no Pilot to ſet her upright, and to ſteer her in her right courſe, nor any Maſter that is able to govern her.

With theſe exclamations (wretched as I was) I rent the air, and was ready to run out of my wits: but was not ſo wiſe at that time to call to minde, what an ill name I had gotten in *Rome*, and yet with outcries and lamentations muſt thus pitifully bewail an accident of fortune. O would to God, that (conſidering the great troubles of this world) we would be as ſenſible of the adverſities of the minde, as we are moved with the afflictions of the body! But that doth happen unto us, which is wont to befall thoſe, which ſweep all clean before the door; and when they have done, throw the duſt into the houſe. Thus did I ſtand, making Funeral-lamentations over my misfortunes; when lo, there came a thing into my minde, which had happened ſome few dayes before, which was of great comfort unto me, adding new courage and ſtrength unto me againſt all ſuch accidents as might hereafter ſucceed unto me. And thus it was:

There was a Curtizan of *Rome*, who caus'd another woman, becauſe ſhe had been ſomewhat too laviſh of her tongue, to be ſlaſht over the face, cutting her athwart the noſe, from one cheek to the other, the cut running equally on either ſide of her face. And while the Chirurgion was a dreſſing of her, after that he had given her ſome ſixteen or ſeventeen ſtitches, ſhe weeping ſaid; Oh what an unfortunate woman am I! Gentlemen, let me intreat you, for Gods ſake, that my Husband may not know of this. A waggiſh fellow that ſtood there by, told her, if this ſlaſh had been upon your buttocks, as it is upon your face, it might haply have been hidden from him; but ſeeing there is no vail to cover it, why do you injoyn us to keep it ſecret.

In like ſort, it ſeemed ſimplicity, and meer foolery in me, to uſe ſuch a deal of nicety in the buſineſs. And the rather, for that this miſchance was publick. And becauſe (by reaſon of the general knowledge thereof) it could not be concealed, I thought it the beſt way for me, to get the game by the hand, and to ſpeak of it firſt my ſelf, telling as many of it, as I ſhould meet withall, making a jeſt of it, and recounting the whole ſtory thereof unto them, before they ſhould receive it from ſome other hand, and ſo at laſt come to know what a bad and long voyage I had made. Which if they ſhould have done, it had been better for me that I had been out of this miſerable world.

Let him indure the title of a bad name, that deſires to have it die quickly. For, with the more violence we ſeek to ſhake it off, the cloſer it cleaveth unto us. Inſomubh, that it continueth many times to the fifth generation; and then thoſe, which ſucceed them, do glory and boaſt themſelves thereof, and blazon that for their arms, which their Anceſtors held for an affront. The like hath befaln this my poor book, which I have entituled with the name of *Atalaya dela vida humana*; The Watch-Tower of mans life, they have put the nick-name of *Picaro* thereupon, and now it is known by no other name.

I was much perplexed, and as yet unreſolved what I were beſt to do. And for that I thought with me ſelf, that in our miſeries there is no other Sanctuary on earth to fly unto, but thoſe that are our friends; though I muſt confeſſe, I had but a few, and almoſt thoſe never a true one, I held it not amiſſe to have recourſe to ſome one of my Companions, that had profeſt much love unto me, and had made me the faireſt ſhowes of friendſhip.

This being now concluded on, I got me to his lodging, and knockt at his door, which he preſently opened unto me; where I did remain, while the lock was ript off from mine. You may conceive with your ſelf in what a woful caſe I was, that I durſt not ſit down upon a trunk that was there in the room, for fear of leaving therein the print of this my errour. This unhappy accident could not be kept ſo ſecret, but that it muſt needs be known. And it is a miſery that follows great mens houſes, that there is not a ſervant therein, that doth not ſtrive and labour all that he can to flatter and ſooth up his Lord and Maſter, although it be with merry jeſts and fained tales, when as there is no ſuch matter. For they deal with him, as thoſe that play booty, ſeeking to ſerve one anothers turn, uſing all their art and skill to cozen and deceive him: Whereby every Maſter knows, how and to what end his ſervants love him, and with what affection they ſerve him. And he is a kinde of unfortunate man, and in a miſerable and wretched taking, if he think to win them by rigour, and to work them to love him for fear. For few or none have ever been able to bring this to paſſe. For the heart of man is a noble thing, and muſt be won with gentle uſage; it muſt not be roughly dealt withall, but ſtroaked with a ſmooth and ſoft hand.

I had ſcarce ſhifted my cloaths, and waſht my ſelf clean, but that my Maſter knew I was all bedorted. They had told him in what caſe I was, but none of them could tell him the cauſe of it. This was all they could ſay of me, and ſo they left me, as they found me; ſo that by this means I had a fair white to ſhoot at, and might make my aim, as I would my ſelf. He demanded firſt of one, and then of another, how this came about, but none could inform him farther, then what they had ſeen.

Afterwards it was told me, (which was no more than I heard from his own mouth) that he conceited with himſelf, that they had caught me in *Fabia's* houſe, and that knowing my tricks and cunning carriage, they had turned the keel of me upwards, and had thus trim'd and pitcht me over, as your Sea-men do your Ships: and that I ſeeking to eſcape their hands, fell by miſ-fortune into ſome durty puddle, or filthy dunghil: Or elſe, that wreſtling and ſtriving with ſome of the ſervants, that were ſent out after me to catch me, they had thrown me down in the durt, bemoyling me in that beaſtly manner, being more willing to do me ſhame and reproach, than to take away my life. I likewiſe at the ſame time was caſting up my account with my ſelf, making me a wedge out of the ſame piece of wood, that I might drive this buſineſs the better, and come home unto him, by jumping with his conceit, and cleaving the ſame block that he had already entred upon, hoping thereby to give him the better ſatisfaction. And though his Cards and mine were not the ſame, yet were they both of a ſute, and the Trump was turned up right for either hand; and by different wayes we hapt both to meet at one and the ſame place: onely we did differ in this; that he by his wiſdome did conjecture, what was the moſt likely; and I, out of a vain and idle humour, made report of that, which might be leaſt prejudicial to my reputation. He had all that night been buſie a writing, and making his Diſpatches for *France*; but laying his Papers a while aſide, out of the great deſire that he had to know the truth of the matter, he preſently ſent for me in. But when I was come, and had preſented my ſelf unto him, he ſaid not a word unto me, till he had retired himſelf into his withdrawing Chamber, and diſmiſſed his ſervants, and that we two were all alone.

Then did he begin to ask me, how I came by my fall, and where? I told him that I ſtood at a neighbours door, that was right over againſt *Fabia's* houſe, watching very diligently, if I could have the opportunity to ſpeak with her; and whileſt I was carefully attending this buſineſs, her Maid *Nicoleta* came forth, making ſignes unto me, that I ſhould quickly come away. And being overjoyed with this unexpected good fortune, I would needs croſs the Lane, where the way was worſt and fouleſt, (becauſe I would not loſe time in going about by that which was the cleaner,) fetching a nimble leap, thinking to pitch ſure with my foot upon a ſtone, that was not ſo firmly laid as it ſhould have been, it totred aſide, and ſo my foot ſlipt; I ſought to recover my ſelf, but could not, and ſo fell into the durt, where I was moſt pitiful bemyred. Whereupon *Nicoleta* (the people that paſſed by beginning to flock about me) withdrew her ſelf, and went in. So that I was inforced to come home, without effecting that I went for; which did much more grieve me than my fall. But all things do not alwayes fall out as we would have them. He then ſaid unto me, I ſuffer more in this than thy ſelf. The harm is more mine than thine.

This buſineſs (*Guzmanillo*) goes not luckily along with thee. It was a work of darkneſs, thou wenteſt about it late in the Evening, in an unfortunate hour, and upon a Tueſday: this diſgrace could not have befaln thee in any mans ſervice, but mine; nor have lighted ſo unluckily upon any but my ſelf, ſuch is my misfortune.

Whereunto I replied; I would not that your Lordſhip ſhould make this ill conſtruction to your ſelf, nor would I have you to reckon this in the number; but I am rather perſwaded, that it would have been worſe with us, if this misfortune had not befaln me. For we have a Proverb in *Caſtile*, *Que breme un pie, quicas por mejor.* I brake my leg, and it may be, it was all for the beſt. And I am the bolder to tell you ſo, for that her husband was at that time at home in the houſe, and therefore it makes me to ſuſpect that there was ſome trap laid for me, and that I was called in to ſome ill end; but ſuppoſe it were otherwiſe, and that the winde had blown fair in the Poope, and that I had entred into the Haven; ſay, that the ſervants of the houſe ſhould either have ſpied me, or over-heard me talking with their Miſtreſs, what doth your Excellency think would then have become of me? Aſſure your ſelf, they would have cudgell'd me ſoundly, and have us'd me ſo hardly, that I ſhould not have ſeen't their fingers, till they had broken all my bones, and ſent me home without a noſe. For my ſo often rounding of that houſe hath cauſed ſome notice to be taken thereof; & albeit that ſome do think, that I only do it for *Nicoleta's* ſake, yet many that do not know

know the good love that is between us, are apt to conceive the worſt. And I have of late obſerved, that the good old man, *Don Beltran*, hath lookt a skew upon me, as if he were not well pleaſed with me. He was wont heretofore to ſpeak kindely unto me, asking my opinion concerning the Ladies, and Gentlewomen of this Court, and if I knew of any good Spaniſh ware in that kinde; but now he paſſes along by me, not ſo much as once offering to ſpeak to me: and if I put off my Hat and ſalute him, he looks another way, as if he did not ſee me, and goes along by me like a logge, without any life, or motion towards me at all.

This was the effect of that which I then ſaid unto him; my Maſter all this while being very attentive unto me, and ever and anon knitting his brow, and caſting up his eyes, whereby I knew, that I had ſtung him, and made him to ſit muſing, as one that had been amazed upon the report of ſome ſtrange and ſudden accident. I ſaw all his Cards, and knew what game he had in his hand, and how he would play it, and found by him, that he was afraid both of his reputation, and his perſon, and that it would be little for his honour, if any diſgrace ſhould befall him in that houſe, in regard it was one of the greateſt & nobleſt allied in all that Citie. I taking hold of this occaſion, came in a little cloſer unto him, helping to turn the Key about, when I ſaw which way it was winding; and ſo thinking it fit to ſtrike the iron whileſt it was hot, proſecuting my purpoſe, *I* ſpake thus unto him; There is not any thing now in this vvorld, that can work aſtoniſhment in me, nor make me to abate one hair of my courage, for *I* am well acquainted with misfortunes, know how far diſgrace can throw the bar, and the utmoſt harm ſhe could do me. For he that ſhall tread in my ſteps, and run thoſe courſes that *I* have done, ſhall hazard both the loſſe of his life and honour. But *I* have armed my ſelf with patience, to indure any misfortune whatſoever. *I* have learned long ago couragiouſly to ſuffer and abide the changes of Fortune with an undaunted minde, for *I* alwayes ſuſpect the worſt, looking for the hardeſt meaſure ſhe can give me, and prevent her better uſage, by expecting no good at her hands. Her effects are never ſo great, as are her threatnings; and if *I* ſhould have been cowed with them, they would have followed me ſtill cloſe at the heels, as the Grey-hound doth the Hare, and never give me over, as long as ſhe could wag her tail, or fetch her breath.

No great heed is to be given to that which hath ſucceeded in this buſineſſe, nor that *I* entred into it upon a Tueſday For *I* am neither wedded to ſuperſtitions, nor think that your Lordſhip is deſcended of the houſe of the *Menelaos*, that you ſhould be taken with theſe vain and idle toys of the Spaniards, as if all other dayes had a particular priviledge, and Tueſday onely had received a curſe from Heaven. And if fortune ſhould fall upon me; with all the forces ſhe can make, come what can come unto me, be it never ſo bad, all her rigorous dealing towards me, ſhall not wring one word out of my mouth, that ſhall be prejudicial to any man. Your Excellency may do well to diſſemble this buſineſſe, and to ſeem to take no notice of what hath paſt, nor to care a pin for it. For mine own part, I ſhall ever truely ſerve you to the death, fall back, fall edge, hap what will hap, all is one to me. Yet withall, true it is, and I ſhall make bold to tell you ſo, that if the caſe were mine, as it is yours, I would not onely deſiſt there-fro, conſidering how croſſe things go, for of a thouſand dayes, I cannot get one day of audience; ſo that it is likely to prove an endleſſe piece of work and an immortal kinde of buſineſſe, like unto that of our *Mayoraſgos*, or primo-genitureſhip, which your Fathers ſettle upon their eldeſt Sons, but ſhall not come to injoy their eſtate, till they be dead. Beſides, I may not well ſet my foot any more in thoſe parts, by reaſon that my haunting of that place is now generally noted, and ſome ſtick not to talk too liberally of it.

There are not wanting in *Rome* a good, and better ware than ſhe, which may be had with leſſe danger, at an eaſie rate, and give your Lordſhip more content, and leſſe trouble. I know not how it is with others, but my love is not ſo fervent, as to love for love, but for faſhion ſake to laugh and be merry, and to make ſport, as they uſe to do in my Countrey. I am like a Melon-mongers knife, cutting here a ſlice and there a ſlice, now at this corner, then at that, changing and altering my marks, roving ſometimes at one, ſometimes at another, here to day (as they ſay) and to morrow in *France*. I take thought for nothing, nor am I wedded to my will in any thing, nor am I conſtant in my purpoſes, eſpecially in matters of love. For if one will not, another will, I eat, and ſleep at my due hours; I ſigh not, when I am out of my Miſtreſſes ſight, but in her preſence I fetch many a grievous groan, and utter my complaints. And this is that Mill, wherewith I grinde. But your Excellency runs a clean contrary courſe. For you do all that you do, with a great deal of gravity, and with

a Lordly kinde of carriage and greatneſſe. And being a great and powerfull man, you have thoſe things in chaſe, which are hardeſt to be atchieved, and like the Falcon fly at the Hearn, making wing after till ſhe be quite out of her ſight; purſuing your game to the utmoſt you are able, coſt it what it will coſt, or come what will come of it, you care not. For as you have force and ſtrength to make reſiſtance, ſo you accommodate all things handſomely by your diſcretion and wiſdom; you have a good ſtaffe to truſt too; and good legs to bear you up.

You do not well underſtand *(Guzmanillo)* what you ſay, ſaid my Maſter unto me; but it is rather all quite contrary to that, which thou haſt ſpoken. For there is nothing now at this preſent more prejudicial, nor more noted and obſerved, than any the leaſt ſpot, or weakneſſe in a publick perſon. For men of my quality are bound to wear ſuch Cloaths as befit ſuch Miniſters, and not as ſhall fit beſt with our own fancy. Otherwiſe, we ſhall be taxed by thoſe that caſt an eye upon them. And every little indecency in them, turns to a ſtain at leaſt, if not a foul blot. A little breath (you know) will make the biggeſt Organs go. And your greateſt men ſound lowdeſt in the ears of the vvorld, when the noiſe of their actions are blown abroad by the bellows of the peoples breath. And I ſwear unto thee, that if I had not ingaged my ſelf by my word, and more particularly im-pawned my credit to *Nicoleta*, by giving my faithfull promiſe, that I would come and viſit *Fabia* in perſon (beſides it would grieve me, to be accounted inconſtant, or cowardly, blaming me of lightneſſe, that my love ſhould be like that of Children, or like water in a Sive, or that I went about but to try of what mettal ſhe was made, and then to laugh and ſcoffe at her coozening of both her and my ſelf of theſe our hopes, and that it ſhould be ſaid of me, that I did then turn tayl, when I might have ſeized on my game, and had the Partridge in foot, which I might have truſſed, if I would my ſelf) I would not have car'd a button. Beſides, being (as thou ſayeſt) that this buſineſſe goes on ſo ſlowly, and ſo coldly, I do not finde my ſelf ſo faſt intangled in her love, and ſo tranſported with paſſion, that I do not underſtand and conſider with my ſelf, that ſhe hath a husband, that is one of the principal, and chiefeſt in *Rome*, rich, and noble, out of which reſpect we ought to walk very warily, as profeſſing to have ſome honourable beginning, and not to diſ-honour the houſe we came of, for which cauſe I ought to keep a good *Decorum*, without doing wrong, or injury to any. And although ſhe be young and fair, (and as ſuch a one obliged, to take hold on thoſe fair occaſions that are offered) yet ought I not to follow her blandiſhment, and perhaps to my too great coſt, but with a great deal of caution and heed, as ſhall beſt ſtand with that duty which I owe to my nobleneſſe of bloud, and to the honour of their houſe and kindred.

Many times without due conſideration, we unadviſedly will ſee a mans game, and upon bad Cards (though we have little reaſon for it) ſet up our reſt, and when we are once in, we cannot give over the Vye, unleſſe we will be accounted ſimple, Cowards, and weak.

But ſince that on our part, we have uſed all poſſible diligencies, and that they prevail ſo little, and coſt us ſo much, (as the caſe ſtandeth now with the honour of this Gentlewoman) if my ſenſual appetite, like Gun-powder, hath with its fire ſcorched, if not burnt my reaſon, by acknowledging now the ill, which I have taken in hand, that fury is now over-paſt, and proſtrating my ſelf on the earth, I confeſſe my fault. I will go no more (as thou ſayeſt) following of that, which flyeth from me. But with this Lady, which was in a manner in my hands, I will deal with her, as doth the generous Hawk, by letting his Bird go; by which nobleneſſe of mine, that ill name ſhall be quite buried under ground, which for my ſake hath been raiſed of her; taking therein the beſt courſe that I can, that makes moſt for both our reputations.

This was that he ſaid unto me. And me thought that this his reſolution was my ſalvation. For therein I found the Paradiſe of my deſires opened unto me; and praiſing this his good purpoſe, the iſſue was the eaſier, not ſo much for his intention, as for my reputation. And therefore I ſaid unto him, Your Excellency ſhall herein do like your ſelf, and proceed in that, which you both ſay, and do, with that correſpondency, which is moſt agreeable to your wiſedom. For albeit it be a great happineſſe, to obtain that which we deſire, yet I hold it a greater, not to deſire that, which our ſenſuality ſuggeſteth unto us; much leſſe, if it incite us to the hurt of others, and more eſpecially towards perſons of quality.

This is a Chriſtian conſideration, and a Daughter worthy the birth of your Lordſhips brain; and therefore fit that you ſhould father it, and not caſt it off. And for the manner how you ſhall come off from this buſineſſe, leave that to me. For a faithfull ſervant, although

though for to maintain himſelf in his Maſters love and favour, he is wont to give a heat unto that appetite which he findes in him, yet is he bound, when he ſhall ſee this humour corrected in him, to turn the reins, incouraging him to continue in this his good purpoſe. This being ſaid, he licenſed me from him, ſaying; Farewell (*Guzman*) and drink upon this buſineſſe, which I put into thy hands, as I have already done mine honour. And ſo we parted.

## Chapter VII.

*The jeſt being publickly known through* Rome, *which befell* Guzman de Alfarache, *together with the ill ſucceſſe that he had with the* Bore; *for very ſhame he departs from thence, and goes for* Florence. *In which journey, a Thief enters into friendſhip with him, that he might the better, under that colour, rob him of all that he had.*



Have often conſidered with my ſelf, how much paſſion blindeth him, that is in Love. And I begin now to think upon my Maſter, that he ſhould recommend his honour unto me, as if I knew how to handle it, without ſoyling it. It comes likewiſe unto my remembrance, (nor can I chuſe but laugh when I think upon it) how it was poſſible for me, being ſo notorious and offenſive a Lyar, as I was, to ſtand in ſuch favour as I did with my Lord: and that his Excellency ſhould treat with me, more than any other, of matters of importance; as alſo that he ſhould truſt me with his ſecrets, and his ſubſtance, admit of my opinion, and give credit to all that I ſhould ſay; and that I being ſuch an one as I was, from whoſe mouth never came any Truth, which was not adulterated by me in its going forth, yet I could not indure a Lye in another.

And for that very cauſe did I hate that man to the death, and could never afterwards abide him, that ſhould abuſe me (though but once) in that kinde. Nor was this any wonder in me, being that it is natural to all thoſe that negotiate buſineſſes, to be much offended, if they be not in all things punctually dealt withall; when as they themſelves know not how to ſpeak a true word, and are never weary of lying. They begin with the higheſt, and end with the loweſt. For what can be more noble than Truth? and what more baſe than Lying? If you are to receive any courteſie from them; or that you would have them to do you a favour (though this kindeneſſe ſhall coſt them nothing) how many ſleights, how many tricks, how many delayes, and puttings off from one day to another, and from this to the next morning, which morning never comes; being like unto that of the Crow, which cries ſtill *Cras*, promiſing that which ſhe never performeth?

But if you are to give them any thing, and that you do not keep touch with them at the time appointed, and (which is the fault now and then of your beſt vvatches) that you miſſe but one minute, if you fail never ſo little of your promiſe, if you do not juſtly make payment, and delay them but one hour, you are no man of your word, nor do you know what belongs to good dealing, nor are ſo honeſt as you ſhould be. I did the like with thoſe that I had to do withall. I did conſider (but fooliſhly I muſt confeſſe) with my ſelf; What will it benefit me to tell truth? What does it concern me, that it is the Vice of thoſe that are vile and baſe, and the repaſt and food of beaſts? What harm ſhall I receive, if men will not give credit unto me, if I have got the ſame already, although they apparently ſee that I lye, and that ſuch is their paſſion, that they will not dis-deceive themſelves of my deceit? What honour have I to loſe? How can I fail in my credit? I am well enough known, and the vvorld is now come to that paſſe, that onely for this cauſe of my lying, they uphold, maintain, favour, and eſteem me.

Lying, and Flattery, is meat alone for great men, it is the onely diſh that pleaſeth their palate, the onely Muſick that delighteth their ears. But you are no welcom man unto them, if you come and tell them, that it is time for them to leave off gaming, that they have waſted and conſumed their eſtate, and that their Vaſſals and Tenants, are grown poor and beggerly. That they ſhould not play the *Fanfarrones*, royſting and ſwaggering where e're they come, nor ſhew themſelves diſſolute, and looſe in their behaviour, either in the open ſtreets, or in the Church, which muſt needs give occaſion of much both hurt and ſcandal. That they ſhould not be ſuch laviſh and prodigal ſpenders, as to ruine themſelves, and to break their Necks through too much haſte, by taking Poſt-horſes, as it were to run out of

their

their eſtates. And ſeeing that they can finde in their hearts and make no bones of it, to fool away ſuch a deal of money as they do, and that ſo vainly, and ſo idly, that they would yet make a conſcience to pay their ſervants their wages, and not to let them go totter'd and torn, and ready to ſtarve for hunger. That if they be rich, and in favour with the Prince, that they diſpence a part of theſe their good fortunes to the poor. That if they have their Kings ear, and are inward with him, that they ſhould make benefit of this their privacy, by procuring themſelves good and ſure friends, for there is no firmneſſe in fortune; nor no Princes favour ſo fixed, but it may fall off. That at leaſt, on feſtival dayes, they ſhould riſe betimes and get them to Church to hear Maſſe, and that they ſhould truely and ſincerely make confeſſion of their ſins, and not onely for faſhion ſake, to comply with the Pariſh, being therein onely nominal, but not real Chriſtians; having the name, but not the nature of true Chriſtians; for there are a kinde of men, that make a ſhow of having Faith, and that obſerve the precepts of the Church, but for no other end, leſt they ſhould be puniſhed, if they ſhould do otherwiſe, that they ſhould look well into themſelves, and learn to know that they were but men.

And in caſe that they ſhould be old and ſtrucken in years, that they are now wraſtling with death, who is ready to trip up their heels, and throw them into the grave, which lyes ready open to receive them; Their ſentence is already notified unto them; and as they that are to be executed, take leave of their friends, and have thoſe Enſigns born before them, which are prepared for that conflict; So muſt they at laſt take their farewell of all thoſe things, whereunto they living bear moſt affection: As their taſte, their ſleep, their ſeeing, their hearing, and the like; to which ſweet ſenſes ſentence of death is dayly, if not hourly notified, by the Reyns, the Kidneys, the Liver, the leſſer Guts, and our Urine: The Stomack begins to languiſh, the ſtrength of it waxes weak, its natural heat begins to fail; here the eye-teeth drop away, there the gumm's fall on aching: all which are as a mouldring away of theſe our clods of earth, and that the timber of this our houſe is rotten, and the roof ready to fall about our ears, and that there are no buttereſſes to uphold this tottering wall; from the foundation to the very top, it is wholly runne to decay, and the ruine thereof is at hand.

Admoniſh a young man of theſe, and the like things; or ſome rich young Gallants, who is as daring, as he is indiſcreet, and ſo head-ſtrong, that he will not be ruled; repreſent, I ſay, unto him, that he doth not know his friends from his foes, that for ſpeaking thus, looking there, commending that, and peradventure for but walking by, if not entring where he ſhould not, he will be ſuddenly ſtabbed at one time, or another; not having ſo much time as to receive the bleſſed Sacraments, nor to call upon GOD, to help him in this his extreamity; or to adviſe him to conſider, that his bloud is corrupted, ill humours abound in him, that he lives diſorderly; as given to all exceſſe and riot, that he uſeth little exerciſe, and that his often ſurfeitings will bring him to an Apoplexy, or ſome other dangerous diſeaſe, that will quickly make an end of him; or that the Lambe goes as ſoon to the Shambles as the Sheep; and that he ſhould not flatter himſelf, becauſe he findes himſelf ſtrong in his armes, ſound in his feet, luſty in his legs, able in his body, and free from all aches, either in his head, or thoſe his other parts, that therefore he is ſafe, is priviledg'd from ſickneſſe, hath an eſtabliſhed health, and aſſurance of long life.

And here (me thinks) I hear this young gallant ſay; Such poor Raſcals as thou art, muſt come to die, and ſuffer ſuch miſ-fortunes as theſe; For I am rich, ſtrong, valiant, diſcreet, and nobly deſcended. I have a fair houſe to dwell in, a ſoft bed to lie in, I eat what I liſt, I want nothing that my heart can deſire, I live at pleaſure, and do what I will, without controlement; and where there are no troubles, nor no care-taking, there is no ſickneſſe, there no door open for old age to enter. Ah, poor ſilly fool that thou art! *Sampſon*, *David*, *Salomon*, and *Lazarus* were more good, more diſcreet, more valiant, more gallant, and more rich then thou, yet they dyed, when their times were come.

There have been many Millions of men from *Adams* time to thine, and yet there was not any one of them that lived for ever in this world. He then that ſhall tell them this Truth, or any thing elſe that may be for their good, they will take him to be a fool. Who then will adventure to tell them their faults? Or who dare ſpeak their minde freely unto them? Let *Vargas* ſpeak to this point. He muſt be either deſperate, or fooliſh, that ſhall preſume to tell Princes and great perſons of theſe things; for if thou be a man of underſtanding, and have any thing in thee worthy commendation, they will preſently call thee into the Court, and frame a bill againſt thee, executing that Statute upon thee, of *Scandalum Magnatum*. And

if

if thou beeſt a *Buffone* and common Jeſter, they will ſend thee to the Porters Lodge, and there have thee whipt. Therefore thou muſt neither jeſt with thoſe that are rich and mighty, nor yet be ſo plain with them, as to tell them the truth. For, I am not bound to ſpeak the truth, where I know it will not be accepted, and whence I am I ſure ſhall get great hatred; if not harm, for my good will. It ſhall be ſufficient for my underſtanding, and all ſuch as I am, to know that all things in this vvorld paſſe away, and that we ſhall paſſe away likewiſe with them. I could be content to ſay this over and over a thouſand times together, and repeat no other leſſon: For, to underſtand this truth alone, is that which moſt importeth us, and doth moſt nearly concern us. And why ſhould we promiſe that unto our ſelves, which we cannot accompliſh? He that holds himſelf to be the ſtrongeſt man, of the ſoundeſt conſtitution, of the beſt compoſed humours, and the pureſt mixed elements; this man, I ſay, (for all is well ordered frame of nature) hath no aſſurance of his long continuance, but is more apt to fall, than thoſe other houſes of Clay, which are leſſe ſubſtantially built. There is not any mans ſtrength, be it never ſo great, that can reſiſt but a puff of ſickneſſe; the beſt of us all are but dunghills, and heaps of duſt, which a little blaſt of winde will ſcatter away, and lay us level with the earth. Let no man flatter and deceive himſelf: let him not feign that to himſelf, which is nothing ſo: nor entertain that, which his lying ſenſuality ſhall dictate unto him. For ſhe will ſpeak that unto thee, which ſhe utters to all the world beſides. She will tell thee; Thou art great and powerfull, and mayeſt therefore do what thou liſt. That thou art a Gallant, and mayeſt therefore go up and down, and take thy pleaſure. Thou art fair and rich, and mayeſt therefore be diſhoneſt and diſſolute. Thou art noble, and mayeſt therefore lawfully ſcorn thy inferiours, and think none to be equal unto thee. And if thou receiveſt an injury, it is not for thine own honour to put it up, but revenge it to the full. Thou art a Governour, and ſet in authority over others, and therefore mayeſt govern according to thine own will, and order buſineſſes for thine own beſt advantage, though it be to the hurt of others, let them maunder their worſt, or come what will come, thou need'ſt not to care. Thou art a Judge, and mayeſt therefore judge in thy friends favour, may'ſt tread juſtice under thy foot, and pervert the Laws at thine own pleaſure. Thou art favoured by the King, and art able to ſhew favour unto others; thou mayeſt therefore uſe this thy favour, as thou ſhalt think fit, and ſhall ſuit beſt with thine own liking, and blow ſmoak in the noſes of the poor, not regarding how thou doſt offend, & diſtaſte them. For it ſtands not with thy Reputation, thy Office, thy Dignity, nor thy Honour, that they ſhould ask thee that which thou oweſt them, nor ſpeak to thee for this his Cloak, which thou haſt wrongfully taken from him.

But, in good faith (my Lords) I muſt be ſo bold to tell you, that be ye never ſo great, or be ye ſo great as ye imagine your ſelves to be, (though you can never be ſo great, as you conceit your ſelves to be) yet the very beſt of you, when you are at the beſt, are no better than a little duſt. Make your choice of which duſt you will; be it earth, or aſhes; for there are no other ſorts of duſt. If of earth; let it put ye in minde, that your beginning was duſt, though tempered with a little water, giving ye thereby to underſtand (if your greatneſſe make you not like beaſts that underſtand not) that you ſhould make your ſelves fruitfull for Heaven, by entring into a due conſideration of your ſelves, and acknowledgement of your own unworthineſſe. Ye know well enough, that the earth cannot without water yield any fruit; And if this earth of yours become dry through your vices, and that it be not watred with the dew of Heaven, with holy inſpirations, and with good works, that it may fructifie and bring forth fruit, by pardoning of injuries, asking forgiveneſſe for thoſe wrongs which ye have done to others, by paying thoſe debts that ye owe, and by ſhewing true repentance, ye ſhall be but as heaps of aſhes, good for nothing, and caſt out upon the dunghill. And that in the end ſhall befall ye, which we ſee to happen unto aſhes, whereof that is made, that ſerves to take out the foyls and ſpots that are in Cloaths, and are afterwards as things of no uſe, thrown forth upon ſome one filthy-ſtinking mixen, or other. Ye ſhall by your bad examples, ſo terrifie others, and make them ſo afraid of following the evil courſes, that they ſhall thereby be ſaved, and ye damned to the pit of Hell, that everlaſting burning Coal-pit, whoſe fire ſhall never go out. Theſe I tell ye, are truths, and now it is time to tell ye them. And if I told ye lyes in my youth, out of a kinde of pride and bravery that I took in them, now experience teaches me another leſſon, and riper years have brought me to the knowledge of thoſe many errours; which I then committed.

Nor let any man indanger himſelf, for to think that that may happen unto him, which

bath befaln me; to wit, Long life; and relying thereupon, grow ſlack and careleſſe of their amendment, hoping that they may do that time enough hereafter, when they begin to wax old; for a ſharp Eaſterly winde ſhall come upon thee on the ſudden, ere ever thou art aware of it, and nip this thy flower of youth, with the cold bitter froſt of death, and ſheer thee down to the ground in this thy green and flouriſhing ſtate, as graſſe is cut down by the Sithe of the Mower, and thou ſhalt preſently wither and be carried clean away, never more to be ſeen. I was never ſure that I ſhould come to live thus long, nor can any man elſe warrant his own life. For we are all of us but as birds that flye abroad in the fields, ſinging and ſporting, while in the mean time the Eagle comes, and ſeized upon all of them, which ſeemed beſt unto him. Or elſe comes the owner of thoſe grounds, uſing a thouſand tricks and devices to take them. None of us know the ſet hour of our death, but all of us know this, that we muſt go one after another. I likewiſe have followed mine own idle humour, not thinking upon any ſetled courſe in this world; but becauſe the end which I intend, is to build up a perfect man, ſtill as I meet with ſtones fit for this building, I go ſetting of them up; theſe occaſions, are my Center, and by them, as by ſo many lines, I come thereunto. But here I will lay down this load of ſtones, and when the time ſhall ſerve, I will return again with another, and it ſhall not be long e're I gather more, and bring them in place.

Returning therefore to our preſent purpoſe; I ſay, that I was wholly compacted of lies, as I had ever been. With ſome I would be a Martyr, with otherſome a Confeſſor. For all things are not to be communicated to all. And therefore I would never truely impart my troubles to any, nor punctually publiſh them: but when I was forced to manifeſt the ſame, I would tell one man one tale; and another, another; and no man had it without it's comment. And becauſe a Lyer (ſay they) had need of a good memory, I, that had none of the beſt, to day I would recount the caſe one way, and to morrow another, and ſo many times, ſo many different wayes did I vary from that which I firſt delivered: So that, bearing my ſelf in this manner, I gave occaſion to thoſe that knew me to be a Lyer, not to give credit ſo much to me, as to the general voyce and report that went abroad. For they did all of them truely and really agree upon the thing it ſelf, they did jump in the matter, but not in the manner. For every one did either take away, or add thereunto, as he thought beſt; and as thou thy ſelf perhaps art wont now and then to do.

Now, for ſome few dayes, as a novelty that had been newly ſet abroach, there was no other thing talkt of in all *Rome*. My miſ-fortune was the theam of their diſcourſe, and my being be myr'd, the ſalt that ſeaſoned their converſation. It came likewiſe to my Maſters ear, but he being wiſe, gave it the hearing, but ſpake not a word of it. For a Maſter is not alwayes bound to take notice of all that is done: for then he ſhould be ty'de (by the Law of goodneſſe, and out of the nobleneſſe of his nature) to remedy what is amiſſe. He did diſſemble it all that he could, but not ſo cunningly, but that by ſome inter-ſmilings, and caſting of his eyes, he made it known. He ploughed with me, and therefore knew what furrow I had turned up. And as it was fit for him to diſſemble it, ſo was it for me to deny it. We were ſilent on all ſides, but not very long, for the Devils cloven foot at laſt brake out at his ſhooes. There was a certain friend of his, and conſequently my enemy, who taking him one day all alone, told him, how much it importeth both his quality and credit, to rid himſelf of me; in regard of the publick and open language, which I uſed of thoſe things which his Lordſhip had in-truſted me withall, and that every one might ſcrue what he would from me, and draw all thoſe ſecrets from me, which he had committed to my boſom. That Gentlemen of his place and profeſſion ſhould proceed according to that, which repreſented it ſelf unto them, and that his Lordſhip doing the contrary, it would prove very prejudicial to his own reputation, and his Maſters ſervice. This diſcourſe, is mine own; and though haply theſe formal words were not delivered juſt in the ſame phraſe, as I have now delivered unto you; yet I verily believe, they were like unto theſe. If not more effectual than what I have here ſet down. But howſoever they were the ſame, or not the ſame, I am ſure that none of them all could tell him more, than he himſelf already knew, nor adviſe him better than he was able to adviſe himſelf. And I make no queſtion, that he was not well pleaſed with that they ſaid unto him. But he ſpake not one word thereof unto me at that time, nor made any ſhew of alteration, or carried any other kinde of countenance towards me, then he was wont to do. Onely, becauſe Lent was now newly come in, he made uſe of that occaſion, to live a little more retired, and not to talk of prophane and idle matters, and particularly, not of women.

Thus did things runne along. But in regard that I was become the common Table-talk of

all

all the Town, thoſe that waited on my Lord in his Chamber, his Pages, and other his ordinary ſervants, took a little more liberty and licence, of language unto them, then did well beſeem them. For, to make themſelves merry, and to entertain the time, what between jeſt and earneſt, they did ſo nip me with their witty jeſts, and pay me home with their Satyrical laſhes, that your Marriners do not more ſtrain their tacklings in a Tempeſt, then they did wreſt and wring the very bowels within me. So that now at laſt, neither at home, nor abroad, had I any place, wherein I might reſt ſecure; nor any wall, where againſt to lean, and from whence ſome Eccho did not ſound, that did voyce forth the ſins that I had done.

I had now ſo loſt all patience, and was ſo in a manner beſides my ſelf, that one day as I paſt along the ſtreet, I was almoſt inforced to have committed many fooleries. He ſaid well, who being aſk't, in how long a time a wiſe man might turn fool? Anſwered; That is according as the boyes in the ſtreet ſhall flock about him, abuſe him, and hoot at him. This was it that brought the water up above my chin, and was ready to drown me: this was it that made me to for-ſwear all ſufferance, and to revenge my wonted patience.

Many little Children, as well as the greater Lubbers, did perſecute me, whereſoever I went, laughing and ſcoffing at me, with ſtrange out-cries, and loud ſhoutings, making a moſt hideous noyſe. I took up ſtones, and would have thrown at them; but a young man of mine own ſtature, quality, and years, well-behaved, but ſomewhat hot and cholerick, came running in upon me, and held my arm ſo faſt, that I was not able to move a finger to do them any hurt: yet did he deal ſo honeſtly with me, as to take part with me againſt them all, and, to defend me againſt this their rage and fury, drawing in two, or three other of his friends, that came along in his company, making reſiſtance both in deed, and in words, againſt thoſe Hobber-de-hoyes, which like ſo many Hob-goblings, or little Devils, did haunt me up and down from ſtreet to ſtreet, and from houſe to houſe. And having now quieted and laid theſe unruly ſpirits, he took me by the hand, bringing me himſelf alone home to his lodging, leaving his Companions behinde to keep back the boyes.

When he had brought me thus home, I would fain have had him to ſtay with me, that I might have faſtned ſome kindneſſe upon him, and have done him all the courteſie and honour the houſe could afford: But could by no means get him to accept thereof.

Then did I intreat him, that he would tell me his name, as alſo where was his lodging, that I might come to kiſſe his hands, and give him thanks for the un-deſerved kindeneſſe I had received from him; but he would neither acquaint me with the one, or the other; promiſing to return ſome other time to viſit me. Onely he told me, that he did bear particular affection as well to my perſon, as my Countrey; for that I was a *Spaniard*, and that he was as ſenſible of this diſgrace of mine, as if it were his own. And with this we took leave each of other. I came home with my colour ſo changed, my eyes ſo inflamed, and my underſtanding ſo confounded, that (not conſidering well what I did) coming juſt in the nick, when Dinner was a ſerving up, I would needs go up with the reſt of the Pages to wait at his Lordſhips Table. But when I was come into the Dining-room, and found what Gentlemen were there attending on his Excellency, I then ſaw my ſimplicity, and ſaw how egregiouſly I had plaid the fool; and would fain have holpen my ſelf, by getting forth from amongſt them: but it was too late; for my Maſter had already perceived by my countenance what I ayled, and (without caſting my water) that all was not well with me, and that I was inwardly much troubled. Whereupon he demanded of me, what was the cauſe of this my perturbation? I being taken thus on a ſudden, having no leaſure to fall then a coyning, and having never a new lye in ſtore, went plainly to work, and told him all the whole truth of the buſineſſe, and every particular paſſage thereof, which was all out before I was aware, telling that, which I was not willing to utter. And this was the firſt Wine that came out of my Tavern without water, and the firſt truth that I ever told in my life. My Maſter ſaid nothing to it: but thoſe that waited at the boord, not being able to forbear laughing, one claps me the cover of the Cup that he held in his hand before his face, another the Plate that he held between his Thumbs, a third the Napkin wherewith he ſerved as Sewer, and thoſe that were empty-handed, laying one hand on their face, with the other ſtopping their mouth, their hearts being ready to burſt in their bellies, hy'de them (for fear of blurting in my Lords face) as faſt out of the room, as their legs would carry them. And they paſt ſo far therein beyond the bounds of modeſty, that his Excellency was ſomewhat moved thereat, and called out aloud unto them to be quiet, rebuking them with ſharper words then ever heretofore he was wont to do, reprehending them for their over-boldneſſe in his preſence,

wherewith I was so ashamed, and so quite altered from that I was before, as if I had been sensible of the teares of honour, he had some signe thereof still remaining in me.

O how many things doth Reason correct, which Love is not able to effect! O how much doth it import oftentimes, for to take a good fall, that a man may the better learn to look to his feet hereafter, and to know how to walk more steddily, and more surely! Then did I take notice of mine own deformity, in that glasse did I see every spot that I had about me, and was so quite dasht out of countenance, and so confounded in my self, that for all the Masters, and Women that were in the world, I would never more take upon me to treat of their Love-matters, nor be a broker in that kinde for the greatest Prince in Christendom. O what a brave resolution was this, if it would have held!

The storm being now laid, my Master remained very sad, leaning his cheek on his hand, and his elbow on the boord, holding his Pick-tooth in his mouth between his teeth, being much discontented, that these things of mine should run on in that manner, that he must be forced to that, which he never thought to have done; howbeit it was requisite for him so to do, for the avoiding of a greater mischief; seeing himself now so farre ingaged, that he should give some notable touch to his Reputation, if he should declare himself in my defence; especially, considering that mens servants are the real and true mark of what goodnesse and fineness is their Masters Cloath. He will'd me to get me down to dinner; And from that time forward, neither I, nor any of my fellows did for many dayes together, see his countenance so cheerfull, nor finde his tongue so affable, as heretofore it was wont to be.

Now I durst not go (as before) out of doors but by night. So that all day long I kept my self close in my Chamber, spending my time, either in reading good books, or playing upon some instrument, or talking with my friends. Insomuch, that this retiring of my self, wrought in those of the house a new respect; and in those abroad, silence, And in my self, another course of life, differing from that which I led before.

Now every mans tongue was still, and now by absenting my self from their sight, all these my businesses were forgotten: as if they had never been. The young man came often to visit me, that had taken my part, when I was so vilely mockt and abused by the boyes. He made me many offers of his Purse and his person: he acquainted me with his Countrey, his name, and the cause of his coming to *Rome*, which was to get a Dispensation of his Holinesse, and that he had spent therein a great deal of money and time, and yet was as far from effecting his businesse, as the first hour that he set foot in that Citie. I held my self bound to do him all the good Offices that I could to further this his pretension, giving credit to all that he told me. And because I did desire, that some fair occasion might be offered, whereby I might repay part of that debt, wherein I stood bound unto him; I intreated him, that he would acquaint me with his businesse, and I would Petition my Lord Ambassadour in his behalf, and negociate it with all the speed I could. He returned me many thanks for this my kinde offer, and told me that he had now hit into the right path, wherein he was to walk, and that he had now very good and assured hopes to bring his purpose to passe. But in case this course should fail him, whereinto he had now put himself, he would then entertain that courtesie whereof I had made him so willing a tender. And thus we past the time a while in complement, giving and taking by turns some Ceremonies of Court-ship, till at last he askt me, whether I would take the pains to walk along with him to the Palace? I excused my self unto him, and told him the cause why I had retired my self, and how well it sped with me; for by my not going abroad mine own minde was now quieted, and the noise and horry of the Town very well allayd.

This young fellow was as very a vvagge as I my self, much of my age, and his beard (like mine) newly budding forth; he presently caught hold of these words, as those, which he most desired to hear to come from me? and when I had herein satisfied his longing, he said thus unto me.

*Senior Guzman*, you have carried your self with that discretion, as is proper unto you, and may truely be termed your own. And I hold this for as good and sure a remedy, as I finde it difficult for you to put it in practice, and to make continual use of it; For sometimes such necessary occasions represent themselves unto us, that men are inforced, whether they will or no, to break these their firm purposes, and religious resolutions. If I, Sir, were in your case, rather than I would be thus mewed up, and for so long a time, I would wear out this disgrace by travelling abroad, rounding all *Italy*, before I would return. In which your travel, you shall not onely take singular content, but you shall likewise obtain

your intended end, and with more advantage, than you can possibly pretend, by this your private shutting up of your selfe in your Lords house. For *Time* and *Absence* wear out all things, and are the best Physicians that can be found for such kind of diseases as these are.

He went likewise leading me along with the relation of divers and sundry curiosities, presenting unto me the great excellencies of *Florence*, the beauty of *Genoa*, and the incomparable government of *Venice*, and other things of great delight, which did so dispose me to undergo this course, which (after that he had taken his leave of me) wrought so upon me all that night, that I could not take any rest, nor think upon any other thing. Me thought, that I had already pluckt on my Boots, and put on my Spurs, and that I was now onward on my way. Whereupon I got me up as soon as it was day, and brought my Lord his clothes; to whom, while he was making him ready, I gave an account of this my resolution. He liked very well of it, holding it a commendable, and an honest course, that it would make much for my good, and stop all those mouths that were now so clamorous against me. He then told me, what others had said of me: and that, which he sate musing on at board, when he shew'd himself so sad, how he was then beating his brains about my good, and how much he did desire to see me well accommodated, for the great affection that he beare unto me, and that he had set his wits awork for me; but seeing that mine own invention had hit so well; he told me, that if *I* had a minde to go into *France*, I should have Letrers of recommendation to his friends there in my favour: or if that I should make any other choyce to my better liking, he would not be wanting unto me, but deal well and worthily with me, as one that had done him true and faithful service.

I had a greater desire to have gone into *France*, for the great State and Majesty that I had often heard of that Kingdome, but much more of that their noble and renowned King; but things were not then in that case that I could conveniently execute my longing. I kist his hands, and thank't his Excellency for these his favours towards me; and told him, that (if it might stand with his good leave and liking) I was very desirous to travel thorow all *Italy*, and especially to see *Florence*, whereof I had heard such large commendations; and from thence go to *Siena*, where *Pompeyo* did then reside, one that was my especial good friend, and well known to his Lordship, for we did ordinarily converse together by our Letters, though we had never seen one another. Which correspondence had knit a strict knot of friendship betweene us.

My Master was very glad of this motion; and from that day forward, began to set things in order for my journey. Purposing with my self to make hereafter a new Book, washing away by my vertues, those spots, which vice had stained me withall.

## Chapter VII.

Guzman de Alfarache *discourses of Deceit. He departs from* Rome. *He desires to see* Siena, *where certain theeves meet with his Trunks, which he had sent away before, and rob him of all that he had.*

That most famous Philosopher *Seneca*, treating of *Deceit*, (whereof we have said somewhat already in the third Chapter of this Book, though all that shall be spoken thereof will be too little) in one of his Epistles saith; That there is a deceitful kinde of promise, which is made to the Fowles of the air, the Beasts of the field, the Fishes in the waters, and men themselves upon earth. *Deceit* comes unto us in that submissive kinde of manner, in so lowly, and so humble a fashion, that they that do not know her may be condemned of ingratitude and incivility, if they do not set wide open the gates of their soul, and run out to receive her with open both arms and heart. And for that the art thereof, which is now a-dayes professed, the studies, the watchings, and the diligences, which are used therein, are all done with a double minde, and set themselves a-work with a false intent: by how much the more the thing that is treated of, is in its nature of that quality, that we may therein easily commit many errours, that may turn much to our prejudice, by so much the more secret subtilties, crafty Counter-minings, cunning Stratagems, strong Artillery, and warlike munition, she fortifies her self, furnishing her self with all necessary provision, when she means to come into the field. And therefore we need not so much to wonder, that we are now and

then, but that we are not alwayes deceived. And the case standing so, I hold it a lesse evil to be deceived by others, then to be the Authors of so sacrilegious a sin.

Amongst other things which King *Don Alonso* would (who was surnamed the Wise) indiscreetly reform in nature, this was one amongst the rest; that he did blame her, that she had not made a Window in mans brest; that we might see that, which he was plotting in his heart, and whether his manner of proceeding were fair and sincere, or whether his words were feigned, or whether (like *Janus*) he had two faces under one hood? And the cause of all this is Necessity; for if a man finde himself laden with obligations, and knows not how to ease himself of them, he goes about to seek all the helps and means he can, to lighten himself of his load, and to come off as handsomly as he can. Necessity teacheth us the way to all this, and makes the hardest and most untrodden paths to appear even, and easie to be hit. It will break thorow the thickest Briars, and clamber up the roughest and steepest Rocks. It is in its own nature (as is before mentioned in our first Chapter) full of daringnesse, and of lying. And for this cause even your simplest and most innocent Birds have their tricks and their subtilties. The Dove flies with a strong and swift wing, seeking food for her tender young ones, whilest another of her own kinde, from the highest top of some one Oak or other, calls her, and invites her, that she will entertain her self there a while to ease and refresh her self, and onely to the end, that the cunning Fowler may come the more conveniently to make his shoot, and kill her. The poor harmlesse Nightingale, in a wilde and careless fashion, goes thorow the Wood, sweetly thrilling forth her love-sick complaints, when lo, another Bird of the same feather, that is clapt into a Cage, awaking new jealousies, deceives her with a false call, and brings her into the Net, by means whereof, she becomes a perpetual prisoner, during her life.

*Avianus* the Philosopher tells us in one of his Fables, that even your Asses have also a minde to deceive, and he makes mention of one, that had put on a Lions skin, to make all the rest of the beasts of the Forest afraid, who being sought after by his Master, when he saw him in that kinde of cloathing, not being able therewith to hide his huge long eares, he presently knew this his Asse, and soundly basted his back and sides with a good cudgel; and stripping him of his counterfeit skinne, he remained as very an Asse as he was before.

Of all creatures living, there is scarce any one, but will, for the effecting of his purpose, use some deceit against him, who is careless thereof, and thinks not on it; as is expressed in that Impresse, of a Snake that lay asleep, and a Spider, that came secretly down to nip him by the head, and strike his poison into him, and so work his death: whose Motto speaks thus: *No ay prudencia que resista al engaño.* No wisdome can withstand deceit. It is folly for any man to think that a wise man can fore-see and prevent those deceits, which like so many Traps and Gins are laid in his way. I was not so circumspect as I should have been, I suspected no trechery, I received good deeds, I heard good words, I saw a man in an honest and fashionable habit, who sought to give me good counsel, and seemed to favour me, who had put his life in danger, to save mine; who visited me (as I thought) without any hope of Interest, or particular profit to himself, not being able to fasten upon him (so unwilling did he seem to receive any courtesie from me) so much as a cup of cold water. He told me, that he was my Countrey-man, an *Andaluzian*, born in the City of *Sevill*, a principal Gentleman of the house of the *Sayavedras*, and one of the noblest, the ancientest, and best qualified of all that Family: and who, from one of such a quality, would have suspected such deceit? But all were lies that he told me; for he was of *Valencia*, whose name, for some just causes I conceal; but he spake the Language of *Castile* excellent well, and had the true tone thereof, that it was not possible to discern him to be other. He was an handsome wel-favoured young man, well spoken, of a fair behaviour, and a fine Companion in his conversation: Who would have once suspected, that he should have prov'd such a Cony-catching Rascal, and that with such ceremonies and fained friendship, he should thus deceive me? But all this cunning carriage of his, was but like a Peacocks dressing, making this so fair a show, that thereby he might the better deceive me, and that he might have the freer accesse into my Lords house and into my Chamber, to filch from thence whatsoever he could handsomly finger. I had no mistrust of him in the world, but rather held him so honest a man, that I durst have pawn'd my life for his truth.

He came the other day to visit me, and finding that I had altered my habit, and put my self into another kinde of fashion of cloaths, differing from my wonted wear, he startled

and

and ſtood afterwards as one amazed, not knowing what he might think of it, or what might be the cauſe of this change. At laſt, he askt me the reaſon of this ſudden alteration? I told him, that I had taken his counſel, and that I was reſolved to go to *Siena*, where *I* ſhould meet with *Pompeyo*, a great and intire friend of mine, and from thence to paſſe for *Florence*, and ſo afterwards to viſit all *Italy*.

When he heard me ſay ſo, he began to take freſh breath, and ſeemed to be very glad thereof, much commending this my reſolution, and altering withall his own determination: for if his deſigne until then, were onely to ſeek out ſome fit occaſion to ſteal thence an odd ſute of cloathes, ſome trifling Jewels, or ſome odd pieces of Gold, not worth the talking of; having now heard this news of my ſudden departure, no leſſe now would content him than my whole ſtore. He was very diligent in obſerving how I did make up my Trunks, putting his helping hand thereunto, He marked where I had laid a ſet of Gold Buttons, a Chain, and other Jewels that I had, and above three hundred Spaniſh Piſtolers that I carried along with me. For my Lord Ambaſſadours houſe, being I did not now uſe to play, but to hoord up what I got, yielded me, in the ſpace of ſome four years that I ſerved him, good ſtore of money, what in gifts; what for good lucks ſake, Gameſters beſtowed upon me, when they hada good hand; what by Cards, which I was ever ready to furniſh them withall; and what with other Preſents, that now and then came unlook't for unto me.

When *I* had lockt and nailed up my Trunks, I laid up the Keys upon my Beds-head, whereon *Sayavedra* had ſet his heart; for then did he deſire nothing more, than to meet with ſome fit occaſion, how he might come to the fingring of them, and finde means to falſifie them. And it fell out juſt as he would have it. For, as he and *I* were talking of my journey, and telling him that I purpoſed to ſend away my Trunks before, and that I would ſtay ſome ſix or ſeven dayes in *Rome*, to take leave of my friends, by which time they would be at *Siena*, where I ſhould finde them ready for me, when I came thither; in that very inſtant there came one of my Lords ſervants unto me, and told me, that there were ſome beneath did inquire for me, and did much deſire to ſpeak with me. And becauſe my Chamber was out of order, unſwept, and not fit, by reaſon it was ſo foul, to receive any viſit, I went down to ſee who they were.

In the *Interim*, *Sayavedra* had opportunity to take the print of all my keys in certain pieces of ſome Wax Candles ends that lay about the Chamber, if he had not purpoſely brought ſome along with him in his pocket. Thoſe that ſought for me were certain Muleters, or Carriers, which came for my luggage; they came up, I delivered it unto them, and they carried it away.

This buſineſſe diſpatched, my friend and *I* continued talking together: and becauſe he did not offer to go away, *I* thought he did it out of courteſie, and the friendſhip that was between us, and that it was out of his love to keep me company, for that little while I was to ſtay. Whereas indeed he onely ſtayed in Town, till counterfeited keys were faſhioned by the Smiths hand, and to make me break my ſleeps, as by and by *I* ſhall tell you.

He continued his Viſits with me for three or four dayes together: and when he thought he had made all cock-ſure, and that the Bird could not now eſcape his hand; he came one evening to my Chamber, where he had not ſate long, but that his face changed colour, and began to put on that faigned hiew, which he was willing to give it, hanging his head in his boſome, making ſhow as if he had been taken with a great pain in his head, an extream Ach in his ſhoulders, a ſtrange kinde of ſowreneſſe or bitterneſſe of his mouth and palate; and above all, with a wonderful heavineſſe in his eyes, that he was ſcarce able to hold them up. He ſeemed to be as it were in a Lethargy, or the like drowzie diſeaſe; complaining, that he was ſcarce able to ſtand upon his legs, deſiring me that I would give him leave to go home to his Lodging. I was very ſorry, and held it a great unhappineſſe, that my Chamber was not fitted for to lodge him, and to give him that friendly entertainment, as my heart deſired: Intreating him (when I ſaw he would needs be gone, that he would acquaint me with his lodging, that I might come and viſit him, and ſend him ſome phyſical curioſities, fit for ſick folks, to relliſh his taſte, and comfort his ſtomack, or that *I* might ſerve him in any thing elſe, wherein I might be uſeful unto him. He told me, that he lodged in the houſe of a certain Gentlewoman, that lived very ſecret and private; but in caſe this his ſickneſſe ſhould not ſuddenly leave him, or that he ſhould chance to grow worſe and worſe, that then he would adviſe me thereof, that I might come and viſit him. And ſo taking his leave of me, that very day he took Poſt, and rode towards *Siena*, where he found his Companions;

that

that went along with the Muleters, that they might ſee where, and to whom theſe Trunkes were conſigned.

When he was come to *Siena*, the people ſeeing a Gentleman come in that good equipage by Poſt, took him to be ſome principal *Spaniard*. He alighted at the chiefeſt Inne that was in all the Citie, where preſently his Companions came about him, who had there attended his coming, and giving it out that they were his ſervants, they waited diligently upon him.

That very day, as ſoon as he was arrived, he ſent one of them to *Pompeyo*, to give him to underſtand, that he was newly come to Town. And when my friend had received this meſſage, and knew that I was in the Town, he was ſo over-joyed, that going to put on his Cloak, it was a good while ere he could finde the way to unfold it, and to ſet it right upon his ſhoulders. And he himſelf afterwards told me, that he firſt threw it one way, and then another, one while with the wrong ſide outward, another with the cape doubled in, and out of order; and in the end, when he could not hit the right, through his too much joy, he careleſly flung it onely upon one ſhoulder, and in this unmannerly kinde of manner, he came from home in all haſte, ſtumbling and tripping in the ſtreets, and ſometimes ready to fall upon his noſe, through his too much haſte, and longing deſire that he had to ſee me.

Being come to the Inne, where *Sayavedra* had put on my perſon, he took it very unkindely, complaining much, that I ſhould make him ſuch a ſtranger, and deal ſo unfriendly with him, as not to alight at his houſe, which I might command as freely as mine own. Which *Sayavedra* having excuſed as well as he could; they afterwards fell into diſcourſe, talking of his journey, and ſome other things of *Rome*, untill it was night.

At which time *Pompeyo*, for the preſent, taking his leave of him, that he might leave him to his reſt: *Sayavedra* gave (in his preſence) the Key of one of his Trunks, to one of his ſervants, ſaying unto him withall; Do you hear, Sirrah? Go you along with *Sennor Pompeyo*, and take me out ſuch a ſute which you ſhall finde in ſuch a part, for I will put on that to morrow.

They went away together, and his ſervant punctually performed that, which his Maſter had commanded him; uncording, in the preſence of *Pompeyo*, the very ſelf-ſame Trunk, whereunto he was directed, and taking forth the foreſaid ſute of cloaths, he locks me the Trunk, and putting up the key in his pocket, he comes his way. That night *Pompeyo* ſent him a very good ſupper, a neat collation of Comfits, and ſweet meats, and admirable rich Wines: wherewith when *Sayavedra* and his fellows had ſupt, and had eat and drunk their fill, they got them to bed, where they ſo ſoundly ſlept, that they did not wake till the next day.

That morning *Pompeyo* came ſomewhat early to viſit him; but his ſervants intreated him to hold their Maſter excuſed, for he had not taken any reſt all that night, and was now newly faln aſleep. He told them, he was very ſorry that he had ſo ill a night of it; he would not therefore now trouble him, but would go his way, and come anon. But they would by no means give way to that, telling him, that their Maſter would be very angry with them, when he ſhould know that he had been there, and that none of them had either ſo much wit, or manners to tell him of it. Whereupon, they went preſently up into his Chamber, and ſignified unto him, that *Sennor Pompeyo* was come to ſee him. He was very glad of it, and commanding one of them to ſet ready a Chair for him, ſent down another to intreat him to come up.

*Pompeyo*, as ſoon as he came in, asked him how he did, and what was the cauſe of his laſt nights indiſpoſition? He told him, that for want of uſe, he was ſo weary with riding Poſt, that he found himſelf ſomewhat diſtempered, his body being over-heated, and that he had a purpoſe to be let blood.

*Pompeyo* was very earneſt with him, that he would change his lodging, and take his houſe for his Inne. *Sayavedra* excuſed himſelf, telling him, that his ſervants were unruly, and given to diſorder, and that he was reſolved to put them away, and to take new within theſe eight or nine dayes; and that then he would promiſe him to receive this courteſie at his hands, which he had ſo kindly offered unto him: Intreating him in the mean while, that he would do him the kindneſſe, as to ſend his Trunks by one of his own ſervants, becauſe he had no great truſt in any of his own, and fearing, that giving them the Keys to fetch ſuch things as he needed, they might put ſome trick upon him.

*Pompeyo* liked well of it, and thought that he did therein very wiſely and diſcreetly, onely he ſeemed not to be ſo well pleaſed, that he ſhould treat of taking phyſick in an Inne.

But

an Inne. But resting contented with the promise that he had made him, he performed what he desired, and was no sooner come to his lodging, but he laded certain Porters with his Trunks, and sending one of his servants along with them, he saw them safely delivered to *Sayavedra*. He sent him that day a very dainty Dinner: and those two friends having taken leave of each other for that night, that they might go to bed in a good hour, *Sayavedra* and his Companions conveyed secretly into another house that which they had brought thither, and taking Post, departed presently for *Florence*; whither when they were come, they divided the spoil amongst them.

These copartners with *Sayavedra* were their crafts-Masters, subtil fellows, and stout Rogues; and the principal plotter and contriver of all these pilfring projects, was a *Bolonian* born, he was a great Scholler and a very learned Doctor in this kinde of Art; his name was *Alexandro Bentivoglio* the Son of a Doctor in that University, who was a rich man, and a great projector, but of no extraordinary discourse, but one that did build Castles in the air, and frame in his imagination mighty matters, and things of great intertainment.

This Man had two Sons, in condition quite opposite, and contrary one to the other. The elder was called *Vicencio*, an ignorant young fellow, a silly Asse, the laughter of the people, with whom your Noblemen, and Gentlemen made sport; he would bolt you out the famousest fooleries that could be devised. One while he would boast his Nobility, another while his Valour; sometimes he would take upon him to be a great Musician, and then falling off from that, he would brag of his Horsmanship, and his Poetry; and above all, he would professe himself to be the onely *Enamorado*, and perfect Love-proficient in all the Countrey. So that of him, it might be said, *Dexalas penen*, suffer such to dye in their folly.

The other was this *Alexander*, a notable Thief, nimble fingerd, and of a strong and able body. Who, though he were well born, yet was he ill bred, and for want of good education, became an excellent Vagabond, and a notorious Rogue, by keeping of ill company. This mans companions, were other such like ruffianly fellows as himself. For like will to like; and all sorts of things have recourse to their proper center.

Now, because he was the Ring-leader, and the onely principal man amongst them, and that did all in all, he made *Sayavedra* content himself with a little, giving him some, but the worser sort of my Cloaths. And thinking that he could not remain there in safety, he got him into the Popes Territories, where his Father was *Alcalde*. So that he posted to *Bologna*, carrying away with him the Buttons, the Jewels, and the Pistolets, retiring himself home to his fathers house, and the rest of his fellows that sheared with him fled to *Trent*, as they afterward told me in *Bologna*, and there they dispersed themselves.

When *Pompeyo* returned to visit me, not finding my *Statua* there, nor any of his fellows, he axt my Host of the house what was become of them? He told him, that the night before they went away from thence with their Trunks, but whither they knew not. He took this for an ill signe; and suspecting what this might chance to prove in the end, used great and extraordinary diligence in the search of them, and having notice that they rode Post by the way of *Florence*, he sent Hue and Cry after them, with a Warrant to apprehend them. But leaving them to their businesse: let me return now unto my self, and God grant, that in the mean while, they may have the good luck to meet with these Thieves, and recover my lost goods.

Those few dayes that I afterwards stayed in *Rome*, I was jocund and merry, and did not so much as once dream of any such roguery intended against me. And out of a great desire that I had, to know how my sick friend did, whether he had recovered his health, or were in worse case, then when he left me; I staid four dayes waiting for him, but seeing he came not at me, nor sent unto me, I continued four dayes longer in Town, making inquiry after him amongst some of his Countrey-men, giving them all the marks and signs, whereby they might know, or at least ghesse at the man, but this was to ask for *Emmes* in *Portugal*, or to hear a *Magnificat* at Matens, or to seek after the man in the Moon, for there was no such Kind of thing to be heard of. All the diligences that I could use were to no purpose. I did verily believe that he was very sick, if not dead. I likewise thought with my self, that since he had concealed his lodging from me, that the reason thereof was, because he had not a convenient Chamber to receive the visits of my friends. I did as much as lay in me to look him out: but when I saw it was all lost labour, and that I could not possibly hear any news of him, I left a large recommendation of my love unto him in my Lords house, and so taking leave of my Lord Ambassadour, I resolved the next day following to begin my journey.

My Lord grieved much for my departure, clapt both his hands upon my ſhoulders, and taking a chain of Gold from off his neck, which he did uſually wear, and putting it on mine, he told me, while he was doing me this honour, *Guzman*, I beſtow this upon thee, that thou mayeſt, as oft as thou look'ſt upon it, have me in thy remembrance, as one that wiſhes thee all good. He gave me alſo, beſides that which I had of mine own, good ſtore of Crowns, which would ſerve conveniently to defray my charges for ſome reaſonable while very well, and plentifully, that I needed not to want any thing that was needfull and fitting for me.

When he had thus furniſht me, he laid his Command upon me, that whereſoever I ſhould hap to be, I ſhould from time to time give him an account of my health, and how things did ſucceed with me, aſſuring me, that none ſhould rejoyce more in my well-doing, than himſelf; hoping, when I had made an end of my travel, to ſee me again in his houſe, whither I ſhou ld alwayes be moſt welcom.

Theſe his words and kinde uſage of me, ſavoured of ſo much love, and the advice and counſel which he gave me at this my farewell, was ſo ſweet and ſo ſound, and delivered with that tenderneſſe, exhorting me to good and vertuous courſes, that I could no longer hold from bathing my eyes with tears: I kiſt his hand, kneeling on the ground; he beſtowed his bleſſing upon me, and with it a good High-way Nag, This done, down I went, got up, bid my fellows farewell, and rode my way, making uſe of this Nag in all my travel, which did never fail me.

My Lord and his ſervants were ready to melt for the ſorrow they had conceived of my departure. He, becauſe he loved me, and ſaw he muſt now loſe me, and would doubtleſſe finde a want of me for ſuch ſervices as I could beſt do him, and himſelf took moſt content in: And they, becauſe, albeit my actions were ill for my ſelf, and turned much to mine own hurt, yet were they never prejudicial to my fellows: and when occaſion ſerved (if they had been put to the trial) I dare ſwear they would have hazarded their lives in defence of my perſon, rather than they would have ſeen me take any wrong. I was alwayes their good friend, never did them ill offices, told no tales of them, never nouriſht any quarrels amongſt them, never croſt their pretentions with my Lord, or hindred them in thoſe their ſuits, wherein they were intereſſed, but did further them all that I could; ſo that I was generally well beloved of them all. For by doing them theſe real courteſies, and in that free and friendly faſhion, I could not but gain the greater love thereby, if not profit. For they were reckoned of by my Lord but as ſervants; but I was unto him, as if I had been his Son: So that I received from them the commendation of a good brother, and from my Maſter, of a faithfull ſervant. Inſomuch, that neither my ſervice diſ-merited with my Lord, nor their friendſhip failed me at my need.

And if that publick fame which was ſpread abroad of me, touching that which ſo unfortunately befell me in *Fabia's* houſe, had not been divulged abroad by that Aſpine-leav'd tongue of *Nicoleta*, who to as many Goſſips, and friends as ſhe had in *Rome*, babbled forth the jeſt, which was put upon me by her Miſtreſſe in the back Court of her houſe, I had never forſaken that commodity which I found in my Lords houſe, nor his Lordſhip have loſt ſo good a ſervant, who had ſo well and faithfully ſerv'd him. See what miſchief a wicked vvomans tongue can work; who, without doing her ſelf any good (playing the tattling huſwife) diſcredited her Maſters houſe, and diſordered ours.

Let no man truſt a woman with a ſecret, no (if it were poſſible) not the wife of his own boſom. For upon every light offence, that ſhe may be revenged of thee, to pluck out one of thy eyes, ſhe will be content to loſe both her own; making of a little brack a great hole, and working thee much trouble upon ſmall occaſion.

I went out of *Rome* like a Prince, well intreated, and better provided, having ſtore of Crowns to ſpend abroad, till the durt I had taken ſhould become dry, and be rubb'd out. For when ſuch unlucky chances as theſe do light upon us, there is no ſuch remedy for them, as Time and Travel do wear them out. *Mingo* never went abroad with more contentment, than I did now; I was gallant, rich, out of the Gun-ſhot of ill tongues; with a full reſolution, never to return the ſame man I went forth, but like a new *Phœnix*, receiving freſh life from theſe my old aſhes.

I was now on my way towars my friend *Pompeyo*, who lookt for me every hour, having provided for me a neat lodging, with a handſom bed, and table, and all other furniture fitting thereunto. I came at laſt to *Siena*, & inquiring after him, they directed me to his houſe; thither I came: I found him within, he received me, I cannot ſay whether more cheerfully,

or

or more heavily, ſometimes ſhewing a joyful, ſometimes a troubled countenance; not knowing either what to do, or what to ſay, concerning the forepaſſed ill ſucceſſe of my Trunks. He was inwardly very ſad, as well for the value of that I had loſt, as alſo for the trick that was put upon him, and the ill account that he ſhould make me of thoſe my goods, which I had conſigned unto him. He ſaid never a word unto me touching my Trunks, and would fain have kept it from me; but it was not poſſible. For I had purpoſed with my ſelf, to ſhew all my bravery the next day, and like the Peacock, proudly to jet it up and down the ſtreets of *Siena*, and for that purpoſe requeſted him to help me to my Trunks, that *I* might change my cloaths.

Hereupon he was inforced to open all the whole buſineſſe unto me, putting me in good hope, that there were ſuch diligences uſed, and that good courſe already taken, that he did not doubt but that I ſhould have all again, and loſe nothing of that which they had thus cunningly ſtollen from me. I was ſtruck with this blow to the very heart; and was thereupon ſo ſad, as thou thy ſelf wouldſt have been, hadſt thou been in my caſe, being thus ſtripped of all that thou hadſt in a ſtrange Countrey, far from thy friends, and forced to ſeek new, having but little ſtore of money in thy Purſe, and no more but one ſuite of cloaths on thy back, and two Shirts in thy *Port-manteau*. God deliver us from the hands of theeves and robbers, and from the frauds and deceits of wicked men. It was now too late to look after them; the harm was already done, but no remedy to be had. *Que forçoſo lo aveys de beven y no lo aveys de verter.* Whether I would or no, *I* was conſtrained to drink of this cup; there was no avoiding of it.

Well, when I ſaw how the world went, and that there was no help for it; I pluckt up my ſpirits, ſet a good face on the matter, and drew ſtrength out of weakneſſe, For, if I ſhould in publique have expreſſed my grief, and made open ſhew thereof; I might, in private mens opinions, been held baſe-minded, and a man of no metal; and might thereby have hazarded *Pompeyos* friendſhip. Nor, had I kept never ſuch a ſtir, never ſuch a coyl and ado about it, ſhould I thereby have repaired my loſſes, or done my ſelf any good by it.

And therefore ſound was that counſel; that we ſhould encounter adverſities with a cheerful countenance. For thereby our enemies are overcome, and our friends recover breath.

## Chapter IX.

Guzman de Alfarache *not recovering his loſt goods, ſhrewdly complains of the ſmall puniſhment that is laid upon theeves. Wherein he delivereth many things worthy the noting.*



Three dayes (according to the common ſaying) I continued booted and ſpurred, expecting what news I could hear from thoſe, that had theſe theeves in chaſe, and whether they had had the good luck to finde the track of their footing, and ſo follow them upon the heat of that ſent, till they had them in view, and ſhould come to overtake them.

While my friend and I were ſitting at table, anon after we had din'd as we were talking of this misfortune of mine, and the cunning carriage of theſe theeves that had thus robbed me, I might hear a great trampling of the ſervants of the houſe and ſome others, who making haſt up the ſtairs, came in and told us; We have him, we have him, the principal thief is taken, and the theft confeſt.

This put new courage into me, quickened my blood, and the tokens of my inward content ſhewed themſelves in my face. For it is not poſſible, that any mans heart ſhould diſſemble a ſudden joy. Though it ſometimes ſo happeneth, that exceſſe of joy doth ſuffocate the natural heat, and deprive it of its life. You might now have lighted a Candle at mine eyes, they did ſo ſparkle, and were grown ſo quick; methought then I was giving *Albricias* to as many as demanded it of me, and that I ranne with open armes to receive this welcome newes. We roſe up from the table, (where we ſate talking before on this buſineſs) to go, and meet, and ſalute this Officer, that had been imployed in this ſervice, who (as if he had been no leſſe affected therewith than my ſelf) came towards me with his mouth full of joy, and having kindly imbraced one another, I askt him how the world went? He told me, it was like to go well. Then I farther demanded of him, In what manner? He replied,

that one of the thieves was taken, the reſt he could not meet with, but that this would diſcover all.

Thou haſt haply obſerved, that when ſtore of water hath been ſuddenly thrown upon quick burning coales, there hath riſen up at that very inſtant a thick and ſultry hot ſmoke, yielding almoſt ſuch a ſteam of heat, as the coals themſelves gave before they were quenched. Even in the like caſe did theſe his words leave me. For all thoſe manifeſt ſignes of joy, which had before diffuſed themſelves throughout my whole body, were quite quenched with the water of this bad news, and at that very inſtant, there was ſtirred up in me an infernal ſmoke of choler, which I had much ado to ſuppreſs; but becauſe I knew it would not help me, I diſſembled it the beſt that I could.

*Pompeyo* call'd for his cloak, and went preſently to the Judge of the Court, to intreat him, that he would uſe therein the beſt diligences he could, which was no more than was fitting to be done. But all this did me no good. For he neither denied the theft, nor confeſſed that he was in the fault. He ſaid, that the others had committed it, and that he was but their ſervant, and that they had onely beſtowed upon him one poor ſuit of cloaths, which he ſold and ſpent, partly in *Florence*; and partly upon the way in his returne to *Siena*.

And this is the common courſe of ſuch kinde of wicked people; they farther and favour each others evil works and counſels, but when they have wrought their purpoſe, and effected their intent, they forſake one another, leaving every man to ſhift for himſelf, ſome going one way, and ſome another.

Upon this confeſſion (becauſe it was the firſt theft that ever he had been taken with, together with that which he had alledged in his own defence; and for thoſe other conſiderations which offered themſelves unto the Judge) he was ſentenced to publick ſhame, and afterwards to remain a baniſhed man from that City for a certain time.

Now while this buſineſs was a handling, one of *Pompeyos* ſervants ſtood diligently waiting there, expecting the iſſue of this buſineſs, that he might come and adviſe me thereof. And when he had his ſentence given him, as if he had brought my Trunks along with him, he came running up in all haſt to my Chamber, laughing all the way as he came, and as jocund as a Pie, crying out aloud unto me; O *Sennor Guzman* laugh and be merry; the Thief that holp to rob you is condemned to open ſhame, I ſaw him upon the Aſſes back, before I came away, if you will ſee him, hie you to the window, and look out quickly, for it cannot be long ere he come. O, how much would I have given, that this Fool, this Block-head, this Coxcomb had been mine own ſervant, and in mine own houſe, or in ſome other place, where I might have had my will of him, that I might have pummel'd him about the pate, bob'd him about the noſe, ſtrook out the teeth of him, and beaten the jaw-bones of this Aſſe ſo ſore, that he ſhould not have been able for a moneth after to fall to his feeding. I was mightily out of patience at theſe his fooliſh words. O thou Traitor! (ſaid I to my ſelf) ſeeſt thou in what poor caſe I am, and in a manner quite undone, and doeſt thou go about to comfort me with ſuch a poor ſatisfaction as this? I was ready almoſt to burſt with choler: but even then, when it was in its greateſt force, there did offer it ſelf unto my remembrance juſt ſuch another comfort as this; which was told me for a truth had paſſed in *Seville*; which made my ſides to tickle again with laughing, the very thought whereof had made me quite forget my former anger. And this it was:

A Judge of that City, by eſpecial Order from the ſupreme Councel, took a Delinquent, that had been a famous falſifier of Deeds, had often counterfeited his Majeſties hand, and fained many falſe Patents, by means whereof he got a great deal of money in divers parts, and at divers times; for the which he was by the ſaid Judge condemned to be hanged; notwithſtanding that this Offender did alledge for himſelf, that he was *de Evangelio*, a kinde of Church-man, and therefore did appeal from his Sentence, challenging his priviledge, of being tried by the Eccleſiaſtical Power, as by his competent Judge. But the Judge being reſolved not to reverſe his Sentence, being perſwaded, that he likewiſe falſified theſe his Orders, ſtood to his tackling, and haſtened the execution thereof, willing him forthwith to be led to the Gallows, commanding thoſe that were to ſee the ſentence executed, to hang him out of hand; charging them to let this be firſt done *de facto*, and he would anſwer the matter afterwards as well as he might.

The Eccleſiaſtical Ordinary, was not in the mean while wanting on his part, uſing all the power that he had, to ſave this man from death, aggravating and heaping his Cenſures upon the Judg, threatening him, that in caſe he proceeded therein, that there ſhould *Excommu-*

*nications*

*nications* go out, and that in the Churches there ſhould be *Ceſſatio a Divinis*. But being not able therewith, nor all that he could do, to hinder the ſentence; the Delinquent was brought to the Gallows, and when he was up upon the Ladder, and had the rope about his neck, there came a certain Notarie to the foot of the Ladder, who had ſollicited his buſineſſe, and laying his hand upon his breaſt, ſaid unto him;

Sir, you ſee all poſſible diligence hath been uſed, and not any one eſſential thing left out, that might make for you; but this (you ſee) will not hold water nor do us that good we thought it would have done: For, as you may perceive, the Judge (out of a wilfull humour) hath proceeded *de facto* with you. But I vow and ſwear unto you (by that my place and credit, which I hold in the vvorld) that he hath done you therein a moſt notorious wrong, and contrary to all Law and Juſtice; but ſeeing it cannot now be otherwiſe, and that for the preſent there is no help for it, I ſhall wiſh you, Sir, to arm your ſelf with patience, and to take your hanging quietly: And put your truſt in me: for I will ſtay with you to the laſt, I will not leave you till I ſee you hanged. And leave it to me, to right the wrong he hath done you.

Conſider now, I pray, and tell me, what comfort can it be to thoſe men that are to ſuffer death, to hear ſuch idle and fooliſh words as theſe to come from a mans mouth? What pleaſure can that miſerable wretch, that is forth-with to be hang'd, take, that he hath left a good Sollicitour behinde him, to follow his buſineſſe, when he is dead and gone? Me thinks this poor Clyent that ſuffered, might very well have ſaid to his Attourney, I ſhould like it much better (Sir) that you would come up here and take my place, and give me leave to go and follow mine own buſineſſe.

To ſuch a one as I, who was robb'd of all that I had, and left ſo poor as I was, what credit, or comfort could I take in it, to ſee a Thief ride upon an Aſſe, to have his hands bound, and his back whipt, and to be put to this open ſhame? Will his diſgrace do me any honour? Or will the repeating either of the cauſe, or his puniſhment, procure me means to live, or furniſh me with thoſe neceſſaries that I want? I got me out of that, into another Chamber, thinking upon the ignorance of theſe men, and the loſſe that I had ſuſtained by thoſe that robbed me; for that was the thorn that did ſo ſurely prick and grieve me. And as I was thus diſcourſing with my ſelf of divers and ſundry thnigs, one while of this, another while of that: And amongſt many other things, that I went examining with my ſelf, one (amongſt the reſt) was: Of what ſmall importance, and how light were theſe kinde of puniſhments! For what ſhame can either be put into, or taken from a Thief, who hath no ſhame at all, nor makes any reckoning of it? And who, before that he begins to play the Thief, doth reſolve with himſelf to receive that puniſhment for his theft, whereunto he ſhall be condemned, and ſhall (by the Lawes of the Land) be inflicted upon him? A Thief (forſooth) ſhall robbe a private houſe; and all his puniſhment muſt be, to walk his publick Stations up and down the Town. A pretty piece of Juſtice. For mine own part, I have no great ſtore of wit, and leſſe judgement, and therefore I know not well what to ſay againſt thoſe Laws; which before they were made, I make no queſtion, but they were well weighed and thought upon, and with ſound and mature counſel ratified and confirmed. And that before their publication, they were throughly ſcann'd, and approved by the general opinion of thoſe, that were learned in the Laws, yet notwithſtanding it will not ſink into my head, that this is a ſufficient puniſhment for a Thief to lead him onely through the Citie, for to do him ſhame, by making him a publick ſpectacle to the people, or to baniſh him from thence. But it ſeemeth unto me, to be rather *præmium*, then *pœna*, a reward, then a puniſhment. For thereby, in my judgement, they do nothing elſe, but ſecretly ſay unto him; My friend, you have hitherto made your benefit of our goods, and have made your ſelf merry at our coſt. You ſhall now do well to get your living elſe-where, I pray therefore get you gone, leave off to do us any more harm, and go robbe ſome other of our Neighbours. I cannot be perſwaded, that this miſchief lies in the Laws, but in thoſe that execute them; for that they are either ill underſtood, or not well executed.

A Judge ought to underſtand and know, as well the man as the matter for which he condemneth him. For baniſhments were not made for Thieves that were ſtrangers, but for the Citizens of the ſaid Citie, the natural inhabitants, and ſuch as were noble, and well born, whoſe perſons were not to ſuffer any publick puniſhment, or affronts. And to the end that the faults which they committed, ſhould not be exempted from puniſhment, therefore your Divine Laws did ordain theſe your baniſhments, which without doubt was the

greateſt puniſhment of all other, that could be inflicted upon ſuch kinde of perſons. For thereby they are inforced to forgo their Friends, their Parents, their Kinſfolk, their Houſes, their Lands, their ancient acquaintance, their Wives, and their Children, their pleaſures, and delights, and their buſineſſes both private, and publick, being to go, they know not themſelves whither, and to live and converſe with they know not whom. Which was certainly a great puniſhment, and no leſſe then death it ſelf.

And it was the permiſſion of Heaven, and will of God, that he that made this Law, and was the firſt inventer thereof, ſhould be paid home with the ſame puniſhment that he had ordained for others, being baniſhed himſelf by his own Countrey-men the *Athenians*. Many were much grieved thereat, and indure a great deal of ſorrow, accompanied with enfinite inconveniences, and peril of their perſons: and many of them likewiſe did take it no leſſe heavily, then if they had ſuffered the bitter pangs of death.

It is reported of *Demoſthenes*, that famous Grecian Orator, and Prince of Eloquence, being baniſhed by his Citizens, left his Countrey like a man in deſperation, ſhedding many a ſorrowfull tear; and the more in regard that his fellow Citizens had ſo cruelly proceeded againſt him, conſidering that he had alwayes protected, favoured, and defended them, both with his head, and his hand; his wit, and his ſtrength; and therefore he did the more reſent it, making theſe his troubles and afflictions to ſeem the more intolerable to be indured.

And as he was wandring abroad in the vvorld, it was his hap to come to a place, where he lighted by chance upon ſome of the greateſt and mortalleſt enemies that he had: Who then made no other reckoning with himſelf, but that they would ſurely kill him; but they did not onely give him his life, and pardon all former injuries, but ſeeing him in this miſerable and afflicted ſtate, taking pity of him, they comforted him the beſt they could, treating him with all courteſie and kindeneſſe, and furniſhing him with ſuch things as were neceſſary for him in this his baniſhment. Which was, as it were, a throwing of Oyl into the flame, and the means of augmenting his ſorrow, to ſee that he ſhould be more kindely uſed by his enemies, than his friends, as did plainly appear, when being comforted by them in this his baniſhment, he returned them this anſwer:

How would you have me to carry my ſelf? how bear my baniſhment with patience? how not complain of my hard fortune, having ſo great cauſe as I have to bemone my miſhap? Being that I am baniſhed from that Citie, wherein I was born and bred, and am forced by you to ſeek my fortune in forrain Countreys, where I meet with ſuch enemies, that I doubt to finde (and I ſhall account it a great happineſſe unto me, that I have made ſo good a purchaſe) the like friends elſe-where. They likewiſe baniſhed *Themiſtocles*, who being graced more in *Perſia*, than *in Greece*, told ſome private friends of his; *Periiſſemus, ſi non periiſſemus*. We had been undone, if we had not been undone.

The Romans baniſhed *Cicero*, induced thereunto by his enemy *Clodius*, anon after that he had freed his Countrey from ruine. They did likewiſe baniſh *Publius Rutilius*, who was ſo valiant, and of that ſtoutneſſe of courage, that afterwards, when thoſe of *Sylla's* faction (who were the cauſe of his exile) would have reverſed his baniſhment, he would not accept of this their fair offer, but ſaid; I will make them bluſh for ſhame, by neglecting this their kindeneſſe; for by this means, they ſhall come to ſee their own error, and to acknowledge the wrong they have done me, by this their unjuſt perſecution, they alſo baniſhed *Scipio Naſica*, in requital of thoſe benefits and good ſervices that he had done them, in delivering them from the tyranny of the *Gracchi*. *Hannibal* the *Carthaginian* dyed in Exile. *Camillus* the Roman, a man of that worth and valour, that it was ſaid of him, that he was a ſecond Founder of *Rome*, for that he had freed it from it's enemies, when the whole State lay at ſtake to be won, or loſt; yet notwithſtanding this meritorious Act of his, he was baniſhed his Countrey.

The Lacedemonians baniſhed their *Lycurgus*, though a grave and wiſe man; and one that had made them very wholſom Laws for the good of that Common-wealth. Nor did they reſt contented with this wrong they had already done him, but they threw ſtones at him, and ſtrook out one of his eyes. The Athenians very impudently and unjuſtly baniſhed their *Solon*, and confined him to the Iſland of *Cyprus*; as they did likewiſe their great Captain *Thraſibulus*. Theſe, and infinite other the like were baniſhed; and anciently they inflicted this puniſhment upon the nobleſt and principalleſt perſons, as one of the greateſt and grievouſeſt puniſhments which they could impoſe upon them.

I my ſelf have known a thief, who becauſe he was under years, and not capable of greater

greater puniſhment, having been often-times baniſhed, but never went forth of his Countrey to finiſh this his Exile, and his theſts likewiſe being of no higher nature than matter of victuals, for his greater puniſhment, the Juſtice commanded, that he ſhould have a coller of Iron clapt cloſe about his neck, which ſhould be rivered ſo faſt with an Iron pin, that it ſhould not poſſibly be taken off, hanging thereat a little Bell, to the end that the ringing thereof, as oft as he did ſtir, or move, might give the people warning to take heed of him. This may truely be called a juſt, and a witty-conceited puniſhment.

¶ Now, by this that hath been ſaid, thou mayeſt know how grievous a puniſhment baniſhment is to the good, and how ridiculous a thing to the bad: To whom all the vvorld is their common Countrey; and who account that to be their Countrey, where they can beſt filch and ſteal. For whereſoever a Thief comes, he enters into that place, as a new commer, and unknown; Which is no ſmall advantage for him, for the better exerciſing of his Office, the people not thinking any harm of him, nor ſuſpecting him to be ſuch a one as he is. I know not, how they underſtand this, who do puniſh them thus. It were the leſſer evil of the two, to let them go among the people with the aforeſaid Coller and Bell, that men might beware of them; and not to ſend one thus abroad, where he is unknown, with Letters as it were of credence, to robbe all the vvorld. No, no, this is no good courſe, it is not profitable for the Common-wealth, nor is there any policy at all in it, to do Thieves ſo great a favour. But for every light theft, it is fit they ſhould be ſoundly puniſhed: As to condemne them to the Gallies, to confine them to ſome Garriſon Towns, and there to ſerve, and to inflict other the like puniſhments upon them for longer, or leſſer time, according to the nature and quality of the offence. And in caſe they ſhall be of an inferiour kinde, and not deſerving the weight of your heavieſt ſentence, I would have them branded, as the uſe is in other Countreys, with a hot Iron in the ſhoulder, that may leave the print of the mark behinde; whereby, upon the ſecond theft they be taken with, it will plainly appear, what lewd lievers they be. By this courſe they bear not only the mark about them, but the cauſe thereof. This will be accuſation enough, to give in evidence againſt them, both what they are, as alſo their courſe of life. And I would have this re-incidency and relapſe of theirs to be ſeverely puniſhed. And many (I make no queſtion,) this courſe being taken and truely executed, will for fear turn over a new leaf, and that this their firſt correction will keep them in a great deal the more awe, leaſt the continuance of their lewd courſes might chance to bring them to the Gallows. This and onely this (I ſay) is Juſtice; all the reſt is *Fruta regalada*, delicious fruits, and Miniſter onely occaſion to your *Eſcrivanos*, to be as arrant thieves as they; and I know not whether I may be ſo bold to ſay, that they are willing to ſet them free, that they may go abroad, and ſteal afreſh, whereby they may afterwards have occaſion to take that from them, which they have ſtolne: and ſo of the two, prove the greater thieves. But I will hold my peace and Harp no more upon that ſtring. For I am a man, and may erre, and I have been already under their hands, and have ſuffered too much through their falſe dealing, and I know not whether I may chance to come again under their laſh, and then they will uſe their pleaſure upon me, and revenge themſelves on me without controlement: for I know not who can hinder them, when they are diſpoſed to work their will. My Thief was freed, he had confeſt who were the principal offenders, and which way they went; for which cauſe, as alſo that he had rounded the Citie on an Aſſe, and had been put to open ſhame, he was ſet at liberty; leaving me (poor man) in the wretched priſon of poverty: Where I muſt now take my leave of you, and bid you all good night. To morrow morning if you be deſirous of the reſt, and would fain know, what in the end was the iſſue of this buſineſſe; you ſhall have it with all my heart, which I ſhall truely and faithfully deliver unto you.

FINIS.

FINIS

# THE ROGUE:
## OR,
# THE SECOND PART
## OF THE LIFE OF GUZMAN
## DE ALFARACHE.

## The ſecond Book.

Wherein *Guzman de Alfarache*, treateth of that which befell him in *Italy*, till he returned into *Spain*.

### CHAPTER I.

Guzman de Alfarache, *leaves* Siena, *and goes for* Florence. *He meets with* Sayavedra, *whom he takes into his ſervice. And before he comes to* Florence *he recounts unto him on the way many admirable things concerning that Citie. And when he was arrived there, he ſhews him all, that was worth the ſeeing.*

PHOCION (a famous Philoſopher in his time) was ſo poor, that though he took a great deal of pains, he could hardly get wherewithall to keep life and Soul together. Whereupon, as oft as any in the preſence of *Dionyſius* the Tyrant, and his mortal enemy, made mention either of himſelf, or of the manner and courſe of his life, he made a ſcoffe and a jeſt both at it, and him, flouting at his poverty, and deriding his miſery, thinking with himſelf, that he could not do him any greater diſgrace, nor injure him more, than to mock at the meaneſſe of his fortunes. As if he would have inferred thereupon, that if he had been a man of that great learning, as the world held him to be, he might therewith have gained bread to put in his mouth, and not needed to live in that want, as now he did.

When this came to the Philoſophers eare, he was not onely not grieved thereat, but laughing at this his folly, he anſwered him, that reported this unto him; it is true Sir, that *Dionyſius* ſayes of me in terming me poor, for I am truely ſo; but, I muſt tell you withall, that he is much poorer than my ſelf, and hath a great deal more reaſon to be aſham'd of himſelf, if he ſhall but conſider his own wretched eſtate and condition. For though I lack money, I want not friends: I abound in the more, and fail in the leſſe. But as for him, though he be rich in money, he is poor of friends. For I know not any one that he hath. This Philoſopher could not ſatisfie himſelf better, nor with a righter, or fuller blow hit out his eyes, than by ſtiling him *hominem ſine amicis*: A man that hath not ſo much as one friend in the world, that he could truely ſay, was his friend. And albeit it oftentimes ſo falleth out, that they are purchaſed with money, and that this is a principal means to win, and wedge them unto us, yet this Tyrant had never yet the wit either to get, or keep them. And it is no wonder, that he ſhould, of all other, want them. For he, that ſayes *friend*, ſayes (in that one word) *Goodneſſe* and *Vertue*; comprehending in that all the good, that ſpeech, or thought can reach unto. Whoſoever therefore ſhall deſire to conſerve friendſhip, and to continue in his friends love, and that the bond of amity be not broken between them, muſt

have a care, that his works correſpond with his words. But *Dionyſius*, being tyranny it ſelf, and of too ill a digeſtion to keep friendſhip long, and his converſation being worſe than his concoction: and for that friends are not ſo much gotten out of the greatneſſe of our fortune, as our vertue; wanting that, he wanted them.

For mine ouwn part, ever ſince I had the uſe of reaſon, and knew what diſcretion was, I made it my chiefeſt ſtudy, to get my friends, though at never ſo dear a rate, thinking no coſt too much, to purchaſe ſo great a Treaſure. They ſeeming unto me (as indeed they are) our greateſt helps and comforts, as well in proſperous, as adverſe fortune. Who doth injoy the content of contents but he that hath true friends? What doth ſo much lengthen and preſerve our peace, our life, our honour, and our wealth as to ſee our friends to joy vvith us in our proſperity? And in adverſity, from vvhom, but from them, can vve finde any refuge, kindeneſſe, comfort, help, fellow-feeling of our miſeries, as if they were their own? A vviſe man, ought to vvant all vvhatſoever goods, rather than good friends. For they are better than our neereſt kinſmen, or our own natural brothers.

Of the qualities, and conditions of friendſhip, many have ſpoken much, (and one day, God willing we ſhall ſay ſomething thereof:) but in my opinion, where friendſhip is profeſſed, there muſt be all true and plain dealing, and ſuch a fair and even carriage, that it neither lean to alteration, nor give any offence, nor cauſe any trouble, nor to adventure (through our raſh and inconſiderate actions) the loſing of a friend. Two friends ought ſo to love one another, as each of them doth ſeverally love himſelf. For tha I, and my friend, are as it were all one. And as you ſee, how quick-ſilver dealeth with Gold, how cloſe it adheres unto it, how it works it ſelf into the very entrails and bowels of it, and being two divers Metals, are ſo incorporated, that they become but one maſſe, or lump, nothing in the vvorld being able to ſunder and divide them but the pure fire of the Furnace, vvherein the Quick-ſilver is conſumed: So a true friend, who is now become another mans ſelf, and by an intermixture of their hearts and mindes made as it were one ſelf-ſame thing, nothing ought, nor can indeed diſſolve this Union, but death, vvhich is the Chryſol, vvherein vve muſt at laſt be all melted one after another.

Men ought to make the ſame choiſe of their friends, as they do of good books. For their happineſſe conſiſts not neither in the greatneſſe of their number, nor the curiouſneſſe of their binding, but rather to have a few, and thoſe good and approved Authors. For oftentimes, it falleth out, that many friends are rather a hindrance, than a help to true friendſhip: For he is a frind to none, that is a friend to all. Nor are we to chuſe a friend for our entertainment onely, and merrily to ſpend the time withall, but to make choiſe of ſuch a one, as may benefit both our Soul, and our body: one that without reſpect of humane intereſt will adviſe him to obſerve the Divine precepts. Not onely to repreſent them unto him, but to ſpeak to the purpoſe, to admoniſh him to the obſervation of them, and to inſtruct him in the true knowledge of them. And if he be called a true friend, who, meerly out of friendſhip tells his friend the naked truth without masking, or diſguiſing it, not as to a third perſon, but as to one, that is properly his own, and as freely as if he ſhould treat of any thing belonging to himſelf, or that he himſelf would deſire his friend ſhould ſay the ſame to him, on the ſame occaſion, of which ſort of friends, that carry that ſincerity and plainneſſe with them, few are now adayes to be found, in whom a man may have that aſſured confidence, and entire ſatisfaction.

Then queſtionleſſe (and that with very good reaſon) a good book is a good friend; Nay, I dare boldly ſay, there cannot be a better. For from thence we may draw that *utile & neceſſarium*, that good and neceſſary counſel, which we ſtand in need of, without incurring the ſhame of that vain and idle humour, which is too common now adayes, to be rather content to continue ſtill in ignorance, than by asking the queſtion, to ſeem to doubt of any thing. But to books we may boldly put the queſtion, and never need to be afraid, that they will bewray our ignorance: And beſides, we ſhall receive this ſatisfaction from them, that they will faithfully, without flattery, deliver us their opinion. And this one advantage (and it is a notable one) *books* have of *friends*: That our friends dare not alwayes tell us what they think, and know; for fear of particular intereſt; or out of tenderneſſe to offend (as we ſhall by and by briefly tell you) their friends. So ſoft a hand hath *Love*, when it comes to touch where it loves. Whereas on the contrary, the counſel that is given thee in books, is down right and plain, and ſtands before thee ſtark-naked, as be-ſtript of all manner of vice. And therefore

(theſe

(theſe things conſidered) it hath ever been held one of the hardeſt and difficulteſt things in the vvorld, to finde out a true and faithfull friend.

Of which ſort, many are ſpoken of in ancient ſtories, and we finde a great number of them recorded of old, and painted forth unto us in your feigned fables; but that there either now are, or have been ſuch heretofore as are there decyphered unto us, I doubt it very much, at leaſt I am fully perſwaded, they were very rare and few. One onely friend have I found to be true, and is of the ſame nature and condition as we are. And this friend of ours is the beſt, the bountifulleſt, the trueſt, and the faithfulleſt of all other; for this is never wanting to it's friend, but continues firm & conſtant for ever, nor is it at any time weary of giving: And this good friend of ours, (that I may not hold you any longer in ſuſpence) is the *Earth*.

This affords us precious Stones, Gold, Silver, and divers other Metals, whereof we ſtand in need, and ſo earneſtly thirſt after. It bringeth forth Graſſe, and all ſorts of Herbs, wherewith are not onely fed our flocks of Sheep, our Cattel, and other beaſts for the uſe and ſervice of man, but thoſe Medicinable ſimples, which conſerve our health, free us from diſeaſes, and if we fall into ſickneſſe, ſet us upright again, preſerving this life of ours in a ſound and perfect ſtate of health. It yieldeth us all ſorts of fruits, that are either ſavory to the taſte, or nouriſhable to the body. It gives us Wool and Flax, and by conſequence, all kinde of woven ſtuffs, wherewith we cloath, and adorne this naked fleſh of ours. It opens its own veins of its own accord, whileſt from it's full breaſts ſprout forth thoſe ſweet and delicate waters, which we drink; thoſe brooks and rivers, which get the fields with Childe, and make them fruitfull, and not onely that, but doth facilitate commerce, and make an eaſie way for traffick, bringing the ſtrangeſt and remoteſt parts of the vvorld to ſhake hands, and to communicate their commodities one with another, and to live in a league of love and friendſhip together. Nay more, it is ſo good, and ſo ſweet a friend, that it ſuffereth, and willingly conſenteth to all that we will our ſelves. Be ſhe well, or ill uſed by us, all is one to her, ſo as we be pleaſed. She is like a ſheep, from whom you ſhall hear no other language, but *omnia bene*: All is well. Lead her forth to feed, or bring her to the waters to drink, ſhut, and pen her up, or let her looſe; take her lambking from her, her milk, her vvool, nay, her very life, to all ſhe alwayes anſwers *bien*: all is well. And all that *bien*, or good that we have on earth, the *Earth* gives it us. And for an upſhot of all, when we are now dead, and lye ſtinking above ground, when there is neither Wife, Father, Son, Kinſman, nor friend, that will abide and endure our company any longer, but do all of them utterly forſake us, and fly from us; then, even then, doth not ſhe refuſe us, but hugs us, and makes much of us, and opening her own womb, takes us in unto her, where we quietly lye as it were *in depoſito*, till ſhe render afterwards a faithfull account of what ſhe hath received, and delivers us up to a new and eternal life. And amongſt many her other excellencies, one of the worthieſt things in her, and deſerving moſt commendation, is; That ſhe doing ſo much for us, as ſhe doth, and not ſo continually and without ceaſing, being ſo generous, and ſo frank-hearted, that ſhe is never tyred out, never grows weary, yet doth ſhe not look for any requital, ſhe neither asks, nor expects any return of kindeneſſe, nor doth ſhe talk and tell of it, nor twit thee in the teeth with it; which ſome kinde of friends, more uſually, than commendably do.

Amongſt ſo many friends, as I had, and did dayly converſe withall, I found very few, who had not an eye to the North-ſtar of their own proper intereſt, and ſhap't their courſe by the Compaſſe of their own private ends; having onely a deſire to deceive, not having any reſpect at all to the friendſhip they profeſt, being devoid of all love, truth, and ſhame: I was of an eaſie and tractable nature, my condition was facile and apt to be miſled, their tongue was all hony, but their hearts was very Gall it ſelf: whoſe bitterneſſe I had too often taſted to my coſt.

Conſidering therefore the falſhood that now adayes is uſed in friendſhip, and mens crafty and ſubtile carriage, we are not ſo much to wonder that we are; as that we are not deceiv'd. For I finde them, as liberal in promiſing, as niggardly in performing; as facile in their words, as difficile in their deeds. There are now no more *Pilades*, nor *Oreſtes*; they are dead and gone; and with them, almoſt the remembrance, that there were ever any ſuch kinde of men. I onely ſpake this for my *Pompeyo*'s ſake; whom I thereof condemne the more, for that I lov'd him more than any other, and took him to be my eſpecial friend. For, moſt of my friends I gained by my words, but this man, I preſum'd I had purchaſt by my deeds. When I was in my proſperity, I had many friends, all men did deſire my love, made much of me, feaſted me, and did offer their ſervice unto me: but my moneys failing, they alſo failed; ſo that their friendſhip, and my money had an end at once.

And as there is no misfortune, that toucheth us so near, as to call to minde the happy estate, wherein heretofore we did live; so there is not any sorrow that equals that, of being forsaken by those friends, whose love and friendship we did ever desire to conserve. That little wealth that I had was stoln from me, which was my undoing. I continued some dayes (though but a few) in my friends house, howbeit he thought them too many; in which short time, he fell off from me by degrees, by a little and a little unwedging himself from me, and unlooſing those knots, which had knit us in friendship together; finding at last, that I had but a slippery Eel in my hand, who when I thought I had surest hold of him slipt, when he saw his time, from me, leaving my hand empty. He was a *Cordovese*, in the freeness of his offers; and would say unto me after we had dined; Sir, is there any thing else, that you would be pleased to command? If there be, I pray Sir, make as bold of any thing this house affords, as if it were your own. But these were but general words, and matter of complement; for he went not upon certainties, nor promised me any thing, that I might trust unto, but did rather seem to proffer this his kindness doubtfully and fearfully, lest I might chance to take him at his word. And that little courtesie which he shewed me, was not so much out of any hearty good will, that he had to do it, as for fear lest I should seek to recover my lost goods of him, by course of Law.

I read his thoughts in his looks: And as mine were alwayes noble, so on the contrary, his were base and vile. And as oft as he spake of my losse, if he used any complement with me, it was all dissimulation and counterfeit stuffe. Well, whatsoever it were, either better, or worse, I was much offended at it, and thought that he did me therein a great deal of wrong, & did seriously resent this his double dealing, and these fair but false shows of his love. But he, on the other side, did as earnestly persist in the pursuit of his simulations; as if he had meant nothing lesse, than to play upon me, and abuse me; or as if they had some ground of truth with them: And because I stoutly stood to it, and bore out this businesse as well as I could, that he might not perceive any dejectednesse in me, he took heart thereupon, and made slight of it, as a matter of little, or no importance. For the losse was mine, and not his; and therefore he made the lesse reckoning of it.

Wherefore, that I might not give him farther trouble, perceiving how much perplexed he was, and how willing to be rid of me, I resolved with my self to free him of that fear, and to go for *Florence*. I imparted this my purpose unto him, telling him, that I much desired to see that Citie, for the great commendation, that I had heard of it, and those famous sights that were there to be seen. And because this my determination suted with his desire, he took hold on this occasion, relating unto me many memorable things, worthy my sight, wherewith my will was the more inflamed, and the desire which I had to see it, much increased. But he did not do this so much, to commend it unto me, or out of any good desire, that he had, that I should see it, but onely that he might see me no more in his house, and for that he is an unwelcom guest, that is a mans guest against his will. After that I had thus broken my minde unto him, he began to blow the winde afresh of this kinde usage of me, that he might oblige me thereby to get me the sooner out of his house, and to depart from thence peaceably and quietly; for he was not a little afraid of me. He then signified unto me, how sorry he was that I would needs be gone; but used no intreaties, nor any the least resistance, to have me to stay. He demanded of me, when I was minded to begin my journey, but never asked what I wanted; which he might have done out of good manners, though he had no meaning to pleasure me. Which proffer, had he made it me, it should not have been performed by him so much out of complement and ceremony, as that he might thereby learn, how long, or how little a while I meant to stay with him, not knowing as yet the hour, when I meant to be gone. It is an easie thing to see; more easie, to speak; but it is a hard thing to fore-see. For all that see, do not know; and all that speak do not do. And for that he now saw, that he should have no farther need of me, for that I like a fool told him ere I was aware, that I was not minded to return any more to *Rome*, he began to cast with himself, what good can this Cocks-comb do me now? Or of what use and profit will this fool be unto me hereafter? And so from that time forward, he used me accordingly, which was no worse than mine own indiscretion deserved. Then did I learn to my cost, how a man may come to know a generous and noble minde; which is seen in nothing more, than in a thankfull acknowledgement of benefits already received.

In this alteration of fortune, there were set before mine eyes a thousand dangers, that I never dream't of. But because I had as yet so much spirit left me as was able to put me forward, I was not utterly dismaid, nor quite disheartned. I studied to forget that, which I could

could not help; making my means, the thinking on my journey. And becauſe novelty, and things of a ſtrange nature do draw the mindes of men after them, out of the deſire that they have to know them, I made all the haſte I could to get me gone from *Siena*, as well out of this reſpect, as alſo that I might leave *Pompeyo* well pleaſed therewith; who, I knew, would never think himſelf well at eaſe, till he were well eaſed of me. For albeit, men commonly ſay to their gueſts I pray fall to your meat, and be merry, for I aſſure you, you are heartily welcom; yet whether you be merry, or not merry, welcome, or not welcome, they think you are bound unto them for a meals meat, and put every morſel to account, that goes down thy throat.

This hoggiſhneſſe of his, this his uncivil carriage, this diſſembled care of his, and this his great fear that he had, that I would continue longer with him, did much trouble me. Well, I took my leave of him; and becauſe I was ſtill the ſame man as I was wont to be, as alſo in regard of that love and friendſhip, which I truely bore unto him, at the time of this our departure each from other, I did ſo grieve thereat, that I was not able to ſpeak a word, or not ſo much as to bid him farewell; yet could not this my inward ſorrow, draw ſo much as one tear into his eyes, or to make any the leaſt ſhew of grief. And ſo all alone, I ſet forward on my journey, but more than well accompanied with a vvorld of melancholly thoughts, nor ſlightly attended by a multitude of cares, wherewith I was ſo over-laden, that my horſe was ready to ſink under me, as unable to bear ſo great a burthen. And therefore I rode plotting and deviſing with my ſelf, how I might make them lighter, and ſo eaſe both my ſelf and my horſe of them.

I had not gone thus muſing many miles, but it was my hap to light on *Sayavedra*, who had left *Siena* to comply with his baniſhment. Whom I no ſooner ſaw, but my kinde heart began to melt, and I could not chuſe but take compaſſion of him, and withall I muſt needs ſalute him placing my eyes, not upon the hurt which he had done me, but on the harm from which he once had freed me. Eſteeming more of that kindeneſſe I then received from him, than of all that, that he had robb'd me of. And he is a bad pay-maſter, and doth ill deſerve a courteſie, who doth not with advantage requite a received kindeneſſe. Beſides; Liberality ſuppoſeth a generous and noble ſpirit, and is of that high eſteem, for that it is originally deſcended from heaven, that it is alwayes found in thoſe mindes, that are deſtinated thereunto. I could not for my life refrain from ſpeaking lovingly unto him, nor he abſtain from receiving me with tears, which guttering down upon my feet, as he bowed himſelf to kiſſe my ſtirrop, whereof he taking faſt hold, fell down on his knees, craving pardon for this his errour, humbly and earneſtly beſeeching me, that I would be pleaſed to forgive him; rendring me likewiſe thanks, that during the time of his impriſonment I never offered to accuſe him; excuſing himſelf alſo, that he had not, as ſoon as we was ſet at liberty, come to viſit me laying the fault thereof, in his lack of boldneſſe, and the largeneſſe of his offence. Yet, for to make ſatisfaction and payment of this his debt, he would become my ſlave, and do me faithfull ſervice all the dayes of his life; *I*, who ever knew him to be man, that had both a ſtrong brain, and a nimble wit, which did him rather hurt then good, becauſe he did not well imploy them; yet, for that theſe did adapt him, and make him fit for any imployment whatſoever, *I* was the more willing to accept of his offer. And ſo taking him into my ſervice, we jogg'd on along by little and little, like a couple of good fellows, talking of divers things on the way.

And albeit *I* was not ignorant, that he was a notorious Thief, and a notable cunning Rogue, yet *I* held it the leſſe inconveniency of the two, to have a Knave, then a Fool, to my man. For fooliſhneſſe did never yet but walk hand in hand with wickedneſſe. And both of them being joyned together, are ſufficient to undo, not onely a private houſe, but a whole Common-wealth. For the ſimple, or fooliſh man, cannot keep counſel, nor knows when and where to hold his peace; nor the wicked and malicious man to judge of things aright; and if either of them uttereth what he thinketh, (for commonly their tongue blabbeth what their heart conceiveth) ſcandals and troubles are already entred within the door of our houſe, and like impudent Rogues, ſtick not to preſſe into our priveteſt rooms, to ſee what they can get from thence. *I* thought with my ſelf, if *I* would have any one to ſerve me, (good ſervants being ſo few, and ſo hard to be got) that this would be leſſe bad than any other, becauſe by thoſe his cunning tricks that he had plaid with me already, he made me the more wary of him, and taught me (as if *I* had been ſome *Lacedemonian*) to throw my beard over my ſhoulder: that is, to have an eye unto him, and to be the more circumſpect and wary of him, and to take the better heed, looking ſtill behinde me, as thoſe do

that have enemies, turning their head one while this way, another while that, that they may not be set upon unawares. And therefore knowing him so well as I did, I thought it as good, if not better to entertain a Knave that I knew, as a Knave, that I knew not. For I knew well enough, that I must narrowly look to his water, and watch him at every turn, wherein I meant not to be negligent: Whereas, in taking of another, that should seem to bear the face of an honest man, and make show of being faithfull and trusty unto me, I might haply grow careless out of the confidence that I have in him, and by this my credulity be coozened of all that I had, and afterwards to be left to look after Moon-shine in the water.

As well in this respect, as also for that I had not much now to lose, nor was my condition, or quality such, that I should stand so nicely upon these points; I admitted him into his service. He askt me (as soon as I had entertained him) which way I meant to take? I told him, I was for *Florence*, led thither out of a desire that I had to satisfie my longing, by seeing that Citie, whereof I had heard so much. Whereunto my servant replied, and said; Sir, whatsoever you have heard thereof, I make no question, when you come there, but your self will confesse, report hath been too short with you. For I assure you, there are so many admirable things therein to be seen, that they cannot sufficiently be commended. For the naked relations of things, that are curious and good indeed, never fill the vacuity and emptinesse of our desires. I have lived there some time, yet all the while I remained there, as if I had been but come that very day to Town, whersoever I went, new things were still offered to my view: and I would never with my good will have left that Town, if my friends had not forced me from thence.

I began to ask him some questions touching the foundation of that Citie, and whence it had its first beginning? Sir, (said he) seeing we have day enough before us, and that we may talk and walk fair and softly, and that the relation, which I am to make you is but short; I shall for the better satisfying of your desire acquaint you, and that truely, with all those curiosities that did then offer themselves unto my knowledge.

Then did he forthwith begin to discourse of those civil wars, which were occasioned by *Catiline*, between those of *Fiesole* and *Florence*; the overthrows which one while those of the *Roman* faction received, another while their enemy, *Bela Totile*. How in the time of Pope *Leo* the third, the Emperor *Charles* the Great sent a great Army against the *Fiesolani*, leaving *Florence* re-edified in the hands of the *Florentines*, till that Pope *Clement* the seventh, and the Emperour *Charles* the fifth recovered the same, for to restore it to its ancient possession, from which the house of *Medici* had been put out. Which succeeded in the year of our Lord 1529. Ever since which time the *Florentines* have alwayes been governed by one sole Prince; which, though it seemed somewhat harsh unto them at the first, yet now they see their error, and finde now at length how much more quietly they live under the protection of their own Prince, and with how much more safety, both of their lives and goods. It is said, that the first Prince that ever they had, was *Alessandro de Medici*, who for his sweetnesse of nature, his magnanimity, and valour, though violently he lost that principality in the very flower of his youth, yet might he justly be termed *Alessandro*. After him succeeded that wise, and worthy *Cosimo*, great Duke of *Tuscany*, whose memorial, for his heroical actions, and great vertues, as also for his courteous behaviour, his religion, and good government, shall live eternally in the mindes of the living. This Prince was succeeded by *Francesco*, who, for that he died without issue, the Crown came to that famous Ferdinando his brother, the lively image, and true picture of his father *Cosimo*, being as well Heir to his Vertues, as his estate. Who governed so worthily, and so wisely, that *I* do not know any other, with whom *I* may equal him for the love that his subjects bare him.

If the relation, he then made me, had been a little longer, he must of force have deferr'd it till the next day; but it seemed that he had measured it out just with the time: for we were come as near night, as we were to our Inne; whereunto we went to lodge. And having there well rested and refresht our selves, we got up betimes in the morning, and that we might the sooner get into *Florence*, we did set the best foot before, and made a little more haste, than otherwise we would have done. But when we came within sight of it, *I* was so over-joyed, that *I* was not able to expresse it, so fair and so beautifull did it afar off present it self unto me. For though *I* could not take a full view of it, yet from the one end to the other, and from almost the bottom to the top, *I* might reasonably well discern it; and a more pleasing sight did mine eyes never see. *I* did examine the pleasantnesse of its situation, be-

*I* beheld the beauty of many great and goodly buildings, the inexpugnable ſtrength of its ſtately Walls, the Majeſty, and magnificence of its high and well formed Towers. In a word, the whole pile thereof, ſeemed ſuch unto me, that *I* ſtood amazed at it, and could not (me thought) too much admire it. *I* would not willingly have moved out of the place where *I* ſtood, nor have drawn nearer to the Town, but have kept my ſelf at that very diſtance, as well, for that mine eyes was wonderfull well pleaſed therewith, as alſo for that *I* would not wrong that delight, which *I* now received, when *I* ſhould draw near thereunto; if peradventure (as it uſually falleth out with moſt things) it ſhould leſſen it ſelf, and fall ſhort of that goodly proſpect, which *I* did here injoy.

But, when *I* did conſider with my ſelf, that all this glorious ſhow, was, but as it were the outward caſe of it, my judgement did then begin to inſtruct me, that the Jewels therein contained, muſt needs be richer, and far more glorious, as indeed they were. For when I was entred thereinto, and ſaw the ſpaciouſneſſe of the ſtreets, how ſtraight and level they were, how plain and ſmooth, paved all with clean hewen ſtones of goodly fair Marble, and their houſes built with beautifull ſtones, ſo coſtly, ſo curious, ſo neatly poliſhed, ſo artificially wrought, and with ſuch a deal of skill and cunning in the architecture thereof, I was ſo confounded, that I could not tell what to think of it. For I could not imagine with my ſelf, that any other Citie in the vvorld could have compared with *Rome* for beauty: But having well view'd this, for its bigneſſe, it goes far beyond it. For thoſe buildings that are in *Rome*, the beſt of them are gone to ruine, and few of them left ſtanding; and thoſe that are now remaining, are but meer ſhadows, and the very ruines and fragments of thoſe, that were ſo famous in former times. But *Florence* is the flower of the vvorld, all is therein ſo flouriſhing, ſo coſtly, and ſo well ſet forth, that I ſaid unto *Sayavedra*; certainly, if the inhabitants of this Citie be as curious in the tricking of their vvomen, as they are in the adorning, and beautifying of their houſes, they are undoubtedly the happieſt men in the vvorld. I was ſo ſtrucken with admiration, that I was deſirous to have dwelt a long time in contemplating and beholding every particular piece of building; but becauſe night was now growing on, and that the day would not befriend us any longer, I was fain to retire my ſelf to my lodging. And we were not ſlack in haſtning to our Inne, whither when we were come, we were ſo neatly and ſo daintily entertained, that I cannot ſo much indear it, as it truely deſerveth. Such plenty of proviſion, ſuch cleanlineſſe in their Lodging-chambers, ſuch ſweetneſſe in their Linnen, ſuch diligent attendance, ſuch affable Language, and ſuch good uſage, did I never meet withall elſe-where in all my life. I was ſo taken therewith that it made me almoſt to forget that which I moſt deſired. I ſlept ſo ſoundly that night (thanks to the good bed, that was under me) that it ſeemed unto me ſcarce half an hour, ſince my firſt lying down.

When the morning was come, (though with a heart full of ſorrow, for that was then my *Mount Tabor*) I called to *Sayavedra*, to give me my Cloaths; and for that he was ſo well acquainted with that Citie, I will'd him to make himſelf ready to go along with me, that he might ſhow me all, whatſoever was of any note, and held (as curioſities) to be worth the ſeeing. And that firſt of all he ſhould bring me to the chief Church, where having heard Divine ſervice, and recommended our ſelves unto God, all things would proſper afterwards the better with us. Thither he led me, and having ended our devotion, I ſtood like one amaz'd in beholding that moſt famous Temple and Fabrik *del Zimborio*, which they there call *Cupula*, which in my opinion may be better termed *Copula*, for that it ſeemed not onely to my ſelf, but as many as beheld it, that therein was copulated, and joyned as it were together all that curious Architecture, which the writing of the beſt and skilfulleſt Profeſſors, in that profeſſion, either *Theorick*, or *Practick*, have publiſhed to the vvorld, ſo admirable a piece of workmanſhip, ſuch a deal of greatneſſe, ſtrength, & curioſity, (without any wrong, or injury to any other Fabrick of *Europe*) may juſtly challenge the name of *the eighth wonder of the world*. Let him conſider with himſelf, who hath any knowledge in Architecture, it being four hundred and twenty handfulls high, beſides the ſpire that is on the top of it, what Diameter, this *Cupula* will require; and by this he may come to gheſſe what manner of thing it is.

From thence I went to the *Annunciata*, a Church ſo called, to ſee the Image that was painted there upon the vvall, which might more properly be termed *Heaven*; ſo admirable a piece of work, is that picture of the *Incarnation of the Son of God:* inſomuch that it is held there for certain, that it was drawn by one that was no leſſe excellent in his Art, than holy in his life. For, when he had made an end of that which there you ſee painted, and that there remained

remained no more to be done, but to finish and make up the face of our blessed *Lady* the *Virgin*; being wonderfull timorous and fearfull, much misdoubting and musing with himself, whether, or no, he should be able to give it its true life, and to fit it every way in its age, in trueness of its colour, its complexion, in its honest and sober countenance, and in the demure and modest posture of its eyes, in this confusion of his, and these his distracted thoughts, not devising with himself, what he were best to do, he laid himself down awhile to sleep, and awaking anon after, and minding to betake him to his pensil, and to put his hand (by the help of God) to that piece of work, he found it made to his hand. And therefore, it needs not our farther commendation, for it being to be presupposed, that it was there miraculously wrought either by Gods own hand, or some one of his Angels, it can be said to be no lesse, than an *Angelical picture*. And for this cause the rest of that piece being considered, which the Painter made, we may easily conceive, what kinde of spirit he had, who could finde so much favour, as to have the hands of Heaven (as if for the time they had been bound Apprentices to this trade) to help him to grinde, and mix his colours, and to make an end of his work for him.

So many miracles doth it dayly work, such a concourse of people doth continually flock thither out of devotion, and so great are the Alms, that are there distributed and given to the poor, that I did much wonder, that all the beggers were not wondrous rich; which put me in minde of that poor man, who (as I was told, and you have heard) made in this Citie, that his famous last Will and Testament, wherein he bequeathed his Asses pack saddle to the Great Duke; that seeming now unto me but a little small summe, in comparison of that, which such a one as he, might very well have gained in that place. And for that it is a known truth, *Que el hijo de gata, ratones mata*: that the son of a Cat, will kill his Rat. Or (as our English proverb hath it) Cat will to his kinde; a thousand, and a thousand times did I bethink my self of many things that I had done in my younger dayes, and did now as it were plainly perceive; that if as I went to *Rome*, it had been my good hap to have lighted in this Citie, what with my Roguish tricks, my counterfeit Scurffs, Leprosies, and sore Legs, I might have come to be a *mayorazgo* amongst them, and to have purchased some great Lordship.

I did likewise observe, that few of these Rogues were curious, and cunning, or that they were their Crafts-masters; but were for the most part fools, meer block-heads, and had a little, or no wit at all in comparison of those in my time. And when I did perceive what poor counterfeits they were, and how fillily they did order their affairs, it was sport alone to me. I took a great deal of pleasure in looking on them, and I did secretly wish to my self, that I might have had the opportunity, to reform a thousand imperfections, which I presently saw in them. Who did ever see, that an honest poor beggar, that was a good proficient in his trade; nay, say he were never so meanly bred to it, would when he had most, (unlesse he were a very Cocks-comb) have more than six, or seven *Maravedis*, or some such like trifle, and not above, in his hat? nor to have such a summe of money lie open to the peoples eyes, that they may thereby be taught to rell him; you need no more, you have as much there already, as will very well serve to supply your wants for this day, and to put bread enough in your belly; and therefore, that he should get him gone, and give way to other poor folks, that had more need than he had? When was it ever known, that there was ever seen any beggar, of that poor understanding, though he were but a new beginner, that would beg, having a loaf of bread under his arm? or to stand, as I saw another, with a tooth-pick in his ear? Which I no sooner saw, but I said to my self: O thou poor silly Thief, thou Traitour to thy profession, Art thou such an Asse, as to let every man know, that thou hast eaten so much, that there are some remnants yet left behinde in thy teeth? I saw not one amongst them all, that could play his game handsomely; nay, scarce know how to set his men in their right place, nor to take their due time for the hitting of a blot; I saw no order, no *decorum* amongst them; they had no skill in this kinde of Musick; many of them could say their *Gammothe*, (and that too they had learned by rote) but knew not how to prove a note; others there were, that had a little paltry skill in plain-song, but would bawl it out so scurvily and so untuneably, that no ear was able to indure it: And none of all this dunghill crew, that like *Chanticleer* could chaunt it out lustily, descant, and divide at pleasure, and so to relish and melt their notes, as to make their hearts to melt that hear them, and to move them to compassion of them.

There did I spy a young man, one of my old acquaintance, who was now a pretty well-grown man; this was the onely beggar (I mean compared with the rest) that knew any thing

amongst

amongſt them. And would to God (thought I) that I might be ſo happy, as to come once to ſet my hands where he had ſet his heart. For queſtionleſſe he could not chuſe but be rich. He was the ſon of ſuch parents as were able to leave him much. His father was a notable cunning Rogue, and could his craft wonderfull well. And this his ſon, was every way like unto him. He was lean viſag'd, lank bellied, ſpindle-ſhank'd, and ſo alike ſuted in all the reſt, that a man might truely ſay of him; that, 't was fathers n'own ſon. But becauſe every thing hath its time appointed, and takes it courſe when it comes; and for that the Juſtice did not there permit the having of an Academy, for the trayning up of theſe freſh men, what through want of exerciſe, and not trying of concluſions, and putting them in practice, they may now throw away their caps, whileſt themſelves with their *breviatick* Art may lye wallowing in the durt. I knew him, but he did not know me: He might well ſay unto me, *Talte veo, que no te conoſco:* the world is ſo changed with thee, that I do not know thee. O what a terrible conflict had I with my ſelf, what a ſhrewd-temptation to go & ſpeak to him: but I durſt not. I ſaid to *Sayavedra*, ſeeſt thou that poor fellow? That Rogue is able to make me rich. He then ſaid unto me; why doth he then go a begging? I told him; when men have once begun to open their mouths to crave an alms, and have ſhut their eyes to all ſhame, and bound their hands from all labour, & that their feet are benumm'd, and wax ſtiff from taking any pains, or care to live in a lawfull courſe, their diſeaſe is beyond all cure, and there is no remedy to redreſſe this evil.

The experience whereof I ſaw in a poor young wench in my time, who coming to *Rome* poor and ſick, fell a begging for Gods ſake. And when ſhe was well recovered of her health, and as ſtrong of her body, as any Bull, ſhe ſtill continued her trade of begging. They, whoſe alms ſhe craved, told her, it was ſhame for her to beg, ſhe was young and luſty, and was able to ſerve, and work for her living. She anſwered; that ſhe was often troubled with a cruel pain and griping of the heart, which when the fit took her, cauſed her to fall down to the ground in a ſwound, beating her feet and her hands againſt the earth, renting and tearing all that ſhe could lay hand on, and kicking and ſpurning all thoſe that came near her. In this ſort did ſhe cozen the world a long time, and ſpent many years in this lewd faſhion, till at laſt one of her own Countrey-men being askt, whether he knew her father, and her mother? Anſwered, he did; and that they were both dead, and had left her a great deal of wealth. Whereunto (as lawfull inheritrix) ſhe laid claim. Whoſe eſtate was now ſuch, and ſo great, that many principal men became Sutors unto her, and ſought to have her to wife, and ſome of them exceeding rich (for there is no iron ſo foul, that it will not be guilded, gold hides, and covers all, be it never ſo ruſty) ſhe was penny-white (as we ſay) and ſo was married in the end to one of an honeſt condition, and well to live, and an handſome man withall. But this wife of his, ſeeing ſhe was now deprived of her wonted liberty of begging, grew within a little while after deſperately ſick, dayly withering and waſting away, the Phyſicians not being able to ſearch into the nature of her diſeaſe. And thus ſhe continued for a good while, till ſhe became her own Phyſician, and cured her ſelf, by playing the Hypocrite, making ſolemne profeſſion, that meerly out of humility, ſhe would go a begging, and eat not any thing, but what ſhould be given her of alms, wherewith ſhe would ſuſtain this ſinfull carkaſſe of hers. And to this end, would ſhe go up and down her houſe amongſt her ſervants, firſt to one, and then to another, craving and begging ſomething of them. And becauſe all did give her alms, and none deny her, that did fully pleaſe her, but did much trouble her; wherefore, oftentimes, ſhe would ſteal into a private room that ſhe had, and there ſhut her ſelf in, where ſhe had ſome pictures of certain great perſons, that were fairly hung up in frames, and even of theſe (to ſatisfie this her ill habit, and to keep her ſelf in ure) would ſhe likewiſe demand an alms.

*Sayavedra*, marvelled much at it; who brought me from thence to the outward Court belonging to the Palace; in the midſt whereof I might ſee a brave Prince, mounted on a beautifull horſe of braſſe, ſo curiouſly cut to the life, and ſo well proportioned in every part, that they both ſeemed to have life and motion. My apprehenſion could not diſcern, and therefore durſt not preſume to judge, which of the two were better, either this, or that at *Rome*; yet inclined in the end with that ſhort underſtanding of mine, to give the praiſe to that which was there preſent; not for that it was preſent, but becauſe it did deſerve it. I askt of *Sayavedra*, whoſe Statue that was? He told me, it was the great Dukes, *Coſmo de Medici*. Of whom I went diſcourſing unto you upon the way. And here great *Ferdinando*, his ſon, (who lately was, but is not now alive) cauſed it to be ſet up to perpetual memory. I would needs know out of curioſity, of what height it might be, & not being able to reach thereunto to take the meaſure of it, I was informed, that from the very bottom to the top, was above 50 handfuls

high, little more, or leſſe. Round about the ſaid place, were many other delicate pieces caſt into braſſe, and ſome of ſubſtantial, yet very fine Marble, ſo artificially wrought, that they did drive the beholders into great admiration; leaving even the beſt judgements in ſuſpenſe, and and ſtaggering thoſe wits moſt, that were moſt acute; excepting onely ſuch, as had inckling afore-hand, what manner of things they were.

Afterwards, we viſited the Temple of S. *John Baptiſt*, as being moſt worthy our particular remembrance; for I may truely ſay of it, that there is ſcarſe the like in the vvorld for all in all. Which glorious Fabrick I then learned, was founded in the time of *Octavianus Auguſtus* the Emperour, and conſecrated to *Mars*; There did I entertain my ſelf in obſerving its antiquity, and foundation, wherein I took much content; and the more, for that it is reported of it, and received by tradition as alſo grounded upon reaſon, (in regard of its foundation.) That it is to laſt and continue, to the final conſummation and end of the world. Which we may the rather be induced to believe, for that neither length of time, nor thoſe continual wars accompanied with ſo many calamities, have as yet had the power either to deface, or deſtroy it. All the Citie beſides being left deſolate and laid level with the ground, onely this Temple remaining ſtill untoucht. The body of it conſiſts of eight Angels, all ſpacious, ſtrong, and marvellous beautifull to behold; eſpecially thoſe its three great doors, which are ſhut up with ſix half doors, all of braſſe, caſt in curious Molds, and all of one entire piece, wrought with Hiſtories of emboſſed work ſo daintily handled, ſo finely raiſed, and ſo proportionably equal in every point, as may well be preſumed from the Artizans of that Citie, who bear away the Bell from all the reſt, in that kinde, that are in the vvorld.

This Temple hath likewiſe another greatneſſe belonging unto it, which is this; that here being in *Florence* one & fourty Pariſh Churches, two & twenty Monaſteries of Fryars, fourty and ſeven Nunneries, four Colledges, or Houſes for thoſe that are willing to retire themſelves from the vvorld, eight and twenty Hoſpitals, and two bearing the name of *Jeſus*; yet there is no baptiſme uſed in any of theſe, ſave onely in that of S. *John*, and in that Church, are all the Children of this Citie baptized from the meaneſt among the Commons, to the principal Gentlemen, and the great Dukes own Children. For that time that we ſtayed there, we viſited all the Churches one after another, which were of that admirable workmanſhip, and ſet forth with ſuch ſingular and rare curioſities, that it is not poſſible to relate, no not the leaſt part thereof, in regard of the muchneſſe of them, (the number of them being ſo infinite,) nor is the underſtanding capable of apprehending them, much leſſe our outward eye. For he that ſhould go about to make a memorial of ſo great a *Machina*, and ſuch a maſſe of things, whoſe admirable parts are ſo numberleſſe, and every one of them accompanied with ſundry pieces of ſuch ſingular Art, and exquiſite workmanſhip, beſides ſo many excellent pictures, ſome in tables, and ſome ingraven in braſſe, and other metals, had need to make thereof an huge great Volume, and to ſeek out ſome other Chronicler, that ſhall be better able than my ſelf, to preſent theſe things to the eye of the Reader, and to give them their due commendation.

The great Duke hath a Palace in the Citie, which is called, *Il Palaggio Piti*; whoſe excellencies, greatneſſes, and curioſities, as well in gardens, as fountains, mounts, groves, ſports for hunting, and goodly rooms, may (without indearing) be truely ſaid to be a princely and royal ſeat; and ſuch an one, as may compare with any other whatſoever in all *Europe*.

I would not omit to know and ſee the circuit of this Citie, which containeth in it ſuch ſtore of wealth. And I found it to be much about five miles compaſſe: it hath ten great Gates, and one and fifty Towers. The Citie is ſeated all within the vvalls, and hath no Suburbs adjoyning thereunto. Through the midſt of it paſſeth the famous River of *Arnus*, upon which ſtand four moſt ſtately bridges, all paved with ſtone, and very ſtrongly built, being large and ſpacious withall. And all theſe things, being thus done in perfection; the like perfection is alſo to be found in their government, their behaviour, and in the general faſhion, and carriage of that people. And therefore juſtly, and with a great deal of reaſon, is this Citie called *Florencia*, as being *flos florum*, the flower of flowers, and as it were the onely noſe-gay of all *Italy*. Wherein all things, as in a curious garden, do flouriſh joyntly together, but more particularly theſe eſpecial and ſingular good things; As the liberal Arts, Horſ-manſhip, all kinde of learning, military Diſcipline, true dealing, fair proceeding, ſweet behaviour, plaineſſe and ſincerity in their actions, and above all I muſt recommend unto them, their love & kindneſſe towards ſtrangers. She like a true mother, embraces them in her boſom, hugs them, makes much of them, and favours them more, than ſhe doth her own Children; to whom in reſpect of them, ſhe may be termed a mother in Law.

The

The time, that I ſtayed there, I came to know the cauſes by their effects: to wit, by knowing the nature and condition of the inhabitants, and the politick Laws, by which they were governed, and their due obſervation of them, not erring a little from them. There they apply themſelves truely to know and eſteem every mans merit, rewarding them with juſt and due honour; to the end that all may be encouraged to vertue. And let not Princes think it a ſmall glorie unto them, for they ought to acknowledge it for one of the greateſt, that can be given them, when it is truely ſaid of them, that their noble and renowned actions, do jump and concurre with thoſe of their ſubjects.

I likewiſe knew that to be true, which *Sayavedra* had told me about the factions in Court, and the croſſing and thwarting one another. I ſaw ſomewhat of that which did exceed in other places, as envy and flattery, whereof no Princes Court is free, which alwayes reigne there moſt, where is deſire of favour, but more eſpecially, when they labour to encreaſe it, and to keep themſelves in grace with their Soveraign. Which often-times turn to the great hurt of both the one and the other. They are fine and witty relators of other mens actions, and ſubtil Mathematicians, for to delineate and meaſure out that which other men can do, and ſometimes that, which others cannot. But let theſe things reſt, without farther entring into them. For having painted forth unto you, in ſo great a perfection, this illuſtrious and noble Citie, it is not fit that I ſhould blemiſh it with ſo foul a blot, and daſh, as it were, with a cole, that fair commendation that I have given it.

## Chapter II.

Guzman de Alfarache *goes to* Bologna *in purſuit of* Alexandro, *who had ſtoln his Trunkes from him; Whither when he was come, going about to impriſon* Alexandro, *himſelf was clapt up.*



IN *Florence*, I did eat out that Horſe, which my Lord Ambaſſadour had beſtowed on me at my departure, and made me one morning one breakfaſt of his ſhooes. I ſay; To the end that I might ſell him the better, I cauſed him to be new ſhod, giving order to *Sayavedra* to make money of the old ones; whereof we made our breakfaſt. If this Heretike, *Neceſſity*, had not kickt me out of Town, and thruſt me out by head and ſhoulders, I ſhould never while I lived, of mine own accord, have gone from thence. And this thou mayeſt as certainly believe of me, as of any one Article of thy Creed. For I had now well taken ſalt, and was throughly ſeaſoned, and had ſounded that Citie to the very bottom, yet I knew not how my minde might have altered, and what I ſhould have done hereafter. For in concluſion, *todo lo nuevo, aplaze*: See what is neweſt, that we ſtill like beſt. This rule, holding more eſpecially in ſuch as I was, who had *ſpiritum ambulatorium*, a wandring humour of mine own, and was a great lover of novelties. But then I was of that opinion, for thoſe many reaſons I had on my ſide. For it was my hap to come thither, when they were full of their ſports and paſtimes; and other young fellows of the ſame years with my ſelf, led me to theſe their delightfull pleaſures along with them from houſe to houſe, from feaſt to feaſt, and from bridal to bridal.

In one houſe you might finde them dancing; in another playing upon inſtruments; in a third ſinging; and in a fourth making merry with their friends. All was delight, and more and more delight ſtill; one ſets up his reſt at *Primera*, another vyes his game at *Tick-Tack*: ſome at one game, ſome at another. In a word, in all places of the Citie whereſoever we came, we met with nothing but laudable exerciſes, and honeſt recreations. There might a man ſee many young gallants pompous in apparel, and richly clad, and many fair Ladies, & handſome Gentle-women, who wanted no ſetting forth for curious & coſtly dreſſings, with whom theſe young blouds did dance. Whoſe tyres on their heads were ſo daintily adorned, their Gowns on their backs ſo richly imbroidered, and their *Chapines* to their feet, ſo plated with ſilver and beſet with precious ſtones, that they did raviſh both the eyes, and the ſouls of as many as did look upon them. I leave it therefore to thee to conſider what kinde of dreſſings thoſe were, that had ſo much power to move the beholders. See how I have ſeaſoned this diſh, that I may not diſgrace the goodneſſe of the meat. Tell me; hath it not a good reliſh? Is it not pleaſing to thy palate? Though I go not into a Tavern to drink, yet I take

delight to talk of it, and to look upon it, and to peep in at the door as I paſſe by, and ſometimes ſlip in, to make my ſelf merry. No man is wiſe on horſ-back; much leſſe, in the unbridled years of his youth. In a word, I was young. And as old age is cold and dry, ſo on the contrary, youth is hot and moiſt. Youth hath ſtrength, and old age wiſdom. Thus are theſe gifts divided, and yet every one hath that which is fit, and neceſſary for him. And though for the moſt part, we ſee that all old men turn to be young, if not (as we ſay) become Children again; yet it were a wonder to ſee young men grow old. And I ſay again, it were as great a wonder, to ſee a young man in years, to be an old man in diſcretion, as to ſee a Pear-tree, to bear fruits in the heart of winter. But I ſpeak this in *Spaniſh*, that ſome of other Countreys, whom I know, may not finde fault with me. And I would have all men take notice, that I alwayes ſpeak according to the uſe and faſhion of mine own Countrey: for I do not know after what manner others dance in theirs.

But that I may return to my former diſcourſe; it grieved me very much to leave *Florence*, (yet did it much concern me to be gone) flying as it were from my ſelf, not knowing to what end, nor whither to go; nor yet know I, why I ſhould ſtay any longer there, unleſſe it were to ſpend that poor little ſtore of money, that I had yet left me, and that Chain, which the Lord Ambaſſador my Maſter, gave me at my farewell, as a token of his love, and to think upon him, as oft as I chanc'd to caſt mine eyes upon it. And I muſt truely confeſſe unto you, that he was never out of my minde, whenſoever I did think upon that hour, wherein I muſt ere long be forced to turn it into money. And as it was given me with a great deal of love, ſo did it exceedingly grieve me that I muſt ſhortly part ſo unkindly with it. I would, if I could, have kept it rather than my life, and never have parted from it; but there are ſome ſuch occaſions, wherein Parents may impawn their own Children. Patience, (quoth I to my ſelf) I will do the beſt I can; and more, I cannot. And therefore (my maſters) I pray pardon me; for he, that hath no other means to help himſelf, & is conſtrained thereunto out of meer neceſſity, is driven many times to commit many a great error, and that ſhall prove far more prejudicial and hurtfull. I had a great wreſtling and ſtrugling with my ſelf; and my thoughts had a cruel ſharp war with themſelves, as well touching this, as other the like buſineſſes. I conſidered with my ſelf, what would now become of me, and what courſe I were beſt to take, for to ſupply and relieve my wants. God help me; How heavy is the heart, when the purſe is light! And therefore we ſay, A heavy purſe makes a light heart. What little comfort do we take in the world? And how faint and feeble, are the pleaſures of this life to him, whoſe purſe ſtrings are too weak? And more particularly, to one that is in a ſtrange Countrey, and that hath put on a reſolution with himſelf to forget his lewd courſes, and not to live as he had done, by tricks and by ſhifts; yet not knowing how to gain a penny, and wanting the means how to come by money; having no near acquaintance with any, to preſume of ſuch kindneſſe from them, being far from my friends, and further from any the leaſt intention, or purpoſe to cheat, or cozen any man. For, if I would have run that courſe, and ſet my minde unto it, I needed not to have taken ſuch a deal of care and trouble in the buſineſſe. For I had my wits about me; and a hand that was able to finde me work all the year long; I could not want, (if I liſted my ſelf) to pick out a living whereſoever I ſhould come. For (thanks be to God for it) what I had once learned, it was mine own for ever: I never loſt it, if I once had it. Onely, I might at firſt be a little to ſeek for want of uſe, but the tools of my trade were never out of my hand, but alwayes carried them with me, whitherſoever I went. I departed from *Rome* with a full purpoſe to become an honeſt man; and fall back, fall edge, come good, or come bad, all welcom, as it pleaſed God; for I had a great minde to continue theſe my good deſires, and to remain firm in this ſo honeſt a reſolution. But ſeeing that Hell is full of theſe, what good could my holy deliberations do me, if I did not put them in execution? For faith without works, is but a dead faith.

Now, I had gotten me a man to wait upon me. Where by the way, I pray let me ask you, What a good direction was this, to addreſſe me to a Maſter? What a Letter of recommendation to be received into ſervice? I had been now accuſtomed to command; how would you then, that I ſhould ſubmit my ſelf to obey? I verily thought with my ſelf (as perhaps many more do, for I do not think that I am the onely man of that minde in the world) that I ſhould have been an honeſt man, if anſwerable to that glorious ſhow that I made, and the hedge wherein I lived. I had had wherewithall to ſpend accordingly, and that I had not wanted means to uphold this great ſpirit of mine, but had had money enough to maintain and enlarge my generous diſpoſition. But the ſummes (I fear me) which muſt have ſerved

to

to ſupply my wants, muſt miraculouſly by ſome holy Saint, or other, be ſubminiſtred unto me: for no other hand could do it. And certainly, I know not how it then fell out, that I was ſo honeſt as I was; I verily believe, that this alſo was a Miracle, conſidering the condition of that preſent time, and mine own evil inclination. I was young, left to live at mine own liberty, ſuffered to do what I liſt, and rather accuſtomed to ſeek occaſions to do, than to ſhun ill: and I could hardly by the help of my good deſires, either loſe, or lay aſide my bad conditions.

Such a Lady, or ſuch a Gentlewoman ſaith, (which is their ordinary kinde of language) I would fain be a good woman, I deſire to lead an honeſt life, as no vvoman more, if that neceſſity did not force me to do that, which I do. Indeed Madam, by your leave, your Ladyſhip lies. For, that you do ill, it is onely, becauſe you are willing to do ill. O what a poor excuſe is this? I confeſſe that I offend thus and thus, but it is againſt my will; for I am not of my ſelf given to ſuch, or ſuch a ſin, nor have any inclination thereunto in the vvorld. In good faith it is otherwiſe, for I read it in your eyes. And they conſenting unto ſin, who can be ſaid to be the cauſe thereof, but your ſelves? For if you would but turn your eyes from your windows, and throw them on your diſtaffe, or your cuſhionet, certainly neceſſity would not conſtrain you to ill. Womens hands are not of that length, nor ſo quick and ſo nimble, that they ſhould ſuddenly reach ſo far, as to finde you food, apparel, and houſe-rent: yet are they long enough, to put themſelves forth to ſervice; and they that ſet you a work, will beſtow houſe room on you, and put meat in your mouths, and money in your purſe. But I expect you ſhould ſay unto me; Thou, that art a man, giveſt me this counſel; Thou art loath to ſerve thy ſelf, and yet thou wouldſt have me to ſerve, that am a vvoman? Indeed, thou haſt hit the nail on the head; And this is that, which I ſay; That your Miſtreſſe-ſhip, and I, and this, or that other woman (be ſhe what ſhe will) are all of us unwilling to do our ſelves good. We will put to no helping hand of our own, but would, that what we ſtand in need of, ſhould be put into our mouths, and that it ſhould miraculouſly be miniſtred unto us.

Twenty years of age is a terrible beaſt: O how head-ſtrong, and how wilde it is. There is no battel ſo bloudy, no skirmiſh ſo hot, and ſo hard to come off clear, as that vvar, which we wage with our youth. For if it go about to make its retreat from Vice, it hath many fierce enemies that ſharply ſet upon it, never ceaſing to aſſail it, galling it here, and wounding it there, which will hardly be repell'd, more hardly overcome, by reaſon of thoſe many occaſions of advantage which offer themſelves; it being beſides a thing proper unto youth, to ſtumble, if not fall, at every ſtep: Youth hath not (believe me) any ſtrength in its Legs, much leſſe know they well how to go. It is an untamed beaſt, it is full of fury, and void of patience; and if it entertain any good motion, an hundred ill thoughts diſband the ſame by and by, and put it to rout; not giving it ſo much leaſure as to ſet foot on ground, or put it in the ſtirrop, not to ſeat himſelf ſure in the Saddle. Every one cannot get up to it; and few that can bridle this beaſt. It will not be ſo ſoon over-maſtered, as ſome do think, nor be eaſily brought to go that way as a man would have it. I was ever like the hog, up to the very eyes, nouſling my ſelf in the mud of vice and wickedneſſe, (for albeit I did alwayes practiſe ill, yet I never loſt the ſight of it) and I was loath to kick and fling againſt it, leſt by my too much ſtirring, I might looſen my lading, and cauſe it to fall to the ground; if not ſprain, and hurt my ſelf.

A Bullock, or young Steer, when he is to be tamed, they firſt halter his Legs, throwing him down on the ground, then they fall a ſhooing of him, after that, they binde a Rope, or a Cord to one of his Horns, which they ſuffer him to trail after him for ſome few dayes; and when they are minded to bring his neck to the yoke, yoke him with an old Oxe, that hath been long uſed to the Plough, and ſo by little and little diſpoſing him thereunto, they teach him by theſe degrees to begin to draw handſomely, and in the end to be as perfect as the beſt of them.

That young man therefore, that hath a deſire to be old, let him leave to follow my ſteps, and let him ſtrive to ſubdue his paſſions; let him prepare, and diſpoſe himſelf to labour, and in deſpight of his own will, let him ſtrongly ſtruggle and wraſtle with his idle and fooliſh deſires, and throw them flat on their backs to the ground, that they may never riſe up any more to make reſiſtance againſt him: And when he hath thus gotten them down under him, let him bind them faſt with that double-twiſted cord of patience, and humility; and let him trail after him, for ſome certain dayes, theſe his ſtrange and dangerous appetites; ſpending his time in vertuous exerciſes, ſix many days ſhall not paſſe over his head, before he be brought to

bow his neck to that holy yoke of repentance; and by yoking himself with good company, he shall quickly be inured to the plough, wherewith he shall break up the earth of his evil inclinations. But let no man think, that he shall be able to do this at the first dash; and that once trying what he can do, shall be sufficient to make him grow perfect. Some (I know) will not stick to tell me; I would do this, and I would do that, my will is to it, but, &c. Let him speak this to such another as himself, and to one that is of the like quality and condition, as he is. For I know well enough already, that he is not willing to do this, nor to do that; For they, that are willing indeed, use other more effectual means. And nothing is hard to them, that will set themselves hard to it. Peradventure such an one thinks, or expects, that God should open the Heavens, and miraculously strike him to the ground, as he did S. *Paul*; But let him not look to have the like course to be taken with him; lest he be counted a fool for his labour.

God threw him to the ground, and humbled him sufficiently, when he afflicted him with sickness, when he laid troubles upon him, and when he suffered him to be toucht in his good name; if either then, or now, thou should accept of grace, while it is offered thee, thou shalt be sure to finde it. But thou wast never willing to entertain these good motions, much lesse to humble thy self with S. *Paul*, and to cry out with him, *Domine quid vis, ut faciam?* Lord, what wilt thou that I do? What is thy Divine will and pleasure? Thou wilt not like *Paul* be for God, and yet thou look'st that God should be for thee. And if he dealt thus with S. *Paul*, it was because God knew the earnest desire that he had to know and search out the Truth: and that it was his zeal to the Law that did thus oversway him; the current whereof being turned another way, he would be as fervent for the Gospel. And you can instance but in a few that have been saved by a bare intention, without any good work. These two are to concurre in one, *Intention*, and *Action*; I say, if we have any time left unto us from action, or wherein we may do any good work. And then shall a firm intention of amendment of life, and a hearty sorrow for our sins past, be accounted a good work, when the night of death shall suddenly overtake us, and shut us up in darkness. But having day enough to work and labour in the Lords *Vineyard*, both these ought to go together, I mean *Intention* and *Action*. For neither the spade alone, nor the hand alone can dig, and dresse the ground, but hand and spade must both work together.

But who hath put me into this theme? Was not I in *Florence*, even now to my great content? Thither do I return again. I assure thee, that the more I walked up and down that Citie, the more desirous I was to plant there my Pillars, and not to seek for a *Plus ultra*. For it was even as I would have wisht it to be, all very beautifull and delightfom. And if therein resided either flattery, or envy, I took no great heed thereof, but let it run to others account, for I was none of those, that were comprehended in that decree. I had nothing to do (like *Judas*) with the alms of the poor, nor could any prejudice thereby come unto me, being that I pretended nothing in Court. And if they would any way have holpen me, I had no need to use them. Or had I stood in need of them, I would not have made any use of them; they evermore seeming unto me the greatest means of mischief, that ever came yet within my knowledge. For one onely flatterer is sufficient alone of himself to overthrow a Common-wealth, if not an whole Kingdom. Happy is that King, and fortunate that Prince, whose Subjects serve him for love, and who out of his wisdom leaves now and then an ear open to the peoples complaints, as also their advice; for onely by this means shall he come to know truths, whereby he may redresse those things that are amisse, and keep off flatterers from abusing his ears.

There would I have lived all the dayes of my life, and have past away the time, like a Duke, had I had wherewithall. But I was in a manner blown up, and all my money was almost spent. I need not to confirm this unto you with an Oath, for you may very well (if you will) believe me on my bare word. The River now began to grow dry, and my store to fail me; for, *Del monton que sacan, y no ponen, presto lo disponen.* Pull from your heap, and put nothing to it; you, or your heap (if not both) may rue it. So that my moneys still going out, and none coming in, if I should have stayed any longer there, I should quickly have run my self out at the heels, and it would have been a great dis-reputation for me, to have come in a Horse-back, and go out a foot. I thought it good counsel to uphold mine honour, and to depart from thence, both to my credit and content, before that being forced thereunto by necessity, I should come to discover my wants, and be bound to stay still there, for lack of means to be gone. I acquainted *Sayavedra* with this my purpose, and plainly opened my minde unto him; For by this time I knew well enough that he was likely

to

to be mine onely help at a pinch, my ſtrong fort, and the onely trench whereunto I might with ſafety retire, and that I could not have met with ſuch another companion in all the vvorld for my purpoſe. I went preparing him by a little, and a little, working and diſpoſing him by degrees, that he might not afterwards think that he had ſeen ſtrange Viſions, and vain Apparitions, and that whatſoever ſhould hereafter befall me, might not ſeem new unto him, or accounted as a novelty.

When I had thus moulded him, he ſaid unto me; Sir, There is one remedy, that offers it ſelf unto me now on the ſudden, neither chargeable, nor hard, but very eaſie to be effected, and that may make much for your profit. Seeing there is no remedy, but we muſt be gone, it is not much material which Gate we go out at; for at any one of the ten, we may travel out on our ten toes, to go abroad, and ſee the vvorld. Let us (if you will be rul'd by me) take the way, that leads to *Bologna*; for beſides, that it is near at hand, and that we ſhall there ſee that famous Univerſity, we may chance likewiſe to have the good luck to meet with *Alexandro Bentivoglio*, that Maſter of mine, who went away with the moſt part of your goods. For if we hap to finde him there, (as I verily believe we ſhall,) it will be an eaſie matter for you to recover your own. For, upon that information which was made of the theft in *Siena*, it is not to be doubted, that though you get not what you loſt again, yet he, or his Father will at leaſt be content to give you good ſatisfaction.

I took this to be no bad counſel, but was very well pleaſed therewithnot thinking on any other thing than the force of the Law, and the juſtneſſe of my cauſe; and let juſtice deal never ſo indirectly with me, I could not conceive the leaſt caſe of doubt, in regard of the clear notice I could make of the theft, which would, if not all, yet have allotted me the greater part of my goods: perſwading my ſelf, that this party, who was principal in this theft, knowing himſelf guilty thereof, would have come unto me upon his knees, deſiring my pardon, and that he would voluntarily have offered to make me amends for the wrong he had done me, and to come upon any terms to agreement with me; as well for that his Parents and Kindred in that Citie, were perſons of principal note; as alſo, for that notwithſtanding all the means they were able to make to bolſter out the matter, yet would they never permit, that ſo foul a fact ſhould come to publick hearing, and be judicially tride; nor that they, and their houſe ſhould be blotted and blurr'd with ſo foul a ſtain, and diſhonour, as this could not chuſe but prove, if it ſhould once come to be ripped up.

Will you hear a ſtrange kind of humour in me? you ſhall then know it by this. It is not long ſince you heard me ſay, what a delicate and delightſom place *Florence* was, and what a deal of pleaſure I took therein. And now upon the ſudden, I was grown out of love with it, the very name of it was grown ſo hatefull unto me, that it was ready out of a loathing that I had taken to it, to turn up my ſtomack. It began now (me thought) to ſtink, I could not endure the ſent of it; every thing ſeemed ſo foul and ſo filthy to my ſight, that I did now long to be gone, and till then, every day was to me a thouſand. You may ſee (my Maſters) what wonders want of money can work! You will in a moment hate thoſe things, which you loved moſt, when you lack wherewithall to maintain both your ſelves, and them. Now my minde gave me, that there was not ſuch another Citie in the vvorld, as *Bologna*; wherein I ſhould no ſooner ſet my foot, but I ſhould recover my ſtoln wares, and have wherewithall to ſpend, and to keep company with your young Students, Lads of the right ſtamp, merry greeks, much of mine own ſize and mark, with whom I might play three, or four venews, when I were ſo diſpoſed, without any great diſadvantage of a vveapon. And the Dice might haply have given me ſo lucky a chance, and have hit ſo right, that I might have had the good fortune to have followed my ſtudies: for that learning, which my Lord Cardinal beſtowed upon me, I had not as yet forgot it, but was very ready and perfect in all that had been taught me. And queſtionleſſe, with that little learning, that I then had, I might very well have proceeded Maſter, and made a ſhift to live by that profeſſion, if that kinde of courſe had been fitting for me, or that my ſelf had been willing to apply my minde hereunto.

But ſtay a while *Guzman*, be not thou too haſty: Wilt thou offer to trail a Gown after thee, being ſo weak that thou canſt ſcarce hale a halter at thy heels? Hold thy hand, this is not a task for thee to undertake. There is no talking of commencing Doctor, till the bow of preferment be drawn home by the ſtrong arm of Angels. What canſt thou hope for then, who art ſo poor, that thou art ſcarce able to wagge the ſtring.

I was now fully reſolved to begin my journey, and to make all the haſte I could. And ſo in an inſtant I put this my intention in execution. Away goes *Sayavedra*, and I together, making

making directly for *Bologna*. And becauſe I had flying thoughts in my head, I was willing to put wings to my horſe: making ſuch good ſpeed, that we came thither that night; but ſlept very little, for we ſpent the moſt part of it in plotting and caſting about how we ſhould bear our ſelves in this buſineſſe; and whileſt we were diſcourſing to and fro, what were beſt to be done; *Sayavedra* (having lookt well as it ſhould ſeem on his own Cards) ſayes unto me: Sir, I hold it not ſo fit, that I ſhould be ſeen herein at all, eſpecially now at this my firſt flight, but rather to lie cloſe awhile, till we may ſee where it would be beſt to give the wound; and when we ſhall come to know, where the game lies, and that there is any hope of doing good, then let us let flie, and ſtrike it dead. For if *Alexander* be in the Town, and ſhould know that I am here, (which he cannot chuſe, if I ſtir abroad, being ſo well known as I am,) he will queſtion me, wherefore I came hither, and with whom? And that known, he will abſent himſelf forthwith from the Citie, and ſo we ſhall be defeated of our purpoſe. Or if he chance but to ſuſpect, that I had a finger in this buſineſſe, and that I was the cauſe of this journey, and his ſhame, there is no way but one with me, he will ſurely kill me; ſo that neither of theſe two will advantage us any thing, nor is fitting for us to be adventured on. Beſides, if this vveb muſt come to be vvoven in the Loom of Juſtice, I muſt be the maſter-threed to be wrought upon, there is no avoiding of it: And therefore you have no reaſon to ſuffer me (conſidering that I can ſtand you in no ſtead, if I be taken and clapt by the heels) to receive any further harm, than what I have already endured. The beſt courſe then to be taken, I conceive to be this; That to morrow morning you make inquiry after him, and by one means, or other (with the beſt ſecrecy you can) ſeek firſt to know him, and to take particular notice of his perſon; That done, we will conſult thereof afreſh, and govern our ſelves therein, according as occaſion and time ſhall ſerve.

I did not like amiſſe of this, we thought it was good wholeſom counſel. Well: as he had adviſed me, I ſet my ſelf to work, I walkt up and down the Town, and after the treading of ſome few ſteps, not being troubled (as fortune would have it) to tire out my legs in the ſearch of him, it was my good hap to have him pointed out unto me with the finger, telling me; Lo, that's the man. Which direction I needed not, for the Cloaths on his back did ſpeak what he was, and without others teaching, could tell me, This is *Alexandro*. He was ſtanding amongſt other young men at the Church door; nor do I believe, that his devotion was ſuch, as to go in and out to hear Maſſe, but I was rather of opinion, that he ſtood there regiſtring thoſe that went in, offering great ſcandal, but ſhewing ſmall reſpect to that ſacred place. It is a ſoul ſhame, that this is ſo commonly uſed, as it is in moſt parts of the Chriſtian vvorld. I know what I ſpeak; Would to God I knew as well how to reform this abuſe. Are there not ſtore of ſtreets, and other publick places in the Town, for to make love in, which we ſcandal too much already with our lewd ſteps, wanton looks, diſhoneſt ſigns and tokens, and perhaps other things of a worſe condition, to intimate our looſe and luſtfull affections, but that we muſt wrong Gods holy Temple with this our uncivil and beaſtly behaviour.

But let us proceed in our former argument, that we may not leap from a Maſſe into a Sermon. It ſeems unto me, that he ſtood not there with any great devotion, for he talkt apace with his hand, and now and then he would break out in a loud laughter. He had at that time a doublet of mine on his back of cloath of ſilver, and a jerkin dreſt with Amber, and other rich perfumes, cut and ſlaſht clean thorow, and lined with the ſame cloath of ſilver, ſutable to the doublet, and richly laid with lace after the *Sevillian* faſhion, and eight buttons of gold wrought upon Amber, to make it ſit the cloſer to the collar, all which a Gentleman of *Naples* preſented me withall, for a certain diſpatch that I had procured for him, by ſoliciting his buſineſſe with my Lord Ambaſſadour.

When I came to know mine own, and ſee another man wear it before my face, I could have found in my heart to have ſtabb'd him, and to have preſently ſtript him of it, ſo did it grieve and vex the very Soul of me, that ſuch dear pledges as thoſe of my friends love unto me, ſhould thus ſore againſt my will, be in another mans poſſeſſion. My bloud roſe againſt him, and I was often tempted to have gone and ſtabb'd him, but I held my hand, and ſaid with my ſelf, No, *Guzman*, no; This muſt not be ſo; Better it were, that this thy Thief ſhould be converted and live. For if thou let him live, he may chance to pay thee; but if thou kill him, thou art ſure to pay for him. And of the two, it is better to take, than to give. And ſafer it is for thee, that others ſhould be indebted to thee, than thou indebted to others. And it will be more for thy eaſe, and more eaſily compaſſ to get in a debt, than to pay a debt. Make not thy ſelf the Defendant, if thou mayeſt be the Plaintiffe. Go on fair

and

and softly, be not so hasty, for there is no body that runs after us. And if there be any order or law in gaming, and if the dice run true, if the cards be not pack'd, but are well shuffled and cut, and that there be fair play, unlesse the devil be in it, or my luck exceeding bad, all the world cannot win the game from me. For I have cards enough in mine own hand to carry it. We are sure the bird cannot now get from us; which is that which importeth us most. Let us not fear the Chase, but hunt lively, for the Bulls are safe enough; they cannot escape us. He is taken in the manner, the theft found about him, he cannot possibly deny it. I swear I will put him to his neck-verse, and see how well or ill he will come off, and make him to confesse upon the Rack, who put him into those fine cloaths, or in what Fair or Market he bought them.

Having consulted thus with my self, I got me home to my lodging, acquainting *Sayavedra* with what I had seen. He had provided me my dinner ready for me, and had set it down on the table, as soon as he saw I was come; And when we had din'd, we pitcht the nay, wherewith we were to catch this Coney. We discoursed one while of this course, another while of that, many designes we had, many means propounded to come by our own; but *Sayavedra* (poor man) did stagger at them, and was loth to give way unto them: He repented him now of the counsel he had given me, fearing therein his own danger. But we concluded in the end, that of all other means, *Peace* (if we could draw him to some reasonable composition) were the best. For it is better to have one bird in the hand, than two in the bush. And a bad Accord is better than a good Plea: Lesse harm ever comming of agreeing, than suing. So that at last we grew to this conclusion, that I, by a third person, should use some means to have his father talkt withall, making him acquainted with the businesse, and the whole manner how it was carried, giving him a large account of every particular thing, remitting my self to his good will and pleasure, how he in his own discretion should think meet I deserv'd to be dealt withall, and that he would not inforce me (considering my fair manner of proceeding with him) to recover mine own by rigour of Law, being there was *Evidentia facti*; besides many other pregnant proofs to be produced, that these goods were mine. And so I did, as we had devised; having made choice of a discreet person, who should secretly, and with fitting language deliver thus much unto him. But because *Power* is commonly accompanied with *Pride*, and *Pride* is still attended with *Tyranny*, he was so far from compounding the businesse, that he made little reckoning of it, taking it ill at his hands that treated with him about it, wishing him that he should speak no more of it, deeming it as an *affront* done unto his honour, and a meer defamation. He feigned himself to be greatly wronged, though he knew well enough that I was he that was injur'd; and without giving us either good hopes or good words, he dispatcht my messenger.

When I received this answer, I hatched a thousand evil imaginations in my heart. But because I would not return evil for evil, I resolved to talk with some one Lawyer or other of that University, that should be commended unto me for the nimblenesse of his wit, and soundnesse of judgement; to whom I opening my case (fearing the successe thereof, for that my adversaries father was so powerful) might crave his opinion, and that he would assist me with his best advice and counsel, for the better prosecuting of this businesse. He plainly told me; Sir, it is well enough known in this Town, what manner of man *Alexandro* is, as also his lewd and idle courses, which in some other place would be a sufficient information against him. Besides, there is so much truth in that which you urge against him, that it is manifestly apparent to as many as know him, or shall hear you, You have right on your side, a just and a good cause; and therefore I would advise you to frame an information against him, and to desire justice. All *Bologna* hath taken notice already of this theft of his; for as soon as he came hither with it, it was presently known, that these cloaths were none of his own: as well, because he caused them to be altered and fitted to his own body; as also for that he carried hence with him no lambs to sell, nor any other kinde of merchandize, whereby he should make so rich a return. Besides, another companion of his, in whom he put most trust, stole a good part of these goods from him, that he might likewise gain thereby a part of his Pardons and Indulgences. You see now what course you must be fain to take; what lies in me to relieve you, you may be assured of the best furtherance, and the best counsel that I can give you, for the countenancing of this your cause.

Whereupon, I being very desirous, that a bill should be exhibited against him, he presently (according to my information) drew one out, which I forthwith presented to the *Auditore del Torrone*, who is there the Judge in all Causes Criminal. But, be it as it may be, whether it were immediatly from the Judge himself, or from the Notarie, I know not which, nor

from whence, nor how it came to paſſe, but ſure I am, that this buſineſſe of mine was inſtantly over all the Town, and particular notice was given thereof unto *Alexandro*'s father. And for that he was a man of Authority in that Town, and carried a great hand there amongſt them, he hyes him in all haſte to the Judge, and there accuſing me for this my bold attempt, and inconſiderate raſhneſſe, (as it pleaſed him to term it) he formed a complaint againſt me, that I had defamed, and diſhonoured his houſe, and that therefore he was of purpoſe come unto him to deſire his lawfull favour, and that he would be pleaſed to do him Juſtice, to the end that I might be ſeverely puniſhed for this my preſumption. I know not how, but the matter was ſo carried between them, that it had been better for me to have held my peace. He was a powerfull man in that Citie, and the Judge (it ſeemed) was very willing to pleaſure him. I began now to fear, that occaſions of quarrel would be pickt againſt me; Mole-hills made Mountains; and this my loſſe, turn to my greater loſſe; making my undoing an occaſion of my farther undoing. For *Love*, *Intereſt*, and *Hatred*, are ever maine enemies to the *Truth*. And in many places, As a man is befriended, ſo his cauſe is ended. But he that hath both money and friends, is ſure to work out his ends. Money is of no great thickneſſe, yet it dulls the double-edged ſword of Juſtice, if it but once offer to touch it. Gold is an heavy metall; & that makes the ballance of Juſtice ſo light. I did ſpit, as it were againſt Heaven, the drivel whereof fell upon mine own face; I ſhot mine Arrows up into the Aire, and they returned back again upon mine own boſom; the innocent paying for the nocent; and the juſt for the unjuſt.

Much money doth much harm; but much more, the evil intention of an evil man. And therefore where an ill-minded, and a great maſſe of money meet together, and ſhake hands, there is much need of help from Heaven to free an innocent Soul out of their cruel claws. Good Lord deliver us from out their clutches; for they are more griping and tyrannous, than thoſe of Tygers, or of Lions. Their will is a Law; whatſoever they deſire that they do, right (when they liſt) ſhall be wrong; and wrong right: And no man muſt control them for it; nor dare to ſay, black is their eye; leſt he chance to loſe both his own, for prying too near into the ſecrets of theſe earthly gods. O that there were men of that goodneſſe and courage, that would not ſtick to tell them, and plainly give them to underſtand; that the money, they thus unlawfully take, ſhall laſt with them but awhile; but the fire, wherewith they ſhall be tormented for it, ſhall continue for ever.

The Judge did limit me a prefixed time for my proofs, but ſo ſhort that it was not poſſible for me to make my information according to that ſcantling. In this you may ſee the injuſtice that he did me. Who did ever till now know a Judge reſtrain the Plaintiffe of Lawfull time to make his proof, as he did me, eſpecially when I did alledge for my ſelf, that the information was to come from *Siena*, where the theft was committed, whence I was to procure it, for otherwiſe I could not have it. But to alledge this, or not alledge it, all was one. I muſt be content, will I, nill I, to ſit down with the loſſe. There was no fence for it. And to this purpoſe, before I paſſe any farther, I will tell you what hapned in a little Village of *Andaluzia*.

There was a certain ſeſſing to be ſet in a ratable proportion, upon the Town-dwellers, and Borderers thereabout, for ſome publick piece of work that was to go in hand; and the Collectors that were appointed to gather the money, had put into their roll (to contribute thereunto) a Gentleman of as ancient an houſe, as any in thoſe parts; who taking himſelf therein to be greatly wronged, made his complaint againſt the Collectors. But for all that, they did not ſtrike his name out of the roll. Now, when the time was come for the levying of theſe moneyes, they went unto this Gentleman to demand ſo much of him, as he was rated at in their note. He refuſed to pay it. Whereupon they diſtrained on his goods, and paid themſelves. The Gentleman being much offended with this their proceeding, goes forthwith to his Lawyer, asks his counſel, who (in concluſion) draws me a Petition for him, grounded upon all, both Law and Reaſon, wherein he layes open his ancient Gentry, and the nobleneſſe of his houſe, and that in regard thereof he was priviledged from all manner of ſeſſings, and ſuch other like payments, and that therefore he did humbly Petition the Court, that they would be pleaſed to give preſent order, that what the Collectors had forcibly taken from him, might again be reſtored, and be delivered back unto him, as in all equity it ought. When this Petition was by them delivered unto the *Alcalde*, having read it, and heard what they could ſay for themſelves; he called to the Regiſter, and ſaid unto him; Mark well what I ſhall ſay unto you, and ſee you ſet it down in the very ſame words, as I ſhall deliver it unto you. This Petitioner (then ſaid he) as he is a Gentleman, I will by no means debarre

him

him of his priviledge, God forbid I ſhould deny him his juſt requeſt; but as he is a poor man, his houſe grown now to decay, and himſelf (as you ſee) in want, I hold it very fit, that he pay as others do.

That I had juſtice on my ſide, no man doubted it; it was ſo publick a thing, that all the vvorld took notice of it. But I was poor and needy, and therefore it was fit I ſhould pay for all, and there was no reaſon (in that reſpect) that they ſhould do me juſtice. I preſently ſmelt a Rat: I ſaw this was a bad ſign, & was ſhrewdly afraid, that all my labour would be loſt. But I could not for all this perſwade my ſelf, nor could it ſink into my head, that I ſhould be that man, of whom it is ſaid by way of proverb; *Paciente, y apaleado:* that I muſt go away with the wrong, and the blows too. Firſt be made cuckold, and afterwards knockt for my prating. Well, ſuch was my hard fortune, that being not able to bring in my proofs in ſo ſhort a time, it ſo fell out with me, that my bill of complaint was thrown out of the Court, and held as a thing of no validity, or force in Law, & that of the adverſe part, took place againſt me; declaring there in Court, that I by this my Petition had framed an infamous Libel againſt his Son, by means whereof, his houſe, and his honour was much defamed; adding and interſerting, *in majorem cautelam.* I know not what a vvorld of words, and what ſtrange and intricate terms. That I did *ſponte, indubitate*, &c. That I did it wittingly and willingly, impudently and maliciouſly aggravating the matter againſt me with all the odious terms they could deviſe, that if I ſhould ſet them down one by one, they would take up an whole ſheet of paper. Alledging farther againſt me, that for as much as his Son, was a quiet, honeſt, and peaceable Gentleman, and of a good, both report, and life, I did deſerve I know not what exemplary puniſhment, hanging, burning, and drowning, all was too little, that I knew not what to make of it, nor what a Gods name they would do with me. Which things, when they were read unto me, I ſaid to my ſelf; Theſe men may have healthy bodies, but I am ſure they have ſick Souls; they may have good purſes, bnt I finde (to my coſt) they have bad conſciences. I was careleſſe, (as one that was confident of a good cauſe) I never ſhrunk aſide, and as I was afterwards going about my buſineſſe, that my ſuite might not fall for want of following, I was taken up in the midſt of the ſtreet by an arreſt, and preſently carried away to priſon, without any other information againſt me, ſaving onely the putting up of my Petition, and acknowledging it to be mine.

There is no ſword that hath ſo ſharp and keen an edge as Calumny, and falſe Accuſation: and then cuts deepeſt, when it is in the hand of a Tyrannous Judge; whoſe force and power is ſuch, that it is able to overthrow, and lay level with the ground, the beſt grounded Juſtice that is, though it have never ſo ſure, never ſo ſtrong a foundation. Which it doth then moſt, and moſt eaſily, when a poor mans cauſe comes in his way, who ſuſpects (poor harmleſſe Soul) nothing leſſe, than to receive hurt from him, to whom the flies for help. My buſineſſe was plain, no tricks, no gigs in it, I did onely ſet down the naked truth, but they made it I know not how, by their quillets and devices knotty and uneven, though there was not a man, neither within, nor without the Town, that did not know all was true, that I had delivered; and all this did plainly appear to the Judge to be ſo, and that I had ſufficient information.

All this is very good; yet for all this (good-man *Guzman*) give me leave to tell you, that you are a gooſe-cap. Thou art poor, thou wanteſt favour, and friends: and therefore art neither to be heard, nor believed. Theſe are not Caſes that are to be brought before the Tribunals of men; but when thou haſt occaſion to have thy cauſe tried; to get thee to God, Petition him, where the truth ſhall appear face to face, without any need of the favour of thy friend, nor an Advocate to plead thy cauſe, nor a regiſter to record it, nor a Judge to wreſt it. But here they made a ſport of Juſtice, and like the Juglers play'd *legierdemaine* with me. They puniſht me as an unmannerly man of my tongue, a lyar, and a lewd companion. I had ſpent my moneys, loſt my goods, put in priſon, gyves clapt on my legs, treated with evil language, upbraiding me with many foul and uncivil reproches, unworthy my perſon, without ſuffering me to open my mouth in mine own defence. And when I would have anſwered their objections, and given them ſatisfaction by writing, when they ſaw how the vvorld went with me, my Proctor forſook me, my Solicitour would not come at me, my Advocate refuſed to plead for me, ſo that I onely now remained in the power of the publick Notary. The onely comfort that I had, was the general voyce of my wrong, comforting me, that that terrible and fearfull day would one day come, that the powerfull ſhall for all his power, be condemned to Hell, & that there, your *potentes, potenter puniemur*, your mighty men ſhall be mightily puniſhed, for that they are accurſed of God for preverting of Juſtice. And that which he ſhall leave

behinde him, ſhall not continue to the third Heir, though he tye his Land never ſo faſt, nor make never ſo ſtrong a conveyance, that it ſhall not go from the houſe: For he cannot (though he would never ſo fain) tye the inclinations of thoſe that are to ſucceed him; nor is there any prevention that he can uſe, of that force as the leaſt Hair of his head, to make any reſiſtance againſt Gods divine will and pleaſure. And it is to be believed as an Article of thy Faith, that their Lands and Eſtates muſt be ſpent and conſumed, for that they are the grindings of the face of the poor, ungodly gain, the bloud of the innocent, gotten in rage, and maintained with lyes.

But thou wilt ſay unto me; truſt them with ſo much more till that day come, and you ſhall ſee whether they will make any bones of either taking the one, or thinking on the other. Whereunto I anſwer, that how ſlight a reckoning ſoever thou makeſt of it, and that it ſeems ſo long a day to thee that it will never come, I do not know what theſe kinde of men may think of it; but I know very well that it will come, and that quickly, and ſooner perhaps than thou art aware. And then it ſhall ſeem ſo ſhort unto thee, that thou wilt ſay; I am but newly come forth with my feet from out my bed, and the night is already come, and I muſt ſhut up my eyes in darkneſſe.

But perhaps thou wilt reply unto me; I pray how cameſt thou by ſo many good ſuits of Cloaths, ſo much money, and other things of value? Thou didſt not get them by the ſpade, nor the plough, thou didſt not digge nor delve for them. What didſt thou make in that ſtreet, upon that occaſion and accident you wot off, when you ſerved your Maſter the French Ambaſſadour? Is this (quoth I) the rod, you ſeek to beat me withall? Thou art caught in thine own trap; thine own words do condemne thee. For thou would'ſt liken theſe goods of mine, to thoſe that are gotten by lewd women, whereas thou doſt not, but oughteſt to underſtand that their gain is lawfull, though the act be unlawfull; and thou art in conſcience bound to recompence her, if thou haſt had thy deſire of her, and didſt make uſe of her for thine own intereſt. Beſides, the caſe is not alike. For it is publickly known to all the world; that though a corrupt Judge commit never ſo many miſchiefs, never ſo unjuſtly put men to death, never ſo wrongfully rob a man of his goods, and undo him by his partial and corrupt dealing, thou ſhalt have little, or no remedy againſt him, nor canſt thou take that from him, which he hath ſtoln from others. For thou art not his competent Judge, nor of that power as to adjudge againſt his will that to others, which he hath taken from them. For though it be true, that he is culpable therein towards others; thou ſhalt be ſure to be found culpable towards him. And howſoever he ſcape, thou ſhalt be ſure to ſmart for it. Believe me, I tell thee what is true; nay, I tell thee truth it ſelf; truth upon truth.

But what good does this do me? My name is *Pero Garzia*. I am a kinde of *Tom-Tell-Troth*. A free *Aruntius*, that muſt utter my minde plainly, though perhaps I may chance to ſmart for it. If we ſhould all ſtrive to bear truth, and to make ſatisfaction for thoſe wrongs we have done, we ſhould ſee the Hoſpitals to be quickly fill'd. And now in good ſooth, I bethink my ſelf, that it is better to enter into Heaven with one eye, then into Hell with two. And that S. *Bartholmew* had rather have his skin pull'd over his ears, then to ſleep (as they ſay) in a whole skin, and go therewith to eternal torment. And that S. *Lawrence* made the better choiſe, when he choſe rather to be burned here then there. But (alas) we cannot be all S. *Bartholmews*, nor S. *Lawrences*, ſo as we be ſaved, that is ſufficient. For mine own part, I ſhould be glad of the like good fortune. For he ſhall perform no ſmall piece of work, that ſhall work out his ſalvation. But to be ſaved, many things are required. And it ſhall be impoſſible for thee to be ſaved, by keeping thoſe goods in thy hands which thou haſt ſtoln, when as thou art able (if thou wilt) to make reſtitution, which thou art loath to do, or doſt not at all, that thou mayeſt leave it to thy Heirs, diſinheriting thoſe, that are the true owners thereof: And therefore do not thou ſeek to trouble either thy ſelf, or us, to excuſe thoſe thy Robberies and unjuſt actions by cunning ſhifts, to cozzen thine own Soul, and by leſſening and mincing of them, as though they were matters of nothing, and therefore need not much to trouble thy conſcience; this that I deliver unto thee is the Catholick Faith; and thoſe other thy tricks and devices, the ſleights and ſubtleties of Satan. Miſerable, and moſt wretched is that man, who for the maintaining of his pride and pomp in the world, and that he may leave either his Children, or his Nephews great Titles, and rich revenues, hath heaped up riches by indirect means, and hath filled his houſe up to the top with ill gotten gain, contenting himſelf, ſo as he may leave a name here behinde him upon earth, to leave his Soul, to like there aſleep for ever in Hell. Theſe (I aſſure you) are no jeſting mat-

ters,

ters, they are not to be jested withall; for ere long thou (to thine own coſt) ſhall finde that to be true, which I now tell thee. I call thee thine own ſelf, to be a witneſſe of that which I have ſaid; I deſire no other. And let me tell thee withall; That thou thy ſelf doeſt doth not know when thy dayes ſhall have an end, or whether thou ſhalt have ſo much time of life lent thee, as to read out theſe good leſſons, which I read unto thee, howſoever fooliſh they may ſeem unto thee. But in that other vvorld thou wilt be of another minde. Nor do not thou flatter thy ſelf. That thou haſt built ſuch a Chappel, and maintaineſt ſo many Chaplains to pray for thy Soul, but at mine and other mens coſt, ſtripping one of his Coat, another of his Cloak, whereunto thou haſt no right in the vvorld. For Maſſes (though Saint *Gregory* himſelf ſhould ſay them) cannot benefit the damned, there is no redemption when the ſentence is once paſt.

O good God! When ſhall I make an end of troubling thee with theſe, and the like diſcourſes? For I know thou doeſt not look for theſe Sermons from me, nor any other kinde of wholeſome Doctrine, but expecteſt onely ſuch things as may ſerve to entertain the time, or to bring thee aſleep. I do not know how to excuſe this terrible temptation, that I have to talk in this faſhion, ſave by telling thee, that it is with me, as it is with drunkards, who no ſooner get a penny, but they go and ſpend it at the Tavern.

There is not any ſhavings of Metal, Stone, or Wood, that I can meet withall, good, or bad, one amongſt another, but that I ſeek to make ſome uſe of it, and ſtudy to ſerve my ſelf with it, onely that I may the better ſerve thee. And if that which I have ſaid, ſeem unto thee to be well ſaid, it is well that I have ſaid: but if it ſeem ill unto thee, read it not over any more, nor go therein a jot farther. For it is all mountainous matter, rough and craggy, wherein perhaps, thou ſhalt meet with more pain, than profit, yet do thou but write the like, and I ſhall patiently endure whatſoever thou ſhalt ſay. But I will conclude this Chapter with telling thee; that when miſfortune ſhall follow a man, no diligence, nor good counſel ſhall avail him, but ſhall, where he thinks to gather vvool, go away with his fleece ſhorn.

## Chapter III.

Guzman de Alfarache *diſcourſeth on the injuſtice which ſome Judges do, blinded by gain, or by paſſion.*



Came out of priſon, as out of priſon. I need not to indear it more unto you. For, the leaſt I can ſay of it, is; That it is a true and lively picture of Hell it ſelf. I got forth out of a deſire that I had to enjoy my former liberty; and had I not (think you) great cauſe to deſire it? For he, whom they had ſo unjuſtly bereaved of it, had good cauſe to fear greater dangers enſuing. For if ſo juſt and ſo fair a buſineſſe, as this was, did fadge ſo ill with me at the firſt, and that my Adverſary had the better of the day of me, when I thought my ſelf ſureſt of the victory; I might very well, and with a great deal of reaſon perſwade my ſelf, that in negotiating the reſt, I ſhould finde much difficulty. Perhaps theſe men think that God ſleepeth. But do not withall conſider, that even thoſe, who had no knowledge of him, both did, and do fear him.

*Æſope* asking *Chilo*, what God did: How he ſpent his time: And in what he did buſie & imploy himſelf: Told him; in exalting the humble, and in bringing down the proud. I am a ſinfull man, a lewd liver, and a naughty fellow; and ſithence they did inflict puniſhment upon me, ſure I muſt be in ſome fault. For it is not to be ſuppoſed, that an honorable Judge, one that profeſſes knowledge, and holineſſe of life, will be won either by favour, by gifts, or by fear, to pervert the courſe of Juſtice, or to lay ſo heavy a burthen on his tender conſcience. Eſpecially, conſidering with themſelves, That every man ſhall be rewarded according to his works. But let them go as they are. For the Judges of the earth muſt be judged; and therefore I will not judge them, nor grinde them any more with this ſtone. I had now been taught experience to my coſt, and ſufficiently beaten with mine own rod, inſomuch that having been once ſcalded with hot water, I was now afraid of cold. That from that day forward, I would neither paſſe by the *Torrons*, which was the place of Juſtice, nor by the priſon, nor ſcarce come within four ſtreets where they were. Not ſo much for my

imprisonment, but for the wrong I received therein, contrary to all Law, and reason. I did not see a hackney-man with a wand in his hand, nor a Carrier with a Cudgel under his arm, but I presently thought upon the *Vare*, or rod of Justice. Ever after I resolved with my self, rather to sit down with losse, than to go to tryal of Law; at least to use all the means that I could to the contrary, till I saw there was no other remedy, being compelled thereunto rather by force than necessity. The reason moving me thereunto, is that counsel which I gave another in the time of my imprisonment.

There was a certain fellow brought to prison, for that he had bought a mandilion, which they said, was stolne, the owner whereof was my very good friend. Who told me, that albeit he knew, that the party imprisoned, was a person not to be suspected to be consenting to any such base kinde of pilfrings, yet at least, he would make him, to bring forth him, that sold it him; for when that mandillion was stolen, he lost many other things with it, and therefore, though he might have his mandillion restored unto him, he would not rest so contented, but would either lose it, or recover the rest.

I told him; Sir, you are my friend; The Law is costly, and therefore let me advise you not to enter into it; you are fairly offered, and therefore (if you be wise) take your mandillion, lest you spend your Cloak, to recover your Coat; you will get nothing in the end by the bargain; Cloak, and Coat, and whatsoever else you pretend, will go all away in fees, so that the Lawyer at last will have all, and your self nothing. He would not be ruled, and being (as all self-will'd men are) strongly wedded to his own opinion, he flatly told me he would go to a tryal with him, and see what would come of it. For he assured himself, that he had a great deal of reason on his side, and that his Proctor, and his Advocate had told him, that he needed not to doubt of his cause, and that it would surely passe on his side. In conclusion, he had spent some fifteen dayes in following the sute against him; in all which time there was no fault to be found against the prisoner; but proved himself in the end to be an honest man; whereupon he was presently freed out of prison, my friend perceiving at length, how he had play'd the fool, repented himself of the lost time and charges, which he had spent in the sute. So that he was forced to sell his Cloak, and was yet never a whit nearer the recovery of his mandillion; and I doubt not, but the Lawyers stript him to the very shirt, before they had done with him.

Let those therefore, that can excuse it, leave off to go to Law; for your Law-sutes are like unto your Mats; whereunto, they that make them, go adding one by one, rush to rush, and never make an end, till they cut them off, or clean rid their hands of them.

Law-sutes belong properly to great persons, and for great and important causes; for they have wherewithall to hold plea, and are able to maintain it. To these, the doors are set wide open, they are usher'd in by the Officers of the Court, all shew respect unto them; and if they spend their money, they have money to spend. But as for thee, and me, we must for the recovering of five Royals, spend fifteen, and lose a hundred more in the losse of our time, besides a thousand troubles, and as many enemies, which we shall get thereby. And worse will it go with us, if we chance to go to Law with one that is mightier than our selves; for, that a poor man should go to Law with a rich man, all is one, as if he should offer to wrestle and trie his strength with a Lyon, or a Bear. It is true, some such there have been, that have given them the foyl, and sometimes quite overthrown them, but this hath seldom happened, and when it doth, it is held so strange a thing, that it is accounted as a wonder, or some rare miracle. Those jests are unsavoury, that turn to a mans hurt. It is no sporting with edge tools. Dost thou not see, and know, that these kinde of men, will make the Sun to shine at midnight? And that they cast out Devils in the name of *Belzebub*? But as for us poor Souls, *La lochona, nos pare gozques*; All things go crosse with us; especially, in causes Criminal, where the streets of Justice is of that great bredth and length, where the Judge may easily winde himself, whither, or which way he will, go on this, or that side of the street, or to keep the middle way, as he himself shall have most minde to. He can either lengthen, or shorten his arm, and reach out his hand, either to help thee, or to hurt thee, according as it shall have a feeling of the businesse.

And therefore, to him that will not wilfully cast himself away, but desires to have a fair end of his businesse, my advice is, That he guild the Judges books, & present the publick Notary with a silver pen; So may he quietly lay himself down to sleep, and take no farther thought for the matter, nor stand in need of *Doctor*, or *Proctor*, to plead and solicity his cause. If that course were taken in many Cities of *Italy*, which is used in divers other Provinces; yea, also among the very Barbarians, with whom, when any one is absolved, or condemned,

the Judge ſets down in his ſentence under his own hand, the cauſe that moved him to give ſuch ſentence, and upon what grounds he did it; ſurely, there would a great deal leſſe evil come of it; for, if he could ſhow good reaſon for that which he did, he need not be aſhamed who ſees it, and the party thereby, whom it concerneth, ſhall remain well ſatisfied; But in caſe he ſhall not have proceeded therein according unto Law, but hath dealt unjuſtly in ſentencing the buſineſſe, ſome other ſuperiour Judge ſhall be appointed to rectifie that wrong, and to amend the others errour. And I knew a Judge my ſelf, to whom a Merchant paid a round ſumme to have him paſſe a ſentence on his ſide, thinking thereby ſo to affright the adverſe party, that deſpairing of any hope of good in his ſute, he might draw him to what compoſition it pleaſed him: Which a particular friend of his underſtanding, came unto the Judge, and told him; I wonder, Sir, how you could ſentence this cauſe in this manner, being ſo contrary, as it is to all Law and reaſon. To whom, the Judge anſwered, That is made no great matter. For he was but a ſubalternal Judge, and that there were other Judges, that were his Superiours, who might (if they would) reverſe that ſentence, nor ſhould the other loſe any thing at all by that, which he had given againſt him.

Such kinde of men as theſe, will not ſtand much upon committing theſe and the like errours, nor examine themſelves, whether they do well, or ill in it; for with them it is not accounted a fault, though it may truely be called *Error de præſenti*, an error in the *Indicative Moode*, a moſt foul fault: for in ſo doing, he doth rather deceive then judge. But in my poor opinion, he is a fool, that may, and will not ſhun Law-ſutes; and in good Philoſophy, *Minus eſt damnum unum ſufferre, quam multos*; It is leſſe harm, to ſuffer at one then many mens hands. When thy adverſary does thee an injury, it is one alone, that does it; and by him onely doſt thou ſuffer. But if thou go about to revenge it, go which, or what way ſoever thou wilt to work, thou leap'ſt (as we ſay) out of the frying-pan into the fire; and ſeeking to avoid one inconvenience, thou runn'ſt headlong into another; nay, into many, one upon the neck of another. Wilt thou ſee the truth of this? I will ſhow thee the way then, wherein thou muſt walk.

Firſt of all; Thou mayeſt chance to light upon an *Alguzail* (who is a common Catchpole, or Apprehender of mens perſons) a fellow, that hath neither Soul, nor ſhame, who but the other day, was a *Tavernero*, a ſeller of wine, as his father was before him, though haply now they keep no ſhop. And if the father were a Thief from the beginning, the ſon is now the greater of the two. Who either bought that *Vare*, which he bears, to finde him meat to put in his mouth; or elſe hath hired it of another, as a man doth a Mule; He is ſuch a kinde of poor, yet unſatiable creature, that he muſt either ſteal, or ſtarve; and doth therefore ſteal, that he may ſatisfie his hungry maw. And under pretence that he is the Kings Officer, and carries the Kings white wand, or *Vare* in his hand, throating it out, whereſoever he comes, *Alguazil ſoy traygo la vara del Rey*, I am an *Alguazil*, and carry the Kings ſtaff: he neither fears the King, nor keeps his Laws, but both againſt the King, againſt God, and againſt all Law, will he offer thee a hundred exceſſes, a hundred indignities, both in deeds and in words, that he may move thy patience ſo far, as to make thee ready to run out into reſiſtance of Juſtice (which is the trap he ſets for thee) and bring thy offence to be criminal; and though thou didſt not make any the leaſt ſtirre, nor hadſt any ſuch meaning, yet will he enforce it againſt thee, and perſwade others (all that he can) to believe it.

I knew an *Alguazil* in *Granada*, that had two teeth, that were falſe and Counterfeit, and faſtned by art to thoſe other that he had in his head. And in a certain broyl, or quarrel that ſuddenly aroſe in the ſtreet, he coming in among them, he ſecretly puts his fingers into his mouth, and cunningly pulling them out, cauſing his gums therewithall to bleed; did not ſhame to ſay, that coming in to make peace in the Kings name, they were there beaten out. And albeit this buſineſſe did not ſucceed ſo well with him, as he could have wiſht it, nor took its intended effect, for that the truth thereof came to be known; yet did not he give it over for want of following, but uſed all the diligences he could, to poſſeſſe the Judges with this falſhood. It will lie in his hands, if thou but ſpeak a word, or wag but a finger, to prove that thou didſt give him either ill language, or blows; and then will he preſently deliver thee over to his *Corchetes*, with command to carry thee to priſon. Behold now, what an honorable calling this is, what a gentle craft, what honeſt men forſooth are theſe your *Corchetes*, your Sergeants Yeomen, infamous Villains, Traitors, Thieves, Drunkards, ſhameleſſe Raſcals; nay, impudency it ſelf. Inſomuch, that a witty *Lackay* ſaid of himſelf, when they had angred him; He that ſayes the word *Lackey*, ſayes a victualing houſe; he that ſayes the word *Lackay*, ſayes a Tavern; he that ſayes the word *Lackayl*, ſayes *Cloacam immunditia*; all the

un-

uncleanneſſe that man can imagine. And that woman, that hath taken the paines to bring forth a ſon, that proves a *Lacky*, there is not that wickednesſe in the vvorld, which may not be preſumed to have proceeded from her. So do I likewiſe ſay, that he that ſayes the word *Corchete*, (that is, Sergeant, or Sergeants Yeoman) there is not that vice, that villany, that wickednesſe, which doth not alter it ſelf in that one word. For they have neither Soul nor conſcience: and are the onely true pictures, and moſt lively images of the Miniſters of Hell. So cloſe do they cling unto thee, when thou fall'ſt into their clutches; and if they do not drag thee by the collar, haling and tugging thee as if they would pull out thy Throat, (which thou muſt acknowledge for a great and ſingular courteſie) yet at the leaſt ſhalt thou be ſo baſely uſed by them, that the Eagle will carry away the fearfull Hare with a great deal more clemency and mercy in their ſharp tallons, than theſe Hell-hounds will thee. They will punch thee, and kick thee, and elbow-beat thy back if thou go not forwards as they would have thee, and will revile thee with ſuch baſe and bitter terms, as if thou wert as bad as they: And for no other cauſe in the vvorld do they uſe thee thus ſcurvily and uncivilly, ſave onely to pleaſe their Maſter, who they know likes well enough of it; as alſo for that it is a butcherly and beaſtly cuſtom that they have long kept, and therefore either cannot, or are loath to leave it. Deeming themſelves, both then, and at all times to be the onely Lords and Maſters of the vvorld, not conſidering in the mean while, that neither he, nor they, have any farther power, than to put thee in ſafe cuſtody, and that without offering thee any the leaſt wrong, or injury in leading thee thither.

Juſt after this manner as I have told thee, will they violently (though thou be never ſo willing to go quietly along with them) thruſt thee this way, and that way, never leaving off to trouble and torment thee, till they have brought thee to priſon. Now, will you that I ſhall tell you, what manner of houſe this is, what the uſage, what you are there to endure, and what kinde of life you muſt lead there? you ſhall meet with it hereafter in its proper place; let it ſuffice for the preſent, that if it ſhall one day be thy hap to come thither, (which God forbid) after that they have treated thee ill upon the way in bringing thee thither, and peradventure pickt either thy purſe, or thy pocket, and robb'd thee of ſuch moneys as thou hadſt about thee, they will put thee into the hands of ſome churliſh Jaylor, or ſome under-keeper of his, (as dogged a Rogue as his Maſter) who as if thou wert his ſlave, will accommodate thee in that ill favoured filthy manner, as he himſelf ſhall think fit, nor canſt thou hope for better, unleſſe thou come off lively, and pay well for it. Be it better, or be it worſe, thou muſt take all patiently, and pocket it with ſilence; for thou art in his houſe, not in thine own, and in another bodies power, *&c.* There, neither bravings, nor threatning, great words, nor bigge looks, will ſtead thee any thing at all; for they are ſuch bug-bears themſelves, that they awe all, but fear none.

Then will they bring thee before the *Alcayde*, or his Deputy, or ſome ſuch like imperious officer or other, before whom thou muſt be fain to come with cap in hand, crowching & creeping unto him, ſtudying new inventions of doing reverence and reſpect unto him; making new kinde of legs, and other unaccuſtomed courteſies and congies unto him; though I count this no ſuch great matter, being rather more troubleſome, than hurtfull. For I muſt truely confeſſe unto you, that there are ſome *Alcaydes*, that carry themſelves as fathers towards thoſe that are brought before them; and for mine own part, I ever found them ſo towards me, ſo that I cannot juſtly complain of them. True it is, they will live by their Offices, as other men do; they have no other means to maintain them, it is the trade, whereunto they muſt truſt. Beſides, they come not *gratis* to theſe places of government. If they will come by them they muſt buy them. Wherefore they do thee a great favour, if they do thee juſtice; if by their means thou come to recover ſome own, and if they give way to thee, either to eſcape with life, or to ſuſtain it, or quietly to order thine own houſe, or to live ſetled in thine own eſtate without diſturbance, or to defend and make good thy plea. But in fine he is thy *Alcayde*, he that muſt judge and cenſure, either thee, or thy cauſe. He may, or may not, wiſh thee well; He hath the Law in his own hands; thy liberty, or impriſonment lies in his power. Well, when thou com'ſt to follow thy cauſe, thou muſt go adoring thy Proctor, or thy Lawyer; but bear this in minde too, I pray, that I now ſay unto thee, that I ſay nothing of him; for that hath its *When*, and its *Where*, its time, and its place, as your *Savalo*-pyes for the holy week; its week muſt come to, when it ſhall be beſt in ſeaſon.

In brief, that I may not trouble my ſelf twice with one ſubject, and one and the ſelf-ſame kinde of people; I plainly tell thee, that they will be thy maſters, and that thou muſt ſuffer them and bear with them, and not onely be a ſlave unto thy Lawyer, but to the Solicitour, the

the Notarie, the Maſter of the Office, the Clerk of the Pleas, the keeper of the papers, and the boy that is to go with the Plea to thy Lawyer. But in caſe, thou go home to his houſe, or his office thy ſelf, and thou finde him retired into his Chamber, or ſome other private with-drawing room, diſpatching of others, and thou ſtand waiting, looking ſtill when it will come to thy turn to be called in: like thoſe, that ſtanding on the bank of a River, expect a boat to come over unto them from the other ſide, thou wilt be ſo tired out with knocking thy heels againſt a forme, that thou wouldeſt rather ſtay the comming forth of ſome furious Bull, than of him. After all this, when thon haſt made a large relation of the whole buſineſſe unto him, and how the caſe ſtands, he will tell thee, that he vvill burn his books, and give over the Law, if thy buſineſſe go not with thee. This is their common language towards all their Clients; but they neither ſatisfie their expectation, nor perform their own promiſe; for I never ſaw any of them, when their cauſes miſcarried, either burn their books, or leave their practice. And will have one thing or other to excuſe themſelves: As that the buſineſſe was not well followed, that diligence was not uſed therein, which ſhould have been, or that it was his Clerks fault, and none of his, who was out of the way, when his buſineſſe was to be done, being either gone, at that very inſtant, with his children to School, or to wait on his Miſtris to Church, by whoſe default the opportunity was loſt of drawing the Petition. Your Advocate hath ſome ſmack of the Law, but little of learning. He dictates, but does not write; and the reaſon is, becauſe they take them too ſoon from School, that they may with as little loſſe of time as they can, apply them to theſe ſtudies, whether that they were ſent thither ſomewhat of the lateſt by their friends, being kept too long from School at firſt; or whether out of a covetous deſire that they had, to have them fall preſently upon the *Digeſts*, leaving the Principles indigeſted. As if good writing ſhould not preſuppoſe good reading; and good reading and good writing together beget good Orthography, and bring forth at laſt a good Latine tongue, which like links that belong to one chain, ought both to be learned, and joyned together.

But of this enough: Let us now paſſe on to ſome other Theam. For here we do but eat out our cloaks, and ſpend our time to little purpoſe, and leſſe profit. Let us come to our ordinary Judge, of whom I have ſaid ſomething unto you already, nor know I well, what I ſhould ſay more, ſave that he makes open ſale of *Juſtice*, hucking with you to bring you up to their price, & if you refuſe to give them what they require of you, they will plainly tell you, you ſhall look for no Juſtice from them; for it is worth more than they ask, & that ſuch an one that ſtands there by thee, paid a great deal more for it than he now demands of thee. But ſay thou ſhould appeal, and come to ſome ſuperiour Judge, which ſeldome happeneth, in regard the fiſh dies here firſt, or is at leaſt ſo ſtarv'd in this ſhallow brook, before it can recover that ſea, that it comes thither without any Spawn, poor and unprofitable. Thy money is all gone, thou art needy, and not able to wage Law, for want of means; There thou ſhalt not find thoſe private intereſts and particular profits which they make to themſelves: but thou ſhalt meet perhaps with paſſions, which ſometimes prove as bad. And as their purſes have not paid for thy breeding, ſo what care they whether thou be whipt or hang'd. Six years, more or leſſe, for vvhich term thou art condemned to the Galleys, what is it to them? It hurts not them; They are not ſenſible of it; they feel not that which thou feeleſt; nor ſuffer that which thou ſuffereſt. Theſe, I tell thee, are the gods upon earth, they go to their goodly houſes, where they are well attended; they paſſe through the ſtreets, where they are honoured, and adored, and feared of the people. What care then canſt thou think, or conceive with thy ſelf, that they ſhould take of ſuch a poor ſoul as thou art; *It* is in their hands, to ſave thee, or condemn thee; and ſo they will deal with thee, as their own paſſions ſhall incline them to thy good, and hurt; or as ſome great and powerful friends ſhall perſwade with them.

I knew a certain Judge in *Sevil*, who condemned a fellow *in pœna pecuniaria*, to pay ſuch a ſum of money by way of mulct for his offence that he had committed; out of which he awarded two hundred ducats to be paid into the Chamber of *Sevil*, by way of fine: with this command or *proviſo* in the ſentence; That not being able to pay in the ſaid ſumme, he ſhould be ſent to ſerve in the Galleys for ten years, and to rowe at the Oar like a ſlave, of free coſt, without receiving one peny of pay. And when the term of thoſe his ten years were expired, he ſhould be brought back again to priſon to the ſaid City of *Sevil*, and from thence to the Market-place, where he was to be hanged on the common gallowes.

Had it been my caſe, before I would have given ſuch a fooliſh ſentence, I ſhould rather have ordered it thus. That he ſhould have been hang'd firſt, and afterwards ſent unto the

Galleys: ſure the cart (in this caſe) ſhould have gone before the horſe. Jumping for all the world with that which was ſaid to an ignorant and unskilful Painter, who talking one day in company, that ere long he would white his houſe, and afterwards paint it; nay, ſaid one of the ſtanders by, you ſhall do much better if you paint it firſt, and white it afterwards.

There are ſome Judges, whoſe tongues ſo out-run their diſcretion, that whatſoever comes firſt to mouth, it muſt out, nay, and muſt ſtand for good, though his own judgement upon its better conſideration chide his tongue for being too forward. And if he that is Aſſeſſor with him, is joyned as his fellow-Judge in Commiſſion with him, ſhall take upon him to moderate the matter, and ſeem but the leaſt way to croſſe what he hath done, or ſhall but abate the leaſt tittle of what he hath decreed, or in any manner at all to mitigate the rigour of his ſentence, it is as if you ſhould take a thing from the Altar; ſo ſacred, do theſe unhallowed Judges hold their own actions; Taking it as an indignity not to be indured. Look well into the buſineſſe then, and conſider with thy ſelf, how much the leſſer evil it is of the two, that he that hath offended thee ſhould go away with this his inſolencie, and thou thereby remain free from ſome great inconveniency. Which thou oughteſt to permit, not onely (as hath been ſaid before) that thou maieſt not be ſubject to ſo many; but alſo that thou maieſt not hurt thy ſelf, by putting thy houſe out of order, and (by conſequence) thy honour and perſon in peril, as alſo that of thy wife, thy children, and thy whole eſtate.

But perhaps thou wilt ſay unto me: O, it is not fit, that this Villain, that hath thus wronged me, ſhould carry it away ſo, and laugh at me when he has done. I confeſſe it is not fit, nor is there any reaſon, why it ſhould be ſo: yet if thou muſt needs be laught at, it were better but one ſhould laugh at thee, than many. For if thou wilt not hold thy peace, and ſeem not to be moved at it, but to let it paſſe, and take no notice thereof, onely he can laugh at thee in his ſleeve that hath done thee this wrong; but if thou ſeek to right thy ſelf by Law, and be afterwards overthrown, thouſands will laugh at thee, that thou ſhouldeſt be ſuch a fool, to caſt away thy money ſo wilfully amongſt the Lawyers, having bought nothing therewith but meer ſmoak, and a little of their unprofitable breath; and that Lawyer will ſcoff and deride thee moſt, that hath put thee in moſt hope, becauſe by that means he hath moſt pickt thy purſe.

Well, you will ſay, it may be ſo, I care not for all this: Let the worſt come that can come, there are many Churches to flie unto for ſhelter, and the World is wide enough for us all. Tell me, thou ignorant man, thinkeſt thou to excuſe one fault with another? Suppoſe the beſt that can befal thee in this caſe, it is no more but *temporis dilatio*, a little gaining of time. Neither there (no not in the Church) wilt thou be able to indure either the Prieſt, or his Curate, or that worſhipful maſter his Sexton. And what thinkeſt thou that thou muſt ſuffer, that they may bear with thee, and give thee leave to ſtay amongſt them? Think'ſt thou, there is no more in it than ſo, to ſay, I will go to ſome Church or other, and there take Sanctuary? Thou wilt meet with more troubles there than thou art aware. This incommodate accomodating of thy ſelf will coſt thee money, nor canſt thou continue there for ever. Thinkeſt thou it ſo ſmall an inconveniencie, to leave thine own home, and ſo to go ſeek thy fortune in forraign Countreys? If haply thou be a *Spaniard* (as I my ſelf am) whereſoever thou ſhalt come, thou art ſure to be an unwelcome gueſt, thou ſhalt be ill received amongſt them, how fair a ſhow ſoever they make thee; for we have this advantage of all other nations in the world, that we are more abhorred in all places, and of all perſons, than any other people under the Sun; but whoſe fault it is, I know not. Thou goeſt wandring through deſarts, from Inne to Inne, from a private lodging to a common Victualling-houſe. Think'ſt thou, that they are all honeſt people, that have for their Patron the good King, *Don Alfonſo*? Inne-keepers and Victuallers, thou knoweſt not (poor ſilly ſoul) what kind of vermin they are, and therefore thou ſetteſt ſo light by them, and ſeekeſt not to flie from them.

Laſtly, thou ſhalt indure many inconveniencies in theſe thy travels abroad; ſuffering heats and colds, wind and rain, bad weather and bad wayes, and with it the diſtaſtful company of divers diſtinct Nations; one while it rains, another while it ſnows, the rivers riſe, and thou canſt not paſſe, night is neer, and thy Inne far off, it grows dark as pitch, and the clouds furiouſly diſcharge upon thee their lightening and thunder; and for that thou art of an impatient ſpirit, thou hadſt rather die a thouſand deaths than indure it.

Go to then, go thy wayes at laſt, leave off theſe thy idle thoughts of going to Law; ſit down rather with loſſe, and live in peace. For it is better that the world ſhould ſay of thee, that thou art a patient wiſe man, than a revengeful fool. What have they either done, or ſaid unto thee, that thou keepeſt ſuch a coil, and that no man was ever ſo wrong'd, as thou art? If

that

that be true, which they have ſpoken of thee, it is thou that haſt given them cauſe ſo to do: and if they lye, a lye is a lye, and he that lyes let him go like a lyar as he is. And therefore he did not thee ſo much wrong as himſelf, nor haſt thou any reaſon to be revenged on another by indangering thy ſelf. Neglect him, and let him go for a knave as he is; for thou canſt not take a fuller reuenge of him, nor puniſh him more than to let him paſſe for an idle fool, and follow thine own buſineſſe. I have ſpoken enough of this, think upon it, it may make much for thy good, if thou wilt well weigh what I have ſaid unto thee. But I muſt return again into my old way, and now I am entring into it.

## Chapter VI.

Guzman de Alfarache *being freed out of priſon, falls to gaming, gets money: whereupon he reſolves with himſelf to go to* Mallayne.



Came out of priſon, and got me to my lodging, being as ſad & melancholy as I was poor and miſerable: ſaying to *Sayavedra*, what doeſt thou think of the good market that we have made in this fair? We may make merry with the gains we have got, this will ſerve for once to keep us out of beggery, we need no money now, let us ſpend and be lively. Conſider now I pray with your ſelf, upon what a ſure ground they goe, who ſeek to recover their own by Law. He told me, Sir, I ſee how things are carried, for I have been an eye-witneſſe of all that hath paſt; but what remedy is there to be had againſt the paſſions and private intereſts of Judges, and the force and power of the potent? But that which toucheth me neereſt, and grieves me moſt, is, That you will find fault with me, and be offended with me, that I have been the inſtrument of this your wrong, and more particularly at this preſent by that counſel and adviſe, which I gave you, to recover your goods. Which though it were done all for the beſt, hath unfortunately fallen out to the worſt. *Sed homo proponit, & Deus diſponit.* Man purpoſeth one thing, and God diſpoſeth another. Who would ever have dreamt, that things would have fallen out as they do? What ſhould one ſay unto it? There is now no help for it. For as a man cannot avoid the ſtone, which a fool throws by chance over an houſe, and kills him therewith: So, much leſſe was it to be imagined, or once to be ſuſpected by us, that ſuch a buſineſſe as this, ſo fair and ſo full of truth, ſhould prove ſo diſ-proportionable, and ſo quite oppoſite to our underſtanding.

Whileſt we were thus talking of this matter, there comes me a couple of gueſts that were ſtrangers into the Inne, challenged by a young man of that City, to play at Cards. And in a little ſquare room, that divided their chamber from mine, they had ſet up a table, and to play they go. Now I walking up and down that way, in my paſſing to and fro, ſeeing what paſt among them, I was deſirous (for to entertain the time, and to drive away melancholy) to draw neerer unto them, and to look upon them. I did ſo, and pulling a ſtool unto me, taking that which came firſt to hand, I ſate me down, viewing one of their hands for the ſpace of ſome two hours, or more, in all which time there was little or nothing loſt on either part. The money went to and fro; loſing one while and getting another; fortune had ſhow'd her ſelf ſo equal, that ſhe had made them in a manner all ſavers; what was won, was not worth the ſpeaking of, there being no difference to be diſcerned in that they had drawn before they began. Every man entertained himſelf with his own money which he drew at firſt, expecting a lucky pull, whileſt I in the mean while had a ſhrewder pull in mine own boſome. They had not that griping themſelves, yet they cauſe it in me, without any other why or wherefore, ſave onely by looking on his cards, by whom I ſate, when either he loſt through want of good carding, or well playing of his game.

O what a ſtrange nature are we made of, which I ſpeak not onely of my ſelf, but of all in general; for not any one of thoſe men being known unto me, or having ever ſeen them before in my life, (for this was the firſt flight I had made of coming abroad ſince the time of my impriſonment) having never converſed with them heretofore, being all alike ſtrangers unto me, yet me thought I was joyed, and was glad with all my heart, when he did with my affection inclining to have fortune ſhow her ſelf more favourable unto him than the reſt; and on the contrary was ſorry, when I ſaw her loſt. See what a kind of ſin this was in me; how unprofitable to my ſelf? how foolish & to no purpoſe, to deſire that the other two might loſe, that he might riſe the winner, & go away with their mony, as if my

ſelf had been intereſſed therein, or as if they had got it from me, or were bound to let me have it.

O, what an indiſcretion, what an ignorance is it, to lay other mens burthens on our ſhoulders; which are neither of moment in themſelves, nor of any benefit unto us! One ſtands peeping out at his window, and another with his head half out at his door, watching onely to ſee, who went out of his neighbours houſe before day, who came in at midnight, what they brought in, and what they carried out, led onely thereunto out of an idle and needleſſe curioſity; by reaſon vvhereof they run into a thouſand ſuſpicions, a thouſand jealouſies of ſuch things, which never vvere, nor could be, much leſſe to be gathered from them, or any way in the world to be imagined by them. Brother or Siſter, vvho ere thou be, get thee gone, leave off thy prying into others actions, God help us all; thou doeſt not knovv, vvhether ſuch an one ſinneth, or not ſinneth; whether he doth this or that other thing, or doth it not: and it may be, that he doth not ſin, but I am ſure that thou doeſt ſin, in doing as thou doſt. Tell me, vvhat doth his death, or his life, his going in, or his coming out concern thee? What good doſt thou get by it, or vvhat reward do they give thee for that thy nights vvatching, ſo ill beſtovved on thy ſelf and others? What honour ſhalt thou reap by his diſhonour? What contentment canſt thou take therein? Say, by this diligence of thine, thou maieſt haply have occaſion to do him ſome friendly office, and beſtead him in time of need. It may be ſo. But this is ſo contrary a thing to men of ſuch baſe condition, that I aſſure my ſelf; nay, I dare ſeal it with an oath, that thou wouldeſt not do it.

If thy neighbour, fearing ſome theeves would come that night to rob him, ſhould ſpeak to thee to take the pains to ſit up, and watch his houſe for him, and ſhould very earneſtly intreat thee ſo to do, tell me, and lye not, what wouldeſt thou ſay unto him? what anſwer wouldeſt thou make him? Certainly, thou wouldeſt tell him, that thou haſt enough to do to look unto thine own, that every man is bound to reſpect himſelf firſt; and that thou wilt not ſtand freezing in the cold, nor indanger thine own health for to benefit another. How comes it then to paſſe, that to do thy neighbour a good turn, and to exerciſe thy charity towards him, thou wilt not watch a quarter of an hour with him; and yet, that thou maieſt bring his faults to light, and lay open his ſpots to the Sun, thou wilt thus play the fool to ſit up a whole night, to ſee if thou canſt light upon any oblique action that thou mayeſt lay in his diſh hereafter? Doſt thou not perceive by this time how ill this doth become thee? Seeſt thou not that I ſay the truth? Thou canſt not (if thou wilt but examine thy ſelf) but know that it were better for thee, and would ſtand a great deal more with thine own health, to get thee to bed betimes, and to look how things go at home in thine own houſe, and to let thoſe of thy neighbour alone. Wilt thou (to do him a deſpight) charge thine own ſoul with thoſe ſins, of which thy neighbour is free, whence his comes to be ſaved, and thine to be damned? Such an one plaies to win, and to increaſe his ſtock, and it grieves me forſooth that ſuch an one ſhould win, or ſuch an one loſe. Juſt ſo it goes, and no otherwiſe. If thou take pleaſure in looking on thoſe that game; look on (if thou canſt) without paſſion. But thou canſt not do it; for thou art, as I am; and thou wilt do, as I do. Of the two, I ſhould hold it the leſſer evil, that thou ſhouldeſt play thy ſelf, than look upon anothers game with ſuch like paſſion, for he that playes, it is well enough known, that he deſires to win; and this is a battel that is fought between two wits, or four. Thou being confident of thy good fortune, doeſt adventure thy money, at leaſt thou deſireſt that they may not carry it away from thee, thou ſeek'ſt to defend thy ſelf as well as thou canſt, and thou ſetteſt thy ſelf down to play with that credence & belief, that thou maieſt as well loſe as win; & as well get theirs, as they get thine: in this thou ſeemeſt to have ſome reaſon, and deſerveſt to be excuſed. But that onely by looking on, a man of reaſon and underſtanding, whom the buſineſſe nothing concerns, ſhould be ſo blinded with paſſion, as to be affected or diſaffected in that violent faſhion, tell me, if I do amiſſe, in ſtiling him to be a man deprived of true judgement, and [illegible]ether that I may not lawfully condemn him for it. But to return to our purpoſe, Cont[illegible]g their play, within a little while after the Sea began to ſwell, the waves grew high, and the money began to ſwim from one ſide of the boord to the other, their blood waxed hot, and their choler began to kindle, they were now at their cloſe fights, watching but advantage to boord, or ſink each other, they grapled hard for it on all ſides, and the cards likewiſe they plaid their parts, & laid about them for life, beſtirring themſelves luſtily, and gave one of them ſuch a blow on the head with his club, that he was ſtrucken over boord, and he & all his money ſunk, having loſt in that fight above an hundred Crowns

And

And this man, that had that great blow given him, was he in whoſe hand I lookt. Of whoſe loſſe I was as ſenſible, as if the caſe had been mine own; thinking with my ſelf, that I had brought him his ill luck, and that I was the inſtrument of this his bad fortune. Which did grieve me ſo much the more, for that I underſtood, that he was not worth in all the vvorld ſo much more, as he had then loſt.

Gaming ought to be uſed for two manner of ends; either for meer gain, or to entertain the time. If for gain, I ſay nothing unto it, ſave that thoſe, who bend themſelves that way, are like unto Pyrates, that put themſelves forth to Sea to purchaſe ſome prize. *Capiat qui capere poteſt:* catch, he that can catch; Let every one arm his own ſhip as well as he can, and have an eye to the bullets that flie about his ears, and thoſe other warlike weapons, which they uſe in ſuch kinde of fights. Who go ſcouring the Seas a whole year, in hope to meet with one lucky day.

They that play for entertainment, ſhould be onely ſuch, whom the Cards themſelves do mark and point out unto us; In them, ſhall we pick out ſome learning; for if we ſhall but conſider the *Kings*, the *Queens*, and the *Knaves*, that are there pictured and painted forth unto us, from the uppermoſt of all the other, to the loweſt, which is the Ace, you ſhall not finde any portraitures, or ſhapes as in the former; giving us thereby to underſtand, that none ſhould play thereat but *Kings*, *Queens*, and *Knaves*. I can aſſure you that in all the whole pack of Cards, you meet not with any Merchants, Tradeſ-men, Lawyers, nor Divines, for they are not befitting their profeſſions. The very Aces, ſpeak as much unto us; for from the *Knaves*, or rather *Sota*, which is the *Souldier*, down to the Ace, which is the leaſt and laſt Carde, thou ſhalt ſee nothing elſe but ſpots, admoniſhing us thereby, that all (except the aforeſaid) are but Aſſes, that ſhall offer to play at Cardes. And ſuch another Aſſe was this my adoptive Son, in loſing that, which perhaps was none of his own, nor had wherewith to pay, at leaſt could hardly ſpare it.

But I will not ſtrain this ſtring ſo hard, that I ſhould quite debarre men of theſe noble entertainments; for I will not call him a *gameſter*, who playes but now and then for his recreation, once, or twice, half a dozen, or half a ſcore times in a year, for this cannot hurt him much, eſpecially if he do not play out of a greedy deſire of gain, but onely ſport and paſtime. Howbeit, I hold it a thing impoſſible, that a man ſhould ſet himſelf to play, without a deſire to win, though it be but for a pin, and that he play with his wife, or his ſon. For although a man do not ſtake money (and ſo cannot be ſaid to play for covetouſneſſe of the coyn) yet the opinion of mens underſtanding and judgement lies then at ſtake, and there is no man ſo mean ſpirited, and of that weakneſſe of nature that would willingly be beaten by another, if he could otherwiſe chuſe.

This my man, I told you of, was one of the gueſts to the houſe, where I lay, the winnings were divided between his companion and the Citizens; the quarrel ceaſed for that time, and a freſh challenge was made againſt after ſupper. And ſo they brake off, the winners going each their way, as their ſeveral occaſions lay; and the loſer to look out more money. I doubt not but he uſed all the diligence he could to get more (for Gameſters ſeldom want money to game, though ſcarce ever have any to pay their debts:) but becauſe it is a maſſie kinde of metal, weighs very heavy, it ſinks down ſtill to the bottome, and is long and hard a getting up againe; he could not (it ſhould ſeem) get any money, yet he came thither, though without it; more offended with thoſe that would not lend it him, than with thoſe who had got it from him. He went walking and raging up and down the room, puffing and blowing like a Bull; all the whole Chamber was too little for him. One while he walks athwart it, another, ſtalks along from one end to the other, then again flings me from one corner to the other corner, huffing and chafing, nothing could content him, all was vexation of ſpirit, he rails upon the Citie, and upon that Traytor, that was the cauſe of his coming thither, that that was no Countrey for honeſt men to dwell in, but for Thieves and Cut-throats, being that he had in that Town, an hundred known friends, and all of them rich and well moneyed men, yet could he not borrow one Royal of them all, and began to ſwear that he would do this, and that, and I know not what, if it ſhould be his hap to meet with any of them in his own Countrey. I gave him the hearing, and held my peace. And when he went into his Chamber, I might hear him ſit down on his bed-ſide, and might from mine, hear likewiſe the blow which he gave with his fiſt upon the Table that ſtood by him.

I called *Sayavedra* aſide, and told him; Occaſion is now offered unto me, either to get out of my troubles, or to get me to an Hoſpital. And ſeeing that ſmall ſtore of money which

is remaining unto me, is not ſo much, as to ſuſtain us any long time, let us ſup well, or go to bed with a jarre of water, all is one, as good to day as to morrow, for hold out much longer we cannot. What thinkeſt thou of this? Tell me thy opinion, whether I ſhall play the fool, or the wiſe-man in doing that which I intend? Shall it not be well done, that after ſupper, when the ſame company ſhall meet again together, wantiug a third to maintain the combate, I ſhould come forth as a Challenger into the liſts, adventuring to run my Lance amongſt the reſt, putting my ſelf upon fortune, either to loſe, or win the honour of the day, by hazarding thoſe few Crowns that I have? *Sayavedra* made anſwer unto me, That I ſhould have him ever ready at hand upon all occaſions, being that he had now ſet up his reſt to do me ſervice, and that he would carefully do whatſoever I would have him, ſpake I in earneſt, or in jeſt, and were it good, or ill that I ſhould undergo, he would alwayes ſtick cloſe unto me, and be ſtill at mine elbow, to perform that which I ſhould be pleaſed to command him. Yet notwithſtanding, that upon this occaſion, I might not come off with diſhonour (for we were then driven very low, and almoſt brought to beggers buſh) it were good to ſecure the buſineſſe. Wherefore he would marſhall things in that manner, that both ſafely, and ſubtilly, he would all over the field, and evermore give me advice of my adverſaries forces, and how and where their ſtrength lay, and when I was to charge them home, as likewiſe to make my retreat; ſo that he keeping a true account of their Cardes, and the numbers wherewith they were ſo ſet upon me, it was not poſſible that I ſhould loſe. When he had ſaid thus much unto me, a man might have pull'd the skin over mine ears, and I ſhould never have felt it, for I was for very joy, ready to leap out of it my ſelf; for my ability at play, and the skill and cunning that I had in handling the Cards, being holpen by his advice, there was no doubt to be made, but that I might eaſily convert three parts of their money to mine own uſe. Saying ſecretly to my ſelf; *No ay mal, que no venga por bien*: There is no ill, which doth not turn to our good. And it may be that by this means I might recover my ſelf of thoſe loſſes which I had lately received. I did long my ſelf to have told him as much, but I did deſire this baſe action ſhould proceed rather out of his mouth, than mine. For I was willing in this to keep that *decorum* which beſeemeth a Maſter with his ſervant. For otherwiſe, if this trick ſhould have been played out of mine hand, *Sayavedra* would haply have ſaid to himſelf; See, what a fine Maſter I ſerve! I have rid my ſelf of a thief, and have lighted upon a cheater. What a Tree have I taken, whereunto to lean? Had it not been better for me to have gone and leaned againſt a wall? Yes certainly, for that would not have thus deceived me. Stay, ſtay, (*Sayavedra*) for all you were my friend, it was no part of my meaning, to open my minde unto you in that ſtrain, do you enter firſt, and you will, upon the point of my ſword, and if you have a minde to it, come on a Gods name, when you pleaſe; for I promiſe you, you ſhall firſt confeſſe your ſelf to me, before you have any confeſſion from me; I will have a pawn firſt from you, before you have any pledge from me. But when we have once unmasked our ſelves, and caſt off all diſgdiſes on every ſide, let us come off freely, deal plainly one with another, I will ſpeak what I think, and thou ſhalt ſpeak what thou think'ſt: Let us jump as well in breadth, as in length, and then there will be little odds and difference between us in the reckoning. There he and I were diſputing a great while with our ſelves, which ſigns would be beſt, whereby we might come to know both the others hands; And at laſt it was reſolved on, that the beſt manner of doing it, would be by the bottons of his jerkin, or the joynts of the fingers, according to the art of the Gammuth, when we learn firſt to ſing. And having made trial thereof ſome three, or four bouts, we grew ſo ready and ſo perfect therein, that we now underſtood one another better by theſe our tokens, than our tongues.

Now were the challengers entred the liſts, whileſt I was walking up and down there in the room with my *Roſario* in my hand, like an Hermit, my ſervant being in the mean while in my lodging. They began to talk of falling afreſh to play; whereupon, the third man told them what had paſſed, and that he could not meet with thoſe his friends that ſhould have furniſht him with money, but if they would truſt him upon his word, till the next day morning, ſee whatſoever he ſhould loſe unto them upon the ticket, he would truely pay them. The Citizen ſaid, that he ſhould be well content therewith for his part, but told him withall, there was no heart in it, and that it was a kinde of dull and tedious ſport, and that he had never any good luck, but did alwayes loſe, when he plaid upon the Ticket. But the other would by no means give way thereunto. Whereupon their gaming was at the beſt, the company was upon breaking off, and every one going his way; but when I ſaw this good converſation was upon diſſolving, leaving my Beads to keep their own reckoning,

I ſtept

I ſtept forth and ſaid unto them; Since this Gentleman doth not play, ſo as you will not play too great play, but onely for entertainment, and no more, but to paſſe away ſome part of the night, and that ſo holy a work may not be left off for want of a third, if it pleaſe you, I will put my ſelf upon the Cards, and try for awhile how well they will deal with me. The other two, were very glad of this, the motion pleaſed them paſſing well; for they took me to be ſome young Thruſh, that was new crept of the ſhell, and had not my bill grown out, and was not able to peck at any thing. Making reckoning, that all was their own, if they got me in to play, and that my money was as ſure theirs, as if they had it already in their purſe. And for that they thought, if I ſhould chance to loſe my money, I would alſo venture my Chain (which I of purpoſe diſcovered unto them by unbuttoning my jerkin) and if I were once bitten, and began to bleed, being a young man, as I was, I would not have the patience to give over, but throw the pot-hooks after the pot, and the helve after the hatchet, and loſe all, that I was able to make.

Well, we were now ſet down, and ready to go to the buſineſſe, whereupon I called for *Sayavedra*, and ſaid unto him; Go fetch me ſome money, if you have any ſilver left, bring it me quickly. He preſently drew out an hundred Royals, which I had given him before, that he might have them in readineſſe, when I called for them. He abiding awhile in my Chamber, till our play grew a little warm, and then calling him to ſnuff the Candles, I ſaid unto him, ſeeming as if I had been angry with him; Are we to be uſed thus by thee? Have you ſo much buſineſſe to do in the Chamber, or are you ſo drowſie-headed, that you cannot ſtay here in the room, if we ſhould at any time have occaſion to uſe you? He ſaid never a word, but ſtood ſtill, and held his peace, in ſo much that no man in the world would have once ſuſpected any harm from him, for he never offered ſo much as to caſt but an eye upon me, nor did he at any time remove his hand from his boſom, by which means he gave me true knowledge how their games went. And howbeit, we underſtood one another well enough, I would ſometimes of purpoſe ſeem not to underſtand him, nor would I make uſe of his wary adviſe, but when I had won two, or three hands, I took pleaſure now and then to loſe a little. I did ſuffer them now and then to draw my money; but neither much, nor often, leſt when they had me on the lift, they might have left off: I was content they ſhould touch it, but not enter upon it; and afterwards I would charge them home, that I might, having once nettled them, egge them on the more. I did skirmiſh with them in that cunning manner, that I made them ſtill come on more and more eager upon my money. But when I began to ſuſpect, that they would give over the fight, and ſound a retreat, and that they were to leave the field, and be gone, I then thought fit to purſue them to ſome purpoſe, and to follow the chaſe a little more hotly; till I ſaw them ſafe in the Net, and had them in mine hands, to do what I would with them, and then did I ſet roundly upon them and their money, bringing it all under my ſubjection in a very ſhort ſpace, few blows being ſtrucken in the battel. I had got of thoſe two, all that they had gained of the other before. Whereof they were ſo aſhamed, and ſo ſtung withall, that they ſwore they would have another bout with me the next day, challenging me again at the ſame game. I willingly accepted of it. They came, we play'd, and I was willing to let them win ſome thirty Crowns of me, which they carried away with them, giving over play for that time; for, this loſſe, was but a bait that I laid for them, knowing that this would fleſh them, and put them in heart anew, and make them come on bravely at our next meeting. Yet one of them was willing to continue longer, and ſaid; Let us play greater games, for that the night grows late. Nay (quoth I, by the ſame reaſon, it were better that we go now to bed, and meet again to morrow, which if you like of it, and be at leaſure, we may come together ſomewhat ſooner, and taking the day before us, we may play at pleaſure, and as long as we liſt. They were wondrous glad to hear me ſay ſo, and that they had yet loſt ſomewhat unto me, hoping in the end that they ſhould get more by me.

The next day they came with their purſes well armed with double Piſtolets, well appointed for war, they threw down whole handfulls of them upon the board, ſome being pieces of two, ſome of four, and ſome of ten, ſeeming to make no more reckoning of them, then if they had been ſo many pieces of Copper coin. Saying, as they flung them down; *Coraggio, coraggio, (Senor Soldado)* ſee you what here is to be ſpent in your ſervice? I told them; Although I am not ſo rich, as to be able to do you ſervice with ſo large a ſupply of money, yeat at leaſt my good will ſhall not be wanting to attend upon you, as your ſervant. I was about to tell them, that I did not doubt ere long to ſee this fair company of theſe glittering men at arms to come and march under my colours. We began to play, and I went wearying of them out

of

of breath, and when I ſaw, that I had now brought them even with me, and that I might ſtrike them both dead at once, I let fly a whole volley of ſhot at them, and in a few hours I ſaw in theſe hands of mine above five hundred Crowns, which yielded themſelves up to my mercy, whom (out of the pitifulneſſe of my nature) I took into my protection. The main battel being thus overthrown, my two Captains were ſain to forſake the field, after theſe their bravado's, and to try if they could levy freſh men, and raiſe new forces to encounter me again the next day, promiſing to bid me battel, if I durſt abide it. I was not a little glad to hear them ſay ſo, as well for that I had let them bloud both alike; as alſo, for that my heart was now pretty well at quiet; holding my ſelf very well pleaſed with that which I had gotten of them, being as well contented, as if I had won all that they had been worth. For I had now enough to ſerve my turn, and what ſhould I deſire more? But I cannot expreſſe unto you how glad I was, that they ſhould give over firſt; for it was a rule, which I ever obſerved in my play, that I would not willingly give any the leaſt occaſion of difference; and therefore did evermore leave it to the loſers own good liking, to play, or not to play; referring it to his choice, as he himſelf had moſt minde to. They went away in a good hour; and I fearing, that this Towns-man might put a Town-trick upon me, and that the ſtranger being in need, and in want, might do me ſome wrong (for I was lately, to my great coſt, too well acquainted what good juſtice a man was to look for in that Citie) I told *Sayavedra*, when we were alone by our ſelves, that without any word ſpeaking, or telling any body, whither we intended to go, we would take horſe betimes in the morning, and poſt with all ſpeed to *Millain*. And ſo we did, leaving them full of ſorrow, but not ſo much as one croſſe of ſilver, wherewith to bleſſe themſelves.

## CHAPTER V.

Guzman de Alfarache, *travelling towards* Millaine, Sayavedra *upon the way, recounts his own life unto him.*

WE rode towards *Millaine*, with as great haſte, as fear. For *Bologna*, ſtanding ſo high as it does, it is to be diſcerned a great way off, the very ſhadow whereof, did make my heart to tremble, fearing the danger whereinto it had lately put me. For I was ever of the minde, That there is no fault, but hath his puniſhment; no ill, but hath his chaſtiſement. Now did I wiſh, that horſes had been born with wings, that mine might have flown away with me. But miſerable wretch that I am, what good would that have done me? it had been all one to me; for then others would likewiſe have had the like horſes to have over-taken me. What way ſoever I took, I found it all full of Thorns, Buſhes, and Brambles, which did ſcratch, and prick my guilty conſcience; which way ſoever I went, I was fearfull of danger; and the more ſlowneſſe the more fear. And he never thinks he flies faſt enough, that ſeeks to flie from a miſchief. I accompanied with my thoughts, and *Sayavedra* with his, went jogging on along, but both as mute as fiſhes; though his were far different from mine. For my care onely was, to ſee my ſelf in ſome place of ſafety; and *Sayavedra* was thinking with himſelf, how much of this money would fall to his ſhare.

We rode on a great while in this manner; at laſt, that I might bid fear farewell, which thus troubled me, I ſought to ſhake it off, and if I could, quite to forget it, by entertaining ſome one thing, or other, to turn the ſtream another way; it ſeeming unto me, to be no leſſe fooliſh for a man, to be too ſilent upon the way, than to babble and prate too much in the ſtreet. And therefore, that I might be the firſt to break the Ice, I called to *Sayavedra*, and ſaid unto him; Come, let us talk of ſome thing, or other, to paſſe away the time; or do thou tell me ſome ſtory upon the way, to give me content; it will make our journey the ſhorter. He then, finding his bowl flung in amongſt the reſt, and that he was not ſhut out for a bungler, ſeeing there was occaſion now offered unto him, to ſpeak that, which he longed to utter, he began to break his minde, and ſaid thus unto me.

I wiſh Sir, that I could tell you a tale, how glad I was, and what a deal of good it did do me, to taſte of the ſweetneſſe of your gain. But I am ſo confident of the nobleneſſe of your diſpoſition, and this my coming to ſerve you (ſeeing you have been pleaſed to entertain me for your ſervant) ſhall not be onely for ſatisfaction of that debt, wherein I ſtand bound unto you, but alſo make much for my profit. I was glad to ſee this Arrow

flie

flie forth of his quiver, and that he had touch't me upon that ſtring; whereupon I thus replied unto him.

Friend *Sayavedra*: What is paſt, is paſt; and there is no more to be ſaid of it; for there is no man, ſo much man, and maſter of himſelf, which either here, or there, this place, or that; this, or that time, doth not ſlip in one kinde, or other. We live all in the fleſh; and all fleſh is weak. Others have this weakneſſe ſome other wayes: Every one committeth his errour, one in one ſort; another, in another. As thou haſt in this thing, wherein my ſelf am likewiſe faulty. God help me in my judgement; for I know not what will become of me. For I finde, I have as much cauſe, as he that hath moſt, if not more, boldly to undergo any deſperate attempt whatſoever. And let him be who, or what he will, (had he found himſelf in that great want and miſery, as we were) he would have done the like, as we have done: which was no better than plain theft, to cozen theſe poor men of that little which they had, which perhaps was all that they had wherewithall to live: Nor would I at that time, (being in that poor caſe as I was) have ſpared any purſe whatſoever, had it had a thouſand Crowns in it, though it had been of an Orphan, that had neither father nor mother to help it.

And ſeeing that we are fallen into this errour, and for that I perceive thou haſt underſtanding and judgement to apprehend any thing, and to go through with it, I perſwade my ſelf, thou doeſt likewiſe comprehend, that I am no Trader in the *Indies*, nor any of your rich *Fucaro's*, but a poor young man, (as thou art) robbed of his ſubſtance, and deprived of his neceſſaries, by ſuch means, as are beſt known to my ſelf; nor have I any greater, or better profeſſion to live by, than that which thou haſt ſeen in me. Now, becauſe I would not do any thing that might favour of baſeneſſe, or unlike my ſelf, and to bear the ſame port I did heretofore, I muſt endeavour to maintain my ſelf (at leaſt) in ſome reaſonable faſhion, as every honeſt man ought to do, not falling a jot from the ſtate and condition of life, wherein my Parents left me, and whereunto my fortune had raiſed me. For albeit I ſerved that Lord of mine, the *French* Ambaſſadour, and lived in houſe with him, it was out of that love which he bore unto me from a Childe, and upon the earneſt intreaty that he made unto my friends, my father, and he, being of ancient acquaintance, and having lived and converſed long together in *Paris*. And ſo he begg'd me of him, ſaying, he ſhould take no more care of me, and that he would one day make me a man.

But ſince that things have ſo fallen out with me as they have, (as in part you your ſelf know) and that I have left his houſe, and am now come from him, I am not minded to return thither any more, till I have ſeen ſomewhat of the vvorld, and that I may come home rich and in plenty, and be able to live in eaſe and pleaſure, all the reſt of my life. Every place affords good bread; and that of *Rome*, agrees not with my ſtomack, for it doth not digeſt very well with me, but turns to rawneſſe and crudities. And it is no marvel, that all men would ſeek out ſome means, or other to live; eſpecially, ſeeing they, that have leſſer abilities, endeavour the like.

Turn thine eye aſide, and look upon as many men, as now live in the vvorld; view, and conſider them well, and thou ſhalt finde, that they all go ſeeking to encreaſe their eſtates, to advantage themſelves the beſt that they can; and failing in thoſe obligations, whereunto they are tied both in honour and honeſty, by one device, or other, this, or that trick, every one ſeeks to advance himſelf and his fortunes, as high as he can. The King ſeeks to augment his State, and enlarge his Kingdom: The Gentleman, to raiſe his houſe: The Merchant, to encreaſe his wealth, and to drive ſuch a trade, as may turn to his great profit; and the Tradeſman, to gain by his trade: And that not alwayes (by their leave) in that conſcionable and lawfull faſhion as is fitting they ſhould. For it hapneth ſo with ſome of them, that firſt growing knuckle deep, and afterwards up to the elbowes in ungodly gain, and unjuſt dealing, they never leave off till they be up to the very eyes; nay, over head and ears (I will not ſay) in Hell, do thou ſay it for me; whoſe tongue is bolder than mine, to lay this cenſure upon them. In concluſion, all the vvorld in this caſe, is as it were another *Rochelle*; Every man live for himſelf; get he, that can get; Onely they, that are unfortunate, as thou art, pay the puniſhment of their ſin. If thou hadſt been a Thief of the largeſt ſize, I ſay, one of thoſe great ones, that ſhouldſt have gone away with three, or four thouſand Ducates at a clap, thou might'ſt peradventure have made thy peace, bought out favour and juſtice, and might'ſt have paſt well enough with them, and have come off clear, as they often do: but thoſe poor wretches, which know not how to Negotiate, nor have any ſet rents, no receit, nor Bills of exchange, nor know how to get a great deal of money into their hands (compounding afterwards for a little) paying back a third part, and that ſlowly, ill, or never; theſe poor rogues,

I ſay, that neither have the wit to invent, nor the power to aſpire to any great booty, nor to undertake great matters, are (as infamous Thieves) ſet to the Gallies, and ſometimes hang'd, not for Thieves (for Thieves are not hang'd) but becauſe they did not well know what did belong to their office, and were not their own craftſ-maſters. And I will here by the way tell thee what I heard of a Slave, that was a Negro, *entre bocal y ladino*, one that was a novice, and was better skill'd in his own, than the Countrey-language wherein he liv'd, being ſcarce perfect in either; which ſtory will fall in here very fitly.

In *Madrid*, in the dayes of my Child-hood, where I reſided ſometime, there were Adulterers led to execution; and although this ſin be very common there, and much uſed amongſt them, yet it is ſeldom puniſhed; for there are never wanting good means, and good moneys; by means whereof theſe kinde of crimes are well accommodated: but at this time, and with this vvomans husband, they could work no good. A vvorld of people went forth to ſee them, eſpecially your women, in ſo much that the ſtreets and the windows were wholly taken up with them, making great moan for that miſerable and unfortunate woman. Now when her husband had cut off her head, this *Negro* ſpake out aloud, and ſaid; O God, how many here do behold this ſad ſpectacle, who with a great deal of reaſon might have the like meaſure!

We likewiſe may very well ſay; How many are there now adayes, who condemne others to the Gallows, whereon they might better, and with more reaſon be hang'd themſelves. I wonder at nothing in this age, nor am I of that queazie ſtomack, that any thing ſhould offend me: I will dance to the ſound of that Pipe, after which I ſee others dance, let things laſt, as they may laſt: and hold out as long as they can, and then there is an end of them, like unto ſpoons made of a cruſt of bread, which we have no ſooner ſupt our pottage with, but we ſend them preſently packing the ſame way with the other. And ſince thou ſayeſt that thou loveſt my company, and takeſt much contentment therein, and that thou likeſt ſo well of it, I hope, it ſhall neither be hurtfull unto thee, nor hard to brooke it. For I am ſo good a fellow, and of ſo ingenuous a diſpoſition, that I know how to value and make a true eſteem of thoſe kindneſſes which are done unto me, the thankfull acknowledgement thereof, I ſhall refer to my actions, which in their due time ſhall teſtifie what *I* now profeſſe. But becauſe reward is the ſpur, which puts vertue forward: and the onely whetſtone that ſets an edge on mens affections, making them to go on bravely and couragiouſly in all they undertake: And that it argues a baſeneſſe of minde, not to reward, when from thence ſome glory, or benefit may ariſe: And that a man doth not comply with his duty, when he doth not take any pains for his living; for to that end was he born, and therewith is he to ſuſtain himſelf; it is fit, and no more than what is juſt; that every man ſhould have a proportionable and equal gain, according to the quality of his adventure: And I am very well content to give way hereunto, making this the firſt ſtone in this our building; and will treat further hereafter of that, which is to be ordered and ſet down between us, in theſe, or any other the like occaſions, that ſhall offer themſelves unto us.

All that, which ſhall fall, or come unto our hands, as well thoſe fruits already fallen, as thoſe that are to fall hereafter, ſhall be divided into three equal parts; of all which thou ſhalt have one part for thee, & another for me, & the third ſhall go for to defray the charges of *averige*, for it will not be alwayes fair weather; nor ſhall we ſtill ſayl before the winde; nor make evermore a ſpeedy voyage; as it happens when men are becalmed at Sea; and when we ſhall land and come aſhore, it is not fit that we ſhould want Cloaths, and other neceſſaries, nor muſt we, if the enemy ſhould ſet upon us, be unprovided of munition to defend our ſelves, and offend him; nor ſhould we chance by ſome ſtorm, or other accident, to be caſt upon ſome ſhelf or quick-ſand, muſt we lack a Boat to put out, wherein to ſave our lives, though we loſe our goods. This third part, we will ſtill lay apart by it ſelf, that ſhall be, as it were the *Ærarium*, and publick Treaſury, our common purſe, for to ſupply and relieve our neceſſities. For if we go wiſely and diſcreetly to work, and be not raſh and inconſiderate in our actions, ſeeing we want not underſtanding, and have ſome skill in Navigation, (at leaſt are both of us good Coaſters) I for my part will content my ſelf with no leſſe, than ſome good place of command in my Countrey, and ſuch great ſtore of wealth, that I may afterwards live happily all the dayes of my life. And all this will I bring about, before I be ſix years elder. Be therefore of good courage, and take heart unto thee, for thou ſhalt make the like purchaſe, wherewith thou mayeſt return with credit to *Valencia*. I would not have thee buſie thy ſelf in baſe thefts, nor be none of thoſe ſneaking Thieves, that ſteal Primers, Horn-books, and Ballads; for from ſuch kinde of theſts, thou ſhalt reap no other profit, but infamy and reproach.

In

In a word, let us bravely reſolve, *Morir ahorcados, o comer con trompetas*; Either to hang togethe for company, or to have our dinners ſerved in with Trumpets. Let us die like dogs, or live like men. For a mans life is ended in a day; but poverty is a deadly death. And if we go on as we have begun, and uſe theſe and the like tricks, we ſhall with a little practice grow to greater, both cunning and wealth, and bid a fart in tears teeth; For all moneths are alike, be they fair, or foul, every one hath his thirty dayes, and no more; Every man muſt live out his time, how happily, or how miſerably, I cannot ſay; every one muſt be content with his fortune: And for as much; as in the dark, all *Cats* are black, and *Jone* is as fair as my Lady, we will ſo carry things in the Clouds, that we may not appear in our right colours. We two will joyn together, keep counſel, and deal fairly one with another, dividing the ſpoil equally, that there may be no falling out between us: For, as it is in the Proverb; *Un lobo, a otro, nuncaſe muerde*; One Wolf will not bite another. Lo here, if thou wilt, thou ſhalt preſently, before we go any further, have a third part of what is already got; for it is not juſt nor honeſt, to debar any man of his right, or to with-hold that from him, which is his. Much good may it do thee; and thank God, that with ſo fortunate a foot, and ſo propitious a ſtar, thou haſt lighted thus happily into our company; deſiring him, that we may not fall into the hands of Pirates, who have an eye to nothing elſe, but to run away with the meat, that others have dreſt, to lick away the Cream, that others have laboured for; and to skim away all the fat from off the pottage, not leaving us any thing that good is.

With this kinde of language, and my liberal carriage, dealing thus kindly and bountifully with him, I went ſecuring his perſon unto me, that he might not forſake me, but ſtay, and live with me. For if I ſhould have ſought over all the world for a Marriner, I could not have met with a better Mate for my Bark, nor one that would ſo well have ſuted for my purpoſe, as *Sayavedra*. Beſides, he being my equal, and every way as good a man as my ſelf, was contented to become my ſervant, and to acknowledge me for his Maſter, it being no ſmall advantage to have the hand in moſt games that you play at. He, upon theſe good words of mine, was ſo overcome, that he reſted no leſſe contented, than conquered by me. And ſo falling in our future diſcourſe, from one thing to another, (as men uſe to do when they talk upon the way) I hapt at laſt to ask him the cauſe, that mov'd him to rob me? Sir, (ſaid he) though I would, yet I cannot now forbear to acquaint you with the whole courſe of my life, and truely and faithfully to deliver unto you every particular paſſage thereof, as well for thoſe favours which I have ſo liberally received already from your hands, as alſo for that it is well enough known to the world, and therefore requires no ſuch ſecreſie; As likewiſe, for that with thoſe with whom we keep company, and are dayly to converſe and live withall, plain dealing muſt be uſed; and all matters fairly laid open, without the concealing, or hiding of any thing; For, not onely to our *Confeſſours*, our *Lawyers*, and our *Phyſicians*, are we to tell the truth, but to thoſe alſo that are of our own profeſſion, birds of the ſame feather; nor was this vertue ever yet wanting amongſt us, which is a powerfull means for the maintaining of friendſhip, and the faſter wedging of one man unto another. But that I may at length comply with thoſe many obligations, wherein I ſtand bound unto you; I ſhall give you (Sir) to underſtand, that I am of *Valencia*, born of honeſt Parents, (whom report may one day make known unto you) for they (God be praiſed) are now both dead; onely their fame liveth. We were two brothers, and both unfortunate; whether it were, becauſe from Children, converſing continually together, we ran courſes alike, and did in all things ſort and ſute each with other; or whether it were, that ſuffering our ſelves to be carried away with the fury of our vain appetites, without ſtriving to make due reſiſtance, we did give way to this tentation, by conſenting thereunto, (for to ſay more truely) fell into this weakneſſe, not thinking on thoſe future dangers, that were to follow thereupon, but drawn along with thoſe baits, that for the preſent pleaſed our taſte, being now inured, and accuſtomed thereunto, we could not (though we would) go back. My other brother is ſomewhat elder than my ſelf, and though both of us were of a reaſonable good capacity, and had (as they ſay) our wits and judgements about us, and were not put (as other men are) to ſeek for them, yet could not this underſtanding of ours, put a bridle upon our unruly affections; ſuch is, or was the force of our malignant ſtar, and ſo great the power of our evil inclination that we could not avoid it. In ſo much, that laying aſide all reſpects of honour, and to apply our ſelves to any ſet courſe of life, more out of a deſire to ſee ſtrange Countreys, than to get ſome honeſt means, whereby to live, we went out into the wide world to ſeek our fortunes. But becauſe things might not chance to fall out ſo luckily with us, as we did frame to our ſelves, and that if we ſhould come in trouble, we might not be known, nor diſhonour our houſe, we did agree between our ſelves, to change and alter our names.

My brother being a good Latiniſt, and a fine Scholar, fetched his name, I know not from whence; His own name being *Juan Marti*, of *Juan*, he made *Luxan*; and of *Marti*, *Mateo*; and turning it by inverting the words, he call'd himſelf *Mateo Luxan*. In this manner, did he wander through the vvorld; and the vvorld ſaith, that it gave him the ſame payment, as it did me. But I, for that I had no learning, and knew no more than a young Novice in a Monaſtery, I would not trouble my head with theſe curioſities, but going the down-right way to work, and knowing that the *Sayavedra's* were of principal note, and ancient Gentlemen of *Sevill*, I ſtiled my ſelf to be of that Citie, and took their name upon me. But I was never in *Sevill*, nor knew any more thereof, than what I have ſaid already.

Being thus new Chriſtned, we ſet forth both on one and the ſame day, and began our travels together, but went each of us a ſeveral way. Some have told me, who knew him by ſight, that they have ſeen him in *Caſtile*, and in *Andaluzia* very hardly uſed; and that from thence he went to the *Indies*, where it alſo went ill with him. I ſhaped my courſe another way; for I got me to *Barcelona*, where in the Galleyes I paſt over into *Italy*: I had ſpent all that, which I had brought along with me from home, and at laſt became exceeding poor. And becauſe neceſſity doth oftentimes (as they ſay) drive a man to do that, which he never dream't of, toſt thus up and down, and cruelly encountred with hunger, I chanced in the end to arrive in the Kingdom of *Naples*; where I had ever a deſire to reſide, for the great good which I had heard of that Citie.

I travell'd all over that Kingdom, ſpending that which I had not, till I came to be a notable *Picaro*, and began at length to converſe with as arrant Rogues as my ſelf; and from one round to another I grew up by degrees, to be a fine nimble-finger'd Fuller, I could teazel Cloaths ſingular well, I could pick a pocket very neatly, and cut a purſe handſomely, and do many the like fine feats. I made my ſelf a *Camerade* with thoſe that were the Maſters of our Company, and had recourſe alwayes unto them, that they might cover me under their wing in time of adverſity; I was but their ſervant, and one of thoſe ordinary Souldiers as it were, that fought under their Enſigne. For my poverty was ſo great, that I could never get me into a ſtock to put me into Cloaths, or to be able to ſet up ſhop for my ſelf. Nor was it an inability, or inſufficiency in me, that I came no better forward in the vvorld; for there was not ſuch a cunning ſharker amongſt them all, as I was; my ſheers would finde an edge, when theirs would not cut; they were all bunglers to me; I was able to have read unto them all thoſe four curſory Lectures of thieving; and thoſe other two of cony-catching and cheating, which I read for my degree, when I proceeded Batcheler in that Art. For I was ſo well read in thoſe Roguiſh ſtudies, and from the time that I firſt learn'd them, had them all ſo perfect at my fingers ends, that I was not to ſeek of any one of them, I was that ſingular Saker, that excellent Jerfalcon, that never miſt my prey, but took all that I flew at either in Citie, or Countrey. No game came amiſſe to me. None of them underſtood half ſo well as I, the Art in cutting of a purſe; nor to dive into a pocket, ſo deep, as I could. I was dog at it, and could diſpatch my buſineſſe in a trice. Mine eye and mine hand went both together; they were here and there, and every where, with a *preſto* be gone. I was of all occupations; a Marriner, a Miller, a Baker, a Scout, a Croſſe-biter, one of your upright men, a Cheater, a Coozener, a Fox, that was full of craft and ſubtilty, none of my ſtanding, no nor ſix years elder than I, but would ſtrike ſayl to me, and acknowledge himſelf as far inferiour to me, as the fowl is to the Falcon.

But by reaſon of their ancient ſtanding, and the reputation they had got in thoſe former dunſical times, they tyrannized and uſurped on the name of famous profeſſors: Theſe were the *Ceſars*, and we the poor Rogues; whom they ſent abroad, from houſe to houſe, to ſcour diſhes, to caſt an eye in every corner, to make one excuſe, or other whereſoever we came; demanding in one place, whether ſuch a Gentleman were there, or no; and in another, whether they wanted a young youth, that was willing to ſerve them. Asking ſuch a Gentlewoman, whether ſhe would buy a very fine pair of Twizes; which but a little before we had cut from another Gentle-womens girdle, and having new ground and whet them, and made them very neat and clean, and fitted them with a new caſe, and new ribond, we ſold them afterwards away for new ware. Sometimes we would make ſhow to go into ſome houſe to make water, and if we found, that there was a ſtable there, or other by-rooms belonging to it, in thither would we go, where we ſhould meet with a Horſe-cloath, a Curry-comb, a Sieve, or the Horſ-mans Cloak; and when we could not come to finger any thing elſe, we ſhould evermore be ſure of Bridles, and Collars, and Stirrops, and the like kinde of tackling for their Mules and their Hackneys, and if by misfortune, any one ſhould come in, and ſee us there, looſing preſent-

preſently our cod-piſſe point, we would ſquat us down in a corner of the ſtable, as if we had been driven in thither by neceſſity to do that ſervice, which no body can do for us but our ſelves. And in caſe they ſhould ſay unto us (as now and then they would) you rogue, you thief, what make you here? We would then preſently riſe up, and pulling up our breeches to make them faſt, and be gone, we would while we were a truſſing, mildly make anſwer; I pray Sir, be not offended; take heed to whom, and of what you ſpeak; for here is no ſuch kind of man, as you talk of, no thief, no rogue, but one that is true and honeſt, and means you no harm; I was over-taken in the ſtreet, and forced to come in upon meer neceſſity, and therefore I hope you will hold me excuſed.

Some did believe us, and ſome not; but howſoever we paſt well enough with it. Sometimes we would preſſe farther in, and rummage as it were all the whole houſe, from one end to th' other, till we found ſomewhat that we might finger and carry away; and if by chance we were ſpy'd by any, we would come crowching unto them with tears in our eyes, beſeeching them for Gods ſake, to give us an almes, being even ready to ſtarve for want of food. With theſe and other the like cunning ſhifts, there was not ſo much as a nail in any mans wall, which we did not keep a reckoning of, and took away when we ſaw our time. I was a pretty little wag, ſlender of growth, rather lean than otherwiſe, very witty, full of invention; and above all, as nimble and light-footed as a Buck. I alwayes laid wait in the day-time, how and where I ſhould compaſſe my exployts in the night, never imbroyling my ſelf in any buſineſſe at unſeaſonable times, for the better avoiding of all ſuſpition; and taking little ſleep when I had any thing to ſet my ſelf about. In the day-time we did (like good Chriſtians) viſit Churches, go to Maſſe, hear Sermons, frequent your Indulgencies, Jubilees, Feaſts, and Proceſſions. We were preſent at your Play-houſes, and Courts of Juſtice, at all Executions, and all other publike meetings and aſſemblies, where there was any concurſe of people, any preſſing or thronging in the ſtreets, ſtriving to be alwayes in the thickeſt of the croud, entring in and out amongſt them, paſſing to and fro a thouſand times. For every bout afforded us work enough, making upon every return a good and gainful voyage. One while we brought away daggers, ſtollen from mens backs; other-while handkerchers pickt out of their pockets; purſes, *roſaries*, *twizes*, jewels worn by women and ſuch odd toyes as your children wear about their necks. And when all failed, and that I could not make that purchaſe as I would, with my ſheeres (which I had ever ready in my hand) look where the beſt and faireſt cloak was in all the company, I did whip from behinde, or the one ſide of it (if by chance it ſlipt off from his ſhoulders in the throng) as much as would make three or four pair of ſoals, or ſome ſuch odde knack, or other. Wherein, beſides the profit, I took exceeding great pleaſure, in ſeeing theſe gallants afterwards look like the picture of Saint *Martin*, with little more than half a cloak; which was a ridiculous thing to behold, and did often move me to much laughter. And when they themſelves had found it out, they began to winde and turn it this way, and that way, putting the part offended, either under or over their arm, as would make beſt for the hiding of that blemiſh; and the people when they once began to perceive it, they ſtraight-way flockt about them, who bluſhing to ſee their garments cut ſhort to the waſte, diſcovering thoſe parts which ſhame bids us hide, they went flinching away, and got them home thorow by-lanes, and ſuch places, as were leaſt frequented.

And when this would not fadge with us, we would cunningly ſteal to your ſilk, or cloth of gold hangings, for we never ſtood upon terms of courteſie, or were more dainty with theſe than the reſt; for the greater was the value of it, the greater was our gain; and from the lower part of thoſe hangings would we ſnip off a piece or two, according as occaſion or time would give us leave, indeavouring ever to cut in the beſt and choiceſt place, and in the turning of an hand, we made thereof either womens bodies, mens *monteras*, purſes, pin-pillows, ſleeves for little children, and a thouſand other the like fidling things, ſtill ordering and husbanding it ſo, that we would not loſe the leaſt threed, but did alwayes contrive it in the beſt manner, as might make beſt for that uſe, whereunto we would put it.

By little and little we came approaching neerer and neerer unto the City, drawn thither upon the fame and report, that there was a new *Vice-Roy* already come thither, or would be there very ſhortly. For at ſuch ſolemn feaſts as theſe, where there is running of Buls, baiting of Bears, and the like paſtimes; beſides your great Fairs and Markets, we will not ſtick, for a need, to come an hundred miles off, that we may be preſent at them. Our expence upon the way was alwayes very little; for we ſtill made our proviſion as we went along, and

what we got in one place, that we ſpent in another, taking up hens here, capons there, in ſuch a Village chickens, and ſuch a Dove-houſe pigeons, pigs, gammons of Bacon, and any thing that was tame, and would come to hand, never eſcaped our hands, furniſhing our ſelves with all other neceſſary implements, that might ſerve for the conveniency of our journey, were it for our diet or our lodging. And as a man that deſires to have a good lodging in his Inne, muſt have a care to come theue before the Sun be ſet: ſo in that ſhort time which vve had to ſpend untill it vvere tovvards night, and that the hour vvas come, vvherein vve did uſually retire our ſelves, vve did run over all the open places about the Countrey, and if vve found any breach in any vvall of an houſe, vve vvould pry vvhat we could prole from thence, and ſeek to make our entry; Which that vve might do vvith the more conveniency, and leſſer hazard of their perſons, vve vvould begin to beg an alms; ſaying, That vve vvere poor Students, and being driven to great neceſſitie, could not for vvant of means return handſomly into our own Countrey. Which vve did not ſo much demand of them, to the end they ſhould give us any thing, as thereby to ſeek occaſion to ſteal ſomething from them, having an eye ſtill tovvards the hen-rooſt, caſting vvith our ſelves hovv vve might diſpeople that houſe of its pullen.

Beſides, for your Innes, and your Farmers back-ſides, I carried alwayes with me a good angle-rod, with a ſtrong hook and line, baited with a cruſt of bread, or ſome ſix grains of wheat, to catch therewith whatſoever came in my way; and I ſeldome put in my rod, but I pluckt out a fiſh as long as mine arm. But when it fell out ſo unfortunately with us, that we could not get any booty, and that (as it is in the Proverb) *Se caya la caſa*, the houſe was fallen down, and that there was no victuals there to be found; yet come the worſt that could come, we ſhould be ſure to meet with as good and fat a Calf, as any man need to eat, the world could not afford better Veal. Aſſoon as we came to *Naples*, at our firſt comming we drave for ſome few dayes a very good trade, and made very quick returns, with a great deal of profit to our purſes, and all things did ſucceed very well with us; we took great pains, and we reapt great gains. I had put my ſelf into ſuch apparel, that my preſence might promiſe the reputation of an honeſt man; ſo that any man might very well be cozened by this Card, (this out-ſide I mean of mine) ſo fair did I colour for it. So that if the entrance which we made, like to our *juego de cannas*, glittering in gold, and all kinde of bravery, had not through my lack of patience received in the end a foil, I might have continued there in very good faſhion. But I had work enough to do to ſave my skin, from being pluckt over mine ears, and to keep my bones from being broken. It was mine own fault that mine egges proved addle, and were not ſo well hatcht as they might have been. I may thank no body for it but my ſelf. But God be thanked, that it was no worſe with me; for I might have received much more harm thereby, and therewith did I comfort my ſelf.

One of my Camerades was of that Countrey, ſervant to a regent of that collateral Councel, whoſe father had alſo ſerved him heretofore, he was deſirous to make himſelf known unto him, whereupon he went to kiſſe his hands, nor did his own return empty from him; But (being very glad to ſee him) offered to do him any kindneſſe that lay in his power; nor were they Courtiers words, ſprinkled with holy-water, for he did as well do as ſay; For ſeldome, and to few doth it happen in Court, to eat together in one plate, and at one boord; but when the minde is generous and noble, it evermore takes delight to give, and by ſo much the more is increaſed, by how much the more we crave For it hath alwayes been a peculiar property belonging to giving, to make the *donor* famous and renowned to the world. And the more ſubjects they light on to confer ſuch courteſies, ſo much the more glory do they gain unto themſelves. Preſently, without any more ado, he employed him in ſome buſineſſe, and thoſe of ſome worth and moment, and well deſerving a worthier ſubject. Under his protection we went up and down the City, as if we had been ſo many Vice-Kings of the Countrey, living without controlment, and no man daring to meddle with us.

Being thus ſeaten on the warm ſide of the hedge, preſuming upon his favour and countenance, we did laſh out a little too much, in undertaking ſuch and ſuch things, as were beyond the reach of our brains, and would require ſtronger wits than we had any. He was the tongue wherewith we ſpake; he did direct us, whither we were to go, and what we were to do; at what hours vve might vvith ſafety be abroad, vvhere vve might beſt make our entry, vvhom vve might beſt truſt; and of whom vve had moſt reaſon to be afraid. For (as vve ſhall tell you hereafter) they that commit the greateſt robberies, and ſuch theefts as

are

are more famous than any other, more cunningly carried, of a higher ſtrain & nature than the reſt, and of the greateſt importance are thoſe that are neereſt in their attendance about the miniſters of *Juſtice*. For thoſe men fear nothing, they are in favour with their Lord, neceſſity oppreſſeth them, occaſion is offered: God bleſſe every good man from ſuch authentical theeves, who think themſelves authorized to ſteal, and that the Law either cannot, or will not take hold of them.

I vvent one day a vvreſtling *a braco partido* (as they ſay) vvith my thoughts, that is to ſay, upon equal terms, vvithout any manner of advantage of my fellovvs, out of a deſire that I had to ſeek out ſomething vvherevvithall to entertain my ſelf: for it vvas almoſt high noon, and vve had not yet threeded our needle, nor vvrought one ſtitch of vvork. And to come empty-handed, that I vvould not: I ſcorn'd not to ſend in my proviſion before-hand, as holding it a great diſgrace unto me. For if my companions ſhould chance to have vvrought their honey-combs, and that they were to be found at home in the hive, vvhere vve did all meet, if I ſhould bring nothing in, but feed upon their ſtore, they vvould upbraid me therevvith, calling me idle Drone: Titting and flouting at me, that I ſhould offer to ſit down at board vvith clean hands. Meaning thereby, that I had not laboured for my living as the reſt had done, nor taken the pains to foul my hands, and yet muſt ſit dovvn and eat at other mens coſt. Holding him for a baſe-minded fellovv, that vvould come to a vvell-furniſht table, and ſit dovvn to dinner, not having before-hand provided ſome proviſion of his own, whereon to feed I had caſt mine eye upon a very fair houſe, which at the firſt ſight ſeemed unto me, to belong to ſome honourable perſon, or principal Gentleman of that City. I entred as boldly into it, as if the houſe had been mine own. For (as it is in the proverb) *nunca el timido, fue buen cirujano*: The fearful man never makes a good Surgeon. Which kinde of Phraſe, your old women in *Spain* uſe to their children, when they go ſneakingly and fearfully about any buſineſſe. *Anda, anda, que parece que vas a hurtar*: Get thee gone, get thee gone, thou goeſt logging and dreamingly about it, as if thou wenteſt a filching. So that alwayes, and in all places whatſoever, or whereſoever I came, methought I went into mine own houſe, or that I did enter as it were by authority, with the *Vare* of Juſtice in my hand, or the whole power of the Countrey.

I lookt about on this ſide, and on that ſide, longing that mine eyes might light on ſomething or other, that I might lay my hands on. At laſt, it was my fortune to eſpy, lying on the top of a little ſide-table, a fair black velvet Kirtle, richly embroydered, which would very well ſerve to make three ſeveral ſorts of garments, caſſock, and hoſe, and ſomething elſe beſides; for there were full fifteen yards in it, and might very well beſeem the wearing of the neateſt and braveſt Gallants in the Kingdome. I ſtood looking and peering on every ſide of me, if I might go cleanly away with this booty, that it might not coſt me the laying on, and eſcape without danger of being beaten for my labour; and by good hap I did not meet with any to hinder me in this my purpoſe; Whereupon I took it up, and clapping it under mine arm, fetching two or three nimble friſcals, my feet were preſently upon the threſhold of the door, making their way to go forth into the ſtreet. But I was no ſooner come thither, but there I met full butt with the owner of the houſe, who was Maſter *Datario*, a man of great place and authority in the City, who ſeeing me come forth with this ſardle under mine arm, asked me what I was, what I made there, and what was that I carried away with me? I being thus put to my ſhifts, made a vertue of neceſſity, and was not long in conſulting with my ſelf for anſwer, and with an untroubled, or rather cheerful countenance, ſaid unto him; Sir, it is my Miſtreſſes pleaſure, that I ſhould untuck theſe plates a little, to make the fold fall a little handſome, and that I ſhould leſſen it a thought in the waſte, for that it fits not well before; and hath given me a charge to diſpatch it preſently. Do ſo I pray (my friend) quoth he, ſee it be done quickly, and let it be your own hand-working, that it may not be done amiſſe, and make all the haſt you can. I then ſaid to my ſelf; I have done this with mine own hand, and will make quick work with the reſt. And with that I hy'd me down the ſtreet, fetching more turnings and windings than a Snake, ſometimes this way, and ſometimes that way, now here, and then there, and all, that they might not finde any footing of me, if he ſhould chance to uncouple his hounds, and ſend them after me to follow me upon hot ſent.

Anon after (as ill luck would have it) he came to know how the world went, for he was no ſooner come into the houſe, but he found it all in an uproar, ſome in the hall, ſome in the kitchen, ſome in one room, and ſome in another, the maids of the houſe ſome unbraced, ſome their hair about their ears, ſome with one ſleeve off, and another on, ſome in one poſture,

ſture, and ſome in another, but all in combuſtion, brawling and calling one to another, give me the Kirtle, give me the Kirtle, where is the Kirtle? what is become of the Kirtle? but the Kirtle appears not: you took it from my Miſtreſſe (ſayes one.) I laid it here (ſayes another.) I left it here (ſayes a third.) Then falls the Miſtreſſe of the houſe a chiding, asking who came in, or out? No body could tell of any: Then (quoth ſhe) it is likely, that ſome of the houſe muſt needs have it, therefore look it me out, and that quickly too, or elſe you ſhall ſoundly pay for it. There was ſuch an out-cry, ſuch exclamations, ſuch a howling, ſuch a bawling, and ſo hideous a noyſe, as if the whole houſe had been fallen to the ground; inſomuch, that they could not one underſtand another.

In this hurly burly comes me in the maſter of the houſe, acknowledging now the errour that he had committed, in letting me go away in that faſhion; and going to pacifie his wife, he told her, that a thief had got into the houſe, and carried away the Kirtle, recounting unto her, what had paſſed betwixt him and my ſelf, when he met me comming forth of doors. He preſently made ſearch after me, but I ſo beſtirred my ſtumps, that he could not then find me out, having by this time both ſecured my perſon, and the Kirtle.

That night I got me to the houſe of the great Conſtable, out of a deſire that I had to finiſh a piece of work, which ſome few dayes before, I had drawn out; but my pen did ſo blur, that I did deſpair at that time to come off cleanly with it, and though I had taken a great deal of pains that it might be neatly and handſomly done, yet could I never compaſſe (for want of a good opportunity) to have it fall out fairly and fitly as I would till now. Many Gentlemen, were there met together to play, who had ordinarily three or four tables ſet ready for them, and a page or two appointed to ſit up, and attend upon them, till they gave over. Every table had his ſilk carpet, and two ſilver candleſticks: I carried thither with me a couple that were counterfeit, made of the pureſt Tin I could get, and juſt of the ſame faſhion and proportion, and ſo like in every reſpect, that you could not for their fineneſſe diſtinguiſh them from the other, jumping ſo truly, as well in the colour, as the making, provided of purpoſe, for the better effecting of what I intended. I carried likewiſe two candles along with me, and uſing cloſe conveyance, that they might not be ſeen about me. I leaned againſt one of the corners of the wall, as I had uſed to do heretofore, waiting for a fair occaſion to bring my project to paſſe, giving thoſe that were there to underſtand, that I was a ſervant to one of thoſe Gentlemen that were at play. Two, were playing at *Zientos*, at one of thoſe tables, they call'd for lights, there was not any body there but one Page, and he ſo ſleepy and ſo drouſie, that having call'd unto him twice, he did neither anſwer them, nor well mind what they ſaid unto him: I made preſently in to them; and having my candles & candleſticks in a readineſs, which were not long a lighting, throwing one end of my cloak over my ſhoulder, as if I had been one of the ſervants of the houſe: I ſhifted the candleſticks, putting the lights into thoſe that I had brought with me, clapping thoſe other of ſilver under mine arm; and ſo turning nimbly away from them, walking as Cats do, ſoftly and without any noyſe, I got me quietly to my lodging, where I mixt them together with other pieces of plate, which I had in the like manner at divers times gathered together; And for to take away all occaſion of quarrelling and wrangling, and that I might not be askt whether theſe are thine or mine? Let me ſee the mark; Compare it with this or that other piece, and the difference will ſoon be decided; How came you by it? Where did you buy it? What was he that ſold it you? To avoid theſe & the like cavils, I thought good to make ſure work with it; ſo I melted it (that it might not be known by its ear-mark) all into one maſſe, and putting it into a fine earthen pot, I carried it to my Captain, that he, out of the authority and credit that he had abroad, might the better ſell it for me.

He did ſo, and taking out a fift part for himſelf, he gave me the reſt in very good Royals of plate, without defrauding me of one farthing, or the leaſt hair of my head. It was an order amongſt us, that to him, as to our Chieftain, we ſhould bring all whatſoever we got, whereof the fift part was his fee, which we truly and juſtly paid unto him, as a tribute that was as due to him, as that of the *Indies*, is to his *Catholike Majeſty*. No Prince in the world had more punctual payment. And for this tax, tallage, impoſt, or cuſtome, (or whatſoever in that kind you ſhall be pleaſed to call it) we were in all our dangers, protected & defended by him. Let no man think to chew his meat on both ſides of his chaps at once; and to have all the water run through his own mill, and none paſs beſide. For there is no dignity in this life without a penſion; and nothing that a man injoys of his eſtate, but he muſt part with ſome portion out of it. Every one hath his double row of teeth, together with his grinders, all would fain eat. Every poll hath his polling. There are certain rights and duties to be raiſed

out

out of all things whatſoever. Impoſts and Intereſts muſt paſſe to and fro in the world. One hand waſheth another, and both waſh the face. If one give me a Capon, it is fit I ſhould beſtow the brawn thereof upon him. And there is no money can be better imployed, then upon ſuch a good Angel as this to guard us. There are ſome kinde of people ſo cruel and unconſcionable, that they think of nothing but deceit and cozenage, ſcooping like Moyles all to themſelves; they have all the bread, and the meat too; both a mans paines, and his profit; leaving us nothing but the *periculum*, and the *pœna*, the perill, and the punishment, if it be our misfortune to be caught. They will highly praiſe and commend us, that they may incourage us on to greater matters, as *Pizarro* did his people in the *Indies*. But when they give us moſt, and reward us beſt, they think they do us a great favour, if they give us the ſcraps and fragments, and what themſelves know not well what to do withall, reſerving the beſt and greateſt part of the profit to themſelves; as *Alexandro* dealt with me. But afterwards, when they ſee us in diſtreſſe, and that we have need of their help, they will not ſo much as know us, they preſently ſtrike ſayl, and will not ſtir a foot to ſuccour us.

But we, and this our *Milaneſe* (whom we made our Commander) kept very good quarter; he would by no means have any more of us than a fifth part, which by agreement belonged unto him. And if at any time, he having need of money, did intreat us that we would lend him ſome, and put it to account to be paid out of his fifth part, as prizes came in; when we had furniſht him, he would preſently ſet it down in his book, with an *Item*, ſo much due unto ſuch a one, to be paid out of my next Vales, and when that debt was ſatisfied, he would either croſſe it, or write repaid in the margent: ſo that there was evermore an even reckoning kept between us. No, no, he was none of theſe ſhuffling companions, he was wonderfull honeſt in ſharing the ſpoyl with us, levelling all accounts, and ſtill keeping an even reckoning with us; and ſo as we had the fortune to make a good voyage, for the reſt, we needed not to fear. My fellows did not loyter but beſtirred themſelves luſtily, and like good husbands, never came home with their hands in their boſomes, nor dragged out an empty net.

We were four of us in the whole; three adventurers, to enter upon all kinde of enterprizes, and one Captain to fight in our defence. We would ſometimes take him along with us, and put him formoſt, to the end that if any one of us ſhould be taken napping, and the theft found about us, he might ſerve to mitigate the matter, when we were thus taken in the manner, making us to reſtore that which we had taken, (that I may not ſay ſtoln away) giving us two, or three boxes on the ear, and as many kicks on the breech, diſmiſſing us from thence in a Devils name, ſaying withall: Get you gone, you Rogue, be packing, I ſay, like an arrant Raſcal, and falſe Thief as thou art, Sirrah, let me ſee your back, and I adviſe you let me never hear, or ſee, that you fall any more a filching, leave your ſtealing, and live honeſtly, elſe I ſwear unto thee by the faith of an honeſt man, I will cauſe thee to be whipt, or ſent to the Galleys. Being thus curſtly uſed by him, firſt kickt and beaten, and afterwards roundly rated, they that were preſent, taking him to be a good honeſt Gentleman, and a merrifull minded man, they were content to let us go, and ſo did we ſcape that ſtorm by his means, whereas otherwiſe we had been overtaken therewith.

But ſome again, were ſuch hard-hearted people, and of that ſtubborn and perverſe nature, that they did ſet upon us like fierce Dragons, and were ſo full of rage and choller, that nothing could pacifie their wrath, but did ſtill preſſe us more and more, and nothing would content them, but our impriſonment, whipping, hanging, all was too little for us. They would firſt ſee us clapt up ſafe, and afterwards talk with us at leiſure. To ſuch rough-hewen natures, and boyſterous diſpoſitions, our Captain would come to the parties, whom we had wrong'd, and tell them: Do not foyl your hands with ſuch a filthy Rogue as this is, give him an hundred kicks, and let him go like a Villain and Thief as he is, but do not cauſe him to be apprehended, you ſee he is a poor Raſcal, and if you commit him to priſon, there will he ſtarve, and be eaten up with lice; and what pleaſure can you take in the deſtruction of ſuch a ragged ſnake, who in himſelf is ſo wretched a Soul already? And with that, crying out, Thou ungracious unlucky Villain, they would give us ſuch jobs, ſuch puſhes, ſuch ſhocks, and juſtlings, and thruſt us with that violence from them, that they would make us to root up the earth with our noſes, and onely thereby to free us out of their hands, who had us in hold.

But if any one ſhould be ſo ſtiffe, and ſo hard-laced, that nothing could move him to pity, nothing work our inlargement, we uſed our beſt endeavour to get from them; if that would not ſerve the turn, we would ſtand upon our juſtification, & not ſtick (and that ſtoutly too) to tell this, or that other to his teeth that he lyde in his throat, and that we were as honeſt

men as he, or the beſt of them all; And whileſt we were thus ſtriving to be gone, our Captain would interpoſe himſelf under colour of pacifying the matter, and would help to part us by his comming in between us, and ſo free us from out their clutches, and ſet us at liberty. And if need were, (when all this would not ſerve the turn) he did throw a bone amongſt them, and would ſeek ſome occaſion or other, provoking them by words to fall to blowes, quieting the leſſer tumult by the greater, and ſo made a ſhift to ſcuffle away, and to diſimbroil our ſelves of this troubleſome buſineſſe.

At other times, when we were running away with that which we had ſtollen, and were hardly followed, even cloſe at the heels of us, one of our fellows would come athwart him that purſued us, and ſtepping out juſt before him, would detain him for a while, asking him, what was the matter? what troubled him, that he made ſuch haſt? who it was that had done him wrong, together with the nature of the injury? and ſo would not ſuffer him to paſſe on, as if he had deſired to make peace, and to pacifie both parties. And albeit he would not give him any anſwer, (for that his buſineſſe required haſt) yet were it more, or leſſe, that he thus entertained the time with him, every the leaſt delay, were it never ſo little, was enough to make us, to our great advantage, gain ground of him; howbeit, they that flie, have alwayes the ſtart of them that follow; and fear, in ſuch caſes, doth evermore clap wings to our feet. Whereas they that run after others do naturally grow quickly weary, and beat themſelves out of breath; partly, being ſtifled with the heat of paſſion, and partly, out of the mind that they have to do another a ſhrewd turn, which doth much puzzle them, notwithſtanding that they ſtrive and labour all that they can to overtake him: but it is impoſſible to ſtrive againſt nature, which doth ever favour thoſe that deſire to ſave themſelves. Thus by one means or other, they were ſtill detained, and miſt of their purpoſe.

Other-whiles, they would be bound for our forth-coming, give their words for our truth and honeſty, and though we had gone ſheer away with that which we had ſtollen, they would plead for innocencie, eſpecially, not being taken with the theft; for by this time we had convey'd it ſome three or four ſtreets off, where there was no more news heard of it. So that by their good words, their interceſſions, and their being bound for us body for body, we were freed from that evil opinion, which before was conceived of us. So that by hook or by crook, this way, or that way, one or another, we went through-ſtitch with our buſineſs, *maugre* all the world, or though ſpite ſhould have done her worſt; for we had ſtill one trick or other, when it came to a dead lift, wherewithall to ſerve our turn.

But once, being more careleſſe than I ought to have been, I would needs go forrage alone by my ſelf, without ever a ſcout to ſcour the coaſt, and though I ſhould have taken one along with me, I perſwaded my ſelf, as the caſe then ſtood with me, he would have ſteaded me little, or nothing at all. And thus it was.

My ſins (for it could be nothing elſe) had drawn me one day forth of the City, to walk abroad, and take the air, and coming neer unto a river ſide, where in a meadow upon the graſſe were laid out a great many linen cloaths a drying, and the woman that lookt unto them, ſitting cloſe, to ſhade her ſelf from the heat of the Sun, in a little hollow cleft of an old wall, that was not farre off; methought the linen needed no more drying, and whether it did or no, it was all one to me, wet or dry, it made no great matter, either way (ſo I might have what I lookt for) would ſerve my turn well enough. I had a moneths mind to fold up two or three of the fineſt and neweſt ſhirts, that were there, thinking with my ſelf, that they would fit well with my body: and ſo very eaſily and fairly I took them up; but fearing leſt any body ſhould come in the mean while, and ſpy what I was a doing, I lapt them up in haſt, not being willing to ſtay to fold them there, but to do that at more leaſure, when I came to my lodging. The good woman did not ſee what I did, for her back was all this while towards me; but there was not one wanting, who ſhrewdly complaining of me, not running (to make me the more ſecure) but walking a good round pace towards her, adviſed her thereof.

This poor woman, when ſhe heard how the world went, ſets me out a throat, whoſe ſhrill ſound did aſcend as high as heaven. And having a little girle, that ſhe had there, to look unto the reſt of the linnen, ſhe began to run after me. So that I ſeeing my ſelf in this ſtrait, I diſſembled the matter as well as I could, and without either turning my face towards her, or mending my pace, I walked ſoberly & demurely along, as if ſhe had nothing to do with me; letting (as I went along) my ware fall to the ground, going on ſtill as I did before, without any perturbation of countenance, or inlarging my ſteps, thinking with my ſelf, that when this wicked woman had recovered that which ſhe loſt, ſhe would therewith

have been contented, & rested quiet: but she did not leave me so; for if she cried out before, now she made such a noyse, and sent forth such a loud clamour, that the whole field did ring of the peal, which that shrill clapper of hers made. And for that we were not far from the Town, nor in a solitary place, that was free from company, the out-cries that she made, were heard by many; insomuch, that great store of all sorts of people came running in, especially boyes and little children, besides a great number of dogs, barking and bawling, as if they had been mad, comming about me as thick as bees, being confounded, and ready almost to run out of my wits with that tumultuous hurry, and horrible stir they made. And some young lads, which fell in with these lesser beagles, to make the cry the fuller, when they understood of the businesse, were ready to swallow me up alive, from whose power (so violently were they bent against me) it was impossible for me to escape. From that day forward I began to stand in fear of this little frie, which heretofore I was never afraid of. These little minowes were they, that by persecuting of me, did undo me.

When I heard *Sayavedra* say so, there presently came into my minde a famous drunkard in *Madrid*, who being kickt and spurn'd, and mightily abused by the boyes that had got about him; when he came to the end of the street, he stoops me down, and takes up a couple of stones, and holding one in one hand, and the other in the other, leaning himself against a wall, he said thus unto them: No more, no more (my good boyes) it is enough; stay here, stay here (sweet Children) for it is not fit you should go any farther. And therefore (my pretty hearts) let me intreat you to go back, and not trouble me or your selves any longer; for I am very well satisfied with those courtesies I have already received from you, for the which I kindly thank you. Otherwise, I have nothing to return you in requital but these stones, which I shall freely bestow upon you, though it cost me the laying on; so that some of you, I believe, will be better paid for your pains than you expect. Whereupon they seeing him thus resolute, they sneakt away one by one, and let the poor man alone, who afterward went quietly along about his busines. If *Sayavedra* had taken the like course, he might peradventure have had the like successe.

But he, continuing his discourse, went on and said: surely, where this rude rabble once bands and links it self together, no good man can do ought that is good, nor any honest man passe in quiet for them. I sought now to flie from them, as a man would flie from the gallowes: and I was in a good way toward it, and wanted little of comming thither. For, by seeking to flie from their hands, I fell into those of the Justices; who had now caught me in their net, whence there was no hope to scape.

When I saw this misfortune was fallen upon me: I made no more ado, but sent presently to my Captain, advising him how the case stood with me, who as soon as he understood of it, made all the hast he could unto me, was with me (as they say) ere a man could say *this*; and well instructed me, what I should both say and do. That done, he went to the Notary, telling him that he knew me to be well descended, that I was honourably born, both by father and mother, and of as ancient an house as any was in *Spain*: and that it was not possible, nor was it to be beleev'd, that such a Gentleman as I was would commit so foul a fact.

But say (which cannot sink into my head) that it should be true, it is not a thing so much to be wondred at; for that he might do it out of youthfulnesse (which is incident now and then to play such kind of idle pranks) or out of want, lacking money, and being loth to beg or borrow, or forced thereunto out of pure hunger; and therefore chose rather to hazard than famish his person. Besides, it is a matter of no moment, a toy, a trifle, a thing not to be made any reckoning of, as well in regard of its small value, as also in respect of the Gentlemans quality, and the nobleness of his house. What with these good words, and something else that he did besides, within some two hours after I was freed out of prison: and (had God been pleased so to have it) I could have wisht I might not have come out then, nor three hours after that; nay, not till dark night: but since it was his good will and pleasure that it should succeed as it did with me, blessed be his name for ever, good or ill must be welcome from his hand. Sin, that Catchpole of Conscience, that churlish Porter that keeps account of our actions, and has an eye to what we do, who had still persecuted me at the very threshold of the doors whereinto I entred, was not unmindful to do the like by me in that of the Prison, when I was ready to come out: for even as I was putting my foot over the threshold, who should I meet full butt, but Master *Dasario*? who came thither to free a prisoner.

As soon as he saw me, he presently knew me, and withall pusht me so violently back,

that I fell flat upon my back to the ground; and then coming fiercely upon me, that he might hold me, while he had me at this advantage, and calling to the keeper, committed me anew, and followed the accusation so hard against me, that neither intreaties, nor any offers to make him satisfaction for his kirtle, were able to make him surcease his suit. He was a powerful man, I used all possible diligences; but neither did my pleading that I was a Gentleman; nor the tender nesse of my years, prevail so far, as to bring me fairly off. And, as if they had done me a kind of charity, and bestowed an almes on me, by way of translation and agreement, as if they had shewed me all the favour in the world, they gave me such an heavy sentence, that I shall never forget it while I live. I went for shirts, and they stript me of mine from my shoulder to my waist, banishing me from thence for ever. I had my payment, but the block head had not his Kirtle: see how a wilful fool, such an one as this was, stood in his own light; being more willing to do me a mischief, than himself a pleasure; and to lose his goods rather than to let me loose: which he might easily have recovered of me, if he would have suffered me to stay in that City.

Well, I was forced to forgoe *Naples*, and with it, all my old friends and acquaintance; I packs up all my trinkets together, and that poor pittance that I had pickt up by mine own industry, and departed from thence, wandring up and down *Italy*, till I came to *Bologna*, where *Alessandro* received me into his service: who did usually go out of that City, to fetch in some booty or other; and having sped well he returned home in safety. When we were in *Rome*, and came in unto you, when you were in that thrust and throng of people, we did not so much intend your good, as expect that some further quarrel would have growne thereupon, whereby we might with the more safety have got some Cloaks or Hats: but that occasion being taken away, missing thus of our purpose, we began to plot how we might commit this theft, making me (as their manner was) *Gabeza de Lobo*, the Wools head, the instrument of their profit; whilest they kept their own fingers out of the fire, and would be sure to be out of danger of Gun shot. This story was he telling me, when we were now come to our Journeys end. And so ceasing to talk any farther of it, we came into our Inne, where we presently had that provided for us which was fitting for travellers that were not to make any long stay.

## CHAPTER VI.

*Sayavedra meets him Milan with a friend of his, that served a Merchant; Guzman de Alfarache hears a witty plot to rob him.*



With a great deal of attention and admiration had *Sayavedra* all this journey tied mine eares to his tongue. And during the rest of the way, till we reached to *Milan*, we were never out of matter; but kept the ball still up, he telling one tale to me, and I returning another to him: so that our discourse never made a fault; but was (being both good players) well maintained and kept up between us. But I had a great contradiction in my self, and could hardly be brought to believe, that man of noble birth, sons of such worthy Parents, should suffer themselves to be thus violently haled by their passions; that, forgetting the respect due to their blood and Country, (the remembrance whereof should cause them to go on in an honourable and civil course of life,) do notwithstanding commit base and infamous actions, by robbing others of their goods and honour: for in very truth, he that loseth his wealth, loseth both the one and the other; for every man is so far forth esteemed and honoured, as he is rich and wealthy. Whereupon I said secretly to my self; surely, if *Sayavedras* father left him so rich as he himself reporteth he did, how comes it (quoth I) to passe, that he is turned thief? and that he takes more pleasure to follow this lewd kinde of life, and to indure these shameful affronts, than to live in esteem and reputation in his own Country? If we do ill, we therefore do it, because it carries a fair appearance with it, and shews unto us certain shadows, or a kind of resemblance of some good matter or other, but in suffering such indignities as he hath done, there is no good thereof, no colour at all for it. But I presently recalled this rash censure, and suddenly taking up my self, I fell to excusing of him, and began upon better deliberation to say with my self: It may be he went from home being a child, as I did. And so, considering the relation that he had made unto me, mine own proper experience represented themselves unto me, & those lewd courses that my self had run. But I afterwards

wards came again to my self, and said; But suppose all this to be true which he hath said: Why did not he turn over a new leaf when he had the use of reason, and came to be a man, taking upon him the profession of a Souldier? He might answer likewise for himself; and say; Why did not I so too? I see a Mote in anothers mans eye, and cannot behold the Beam that is in mine own.

Military profession is a pleasing thing, and hath many motives to draw a mans affection thereunto. They have good pay, they passe well enough with it, it teacheth a man handsome, it makes him to forget his dainty fare at home, and boldly to adventure his life to win honour, and to do his Countrey service. But they pay dearly for it; they have too hard a bargain of it; it is a kinde of taking up of money at extream rates, and excessive interest, for to satisfie a debt of lesser value. They must serve long before they can come to any thing, rise betimes in the morning, watch all night, have his shoulders pincht with the heavy weight of a Musquet, stand Centinel for the space of full four hours, and two at the least, when he is *Centinela perdida*, without budging, or moving but a foot from that place where they have once set him: let it rain, thunder, or lighten never so fast; freeze, snow, or blow the windes never so hard; let the weather be as sharp as sharp may be, all is one, he must stand to his tackling. And when he hath done all this, like a Souldier and a brave fellow, when he shall return home safe to his lodging (not reckoning those that miscarry by this means) he hath not so much as a Candle to light him to bed, nor fire to dry either his wet, or frozen Carcasse, nor bread to put in his mouth, nor wine to wash down those crums, being hunger-starv'd, all mire and dirt, all to be rent and torn, but not a ragge of comfort. And therefore considering the hard life that a Souldier leads, and how ill they are rewarded, hazarding their own lives to save other mens, I do not much blame *Sayavedra* that he did not turn Souldier.

But for his elder brother, *Senior Juan Marti*, or *Mateo Luxan* (leaving him to make choise of one of the two, as shall stand best with his worships liking) who was of age sufficient, when his father died, for to discern betwixt ill and good, who had a good house to put his head in, and good means to maintain it, and to have lived richly and plentifully, and in good reputation and credit in his own Countrey, what a Devil mov'd him, or what hellish temptation came into his minde to neglect his own businesse, and foolishly thrust himself to intermeddle in other folks matters, and to fall at last to stealing of Cloaks? How much better would it have been for him to have employed his person in some honourable entertainment, or other? He was a good Grammarian, he had studied the Laws, and might (if he would himself) have easily come to be a Doctor.

But haply, these and the like do think, That there needs no more to make a Thief, then to say; I will be a Thief. And that all shall succeed as happily with them as themselves could wish it. But in good sooth, I must beat them out of this errour, and plainly tell them; That there is more in it, than so. That it will cost them no small labour, and withall they must incurre a great deal of danger. Besides, I cannot well tell you, whether, or no, there be so many rules amongst the Lawyers, as he needs to have, who means to prove a good Thief indeed. For say, that there be two in the Town, that emulate one another, and contend for the victory, and that the one after a great deal of stride, and stiff standing out, will at last concurre with the other, who hath gotten him the name and fame of all that professeth that belongs to your *Cocoquismo*, and *Germania*, the true art of filching and stealing, and hath show'd himself an excellent Proficient in that Science, I can assure you, on my credit, he had need carry a close hand, and look narrowly to his businesse. For, to my seeming, if that be true, (as I think it was) which *Sayavedra* delivered unto me, he was an unfortunate pilchard, a kinde of rotten Herring; and I, in comparison of him, a great goodly Whale. Yet for all this, did not I dare (fearing I should prove my self a dunce, when I came to be examined by the masters of that faculty) to stand for my grace, nor pretend the Cap and Hood, as doubting, how I should be able to answer for my degree, if I were well canvast by those that should oppose me. *Sayavedra* and his brother (doubtlesse) did flatter themselves, and were truely perswaded, that with their poor dry petty theefts, ill seasoned, without any good taste, sweet savour, or any the least pleasant relish in the world, they might boldly go into the Schools, and there read in the *Regia professor* his Chair, their solemne Lectures for their Doctorship. They did haply think with themselves, that there was no more in it; then what a good plain Countrey-fellow said, that was a kinde of poor Ale-house, in a little Village, called *Almonacid de Zurita*, in the Kingdom of *Toledo*, who having made a watring place for the Town Cattle to drink at, when he had finisht it, and made it hand-

ſome, having fitted it with Ceſterns, and whatſoever elſe he in his wiſdom held to be neceſſary, he called the wiſdom of the Town together, the whole body of the Councel, where in their preſence, he cauſed the Conduit pipes to be opened, and to let out the water, that they might give their judgement and opinion, how they lik't of it? One ſaid, the trough ſtood too high; another too low. The *Alcalde*, ſeeing his work found fault withall, was not half well pleaſed with it, but ſcorning to be daſht out of countenance, and over-born by his inferiours, he ſteps himſelf to the trough, and there his worſhip drinks: And when he had done, ſtepping backward about ſome two ſtrides; or three aboutes, looking angerly enough upon them, he firſt ſpits, then wipes his mouth, and laſtly ſayes unto them Gods nigs, (my maſters) you need not finde ſuch fault with it, there is no more to be ſaid in this matter: for being that I can make a ſhift to drink at it, there is never a beaſt but may do the like, if he have a minde to drink.

Even juſt ſo is it with your young Thieves that are freſh-water Souldiers, and not well beaten to the buſineſſe, who think all things eaſie, that they take in hand, and when they hear of ſuch a famous Thief, and that he hath done wonders in that kinde, will not ſtick to ſay; Tuſh, this is nothing: We can do as much as this, and more too. But I promiſe you on my honeſt word, that ſuch as theſe, who have ſo good a conceit of themſelves, that may be ſaid of them, which another Countrey-fellow, not far from hence, dwelling in *Mancha*, ſaid to other fellows, who earneſtly contented about the foal of a Mare: One ſaid, it was a Horſe: No, ſaid the other, it is a Mule: Then a third perſon, that was in their company, drawing nearer and nearer, and rounding about the beaſt, and viewing him again, after he had throughly marked his muſle, and his ears, he cries out aloud; Gods-bores, what a deal of do is here about nothing? You are a copple of Cox-combs both of you: for I can aſſure you, this is as very an Aſſe, as my Father. He that will boaſt himſelf to be a Thief, and deſires to be liſted into the rolle of thoſe that have gotten greateſt fame, let him endeavour to do things bravely, let him be an honourable Thief, and not of that baſeneſſe of minde, as to ſtoop ſo low as to rob an Hearb-wifes ſhop of a rope of Onions, or Tops and Gigs, and ſuch other toyes, as Children uſe to play withall, which ſerve but from hand to mouth, to feed other Thieves withall; who will uſe thee no otherwiſe, then men do their ſlaves: you muſt pay them dayly tribute, or elſe you muſt be packing; they will not care a pin for you. And yet for theſe petty thefts (though thou think'ſt to ſcape with them, as things of nothing) they may chance to chain thee to the Gallies, if not halter thee at the Gallows. A man ſhould not (me thinks) ſo much under-value his own worth, as to proſtitute his life to danger, and to lay open his ſhoulders to ſhame for bables and trifles; nor is it fit, that for ſo little, a man ſhould pay ſo much. That a man ſhould be ſuch a fool, as to indanger his neck for a Kirtle, or a couple of ſhirts. *Quien camiſas hurta, jubon eſpera*; He that ſteals a ſhirt, lives in hope to have a doublet too. Let ſuch a white-liverd-whoreſon, do that, which that valiant Captain *Capin Vitelo* adviſeth: *El mercader, que ſu trato no entiende, cierre la tienda*; That Merchant, that underſtands not his trade, let him ſhut up his ſhop.

But to let theſe Thieves 'alone and to come home to my ſelf; what could I now do, if I ſhould come to be put to it? What's become of all my cunning thefts? I doubt me, I ſhould be to ſeek, how, where, and which way to begin. The Art of it, is gone from me, but not the fear. Every thing hath its courſe, and its time, it is now a great while ago ſince I finger'd my *fleam*, or *lancent*, or that I did let any man bloud, my hand is nothing ſo nimble as it was, it is grown ſlow and dull, and knows not well where to prick the vein. Believe it, there is no ſuch Maſter as *Practice*. Uſe, and exerciſe, are excellent things to keep the hand in ure: Which when it is wanting, the underſtanding gathers moſſe, waxeth mould, ly, and grows ruſty.

When we were come to *Milan*, we kept vacation for three, or four dayes, For I durſt not as yet adventure to play. I was loath to have any thing to do with your men of wvar, for they alwayes play very warily, Your Souldiers are ſubtile cunning gameſters, and above all, bear a moſt malicious minde againſt a mans money. They are never quiet till they have it. All, or the moſt part of them, would ſeek to play upon ſome advantage, or other. I could not make uſe of my tricks, nor would they permit me to put them upon them, yet I muſt, whether I would, or no, be forced to give way to theirs. Beſides, of them I was ſure to get but little, but might be in election to loſe much. I was not minded to do any thing there, ſave onely to round the Citie, to ſee what a manner of thing it was, what their Traffick, and ſuch other greatneſſes as it ſhould afford our ſight, and ſo afterwards to bid it farewell.

And

And being thus resolved, I went to walk all that day from shop to shop, where I saw so many curiosities, that I was taken with great admiration in the beholding of them, as also in the great trade, that was there driven, even in lesser things that were of meaner value.

Standing one day in the midst of the Market-place, there came to *Sayavedra*, a handsome young youth, honestly clad, and well behav'd, and both in his garb and fashion, a very fine *Spaniard*. But because his back was towards me, I could not then discern, nor understand more of him, but that they went a little aside off from me, where alone by themselves, they entertained talk a good while: which put me in a great muse, thinking with my self, what might be the cause, that these two should treat together with that secresie, not having (as I did imagine with my self) ever seen one another before. Notwithstanding, that I might not break off their discourse, to the end that I might see whither it tended, I stood still, and did not move from the place wherein I was, having still an eye, lest they should get out of my sight, observing their proceedings, and that if they should chance to go towards my lodging, I might (take the start of them, and be there before them. And ever and anon, mine eye was upon them, but yet kept me still where I was, to the end that they likewise might not shift a foot, and so slip from me.

For, I did consider with my self, if I should now call him unto me, ask him, what it was they talked of, *Sayavedra* might take occasion to make what excuse he list himself, and might make me this answer, that by reason of my calling him away, they had not finished their discourse, nor as yet entertained talk to any purpose. Whereupon for my better satisfaction, I thought it my best course to continue there a little longer, and to leave them a large field wherein to expatiate their minds, for I had no such earnest businesse else-where, as might presse me to be gone. Now when it was almost dinner-time, this young youth took his leave, and went about his businesse: And I was likewise willing to do the like, for all this while I was wonderfull jealous, and had a strong suspicion, that they had plotted together to put a trick upon me; And *Sayavedra* not saying a word to me, nor I to him, my fear was thereby the more increased, and began more and more to doubt, what their drift might be. Watching him with no lesse care then a Cat would watch a Mouse. For suspicion is a shrewd worm, which lies still gnawing at the heart, nor is it to be held a vice, when it settles it self upon a vicious man. For, accordingly as the natures and conditions of men are, so have we reason to be more, or lesse suspicious. Fearing every man so far forth, as his fashion and carriage may occasion his fear. But for as much as the desire we have after this, or that other thing, makes us to rush violently, and break through the bars of all difficulties whatsoever, although I would fain have held peace, and did strive all that I could to keep in this tongue of mine; yet could I hold no longer, (no though my life had layen upon it) but I must needs ask him, who that young man was, and what might be the subject of this their long discourse? yet did I forbear for the present, making no words thereof till I had dined, and then taking my time, calling *Sayavedra* unto me, I said thus unto him: That young man that was with you this morning, me thinks I have (if I be not much mistaked) seen him heretofore in *Rome*. Is not his name *Mendoca*?

No Sir, (said *Sayavedra*) his name is *Aguilera*; nor hath he his name for nought: for he is an Eagle that will fly at any thing, nothing comes amisse to him, he is still ready upon all occasions. He is a good fellow, and a fine companion; he is likewise a brother of the Company, and such a one, as none of them all can out-strip him, he hath more tricks than a hundred of them, there is more resort to his Lectures, then to all the other Readers beside, put them all together.

O, this *Aguilera* hath tickling tallons, and what he once seizes on, is sure his own, he goes sheer away with it, and 'tis never heard of any more. He hath a quick apprehension, a nimble wit, a strong brain, a sound judgement, he is an excellent pen-man, and such an Accomptant, either for the keeping of a Merchants book, or summing up of any reckonings whatsoever, that I know not his fellow. We have known one another this many years, we have travelled together, and endured many particular troubles, and perils. And now he hath been at me, to put me upon one, which may turn to our exceeding either great good, or hurt, it being with us, as with those that go to Sea, either a happy voyage, or a miserable ship-wrack. For he that will go to Sea, must resolve before-hand to encounter with dangers; especially, being that between our death, and our life, there is no more than the springing of a plank, or the slipping of a board.

He gave me an accoune, how he came to this City, with a purpose to deal as well as he

could some means whereby to live. But because he would not inguiph himself, before he had first sounded the water, and that he might not within two dayes after his arrival, be taken up for a Vagabond, or some master-lesse-hound, he had by good hap lighted upon an entertainment, which might quit cost without suspicion; for he had placed himself with a Merchant of this Citie, who had received him into his service for the goodnesse of his hand, & hath serv'd him now a year, and somewhat more very faithfully and truely, looking when he might play the jade with him, and give him a sound kick with his heels, and get safe away from him, as Mules use to do, when they once come to seven years old; who kick at those that have kept them.

He further told me, that we should lay our heads together, and draw one, or two good fellows into our company, and joyn together, to knead such a Cake, and to make us such a swinging Pasty, that we might feed our fills, and free our selves from this poor and miserable kinde of life, wherein now we live. But I was loath to hearken thereunto, holding it not so convenient, for two respects.

First, because I found my self already so well fitted to my minde, that I did not desire to live any better life, then that I now did with you. And secondly, for that a great deal of consideration is to be required, before a man leap out of one course of life into another. A little (I knew) could not content us; and to carry away much, it was impossible, wanting conveniency of means to do it. Here, we could not hide our selves out of the way, or keep our selves secret above four dayes; nor could we secure our selves by flight, but that we should be taken, before we had gone four steps out of Town, so that we should either leave our necks there longer then the mark, or our persons so tack't and so tortur'd, that they would never after be usefull unto us. We gave, and took; he argued, I answered: in conclusion, he prest me hard unto it: but I stood off; so that we did not joyn issue, and all that had past between us, was to no purpose. Many designs, many devices were told to and fro between us; but I did not like of any one of his propositions. For when the conclusion does not handsomely follow, the means thereunto are impertinent, and the ground naught. So for that time he left me, because his hour was come, that he must hye him home; nor would he willingly be wanting, when his Master should have occasion to use him. Hastning perhaps his departure the sooner, because he saw he could do no good upon me, and that all our talk was to no end in the world.

This, that *Sayavedra* had told me, did neither secure my suspicion, nor work an absolute unbelief in me, because I thought with my self, it was not a thing unlikely. I called for my Cloak, and out of doors we went, with a purpose to walk abroad in the fields to recreate our selves. And albeit, the most part of that evening, we talk't of other things; this fear, was never out of my head, but wheresoever I went, or whatsoever I did, I was still thinking upon, and it would never out of my minde, devising with my self, whether I were best to believe him, or no; or whether trusting to his honesty, and depending on the profession of his love unto me, he might play the Jack with me, and strike me, like a shovel-boord piece (being now a ledger) into the box, and himself remain upon the boord in my place. And if he should thus play the Fox with me, of whom should I complain, but mine own folly? or whom can I justly blame but my self? A man may bear with one slippery trick that is plaid him, and if he pocket it with silence, or otherwise dissemble it, he may very well be excused; but to be cozened twice one after another, and by one and the same party, he deserves to have the Asses saddle clapt on his back. What assurance can I have from this man, or how may I dare to trust him, since (as it is in the Proverb) *nunca buena viga se hizo de buen calabazo*; a crooked Cucumber, never made straighter after. He that is naturally given to knavish tricks, will hardly, or never leave them. And were not this a fine one above the rest, that he should put a full stopcado upon me, and go brag when he had done, that he had beaten a Master of defence at his own weapon? Did I not deserve to be laught at, if I should suffer him to carry away the bucklers from me in this fashion? But as mine eye was never off from the door; so my hand was still upon my distaffe. I was now become another *Argos* in mine own businesse; and another *Ulysses*, to look to his water. Plotting with my self, how (if that were true, which he told me) I might help them to come off safely and cleanly with this businesse, in case it might be a matter of some moment and consideration, and that I might be sure it would free them from beggery, and make them for ever after to live like men. For, to bestow a great deal of cost upon that, which will yield but little profit, were foolishnesse, if not meer madnesse. There is no thrift, no good husbandry in it. The imploying of our pains, & our purse ought to be answerable to the gains and profits, that will come of it. For a man

to

to limbeck his brains, a whole, nay, many nights, for Moon-ſhine in the water, or ſuch a poor commodity, as will ſcarce pay for a meals meat, is ſuch a foolery, as no wiſe man will trouble his head about it. But becauſe it might happily prove a rich voyage, and might haply ſpeed better then we were aware of, when we had done walking, and were now come home to ſupper, ſeeing *Sayavedra* look ſomewhat ſad and heavy, as if ſomething did trouble him, I ſaid unto him; Me thinks *(Sayavedra)* thou robbeſt thy ſelf of thy mirth, becauſe thou canſt not rob others of their money. This Merchants great wealth doth greatly diſquiet thee. Is that which thou muſeſt upon (for I ſee thou art in a brown ſtudy) ſome rare plot, one of *Archimedes* his quaint inventions? I can aſſure thee, I know a friend of mine, that would make a third in this buſineſſe, and a fellow I tell you, that will not ſhrink in the wetting, ſo as it may be a good fat purchaſe indeed, none of theſe lean carrion commodities, but one that may have ſome good tack and ſubſtance in it.

What tack, what ſubſtance would you have, ſayes *Sayavedra*? There is twenty thouſand Ducates, and a better penny to be had, if we can handſomely light upon it. There is cloath enough (Sir) to cut out, to content us all, if we will our ſelves, which we may order and diſpoſe, as we ſhall beſt think fit. Well (quoth I) unto him; I pray God, it come not to be cut out for us into ſhrowds (you know my meaning) and then all will be well. But I prithee tell me one thing; ſeeing thou ſtand'ſt thus plodding, and muſing on the matter, is it poſſible that thou haſt not yet ſetled upon ſome one invention, or other, that may ſerve the turn, make the game ſure, and ſtrike it dead at thy foot?

No in good faith (Sir) not any, replies *Sayavedra*; I cannot hit upon the right joynt; I have now loytred ſo long, that I am as far to ſeek, as if I were but newly entred into my A.B.C. I have taken my pleaſure, and lived ſo much at eaſe of late, that through too much idleneſſe, thoſe ſpirits and bloud, that ſhould quicken my underſtanding, and put life into it, are grown dull and muddy; and my wits for want of uſe, as ruſty as old iron. A thouſand times, *I* ſeek to fall into my old trot, but *I* have ſcarce ſtrucken two ſtrokes, but *I* grow reſty and lazie, and am not able for my life to pace one true ſtep, or to bring my ſelf to that perfection and readineſſe of hand, to winde you this way, or that way (or whither-ſoever you would have me to go) as *I* was wont to do. Many projects proffer themſelves unto me, but *I* pitch upon none, as miſliking all; propoſing this at that, and t'other courſe; but in concluſion, none ſorted to my liking.

When *I* heard him ſay ſo, *I* thus made anſwer thereunto. Since it is a buſineſſe of that importance as thou ſayeſt, what ſhare ſhall *I* have out of it, if *I* ſhall rid you of this care, and bring you (like valiant Conquerors) bravely off with the victory?

Sir, (ſaid *Sayavedra*) my part and my perſon are both at your diſpoſal; but as for *Aguilera*, you were beſt talk with him your ſelf, and when you two are agreed, *I* make account the buſineſſe is as good as ended, and all ſhall be as we would have it.

Go too then (ſaid *I*) go and ſeek him out, and ſee if you can come to ſpeak with him, but with that ſecreſie, that you be ſure you be not ſeen by any of his maſters houſe; and wiſh him (when his leaſure will give him leave) that he and *I* might talk a word together, and it ſhall not be long ere he and *I* be better acquainted, being *I* know him (by your report) ſo well already.

He did ſo: ſending a Ticket ſecretly unto him; and when we were met, *I* began to wyre-draw him, and to queſtion him ſomewhat more particularly, touching his Maſters diſpoſition, his condition, and quality, what ſtore of wealth he had, in what commodities it did moſt conſiſt; how and where it lay; what monies he had in preſent caſh, and under what Keys? When *I* had done; he began to make his relation unto me in this manner, as *I* here deliver unto you.

Sir, *I* aſſure my ſelf *Sayavedra* hath ſufficiently informed you of me; yet my ſelf ſhall give you to underſtand, that *I* am by my profeſſion a Caulker of ſhips, & a reaſonable good Marriner, but as poor, as poor may be. And albeit *I* am not ignorant, that thouſands with a great deal leſſe wit, have grown to a great deal of wealth in the vvorld, yet *I* have ſeen ſome others more able, and more deſerving, to have come to the Gallows, my ſelf being none of thoſe, that have leaſt deſerved it: for which eſcape *I* render infinite thanks to his Divine Majeſty. It is a year and ſomewhat more (which is the time of my abode in this Citie) that *I* have ſerved a Merchant, and have taken a great deal of pains in his ſervice. And it is about ſome four moneths ſince, that he hath made me the keeper of his caſh. All his books are in my hands, but his moneys in his own. *Amo & timeo*: *I* love, and yet *I* am afraid; nor can *I* reſolve with my ſelf, how *I* may ſo handſomely rob him, that *I* may not afterwards come to

cut Capers in the Aire, and to venture a ſtretching, for that which is not worth the catching, it were better for me to continue ſtill as I am. But where much is to be had, a man will hazard himſelf much. Here is ſtore of Gold to be had, and he is worthy to wear it that wins it. I have communicated my minde to *Sayavedra*, for it is more then one man can do, to manage ſuch a piece of buſineſſe as this is. He had need to conferre with ſome confident friend, or other, or more, whom he is aſſured he may ſafely truſt. For, as mens opinions are divers; and ſo many heads, ſo many mindes; every one delivereth (as his judgement ſhall direct him) which is the beſt courſe he thinks to be taken. And ſometimes it ſo falleth out, *Quod bonus dormitat Homerus*: That the wiſeſt man doth not alwayes hit upon the right: when as a ſhallower brain doth now and then wade, and that haply too, through the deep fords of humane affaires. And when, this laſt night, I received *Sayavedra's* Ticket, wherein he ſignified, that he was deſirous to ſpeak with me, I thought it was no idle errand that he went about, but that there was ſomething in the wind, what ever it were. For I have known him a long time; and that it is not his faſhion to put forth to Sea, but when he hath ſome good prize in chaſe. And I am verily perſwaded, that if this matter be wiſely handled, and that we finde good firm footing in the paſſage of this ford, and through our own indiſcretion, do not wilfully caſt away our ſelves, we may bring this buſineſſe bravely about, and make our ſelves rich for ever.

Touching the wealth, I can truely affirm unto you, (as one that knows and hath often ſeen it) that thoſe commodities, which he hath now in cellerage and other ware-houſes within his own doors, which to Gentlemen, and others that want moneys, he ſells upon credit at exceſſive dear rates, buying them afterwards at eaſie prizes by the help of his Brokers, amount to more then twenty thouſand Ducates. Wherefore, oftentimes he delivers me the Keyes, out of the great truſt and confidence that he hath of mine honeſty. Beſides, he knows very well, that thoſe bales are too big for me to carry away, and therefore will ſpare the labour to lade my back with ſuch unprofitable burthens as my weak ſhoulders are unable to bear. That which he hath offered up in two iron cheſts, in ſeveral ſorts of Coyn, come to ſome fifteen thouſand Ducates, and better. And in his *Eſcritorio*, or Tye, that he hath in his ſhop, ſome twelve dayes ſince, did he ſhut up a delicate dapple gray Cat, as gentle, and as tame as my ſelf, not with his eyes ſparkling, nor his nayls ſcratching, nor his teeth as ſharp as any Razor, but cram'd full with Crowns, three thouſand Crowns, in good, dainty, brave Ruddocks, all good double Piſtolets, ſome pieces of two, and ſome of four, not one ſingle one amongſt them all. Which he hath purpoſely laid aſide for a certain Merchant, who is to take them upon uſe for ſix moneths, which he will look to be well paid for. There is not a man in all this Town that hath ſo bad a name, or is ſo ill belov'd as he is. There is no man that wiſhes him good, nor any whom he doth not hurt. There is not a true word that comes out of his mouth, he hath not one friend in all the vvorld, he is counted one of the Caterpillers of the Common-wealth, and ſuch a one as would cozen his own father (were he living) and Negociates with none, whom one time, or other, he doth not deceive. And well aſſured I am, that what ſoever loſſe ſhould light upon him, it would be (as they ſay) *en haz, y en paz*, with the good liking of all men. I know not one man that would be ſorry for it, but would laugh heartily at it, and make themſelves therewith exceeding merry.

He acquainted me likewiſe with his name, where he dwelt, in what place, and on which hand the Cabinet ſtood, as alſo the box, wherein the Cat lay. He made me ſo good and perfect a relation of every particular, that I could have gone thither blind-fold, and have clapt my hand upon it. I aſkt him, whether there would be any matter of difficulty in procuring the print of his Keys. He told me, that might eaſily be done; for that he had them all tyde to one little chain, as well thoſe that belong'd to the magazine of his merchandize, as thoſe that ſerved to open his iron cheſts, which I ordinarily brought unto him; when, having occaſion to take out ſomething that he was to uſe, he would call unto me to fetch them. But being (as he is) a moſt covetous miſerable wretch, his ſuſpicion & jealouſie was ſuch, that he would be ſure (for fear of the worſt) that his eye ſhould never be off from them, ſo loath was he to loſe their ſight. I was glad when I heard that this might be done with that facility, wherein I did imagine we ſhould have found the greateſt difficulty. Whereupon I ſaid unto him; That then, which we muſt firſt of all begin with, and muſt be the ground, whereon we muſt work, muſt be the getting of the print of theſe Keys in vvax, to the end that I may ſee the faſhion of them, and ſet ſome Smith a work, to make them out of hand, juſt in every reſpect according to that impreſſion which ſhall be preſented unto him in the vvax.

I moreover mentioned unto him, that it were fit, that vve ſhould agree upon that

which we ſhould ſteal from him for the preſent, which I would have to be carried in that diſcreet manner, that the muchneſſe of it ſhould not ſo amaze us, as that we ſhould not well know, which way to turn our hands: nor the meanneſſe draw us on to adventure our perſons for a trifle; where the danger ſhall be great, and profit ſmall.

Neither muſt we forget, that it is worthy our conſideration, to determine before-hand, how the ſpoyl ſhall be divided, that we may not afterwards differ, when we come to ſharing. Well, this theft being reſolved upon, ſay we ſhould come to finger this fine pretty purſe, this ſweet cat, with a delicate pudding of three thouſand Crowns in her belly, and ſo proportionably reckoning alike in the reſt, be it more, or leſſe, we will go ſo much, or ſo much a piece, taking them out by the tale, as they uſe to do, that ſell ſheep. And for this money, if we ſhall rob him ſmoothly of it, all of us running equally the hazard, either of the gallows, or the ſword, in all natural reaſon, it ought to be, that as the danger was equal, ſo the gain ſhould be equal. And ſo we being three of us, every one ought to have a third part. But in caſe we ſhall play this game ſafely, and wade dry-foot through this ford, and that you ſhall not be able to lay any fault to my charge, nor receive any puniſhment by my ill managing of the buſineſſe, every one of us coming off with a good reputation both of his life and fame, his Credit uncrackt, and the Nut (as they ſay) whole and ſound, ſo good an Architect, or Surveyour of the work, ſhall very well deſerve ſome reaſonable allowance over and above his fellow-labourers, for his good directions, and onely for his cunning contriving of the building, without any relation to the reſt of his pains, that he ſhall take therein. And this mean I to carry away, as in reaſon I ought, as a due that properly belongeth unto me. So that if I enter upon this buſineſſe, and be the onely projector to bring it handſomly about, I will have one entire third part, wholly to my ſelf, you ſhall make no ſcruple of it, but let it come fair and quietly to me, and the other two thirds that remain, ſhall be quietly divided into three parts, whereof you ſhall have one; *Sayavedra* another; and my ſelf the third. So that in this, we will all ſhare alike.

This was controverted to and fro, and much ado there was about it. But becauſe I had the *major* part of voyces on my ſide, to wit, mine own, and that of my ſervant *Sayavedra*, who was well contented therewith, and for that the goods which we ſtrove about, was not any lawfull partition of a father amongſt his Children, we quickly agreed on the matter. Well, I had the print of them delivered unto me in vvax, and cauſed the keys to be made out of hand, and *Anguilera* inſtructed us in the mean while, which were which; to the end that we being throughly informed, which were for the ſhop, which for the Cabinet, and which for one thing, & which for another, we might know the better how to uſe them, when we ſhould come to put this our enterpriſe in execution. I afterwards told *Aguilera*, that I would come the next morning, and ſpeak with his Maſter, and that he ſhould diligently obſerve all that I did either ſay, or do, for the better advancing of our future deſigns, and that every night we ſhould ſee one another, and lay our heads together for the better ordering and finiſhing of that task, which we had now taken in hand. He ſaid it ſhould be done, as I would have it; and ſo he went his wayes.

On the morrow I went to this Merchants ſhop, and in the preſence of his Servant *Aguilera*, after that we had complemented a little together, and ſaluted each other, I ſaid unto him; Sir, I am a Gentleman, that am but lately come to this Town, with a purpoſe to buy ſome rarities and curioſities, which this Citie affordeth, as well for mine own uſe, as to gratifie my friends, becauſe I am ſhortly to be married in mine own Countrey; and have for that end brought along with me a matter of three thouſand Ducates, and ſomewhat more, which are now at my Lodging; I have no acquaintance here in this Town; nor do I know the faſhion of this people; nor what their manner of proceeding and dealing is: Money you know is a dangerous commodity, and runs many hazards; eſpecially, when a man hath it not in that ſure and ſafe cuſtody as he deſireth. I know not what this, or that other man is: I lye in a Lodging, where many others lodge as well as my ſelf; no leſſe than a hundred go dayly in and out; and though they have given me a Key to my Chamber; yet I am half afraid they may have a fellow unto it, and that ſome inconvenience may thereby happen unto me.

I have been informed of your quality, as alſo of the worthineſſe of your diſpoſition, of your plain and honeſt dealing with all men; and therefore upon the good report that I hear of you, I am imboldened to come unto you, to intreat you that you would be pleaſed to do me that kindneſs as to keep them for me ſome few days, till I have made choice & bought ſuch things as ſhall ſerve my turn, & I ſhall return you many thanks, and ſhall be ready upon any

occasion that shall offer it self, to expresse my thankfulnesse unto you; I am a Gentleman, and know what belongs to the acknowledgement of a received courtesie.

My Merchant thought he had this money already in his possession; and I do still strongly suspect, that he and I did jump both upon one thing; he, to make my money his; and I, to steal his, and make it mine. He made proffer unto me both of his person and his house, and that I should as freely command it as if it were mine own; and that he should be glad to serve me in this, or any thing else: he bid me bring it when I would, promising to keep it carefully for me, and that I should have it as oft, when, how, and in what manner my self should demand it of him, as my occasion required; so for the present we took leave each of other; he, with a resolution to keep them; and I, with a promise to bring them thither; but I never came to him again, till such time as we were to execute our exploit.

When *Sayavedra* & I were come home, he stood stock still like an Ass, or like a maz'd man that had been scared out of his sleep, and dreamingly draws me out his words, asking me where this money was to be had, that he was to have in his keeping? I fell a laughing, and said unto him; Didst not thou carry it him even now? With that he laught? Laught'st thou, quoth I? Is this a matter to be laught at? I know that in the Cart, and in the Cabinet, they are kept safe enough for me. Tell your friend *Aguilera*, that we must needs see him about an eight dayes hence, and will him to bring along with him his Masters *Borrador*, or book of remembrances, wherein he sets down his Solutes and his debts, what he is to receive, and what to pay. In the interim, while we were tarrying for a good tyde, and waiting for a fit time for the effecting of our purpose, *Sayavedra* having me one night to bed, finding when I had laid my self down, with no great desire to sleep; for the working of my brains (thinking upon old businesses) kept me waking: I called to my servant, who coming unto me, I spake thus unto him.

*Sayavedra*; I have a tale to tell thee, which though it be but short, yet it is worth your hearing. I shall give thee therefore to understand, that once upon a time the Asse (that poor silly Creature) fell sick, and finding himself much oppressed and weakned with his disease, growing every day worse then other, insomuch that he was now almost brought to deaths dore; at the instance of his Kinsfolk, and the earnest intreaty of his Children, which were very many, he was moved to make his last Will and Testament; & each of them striving who should be best left, and go away with the greatest portion of their fathers goods, the lawfully begotten, and his Bastard Children went together by the ears about it: But their honest, and well-meaning father, desiring to leave them in peace, and for avoiding of farther wrangling, that every one should know his own, and what he should trust to after his death, was content in the end (for quietnesse sake) to make his Will, dividing his goods amongst them in this manner following.

My Will and intent is, that my tongue (when I am dead and gone) be bestowed amongst such my Children as are flatterers and back-biters: to those other my Children, that are angry and cholerick, I bequeath my tail for a cooler: my eyes I leave to the lascivious; my brains to Alchimists and judiciary Astrologers; my heart to the covetous; my ears to the seditious and sowers of discord; my snout to Epicures, Gluttons, and Drunkards; my Bones to the sloathfull, my lyons to the proud, my chin to the obstinate: Let my hinder legs be given to the Lawyers; my fore-feet to the Judges; and my head to your Scriveners and Notaries. Lastly, I bequeath my flesh to the poor; and my skin to be divided amongst my Bastard-Children.

I would not for any thing, that *Aguilera*, bearing us in hand that we should rob his Master, should come to strip us of all that we have, and leave us so naked, that we should be forced to cover our selves with the skin of this our Testator. And I assure you, if he should chance to put such a trick upon us, he should shew himself a very wise and subtile fellow: and how we should be afterwards able to help our selves, God he knows; for I do not. I speak this unto thee, for that for the better prosecution of our intent, and that it may go well with us, that out of those *Dobloones* of ten, which I have here, we give him some ten of them, which will amount to a hundred Crowns; which being no small ingagement, may much further our affairs. But I would not in any hand, that giving us a back-blow, and shewing us a fair pair of heels, he should slip his neck out of the collar, and by little and little fall off from us.

*Sayavedra* perceiving the doubts that I began to cast with my self; to free me of this suspicion, made me this answer; Sir, if we should put all the five hundred into his hands: nay, say they were five hundred thousand: yet, forasmuch as it is a custome amongst

us, and a rule that we never break, to uſe all faith and fidelity amongſt our ſelves, and never to be falſe one to another, in a thouſand years they will not deceive you of ſo much as one poor mite; but you ſhall have your own again to a farthing. And therefore fear you nothing; let me run the hazard of it, and put it to my account: for I ſhall be content to ſtand to any loſſe that you ſhall ſuffer thereby.

## Chapter VII.

*The robbing of the Merchant of* Milan *falls out as luckily as* Guzman de Alfarache *could have wiſht it.* Aguilera *ſhares ſo much with him, as of right belonged unto him: And he and his ſervant* Sayavedra *go for* Genoa.

FOraſmuch as Hope doth not aſſure us of a true and real poſſeſſion, it evermore makes us carry about us a troubled and unquiet minde, our thoughts never taking reſt, out of the great fear that we have, leſt we ſhould fail of that which we ſo earneſtly deſire: Onely, it is *Solatium miſeris*, the ſole comfort that afflicted ſouls have; and that ſafe harbour whereon they rely; being that from it, a certain ſhadow (as it were) of ſhelter and refuge, whereby thoſe cares and troubles are eaſed and lightened, which our hopes delay doth lay upon us. And as that hope which is ſecure and certain doth dilate and extend our hearts to an aſſured affiance of that which we expect; ſo there is not any pain affordeth greater torment, than that which we indure when we once come to loſe it. And little leſſe is our grief, when it defers its comfort.

How many and how various thoughts did diſtract in this ſhort time two ſtipendary Penſioners: For, having not given them any more light, than what I have already told you of my deſign; I had onely ſweetened their lips, and left them (as it is in the Proverb) *Con a miel en la boca*, with a ſmatch of ſome honey in their mouth; and therefore they could not chuſe but reel this way and that way, ſtaggering and wavering with their thoughts, and in the ſeveral Maps of their inconſtant imaginations, one conceiving this, another that, hatch a thouſand ſtrange inventions; chewing the cud, as it were, and ruminating with themſelves when (a Gods name) they ſhould ſet themſelves roundly to the buſineſſe, what the plot might be, and how to be effected, longing to ſee the iſſue of theſe promiſed and hopeful ends, which made them almoſt at a ſtand; being (as it ſhould ſeem) ſomewhat doubtful, whether it would go on or no: and if it did, yet could they not deviſe with themſelves how, and in what manner this buſineſſe was to be carried.

But when they ſaw the Sun of that day appear, no leſſe by them than my ſelf deſired, and that *Aguilera* had brought me that his ſhop-book of accounts, according as I had appointed him. I turn'd to one of the leaſes towards the latter end of the book, where I found ſome memorials booked eight dayes before, and in a void place or blank, where nothing was written, I ſet down this that followeth: Left with me by *Don Juan Oſſorio*, three thouſand Crowns in gold, ſome being pieces of ten, but moſt of them of two, and of four. Over and above, he likewiſe left with me two thouſand Royals, in good Royals of plate. Afterwards I drew a line upon what I had written, to ſhew that the book was croſt. And wrote in a different letter on the margent, *Ilevoles, Ilevolos*, which is as much to ſay, all this money is mine. Afterwards I ſhut to the book, and gave it him again, and together with it ten Doblones of ten; willing him, that when he opened the Cabinet, he ſhould take an hundred other out of the Cart, and put thoſe in their room. I likewiſe gave him two billets; whereof the one ſaid; Theſe three thouſand Crowns belong to *Don Juan Oſſorio*; And the other ſaid, Here are two thouſand Royals in plate, whoſe true owner is *Don Juan Oſſorio*. I did moreover adviſe him, that if there were any other bill or note in the bag, he would take it forth, and leave mine onely there. And that of the two thouſand Royals, he ſhould clap it into another great bag, wherein *Aguilera* had already told me, there were ſome ſeventeen thouſand more, or there-abouts, for he could not know the juſt number in regard they did daily put in other freſh moneys amongſt them. And that he ſhould withall remember, that this great bag of ſilver lay in a great cheſt, next unto his Cabinet, and that the bag was marked with a great ſpot of ink, neer unto the mouth of it. With theſe inſtructions *Aguilera* went his way, having taken order with him, that he ſhould that night without fail put every thing in its right place, according as I had given him direction. The day following,

as ſoon as I had dined, I walked leiſurely along to the Merchants ſhop, with my man at my heels, as if I had known no ſuch matter, diſſembling the buſineſſe very handſomly. When I was come thither, and that his eye was upon me, as ſoon as he ſaw me, he was wondrous glad; thinking I had brought that with me, which I meant to demand of him. We did agree both in one, in reſpect of the purpoſe that we had to deceive each other; but my plot was another kind of gambol than he was aware of. We had both one end, but the means were divers. Now, when we had ſaluted one another, I ſaid unto him; To morrow, Sir, ſhall I ſend this my ſervant unto you with a bag and a ticket with it, deſiring you that you will be pleaſed to give a quick diſpatch, and to ſend him back unto me as ſoon as you can, becauſe I ſhall have occaſion to uſe his ſervice. My poor ſilly Merchant, whoſe minde was more bent, how he ſhould out-ſtrip me by his cunning, than fearful, that I ſhould go beyond him, and prove in the end the craftier knave of the two, thought that my meaning was, that the money ſhould be brought him the next morning; and ſo ſaid unto me, Sir, your deſire ſhall be fulfilled: you ſhall have it whenſoever you pleaſe to ſend for it.

With that, I got me out of doors, and had ſcarce gone twenty paces, but *I* returned back again, and ſaid unto him; Sir, ſince I went from hence, I have better bethought my ſelf, and have preſent occaſion to uſe this money, and therefore (I pray) let me have it. The mans colour began to change, and ſeeming to be ſomewhat troubled, he ſaid unto me; What money, Sir, is that you would have of me? All, Sir, (ſaid I) all, for I have occaſion to uſe all of it. Whereunto he replied; What all? What all, quoth I? All the gold and the ſilver. He anſwered me, What gold, what ſilver? I told him, That ſilver and gold, Sir, which you have here of mine. I, any gold or ſilver of yours? No Sir, (ſaid he) I have no ſilver, nor gold of yours, nor do I know what you mean. Sir, ſaid I, (anſwering him ſomewhat roughly) do you make it ſo ſtrange, think you, I do not know what I ſpeak? I am neither mad nor drunk; this is pretty fine dealing indeed: this trick will not ſerve your turn. Nor yours neither, Sir, ſaid he; Methinks yours is the prettier of the two, in demanding that of me, which you never gave me; nor have I any thing of yours. No Sir, quoth I, Take heed what you ſay. Let me wiſh you to be a little better adviſed. Leave off your jeſting, and come to earneſt, for I can aſſure you this is no jeſting matter; I muſt not be ſo anſwered, nor do I take it well at your hands. Very good Sir, (ſaid he) very good ifaith: it is you, Sir that are diſpoſed to Jeſt, and to make your ſelf merry with me. No more (good Sir) it is enough, I pray be gone, I have ſomething elſe to do, than to find you talk. How Sir, be gone? Nay, by your leave (quoth I) there is more in it than ſo. I muſt not go hence without my money. Money (ſaid he) what money would you have of me? What is your demand? Marry, I demand (ſaid I) thoſe Crowns and Royals which I left with you the other day. With me (ſaid he) you never left any Crowns nor Royals with me: Go look your Crowns and Royals elſe-where; the devil a croſſe that I have of yours. Then ſaid I unto him, Are you not aſhamed to avouch this before theſe Gentlemen that are here preſent, who but even now before them, when I told you, that I would ſend my man to morrow for them; you anſwered me, he ſhould have them; and now that I come to you for them my ſelf (having preſent uſe for them) do you deny me them with one and the ſame breath? Deny you Sir, ſaid he) *I* deny you nothing, nor nothing ſhall you have of me. For *I* received nothing of you, nor nothing ſhall *I* return you. How Sir, nothing? Did not *I*, Sir, ſome eight dayes ſince, bring you theſe moneys, deſiring you to keep them for me, and did not you your ſelf receive them from me? Give me therefore my moneys, and that preſently, for I will not that you keep them one minute of an hour longer in your hands. In my hands? (ſaid he) *I* have not ſo much as one farthing of yours in my hands: and therefore God be with you, Sir, *I* have no more to ſay to you. It is the Devil that deceiveth us all. *I* think ſo indeed (quoth *I*) for ſure the Devil did deceive me when *I* truſted you with my money. And with that my inflamed choler, having ſet my whole face on fire, *I* angerly ſaid unto him; What meaneſt thou by this, that thou wilt not reſtore me my money? before thee and *I* part, *I* will make thee lay it down here on the boord, even to the uttermoſt farthing, or elſe *I* will know, why *I* ſhall not; Be wiſe therefore in time, and well adviſe with your ſelf (*I* would wiſh you) that you do, for fear of after-claps. The poor man was ſo troubled, and ſtruck into ſuch a fear, when he ſaw *I* was ſo hot and cholerick in the buſineſſe, and ſo reſolutely bent upon it, that he had not a word to ſay; yet at laſt, with a kind of counterfeit ſmile, ſeeming to make a jeſt of my words, he bid me be gone, one while in Gods name, another in the Devils; ſaying, that he knew me not, nor who *I* was, nor what

was

was my name, nor the thing that I demanded of him. Whereupon, turning my ſelf about to thoſe (which were many) that were there; Art thou ſo impudent (ſaid I) as to ſay, Thou doſt not know who, nor what I am, thinking thereby to out-face me, and to cozen me of thoſe moneys thou haſt of mine in thy hands? But I doubt not but I ſhall finde good Juſtice in *Milan*, and that (though full ſore againſt his will) he ſhould be forced to make me preſent payment. My man denies it more and more, telling me, I had much miſtaken my mark; and that I might haply have given it to ſome body elſe to keep: for he ſtood ſtifly unto it, that he neither had any money of mine, nor did owe me the value of one farthing, though indeed (he ſaid) he muſt thus far forth confeſſe the truth: That I came unto him, and that I told him, I would leave ſo much money in his hand to keep for me, but that I never brought them unto him, nor that he did either ſee or touch one farthing of mine. And therefore if I had a minde ſo to do, I might go in Gods name, and complain to the Juſtice: and that if it ſhould appear that he ought me any thing, he ſhould be very willing to give me ſatisfaction. When I ſaw he had armed himſelf with this reſolution, I did open my lips a little wider, forming at the mouth for very anger, & ſtraining my throat to a higher key, ſaid unto him, O thou falſe traitor! Heavens Juſtice overtake thee, and let all the plagues light upon thee that the earth can afford, (vile and wicked man as thou art) wilt thou thus then rob me of my moneys before my face, and thus injuriouſly go about to undo me? I muſt have thy life, or thy money. And therefore make no more ado, but bring me hither preſently my three thouſand Crowns; being them, I ſay, and quickly too; it ſhall not boot thee to deny them; for I will either tear them out of thy throat, or make thee lay it down here in good gold and ſilver, as thou haſt it of me.

The houſe was all in an uproar, and thoſe likewiſe which were preſent there from the beginning, that this difference happened between us. Upon this coil and ſtir that was between them there came in many into the ſhop, as they paſſed along the ſtreet, beſides a great number of the neighbours, asking one another, what was the matter? For now were we grown ſo loud, that we did not well underſtand one another. All that were there, went inquiring, what was the cauſe of all this noiſe, what we quarrell'd about, not ſo few as an hundred were talking here and there of it, and every one relating it each to other; ſome in one manner, and ſome in another, whileſt we within drowned all that the other ſaid, ſo earneſt was the conteſting between us. In the heat whereof comes in *Bargello*, an officer of the ſame nature with our *Alguazil* in *Caſtile*, a kinde of Sergeant or Catchpole, but he bare no Vare or white rod in his hand, as ours do, and making the people to give way, he came up where we were, being both (through the heat of our choler) as hot and as red, as coals.

When I ſaw the Juſtice preſent (howbeit he was a ſtranger unto me, and I knew him no otherwiſe than as he was the Juſtice) I ſaw my ſute at an end, and that the cauſe was like to go with me. And here taking my Cu, I began in a milder temper to ſpeak thus unto thoſe that were by: Gentlemen, you have ſeen and heard that which hath here paſſed between us, and how and in what manner this naughty man hath denied me mine own money; let his own man ſpeak the truth concerning this buſineſſe, and if he (out of his reſpect to his Maſter) ſhall refuſe to deliver what he knows, let his own Book ſpeak in my behalf, wherein ſhall that appear to be ſet down, which he received of me, and in what parcels, and in what manner or faſhion I delivered the ſaid money unto him; to the end, it may be known unto you, which of us is the honeſter man, and ſpeaks the moſt truth. Should I be ſo ſhameleſſe to ask a man that, which I never gave him? Into a Cat-skin bag that he hath, he did put into that Cabinet three thouſand Crowns of mine, ſome of two, and others of four, and for to make my proofs more plain and clear unto you, he hath intermixed amongſt them, ten Crowns of ten, which in the whole make up juſt the ſumme of three thouſand Crowns. And in a bag, which he lockt up within a cheſt, (wherein he told me there were at that time I delivered him my moneys near) together with mine (about ſome ſeventeen thouſand Royals) did he put thoſe two thouſand, he had of me: And if this (which I tell you) be not true, I am content to loſe it all, and that you take my head from off my ſhoulders, for the arranteſt traitor that ever ſpake with tongue: And if here in your preſence, before I ſtir a foot from hence, I do not make good unto you all that I have ſaid. Onely (Gentlemen) let me intreat (though a ſtranger) ſo much lawful favour from you, that there may preſent inquiſitions be made concerning this buſineſſe (conſidering how neerly it concerns me) that he may not (by gaining of time) have opportunity to tranſport them to ſome other place. And turning my ſelf toward the *Bargello*, I ſaid; See now, Sir; I beſeech you Sir to ſee, which of us two treats falſhood, which ſtands here?

The Merchant then ſaid;

ſaid; I am content to ſtand to this motion, and to put my ſelf upon this trial, I ſhall bring forth my books, I care not who ſee them, let them be peruſed, if any ſuch thing be there to be found, you ſhall likewiſe ſee all the money that I have in the houſe, and if any ſuch thing ſhall appear, as this man would make you believe, I will confeſſe, that he ſayes truth, and that I am in the wrong. Then ſaid they that were preſent; This buſineſs is now ended, they are both agreed upon the point, and it will ſtrait be ſeen, which of theſe two are in the right.

The Merchant commanded his ſervant that kept his Caſh, that he ſhould bring in his great book of Accompts; He did ſo: but when he had brought it, I excepted againſt it, and ſaid; O thou cozening companion! this is not the book, it is a leſſer than this, a little kind of Manual, that a man may eaſily hold in his hand. Then he will'd him to fetch the Manual that was in the Caſh, being a little thing of ſome four ſheets of paper, like a note-book. Which when he had likewiſe brought; No, no, (ſaid I) what need ſo many tricks and devices? Why do yon ſeek to deceive us thus with your book? this is not that which I would have, you need not to beat ſo about the buſh, the bird that I look for is not here; I askt for your chalk, and you give me cheeſe; I would ſee that, wherein you did ſet down thoſe particular ſums of money you received of me, it is a little long narrow book; you know well enough which I mean, if you were diſpoſed to bring it forth. Then ſaid *Aguilera*, It may be Sir he means that wherein you write your Memorials, for ſo it ſhould ſeem by the deſcription of it; for there is not any other beſides of that faſhion to my knowledge in the houſe. And bringing it before us, he turned himſelf towards me, and ſaid; Is this, Sir, the book that you would have? I anſwered, yes, this is it, this is it, and none but this. Now (Gentlemen) I pray ſee whether I ſay truth, or no. This will decide the controverſie, his cunning can no longer cloak it ſelf, and this will make his knavery plainly appear unto you. They began then (having the book in their hands) to turn the leaves one by one, and when I ſpied mine own hand, and what I had there ſet down, I ſaid, I pray (Gentlemen) will you be pleaſed to look upon this writing, and to ſee what he ſaith; Read, I pray, theſe parcels of moneys, which he hath croſt and blotted out, (though the ſums are eaſie to be ſeen) and by that which I here perceive, he hath noted it in the margent to be paid. But this trick ſhall not ſerve his turn, for *I* will have my money before I go from hence. They did all look upon it, and might eaſily diſcern thoſe very ſums, by me before mentioned. Whereat the Merchant was ſo mad, and ſo tranſported with paſſion, that he knew not what to ſay unto it, but began to curſe and rail, and ſwearing a thouſand oathes, vowed that he did not know of it, nor how it came there, nor who had written it. To clear that doubt, I anſwered, I wrote this my ſelf, this I confeſſe to be my hand, but that in the margent to be a different letter, and the quotation as falſe as God is true; for he never return'd me one peny of it; and in that Cabinet that ſtands there, if he have not taken it thence, there are my Crowns.

Hereupon like a furious Bedlam, he began to rage and rave extreamly, ſo that the ſtanders by did undoubtedly believe, that all I had ſaid, was true. And ſeeking to pacifie me (for *I* ſeemed to be very angry with this foul dealing of his) they wiſhed me to quiet my ſelf, and to reſt contented, for the croſſing of his book was not material, nor his writiing in the margent, that he returned me my moneys, if thoſe things ſhould fall out right, as *I* had ſaid in the reſt. What greater proof (then ſaid I) or what truer token can you have of my truth & his falſhood then his late proteſtations, that he never received any one peny of me, and yet you here ſee it ſet down, though having a purpoſe to play the rogue with me, he afterwards croſt it out. If he received it, why doth he deny it? if he did not receive it, how comes it here? I pray you cauſe that Cabinet to be opened, where I doubt not but you may chance to find my *Doblones*, where you ſhall light amongſt them, upon ten *Doblones* often Crowns apiece? At this, the Merchant fell a fuming and a fretting, and ſtampt for very anger, refuſing to open the Cabinet, & as ſtifly ſtriving againſt it, as if they ſhould have offered to rip up his belly, and take out his heart, vowing and averring with ſundry hideous oaths and fearful obſecrations, that all was roguery and villany, and that there was no ſuch matter as I talkt of; and for theſe *Doblones* of ten, he did there confidently avouch before them all, that he had not one, or not above one, if he had that, in all his houſe. Such ado there was to get him to open the Cabinet, as was wonderful: He denied to do it; The *Bargello* was as inſtant, as he was ſtubborn, & ſaid, he ſhould do it. The latter inſiſted to have the keys: The other reſiſted, & ſaid, he ſhould not have the keys. When the *Bargello* ſaw this, he began to grow now as hot, as before he was jealous of his double dealing; & ſwore a great oath, that if he would not fetch the keys, and open the Cabinet by fair means, and that quickly too, he would take

take it out of his house, and carry it away with him, and give particular notice of all the whole business, to the *Signor Capitan di giustitia*, (which is there with them of the same quality and authority as a *Corregidor* in *Castile*) and there deposite it, that the truth thereof might be known. At last (though sore against his will) he gave him the keys; & when he had opened the Cabinet; Sir, (said I) there in such a Box did he put them in a dapple-gray Cat-skin: they opened that Box, and pulled out the Cat by the ears, and going to tell the money, to see if it were right or no, a piece of the Billet shew'd it self. When I saw that, with somewhat a more cheerful countenance, I reard up my self and said: Let this Paper, I pray, be read; for that scroll will declare how much there is in the bag, and whose it is. They read it, the contents expressing *Don Juan Osserio*, to be their true owner. Well, they fell afterwards to telling of them and found them to be just three thousand Crowns, with those ten of ten a piece which I told you of.

Things being brought to this push, and falling out so pat as they did, my Merchant was strook as dead as a herring, he was absolutely now gone, quite overthrown horse and foot, without hope of recovery, he had not a word to say for himself, nor knew not in the world what to alledge in his own excuse: it seeming unto him to be *Opus Damonii*, that the Devil had a hand in it; for he thought it was impossible that any man should be able to do it. Besides, he considered with himself; that if *I* could finde hands to put these things there, *I* might easier have found hands to carry them away.

He was quite beside himself, and cried out, that all was lies, and nothing but lies; that his goods were wrongfully taken from him; that this money was his, and no bodies else, that the Devil had put those *Doblones* there, and not he; that they should lay hold on me, for I had a familiar, and a great many the like broken speeches.

Let them lay hold a Gods name on me (said I) so that I may have my money out of thy fingers. I gave him very rough and harsh language, telling him; O thou impostor, thou cheating raskal, hast thou yet a tongue to talk, seeing how evident thy wicked dealing appears to all the world: open that chest too I pray, for there lies my silver, I saw him put it in. There is no such thing, said he; for all the silver that is there is mine, and so are these three thousand Crowns. How yours, I pray Sir; being you did but now confesse that you had no *Doblones* of ten? It was Gods will to cause thee to forget that thou hast received them, that *I* might not lose my moneys. He that will deny another man his own, had need of a good memory, as also a care to remember what he sayes.

When *I* first came in hither, thou toldest me here before these Gentlemen, that to morrow I should have them, sending my man for them, and now that *I* came back again to demand them of thee, before the same Gentlemen, thou denyest to have any such thing in thy keeping. Let that chest therefore (*I* pray) be opened, take out all that is in it, and then it shall be known which of us two is the honester man, and who it is that lives by cozening others, either he or *I*? They opened the Chest, and when *I* saw the bag, though there were divers others there, some of more, and some of lesser sums, reaching out mine arm *I* pointed out that with my finger, saying, this with the black spot is it. In conclusion, they found that to be true, which I had said: And this truth was the more confirmed, when pouring out that bag for to count the moneys, they met with that other Billet, which said, that my two thousand Royals were in there among the rest: then I began to be louder than ever *I* was before, and cried out unto him. Thou vile naughty man, thou false crafty Merchant, thou common cozener, thou enemy to God, thou that hast neither truth nor conscience in thee: is this thy honest dealing? this the fair proceeding? this thy good usage of those that have to do with thee? No marvel thou be rich, if thou take this course with others, as thou hast done with me: and if thou hadst my moneys (as it appears to all the world) how didst thou dare first to crosse and blot out what *I* had written; seeking thereby to defeat me of my due? And then afterwards so impudently to affirm that I had given thee nothing, and that thou didst not know whence I was, nor whither I would, & that you did not so much as know either me or my name? What canst thou now alledge for thy self? Hast thou any more false money to coyn? any more lies to stamp? See how thou art overtaken in thy mischief, how blinded by thine own wickednesse, that thou hast not the wit (which was Gods just punishment upon thee) either to take away these *memorandums*, or to hide the money? See how his divine Majesty hath been pleased to make good my innocencie, and to protect my simplicity, that down-right plainnesse, wherewith I committed my moneys to thy custodie, presuming that *I* should have them again, whensoever *I* called for them: But I now verily believe, that he, that did advise me that I should trust thee with my moneys, was

ſuch another ſharker as thy ſelf; and one of your projectors for your profit, a bloodhound of your own making, to winde out your commodities. All they that were preſent, with this that they had ſeen and heard were as much amazed, as offended, at the Merchants baſe and roguiſh dealing, being now throughly ſatisfied, that I had a great deal of reaſon and juſtice on my ſide. The common voice was wholly in my favour, the proofs and evidences ſeen and allowed, and the ill report that ran of him before, did now ring in all mens ears. Inſomuch, that not a man of them, but ſaid; Fie upon him, do you not ſee how this greedy Cormorant would have ſwallowed this poor Gentlemans monies, which he had delivered unto him upon truſt? But it is no ſuch news, that an uſurping knave ſhould like a Harpy, prey upon other mens goods. And had he not uſed the better diligence, & had his wits about him, it had been all utterly loſt, and damned for ever. The Merchant who with his own ears heard not onely theſe, and the like, but far worſe words ſpoken of *him*, had not ſo many mouths or tongues, wherewith to ſatisfie ſo great a number, as there railed againſt him; nor indeed was it poſſible for *him* (as things were carried) to juſtifie himſelf, but ſtood like one, that did not well know, whether he were aſleep or awake. It ſeemed then unto me, that he rubb'd his hands and elbows, to call himſelf to remembrance, or that he began to think with himſelf, whether he had loſt thoſe two potential faculties of his underſtanding and memory, and that onely his Will was remaining unto him, conſidering what had paſt. He (as I told you before) had gotten himſelf a very bad name, which made much for me, and was as good as half a proof for the clearing of my buſineſſe. And this puniſhment ſtill lights upon them that lead a lewd life, that ſlight proofs are ſufficient to overthrow them, and makes the cauſe go currant againſt them. This only of it ſelf, without any further ado, would have ſerv'd the turn well enough to help me to my money again, which was much ſtrengthened by thoſe that were there preſent at my firſt coming thither, who there took their oath, That he ſaid unto me, that if I ſhould ſend my ſervant unto him the next day following, I ſhould not fail of my money, and that within a little while after, I returning thither again, and demanding it of him, he denied it unto me. His own ſervant likewiſe ſwore, that I in his hearing (as being then preſent) did intreat his Maſter that he would keep three thouſand Crowns for me, and the aforeſaid ſum of Royals, but whether I did deliver them unto him or no, he could not anſwer to that, but muſt refer it to his Maſters book of Accompts, which did not always lie in the ſhop, but was often carried in, and more he could not ſay concerning this matter. My ſervant, he on the other ſide ſwore, that he told the moneys with his own hands, and delivered them to the Merchant, in the preſence of divers others, that were then in the ſhop, but knew not who they were, for he was a ſtranger in that place, and therefore could not have any knowledge of them. So that, what with the pregnant proofs of all that I had ſaid, what with ſeeing in what manner he had croſt the book, what with finding the ſums of money (by me mentioned) to fall out ſo juſt, both in their place and number; alſo, that every bag had his particular billet, which told, whoſe the money was; they all took part with me, and were mainly bent againſt him, not ſuffering him to ſpeak a word in his own defence, nor to hear any thing that he could ſay to excuſe himſelf. He had ſpent all his breath in vain, and had not now the ſpirit to talk any more; for, being ſtricken in years, and ſeeing ſo ſtrange and unexpected an accident as this, which he did not ſo much as once dream of, thinking it impoſſible that he ſhould be thus over-reacht, waxed thereupon ſo pale and ſo wan, as if he had been a dying man, continuing for a good ſpace in a ſwound. All that were there did verily believe, that my Merchant was dead, and that it was a juſt puniſhment of God upon him for his perjury and falſe dealing; but he afterwards came again unto himſelf, but ſo ſtupid and ſenſleſſe, that I began to take compaſſion of him. But in theſe his ſwounings, I did cõfort my ſelf, that if he ſhould chance to die, I ſhould have leſs miſs of him than of his mony.

In a word, there was not any one of all that were there, that did not ſay, Let the gentleman have his money, give him his money. But I, knowing full well, that it was not the voice of the vulgar (though I was beholden to their good wiſhes) that could aſſign me my money: but that it muſt be awarded me by the power and authority of the Judge, and by courſe of law, I was very wary in adviſing with my ſelf, how I might prevent all future miſchiefs, and that the end of this buſineſſe might be anſwerable to its good beginning. And therefore when they all with one unanimous conſent and voice, cried out, The money is his, give the Gentleman his money, give him his money, I anſwered very mildly, and gently; No, not I; I will none of it, let it be depoſited, let it be depoſited. So for the better juſtification of this buſineſſe, the *Bayle*, that was there preſent, took away the money with him, and depoſited it in one of the neighbours hands, that was an honeſt man, and un-

intereſſed on either ſide, Which with a little ſute, was within a few dayes after by way of ſentence, delivered unto me; My Merchant being not onely cozened of his caſh, but condemned in coſts and charges of Court, beſides the generall infamy, which by this means fell upon him.

When I ſaw ſo much money in theſe poor and ſinful hands, I did often think upon that theft, which *Sayavedra* had done upon me, which though it were not of that great value, yet was it not ſo little, but that then it fell out to my great hurt, albeit afterward, it turned to my greater good. For if that had not been, I ſhould not have known ſo much as I now do, nor come off ſo cleanly with this theft. And therefore comforting up my ſelf, *I* ſaid, *It* was the better for me, that I broke my leg. It might have hapt worſe with me, had it not hapt ſo ill. My marring was my making; my loſſe, my gain. So that all fell out to the beſt. For from that time ever ſince have *I* lived in greater credit, and better furniſhed with moneys, than before I was rob'd. I was grown rich, *Sayavedra* relieved, and *Aguilera* had well patcht up a broken eſtate. I carried my moneys home with me, as merrily as the heart of man can poſſibly imagine. I clapt it ſafe under lock and key, I looked charily unto it, and lapt it up very warm, that it might not catch cold. And albeit all things ſucceeded thus happily with me, yet *Sayavedra*, though he felt it, had it in his hands, and toucht it again and again, yet could he not believe it was there. It ſeemed unto him as a dream, and he thought it an impoſſibility, that this buſineſſe ſhould prove ſo lucky. He fell a bleſſing of himſelf with both his hands, as oft as he thought upon my craft and ſubtilty. For albeit when he was acquainted with me in *Rome*, and knew my courſe of life, and did perceiye by my carriage and manner of proceeding, that I had a ſubtil wit of mine own, yet for all this did he not think, nor could be brought to believe, that I had ſo much ſtore as he now found to be in me. Or that *I* had been ſo good an Archer as *I* was, to kill birds, as they were flying in the air. He ſuppoſed, I muſt have come much ſhort of himſelf; for he was many years my ancient, and might very well (for his ſtanding) have been my maſter, and I his apprentice ſome ſix years at the leaſt, to have learned the Trade. I ſaid then unto him; friend *Sayavedra*: This is true knowledg, this is the right skill of it, this is the Art, and the cunning to ſteal without danger, and to live and thrive well by it. As for thoſe things which thou didſt preach unto me upon the way, they were leſſons of the *Turkiſh Alcoran*, meer toyes and trifles to theſe. To ſteal a kirtle, and to receive an hundred ſtripes for it, every fool can do this. Your expences exceed your receits, and the gains will not quit the coſt. And therefore, whereſoever I ſhall come, ſuchas you may vail bonnet, ſtrike ſail, ſtooping your ſtandard to me, reverencing me as your king and ſuperiour.

Some two dayes after comes *Aguilera* for his ſhare, ſtealing by night unto us, And had it not been for *Sayavedra*, I had ſhow'd him *Vrlez* his trick, who run away with the bride, and the bride-cake too. The Devil a peny he ſhould have had of me. But becauſe *I* was willing to uphold my reputation with him, and that he might not conceive an ill opinion of me, by leaving ſo foul an impreſſion of falſifying my word behinde me, and that he might not take occaſion to ſay to himſelf; Surely, if this man deal ſo unjuſtly with another, it is a thouſand to one he will uſe me in the ſame manner. *I* muſt drink in the end of the ſame cup as he hath done; I would not hazard much, to get a little. *Aguilera* told us, that his Maſter was even ready to die for very grief, and almoſt mad with imagining how this was brought about, and that it would not ſink into his head, but that this was the Devils doing, and that he, and none but he, was able to bring ſuch a thing to paſſe. I told him out an hundred crowns for thoſe *Doblones* of ten, which he had received of me with his own hands, and gave him juſt to a hair, as much as his ſhare came to. Having diſpatcht him, *I* came to *Sayavedra*, and offered him his part, together with the gain of the former five hundred crowns. But he told me, that he knew he was ſure enough of them, whenſoever he ſhould have occaſion to uſe them, and that not knowing well where to keep them, he was content they ſhould remain ſtill in my hands, till he ſhould find ſome fitter opportunity to diſpoſe of them.

We continued in *Milan*, ſome ten or twelve dayes after this, though not altogether free from fear, leſt the winde might chance to clap about; and therefore we did agree to go from thence, and get us to *Genoa*; making no body living acquainted with our intended journey, nor ſpake ſo much as one word of it our ſelves, for fear of what might follow thereupon. But rather gave out, that we were to go for ſome other place, farre wide of that, faigning a buſineſſe, which did much concern us, to make all the haſt we could.

It was my chance (before I went away) to walk through one of the ſtreets in *Milan*, wherein there was ſuch choice and variety of wares, and in that abundance, that I ſtood amazed at the ſight of them; and by chance I eſpied a chain in a certain ſhop, which they had ſold to a Souldier, which in my eye was one of the faireſt that ever I ſaw. I had ſuch a great good liking unto it, and was ſo earneſtly affected with it, that I was reſolved either to buy it, in caſe they had not already agreed upon the price, or to take order to have juſt ſuch another made me. Whereupon I drew neer unto the ſtall, and ſtanding by, began to look upon it; without giving them to underſtand, that I had any mind thereunto; but it pleaſed me ſo well, and I was taken with it, that upon the ſudden, in that ſo little ſcantling of time, taking it to be fine and pure gold, I had preſently plotted in my head how I might have it along with me to *Genoa*, and that without any great labour. I ſtood liſtening, while he was bargaining for it, and while they were thus beating the price, the ſeller demanded very little for it, which methought was dog-cheap; whereupon I began to ſuſpect, that what he asked was rather for the workmanſhip of the chain, than the chain it ſelf: but they not agreeing on the price, I began preſently to pitch my hey, asking him what it might be worth, and what it weighed. I had no ſooner made him this queſtion: but the Merchant caſting up his head, looks upon me, and fell withall a ſmiling, telling me: Sir, this is not to be ſold by the weight; but taking it altogether as it is, we ſell it as reaſonably as we can afford it.

This word alone was enough, for by this I knew that it was falſe and counterfeit: and holding it a great baſeneſſe for ſo ſlight a toy to hazard much treaſure, and that this plot of mine, which I had already caſt in my head, might ſtead better hereafter, reſerving it for ſome great occaſion, and of more importance than this could be; beſides, being that no wiſe man will adventure his perſon for nifles in a bag, I forbore to execute my purpoſe; wiſely conſidering with my ſelf, that if I ſhould have gone on with this, and miſ-carried therein, it would have been a ſufficient proof againſt me, that I had plaid the Impoſtor in my late buſineſſe with my Merchant. I preſently therefore came to his price, & paid it him with as good a will as if it had been a thing of great value: and I muſt tell you, that I made no ſmall reckoning of it, in regard of thoſe deſignes for which I intended it; and particularly in that, which (as it afterwards fell out) turned to my exceeding great good and benefit. For which purpoſe (having the plot already in my pate) I reſolved with my ſelf to make me one of gold out of hand, juſt of the ſame making and faſhion as that was in every reſpect, that you ſhould not be able to diſcern which was which: ſo like would I have them to be the one to the other.

Whereupon I got me to a Goldſmith, who made it according to my mind, ſhewing himſelf ſo good an Artizan, that ſhould you have taken them both into your hand, and compared them together, it was impoſſible to judge which was the true one from the counterfeit, ſave onely by the ſound and the weight; for the falſe one was ſomewhat lighter than the other, ſounding more bell-like: whereas that of gold was more maſſie, and had a more churliſh kind of ſound with it: it coſt me in the whole about ſome ſix hundred and thirty crowns, and I ſhould not have been ſorry, if I had beſtowed a thouſand; for then that counterfeit one ſhould have yielded me as much: With them I bought likewiſe two little curious boxes, as like as like might be, to lay up theſe chains in, each by himſelf in his ſeveral box, which were fitted and faſhioned as I could have wiſht them.

And becauſe all the joynts of my body did ſtill pain me very much, conceiting with my ſelf that my ribs and my huckle-bones were diſlocated, and ſlipt out of their right places, ever ſince that nights kind entertainment, which my worſhipful Uncle gave me; which I have kept hitherto written in my ſoul, the ink thereof being not as yet dry: and being now upon the way to *Genoa*, I imparted ſome part of my mind to *Sayavedra*, not recounting unto him all the whole ſtory of it, but onely acquainting him, that when I paſt that way, being but a child to ſpeak of, ſome of my friends had done me an affront, and put a jeſt upon me; becauſe I was not either in ſuch good cloaths as might honour and grace their company; or ſo flush of money, that they might get ſomething by me. And I was heart-angry with my ſelf, that I had told him ſo much: becauſe he ſhould not take me in a lie, if he ſhould chance to remember what I had told him before.

But letting that paſſe, and dwelling no longer upon it, I went on in my diſcourſe, and ſaid farther unto him: if thou, *Sayavedra*, were that true friend, as thou profeſſeſt thy ſelf to be unto me; thou wouldeſt ere this have been at *Genoa*, and have revenged the wrong that I there received. But I muſt be inforced to do it my ſelf, ſupplying thy default and neglect thereof by mine owne induſtry. It will alſo well beſeem me ſo to do, that I may cancel

that Obligation, and pay this debt that I owe them, to the end that thoſe good turns, which they did me, may be fully requited; & receive not onely the principal, but uſe for forbearance. But to remove all ſuſpicion, we muſt do that which you and your brother did, change both our apparel and our names. *I* like very well of it (ſaid *Sayavedra*) and farther promiſe unto thee, that *I* will inherit thy true name, that I may the better both imitate and ſerve thee. From hence forward therefore *I* ſtile my ſelf *Guzman de Alfarache*: and *I* (directing my ſpeech to *Sayavedra*) will inveſt my ſelf with mine own proper name, which *I* inherited from my Parents, and untill now, have not hitherto taken it upon me. For, a *Don* ought to be a gift which comes from the Holy Ghoſt; becauſe it is admitted, and well received of others, or it muſt be derived from the direct line, from father to ſon. For your *Dons*, that now ſtrut it up and down *lordly*, glorying more in this title, than the Peacock in his painted plumes, are nothing but infamy and ſhame. For there is not a *Spaniard* in theſe parts, (though the ſon of a Cobler) but goes adorning himſelf with the name of *Don*, that he may be held a Gentleman. And if it goe here as it doth here, a man may very well aſk, without offence; who keeps the Swine? Henceforth, I call my ſelf *Don Juan de Guzman*; and with this title will *I* content my ſelf. Then ſaid *Sayavedra*, with a ſound heart, and a cheer full countenance; *Don Juan de Guzman, Victor, Victor, Victor*: which name can become no man better than your ſelf; ſo well it ſuits with your noble action: confuſion light upon that Traytor that ſhall ſeek to ſpot it. Ha! (my brave boy) that ſhall take it from thee, my curſe ſhall purſue him to death. *I* had furniſhed my ſelf in *Milan*, with as much rich ſilk Grogram, as would ſerve to make me a Cloak, and a *Sword*; and being provided of all things neceſſary, we began our journey for *Genoa*.

## Chapter VIII.

Guzman de Alfarache *comes to* Genoa, *where being known by his kindred, he is feaſted by them. He perſwades every one to live vertuouſly. And ſhewes the hurt, which Murmurers, Hypocrites, and falſe witneſſes bring to mens Souls, Honours, and Riches: he delivereth the great profit we ſhall gain, by avoiding ſuch venomous* Baſiliſks. *And concludes with telling us, who are true Thieves indeed.*

LOng will the veſſel keep that his ſent and ſavour, wherewith at firſt it hath been fully ſeaſoned. If the courſe of my life, the occaſions and the chances that befell me, Love and Fear, had not opened the eyes of my underſtanding; if theſe, I ſay, could not awaken me, and rouſe me up from the ſleep of my ſins, and thoſe vices, wherein I was lull'd ſo faſt aſleep, I cannot perſwade my ſelf, that any other humane forces are of power to do it. And howbeit, with ſtratagemes, inventions, devices, and divers other means, it might be brought otherwiſe to paſſe; yet not with that eaſineſſe and facility, (as ſome may imagine.) For it will require a large diſcourſe, how, and in what ſort a man ought to make his election, by diſtinguiſhing profit from diſ-profit, juſt from unjuſt, and good from ill. And when it once comes to this point, the buſineſſe ſo ſtands then with him, that he that will be but willing to put his own helping hand to get out of that mire of ſin, wherein he lies wallowing, and endeavour to free himſelf from that muddy ſink of vice, thoſe good inſpirations of Heaven ſhall never be wanting unto him, which favouring, and furthering his vertuous actions will add ſtrength unto his weakneſſe, and raiſe him up from the death of ſin, to the life of grace. To the end that knowing and acknowledging his fore-paſſed errors, he may learn to correct his faults for the preſent, and for the future, grow up to perfection. But they that are devoid of reaſon, who, like the Bull, ſhut their eyes, and bow down their heads to give a blow, following their own miſery. Becauſe, like they that are blind, they will not ſee; and like thoſe that are deaf, they will not hear: and out of a head-ſtrong and wilfull humour, will not give way, that any ſhould croſſe them in their lewd courſes. They take great joy and delight in walking in the path of their own luſts; it ſeeming ſo long unto them that it ſhall never have an end, or that this life of theirs ſhall ever come to be cut off; whoſe happineſſe (they make account) doth onely conſiſt in this their vain and idle idolatry. Theſe are men of a large life, but a farre larger conſcience. They love the broad-better than the narrow way. They know full well, that they do ill; and therefore do ill, becauſe they have no minde to do well. They feigne themſelves to be ignorant of that, which they are not willing to underſtand; yet wot well enough,

that the thread of their life goes dayly vvearing and vvasting away; and that the string by vvhich it holds, must crack and break in sunder, in the end; and then their perpetual down-fall, vvill fearfully, and vvith a great deal of terror, present it self unto them.

But because we see that Gods hands are nayled fast, that they stir not against us, and that he is much grieved and afflicted for us; we think it would much vex him, that we should be vexed. Such fooles as these, say to themselves; we feel no pain, nor have any aches, but are sound and lusty, we want no money, but have the vvorld at will, our house is well furnisht, we have plenty of provision, let us lye down and sleep, and take our ease, stretching our selves on yvory beds, let us live as merry as the day is long, sport while we may, we have time enough before us, we need not make so much haste to go unto God, shortning that life, (by lessening our pleasures) which God hath allotted unto us. They deferre their doing of good, and put off their amendment of life from an hour to a day, from a day to a week, from a week to a moneth, from a moneth to a year, and from one year to many: so that hours, dayes, weeks, moneths, and years, run posting along by us: but this *quando*, this when, it not yet come this time, that we should repent and amend our sinfull lives: And when it doth come, it shall be happy for us, if it come not too late. This is that debt which is said to be recovered at three several payments; but if neither in your youth, our man-hood, or in our elder age we do satisfie this debt, the punishment that will light upon us for *non payment*, will be certain, sharp, and suddain.

What means the Usurer, that he hath not God in his minde, nor doth once think upon him, acknowledging no other God, but his ungodly gain? What the wanton, who to please his lust, adoreth her, whom he ought rather to hate? and placeth all his happinesse in that, which he knows must turn to his eternal torment? What the Epicure, or the proud man, that son of Lucifer, who makes it his common practice, to martyr the innocent, being more cruel therein then *Diocletian*, oppressing the righteous, and persecuting the vertuous? What the unprofitable Murmurer, who hoping to make himself a fortune, seeks to undoe other men? Scraping like a Hen, to her own hurt; whilest using diligences to prejudice others, they light upon that, which works their own bane?

The man, that is honest, well able to live, and of a good life, and civil conversation doth not rob, filch nor steal; for he lives contented with those favours which God hath been pleased to bestow upon him; he maintains himself with that, (be it more, or little) that he hath, feeds his family, and sustains both himself, and others. And such as these are wont in their contemplations, to lift up their eyes to Heaven, and so breath forth his sweet and thankfull Meditation: O Lord, I have as much as is needfull for me, and somewhat (I thank thee) to spare, to give unto others. And these good Christians count it an happinesse and honour unto them, when through Gods blessing and goodnesse towards them, they are able to say; that they have something yet remaining of their store to give unto the poor, and such as need their relief.

The Thief he steals, because it is his onely maintenance, having no other means to live. And when all is gone, and that he hath nothing of his own, he seeks to snatch from others, if he can but once come to lay his hands on it. He that is a Noble Gentleman, will never so farforth respect his honour and credit as is fitting for him, and seek to maintain his port, and to live like himself, in a liberal and plentifull manner, but yet will not stick to grace and do good to others.

But on the contrary, the Murmurer maintains himself with the honour of his friend, and of his neighbour, robbing him of his good name, and lessening his worth as much as in him lies; for if he rob not others of it, he thinks he shall not have any for himself. It is as strange, as to be pitied, that the Sea should breed fishes, that have no tongue; and the earth bring forth men, that have too much: that the Sea should afford us Souls; and the earth, men that have no Souls.

Your Hypocrites, who boast their letters of credit, which they have given to the vvorld; are like those that play at Tennis, who strike the ball against the ground that it may the better come to their hand, and tossing it to and fro in the aire, keep it up a good while till it come to be either a chase, or a losse. But of all other, most wretched, and most miserable are those men, who make long prayers with their lips, and devour with their mouths, the goods of the poor, the vviddow, and the fatherlesse. Wherefore God will severely punish these holy offenders; holy in outward show, but not in heart. An Hypocrite is like unto a Gun that is charged; for every man doth not know what is within it, or whether it be charg'd,

or

or no; but if you once put fire to it, the leaſt ſpark will ſend forth a bullet, that ſhall overthrow a Gyant, and lay him on the ground: So, your Hypocrite, upon every little occaſion, howſoever he may ſeem for the preſent to have no harm in him, will vent his malice, and be ready to do you a miſchief: and when you leaſt think of it, give you ſuch a blow, that you ſhall never be able to riſe again.

There are a certain ſort of men, that are like unto your dry withered Pear-trees, lean, tall, and ſtooping; hanging their heads in their boſoms, as if they would ſeem to be Saints, and go lapt up in a long thred-bare Cloak, as if they were to accompany a Coarſe to the grave, or were themſelves to be interred. Theſe are fools of the firſt form; and will with this their diſſimulation and grave carriage, make us believe that they are wonderfull wiſe, and of great underſtanding. Theſe I ſay are principal fools; they will ſtrain you four, or five ſentences out of this, or that other Author, whereof they make a Gallimafry, ſerving them in, as a diſh of their own making, recommending it unto us as theirs. They feigne their Juſtice to be equal with that of *Traianes*; their ſanctity, with that of S. *Paul*; their wiſdom, with that of *Salomon*; their ſincerity, with that of S. *Francis*; yet under this Cloak what ſhall you finde? If you ſearch it well, you ſhall finde an Hypocritical Knave, a ſeeming *Sanctificetur*, but as arrant a villain as ever trode upon a ſhooe of leather. They carry a lean, and meagre countenance, but their works flouriſhed over with painting; little breeches, but large conſciences; nothing but yea, verily, and indeed, in their mouths; but their heart is full of lies; a publick kinde of charity, but an inſatiable ſecret avarice; they manifeſt a kinde of abſtinence and faſting, as well from meats as temporal means; but their throats are ſo dry, and their thirſt ſo great, that they will ſwallow up the whole Sea, devour other mens eſtates, and yet be ſo far from being ſatisfied therewith, that they remain as thirſty as they did before. They ſay, they have enough, and more than enough, and that much leſſe would ſerve their turn, and is more than they are worthy of; yet are they ſo greedily given, that they are never contented, and nothing can fill their hungry maw. They are like unto your Dates; ſoft and ſweet without, but hard and ſtony within. They carry hony-combs in their mouths, but worm-wood in their hearts. They have ſweet tongues, but ſowre Souls. Great pity is to be taken of theſe men, for that they ſuffer ſo much, and enjoy ſo little; and are finally condemned to Hell, for this one poor fading vanity, to be eſteemed honeſt and religious, when indeed they are nothing leſſe. So that they neither cloath their backs, nor feed their bellies, according to their own content and liking, but go up and down in a miſerable kinde of manner, afflicted, hunger-ſtarv'd, withered, pale, and wanne, denying themſelves ordinary neceſſaries for the uſe of this life, not being able truely to ſay, that they have had one hour of content in this world, bearing alwayes about them a troubled body, and an unquiet minde, their corps and conſcience equally ſuffering. Now if this, which they thus, and in this manner ſuffer, as they do it, and endure it, onely for the worlds ſake, and to ſeem outwardly holy, that thereby they may gain a good opinion amongſt men; if they would do this, I ſay, for Gods ſake, laying aſide their diſſimulation, and not debarring themſelves of thoſe good bleſſings, which God hath created for mans uſe and comfort; queſtionleſſe, in ſo doing, they might lead a happy life in this world, and enjoy everlaſting happineſſe in the world to come.

Let us ſay ſomething of your falſe witneſſes; whoſe puniſhment doth give ſatisfaction to the people, and is pleaſing unto all men, taking pleaſure in their chaſtiſement, in regard of the hainouſneſſe of their offence. For, for a matter of ſix *Maravedis*, a thing of nothing, you ſhall have them ſwear ſix thouſand falſhoods, and take away ſix hundred thouſand mens credits, and eſtates from them, which lies not afterwards in their power to make reſtitution thereof. And as your day-labourers, and other work-men repair to certain ſet places appointed for that purpoſe, to be hired by thoſe that have occaſion to uſe them; ſo do theſe kinde of men come to your Courts, your Conſiſtories, your places of publick buſineſſe, even to the very Offices where your Notaries are a writing, to learn how things go there, and ſo offer their ſervice to thoſe that have need of them. And if this were all, the matter were not great, but it is worſe than you think it is; for the very Officers of the Court themſelves do maintain and countenance theſe lewd fellows, that in thoſe cauſes that occurre (as occaſion ſhall ſerve) they may make uſe of them for their advantage, ſuborning them to bear falſe witneſſe, for the proving of ſuch, or ſuch a buſineſſe, which they will not ſtick to juſtifie upon Oath. This I aſſure you, that I tell you, is no jeſt: nor do I therefore ſpeak it unto you, to make you believe that which is not ſo: not do I lie one jot, in all that I have ſaid unto you. For there are falſe witneſſes enough to be found, if any man be diſpoſed to buy them. And

are

are as frequent in our Notaries Office, as Conserves in an Apothecaries shop. Or like horse-leeches in a glasse, ready prepared for the businesse, when-soever you shall be pleased to put them upon it. Let those that have a minde to them, go to *D.N.* his Office; I was about to name him, before I was aware, but 'tis all one; for I am sure you all know him, or can give a shrewd guesse whom I mean; there shall you have these Knights of the Post, at all kinde of prices, as you shall have Pyes in a Cooks shop, some for eight Royals, some for four, some for two, and some for half a Royal, as chusing rather to play small game, then wholly to sit out.

But if it be a weighty cause indeed, there is also another sort of them, of a higher rank, and at a higher rate, as we see there are Pyes for vveddings, and for great feasts, which will cost you somewhat more then ordinary; these are those, that are Musket-proof, and will (to strike the matter dead) not stick to swear, that upon their own knowledge, for these fourscore years, they remember such and such a conveyance was past thus and thus, such a piece of land past over after this, or that manner, and a hundred the like.

Like to that Countrey-clown, who being a shallow brain'd Cox-comb, a very lob-cock, being brought into the Court by his Land-lord, to witnesse a thing in this behalf; and instructed by him, that when he should be askt how old he was, should answer, he was eighty years old. The silly fellow did not well understand him, but being desirous (as it should seem) to do his Land-lord a pleasure, being demanded touching his age, took his Oath, that he was eight hundred years old. And albeit the Notary wondring at this so inconsiderate and unadvised an Oath, did advise him to take heed what he said; he clownishly made answer; Do thou take heed how thou writest, and stand not a sifting of other mens lives, but let every man be as old as he will himself. Afterwards, the Notary reading the report of this witnesse, when he came to the point concerning his age, the Judge apprehended it to be the Notaries error, and would have punisht him for it; but he excused himself, saying: That he did no more than what did belong to his Office, in setting that down aright which he received from the witnesse his own mouth; and that although he had admonished him thereof, and bid him be better advised, yet he stood stifly in it, and ratified what he had said before, saying: That he was of that age, and that he should set it down. The Judges caused the witnesse to make his personal appearance; and demanding of him, why he had sworn, that he was eight hundred years old. Because (and it like your Lordships,) it was for the service of God, and the Conde, my Master.

There are store of vvitnesses every vvhere, the streets are full of them, they are to be hired for money; but he that will save his purse, and have them for nothing, let him seek out some Kinsman, or other that is his enemy, vvith vvhom thou vvagest; for he to be revenged of him, vvill swear any thing against the vvhole generation of thy adversary. But from those malicious minded men, good Lord deliver us. For they do us the greatest hurt.

But let us leave these kinde of men, and come to those of mine own occupation, and to that our company, or Brother-hood, which is the ancientest and greatest that is in the world. For I would not have thee to twit me in the teeth, that I have a pen of others, and let mine own stand idle in my standish, or else cause it to run another way. I will not passe by this door without knocking at it, and that soundly too; I will not lye lazing in the shade, nor making my self merry in the Tavern.

A Thief, what will he not do, to steal? Which word *Thief*, I apply to such poor sinfull creatures as my self. As for your great rich Thieves, such as ride on their foot-cloaths of Velvet, that hang their Horses with hangings of Tissue, and costly Arras, and cover their Chambers with Gold and Silk, and curious Turky-carpets, and often hang such poor Snakes as we are, I have nothing to say to them. For we are far inferiour unto them, and are those little fishes, which these great ones do devour. They live bravely upheld by their reputation, graced by their power, and favoured by flattery. These are of that strength, that they break the Gallows; Hemp was not sowen for them, nor for them were your Gallies built, except it be to bear command in them. Of which command, it may be, that we shall remember to say something in its proper time and place, if we hap to come thither, as I hope in God we shall. But let us now speak of those Thieves that are not fit to be left out, such as my self, and my fellow servants *Sejavedra*. We will not touch upon those that rob Justice; for there are none such I trow that will do so, nor is it known who they be. And if peradventure there be any such that have done so, we have already spoken thereof at large in our first Part. Nor will we speak of our Rulers, nor Governours, nor your Counsellours of State, for we have

likewise

likewiſe treated thereof heretofore; beſides, their managing of theſe matters, is not of any importance at all, or worth the talking of. For take them out of their track, put them from their whole-ſale, and turn them to retail, or remove them from that pond, wherein they have lived, and that they are to ſeek which way to winde themſelves; I will not give a button for the beſt of them.

But ſome perhaps will tax me, and ſay; That thou art, as they are; both birds of a feather; ſeeing thou art ſo willing to ſmother their lies, their deceits, and their falſhoods. For, if it ſhould be demanded, what means hath Maſter *N*? The anſwer would be; Sir, He is a *Regidor*. What, is he no more then a *Regidor*? How lives he then thus gallantly? How can his Office alone maintain his bravery, having not ſet revenues, or other rents coming in; beſides, conſidering what a port he carries, what a houſe he keeps, what ſtore of ſervants and horſes, that continually attend him? You ſay well, Sir. But I perceive by you, that you do not truely underſtand the myſtery of it, not rightly conceive, how this may be brought about. True it is, that he hath no rents, but he hath his renters, and none can execute that Office without his Licence, paying him ſo much rent for it; whereof the greateſt part comes to the *Regidor*, the reſt remains to the renter, to the end, that he alſo may live, and have wherewithall to diſcharge his rent. But why doeſt thou not ſpeak freely what thou knoweſt concerning theſe men? I may not, nor I dare not; for if any man ſhould preſume to ſpeak of them, oppoſe himſelf, though never ſo little againſt them, or but once offer to queſtion, either their lives, or their actions, they will make him hold his peace with a peſtilence, they will never ſuffer him to live in quiet, but force him for his own eaſe to flie the Countrey. For being (as they are) men of great place and power, they will preſently fall a feeling, to finde a ſtraw in thine ear; that is, they will ſeek a hole in thy Coat, and pick ſome one quarrel, or other againſt thee, and either by right, or by wrong, they will overthrow thee, if not utterly undo thee. They are like unto your Cupping-glaſſes; which (where they once faſten) ſit cloſe and hard to thy skin, and never leave drawing and ſucking, till they have haled from thee what they would have, nor is there any taking of them off, till they be as full as they can hold. I could alſo tell thee, that no man dares ſay; Black is their eye; or go about to have them puniſht. For whoſoever he be, that offers that, it fares with him, as it uſually doth with your pipkins; which when they are ſet full of water over the fire, they no ſooner begin to boyl, but the water runneth over, and puts out the fire that was the occaſion thereof.

Underſtand you me now? Yes marry do I: And it may be, they paſſe over theſe things the better, by reaſon of their good Angels of guard, which free them from thoſe blows, that would otherwiſe fall upon them, and rid them out of all their troubles. I could tell thee likewiſe ſomewhat which thou haſt left out, that if theſe men, after they were hanged, ſhould have their cauſes heard, and ſee what they could ſay for themſelves, even thoſe very men would then plead ſtifly againſt them, who heretofore were in their favour; but now for the fear that they have of them; they are well content to eat their meat in quiet, and to hold their tongues. I could tell thee beſides, if I would unmask thoſe men, that they fare daintily at other mens coſt, have what they will, either for nothing, or dog-cheap, making the poor to pay for it, who muſt pay moſt and fare worſt. But it is now time to make a full point, and to leave them with their *Agents*, and *Conſentientes*, their inſtruments, and their copartners to themſelves: For in concluſion, they are as thou art; and worſe then thou, and do much more hurt; for thou doeſt but damnifie one houſe alone; but theſe a whole Countrey.

O what good counſel doſt thou give me! But let me wiſh thee (my friend) to make uſe of it thy ſelf. Think'ſt thou perhaps to ſave thine own fingers from burning, to take the Cat by the foot, and therewith to take the Coals out of the Oven? If thou knoweſt this to be true, or haſt any thing elſe to ſay of them, ſpeak it your ſelf for me: for I have told thee all that I know, and I would not willingly that they ſhould deal with me, as thou ſayeſt they deal with others: for I have no minde to come under their laſh. Suffice it thee that contrary to that decorum that is fitting for the greatneſſe of their place and quality; I have inlarged my ſelf in ſpeaking more already, then may well become me. Nor am I willing to oblige my ſelf anew, to ſift their lives, nor dive into their doings, being there is no good to be gotten by it, if things run along in this ſtrain there in *Italy*. God be thanked, that I am going for *Spain*, where no ſuch robberies as theſe are uſed. But becauſe I am a *Spaniard*, thou wilt ſay, that all the vvorld is my Countrey; it is true, and in ſaying ſo thou doeſt not lye. But ſhall I tell thee one thing? I know how all this may be remedied, and that very eaſily too, to the great augmentation and good of the Common-wealth, and by the general conſent of all good ſubjects, to Gods good ſervice, and the Kings great honour: but for the better

effecting thereof, I must be forced to follow the King, presenting his Majesty with memorial upon memorial, petition upon petition: and when I shall have brought the business to a good passe, and as it were to the very upshot, such a Favourite, or such a great Lord, *Don B.* buzzes him in the ear, and tells him, that it is an idle and fooliſh project, and unable to take effect. For it reflecting generally upon them all, they out of their great power will trample me under foot, and crush me, that I shall never be able to lift up my head any more, leaveing me in far poorer taking then I was before. But I am affraid to wade too far in this deep water, for fear of drowning. A shallower ford is safer, and fitter for me to dip my foot in: because I speak the truth, they count me a base and obscure fellow; and for that I presume to give them wholsome counsel and sound advice, they call me Rogue, brand me with the name of *Picaro*, and thrust me out of doors by head and shoulders, scorning such a Jack-sauce, and down-right Raskal as I am. But they shall not carry it away so. Let them take their course, and we will take ours, treading in the steps of our noble Ancestors: and (God grant) that they that come after, do no worse than we do: Onely, I will be bold to tell you thus much; that there are far more Thieves than there are Physicians. Neither need any man to make himself such a Saint, as to take offence when he hears the name of a Thief spoken of, shewing himself queasie-stomack'd, and seeking to disgrace him, till he ask this question of himself; whether, either here, or there, he hath not in his life time plaid the Thief himself? And to this end, I would have him to know; that to steal, is no other thing than to detain that which is another mans, contrary to the will of its owner.

For mine own part, I would make no more reckoning, that a man did not know that I had any thing of his, if he did know it, and hath given it me with his own hand, so as he be not able to hurt me, and have not the power to take it away from me again by force. I learned this lesson from my Childe-hood, though I did not alwayes put it in practice. I was like unto a Tree that is cut down to the very Root, which leaves some live-sap still remaining, by means whereof it grows in time to be a new Plant, and begins to bear the same fruit it did before. And you shall see by and by how quickly I return to my old byas. While I left off stealing, *I* was like unto forc'd earth, *I* was out of my proper Center; now, with a little use *I* am come to the same lewd course that *I* ran before. When *I* was a Lad, *I* was quick and nimble, *I* had a facility in filching, and could lay hand on any thing, were it never so hard to come by. But now that *I* am turn'd Man, me thought at the first, *I* was grown gowty, both in my feet and hands; *I* found my self much slower and duller then *I* was wont to be: but in a very short time *I* recovered my former health.

*I* continued my accustomed thefts, and took such pleasure in them, as a Souldier could not more in his Arms; nor a Ginet in his trappings, and other his rich furniture. When any doubts did arise, *I* did resolve them; if they were to seek for Plots, *I* did invent them: and in all weighty businesses, *I* was their safe-guard and defence: they would hearken unto my advice, as to the answers of some Oracles; there being no man that would contradict my rules, nor withstand my laws, nor reply to any thing that *I* should once determine. Those that were best practized amongst them, that frequented the Hospital of *Saragoca*, and *Guadalupe* came short of me; though *I* used the trade but now & then like the intermissions of an ague: for, when all things else failed me, and that *I* knew not what a shift to make, *I* had this, my five fingers for a help, this did never forsake me in the time of need: it was sure money in my purse, and stuck as close to my neck, as my Lord Ambassadours Chain did, which a long time escaped many a fair danger. The trade of thieving was as proper to me, as laughing is proper to man; nay, *I* had almost said that it was a Character not to be blotted out, such deep impression had it taken in my Soul. But when *I* did exercise the same, it was not any want of good will; for that was ever ready, and at hand.

*I* and *Sayavedra* went out of *Milan* well lined, and better provided of all things that were needfull for our journey: so that there is no man but would have taken me for a very rich man, and one of note and quality. But how many be there that might very well have said, sit down Gallants, and fall to, for this feast is provided for you. For, as a mans apparel is, so is his esteem: And they that know not a man otherwise, make their censure according to his Cloaths. If thou wert *Cicero* himself, and shouldst go ill clad, thou shouldst be no longer *Cicero*, at least a scurvy *Cicero*, whom the vvorld would scorn, and count a mad man. For there is no other wisdom, nor learning in the vvorld, then the having of so much more wealth, and so much more land than another man. And he that is not so, may like a Dog, go shake his ears without doors: he is like money that is not currant: he passes not for any thing where-

whereſoever he come. They will neither offer thee a Chair to ſit down, nor give thee the upper hand, when they ſhall ſee thee without a feather, though thou be rich apparelled with vertue and knowledge; but of ſuch now adayes, there is little, or no reckoning made. But if thou be glorioufly ſet out, and richly ſuted, though thou be never ſo baſe a Groom, every mans eye is upon thee, every mans hat ready to honour thee. Be thou as baſe and vile as any dung-hill; yet if it be covered over with green graſſe, many will ſet themſelves down upon it, and there recreate and refreſh themſelves. But *Catulus* was not of this minde; who when he ſaw *Nonius* riding in a Triumphant Chariot, ſtickt not to ſay what a deal of durt doth this Cart carry? Giving us thereby to underſtand, that dignities do not grace the vicious. But there are now but few *Catuli*, though there be many *Nonii*. Nay, wert thou but good Alchimy, that ſhall be adored in thee, becauſe of its glorious and gaudy glittering. Men do judge now more by the eye than the ear; by what they ſee, than by what they hear: the out-ſide is more looked on, then the inſide looked into: a rich raiment ſounds louder than a good report. No man conſiders what thy knowledge, but what thy wealth is: they talk not ſo much of thy vertue, as of thy purſe: and of thy purſe, not what thou haſt in it, but what thou ſpendeſt out of it. I was well appointed, well apparelled, and grown four inches thick, with other folks fat.

When I came to *Genoa*, they knew not in my Lodging what chear to make me, nor how to pleaſe me in my diet, I was grown ſo dainty and ſo curious. I then began to call to minde the firſt entrance that I made into the Citie, and in how different a manner I was there received; and how I was forced from thence, carrying my croſſe upon my ſhoulders, and how now they receive me, ſpreading their Cloaks upon the ground. We lighted and fell to our victuals. That day I was willing to take mine eaſe, and to reſt my ſelf after my journey. The next morning I apparelled my ſelf, *a lo Romano*, no *Romane* of them all could wear a fairer Cloak, and *Sotana*, in which I walked up and down the ſtreets. All mens eyes were caſt upon me, as well for that I was a ſtranger, as likewiſe in regard I was well clad, and of a preſence not to be deſpiſed. They askt my ſervant, who I was? He told them, *Don Juan de Guzman*, a Gentleman of *Sevilla*: And when I heard them enquire after me, I would pop up my head, ſtretching out my neck, ſomewhat more than ordinary, thinking with my ſelf, that I had ſome ten pound weight of bread more in my belly, than I had before: ſo Peacock-like was I blown up with Pride, & ſuch ſtore of this puff-paſte of vain-glory had I ſwallowed down my throat. He told them that I was newly come from *Rome*. They demanded further of him, if I were rich? becauſe they ſaw me come from thence in a differing faſhion from the reſt: for they that go to the Court at *Rome*, and to other Princes Courts, are like thoſe that go to the vvars, who think all the vvorld muſt now be theirs, and that they have already finiſhed what they went for; with which vain hopes they uſing to flatter themſelves; they laſh out into extraordinary expences upon the way, as likewiſe in the Court, till the Court leaves them ſo curtail'd, that they have ſcarce ever a rag left them to cover their breech; returning home afterwards, weary in their bodies, poor in their purſes, diſcontented in their mindes, and driven to that extream want, that they muſt either almoſt ſtarve, or beg their bread. They go thither freſh and lively, flush of money, and rich in Cloaths; whom I can liken to nothing better, than to the fiſh called the *Tunny*; which, when it is full of ſpawn, is alſo full of fiſh, fat and fair to ſee to, and is very good meat; but when her ſpawn is gone from her, ſhe turns lank, lean, and unſeaſonable; proving as unprofitable to the ſtomack, as it is unpleaſing to the palate.

They likewiſe enquired of him, whither I were to continue there for any long time, or paſt onely along as a Traveller, taking it in my way. To all which queſtions *Sayavedra* gave ſuch anſwers, as I could my ſelf have wiſht: Telling them that I was the onely ſon of a widow-gentle-woman of very good quality, being a wonderfull wealthy Dame, which was wife to a certain Gentleman of *Genoa*, and that I was come thither to expect certain Letters and diſpatches, and then to return back again to *Rome*; and that in the interim, I would recreate my ſelf here in *Genoa*, taking much pleaſure in the ſight of this ſtately Citie; for that I knew not when I ſhould make my return, nor for what part, or whether I ſhould ever have the like opportunity to ſee it again. The Inne where I lay, was the beſt in all the Town, and is commonly called, *L' Hoſteria di ſanti Marta*, whither the moſt part of your Noble-men, and Gentlemen did uſually reſort. There we remained, making merry, and ſpending our money, without doing our ſelves any good at all in the point of profit, nor did we as yet go about it. And in keeping thus our ground, we came to gain ground. The Clock doth not always ſtrike, but ſtayes till its hour comes, and when by a little and a little

the time creeps on, that is limited thereunto, why then it ſtrikes. I played now and then, but not for much money, with ſome other gueſts, that were in the houſe, more for company ſake, and to paſſe away the time, than any thing elſe, not uſing any other help than mine own fortune, and skill in gaming; *Sayavedra* had now no hand in the buſineſſe, nor did I uſe to ſet his plough awork, ſave in deep and fat grounds, where there was hope of a plentifull harveſt; I kept him for Holy-dayes, his attendance was, when there was a great feaſt, and a full boord; but for ſuch poor pittances as theſe, not worth the ſitting down for, I was well content he ſhould ſpare his labour. For, when the loſings, or the gettings, could not be much, the beſt courſe then (me thought) was to proceed plainly and ſincerely. Yet, when I play'd at ſmall game, I went along with a leaden foot, marking and obſerving this, and that other Card: and if Fortune did not favour me, and that my croſſe-carding was ſuch, that I could not light on a lucky encounter, I would give off with a little loſſe: But if the winde blew fair, and that I found good fortune was comming towards me, I never left following my good luck, till I had ſwept unto me all the money on the boord.

And it ſo fell out, that having one day wonne a matter of an hundred Crowns, and ſomewhat more, it was a Captains hap, that had the command of a Galley, to ſit by me, who, I perceived, lik't very well of my manner of play, and was very glad that I had got the money; and reading in his looks, that he had no great ſtore of Crowns in his purſe, but was rather in extream want and neceſſity, I gave him ſix *Doblones* of two, which in that conjuncture, conſidering his poverty, ſeemed unto him to be ſix thouſand.

There is a time when one ſingle Royal, is more to a man than an hundred; nay, a thouſand perhaps another time, will not do him ſo much good. For the which he made ſuch a thankfull acknowledgement, as if the favour I had done him, had been much more than it was, or ſome matter of greater moment. And this fell out very happily for me; for having afterwards underſtood from himſelf, of what diſeaſe he was ſick, and where his lay, at that inſtant, was mine own remedy likewiſe preſented unto me, and quickly found out, that I muſt make him the needle that muſt knit my net. In a word, I effected what I deſired. He ſpends nothing, who buyes that he hath need of. I diſtributed likewiſe ſome few Crowns amongſt the reſt of the ſtanders by, to make them the better devoted, and affectioned towards me, and that I might leave every man well pleaſed and contented. In ſo much that by this my affable, frank, and bountifull carriage, I grew into that credit and good opinion amongſt them, that I had won their hearts, and got the good will and love of all men; and it is an old ſaying, That he that ſowes well, reaps well. And I can aſſure you that as many as converſed with me, would have hazarded their lives for me, if need had been. Wherewith I found my ſelf ſo jocond, my body ſo lightſome, my heart ſo comforted, my bloud ſo clear, and my ſpirits ſo quickned, that my cheeks were as freſh, and red as the Roſe, and mine eyes did ſparkle, and looke ſo merrily, as if they had laught for joy.

This Captain was called *Favelo*; not that this was his proper name, but becauſe it was given him by a certain Miſtreſſe of his, whom he ſometimes ſerved; which he was willing ſtill to retain in remembrance of her beauty, and his own misfortune; the whole ſtory whereof he at large related unto me; as how dearly ſhe loved him, how much ſhe made of him, indearing the ſweetneſſe of her diſpoſition, her gentle behaviour, and the gracefulneſſe of her perſon; all which commendable qualities, poyſoned with ſome vain and falſe appearances, were drowned in the end by a deſperate torment of jealouſie, and ſuch other beaſtly thoughts as are ſtill waiting upon it. And from that time forward he would never ſuffer me to be alone, but was for the moſt part continually with me and did embrace my friendſhip with the greateſt love that could be. Whereupon I intreated him, that he would be pleaſed to make uſe of my perſon, if I might be any way ſerviceable unto him, and to be my gueſt, and take ſuch fare as I had; and though I knew I did bid him to his loſſe, as keeping a better Table of his own, yet for my ſake, and the contentment I ſhould take therein, he ought in courteſie to accept of it. I omitted no means, for the obliging him unto me, and the continuing of him ſtill to be my friend. He had me along with him to his Galley, feaſted me, and made me take my pleaſure in her, all along the Coaſt, plowing dayly ſuch deep furrows, for the better taking root of this our new friendſhip and acquaintance, that if mine had gone on in the true courſe of vertue, there it might have found a Haven wherein to have harbour'd it ſelf. But I was made of nothing but fraud and deceit. Yet would I be alwayes laying a firm foundation, that might well have ſerved for the raiſing of a better building: but at laſt

it

it came all to nothing; being (like that foolish builder,) who knew better how to begin, then to make an end of his building. We did communicate many particular accidents and secrets each to other, but he came not within my shirt, he had not pierced into my bosome, *Saavedra* onely kept the Key of that Cabinet, and none but he knew the secrets of my Soul.

This *Favelo* was of a good behaviour, witty, discreet, valiant, patient, and yet full of metal, qualities well befitting so valiant a Captain, and so amorous a Souldier, by means whereof he lived alwayes in want. And it is a common misfortune that accompanies these good qualities, that they are still waited on by poverty, (or to speak more properly) by beggery. Now I, who was not ignorant of his wants, sought in all that I could to relieve his necessities, and to free him from these, his extreamities, that thereby I might binde him the surer unto me. I carried my self so fairly and so cunningly, both with him, and as many as I conversed withall, that (like Hawks) I made them all to stoop to my lure. And within a few dayes, my name and credit was so good amongst them, that I could battle largely upon it, and might have received any courtesie in that Citie, if I had been willing to make use thereof. Whereupon, partly out of this, and partly the ancient desire that I had to know something concerning my self, lest the knowing of it, might make me take thought, and so sicken and die of grief; considering with my self, that being in that good state I now was in, an handsome young fellow, well clad, good parts, and a good purse, no man whatsoever could hold it any disparagement unto him, to acknowledge me for his Kinsman; but that which did most sway with me, was the earnest desire that I had to be fully revenged of him, who had abused me in that base manner. This did often trouble me; nor could I sleep in quiet, as oft as I thought upon it.

I had not stay'd long in Town, but I found out a father and a mother, and came to know all my kindred. Those which before threw stones at me, as if I had been some strange curre, whom they would chase out of their doors, did begin now to quarrel, who should have me first home to his house, who make me greatest cheer, who give me the noblest entertainment, one seeking to out-vie another. The very first day that I made this enquiry, my kindred was more (I imagine) than my credit, and might be better known than trusted amongst them; for no man is ashamed to own a rich man for his kinsman, though he be vicious and ill given; but all flie from a vertuous man, if they once have him in the winde, and finde that he stinks of poverty, I need not to indeare this point unto you, It is so common a thing.

Riches is like unto fire, which albeit it belong to a different place, and is onely provided for one particular, yet notwithstanding as many as come near unto it, warm themselves, though they take not so much as a Coal from thence; and the more fire, the more heat. How many shall you see warming themselves by a fire in a rich mans Hall? Of whom, if you shall but ask what they make there, or what's their businesse? They will answer you; No great businesse. Do they perhaps give me any thing? Alas, what doest thou get by curring favour with them, by soothing them up, by crowching and creeping unto them, by assisting day and night in base and servile Offices, mis-spending that time, which thou mightest better bestow in gaining thy meat else-where? It is true Sir, that I benefit my self here but little, yet can I not chuse, but come and warm my self at *Senior N.* house, as others do. You, and such others as you be, tell me, I pray, what you are? and be not angry with me, if I plainly tell you, you are all fools.

But to return again into our way. Many of my kindred came unto me, every one desiring to make himself better known unto me, and offering his service in such complemental manner, as was befitting my fashion; and there was one among the rest, who for to honour, and oblige me the more, did challenge ancient kindred of me, even from our great Grand-fathers. I would, for curiosity sake, fain know, what was become of that good old man, which put that former trick upon me, and that I might do it without any the least suspicion, or jealousie in the world, I demanded of them, whether my father had any more brothers? or if he had, whether any of them were yet alive, or no? For, I was ever of the minde, that he that plaid the rogue with me, was my Uncle. They told me, yes. That there were three of them in all, my Father, and two more: and that the middlemost was dead, but that the eldest of all was living, and that he dwelt here in the Citie. They told me that he had lived a batchelour all the dayes of his life, that he was a man of great means, and the top of all our kindred, and gave such particular tokens of him, whereby I came to know him. I said that I would go kisse his hands the next day: But when this was told him, and that he understood of my

quality, albeit he were very old, he came trudging with his ſtaffe in his hand, as decrepit as he was, to viſit me, accompanied with ſome of the chiefeſt of our linage. *I* knew him as ſoon as ever I ſaw him, though he was now grown very lame and aged. *I* was glad to ſee him, but ſorry that he was ſo old, I could have wiſht him much younger, that he might the longer have felt the ſmart of thoſe jerks, that I was reſolved to beſtow on him. I count that man a fool, who to revenge himſelf of his enemy, will take away his life, for that being ended all pain is ended with it. When I would take a revenge, *I* would handle it ſo, as *I* did with theſe my kinſmen, that they may not forget it as long as they live, but bear the woful remembrance of it with them to their graves. I deſired to be revenged of this man, and wiſht that he had been at leaſt in the ſame ſtate as *I* left him, that *I* might in the ſame have paid him the debt I owed him: who had without any cauſe or reaſon in the world, uſed me ſo unworthily. He made me many offers of his houſe, the very naming onely whereof made my blood to boil in my breſt.

Now (methought) the Bats were fluttering about mine eares, that the Gnats began to ſting me, and that from underneath the bed, crept out thoſe old Hob-goblings, and fire-ſpitting devils, which tormented me heretofore. No, no: once was enough of this jeſt; I would bite no more at this bait. The Cat hath cozened me once, and is gone away with her prey, but ſhe ſhall ſerve me ſo no more. *I* ſhall take heed of her againſt another time. Marry, *I* ſaid to my ſelf; Onely *Sayavedra* may put another trick upon me, but it will not be much for his profit. But (excepting him) let any man elſe deceive me the ſecond time, and I will freely forgive him.

We talked of many things; and amongſt divers other queſtions, he demanded of me, if I had been heretofore in *Genoa*? Are you hereabouts (thought *I*) I ſhall watch you well enough for that, you ſhall not catch me with this trap, as old and crafty as you be. So (lying at my cloſe ſights) I anſwered him, that I had not: onely I told him, that much about ſome three years ſince, that I paſt that way, but could not (though I would) ſtay longer than one night, becauſe I was going in great haſt to *Rome* upon pretenſion of a certain benefice. Then he told me, with a great deal of pauſe and deliberation, dreaming perhaps that he had lighted on a ſtory that ſhould pleaſe me wonderful well. Some ſeven years ago, little more or leſſe, there came hither (my good Cozen) to this town, a little roguiſh boy; whom none that ſaw him, but would have taken him to be a thief, or at leaſt a young diſciple of theirs; who that he might the more eaſily rob me, came to my houſe, giving me ſome particular ſignes and tokens of my brother, that is now in glory; as alſo of your mother; telling me, that he was his ſon, and my nephew; This is true that I tell you (Cozen) thus and in this manner came he unto me; but he lookt ſo like a Rogue, and we had that ſuſpicion of him, that not owning him for our kinſman, leſt his infamy might reflect upon our family, and turn to our diſgrace, we ſought to make him leave this City, and ſo he did, by means of a pretty plot which we had deviſed for him. *I* can aſſure you (Cozen) that he went flying from hence, like a dog that hath a bladder, with ſome few ratling pibles in it tied to his tail; we could never more ſet ſight on him, nor do we know whether he be dead or alive, as if the earth had ſwallowed him up quick. With *levaltos* and high-bounding capers that he cut, flying finely in the air, with no other help than a Coverlet, without the which (you know) your Tumblers cannot handſomly do their feats of Activity; I very well remember that he left my bed, (whether out of fear, or what other accident, I know not) full of honey-combs. This jeſt prov'd a very good one; for fearing (if he ſtaied any longer here) to have a worſe put upon him, he got him packing, and ſo we were fairly rid of him. And I cannot chuſe but laugh, as oft as I think upon it: For queſtionleſſe this Rogue had a purpoſe to deceive us. But I believe he will remember this nights lodging (if he be yet alive) the longeſt day that he hath to live. And *I* have been often angry with my ſelf, and have beſhrew'd my fingers a thouſand times over and over, that *I* ni'd him no worſe.

All that had formerly paſt, he related unto me very ſolemnly, omitting no one circumſtance; As the contriving of the plot, his making him to go ſupperleſſe to bed (ſuppoſing that might have holpe to ſave his ſheets) and which was worſe than all the reſt, his toſſing in a blanket.

*I* poor man, that vvas this little rogue that had ſuffered all this, and had received ſuch hard meaſure from them, apprehended it ſo feelingly, as if *I* had been afraid *I* ſhould have gone to this gear again: My fleſh did break out (methought) into chops: and like the wound of a murthered man, did open of it ſelf, and began to bleed afreſh (upon the hearing of this tale) as if the murderer vvere preſent. And albeit, *I* ſenſibly perceived in my ſelf, that the

the colour of my face did receive ſome alteration, having changed his natural hew, yet did I diſſemble it the beſt that I could; and then, even then at that very inſtant, did I whet the razor of my revenge. Not ſo much moved thereunto out of my former hunger that I had to do it; as this his preſent boaſting, what fine feats he had done; ſeeming to take a pride and a glory in doing an undeſerved miſchief. For I hold it a greater ſin (and doubtleſſe ſo it is) to boaſt an ill, than to do it. I did itch all the while this tale was on foot, and knew not which way to look, nor what to ſay. At laſt, I ſaid unto him; I cannot call to mind who this youth ſhould be, that did ſo earneſtly long to have honourable parents; yet are we beholding to them (if haply he be alive, and have eſcaped with life from *Roncevalles*) that of all other noble Houſes (whereof there are ſo many in the world) he would vouchſafe to make choice of ours to honour himſelf therewithall. And if ſuch another ſtripling as he, ſhould chance to come to my houſe, I would ſhew him all the kindneſſe I could, till I had fully inform'd my ſelf of the truth, and had aſſured knowledge, whether he came unto me out of an evil or good intent. For there are ſome Caſes, and ſome ſuch ſtrange and unexpected caſualties, whereunto mans courſes are incident, that even perſons of great, both worth and valour, eſcape in that miraculous manner, and are by their misfortunes brought to that low ebbe, that they are aſham'd of themſelves. But this wag, when I had ſifted and ſounded him throughly, and found out his intent, I would have dealt with him, as he would have dealt with me: For poverty never quits vertue, nor riches gives it. And in caſe it ſhould not have fallen out as my ſuſpitious thoughts had ſuggeſted it, and that (for ought I ſaw) he had no evil intentions towards me, nor any purpoſe to do me any harm, I ſhould have favoured him all that I could, and have ſecretly diſmiſt him from me. And in a word, though he had not been my kinſman, yet for the good choice that he made, and the good liking that he had to our name, preferring it before any other, ſurely he ſhould not have fared the worſe for that. And if I had not given him any money in his purſe, yet I would at leaſt have uſed him civilly, and not ſent him away diſcontentrd, who (as it ſhould ſeem by him) was not very well pleaſed with his entertainment. Go to, go to, Cozen (ſaid the old man) had you ſeen him, as I did, you would have told me another tale than now you do. And for mine own part (I muſt confeſſe unto you) it did me good at the heart, that I had thus firkt my young Rogue, and (as I told yo before) I am very ſorry that I did not handle him worſe, and give him that condigne puniſhment, which the hainouſneſſe of his offence did deſerve. For you never ſaw ſuch a tattered Raſcal as he was in all your life; and being thus all-to-be-rent and torne, and not a rag (ſaving your reverence) to cover his breech, yet this ſhake-rag, this young impudent Rogue did not ſtick to challenge kindred of us, and that he was lineally deſcended of our Houſe, and in ſo neer a degree as you have heard. And becauſe he brought not his wedding-garment with him, but was thus poor and baſely clad, we gave him *Jack Drums* entertainment, and ſhut him out of doors, having lapt him firſt in a blanket, where he was handſomly canvaſt; and with this he went his way. Juſt about the ſame time (ſaid I) was I with my mother in *Sevil*. And it is not yet full three years ſince I left her. I was their onely ſon, nor had my parents any other children ſave my ſelf. It was even at my tongues end, and almoſt out of my mouth ere *I* was aware that *I* had two fathers; but quickly mending that fault, *I* went on, as followeth: My father left me well to live, being neither ſo much as therewith to be able to ſpend laviſhly; nor yet ſo little, that with good government, *I* might not live handſomly. *I* cannot boaſt my ſelf to be rich, nor juſtly complain that *I* am poor. Beſides, my mother was alwayes a prudent and provident woman, well governed, a ſmall waſter, and a great houſe-wife.

All they that were there preſent, were willing to give me the hearing, and were wondrous glad of it, not well knowing in what Sanctuary they might place me, nor how ſufficiently to feaſt me, nor could they ſatisfie themſelves in point of good manners, if they did not give me the right hand, and being two, if they did not put me in the midſt between them both. Then did *I* ſoftly ſay to my ſelf; O vanity, whither wilt thou? How doeſt thou run after thoſe that are fortunate, as long as they ſail with a fair wind. But when that fails thee, how in a moment do thy friends forſake thee, how many changes doeſt thou find in an inſtant? And how truly did I now come to know that they are evermore favoured and reſpected, from whom any hope may be had, that one way or other they may be benefited by them? And this is the reaſon, why few do help the needy, and all run after the rich.

We are the children of Pride, & rather flatterers than friends. For if we were true friends indeed, and were charitably minded, we ſhould have recourſe to the contrary. Eſpecially, we knowing how acceptable a thing it is in the ſight of God, that every one ſhould be as

ſenſible

ſenſible of his neighbours miſeries, as his own, ſeeking to do the ſame good unto them, as we would have done unto our ſelves, were we in the ſame wretched caſe, as he is. I was now become the idol of all my kindred, ſo much was I adored by them, I had bought me at an *Almoneda* a fair Cupboord of plate, which coſt me almoſt eight hundred Ducats; and for no other end in the world but to cloſe up this my wound the better, I invited all my kindred together, with ſome other of my friends one day to dinner, I made them a great feaſt, beſtowed a coſtly banket upon them, cheared them all up, made wonderful much of them, and gave them all the kinde entertainment I could poſſibly deviſe. After dinner, we go to play, I got the money, but gave it almoſt all away in *barata* to the ſtanders by. And with this conjuring trick, thus I carried them thorow the Air, I was able to do what *I* would do with them. O that I could then have whiſpered them ſoftly in the ear, and have told them; Know (Gentlemen) that you feed upon your own fleſh; that the Wolf is in the midſt of your flocks; and that he, whom they make ſo much of, is he, whom they ſo much wronged. O, if they did but know ſo much, how would they bleſſe themſelves, what a world of croſſes would they make in every corner of their houſes, that they might not be troubled with a double labour all the dayes of their life after to do the ſame thing again, a thouſand and a thouſand times over? For now their mattreſſes were a quilting, and their beds a making, wherein they were like to take but little reſt; and fetch more friſcals in the air than when they toſt me in the blanket; ſo that they ſhall have as good cauſe to think upon me, as I upon them, and remember one another the better as long as we live. But my pain was already paſt, and theirs was now comming upon them. O, if they but knew, that he that is thus with them in ſheeps clothing, ſhall ere long break ſuddenly in upon them, like a roaring and raging Lion, how would they look one upon another? But it is well as it is; for ere they and I part, we will quit ſcores, and make them to know me a little better, and what it is to abuſe one in that manner as they did me, and to ſcorn and deſpiſe their own blood. *It* is a fine ſtale or call, to take a bird within, to have a good *coram vobis*, to ſpend bravely, to go gallantly, and to be a *Don Juan de Guzman*; but it had been better for them, that I had poor *Guzman de Alfarache* with his tatter'd cloaths, than *Don Juan de Guzman* in all his gallantry. They uſ'd me with a great deal of courteſie, and gave me very kind entertainment, but becauſe I had a very queazie ſtomack, and was troubled with many qualms, like a woman that is a breeding, out of that longing deſire that I had to be revenged, nothing would down with me, or if it did, it would make no ſtay, but I ſhould preſently puke it up again. For in ſuch caſes, a mans thoughts are ever of a bad digeſtion; it being the nature of injuries, not to be eaſily concocted. So that *I* did continually beat my brains about it, plodding with my ſelf how *I* ſhould beſt effect it; and in this vertuous exercile had *I* ſet my wits a working, and all theſe my noble entertainments tended to no other end than this. For it had been great folly in me, to have made ſuch great preparation to no purpoſe. And unprofitable is that power which is not reduced to act. *I* did but wait for an happy conjuncture, for every thing hath its *quando*, its when it ſhould be done. For we cannot execute all things at all times. Beſides, there are ſome hours that are unlucky, ſome Stars that are croſs, and ſome Planets that are malignant; whoſe contagious breath we are to flie from, and keep our ſelves a-loof from their infectious air, leſt they chance to work our deſtruction.

Thus then did *I* leaſurely ſtay, looking for a fit occaſion, paſſing thoſe dayes that I remained there, in feaſting and banquetting, and all other delightful pleaſures; one while walking down to the Sea-ſide, to take the freſh air; otherwiſe, going to recreate my ſelf in their ſweet and pleaſant Gardens, which are very curiouſly kept; and now and then viſiting the fair Dames of *Genoa*.

My Kinſmen would fain have made me to marry a Gentlewoman of very good quality, but of a ſmall Dowry; but I durſt not venture upon her for the reaſons before recited: and being beſides to ſteal away from thence very ſhortly, our eggs muſt have been buried in the aſhes; yet did *I* ſhew my ſelf very thankful unto them for theſe their good wiſhes towards me, neither accepting, nor refuſing their offer, that *I* might go entertaining and leading them along, till *I* had hit the mark that *I* aimed at. For, certain it is, that a man may then eaſily knock out his enemies brains, when his adverſary thinks there is no ſuch treachery intended againſt him, and reſts moſt ſecure. And here will we reſt a while.

## Chapter IX.

*Guzman de Alfarache robs his Uncle and Kinſmen in Genoa, and imbarks himſelf in the Gallies that were to go for* Spain.

AN injury, never ought to be ſlighted; nor he ſleep that does it. For Revenge comes up from beneath the earth, lurking in the ſecret corners thereof, lying ſtill in Ambuſh, watching but a fit time to ſally forth: and to do thee a miſchief. The Hare oftentimes ſtarts out of that buſh, where we did leaſt dream of his ſitting. Let not the rich man truſt in his riches, nor the powerful man in the greatneſſe of his power: not the ſtrong man, in his ſtrength; nor the valiant man in his courage; for time alters the ſtate of things, and turns them cophe-turvie. A little hair in a pen makes a great blot, and a little ſtone in the way overturns a great Wain. And when the Offender thinks himſelf moſt ſecure; then the offended findes the better opportunitie. I have told you heretofore, that Revenge is baſe Cowardize, which ſprings from a weak womaniſh minde; to which kinde of Creatures it is commonly compatible, and ſuits beſt with them. And albeit I have mentioned ſome, nay, many unto you, that have made their names immortal, by ſcorning and contemning of it; yet here I ſhall not omit to tell you a ſtory of a woman, wherein ſhe well ſhewed that ſhe was a woman.

A Gentlewoman that was young, fair, rich, and of a noble linage, being married to a Gentleman in every reſpect equal unto her ſelf, chanced within a ſhort time after to become a widdow: who diſcreetly conſidering the dangers, whereinto by reaſon of her tender years, ſhe was like to fall, and what ſpeeches the world is wont to caſt out, through a too much aptneſſe that men have to whiſper and murmure ſtrange tales: for every man judgeth ſo of things as they repreſent themſelves to his imagination; & as he is inſtructed by his private either fancy or affection, and taking notice of one onely action of this or that man or woman, it is a common practice amongſt them, to vary their opinions thereupon, and give their ſeveral cenſures. And yet not alwayes do theſe tongues of theirs ſpeak the truth, nor their judgments hit upon the right. She, holding it therefore very convenient to put theſe dear pledges of hers upon the tips of mens tongues, and ſo occaſion her honour to come in queſtion ſhe reſolved (as on the leſſer evil) to marry. Two Gentlemen became Suiters unto her, both equal in their pretenſion, but far unequal in their deſerving. The one, to his as much content, as his heart could deſire, the match being in a manner concluded; but the other rejected and quite caſt off, running a contrary fortune to his Corrival. And beſides, that he was not of that rank and quality as the other; he had likewiſe ſome other defects, which might very well excuſe a woman of a far meaner endowment, to admit him to be her Companion. Now, the former being made ſure to this Gentlewoman, and having paſt their promiſes each to other, ſo that nothing was wanting but their going to Church, and there to perform thoſe Ceremonies and Solemnities in that caſe required. The ſecond ſeeing his hopes daſht, and his ſuit at an end, and that there was no recovering of her; for that ſhe was already betrothed to the other: a deviliſh toy took him ſuddenly in the head, by perverſe and indirect means, to fetch ſuch a leap, as ſhould put himſelf forward, and caſt the other behinde.

He reſolved with himſelf to riſe up one day very early in the morning, which he did accordingly, and having hid himſelf in a ſecret place, where no body could ſee him, there did he lie cloſe, till ſuch time as the ſervants of the houſe had opened the betrothed Gentlewomans doors; and then preſently taking his time, without being heard or perceived by any, he ſteps in, and there layes me a pretty while behind the porch, till ſuch time, as to his ſeeming, the people were ſtoring in the ſtreets, and all the reſt of the houſes and ſhops were open. And then feigning to come out of the Gentlewomans houſe, as if he had lien there all night, he ſtands ſtrutting himſelf upon the middle of the threſhold before the door, with his ſword clapt under his arm, making haſte, and be-ware letting and ordering his Ruff, and buttoning up the buttons of his Doublet: ſo that as many as paſt by, and obſerved the manner of his carriage, did verily believe that he was eſpouſed unto her, and had now enjoyed his Gentlewoman.

When this plot of his fell out thus handſomely, that for his purpoſe he could not have

withe it to have taken better effect: this buſineſſe was whiſpered of at firſt by a few; but afterwards ſpred it ſelf by degrees, and came to be divulged all over the ſtreet, till at laſt the noiſe thereof entred into her own private chamber. The trick had he plaid twice over. And this buſineſſe was ſo publickly talked of, and the Gentlewoman thereby grown ſo infamous, that it was the table-talk of all the Town: every man admiring this her inconſtancy, and wondring at her indiſcretion, that ſhe ſhould forego her firſt bargain, being ſo advantageous for her own good, and make choice of this other, whom ſhe had formerly caſt off, and not without cauſe. But when this news was thus ſcattered every where abroad, and every mans mouth was full of the manner of it; as that he was ſeen to come out half naked, all undreſt, and his points untruſt: when this (I ſay) came to the knowledge of her other Suiter, he did ſo reſent the wrong ſhe had done him, was ſo overcharged with ſorrow, and ſo inflamed with choler, that albeit he lov'd her before ſo tenderly, that he deſired nothing more than to make her his wife; now did he cruelly hate her, flying now as faſt from her, as before he ſought after her: and did not onely abhor her, but all other women for her ſake: it ſeeming unto him; That ſince ſhe, whom he ſo much eſteemed, and ſo dearly loved, accounting her ſo good, ſo chaſt, and ſo reſerved a creature, that ſhe ſhould commit ſo foul a fact, there was little hope of faith to be found in the reſt: and if there were any left, on whoſe loyaltie men might truſt and relie, they were ſo few, that he deſpaired of meeting with that happineſſe. He weighed their inconſtancies, their delayings, their paſſions, and with them the dangers, the troubles, and cares whereunto men put themſelves. And paſſing from theſe to other diſcourſes which he made with himſelf, inſpired by God, they wrought ſo upon him, that he changed the love of the creature into that of the Creator, reſolving with himſelf to turn Frier. Which deliberation, he putting in execution, ſuddenly entred into a religious Order. This came to the Gentlewomans knowledge, and with it the report that run of her, as alſo the occaſion of it; who, when ſhe ſaw how things ſtood, and that it was not poſſible for her to repair her honour; nor to take away that foul blot which the other had laid upon it, ſhe took on like a mad woman: and how can you blame her, that ſhe ſhould thus loſe her ſelf in her paſſions; having loſt at one blow, her Honour, her Huſband, her preferment, and her chiefeſt happineſſe? Hopeleſſe for ever, either by this, or any other the like means, to receive any future content, or to return to the former ſtate wherein ſhe ſtood, or to recover her reputation, which was thus ſhamefully loſt.

Whereupon ſhe began to bethink her ſelf how ſhe might ſalve this her innocency by ſome exemplary puniſhment. And having ſummed and caſt up theſe reckonings with her ſelf, ſhe found her honeſty ſo deeply ingaged, that it was impoſſible by any other courſe but this to clear it: and that ſuch a treachery as this could not be quitted, than with one no leſſe treacherous, though more cruel. Whereupon ſhe did put on ſo infernal a fury, and went on in that violent rage, that ſhe buſied her thoughts in nothing elſe, ſave how ſhe might bring this buſineſſe about. God be merciful unto us, and deliver us from a wronged womans revenge: for all of them are commonly ſuch as ſhe, who here preſents her ſelf unto us.

The firſt thing that ſhe reſolved on was to uſe her beſt indeavour to become a Nunne; (and if ſhe had ſtopt there, ſhe had ſpunne a good thrid) and imparting a great part of her troubles to an eſpecial friend of hers, that was of that Monaſtery, whither ſhe had determined to goe: after ſhe had broken her minde unto him: ſhe, with great ſecrecy, effected her deſire. Then did ſhe convey unto the Monaſtery all the chiefeſt of her houſhold-ſtuff, her Jewels, and her moneys, annexing thereunto by publick conveyances and inſtruments drawne and ſigned for that uſe, the greateſt part of her wealth. This being done, ſhe ſtood daily expecting, that this Gentleman her enemy ſhould come and renue his ſuit, and treat with her, touching the Marriage; which (according to her expectation) within ſome few dayes after, he did: alleaging in his excuſe, the great love that he bare unto her: for which cauſe, being deſperate of his hopes, he uſed thoſe ſubtil means, that he might obtain the end of his wiſhed deſires. But now, acknowledging his fault, and that he had been the cauſe of this errour, that was voyced abroad, craving pardon for the ſame, he was willing to ſolder up this flaw, by tendring himſelf to be her husband. She, who deſired nothing more, than that this his wicked intention ſhould come to light, and that her honour thereby might recover its former ſplendour, made anſwer unto him; That ſeeing there was now no other means left unto her for the ſaving of her credit, nor no better courſe to be taken for the recovery of her loſt reputation; ſhe did willingly accept of his offer. But told him withall, that

that ſhe had made a vow, the performance whereof would be accompliſhed within theſe two moneths, or little more, and until that time were expired, ſhe could not give him that ſatisfaction which he deſired. But, if he would be pleaſed to have the patience to ſtay till then, he ſhould obtain his ſuit. But, if he were ſo eagerly bent upon the buſineſſe, that impatient of ſo long an intermiſſion of time, he longed to come ſooner to this his deſired end, ſhe would not ſtop him in this his journey; but would have the buſineſſe to be carried with all poſſible ſecrecy, till the term of the aforeſaid two moneths ſhould be fully accompliſhed; and then afterwards ſhe did not care (leaving that to his diſcretion) how ſoon this their marriage were manifeſted to the world.

The Gentleman accepted of the condition, holding himſelf (therein) the happieſt man in the world. And having provided all that was fitting and neceſſary for a buſineſſe of this nature, they were ſecretly contracted together; by vertue whereof they were eſpouſed each to other. They continued together on theſe terms ſome few dayes, he entertained himſelf with that aſſured hope that he had of his abſolute enjoying of her, and ſhe being no leſſe contented than he, with the wiſhed end that ſhe had to work her revenge.

One night, after they had ſupt, her husband went to bed, ſhe enters into the chamber, and ſetting her ſelf down neer unto the bed-ſide, feigning to be buſying her fingers about ſome trifling thing or other, (as women are never without a thouſand ſuch idle toyes) ſhe waited by him, till he was faln aſleep, and when ſhe ſaw that the ſoundneſſe of his firſt ſleep had ſeized forcibly upon him, ſhe ſoftly puts her hand into the ſleeve of her Gown, and taking out a keen cutting-knife, as ſharp as any razor, to that firſt ſleep of his ſhe added the laſt minute of his life; for in an inſtant ſhe had cut his throat, and left him dead in the bed, wallowing in his own blood. Afterwards, telling the people of the houſe, that her husband had had a very bad night of it, and that none ſhould go in for fear of waking him, till he himſelf were willing to call to them, or that her ſelf ſhould return from Maſſe; ſhe ſhut the door after her, and hied her as faſt as ſhe could to the Monaſtery, where ſhe preſently received the habit, and was made a Nun, after that ſhe had thus waſht away her infamy with his blood, who had beſpotted it, giving a notorious token of her honeſty, and a terrible demonſtration of her cruelty.

I will likewiſe tell you (becauſe it ſuiteth well to this purpoſe) that which *Fuſtillos* ſaid, a fool that went up and down *Alcala de Henares*; one whom I afterwards very well knew. This fool a dog had bit by the leg; which hurt, though he was afterwards well healed of it, yet his heart was not at quiet: for he had ſtill a ſpight at that dog. Whom he finding one day by chance lying all along before his door, ſleeping in the Sun, he went to a certain place neer unto the Church of *Santa Maria*, and taking up a great ſtone, as much as he could lift with both his hands, he came ſoftly ſtealing towards the dog, without being perceived by him, and lifting it up as high as ever he could reach, let it fall juſt upon the head of him. The poor Cur, having received this cruel blow, being in extream torment, and neer unto his death, began to make a moſt pitiful howling, and fell (his laſt pangs being upon him) a bounding in the air. *Fuſtillos* the fool, ſeeing in what caſe he was, ſaid unto him; Do you hear brother, do you hear? *Quien enemigos tiene, no duerma:* He does ill to ſleep that hath an enemy. I remember I told you once before; That ill is alwayes ill; But of all ills, I hold Revenge to be the worſt: For a revengeful heart knows not how to be merciful. And he that ſhall not ſhew mercy, let him not look for mercy, neither from God nor man. For every man ſhall be meted with the ſame meaſure that he meteth unto others. And in the ſame ballance that thou weigheſt thy neighbour, in the ſame ſhalt thou be weighed thy ſelf. This thou canſt not deny; but I muſt have thee alſo to confeſſe, That they are in an errour, who knowing mens evil inclination, will yet be ſo ſimple, as to truſt them; eſpecially thoſe, whom we have formerly injured; for few or none of your reconciled friends, but prove rotten at the heart; and how fair a ſhow ſoever they make, not one of a thouſand that is ſound and good. He doth offer a pleaſing ſacrifice unto God, who for Gods ſake onely, remitteth the wrongs that he hath received. Few miracles have we ſeen in this caſe; Onely I was an eye-witneſſe of one my ſelf in *Florence*, which hapned without the wals of the City, in the Church of *San Miniato*, that ſtands within the Caſtle. Which becauſe it is but a ſhort one, and worthy your memory, I will briefly relate it unto you. A Gentleman of *Florence*, called Captain *Giovanni Gualberto*, the ſon of a noble Knight, that was a *Titulado*, going to *Florence*, with his company, well arm'd, & on horſ-back, he met upon the way with a mortal enemy of his, who kill'd his brother; who ſeing the danger wherein he was, giving himſelf for a loſt man (for that he knew not how to

eſcape him) humbled himſelf at his feet, and croſſing his breſt with his arms, beſought his pardon, and that for Jeſus Chriſt's ſake, that was crucified, he would be pleaſed to ſpare him his life. *Giovanni Gualberto*, had theſe words in that veneration, that pricked with a charitable compunction, taking pity of him, he willingly pardoned this his enemy. And taking him along with him, he made him to go back again with him to *Florence*, and brought him to *San Midiators* Church, to offer thanks unto God. And kneeling down before a *Crucifix*, which was a very lively piece, *Giovanni Gualberto*, kneeling alſo on his knees, deſired of God, that he would ſo forgive him his treſpaſſes, as he did freely forgive this his enemy that had treſpaſſed him, in killing his brother. Which words were no ſooner uttered by him, but Chriſt bowed his head unto him. *Giovanni Gualberto*, humbly acknowledging this great grace and favour there ſhown unto him in the preſence of all thoſe that were there, preſently entred into a religious Order, in which holy profeſſion he continued to his dying day. This Image of Chriſt ſtands to this day, with his head bowing it ſelf down, even in the ſelf-ſame manner as it ſtood then: and is there reverenced, as a great relique, not only by the *Florentines*, but all other Catholikes.

And now (laying Miracles aſide) let me truly tell you, That when a man doth pardon his enemy, but takes not this for his ground, it leaves ſome embers behinde, ſome quick coals covered over with a few aſhes, which being ſtirr'd never ſo little, breaks forth again, inflaming the ſoul, and ſo inciting it to revenge. And howbeit outwardly this fire ſeem to be dead, yet God keep us from this ſtill water; for many a time and oft, this fire is onely ſprinkled over with a little Court-holy-water, which is as good as nothing, or ſlightly covered over with the aſhes of a falſe forgiveneſſe. But if you ſhall but offer to blow it with *Occaſions* bellows, though never ſo little, it ſoon diſcovers it ſelf, the coals kindle by and by, and the flame of their hatred breaks forth afreſh, and to as deep a revenge, as if there had never been any atonement between them. And this *I* am able to juſtifie unto you, as having made experience thereof my ſelf: For I was ever ſo mightily pricked on to revenge, as if (like a beaſt) the ſpurs thereof lay ſtill gagging at my ſides. And well may *I* ſay beaſt, for he is no leſſe that is thus beaſtly-minded. I had ſtill before mine eyes that diſ-joynting and ratling of my bones: when like the winnowing of Wheat in a fan, they toſt me up on high, and no ſooner down, but hoiſt me up again, every bone of me ſeeming to gingle like ſo many bels. What with this & that delight and pleaſure that they took in the recounting of the jeſt, and the evil intent wherewith they did it, beſides their telling of me, that nothing did ſo much grieve them, as that they had not uſed me worſe, I could not chuſe but bear it in minde, and ſay to my ſelf, O ye miſ-begotten raſcals, ye villains, ye enemies to goodnes, ye dogs! *I* came to your gates, being poor & needy, and what a fine refreſhing did ye give me, that *I* might the better go forward on my journey! This their courſe uſage had ſtirr'd up ſuch ſtore of choler in me, that I did now deſire nothing more than to cry quittance with all thoſe that had an hand in this conſpiracy. And not ſo much to be revenged on them, as that old dog-bolt, who was the principal plotter, and actor, both of it, and my hurt.

The time paſſed on, and with it I gained more friends, wedging them cloſer and cloſer daily unto me, I knowing them, and they me. The propoſed marriage was hotly purſued by them, they all very earneſtly deſiring to have me naturalized amongſt them. I viſited them, and they me: my friends reſorted to my lodging, and I to theirs. Now, as if I had been a Town-born child, *I* had free acceſſe in all parts of the City, I went and plaid amongſt them at their Ordinaries, and publick houſes of gaming; and they likewiſe would come and meet at my lodging; ſometimes loſing and ſometimes getting, till one night amongſt the reſt the Cards fell out ſo luckilie, and ſhewed themſelves ſo favourable unto me, that *I* carried home with me at one clap above ſeven thouſand Royals: wherewith my Gentlemen were ſo netled, that the next night after, they were very deſirous to play greater game. I miſliked not the motion, for the time of my reckoning was now neer at hand, if not paſt; my nine moneths (as the common ſaying is) that I had gone with childe, looking to be brought a-bed of this birth, begotten of mine own brain, were now fully expired; and everie moment *I* expected an happy hour. For Captain *Favelo* had already told me, that the Galleys were now ready, and that he was fully perſwaded, they would very ſhortly go for *Spain*. This made me beſtir my ſtumps; and to get all things readie to goe aboord, conceiving they were now hoyſing ſail, fitting their oares, and readie to launch; being reſolved, whitherſoever they went, to goe along with them; yet I durſt not make it known, till going out of the haven, they were put forth to Sea. I accepted that night their challenge, and continued play with them, but to no other end in the world, but to entertain the time, that *I* might afterwards be

the

the better provided, to give them a wipe for a farewell, and to tickle them with the latter arrow, or (as they uſe to do in *Portugal*) *darles de puntada*.

That night I loſt, but no more than I was willing; for now I did employ all my skill, to bring my purpoſe to paſſe. I did float up and down with a ſide-winde, and got to windeward of them, ſtill beſtowing *barato* (howſoever the vvorld went) upon my old friend the Captain; becauſe I knew he was to return it back again in the end, to my greater advantage. Some few dayes after I perceived my Captain grew ſomewhat ſad; I askt him what might be the cauſe of this his melancholy, and that he was not ſo merry, as he was wont to be: He told me, it was onely the ſorrow, that he had conceived, that he and I, ere long muſt part; for that ſome ten dayes hence the Galleys were without fail to go away, by expreſſe order given for their departure.

His words were Pearls; and this language of his, as a voyce from Heaven, as I had heard it once more ſay unto me; Open this Cabinet, unlock that Cheſt, and pull out that other Cat by the ears, and carry away with thee, what thou liſt. So that now, I thought this buſineſſe was in a manner quite ended. And ſo taking my Captain aſide, when I ſaw that he and I were all one, I ſaid unto him; Sir, you have ſhow'd your ſelf ſuch a friend unto me, and I do highly eſteem of your love & friendſhip, that I know not how either to indear, or requite it. There is offered now unto me by occaſion of this your voyage, an abſolute remedy to all my deſires, and a fit opportunity to effect, what I have long ſince intended; and without your helping hand, wherein it chiefly conſiſteth, I utterly deſpair of obtaining my purpoſe. And if I have for-born till now to give you an account thereof (which I ought to have done, in regard of that true affection, and faithfull friendſhip, that is between us) it was becauſe I was loath out of my love unto you, to cauſe any diſquietneſſe in you, which the acquainting you therewith, muſt needs bring with it. I would have you therefore to underſtand, that I came not hither, either out of any deſire to ſee this Citie, nor for that kinde entertainments ſake, or any other courteſie, that I have here received; but onely for to diſ-oblige my ſelf, and to revenge a certain wrong, which my father being an elderly man, received at the hands of a young *Spaniard*, that refideth here in this Citie: who was forced thereupon to forſake his Countrey, as being aſhamed of the affront that was done him. And not being able (in regard he was an old man) to right himſelf as he ſhould, he held it his beſt courſe, to leſſen it by his long abſence, the grief whereof continued with him to his dying day. And he that had no reſpect unto thoſe reverent hairs of an aged father, cannot juſtly complain of me, if being his ſon, I loſe all reſpect towards him in the working of my revenge. And becauſe it may ſo fall out, that after I have ſatisfied my deſire, that his friends, either by the great favour they ſhall finde in this place, or by the ſtrength of their purſe, which is no leſſe prevalent, ſhall go about to do me any injury, that you afford me your beſt aſſiſtance, by which good furtherance onely of yours, without any peril to your own perſon, you may by your ſecrecy ſecure me, and bring me fairly off. Which friendly Office ſhall binde me ſo faſt unto you, that (during life) I ſhall acknowledge my ſelf to be your ſlave. For a ſon hath no more honour, than what he inherits from his father: And if my father hath none to leave, this trayterous enemy of his, having taken it from him, I likewiſe live without it, and muſt recover it my ſelf by theſe hands of mine, and by mine own proper induſtry. Which if my kinſmen have not ſought to repair, it was, for that they were not either willing to hazard themſelves, or their fortunes; or for that after my fathers abſence, all was buried, and not ſo much as a word ſpoken thereof, whereby the remembrance of the wrong might have been revived. Holding it the leſſer inconvenience of the two, to let it ſleep thus quietly as it did, than by awaking it, to give occaſion to the people to publiſh this his ſhame the more.

*Favelo* all this while hearkened very attentively to every word that I ſaid, and would that I ſhould have remitted this buſineſſe unto him, to the end that he might make himſelf a party in this revenge, as became a true friend; not doubting but that he ſhould give me good ſatisfaction therein, and perform it as well as I my ſelf could wiſh. And albeit he was very earneſt with me, uſing many violent intreaties, that he might take this burthen wholly upon him, yet notwithſtanding could he not bring me to give way unto it; Telling him, that it was neither juſt, nor fitting; That the injury being mine, the revenge ſhould be another's. And that onely for this end, I was come out of my Native Countrey of *Spain*, with reſolution never to return thither again, till that I my ſelf had given my enemy his payment, and in that coyn, that he ſhould know from whom, and wherefore he received it. Adding withall, that he ſhould do me a great deal of wrong, to think that I wanted either ſtrength, or courage

to put my ſelf upon ſuch a buſineſſe as this is, conſidering how nearly it concerns me, and how it toucheth my Soul to the very quick. When he heard me ſay ſo (ſeeing me thus peremptorily bent) he grew ſo quiet, that he would preſſe that point no farther; and though he made me no reply thereunto, yet he told me; if I have any thing of worth in me, if I can do any thing, if my whole eſtate, life, and honour, may import your ſervice, I lay them down at your feet, they are wholly yours to be diſpoſed of. And if, for fear of the worſt (becauſe a man knows not what may happen in ſuch a caſe) you will (for to make ſurer work) that I and my Souldiers ſhall aſſiſt you, or (at leaſt) give us leave to ſtand at a gaze, to ſee how the vvorld goes with you, command us ſo far forth as you pleaſe; your will ſhall be ours; and we will not be wanting to the uttermoſt of our power, to afford you our beſt aid, and and to give you all the content we can. And I will promiſe you upon mine honeſt word, and therefore put that to my account, that if you once but ſet your foot within the Galley, all *Italy* (would they never ſo fain) ſhall not be able to fetch you thence, and would rather run all dangers my ſelf, though never ſo great, than that you ſhould ſuffer the leaſt.

Noble Captain (ſaid I) I believe you both in this, and the reſt, and am very confident that you profeſſe no more, than what your true heart unto me, doth ſincerely ſuggeſt. But I think, there needeth not ſo much water to drive this mill. Firſt, becauſe my enemy reſts ſecure, and ſuſpects not the revenge that I ſhall take of him: And ſecondly, for that my ſelf and *Sayavedra*, ſhall be able well enough to go through with that which I pretend. Which being accompliſhed, my deſire is, the buſineſſe may be ſo carried, that when his friends would right themſelves upon me, and ſhould haply chance to purſue me, or make ſome diligent ſearch after me, they might by your favour, miſſe of their purpoſe, at come too late to lay hold upon me. That which preſſes, and imports me moſt, and which I require and your hands, is; That I may know the ſet day, when the Galleys are to depart, and when you mean to weigh Anchor that I may not loſe either time, or occaſion. He promiſed me, I ſhould: And ſo we were agreed in the end, that by little and little, and that very ſecretly, I ſhould by *Sayavedra* convey my Trunks, and my Cloaths aboord the Galley, to the end that I might not defer the doing thereof to the very laſt puſh, & have nothing elſe to buſie my ſelf about, but onely my imbarking.

I cannot tell you, how much *Favelo* joyed, nor expreſſe to you the great content he took, when he knew that he ſhould have me along with him; whereupon, he made very good proviſion of divers delicacies to entertain me withall, as if I had been Admiral of the Galleys. I called my ſervant unto me, and told him, what had paſt betwixt me and Captain *Favelo*, and that it was now time to tuck up our ſlieves to our elbows, becauſe we had much to knead, and a great deal of dough to mould, to make Tarts: and therefore we muſt roundly ſet our ſelves to work. I had ſcarce ended my diſcourſe with him, but that he was ready for joy to leap out of his skin, he was all agogge with content, the tinder had now taken fire, the Deer was rouz'd, and he was ſet ſo hot on following the game, that there was no holding of him back. Then preſently did we ſit in councel concerning the manner of revenge, and having well adviſed with my ſelf, I ſaid thus unto him: The beſt, the profitableſt, and the leaſt dangerous to our ſelves, will conſiſt in matter of money. This is that which I deſire (ſaid *Sayavedra*) this chaſe will be better than fifteen, if we look well to our play. Beſides, the wounds that are given us on the body, are quickly cured; but thoſe that light upon our purſe, are long a healing; and pain us a great while after, if not all the dayes of our life.

Go to then (ſaid I) that we may fall the more handſomely to work, the firſt thing that is to be done, is to buy four Trunks, two of which thou ſhalt put in that part of the Galley, which *Favelo* ſhall appoint for them. And the other two, thou ſhalt fill with ſtones, and letting no man know what there is in them, thou ſhalt cunningly and un-eſpyde, ſecretly convey to my lodging, and put them in my Chamber. Theſe ſtones ſhalt thou wrap up cloſe in ſome old rags, that whereſoever they be, or whitherſoever they ſhall be carried, and tumbled to and fro, they may not rattle, nor make any noiſe; charging him to have a great care, that he leave not one empty place, but with ſome traſh, or other, cram them as cloſe as he can for his life. As alſo to ſee that they be not heavier then he, in his diſcretion, ſhall think fitting; making each of them to weigh ſome ſix *arrobas* a piece, which will come to about an hundred and an half good weight. *I* alſo acquainted him with every particular thing, that he was to do, leaving him well informed with thoſe inſtructions that *I* had given him.

When theſe wheels were thus ſet going, *I* got me to *Don Beltran*'s houſe, that good old man,

man, my Uncle, and being in converſation with him, I began to fall into talk, how fearfull I was to go abroad a nights, in regard of the Trunks that I had in my lodging, two of them eſpecially being worth the looking to, for that they were full of Plate, Jewels of good value, and good ſtore of Crowns, and (to ſay the truth) all the little wealth that I had. This is your own fault, Coſin, ſaid he unto me; and if any harm come unto you, blame no body but your ſelf. For my houſe might very well (had it pleaſed you to accept of it) have excuſed both your lodging, and your fear. Foralbeit, that where you are, be the beſt in all this Town; yet have you not any Inne, (though you ſhall travel all the vvorld over) where you ſhall finde that goodneſſe and that honeſty, as to keep any thing there in ſafety. You (Coſin) are but a young man, and know not the vvorld as I do; I am an old Lad, and have a great deal of experience of theſe things, and therefore let me adviſe you, that you never truſt your Trunks, but with a ſure and ſtrong lock: and when you are journeying upon the way, carry along with you in your pocket, or your Port-manteau, ſome good Padlock, to faſten the ſtaple of the Chamber door, where you lodge. For either your Hoſte, or his vvife, or his Children, or his ſervants, have two, or three Keyes to all the Chambers, and you ſhall no ſooner turn your back, but in the twinkling of an eye, you ſhall loſe all that you left there within, and hardly recover it again. And therefore be ſure, to make all ſure. For if you ſhall call mine Hoſt, or any of his in queſtion, and ſeek to recover your own by Law, they ſhall anſwer to your ſute, and after a great deal of coſt and trouble, they will alleage for themſelves, that either you carried it away your ſelf, or that you brought no ſuch thing thither, or at leaſt that they knew of no ſuch thing, becauſe you had not when you came in, conſigned it unto them, and committed it to their charge: ſo that what was thine before, they will by this means make it their own. Into an Inne, bring nothing in; for it is no ſooner in, then loſt, unleſſe you look narrowly unto it. But being a young Gallant as you are, though it pleaſe you not, out of your *Jovial* diſpoſition, and the love to good company, to take this for your houſe, which is moſt freely yours, yet could I wiſh you to fetch away your Trunks from thence, and not to leave any more plate, or ſilver there, than what ſhall ſerve for your neceſſary uſe. For here in my *Eſcritorio*, all ſhall be kept ſafe for you, ſo that you ſhall not need to be afraid thereof, as long as it remains here in my houſe. I thank't him as much, as if my Trunks had been worth a Million, and ſo I think he did conceive as much, or little leſſe. As well in regard that he had ſeen ſome of my veſſels of ſilver, as likewiſe my Chain, my Gold, and other things, that I had brought thither with me: As alſo, for that I ſeem'd to be ſo deſirous to have them ſecured in ſome place of ſafety.

From this talk we fell into diſcourſe touching my marriage: He telling me, that I was now at fit years for a wife, and that the longer I ſtaid without, if I had a purpoſe to ſettle my ſelf and my eſtate, I did loſe but ſo much time; for that your elder marriages, were but a leaving of a mans Children to be fatherleſſe, and to become poor miſerable Orphanes. And therefore, if I were not minded to be a Church-man, and to admit my ſelf into ſome one religious Order, or other, it were better for me to marry out of hand, as well in reſpect of mine own comfort, as the husbanding of my eſtate. For ſervants, though they be never ſo faithfull, do not for the moſt part want Conduit-pipes, to convey away thy wealth, ſcattering it abroad like water, upon women, gaming, feaſting, exceſſe in apparel, and diverſe other things, who ſeeing themſelves neceſſitied, and put to their ſhifts, to maintain their idle expences, rob their Maſters of all that they have, and afterwards flie their Countrey. He laid before me the manifold inconveniences of a ſingle life, and on the neck of that he comes upon me, making a large relation unto me of the good parts of this Gentle woman, whom he wiſht me unto. Who (as I underſtood) was his Kinſ-woman by the mother ſide, and more nobly, than richly deſcended. But that defect was ſupplied by her beauty. I ſhould have had likewiſe with her but *Ho-there*, (as I afterwards came to diſcover the myſtery) a young daughter, which ſhe had by a miſchance, begotten on her by a young Citizen of *Genua*, who had promiſed her marriage, but afterwards (cozening the poor wench) married with another. He told me beſides, that ſhe had a mother that was a very wealthy woman, and one that would be a great ſtay and help unto me, eſpecially in the government of my houſe, and the bringing up of thoſe Children, that God ſhould bleſſe me withall. And that I ſhould finde her no leſſe loving unto me, than if ſhe were mine own natural mother. I did ſet a good face on the matter, and ſeemed to like wondrous well of all that which he had ſaid unto me; Telling him, that whatſoever came from him, could not but be good: and that his counſel ſhould be a guide to my actions, without further conſultation from my ſelf, as conveni-

tenancy ſhould offer it ſelf. But that I might not loſe a certain Benefice, that was beſtowed upon me, for the making ſure of that, I muſt neceſſarily reſign it to a Cozen-germane of mine, my mothers-ſiſters-ſon, who lives in *Sevil*. I threw out this bait unto him, to nibble upon, wherewith I entertain'd him for that time, he ſeeming well contented with my fair anſwer.

Whileſt we were earneſtly talking of this buſineſſe, in comes *Sayavedra* unto me, and rounding me in the ear, made ſhow as if he had delivered me a very long meſſage. I then (ſeeing my time, ſpeaking out aloud) ſaid unto him; And what anſwer did you make him? And he anſwered me in the ſame key, reply'd; What anſwer would you have me make him Sir, but that it ſhould be done? Marry, beſhrew your fingers for it, (ſaid I) you did not well, in ſaying ſo. Doeſt not thou know, that I am not now in *Rome*, nor *Sevil*? doeſt thou not ſee how raſh and inconſiderate thou haſt been in promiſing that for me, which I cannot perform? Go, carry him the great Chain, give it him, and tell him, that this is all that I have, and that I can do no more than I can do: Excuſe me unto him, and ſignifie withall, that I have ſtrain'd my ſelf as far for him, as my ability can reach. You ſay well Sir (replied *Sayadra*) but how a Gods name, ſhall I be able to lugge along by my ſide ſuch a huge Chain as this, that weighs ſeven hundred Crowns in good Gold? I think I had need to hire a Porter to help me. I preſently made anſwer; No more words; Do as I bid you. Get you to ſome Gold-ſmiths ſhop, or other, and take the Chain along with you, and make choice of ſome Jewel there, or what you ſhall think fit will ſerve the turn, and leave the Chaine there, or ſome other pawn, which ſhall be worth more than what you have of him, and pay him intereſt for the ſone of it: and this, I take it, will be the better courſe. And if the pawn fall out too ſhort, make it out in Crowns unto him. And thou diſingage thy ſelf of the folly, whereinto thou haſt run: For I know no other remedy but this.

My Uncle, who liſtned to all that I had ſaid; What pawns (ſaid he) will you give him, or for what? To whom I made anſwer; Sir, he that hath fooliſh ſervants, muſt whether he will, or no incurre many inconveniences, falling ſtill into an hundred thouſand errours, and as many miſchiefs, and ſleep-breaking cares. There is a Gentle-woman here of *Caſtile*, that is treating a marriage with a Gentleman of our own Countrey; they are both well known unto me, and of my eſpecial acquaintance, and to whom I owe ſome beholdingneſſe. They have requeſted me that I would furniſh them with apparel and Jewels for their wedding; which is now ſo near at hand, that I cannot give them that ſatisfaction that I would. You ſee Sir, what Tree they truſt unto, and what ſhifts I am driven to, to comply with them. And the grief of it is, that this block-head my man, had not the wit to excuſe me, being he knew, how hardly I could do them this kindneſſe. And I am half jealous, that he out of his heart invited them thereunto, and without making me privy unto it, hath promiſed them my beſt furtherance. For it cannot ſink into my head, that a woman of judgement, ſhould of her ſelf requeſt ſuch a courteſie as this. And if it be his own act, why ſhould not he make it good without me? But Sirrah (ſaid I to my man) ſeeing it is as it is, and it cannot now be otherwiſe, go wait upon her, and do as ſhe ſhall direct you.

The old man, ſeeing me ſo much moved, and that I ſeemed to be much offended with my man, for his indiſcretion, ſaid unto me; Coſin, let not this trouble you, it is not a thing worth the ſpeaking of, and therefore let it not diſquiet you: you are come into a place, where you cannot want friends for ſo ſmall a matter as this. I know that very well Sir, (ſaid I) and that my noble Kinſmen here, will do me any friendly office that lies in their power, and that as long as they have it, I cannot lack. But becauſe amongſt all our kindred, I know not any of thoſe that are married, that can furniſh me with ſuch things as ſhe requireth for this ſolemnity, I dare not intreat them in a matter ſo troubleſom as this cannot chuſe but be unto them. And yet on the other ſide, being ſo earneſtly requeſted to ſupply this Gentle-womans occaſions, the very demanding of ſuch a courteſie, is a kinde of commanding of it, and obligeth me (as I am a Gentleman) to make the beſt ſhift I can for her, and to trie all my friends rather than fail her now at her need. And yet I know well enough, that Jewels are not every where to be met withall, which in publick aſſemblies, and ſuch ſolemn acts, as theſe are, can ſhew their faces without blushing. Coſin, (ſaid he) no more, it is enough; break not your ſleep for this, nor take you any further care: For I, for my part, and other your kinſmen, on theirs, will trie amongſt us, what we can do, and doubt not but we ſhall fit her in that reaſonable and convenient manner, as ſhall ſerve her turn, and ſalve your credit. Nay, (Coſin) I will not have you fit out for a little, if I can help it. And as

for

for your Trunks, you may ſend them hither when you pleaſe. I kiſt his hands for this his double kindneſſe, returning him both for the one and the other, ſuch condigne thanks, as either my wit could invent, or my words expreſſe, acknowledging the great and extraordinary favour that herein he ſhould do me: and ſo taking my leave of him, as ſoon as ever I came home to my lodging, I took order, that the Trunks, (each of them having three Keyes a piece, being well and ſurely lockt, and ſtrongly plated with iron,) ſhould out of hand be carried thither without any more adoe.

My Uncle, when he ſaw *Sayavedra* enter his houſe, and the Porters at the heels of him, ſo heavy laden, that they were ſcarce able to creep along with them, having well conſidered the ſtrength of the locks and bars about them, and diſtruſt that I had of mine Hoſt, together with the weight and beaſt of them, he did certainly aſſure himſelf, that they were full of treaſure. Whereupon he asked *Sayavedra* what was within thoſe Trunks, that they weighed ſo heavy? Whereunto he anſwered; Sir, though my Maſter hath many things in them of great value, yet that which is worth more than all the reſt is a parcel of ſtones, which he gathered together from all parts of *Italy*, the choiſeſt he could light upon, whereſoever he came, but for whom they are, or whither he will carry them, I know not. The old man arched up his eyebrows, and wiped his eyes, wondring to ſee ſuch great ſtore of wealth, and putting them with his own hands in ſafe cuſtody, under the keeping (as they ſay) of ſeven Keyes, the Trunks remained with him, and *Sayavedra* returned home. And there (like Pigeons, when they court and woo one another, and have done billing, and murmured out their amorous paſſions) we two loving companions fell likewiſe a crookling, and gathering ſtraw, for to build our neſt. We ſpent all that night in deviſing new plots, and in plotting new devices, how we might fetch off another kinſman of mine; that was young, rich, and of great credit amongſt them, reſolving to go home to his houſe, and there to pitch another net for him; to the end, that whileſt others ſhould complain of the harm I had done them, he ſhould not ſtand by and laugh whileſt others wept, and applaud his wit, that he eſcaped my fingers. And therefore I was not minded to inveſt him likewiſe with this new order of a ſecond *Iago*. And ſo I did: For the Sun was ſcarce up, and got out of his bed, when *Sayavedra* taking with him the two Chains, in thoſe two boxes that were ſo like one another; gilded equally on every ſide, neatly cloſed with your Dutch claſps, with alike viſes, or ſprings, that would ſhut of themſelves, bearing them cloſely under his Cloak, home we came unto him; where we found him newly up, and making himſelf ready. But not thinking that a fit time, I was willing to have defer'd my ſeeing of him, till after dinner. But when it was told him that *I* was there, he took it ill, and ſeemed ſomewhat aſhamed withall, accuſing me of ſtrangeneſſe, that I would be ſo dainty with him, as to make ſcruple of coming up unto him, as ſoon as I came within the houſe. *I* told him, I did not do it out of any niceneſſe, but that I was loath to diſquiet him, for that I underſtood he was taking his reſt. With theſe, and the like complements, we paſt the time a while, queſtioning each other of our healths, and diſcourſing of ſome things (whileſt he was dreſſing and fitting his Cloaths) about the Citie, at laſt he brought me down into a cloſet, or pretty little counting-houſe, that he had beneath ſtairs, and ſitting down, after a ſhort pauſing, he demanding of me, what winde had blown me thither ſo early? Sir, (ſaid I) none, ſave onely that I may give a good morrow to the day, to the end, that it may thrive the better with me: For the night hath not been my friend.

The buſineſſe Sir, that *I* come unto you about, is to intreat you, that if you have any ſervant in the houſe of yours, that is an honeſt diſcreet fellow, that you would be pleaſed to call him hither. Which I had no ſooner ſaid, but he preſently rings me a bell, the ſound thereof was no ſooner heard, but two, or three came haſtily running in. And having beckned to one amongſt the reſt to come unto him, he ſaid unto him, here is my ſervant *Steffanello*, who ſhall do whatſoever you ſhall be pleaſed to command him. That then (quoth *I*) which I ſhall intreat at his hands, is, That he will take the pains to go along with my ſervant *Sayavedra* to ſome Gold-ſmith, to take the aloy, weight, & value of a Chain that *I* have here. *Sayavedra* thereupon preſently delivered me the little box, wherein was that which *I* had cauſed to be made of pure Gold, & taking it out, I ſhew'd it unto him, my kinſman was much pleaſed with the ſight thereof, & was never weary with looking upon it, ſo handſome a one it was, ſo beautifull, ſo maſſie, and of that extraordinarie curious workmanſhip. Inſomuch, that it ſeemed unto him, that he had never ſeen the like; for it was all of dainty delicate fine links, ſmoothly poliſhed, without any ſtones, or inammeling at all. When he had taken his fill in viewing of it, *I* returned it back again to my ſervant, and they two went together to diſpatch this buſineſſe, which we in the mean while continued talking ſometimes of one thing,

ſometimes another, the better to paſſe the time. A little while after they both came back again, bringing with them a little ſcrole of paper, with the Gold-ſmiths hand to it, wherein it was there ſet down, That the Chain of Gold was in fineneſſe two and twenty Carats, and that it was (according to its weight) worth ſix hundred and three and fifty Spaniſh Crowns, and ſomewhat more. Then I called to *Sayavedra*, and willed him to give it me who delivered me the counterfeit one, firſt opening the box wherein it lay, where once more taking it forth, we fell afreſh to looking upon it. And putting it anon after into its box, which I ſtill kept open, I ſaid unto him; Sir, that which I am farther to intreat at your hand, is that which follows; ſome few nights ſince I have been bitten at play by ſome Gentlemen of this Citie, but by themſelves worſe; for that I have gotten of them a matter of five thouſand Royals: they have challenged me to play greater Game, and I am very willing to follow my good fortune while it laſts, and to make trial of my good luck: and it may be, that I may venture little and get much. But becauſe all kinde of gaming doth wholly in a manner conſiſt in the handſom carriage of the buſineſſe, and that we that are gameſters, may as well loſe as win, I would not finde my ſelf ſo limited and ſtinted in play, that if I ſhould chance to loſe, and run out of my moneys, that I ſhould not be able to come again upon them with freſh ſupplies, to recover what I loſt, and (if luck ſerve) to get upon them. And albeit (I thank God) I lack no money, having at home in my Uncles houſe ſome five thouſand Crowns, yet I may not meddle with them, for as ſoon as certain Letters ſhall come hither to my hands, which I dayly expect from *Sevill*, I cannot, no not for an hour, prolong either their payment, or mine own departure to *Rome*, for the getting of a good benefice, either upon my ſelf, or a Coſin germane of mine, as it ſhall ſtand beſt with my Uncles liking, ſubmitting my ſelf to his direction, who may diſpoſe of me as he in his diſcretion ſhall think fit; ſo that it is neither juſt nor convenient, that I ſhould once break, or ſuffer but to touch that ſumme, leſt I might then want it, when I had moſt occaſion to uſe it; which I may ſo much the rather forbear to do, becauſe (if need be) I can make uſe of my Jewels and my Plate, which like a dead commodity lye by me, and are good for nothing, but to lay to pawn at a dead lift; and yet for all this, unleſſe ſome urgent occaſion, or extream want ſhould force me thereunto, I ſhould be very loath to part with them, much leſſe to put them away to loſſe, as many too often do. You have here this Chain, you have ſeen and view'd it, and you know what it is worth, all that I ſhall now deſire of you, is that with all ſecreſie (for I would not willingly incurre the cenſure of an unthrift, nor it men ſhould talk of it, be forced to give them an account of ſuch triſling toyes as theſe) you would be pleaſed to furniſh me with ſix hundred Crowns upon this Chain, paying intereſt for that ſhort term that I ſhall uſe them, aſſuring your ſelf, that whether I win, or loſe, you ſhall not fail to be paid at your due time. Wherein, if I ſhould chance to fail you, you may pay your ſelf out of the Chain, for which end I ſhall leave it with you, that howſoever the world go, you may be a gainer, though I a loſer. I likewiſe told him, how upon the like occaſion I had once pawned a certain piece of new plate, richly gilt, but he that had it of me, had uſed it in that ill manner, that when he returned it unto me, it was not fit to be ſerved in at any honeſt mans board, ſo that I was forced to ſell it, having not one penny allowed me for the faſhion. And therefore for the avoiding of ſuch another loſſe, I intreated him to do me the favour, that the Chain might remain ſtill in his own hands, without being paſſed over from one to another.

He made ſhow that he did not take it half well at my hands, that for ſo ſmall a courteſie as this, I ſhould offer him a pawn. But I clapping down the cover of the box, ſhut it ſuddenly too, and ſo conſign'd it over unto him, forcing it into his hand; vowing and proteſting, that I would by no means receive this kindneſſe from him, if he refuſed to accept of the chain. For, beſides that I did not uſe to wear it oft, becauſe it was too maſſie and heavy for me, he ſhould do me a courteſie to keep it for me; for as long as it was with him, I was ſure it would be both ſafe and well uſed. Adding further withall, that being that we are all mortal, and that many things might occurre unto me being a ſtranger, it was fit and convenient, that he ſhould therein ſatisfie my deſire. Upon theſe words, and the earneſt inſtance that I made with him, he accepted of it in the end, and promiſed me, that the firſt thing that he would do, ſhould (as ſoon as he put his feet out of doors,) be his procuring of theſe moneys for me: wherein he was as good as his word. For the very ſame day, whileſt I was ſitting at dinner, in comes *Steffanello* with the ſix hundred Crowns. I thank him for his pains, and intreated him to recommend my ſervice to his Maſter; he ſtayed not with me ſcarce a *Pater-noſter* while, and was but even now gone, but preſently in comes his Maſter, and makes directly towards my lodging. Which ſudden approach of his did ſo trouble me, that

that I had not one drop of blond in all my whole body, nor could the beſt Barber of them all, have found any ſuch thing in my veins. Here I loſt my ſtirrops, and knew not what to do. For having but then, even newly then received the Crowns, and the maſter following ſo cloſe at the ſervants heels, I did undoubtedly believe that they had opened the box, and had found out the falſe Chain, and that he had made this haſte, to hinder his man from delivering the money unto me. But this doubt was ſoon reſolved, and I was quickly rid of this fear, for he came towards me with a cheerfull countenance, making many offers of his love and ſervice unto me, and that if I had occaſion to uſe him in any thing elſe, I would be pleaſed to command him; for whatſoever he had it was wholly at my devotion: And that theſe moneys he had borrowed of a friend of his upon intereſt, but that it would come to a matter of nothing in the reckoning. Then ſaid I to my ſelf, (conſidering more the future, than the time preſent) I believe this nothing will be ſomething to you in the end, and how light ſoever you make of it, will light heavilier upon you, than you are aware. But burying my thoughts within my own boſom, I told him that was not much material, for the pawn was worth more than the uſe of the money could come to.

But he had not long ſtaid a talking with me, when lo, whileſt he was there with me, my Gentlemen gameſters enter the room, and calling to *Sayavedra* for Cards, there was a well ordered battail begun between us. My Kinſman perceiving we meant to fight it out, and to ſet cloſe to it, took his leave, and went his way. I was ſo ſafely intrencht in my moneys, having *Sayavedra* then in my favour (for being upon our departure, it was no time now to ſtand with our hands under our girdle, nor to gather flowers, but to reap the fruits of our labours, and to hoyſe ſayl, and away) I ſallied ſafely out upon them, beating them ſo ſhamefully that I put them to flight, leaving behinde as a prey unto me about fifteen thouſand Royals in good Gold. I gave *karato* to thoſe that were preſent, and to the Captain who came thither anon after this field was fought, I cloſely clapt fifty Crowns in his fiſt, which was all one, as if with them I had bought me a ſlave, and purchaſed me ſuch a ſervant as ſhould ſtick to me upon all occaſions.

This quarrel being ended, and the Gameſters gone, my Captain took me aſide, and we two being all alone, he adviſed me that on Sunday night following being ſome four dayes hence, the Galleys were to depart. Whereupon ſeeing my ſelf thus ſtraitned by time, I began to ſtrike up my drum, to muſter my forces together, and ſending abroad my Tickets, this way, and that way, firſt to one party, and then to another, advertiſing my friends that the Wedding was to be ſolemnized the Munday following, and that they would be pleaſed to make me beholden unto them for their promiſed favour. The Ants do not come ſo laden with Corn in Auguſt, which they gather abroad in the fields, and bring home into their granaries, as they came tumbling into my lodging with Jewels, every one ſtriving who ſhould ſend me the moſt, and the beſt. Which in a word, were ſo many and ſo rich, that I was even almoſt aſhamed to receive them. But I ſet a good face to the matter, becauſe me thought they were not dear. My Uncle ſent me in a Collar to grace the Brides ſhoulders, and a girdle ſutable unto it, and a feather to adorne hear head-dreſſing, which being all of Gold, and ſet thick with Pearls and precious ſtones, the three pieces were valued at more than three thouſand Crowns. The reſt did furniſh me with rich Brooches, Buttons, Bodkins, Bracelets, Pendents, Ear-rings, Tablets, Carcanets, Vailes, Coyfes, and Rings, all very curious, rich, and of great value. All which things, as faſt as they came in, the Captain unwitting thereof, I clapt up cloſely within my Trunks, which ſtood in a by-corner out of ſight. The next three dayes that were left me, I ſpent in viſiting my kindred, thanking them for the undeſerved grace and favour they had done me.

When Sunday was come, knowing that the Galleys were to weigh Anchor a Munday morning betimes, and to put forth to Sea, I ſaid to mine Hoſt: mine Hoſte, I ſhall be abroad this night at play, at a friends houſe, where ſome Gentlemen have appointed to meet, and if peradventure it ſhall be ſomewhat late before we give over to play, I think I ſhall not only ſup, but lye there too if we chance to break off before it be day. And therefore (good mine Hoſt) have a care to the Chamber, till we return, though it may be, I ſhall ſend *Sayavedra* home unto you. And ſo having the night to friend, I went out of my Inne, leaving mine Hoſt two Trunks to pay for my dyet, and my lodging, during the time I ſtayed in *Genoa*. True it is that by reaſon of the great haſte we had to be gone, I left them both full, but of fine little pibbles that I had cauſed to be fetcht from the Sea-ſide; being in ſhow not much unlike to our craggy Chriſtal of the mountain, which did weigh ſome twenty pound weight a piece.

All things being done and dispatcht as I would have it, I went aboord the Galley, and cabbin'd with my friend Captain *Favela*. I wont words to expresse unto you, the great entertainment, the Captain (that night I came out of *Genoa*) made me, the costly supper that he had provided for me, and what a good bed I lay in. He demanded of me, how I had spent in my businesse. I told him to mine own good contentment and satisfaction; and that hereafter, I should give him a more particular account thereof. With this answer he rested satisfied, and questioned me no further about it. We lay, we slept. But I for my part not very quietly: for though I came clear off, and had not any the least rub, but things ran as fairly and smoothly, as in such a case it could have might or, yet I had a little thing within, that chockt me, and told me in mine ear, that I had not done well, which did much trouble me for the time. I past over that night, as well as I could: and when the Sun was up, having not all this while perceived the Galley to much as to stag, nor hearing any hearing of the Ours, nor any the least noise in the world, as if I had been in the greatest solitude that the minde of man could imagine; being wholly contented, and going about to put on my Cloaths; my Captain comes into my Cabbin, and tells me, that we had doubled the Cape of *Noli*. So far we had as fair a winde, and as fine weather, as heart could wish, but it did not still continue thus favourable unto us, but much contrary, and fell in the teeth of us, as you shall hear hereafter. For *Fortune* is not always prosperous; but with the Moon hath her Creſcents, and her Wanings, and by how much the more pleasing are her smiles, by so much the more sowre are her frowns, when she changes the copy of her countenance. Onely I had a desire, whilest we were making our voyage, to know what mine Host thought on, when he saw I returned not the first night to my lodging. And what the second, when the rest could hear no news of me, thinking with my self, what lamentation they would make for me. How many cold shaking fits of an Ague they would have, for want of a warm blanket, how many coverlets would they cast upon them, yet give none to the Hospital; what diligent search they would make after me; what several conjectures, what should become of me; disputing with themselves, whether some body had not murther'd me, to make themselves masters of my wealth; or whether I had been wounded in some quarrel. But I imagined with my self, that they conceived (and they were in the right) that I was gone along with the Galleys. And then being clean out of hope of any humane remedy, I began to think with my self, how fiercely the fleas would trouble them for many a fair night after.

Now did I begin to consider, what haste they made to unrip my Trunks, that they might by them save themselves harmlesse, every one first alledging the *antelation* of time, and priority of his debt, and so by the ordinary course of Law in those parts, pretend as he was the first Creditor, that he might be first paid. Me thought I did likewise see, how mine Host did brag himself, how he did laugh and chuck for joy, to think how rich I had left him, by leaving him those two Trunks, which being valued according to their weight, might very well have contented him, for a far longer and larger allowance, than I could possible spend in so short a time. But the worth did not answer the weight: For there was nothing in them, but stones, which if he were minded to hang himself, might serve for the sepulchre. And what say you to my old Uncle, do not you think that he was well provided for, with those precious stones, which *Sayavedra* acquainted him withall? But that other kinsman of mine, who went away with the Chain, who doubts it, but that he did laugh in his sleeve at the rest of his fellows, when he saw he had such a sure pawn in his hands, all pure links of Gold, that he might very well pay both the principal and the interest. But when he found it was not Gold, but Alchymy, light and false Latten, being no better (taking away its guilding, and fashion) then base Brasse, course Copper, or such Mettal as you make your Candle-sticks, what man can imagine, what strange mouths and faces he made? How he hang'd down his head, fixing his eyes on the ground, then lifting it up again, turn up the white of the eyes towards Heaven, not out of any desire that he had to blesse him, that had made him to shine and glitter thus gloriously, but to curse my mothers womb, for bringing forth such a *Picaro*, such a base Rascal, and arrant Thief as I was. In this pickle I left them, and so we parted. A man might then have said that of them, which one blinde man said to another in *Toledo*, who being to part company, and to go each to his own house, when they took their leaves, said each to other; Good night (Gossip) till we see one another again.

## Chapter X.

*Guzman de Alfarache, sayling towards Spain, Sayeth a by-word of a great Storm, grows Superstitious. He falls into a Calenture, or burning Fever. His water lights brushed, and he (as he was) like to be cast away. He cries out upon his Guzman de Alfarache, and growing mad, throws himself into the Sea, where he is drowned.*

WE had such fair weather when we set forth of Genoa, that the Tuesday following, by Sun-rising, we had (as I told you before) doubled the Cape of *Noli*. And till we came to the *Pomar de Monjoia*, we had as favourable and prosperous a winde, as we could wish. There did never past that the winde should not blow fair, having all this while shewed it self so friendly and loving unto us. For we had a fresh gale from the East, which help us so well, that the next day towards the evening, we discovered, to our general joy, the Coast of Spain. But fortune, having not the strength to stand firm, not being alwayes one and the same, but weak and various, began to manifest unto us the small confidence that we ought to have of her; whereof, too soon to our great hurt, we had sufficient trial. And now hearing the Mariners call one to another in those terms and language, which is usual with them in such cases, Heaven was covered all over towards the North-west, with dark and thick Clouds, which guttered down upon us huge and great drops of rain. Our good winde had bid us farewell, and our hearts began to be so sad, and so heavy, as if all that same darksome blackness had quite over-past them, such a cloud of sorrow, like a curtain, over-spred those late lightsome faculties of our Souls. Which being fore-seen by the Pilots, and those other watry-Counsellours at Sea, they held a Counsel in the poop, debating to and fro, what course was fittest to be taken, to prevent such fearfull threatnings. Every one spake his opinion, delivering what he in his judgement deemed best to be done. But seeing the winde begin to lay lustily about him, beating his brazen wings against our wooden sides, and his forces increasing more and more, without any other solution, before their consultation could come to a conclusion, they were instantly, without any more adoe, inforced to let fall their main sayl, which when they had ranged, and laid as low as the deck would give them leave, they took another lesser one, which they call *Artimbolo*, (as they do the other, *la Bardia*) which is a kinde of triangulary sayl, cut out into three corners after the manner of a woomans Kerchief, (This they call *la Latina*) and this they set up about the middle of the mast, which stood at the end of the last bank of oares, fitting themselves afterwards with those other things, that were needfull on such an occasion. They fastned their oares to the upper deck: The passengers, and their Souldiers, they commanded (fore against their wills) to keep themselves under the hatches: They fell caulking of the Galley, from the prow to the poop, nor were they wanting in any one of those diligences, that were necessary for the saving of our lives.

Whilest they were thus busie, the night grew on, and a pitchy darkenesse had (like a pavilion) pitched it self round about us, all was cloudy, Egyptian clouds, black and dark as Hell: so that having lost the comfort of the light, we lost likewise with it all hope of safety, especially when we saw that the storm was no whit allayd, but rather more and more increased upon us. Wherefore for the better avoiding of so many dangers, whereunto by reason of this tempest, they were like to run, they gave present order to hang out the lantern that they might the better see what they did. The Sea now began to swell, and lifted one while its waves as high as Heaven, and by and by again abasing that their pride, they tumbled down so low, that they opened the bolome of the Sea so wide, that you might see the sand that lay in the bottom. They were fain to appoint another to assist at the Helm, that was an expert Pilot indeed, and knew how to guide the Rudder to a hair. The Masters mate they could no be eyed fast in a Chair to the poft next unto the poop, as being resolved either to dye in that place without removing from thence to keep the Galley alive, and her safe in safety.

Whilest this skilfull Mariner was labouring to put this his deliberation in execution, we often demanded of him, if we were in any great danger, and much more often than they were willing to hear. See how blind-fighted we were, that we would rather give credit to that which had proceeded from his mouth, than that which we saw with our own eyes, which represented nothing but death unto us. But his lying tongue, framed to afford us this com-

fort, as doth that of the Phyſician to the ſorrowful and afflicted father, who queſtions him touching the health and life of his ſon, and whether he be likely to die of this diſeaſe, or whether he be dead already: who tells him, That (God be thanked) he is on the mending hand. In like manner, the Maſters-mate making anſwer unto us, for to cheer us up, and to put us in heart would bawl out aloud unto us, *Que todo era nada*, Tuſh, all this was nothing. And therefore be of good comfort (my Hearts.) And indeed in telling us ſo, he told us but the truth. For all this was nothing to that which came after. For the winde had torne our ſayles to fitters, there was not one whole piece, all was rents and rags, and it grew higher and higher ſtill, ſo that we were forced to clap on our *Treo*, which is a kinde of round ſail, which they make uſe of in ſtorms. Fortunes hand did not yet grow weary with whipping us, but as if ſhe had not puniſhe us ſufficiently already, it was our hap to have an ill-guided Galley to fall foul upon us, which ſtriking us with her power on the poop, made her dash her head into the Sea, and had well-nigh overturn'd her, and to make this encounter the more unlucky, the blow and the loſſe of our Rudder (whereon did depend the hope of our ſafety) happened both at one and the ſame inſtant. Wherefore ſeeing our ſelves now deprived both of our hope and helme, wanting a Rudder wherewith to ſtear, yielding our ſelves to the mercy of the Seas, as men deſpairing of any remedy to repair this loſſe, yet that they might not deſiſt to uſe all the means they could, which they thought might make beſt for our good, (making a vertue of neceſſity) they made as good ſhift as they could, by clapping a couple of oares in the place, guiding therewith the Galley (beſides the danger) with a great deal of toil and labour.

And how ſhall *I* be able here to expreſſe but the half, nay, the leaſt part of that unto you, which theſe eyes ſaw, and theſe ears heard? I do not know the tongue that can ſpeak it. But ſay I ſhould light on ſuch a tongue: yet I am ſure, I ſhall hardly meet with thoſe men that will believe it. O, how many vowes did they then make! How many invocations to Saints, every one calling on that, which was the greateſt and famouſeſt in his own Countrey? What various devotions, what a general recourſe to their prayers? And ſome were ſo childiſh and ſo fooliſh, that you ſhould hear no other word come from them, but O my mother, O ſweet mother! How many abuſes, and how many abſurdities were committed among them! Confeſſing themſelves one to another, as if they could be their own ghoſtly fathers, and had power to abſolve them. Others in a loud voice made confeſſion of thoſe ſins unto God, wherein they had offended him; and as if they thought that God were deaf and thick of hearing, they would ſtretch out their throats as high as heaven, perſwading themſelves perhaps, by the force of this their breath, to ſend their ſouls packing in that very inſtant up unto heaven.

In this deſperate and woful manner did our poor weather-beaten Galley indure this miſery, together with thoſe that were in her, till the next day following, when as with the brightneſſe of the Sun, and the clearing of the Skie, we began to recover breath, ſo that now all was joy, and our ſorrow was turned into mirth, chearing and heartening up one another. Certainly, it cannot be denied, That of all thoſe dangers, that attend upon death that is alwayes moſt feared, which is ſtill neareſt unto her. For from thoſe other, we think we may well ſcape. But I did not ſo much fear this ſtorm, nor ſo ſenſibly apprehend the danger thereof, as I ſtood in fear by a contrary winde, and the new rigging up of our Galley, to be carried back again to *Genoa*. It was not the Sea, but the ſhame, that wrought upon me. This was it, that made me to ſay to my ſelfe, when I ſaw how the windes blew, and the Seas raged, that all the reſt did fare the worſe for my ſake, and that I was that *Jonas*, for whom this tempeſt was raiſed, that it might raiſe me up to repentance.

*Sayavedra* became ſo Sea-ſick, that he fell into a ſhrewd burning feaver, and ſhortly after grew beſides himſelf. It would have grieved a mans heart, and moved much compaſſion, to ſee the thing that he did, and the fooleries which he uttered: and ſometimes when the ſtorm was greateſt, and the danger moſt, while others were confeſſing their ſins, he would cry out in a loud voice: I am *Guzman de Alfarache's* ghoſt; I am that ghoſt of his, which goes thus wandring up and down the world; whereat he made me often both laugh and fear. But though he would have vented ſomething unhappily, they all ſaw that he was mad, and ſo regarded not what he ſaid. Yet for all this he would not leave his talking, but by flaſhes would fall a ripping up of my life, and bolt out by fits all that which I had formerly recounted unto him, concerning the courſe I had taken, compoſing a thouſand extravagancies. And if by chance he heard any man talk of promiſing to perform a pilgrimage to *Monſer-*

rate, thither would he lead me; telling at what ſtations, and weddings he had been there with me. He did dreſſe me (like a French Cook) a thouſand ſeveral wayes. But that which was moſt to be laughed at, (though it much pitied me to ſee him in that ſtate) and wherein I took much pleaſure, was; That he ſpake all theſe things of himſelf, as if he had been true *Gaz-man* indeed.

In brief, we being all ſhrewdly beaten, and grown extream weary with our late ſtorm, the night following we went in a good hour to take our reſt, to ſee if we could recover that ſo deer of our former loſt ſleep. We were all of us ſo weary and ſo drowſie, and our Gall ſo battered and torne about the poop, that *Sepuvedra* riſing up in his frantick fit, leapt in that open place where our rudder was ſplit from us into the Sea, on whom we could never after ſet eye; though the Maſiner that kept watch, as ſoon as he heard the flowace of the fall preſently cried out, *Hombre a la mar*; There is ſome body fallen into the water. Whereupon we began preſently to conjecture, that it muſt needs be he; and upon inquiry finding him wanting, we ſought to recover him, but it would not be. And ſo poor *Sepuvedra* was buried in the Sea; all of them much lamenting his miſ-fortune, and ſeeking all that they could to comfort me. I made them, as if I had been exceeding ſorry for him, but God he knows how true it was. The next day I got me up betimes in the morning, which I wholly ſpent in receiving the condolings, which they made unto me, which were done in that doleful faſhion as if he had been a brother, a kinſman, or the neareſt and deareſt friend that I had in the world, bewailing the great loſſe that I had ſuſtained in him, or as if, when he threw himſelf into the ſea, he had carried away my trunks likewiſe with him. God bleſſe me from that miſchance (ſaid I to my ſelf) as for any other miſ-fortune, I doubt not but I ſhall very eaſily over-paſſe it. They knew not how (more than this) to comfort me, nor what they ſhould entertain me withal to divert my grief; for they did verily believe, that I was wonderful ſorry for him, becauſe I had put on a ſeeming heavineſſe. And the more they ſought to bring me out of it, the more I feigned to be in it; at laſt they called to one that had been condemned to the Galleys, who was very ſtudious, and a great lover of curioſities, that he ſhould come where I was, and bring a certain book along with him which he had written with his own hand, which the Captain taking from him, and turning over the leaves in a careleſſe kind of faſhion, he lighted by chance upon a notable ſtory which happened in *Sevil*: and returning back the book to the owner, he will'd him to read it unto me. He thereupon required their attention, which being granted unto him, he began to read, as followeth; recommending it firſt unto them, as well for its ſtrangeneſſe, as its truth.

There was in *Sevil* (the famouſeſt City in all *Spain*, and the *Metropolis* of *Andaluzia*) a Merchant that was a ſtranger, well born, rich, and honeſt, whoſe name was *Mizer Jacobo*. He had two ſons and one daughter by a noble Gentlewoman of that City. They being carefully trained up in vertue, in good manners, and in all kind of learning appertaining to the liberal Arts: And ſhe bred up to her needle, wherein for curious workmanſhip ſhe did excell (all the Gentlewomen in thoſe parts, being meer bunglers unto her.) And there was ſome reaſon, why ſhe ſhould be ſo exquiſite, and ſingular therein, for that from her childhood ſhe had been bred up in a Monaſtery of Nuns, by reaſon that her mother died in childbed, when ſhe was born.

Now in regard that the goods of fortune, are mutable and uncertain, and more in Merchants than other men, who carry their wealth in other mens purſes, and commit their eſtates to the diſpoſition of the winde and the weather, there being not half a foot difference betwixt their making and their marring, their inriching or undoing. It ſo fell out, that his two ſonnes returning, home from the *Indies*, and bringing along with them good ſtore of gold and ſilver, when they are now come within ſight of the bar of *San Lucar*, and thinking themſelves as ſafe, as if they had been (as they ſay) within the doors of their own houſes, there ariſes an huge ſtorm on the ſudden, and the Sea inraged with the boiſtrous bluſtrings of the winde, begins to ſwell and look big upon them with its billowes; inſomuch, that this poor unfortunate ſhip, ſet upon by two ſuch fierce and cruel enemies, was miſerably toſſed to and fro, and ſo violently carried out of its courſe, that at laſt unable any longer to reſiſt the rage of this terrible tempeſt, ſhe deſperately ranne her ſelf upon a rock, the terribleneſſe of which blow did not onely open her wombe, and cleave it clean in the midſt, but did ſplit all the ribs of her in a thouſand pieces; ſo that both men and goods were all caſt away, and utterly loſt, and never after either ſeen or heard of.

When the heavy newes of ſo great a loſſe (whoſe nimbleneſſe lies onely in its wing) came

came flying to the fathers ears, ſuch a deep melancholy ſuddenly ſeized on all his vital parts, that with the grief thereof, within a few dayes after, he alſo died. His daughter that remained in the Covent, having loſt all her wealth, her father, her mother, and both her brothers, remaining thus abandoned, and left to ſhift for her ſelf, was wonderfully ſenſible of this her woful eſtate (which might likewiſe have much troubled any man whatſoever, though never ſo wiſe) when ſhe ſaw that in ſo ſhort a time, which might in a manner run in the reckoning (as it were) of one day, ſhe had loſt ſo many real comforts, and with them that hope of remedy to allay her miſeries (for ſhe much deſired to become a Nun) ſhe wept ſo bitterly, and took on ſo pitifully, that it would have grieved any mans heart, to ſee the ſorrowful lamentation that ſhe made. Here ceaſed her deſigns, and here began her ſorrowes; Here ceaſed her plenty, and here began her want: Here ceaſed her *Regalos*, and here began her troubles. Which were daily ſo increaſing upon her, that ſhe knew not in the world what to do, nor how to be able to maintain her ſelf in the Nunnery. And albeit all the Nuns there wiſht her exceeding well, and did bare her great love and affection for the nobleneſſe of her condition and quality, her affability, civility, goodneſs of nature, ſweetneſs of behaviour, and other commendable parts, condoling very much this her preſent neceſſity and poverty; and were very deſirous that ſhe ſhould continue ſtill amongſt them, yet could they not poſſibly bring it to paſſe. For their wills being ſubordinate to that of their Superiour, it being in their Prelates, and not their own choice, neither could they effect what they deſired, nor ſhe continue any longer amongſt them. For very ſhortly after it was notified unto her, that ſhe ſhould either leave the houſe, or if ſhe had a minde to ſtay, forthwith to aſſign her dowry. But ſhe not being able (for want of means) to comply with the ſecond condition, ſhe was forced to entertain the former. This poor diſtreſſed maid was ſo cunning at her needle, and had ſuch a curious hand in all kind of works, white or black, in ſilk or gold, and in ordering her colours, to give true life and perfection to whatſoever ſhe took in hand, that the fame thereof was ſpread over all the City.

To this ſum I muſt adde the vertues of the ſoul, and the beauty of her face, both which were in that height of excellency, (the parts of her body being anſwerable to thoſe of her minde) that he that had but once ſeen her, would verily have thought, nay almoſt ſworne, that two moſt cunning and exquiſite Artizans, had in emulation one to the other, ſpent all their ſpirits, and imploy'd the utmoſt of their skill, in framing ſuch a ſingular creature as ſhe was, being ſuch a perfect piece of beauty, and goodneſſe, that ſhe might draw off the beholders eyes from all other objects (though not unworthy the looking on) and attract them to her ſelf. Yet all this put together, being in that (if the word do not exceed) exceſſe, was nothing, being compared with her retiredneſſe of life, her mortification of the fleſh, her faſts, prayers, and penance. She not unwitting, that ſhe was now thruſt out into the wide world, that ſhe had no more any Nunnery to ſhelter; but lay open to the injuries of Fortune, if ſhe did not the better ſtand upon her guard, fearing the worlds murmuring, and thoſe occaſions, which might bring ſome ſcandal upon her reputation, as one that was wonderful tender and jealous of her honour, ſhe had got her a lodging, where ſhe had the company of divers other vertuous and religious young maidens; and there without any ſuſpicion, or leaſt ſhadow of any ill intention, having no other helps or means to live, ſave the ſweat of her brows, and the labour of her fingers ends, ſhe lived there very frugally, keeping her ſelf within her bounds, and giving a good example of her vertue to all the young damoſels of her time.

The Archbiſhop of that City had a great drſire to have ſome curioſities made for him, as certain wrought Chalice-cloaths, neat towels, handſome napkins, dainty handkerchiefs, and the like, to wrap the Hoaſt in, bordered about with ſome hiſtorical work, as ſhould beſt fit with the uſe whereunto they ſerved, and to have them done as near to the life as Art could attain unto. After much inquiry made, there being none to be found that could do theſe things half ſo well as *Dorotea* (for ſo was this Gentlewoman called) upon the good report they had heard of her, they ſought her out, and recommended this work unto her care, promiſing ſhe ſhould be well paid for her pains. She conſidered with her ſelf, that for ſuch a curious piece of work as this was to be, ſhe muſt make choice of the beſt, the pureſt, the brighteſt, and the fineſt gold-threed that ſhe could get for money, whatſoever it coſt. And becauſe they that knew beſt how to beſtow it, knew beſt how to buy it; ſhe her ſelf, taking ſome of the neighbours and friends along with her, went to ſeek out this ware amongſt the Gold-beaters ſhop, who in *Sevil* doth make and ſell theſe commodities. It was their hap to come to a young mans ſhop, that was an handſome fellow, and well behav'd, who had

but newly ſet up for himſelf, and to get him the better cuſtome, ſtrove to have his ſhop well furniſht, and indeed, had better and more choice than the reſt of his neighbours, that traded in that kind. Of this young man, ſhe was willing to buy all the gold, that ſhe had occaſion to uſe about this work (as well becauſe ſhe found it was fit for her turn, as likewiſe to excuſe herſelf a labour of going too oft out of doors) if ſhe had had ſo much money, as would have done the deed: but having no more ſtore than that little which they had given her to begin the work withall, ſhe told the Maſter of the ſhop, that ſhe would beſtow a little money with him now, but ſhe would come again for more, as her work went on, and her moneys came in. This young Occupier, when he had beheld the beauty and compoſed countenance of this young maiden, and had well obſerved her manner of ſpeech, her honeſt carriage, and modeſt behaviour, he fell into that good liking of her, and was ſo far in love with her, that the leaſt that he could have found in his heart to have given her, was all the gold that ſhe had occaſion to uſe, which was no great matter, being that at that very inſtant he had delivered up his ſoul unto her. And perceiving that ſhe forbore to buy ſo much, as otherwiſe ſhe would willingly have done, for that ſhe wanted money, imbracing the occaſion, which he had now in his hands, not ſo much to gain her farther cuſtome, as to expreſſe the affection that he bare unto her, and to draw her inro a good opinion of him, not ſuffering her to part upon thoſe terms, he ſaid unto her; Miſtreſſe, if the gold be good, and ſuch as you look after, and that it be for your turn, pick and chuſe where you like, and carry away with you as much as you have uſe for, or what you pleaſe, and pay me now what you can well ſpare, as for the reſt you ſhall pay me by little, as you ſhall receive it from their hands that ſet you awork. The young man ſeemed to them all, to be very kind and courteous, and for the ware they could find no fault with it, being as good as themſelves could wiſh or deſire. *Dorotea* made him preſent payment of as much as ſhe had, and having made choice of as much gold, as ſhe thought good and needful for her, ſhe carried it away with her, leaving with him the name of the ſtreet, whither he ſhould either come or ſend for that which was remaining behind. That done, they preſently went their way, the poor young man being ſo love-ſtricken after their departure, and ſo pitifully wounded with this amorous arrow, that he was as far from himſelf, as from all reſt, being toſſed to and fro with various thoughts, having his brains beaten with many troubleſome and unquiet imaginations. Love had almoſt burſt the very heart of him; He did neither eat nor drink, nor any thing elſe that might ſeem to bear the name of life: ſo altogether was his ſoul occupied in the contemplation of that rare and incomparable beauty, and that mirrour of all vertue, that this his troubleſome life was to him as bad as death, not knowing in the world what to do. At laſt, it ſeeming unto him, that ſhe was a poor young maiden, and that by means of marriage, his chaſt deſires might arrive in the end to ſome happy port, he reſolved to inform himſelf what ſhe was, and alſo of what life, behaviour and birth.

The reports which were given of her, were ſuch, that he was now more perplexed, and leſſe confident than before. Deſpairing in a manner with himſelf, that he ſhould ever be able to enjoy ſo rich a jewel, holding himſelf ſtill more and more unworthy of ſo great an happineſſe, as to obtain her to be his Spouſe. He was now quite out of heart, as knowing himſelf too mean for her worth: But becauſe it was not poſſible for him now to go back, nor did it lie in his hands (if he would) to have done it; and for that the paſſions of the ſoul are no leſs prevalent in the poor, than the powerful, and that all are alike ſubject thereunto, and equally affected with them; howbeit he found himſelf caſt ſo far behind-hand, yet did he never leave ſtriving to try if he could get before, perſevering ſtill in his honeſt purpoſe, for that he put himſelf into Gods hands, who doth alwayes favour our good intentions, and knowes how to accomodate thoſe things that tend to his ſervice, according to his divine will and pleaſure: preſenting evermore in his prayers and ſupplications unto him, that his deſire was no other, than to get him a companion, with whom he might be the better enabled to ſerve him, and more particularly, that he might be linked in lawful marriage with this ſo vertuous a creature, and one that was ſo much to his hearts liking and content; yet not that his, but Gods will ſhould be done, whereunto he ſhould moſt willingly ſubmit himſelf, and that he ſhould ſo far grant his requeſt (and no further) as it ſhould ſeem beſt to his Majeſty, and make moſt for his ſervice.

He went likewiſe diſcourſing with himſelf, and amongſt many other, this one preſented it ſelf to his imagination; That peradventure her great poverty, her wary diſcretion, and vigilant fore ſight would force her thereunto, conſidering the ſolitary kind of life ſhe now led, & the remedy thereof, & laying aſide thoſe vain points of honour, not meaſuring her ſelf

by what ſhe was, but what ſhe is, ſhe would haply accomodate her ſelf to the condition of her preſent fortune; and that, when his honeſt deſire to ſerve her, ſhould be repreſented unto her, ſhe may chance to yield to my fair requeſt. Intertaining himſelf with theſe thoughts and cares, he was minded to call upon her for the money which ſhe ought him, but not with purpoſe to preſſe her therewith, nor to be troubleſome therein unto her, but taking occaſion rather one while to ſee this her curious work; another while, that paſſing that way, he was of purpoſe come thither to know whether ſhe needed any more gold; and if ſhe did, that ſhe ſhould not want it, whileſt he had any that was fit for her; and ſo fetching many a walk thither, excuſing himſelf in the beſt manner that he could, and as he thought would make moſt for the performing of theſe his frequent viſits, & the procuring of her good will & acquaintance, for that time he pretended nothing elſe; to the end, that this being firſt obtained, he might the better play his game hereafter, & in the interim mitigate ſome part of that ſorrow, which her abſence did continually torment him withall. In this the young man ſhew'd himſelf as diſcreet as ſolicitous; and as ſolicitous as truly loving. Going on in thoſe good and honeſt terms, that in a ſhort time he gained the good wills of all thoſe that converſed and were companions to *Dorotea*. Being ſo far from diſliking his often viſits, that they rather received them as favours and courteſies. Amongſt the reſt, that lived there together, there was four ſiſters, to one of which, as being the graveſt and reverendeſt of the company, they did all ſhew a kind of reſpect, as well for her temper & wiſdom, as alſo for her priority of years. With this grave Matron our young man ſeeks to enter into a ſtricter kind of friendſhip, by reverencing her, and obſerving her, and by preſenting her with ſome ſuch tokens & remembrances, as might ſuit beſt with the reſpect (more than love) that he bare unto her. So that in the end, time bringing forth occaſion, by degrees he diſcovered himſelf unto her, making her acquainted with his deſires, not omitting any thing that might make her fully to underſtand the greatneſſe of his affection, and the fairneſſe of his pretenſion. Earneſtly intreating her withall, that by interpoſing her power and authority, ſhe would be a means, that his hopes ſhould not return home empty and unrewarded, her worth and wiſdome putting him in good aſſurance of the contrary. And that therefore ſhe ſhould be pleaſed to continue her good favour towards him; and as occaſion ſhould offer, that ſhe ſhould go working & diſpoſing this piece of wax, to receive the impreſſion of his affection; leave it to her to imprint it in her to the life, that ſeeing the truneſſe of the ſtamp, ſhe might be the ſooner moulded to entertain the motion: But in caſe ſhe ſhould not find her pliable, but tough and hard to be wrought upon, ſhe would ſeek to mollifie her by her meek and gentle perſwaſions, and remove all thoſe difficulties, which on her part might be an hindrance to theſe his honeſt deſires; for on his part he vow'd and proteſted unto her, that nothing ſhould be able to croſs it, but that with open arms he would run to imbrace her, ſubmitting himſelf to be in all things ordered, if not over-ruled by them. Good means, ſeconded by good intentions, & which, without any humane reſpects, treat of honeſt things (carrying a ſound heart in their breſts, & a true tongue in their heads) have always ſuch force & power with the, that they eaſily perſwade, becauſe truly believ'd

This Gentlewoman ſo wrought with *Dorotea*, ſometimes this way, and ſometimes that, now uſing on't, then t'other means, till at laſt ſhe brought the buſineſſe ſo about, that ſhe being convinced by reaſon, began to yield to her perſwaſions, and to condeſcend to the motion that ſhe made unto her; and obeying her in all things, as if ſhe had been her own natural mother, ſhe kiſt her hands. In acknowledgment of her thankfulneſſe, putting her ſelf wholly into her hands. In concluſion, the match was made up between them to both their good likings, but more eſpecially on *Bonifacio* his part (for ſo was her husband called) for that he was fully perſwaded, that in meeting with this jewel no man was more happy, more fortunate, and more rich than himſelf: having now got him ſuch a wife, as his own heart could not have wiſht a better, being greater in her condition and quality than he deſerved, and ſuch a good creature beſides, that he could lead a ſecure & honeſt courſe of life with her, without fear or trouble of any jealous thoughts, nor of any thing that might cauſe his diſquiet. They lived very contentedly together, making exceeding much of each other, & wonderfully well ſatisfied of that chaſt & true love which they bare one to another. He did ordinarily attend his ſhop, buſying himſelf (for both their benefits) in the exerciſe of his Trade, and ſhe abiding above in her chamber, either playing the good houſewife, in thoſe things that appertained to the good government of the houſe; or following her needle, ſpending part of that gold-thred which her husband ſold, in working goodly borders, garniſhing them with curious flowers in their true and natural colours, and other the like neat and dainty pieces, wherein ſhe did excell. Their gains were great, and to make this their happi-

happineſſe the fuller, there was that conformity in their love, and ſuch an equal retribution in their affections, that no two in the world could live more honeſtly, and more lovingly together than they did.

But the Devil, who is ſtill waking, and never ſleeps, but ſtill watches moſt how he may break the bond of peace, and breed brawls in love againſt this loving couple, theſe who agreed ſo well together, that there was never yet any the leaſt difference between them, prepares his pit-falls, ſets up his traps, and ſpreads his nets with all ſecrecy, and all the skill & cunning he could deviſe, to do them all the miſchief he could, & if it were poſſible, to throw this uniform frame and ſtrong piece of building to the ground. He followed this poor ſoul cloſe at the heels, watching advantage how he might trip her up, and overthrow her, and in caſe he could not do that, yet at leaſt to give her a foil, to make her to ſtumble. Inſomuch, that at her Viſits, when ſhe was at Maſſe, or at Sermon, yea, in her greateſt devotion, when ſhe was receiving the Sacrament, he did ſtill ſeek to trouble her, preſenting her with the inſtruments of his malice and wickedneſſe, young Gallants, diſcreet in their carriage, neat in their cloaths, and ſweet in their perfumes, who fell a courting her, when ſhe came forth, following and ſolliciting her whitherſoever ſhe went: but all theſe tricks would not ſerve the Devils turn, he did not reap the fruit he hoped for; for this chaſte woman, ſtanding ſtiffely to her tackling, and giving her enemy no ground, did evermore withſtand theſe lightneſſes, by oppoſing againſt them a conſtant chaſt minde, and a ſetled and well reſolved honeſty. And howbeit, for to avoid all occaſion, ſhe did forbear, as much as ſhe poſſibly could, to go abroad; and when ſhe did, it was very ſeldome, and when ſhe was of neceſſity inforced thereunto, at which time ſhe was likewiſe haunted and perſecuted by them. They did round her door night and day, they ſought inventions, and uſed all the means that might be for to ſee; neither did this alſo profit them any thing.

Amongſt thoſe Gallants, that deſired to ſerve her (for all of them were young Gentlemen of very good faſhion, and the chiefeſt in *Sevil*) there was one, that was *Teniente* of the Town, a young man unmarried, and rich. This Gentleman liv'd right againſt the houſe where ſhe dwelt, where he had very fair and goodly rooms, being eſpecial and principal lodgings, and of ſo many ſtories high, and thoſe goodly open galleries, that they did overtop and look into thoſe lower ones of *Dorotea*, notwithſtanding that they were diſtanced by an whole ſtreet, that interpoſed it ſelf between their houſes. So that from his Turrets, his Terraces, & his high windows, he might over-look her, and ſee what ſhe did; and that ſo plainly, that neither her husband nor her ſelf could ſcarce riſe up in the morning to make them ready, or at night get them to bed, without being ſeen and eſpied by him; eſpecially they being careleſſe, and heeding no ſuch matter, and the other with extraordinary diligence watching and prying what they did. This *Teniente* then, making uſe of this occaſion, with all carefulneſſe and vigilancy, accompanied with inſupportable paſſions, and ſorrows, did labour (as if his life had lien upon it) how he might come to have ſome ſpeech with her, or receive any favour from her hands. But finding in the end, that he loſt his labour, and ſpent his time in vain, he was forced, as the reſt of his fellows were, to give over his ſute, ſet up his reſt, and turn back the ſame way he came, without obtaining any the leaſt look of favour from her, not being able to perceive in her any ſhadow of hope, that either now or hereafter (though never ſo ſmall) ſhe was likely to grant him. For this chaſte woman did live in that ſober and diſcreet faſhion, and did ſo well and wiſely govern her ſelf, that ſhe put him quite off from any ſuſpicion, which might incourage him to pretend any kindneſſe from her, or but waſh off one hairs breadth of gold from this good creatures credit, though it is not to be doubted, he uſed all the Art he could, to have made her ſome few grains lighter than ſhe was.

There went likewiſe along in the ſame dance with the reſt, another Penitentiary, that was of the ſame brother-hood and company of theſe fooliſh *Diſciplinantes*, and ſelf-afflicting lovers. This was a Gentleman of *Burgos*, gallant, young, diſcreet, and rich. Which good parts, favoured by his frank and bountiful diſpoſition might (a man would have thought) have digged down mountains, and laid them level with the loweſt earth. But the chaſte *Dorotea*, neither by this gentlemans good parts, nor the *Tenientie's* great power, nor all the paſſions of other her Lovers could be moved one jot from her honourable reſolution, not having either ſenſe or feeling thereof in the world, as if ſhe had been no woman of this world or had minded any ſuch matter. Againſt all theſe aſſaults ſhe ſhewed her ſelf a ſtrong Tower, an inexpugnable rock, againſt which the continual beatings of thoſe furious waves of their raging luſt and frothy appetite (not being able to prevail) were broken and daſhed in pieces.

And it is not to be doubted, but that her honesty continually keeping watch like the Crane, that with the stone of Gods love, raising her self from the ground, and her foot standing fast and firm on the steddy affection that she bare to her husband, did free her from these birds of rapine, these Eagles of *Caucasus*, that sought to make prey of her. And it hath been impossible to have wounded either her, or her honesty, if the cunning and crafty Fowler had not spred his net, covering and shadowing it over with the green grasse of holinesse, and simulated sanctity, to intrap this simple, harmlesse, and innocent Dove. This *Burgalese* (whose name was *Claudio*) had to his servant a dainty fine shee-slave, not swarf and tawny (as others commonly be) but fair and well-favoured, of a good presence, a good garb, and a gracefull behaviour, born in *Spain* of a Moorish slave of *Barbary*. She was so cunning, so subtill, so nimble-witted, so dexterous in her tricks and devises, such a worker of her self into all folks loves and affections (were it for her own ends, or others) so curious in visiting Church-yards, so charitable in accompanying those that were to be hang'd, that she was able to make water-cresses to grow on the top of a bed. She was such an one, as for such like affairs, her fellow was not to be found. Her Master one day called her unto him, and giving her account of this Love-torment, he craved her counsel, how he might come to compasse his pretension. This his good slave, after that she had been well informed of the businesse, and knew how the case stood with him, as if she had been in jest, smilingly said unto him; Why, how now (my good Master) what mountains have you to remove? What Seas to drie up? What dead to raise unto life? What great difficulty is there in that which doth thus afflict thee? Or why doest thou so indear it unto me? Sir, Are not these things that I am well seen in? Little Oyl, and lesse labour, will serve to bring this wheel about than thou thinkest for. Thou mayest now make reckoning that she is thine own, and that thou hast her already in thy hands. Let not this therefore trouble thee any further, but be of good chear, and pluck up thy heart; for within these few dayes, I will deliver this Hare into thy lap. And if I do not, let me lose my name for ever, and call me no more *Sabina*, the daughter of *Haja*. From that time forward, she took this businesse to task, and began from that very instant, like a cunning Chesse-player, so to order and marshal her men, designing with her self how to make her draughts, and within how many removes, to give first the check, and then the check-mate. Now doth she set her self roundly to her play, and begins this her game, moving first one of her pawns, reserving her best men for the last push, if the meaner should miscarry in this battel.

First of all therefore, she makes me a fine delicate little basket of the green sprigs of Mirtle, Pome-citrons, and Oranges, adorning and setting it forth with Gilly-flowers, Gesimines, Musk-roses, and other sweet flowers, bound in with small tender bull-rushes, which were composed and set together in most dainty and curious manner. This basket she takes along with her, and bears it to the Gold-beater; Telling him, that she was servant to a certain Gentle-woman that was a Nunne in that Citie, and Lady-Abbesse of a Covent; who having notice of the goodnesse of his ware, and having necessary use of some of his best gold, for to flourish over certain things, which were to serve for some ornaments that were to adorn that Monastery against Midsummer day, which was a great Festival with them, she had sent him that little basket for a token, entreating him to send her two pound of his purest and finest Gold that she might make proof of it, and that if it should be found to be so good, as to her it had been commended, and that she found it fit for her purpose, she would pay him well for it, and he should from hence-forth have her custome for all the Gold that should be spent in her house, sending weekly for so much as they had occasion to use. Besides, she would be very thankfull unto him, if he served her well, and bestow now and then upon him such dainties and curiosities, as those religious places usually afford. *Bonifacio* was much gladded with this new occasion of gain, and no lesse with this little basket of flowers, which he made much reckoning of, being so neatly and artificially wrought, as indeed it was. Which he had no sooner received (having first dispatcht the slave away with the Gold) but he presently carries it up to his wife, putting it in her lap with great joy, which was by her with no lesse received. She asked him, of whom he had bought it: And then he told her of all that had passed. Then did she esteem it much more than before, because it brought to her remembrance the time of her child-hood, when with other girles of her years, and the Nuns of the Covent, she did busie her self in the like exercises. Whereupon, she intreated her husband, that when she came to him again, he would send her up unto her, for she would gladly be acquainted with her.

The next week following, being some six dayes after, *Sabina* returns very jocondly, boasting

ing how good the Gold was; and that she was come for as much more of the same; bringing with her a large message in the behalf of her Mistresse the Lady-Abbesse, and presenting him from her, with a little image of the rinde of Limmons, and a *Rosario* sutable to the same, so curiously cut out, that it was well worthy much estimation. As soon as he saw it, he would not himself receive it of her, but intreated her, that she with her own hands would deliver it to *Doroteo* his wife. Now the sop was fallen into the hony-pot. Now had she what she would have. This fell out as pat for her, as a pudding for a Friars mouth. But making strange of his news, and as though she had known no such matter, she said unto him: Ah, thou naughty man!, doest thou speak in earnest? Art thou married indeed? I do not believe it. Thou art bought and sold with us for a single man, we took thee to be a Batchelour, and my Mistresse talkt of marrying thee with a pretty Lay-maiden that we have in our house, as fine and as fresh as the flowers in *May*, and is both beautifull and rich. *Bonifacio* reply'd; I have one already as rich and as beautifull, as you there can give me any, and with whom I live most contentedly. And if you will not believe me, go up and see. *Sabina* then said unto him; In faith no, not I, you shall not get me up stairs, I am afraid you will play the wag with me, and that you do but jest. I assure you, I do not jest (said *Bonifacio*) and therefore (friend *Sabina*) you may boldly go up. Up she goes, and having entred the room where she was, she no sooner saw *Doroteo*, but she runs with open arms towards her, and throws her self down at her feet, making a thousand ducks and reverences unto her after the *Moorish* fashion, admiring much her rare and singular beauty, which though she had heard it much spoken of before, yet this work of nature went far beyond the words that were uttered of it. For it was such an admirable piece, that report was not able to expresse it to the life, but must needs fall short in the praising of it. But she stood like one astonished, when she beheld the frames, and those loomes of rich embroideries, and other the like works, wherein she spent her time, wondring at their perfection and curiosity, saying unto her; How is it possible that my Mistresse should not have the happinesse to enjoy such excellent good things as these? No, no, it shall not be long (by the grace of God) ere you two know one another, and be better acquainted, and enter into a strict league of friendship. O sweet Jesus! When I shall tell my Lady-Abbesse, what I have seen, O how will she envy my good fortune? What a longing desire will she have, till she see the face of yours, and be made so happy as to enjoy your good company? By the life of her, that left me here behinde her, and as her soul is there, where those eternal Tapers continually burn, let the pocks consume my Jaw-bones, if I be not a Bawd to these your loves, because I have a great minde to bring you together, and that you should dearly love each other. I will not fail hereafter to visit you oftner, you are a pearle of that price, that I cannot chuse but love you, make much of you, and desire to serve you. After these words, and many other full of ceremony and complement, she took her leave, and went away with her Gold. And from that time forward, every second, or third day, she made one errand, or other thither; one while for Gold, another, saying that she past that way, telling *Bonifacio*, that she should be guilty to her self of neglect, and that she should commit treason to her own heart, if she should passe that way, and not perform a visite to that good Angel of his, being the onely Saint of her sex, to whose shrine she did owe all respect and reverence. At other times she would excuse her coming, by bringing her some raritie, or other; and whilest she was talking with her, was disposing and preparing of her, that she would with one accord go one day and make merry at the Monastery.

Now, when she had moulded things to her minde, and thought that this fine piece of Gold was fit for her hammering, she took a walk thither on Munday morning, carrying along with her two pretty little baskets, the one having in it some Conserves, and the like toyes; the other, some fruits of that season, the first and the best that were to be found upon their first coming. Which she presented her withall, telling her, because they were fruits of their own Garden, and the first they had gathered, her Lady-Abbesse thought they could not be better bestowed on any, than her self. And that withall she had a double request unto her; The first, that the next ensuing Munday, being the feast of the glorious Saint *John Baptist*, and the Sunday before it, their first *Vespers*, she would be pleased to do her the favour to stay those two dayes with her in the Monastery, doing penance there with her; which she might the more conveniently do, in regard that she had no occasion of businesse during those two Holy-dayes; and besides, the Nuns, after they had ended their feasts, were amongst themselves to represent a Comedy; And that the Abbesse would take no pleasure and contentment in it, if she would not do her this favour, to come and see it acted;

and that other principal Gentle-woman, that were of kin to the Nuns, were likewiſe to come thither, and that they ſhould go all along together, bearing each other company: The other, that ſhe might have three pound of her beſt and fineſt Gold, to make tufts and taſſels for a rich Cloath that was to be uſed before the Altar; deſiring her, if it were poſſible, that ſhe might have the choiſeſt and the fineſt for that purpoſe, that was to be got. To this of the Gold, *Dorotea* made anſwer, ſhe could, and would do that for her with a very good will; for this (quoth ſhe) is in my power to perform; I could likewiſe be content to comply with whatſoever my Lady-Abbeſſe ſhall be pleaſed to command me, but this is not in mine, but my husbands hands. You know (Siſter *Sabina*) that I am not miſtreſſe of my ſelf, I am under anothers command, and therefore in this, you muſt ask my good-mans leave; it is he that can give you an I, or a No, whether I ſhall go, or ſtay. To whoſe will I muſt, and ever ſhall conform my ſelf. This were fine in good faith (ſaid then *Sabina*) if your husband ſhould deny us ſo ſmall and ſo fair a requeſt as this? Let me never thrive, if I go out of doors theſe eight dayes, unleſſe he give you leave: Say your ſelf, doth it ſtand with reaſon (to omit the mentioning of common civility, and good manners) that one onely requeſt which my Miſtreſſe makes unto you, being (beſides the firſt that ever ſhe made unto you) ſo earneſt an one, and ſo juſt, that you ſhould loſe all reſpect towards her perſon, and her kindneſſe, as to deny her ſo ſlight a courteſie, deſiring (as ſhe doth her ſalvation) to enjoy ſuch a Paradiſe as your ſelf? Fy *Sabina*, hold thy peace (ſaid *Dorotea*) be not ſo prophane, nor do not flout your poor friend, for I am old. Old, (ſaid *Sabina*) yes, yes, you be very old indeed; Let me die of your diſeaſe. You might as well have told me that the Spring is the end of the year, and that Lent is Chriſtmas. But let us leave off jeſting; As old as you are, God grant your husband may long injoy you, and give you the fruit of his bleſſings. And therefore without any more adoe, I pray grant our requeſt; for I mean to go away with this good bargain, that my Miſtreſſe may give me thanks for it. O how much will ſhe make of this pretty little Rogue? *Bonifacio* and *Dorotea*, fell a laughing to ſee her ſo pleaſant; while he (with a cheerfull countenance) not ſeeing the Snake that lay lurking in the graſſe, nor the ambuſh that was laid for him, ſuſpecting no harm, and the leſſe in regard of the great confidence that he had in his vvife, ſaid: Well followed in good faith; Now (by my life) *Sabina* hath pleaded hard in this cauſe, and hath handſomely beſtirr'd herſelf; ſhe muſt not be denied for this once, eſpecially being it is my Lady-Abbeſſes pleaſure to have it ſo. And therefore I prithee (ſweet heart) go and recreate thy ſelf there thoſe two dayes, for I know thou wilt be well pleaſed therewith, and it ſhall be no ſmall contentment to me, becauſe it ſhall content thee. And therefore (*Sabina*) you may tell her Ladyſhip that her will ſhall be fulfill'd as well in this, as in any thing elſe, wherein I may ſerve her. And when theſe Gentlewomen that you ſpake of go unto the Monaſterie, I pray ſo order the matter, that they may paſſe this way, to take my vvife along with them. *Sabina*, being a well-ſpoken vvoman, returned them thanks in excellent good language, uſing ſuch fitting phraſe as beſt ſuted with the accompliſhment of her deſire. She hyed her home, ſo well contented, and ſo proud of this rich purchaſe that ſhe had made, that the ſteps ſhe ſet forward ſeemed to go back again, and that ſhe ſhould never come time enough to her Maſters lodging. Her heart was ready to have burſt in her body, it was ſo over-ſwoln with joy; and would (had it been lawfull for her ſo to do) have found in her heart, to have cried it out at the high Croſſe. A man might have ſeen her mirth in her looks, her bloud boiled within her, and her eyes did ſeem to dance in her face for very joy: you would have thought, that through them, & her mouth, ſhe would have uttered the cauſe of this her (more than can be expreſſed) content. When ſhe came into the houſe, no ground could hold her, ſhe fell preſently plucking off her *Chapines*, to undoing of her mantle, flinging it with all the haſte ſhe could over her head, leaving it trailing at her, and holding up the fore-skirts in her hands, leſt they might hinder her ſpeed, ſhe runs me as faſt as her legs would carry her (like one that had been fraid out of her wits) into her Maſters Chamber, who attended her coming. And out of meer haſte, that ſhe might tell him all at once, all hung between her teeth and her tongue, that ſhe was not able to ſpeak one ready word. She would one while be in the Active, another while in the Paſſive: Well, or ill, as well as ſhe could, ſhe delivered her meſſage in that manner, that thoſe eight dayes never had an end, ſhe in telling him of them, and he in asking her of them, at leaſt a thouſand times a piece over and over. Every moment they returned to treat anew of one and the ſame thing, re-iterating the ſame, I know not how many times over, and fell to make Comments thereupon, diſcourſing how it could be poſſible, that this buſineſſe ſhould take effect: It ſeemed unto them, that that whereof they talked, had fully contented them, and gone for

good

good payment, their belief never coming to an end, never being able to perſwade themſelves, that the news of ſo great a deſired good could be certain, or that ever they ſhould come to ſee ſo happy a day.

*Dorotea* and *Sabina*, being thus agreed upon the point, that this buſineſſe might be the more cleanly carried, *Claudio* took order, that certain vvomen ſhould be provided and fitted up, that were of his good acquaintance, and friends and well-wiſhers to his houſe, ſuch as he might ſafely communicate any ſecret unto, to the end, that by their good care and diligence, they might help to bring this his purpoſe to paſſe.

Sunday (the appointed day) being come, ſome of them apparrelling themſelves like married vvives, others being in the habit of maidens, and others after the faſhion of grave and matron-like Gentle-women, went along with *Sabina* to go fetch *Dorotea*. They come to her houſe, they knock at the door, her husband comes forth, who ſtayed at home looking for them: Who ſeeing ſuch a worthy train of vvomen, opinionating them to be principal perſons, preſently call'd to his wife that ſhe ſhould make haſte and come down, that the company might not ſtay for her. Down comes *Dorotea*, no leſſe innocent, than contented. All of them did very lovingly ſalute her, beſtowing many kinde words, and ceremonious complements upon her. And her husband having conſigned her over unto them, they placed her in the midſt between them, and ſo with great joy they ſet forward on their voyage. And as they were walking through the Monaſtery, one of them that had a veil on her head, and of more reverend aſpect and ſpeech than the reſt, made a ſtop, and ſuddenly cries out; Ah me, forgetfull wretch that I am, how hath it ſlipt our remembrance, that we forget to go for *Donna Beatriz* the new married Bride, who ſtayes at home expecting our coming, who alſo is invited to the Nunnery? Then another of them made anſwer; By the bones of my father, you ſay true. As God help me, I did no more think upon her, than I remember the firſt ſmock that was put on my back. We can by no means go without her, we muſt needs have her along with us, and therefore let us turn down here, for it is not much out of the way, we ſhall be there by and by. Then one of thoſe, which was to the reſt, as the Bell-weather, that goes before the flock, ruffling between her legs a large-ſided kirtle, and having a *Roſario* hanging at her neck, which ſerved in ſtead of a bell, leads the way unto them, whom all of them follow, till ſhe had brought them to *Claudio* his houſe. They called at the door; A ſlave putting her head out at the window, asks, who was there, and what they would have. One of them made anſwer; Run in quickly, and tell your Miſtreſſe, that ſhe would be pleaſed to make haſte, and come down, for we ſtay here for her. She made as if ſhe had gone in to deliver her meſſage, and anon after comes forth again with this anſwer, That her Miſtreſſe would intreat them to have the patience to ſtay a little, till ſhe had but faſtened a pin, or two to her head-dreſſing, and had put on her mantle, which would not be long a doing, deſiring them in the mean while to come in, and reſt themſelves in the Hall. Whereupon they entred through a fair Court into a goodly ſpacious Hall, very well furniſht, where the reſt of the women remained, onely two of them paſt forward with *Dorotea*, into a midling ſquare room, which was hung with Cloath of ſilver, and watchet Damask, with a bed ſutable thereunto, full of imboſſed work of Gold, the Chairs, Cuſhions, and Carpets correſpondent with the reſt. Adjoyning cloſe to the bed was a curious *Eſtrado*, where theſe three ſate them down and had ſcarce warm'd their Cuſhions, when the two, that were with her, began to complain, and cry out; Good God, what doth this new Bride *Donna Beatriz* mean to make us ſtay here ſo long? Fy, what a tedious thing is this? I care not (ſayes the one to the other) if I go in, and ſee what ſhe is a doing, I dare pawn my life, ſhe is not yet out of her bed. I prethee, Siſter, (if thou beeſt a good wench) go with me, that we may know when we ſhall get hence. Which word was no ſooner ſpoken, but they both went preſently out of the room, leaving *Dorotea* all alone. In concluſion, they were all vaniſhed, and not any body living to be heard about the houſe.

When all was huſh, *Claudio* comes in, and ſitting down upon one of the Cuſhions that was next to *Dorotea*, he began to make her many fair offers, diſcovering unto her the plot that he had laid to get her thither, excuſing this his manner of proceeding, with the great torments that for her ſake he endured. When ſhe heard him ſpeak in this language, and now (too late) perceived how ſhe was betrayed; poor *Dorotea* was not a little troubled; for ſhe knew him by ſight, and was not ignorant of his pretenſions. She ſaw her ſelf taken in the trap, ſhe knew not what to do, nor how to defend her ſelf, and therefore began with tears and prayers, intreating him with all the Rhetorick thoſe two good Orators could uſe, that he would not ſpot her honour, nor offer her husband that wrong, by committing ſo grievous a

ſin

ſin, and ſo heynous an offence againſt God. But all would not ſerve the turn. To cry out, was to no purpoſe; for there was no body there to take her part. But ſay her ſhrikes might have diſturbed *Claudio*, and have drawn the people in the ſtreet to come in, whoſoever ſhould have found her there, would queſtionleſſe have condemned her for her coming thither, giving no credit to this trick that was put upon her, though ſhe ſhould have ſworn out her heart to the contrary. She defended her ſelf (poor Soul) as well as ſhe could, but *Claudio* courting her one while with many fair and kinde words, and when they would not prevail, breaking forth another while into actions of violence, with a great deal of reſiſtance, and againſt her will, he pluckt from her by force ſuch fruits as he could reach to, but not thoſe that he deſired; entertaining himſelf, and tyring out her, in this his rude wreſtling with her. But in the end, when ſhe ſaw that ſhe could no longer hold out againſt him, and that her breath and ſtrength did both fail her, and that the battel would be loſt on her ſide, *Claudio* ſtill getting more and more ground upon her perſon, ſhe yielded up the Fort unto him, for want of ſuccours in convenient time, having fought it out (as they ſay) to the laſt man, and keeping out the enemies as long as ſhe could. They two, were all one; the door faſt lockt; the term long, (no leſſe then two days) *Claudio*, his friends about him, ſhe a lone-woman, he ſtrong, and ſhe weak; and none can do more then they can do. This might have very well been ſaid to have been a ſportfull contention, and an amorous combat, befitting S. *Johns* feaſt, if the Heaven of their paſtime had not been over-caſt with a ſudden and unexpected cloud: They fared daintily, did dine, ſup, and ſleep together. But this their pleaſure laſted but a while, ſhort was their content, and their reſt ſuddenly and unexpectedly interrupted. For the Devil never yet made that Pye, whereof himſelf did not eat the better part. It is an uſual thing with him, when he maketh any ſuch kinde of meeting, to ſet up a Tent, or Pavillion, inviting them to go into it, that there they may cover, and hide themſelves, and none may know of their doings, laying a charge of ſecrecy and ſilence on their preſent actions; but afterwards, when they are cloſely ſhut up, and kept hid from the open eye of the world, in this their greateſt, and ill-conceived ſecurity, he ſets the door wide open, diſcovers, and throws theſe pavillions down to the ground, manifeſting in publick, their concealed ſins; and beating up his drum, and ringing out his Alarum-bell, he calls the people together, that they may come and ſee what they are a doing, leaving them aſhamed and ſad, making himſelf very merry to ſee them thus caught in his ſnare, and laughing and flouting at them, he makes himſelf a Holy-day in Hell, joying and triumphing in his new-gotten victory. Who would once have thought that ſo ſubtle an invention as this was, ſo well ordered, and in ſo ſhort a time, and by ſo ſtrange a means brought about, ſhould come to be diſcovered? Who, from ſuch happy beginnings, and means would ever have expected ſuch adverſe, and Tragical ends? But I ſay ill, and therefore correct my ſelf; For we could look for no other; conſidering the dance, and who he was that led it; and Heaven cannot but openly puniſh ſuch wickedneſſe, and violence. And though the puniſhment was not equal to the offence, yet the blow was ſuch that was given them, that thereby every good diſcourſiſt might come to the knowledge of the fault, and repent himſelf thereof.

Now whileſt they were thus in their mirth and jollity, all that day paſſed ſo without account, and order, that there was not heed taken of any thing: The ſervants in their quarter, filled their bellies, took away the wrinckles from off their guts, by glutting themſelves full, and pulling the faucets out of the Hogs-heads, they did eat and drink ſo luſtily, that they were fain at laſt to creep to their beds, as a Cat doth up a wall, upon all four; or as a ſhip-boy up to the top of the Maſt; leaving the Chimney full of fire, and a great deal of dry wood ſtanding by it; The fire takes me hold of the brands, and other dry cletts, and they being tinded, did communicate their flames to their fellows that ſtood by them, ſo that towards mid-night, all that quarter of the houſe was burnt, and not one body in all the houſe that did perceive it, ſo faſt were they all aſleep. It was the Veſpers of S. *John*, and that night the *Teniente* (to ſee good order) uſeth to round the Town, & by the great ſplendor that the flames did caſt afar off, he ſaw what a light it gave, and ſuſpected (which was ſo indeed) that ſome houſe was on fire. And ſo following the clearneſſe of this light, the brightneſſe thereof brought them to *Claudio* his houſe. They called out aloud, and knockt hard at the Gate; for the houſe was great, and the people that were within, ſome were weary, ſome drunk, and others burnt, but none that did anſwer. There was a great noiſe and outcry amongſt the Neighbours, every one ſeeking to prevent the threatned danger, and to provide as well as they could to ſave their goods and perſons; many people of all ſorts, and all parts of the Citie, came haſtning and running thither, who by main force brake down the Gate, and laid it level with

the

the ground & entred the houſe, ſuppoſing all thoſe that were in it, to have been conſumed with fire, or at leaſt choaked and ſtifled with the ſmoak, becauſe they could ſee no body ſtirring in it. The noiſe and clamour was ſuch, that *Claudio* awak'd and ſtartled with this ſo great a rumour, and confuſed a ſound, not knowing what the matter might be, hailning with his ſword in his hand, (he and *Dorotea* being both naked) he opened his Chamber door, and when he ſaw the fire, he returned back, that he might throw ſomething upon him, and ſave himſelf by flight. The *Teniente* thought that the people that were without, had broken open that door, that they might rifle the room, haſting thither with all diligence, that he might ſave it from the ſpoyl and ranſacking of the more unruly rout, he found theſe two lovers running about the Chamber, from one corner to another, to ſeek out their Cloaths, and having them in their hands, neither of them had their own, interchanging them, through their more haſte than good ſpeed. Now you may imagine in what taking they were, and what they might think, ſeeing themſelves thus naked, the houſe full of people, and her greateſt enemy, the *Teniente*; who had taken them thus napping. But that we may come to him, who ſtreight-way knew *Dorotea*; whereat he was ſo amazed, that of all thoſe three, you could not tell for your life, which of them was moſt aſtonied. For the *Teniente*, had any body told him of ſuch a thing, he would never have been perſwaded to believe it; and though he had now his own eyes to be his witneſſes, yet did he ſeem to doubt of it. So troubled were his thoughts, ſo his heart inflamed with jealouſies, and diſdains, ſo mad and deſperately bent, that to be revenged on them both, without any farther conſideration, he commanded them to be carried away to priſon, his ſpleen being more againſt *Dorotea*, than *Claudio*, for that ſhe had rejected him, and admitted of another, and therefore was reſolved to do her a diſgrace, and to defame her all that he could, deviſing with himſelf, how he might likewiſe pick an occaſion to commit her husband. For he thought it a thing impoſſible, that this ſhould be done without her husbands privity, and that he had been witting and conſenting to this buſineſſe, and that he had given his wife leave to beſtow a nights lodging upon this young Gallant, upon ſome particular intereſt, that might make much for his profit. Nor is it ſo ſtrange, that the *Teniente* ſhould take this indirect courſe: For a Love-paſſion, or paſſionate fit to Love, blindes the underſtanding, and makes the minde of man turn cruel and tyrannical. They carried her away, her face being covered over with her mantle, having given expreſſe order, that ſhe ſhould not be ſeen, or made known to any, till information ſhould be made againſt her. And *Claudio*, he likewiſe was committed. And howbeit, he had uſed all the means he could to hinder this his harſh proceeding, alleaging in excuſe the great and many harms that might happen thereupon, yet neither reaſons, intreaties, nor all perſwading Crowns, could allay the rage of this incenſed Judge, ſo bigge was his heart ſwoln with malice and revenge. They remained in priſon; and the Judge fomed at the mouth, till the fire was aſſwaged, and quite put out; but that of his heart did burn apace. It was now paſt midnight, that he had endured a great deal of trouble, but much more anger and choller. He got him to bed, and would have ſlept if he could; but in him was that proverb verified, which ſaid, *Aſſi ten gays en ſuenno*: So let him ſleep, that troubles another mans reſt. He could not ſleep in quiet, nor is it to be believed, that he ſhould; but rather it is to be ſuppoſed, and true it was; that tranſported with rage, his head was plotting of revenge, dreſſing this his rancorous diſh of poyſon a thouſand ſeveral wayes, that they might not eſcape his hands, at leaſt not come off, with the ſaving of their honour. But he reckoned without his Hoſte, for his feet were ſcarce warm in his bed, when *Dorotea* was out of his reach. *Sabina* lay in an inner Chamber next unto her Maſters, to the end, that if he ſhould need any thing in the night, ſhe might be ready at hand, whenſoever he ſhould call. And for that ſhe had willingly liſtned to all that had paſſed, ſhe preſently bethought herſelf of a remedy for this diſeaſe. For your women, upon the ſudden, are more quick, and nimble-witted, than your men; nor muſt you give them leave to adviſe any thing long with themſelves, if you mean to have it ſucceed well and happily. She takes me out of her lodging a good fat Capon, which was left untoucht at ſupper, and a good piece of a Gammon of bacon, which being of a wilde Bore, was held to be a dainty diſh, a good flagon of rich wine, a loaf, or two of bread, and money in her purſe, and clapping a bed, ſheets, and a coverlet on her head, and bearing the little basket, wherein ſhe had put her commodities upon her arm, away ſhe trugs along to the priſon. She intreated the Jaylour, that he would give her leave to carry in that her bed and ſupper for one of her Maſters maids, who becauſe ſhe had ſhew'd her ſelf too ſlow and negligent, upon ſo urgent

an occasion, in bringing a bucket to draw water for the quenching of the fire, the *Teniente* in his heat had committed her to prison. With this slight excuse, and four Royals of four, which she clapt in his hand, he opens the door, & lets her in, making him an hundred curtsies; howbeit by reason of the luggage which she had on her head, he could not come to see her face. In this manner, in she goes to *Dorotea*, whom she found rather dead then alive: They two stood talking alone together, for the rest of the women-prisoners were all asleep, and taking hold on this so fair an opportunity, it so fell out, that *Dorotea* was transformed into *Sabina*, by putting on a green kirtle that she wore, who called to the Porter that kept the prison door, and giving him the supper that was provided for that end, told him, that the maid would neither eat any meat, nor come in any bed, untill she were released. He was so joyed therewith, that he thought he had seen the Heavens opened, and when he had tasted of the Bacon, and found what a tart, yet pleasant relish it had with it, he takes the flagon of wine in his hands, and gives it a good swig, reserving the remainder against the next day. Whilest the Porter was making himself merry with his good cheer, *Dorotea* heaves up the bed upon her head, and so goes out of the prison, leaving *Sabina* there in her place, and with those two women that bare her company the day before, and staid waiting for her coming forth, she was conducted by them back again to *Claudio* his house, where she continued till the next morning, and then accompanied with them, and some other women, she returned home to her own house, faining that she was not half well, and therefore made the speedier return. The *Teniente* growing now proud upon the matter, thinking the next morning, which was Tuesday, to execute this his revenge, *Claudio* in the mean while was not wanting, (being advised before hand that his Mistresse was now out of his danger, and safely arrived at her wished haven) intreated a Gentleman, a friend of his, to take the pains to go and speak with the *Assistente* of *Sevill*, and to crave so much lawfull favour of him, that he would be pleased to come in person to the Court, and free him of that injury and wrong, which was so justly done unto him. The *Teniente* likewise, when he was going to sit down to dinner in his own house, going aside to the window, and looking with a devilish jealousie on those of *Dorotea*, he had her presently in his eye, and knew it was she, and might plainly perceive how her husband and she sate very lovingly together eating of their dinner. He was almost beside himself, and ready to run mad, wondring with himself, how this might be. Hereupon he presently dispatches one away to the prison, to know who had freed the woman that he had sent thither over night. Answer was made, that she was there. Then did he beat his feet against the ground, and stamp for despight and anger, and did verily perswade himself, that he was not well in his wits, unlesse the other had been a dream. So that day past on, till the next came, when (at the accustomed hour) comes me thither the *Assistente* himself in person, attended with his two *Tenientes*, and when he was sate in the seat of Justice, he will'd that *Claudio* should be called forth, and the woman which was imprisoned with him. Who, when they were brought before him, and had (according to their own confession, as also the keepers) approv'd themselves to be the same, there was no man there but knew *Sabina* was his slave, and so finding nothing to be said against them, they were set at liberty. Yet were they not so freed, but that *Claudio* paid soundly for it; for when he came home, he found the greatest part of his house, & his goods burnt, & together with them a sister of his, one of those honest ones, that accompanied *Dorotea* from the house, who was found dead in the same bed with his *Dispensero*, besides some three other of his servants. This affront to his honour (for that it was generally published throughout the whole Citie) did so afflict his minde, and did in that manner oppresse his heart, that with the strong apprehension thereof he fell grievously sick. And not desiring his health that he might take any worldly comfort in it, but onely that he might live to do penance for this heynous sin that he had committed, by corrupting so good a creature, he recovered of his sickneſſe, and without making any one acquainted therewith, he retired himself to the top of a mountain in a desart place, where in a holy course of life he ended his dayes, betaking himself to the Religious Order of Saint *Francis*. *Dorotea* remained with her husband in the same peace and love as before, and the *Teniente*, like a filthy fellow as he was, without *Doblones*, for ought that they gave him; and without revenge, for ought that he could take of them. And *Benifacio* (honest man) untouched in his honour. For *Sabina*, and most of them that knew the affront that was done him, died within a few dayes after. So just is God in all his works, and so well doth he know how to punish those wrongs that are offered to the innocent.

With this story, and other entertainments, to passe away the time, we were brought by a fair winde to *Spain*, which I had not a little longed for, having left our Anchors, our

our Ordnance, our Oars, our Helm carried away, our Sails rent, and all our Tackling torn, having nothing left which the Sea had not ſwallowed up, onely I was left alive, who ought more juſtly to have periſhed. We did diſimbark in *Barcelona*, where telling my friend Captain *Favelo*, that I had made a vow, while we were in this ſtorm, that I would not ſtay three nights in any part of *Spain*, till I ſhould come to *Sevill*, and viſite the image of our *Lady del Valle*, to whom I had offered up my devotion, and made a certain promiſe to conſecrate ſome thing unto her, if I ſhould be ſo happy as to eſcape that tempeſt. It griev'd him to the very Soul that he ſhould loſe my company, but I could not do otherwiſe, for I feared leaſt they of *Genoa* would come in purſuit of me in ſome Skiff, or the like veſſel. I bought three beaſts for to carry my ſelf and my Trunks, I entertained a ſervant, and giving out, that I was to go my journey (no man knowing to the contrary) we took our leave for ever.

---

## The end of the ſecond Book, of the ſecond part of GUZMAN de ALFARACHE.

---

THE

THE

# THE ROGUE:
## OR,
# THE SECOND PART
## OF THE LIFE OF GUZMAN
## DE ALFARACHE.

## The third Book.

Wherein he relateth all the reſt of his lewd and roguiſh life, from the time that he returned into *Spain*, till he was condemned to the Galleys, where we muſt leave him.

### CHAPTER I.

Guzman de Alfarache *having taken his leave of Captain* Favelo, *telling him, that he was to to goe for* Sevil, *makes for* Saragoca, *where he peruſes the Statutes of* Gotam Colledge, *otherwiſe called*, The Hoſpital of Fools.

WHen a man (out of ſome particular end known to himſelf) hath a minde to grace a lye, for to bring forth witneſſes to credit his falſhoods, he ſeeks out a fountain, a lake, a ſtone, ſome metal, tree, or herb, wherewith he proves his untruths, and preſently alledgeth for his authority, that he hath ſaid nothing, but what ſtands with reaſon, and is made good by all thoſe, that have any inſight in natural Philoſophy. And in this manner he quoteth a thouſand witneſſes; he being the man that tells the lie, and layes the burthen of it on other mens ſhoulders. But I will run a contrary courſe to this; for I (my ſelf not lying) ſhall tell you their lie; not that I affirm it to be ſo; but becauſe it ſeems to be ſo. And ſo it ought to be taken. For that *Apollonius Tianeus* takes it upon himſelf, and ſayes; That he hath ſeen a ſtone, called *Pantaura*, which is the Queen of all other ſtones, whereon the Sun doth work in that forcible manner, that it hath all the vertues in it, that are to be found in all other ſtones whatſoever they are in the world, and that it worketh the ſame effects: And that as the Load-ſtone draweth the iron unto it; ſo this *Pantaura* attracteth all other ſtones unto it ſelf, preſerving that party from all kind of poiſon, that ſhall bear it about him.

To this ſtone we may very well, and with a great deal of reaſon compare riches. For ſee what vertue there is in all other things, the ſame ſhall we find in riches. It draws all unto it ſelf, and preſerveth the profeſſor thereof from all manner of poyſon. It doth all in all; it bringeth mighty things to paſſe; it is a moſt fierce and cruel beaſt, it overcomes all, treads down all that ſtands in its way, and commands all. It makes every thing ſtoop to its power; it ſubjects the earth, and all that therein is. By riches the fierceſt beaſts are made tame; no fiſh, though never ſo great, can reſiſt riches; nor the leaſt of fiſhes, that hide themſelves in the concaves and hollow holes of the Rocks, though over-whelmed with water and drowned in the deep, can eſcape its force; nor can the fowles of the air, although of the ſwifteſt and nimbleſt wing, flie from its Empire; it exenterates and pulls out the very bowels from the moſt inward part of the earth, upon which the higheſt mountains have their foundation;

and it maketh dry the moſt hidden ſands which the Sea doth cover in her bottomleſs Abyſſe. What altitudes hath it abaſed? What difficulties hath it overcome? What impoſſibilities hath not it facilitated? In what dangers, hath ſhe wanted ſafety? In what adverſities hath not ſhe found friends? What things hath ſhe deſired, which ſhe hath not obtained? Or what Law hath ſhe made which hath not been obeyed? And being as it is, ſo venomous a poyſon, that not onely like the Baſiliske, by being beheld by us, it killeth our bodies: but by a bare deſire onely (being coveted) deſtroyeth our ſouls, damning them for ever to the bottomleſſe pit of Hell: yet ſhe her-ſelf is a treacle to the harm we receive from her, and a counter-poyſon to that venome, wherewith ſhe infecteth our ſouls and conſciences, if he that poſſeſſeth riches, can (as of an Antidote, or ſome precious preſervative) make good uſe thereof. Riches, in its own nature, and in it ſelf hath neither honour, nor knowledge, nor power, nor valour, nor any other good, nor any puniſhment nor glory more than that whereunto they that do poſſeſſe it, do direct it. It is like unto the *Camelion*, which aſſumeth the colour of that thing, on which it ſettles it ſelf: Or of the nature of that water of the Lake *Feneo*, of which the *Arcadians* report, that he that drinketh thereof over night groweth ſick; but he that takes it after the Sun is once up, waxeth well. He that ſhall live in idleneſſe, heaping up treaſure by night, that is, ſecretly ſcraping a great deal of wealth together, overcharging his conſcience therewith, he ſure ſhall be ſick: But he that ſhall uſe them in the day-time, and ſhew them to the light, that his works may ſhine before men, and that he come with a clear conſcience, having the ſtomack of his ſoul empty of ſin, and his conſcience not over-clogg'd with worldly cares, this man ſhall be made whole. Neither is the rich man condemned, nor the poor man ſaved, for that the one is rich, and the other poor: but onely becauſe the rich man abuſeth his riches, and the poor man abuſeth his poverty. For if the rich man treaſures up, and the poor covet, neither is the rich man rich, nor the poor man poor, and both are to be condemned. But that may be called the beſt and trueſt riches, which being poſſeſſed is deſpiſed. For riches ſerve onely (at leaſt ſhould) to relieve our own neceſſities, to communicate with the good, and to diſtribute amongſt our friends. The better and greater part, which rich men have of riches is the leſſer part, in regard they are ſo occaſional in men, inciting them (eſpecially if their hearts be once ſet upon them) to this or that other ſinne. Ill deſires beget ill doings. Riches in its owne nature, is a very ſweet thing: To this, mans appetite hath a ſweet tooth, and greedy gaping after it. And as it is in the Proverb; *La manzana corre peligro enlas pujas del erizo*; That Apple is in great danger, that ſticks on the prickles of a Hedge-hogs back.

The Divine providence (for our greater good) being to divide and diſtribute its gifts, not laying all the weight of them upon one ſide, thought good to repart them in different manner, and on different perſons, to the end, that all might be ſaved. This Providence made both the rich and the poor. To the rich ſhe gave temporal goods; to the poor, ſpiritual bleſſings: to the end, that the rich man diſtributing his riches to the poor, might thereby purchaſe Gods favour; and ſo remaining both equal, might equally gain heaven; which is to be opened with a golden key; to wit, with riches, by uſing them well: And ſometimes likewiſe this doore of heaven is to be opened with a picklock; that is, by diſpenſing our goods to the poor; yet notwithſtanding, doth not man, onely for that he has more, thereby merit more: but becauſe he more deſpiſeth than deſireth. For, without compariſon, much more is the riches of a poor man that is contented, than of a rich man that is never ſatisfied. He poſſeſſeth them, that is not poſſeſſed by them; he is rich that ſeeks not after riches; and he hath more ſtore, that is leaſt ſtorer. This is the onely man whom we may truly tearm rich, wiſe, and honourable.

And if the wiſeman would uſe his wiſdome well, and would meaſure that which he hath need of, with that which he hath, nature would content it ſelf with a little; and even in that little would he finde an over-plus. But becauſe the fool inlargeth the cord, and would imbrace that which he hath, according to that which he deſires, God ſo orders this meaſure, that though he had all whatſoever the world contains, yet ſhould he ſtill be poor. To him that is not contented, nothing is enough: To a having mind, all is too little: wanting much, by having too much. The eye of a covetous man will never ſay, no more than will the Sea, or Hell, *Ya me baſta*, Now I have enough. Rich and wiſe ſhalt thou be, when thou liveſt ſo within thy compaſs, that he that knowes thee, ſhould admire the little that thou haſt, and the much that thou ſpendeſt: and when it ſhall not cauſe any wonder in thee,

to

to see what little meanes thou hast to live, and what great possessions other men enjoy.

Thou seest me here now rich, very rich, and in *Spain*; but far worse, than I was before, for if before poverty made me too impudent: why riches hath now made me too confident. If I could but have contented my self, or had I but had the temper of a well-govern'd man, I could never have wanted: but because I neither did the one, nor knew the other, for to get money I endanger'd my body, and hazarded my soul. I was never contented, never satisfied, never at quiet with my self. And for that I led an ill kind of life, and was not willing to take any pains (unlesse it were in roguery) I lost that with ease, which I got with much labour. I was like unto that wheel that conveys water to *Aqueducts*, no sooner full, but presently empty. I cared little for money, kept it lesse, but alwayes imployed it ill. My money was the price of blood, it was spent upon Sepultures for dead bodies, on dead works, and worldly vices. This was the use I put it to, and therefore it is no marvel, if it thriv'd no better with me. Easily it came, and easily it went. And in the end I lost both it and my self, as you shall hear hereafter.

Flying from the mischief that might follow me, I went out of *Barcelona*, forsaking the rode-way, going by by-paths from place to place, betaking my self to unknown tracks. I gave out that I was to go for *Sevil*, I framed excuses, to be the better believed. I talkt of the Vowes that I had made, and invented a thousand other lies: and for no other cause in the world, than to defeat the spies of their purpose, and that they might not know what was become of me, nor find the pricking of the hare, that was now so far before the hounds. The Mules were mine own, my servant a new-comer, and unacquainted with my tricks. I travell'd which way it pleased me, according as my mind served me; or as it came first in my head: here to day, and to morrow in *France*, without staying in any one set place: and alwayes changing my cloaths: For I came not to any place where I might change my apparel, but I did it, being of no great charge, not passing an hundred Crowns, or thereabouts.

In this manner did I travel over all the Countrey, *till I* came to *Saragoza*, receiving no small contentment, that I was safely arrived in that noble and famous City. According as my youthfulnesse did prick me on, my money help out, and the Dames did incite me, so did I continue there some few dayes, though all and many more had been too little for to view and enjoy its greatnesse: So fair and strong were the buildings, so good the government, so great the provision, all things so good cheap, and those reasonable rates, that methought it had a smatch of *Italy*. In one onely thing I found it very strange, and to my seeming, at the first sight, somwhat terrible, which was the harder for me to digest, & the worse to be indured, for that I knew not the cause of it. And it was, to see, how men, knowing the condition of these women, and that every little occasion is sufficient for them to make their longings laws, forming bodies of shadowes, would put a bridle upon them, lest by losing that *decorum* and respect which they owe to their deceased husbands, assuming too much liberty unto them, they were likely to stumble on a thousand blocks, that might be an occasion of their falling, and cause them to run on headlong, to the utter ruine of their reputation, which in a woman being once lost, is never again to be recovered.

It was my hap to walk through a spatious street, which they call the *Cosso*, which though it made a fair show, yet was it much graced by an handsome widow, that was young and well-favoured, and to my seeming of good both wealth and quality. I made a stand to view her; she likewise stood still, and would not away: she knew well enough of what disease I was sick, but would take no notice of it, nor made any other semblance or show unto me, than as if neither I or she had been there, or as if we had not seen one another. I made more turns about her window, than a horse doth about a mill, (for they are not a few, that use daily the like kind of fooleries) yet did she not shew her self either coy or scornful unto me, or that she was offended with me for it. Nor did I once offer to speak a word unto her, till at last, she seeming (me thought) unto me, to wax weary of this my foolish silence: I conceited that she said to her self, what painted timbrel is this? what Peece without powder, that hath made me wait here these two long hours, and making still proffers, as though he would shoot, hath not yet discharg'd his musket, nor so much as once opened his mouth. With that she went her way; and I stood looking when she would return: being now fully resolved to let flie another arrow, to see if I could find the former that I had lost: but she came no more in play, and so I mist the mark I meant to have shot at. I went home to my lodging, and demanded of mine Host, what she was; but as it were accidentally, and in a careless kind of fashion, without any the least show that I did it of set purpose, or for any

interest

intereſt of mine own, giving him ſuch marks and tokens, whereby he might gueſſe whom *I* meant.

This Gentle-woman (ſaid mine Hoſt) is a widow, and that not one, but many wayes exceeding fair and beautiful. *I* would needs know of him how? He told me, ſo many, that every particular fairneſs in her, were a ſufficient beautifying to any other woman. She is fair (as you ſee) in her face, ſhe is likewiſe fair in her Linage, being of the beſt deſcent in this City; ſhe is alſo fair in her wealth and riches, having much of her own, and much by her husband; and above all, moſt fair in her diſcretion, for therein eſpecially doth her beauty exceed. I ſaw the pot was ſo full, that I was afraid, it would run over; and therefore I ſaid unto mine Hoſt, that he might not run himſelf out of breath; How comes it then to paſſe, if ſhe be of that rank and quality as you ſay ſhe is, that her friends and kinsfolk do give way, that ſuch a worthy Gentlewoman ſhould run ſuch a deal of hazard, as ſhe does; for youth, beauty, riches and liberty can hardly walk out their ſtations without tripping, if not falling. How much better and ſafer were it, both for them and her, to get her another good husband, and cauſe her to marry, than to ſuffer her to live in this dangerous ſtate of widow-hood. Whereupon mine Hoſt replied; you ſay well Sir, but this cannot be done, but to her great loſſe and hinderance; for that very day that ſhe ſhall betake her ſelf to a ſecond marriage, ſhe is to loſe all the eſtate which ſhe had by her former husband, which is no ſmall matter. But continuing ſtill a widow, ſhe ſhall be Uſu-fructuary of all that he left her, and enjoy it as long as ſhe lives.

Then ſaid I, O how hard a condition, how rigorous a clauſe is this? How much better were it to deal with this Gentle-woman, and ſuch other as ſhe is, as they uſe to do in *Italy*, whoſe husbands, when they die, leave their wives a large legacy, diſpoſing it in that manner, that it be paid unto them at the day of their marriage, declaring thereby, that they meerly left it them to that end. And this they do, to the end that they may enjoy ſo great a benefit by a ſecond marriage, whereby their eſtate ſhall not only be advanced, but their honour likewiſe ſecured, which otherwiſe might chance to receive ſome ſcandal. I was preſſing this argument a little more home unto him; but he interrupted me, and anſwered thus unto me. Sir, hath not your worſhip oft heard ſay; *En cada tierra ſu uſo*; Every Countrey hath his cuſtome? This goes currant here, and that in *Italy*. And that other *I* am ſure is not unknown unto you; *Cada loco, en ſu caſa ſabe mas, que el cuerdo en el agena:* every fool is wiſer in his own houſe, than a wiſe man is in anothers. Whereunto I replied: if there be no better Law than this, and if people ſhall ſuffer themſelves to be governed in this manner, I know well enough what I ſay, I tell you plainly, I like not of it, nor can I by any means approve it. And to this end, it is alſo ſaid: *Al mal uſo que brarle la pierna.* A bad Cuſtome is better broken than kept. The legs of it are to be broken, that it may not ſtand any more in force. A holy, good, and juſt Lavv ought to be grounded on reaſon. *I* am of your minde (ſaid mine Hoſt) but they that are more learned than I am, would peradventure give you better ſatisfaction than I can. Yet in my opinion, it ſeemeth to carrie ſome force with it; and I am verily perſwaded, that that which moved them to make this Law was, not that a widow might not marry, but that being a widow, ſhe might not live in want; and to take away all occaſion, leſt for lack of convenient maintenance, according to the condition of her quality, ſhe might fail in her obligation, and uſe that ill, which was inſtituted for good: ſo that the fault is the womans though the puniſhment be the mans.

This mine honeſt Hoſt did not half ſatisfie me with this (as he thought) his ſound reaſon: whereupon I entred into a diſcourſe, thinking with my ſelf, what kind of creatures theſe women be; who if you lead them by evil wayes, they turn evil; if by good, worſe; and never ſhall you come to know what to make of them, They are the making or the marring of their houſe: The eſtabliſhers or the deſtroyers thereof. *In* their running they trip, and in going they fall. And therefore their names ſuits well with their nature; being for this cauſe called *Woman*, becauſe ſhe is a woe to man. She hath a ſmooth skin, but a harſh nature: a ſoft tongue, but a hard heart: ſilken words, but ſowrage deeds. They ſeemed (methought) unto me, (pardon the courſneſs of my compariſon) to be like unto ſtraw, which if you let it ſtand in the field in its natural place, without laying it in ſuch rooms where it ought to be kept, it is preſerved by the wind and rain: but if you reſtrain and ſtraiten it, clapping it up cloſe in ſome little private lodging, it will ſhoot it ſelf out, and break through the walls: nor ſhall you reap any other good of it, than that ſowre juice which it will yield you, like unto that of the ſowr Orange, affording much bitterneſs, but not benefit. They know not how to keep a mean in their actions, and leſſe in their love and hate: Nor ever yet could

could they uſe a moderation in their cravings and deſirings. That much which they receive they think it ſtill too little; and that little which they give, they alwayes think it too much. They are generally covetous; yet notwithſtanding all theſe faults, naked is that houſe, where there is never a wife. All will reel where the Reel goes not. Where there is never a white apron, there is no good order, the meat ill dreſt, and the table ſluttiſh. As the breath of man doth uphold houſes, that they runne not to ruine and decay; ſo the ſteps of a well govern'd houſwife doth preſerve and multiply wealth: And as a good Chine of Bacon doth make glorious porrige; and as a man becomes the ſtreets; ſo doth the woman adorn the houſe.

But this is not a place to treat of their vertues. I come unto mine owne, which at that time were more than the vertues of *Tobacco*. I continued a while diſcourſing with mine Hoſt, who made me a large relation of many things concerning that City, as of its priviledges and liberties, from which converſation of his I received ſo much content, and was ſo attentive to his talk, that I would have forgotten any other entertainment, to have enjoyed this his pleaſing diſcourſe. I may thank my ſins that had brought me thither. I had taken an extream cold in the Galley, which I was not yet well rid of; and finding my head ſtufft, I pluck't an handkercher out of my pocket, and blew my noſe, which I had no ſooner pull'd thence, but I opened it, and lookt thereupon, as if that Oyſter had afforded me a pearl, it being the manner and faſhion of that Countrey ſo to do (contrary to the rule of good manners) being no leſſe ſlovenly than common trick amongſt them.

The crafty Rogue mine Hoſt, perceiving why I did it, and that I made, as it were, a ſcoffe of their cuſtomes, being a good ſpeaker (as he was) a proper handſome fellow, and a pleaſant; ſpeaking in a low voice, and nodding his head towards me, ſoftly ſaid unto me; Fly, Sir, Fly; hide your ſelf as ſoon as you can: Quickly, quickly, I ſay. Poor and miſerable man that *I* was, O theſe his words, how ill did they ſound in my ears! O how my heart was ſcorcht with them, like the Partridge that is firſt ſinged in the fire, and afterwards to be put preſently on the ſpit! My feathers were ſinged, and my pride abated. He had ſcarce made an end of his words, when at two leaps, I had got me behind the curtains of the bed. He being ignorant of my villanies, though that I had done this innocently, and out of ſimplicity, as being ſtartled with the ſuddenneſſe thereof: and ſo inſtantly breaking out into a loud laughter, he merrily ſaid unto me; I perceive, Sir, you are not troubled with the Gout: by my faith Sir, you are a nimble active Gentleman: your Worſhip may now come forth, if you pleaſe: as God would have it, it is nothing: the ſtorm is paſt, the coaſt clear, and you may ſafely ſhew your ſelf upon the hatches. I came forth from thence as pale as aſhes, my colour was quite gone, and death appeared in my face; and did much wonder at my ſelf, conſidering the great fear and perturbation *I* then was in, that the ſudden aſtoniſhment and the affright it had put me into, had not made me leap out of the window into the ſtreet.

I came out at at laſt, but whether more amazed, or aſhamed, I cannot tell you: but *I* ſought to diſſemble it the beſt I could, that I might not raiſe up that duſt which might chance to put out mine eyes. Being now come again to my ſelf, *I* ask't him what was the myſtery of this, and what he meant by it; I pray Sir, ſaid he, content your ſelf, reſt you quiet, and give me preſently two ſhillings from you. *I* put my hand in my pocket, and threw him forth a Royal, and when I ſaw he was quiet, having by this time laught himſelf weary, I began afreſh to ask him, why he demanded two ſhillings of me, and what was that that had paſſed before, when he bid me flie, and go hide my ſelf? He falling into a new vein of laughing, louder than before, looking cheerily and merrily upon me, ſaid unto me: Sir, *I* have here a *Procuration* ſubſtituted by the *Adminiſtrators* of an *Hoſpital*, for the recovering of certain duties and rights of thoſe, which come to my houſe, which I am to challenge of them, if they commit any forfeiture contained in the ſaid *Procuration*. From this time forward, your Worſhip may goe over all the world by vertue of theſe my Letters Patents, without any farther moleſtation to your perſon, or your purſe. With this Royal, you have paid for your entrance, & have free licence to be gone when you liſt. When I heard him tell me this, what with that was paſt, and what with this preſent gambal, *I* was ſo confounded therewith, that that might be ſaid to me, which was to a Gentle-woman, that is well known, who having matcht her ſelf with a new Chriſtian, for that he was rich, & ſhe poor; who being with child by him, and finding her ſelf (it being the firſt that ſhe had gone withall) out of eaſe, and in much pain, talking with another Gentle-woman, that was an acquaintance and friend of hers; ſhe ſaid unto her, in good faith, I find my ſelf ſo ill, that I know not what to ſay unto it. I was never in my life, in that Jewiſh taking, as I am now in. No marvell (ſaid the other)

having a Jew within you; and bearing him about you (as you do) in your body. And in good faith, my ſelf (like this Gentle-woman) was in that fear at that time, that if mine Hoſts laughing and jeſting with me, had not quickly rid me of this doubt, I verily believe, I ſhould have fallen down dead for fear. His breath put breath into me; his livelineſſe, life: And ſeeing him thus ſet upon the merry pin, I ſaid unto him, *Cuerpo de mi.* As I am an honeſt man; ſince I have paid the penalty, I will know by your leave, what is the fault I have committed. For that Judges ſentence is rigorous and unjuſt, that ſhall condemn me in charges, for that which I never did, and ſhall not give me a diſcharge for it. For it may be, both parties being heard, my money may be return'd me back again. Becauſe your Worſhip (ſayes mine Hoſt) ſeems to be a worthy diſcreet Gentleman, I will read unto you a Bed-roll of ſuch Statutes as I have here for the recovery of thoſe amerciaments, and thoſe penalties, wherewith they are to be puniſhed, who incur the danger of them. This Royal is a fee, that goes to the Beedle for your entrance. Only I ſhall intreat your Worſhip to have the patience to ſtay a while, till I ſhall go run and fetch it you. He went his way, and returns again in a trice, bringing a great book with him under his arm, wherein he ſaid, he did ſet down the admittance, or matriculation of thoſe that were made free of that Incorporation, & taking out ſome few ſheets of paper, that lay looſe in the book, he began to read ſome of their ſtatutes and ordinances, whereof I will repeat ſuch unto you, as remain in my memory, with a proteſtation which I make unto you, to acquaint you with thoſe few hereafter, which ſhall occurre to my remembrance. And they ſpeak after this manner.

## The Statutes and Conſtitutions of *Gotam-Colledge*, OR, *The Hoſpital of Fools.*

WE Reaſon, abſolute Monarch, and ſole Soveraign of the world, not acknowledging any ſuperiour, or in any ſort equal unto us for the redreſſing and reforming of mens manners againſt the obſtinate and perverſe wilfulneſſe of folly, and all other her wickedneſſe, which hath taken ſuch deep root, and multiplied it ſelf in that abundance, to our notable hurt and detriment, the prejudice of our Royal Prerogative, and the great damage of all mankinde; for to avoid thoſe greater inconveniences, which the corruption of ſo dangerous and ſpreading a canker may cauſe, that it may not creep more and more upon our loving ſubjects (whoſe welfare and ſafety we tender as our own) and that it may not dilate it ſelf any further, to their utter undoing and final deſtruction; We will and command, have and do ordain, as alſo do publiſh and proclaim theſe our lawes, to all thoſe that are already born, or ſhall be born hereafter in ſucceeding ages, by the power of our Regal authority, and by the general conſent of our Counſel of State, that they be taken and held for ſuch, as are now by us eſtabliſhed and confirmed, and that they be punctually kept, religiouſly obſerved, and fully comply'd withall, both in all and every the leaſt point or parcel herein ſpecified or contained, as you will anſwer it at your peril, and incurre that grievous puniſhment, which to thoſe that ſhall violate and infringe theſe our Lawes, is in that caſe provided.

Moreover, becauſe the firſt thing that we are in our princely care to conſider of, is, that all due, fitting, and convenient proviſion be made, for the quick expedition and good execution of Juſtice, we in our wiſdom have thought it meet to nominate and appoint certain officers, of good both ſufficiency and truſt, ſuch as ſhall be requiſite and needful for this ſo weighty and important a buſineſſe. And therefore we do depute, nominate, and aſſign for Judges, good *Policy*, *Curioſity*, and *Soliciſude*; to the end, that they, as if it were us our ſelf, and as repreſenting us in our own proper perſon, may truly and uprightly adminiſter juſtice, giving them by vertue of our power full and plenary authority to apprehend, ſet at liberty, and puniſh any manner of perſon, or perſons whatſoever upon juſt cauſe, referring our ſaid Judges to be ordered and directed by theſe our lawes & ordinances, & not to differ from the true intent & meaning of them, to the damnifying of the ſubject, & the diſhonouring of us. Furthermore, both for the preſent, and ever hereafter do we ſubſtitute as elder brothers of this Fraternity, and chief Wardens of this Incorporation, all thoſe that be jealous obſervers, every one according to his place and merit, and he that ſhall be moſt jealous, ſhall be moſt honoured. Our Attorney General ſhall be *Diligence*, and our Beadle that ſhall warn them to the Court ſhall be *Fame*.

First of all therefore, any perſon or perſons that ſhall go walking and talking to themſelves

ſelves in the ſtreets, or ſhall do the like, when they are all alone, or at home in their private houſe we condemn them for fools for three moneths, within which term of time, we will and command, that they abſtain therefrom, and reform this their fooliery. And in caſe, they ſhall not amend this fault, our pleaſure is, that for the better accompliſhment thereof, they have a longer and more peremptory time ſet them down, of ſome three terms, or more; within which limited time they ſhall bring in a certificate of their ſaid reformation and amendment, upon pain of being held for approved, attainted, and convicted fools, and accordingly command our foreſaid elder Brothers, and Ancients of the Company to bring in their evidence, and to find them guilty, and to ſee them afterwards ſeverely puniſhed, as violaters and breakers of our Laws.

*Item*, They that ſhall walk through any publick or private place, that is paved with brick, or with ſtone, and go with a great deal of care, and ſtudy, pitching either their toes, or their heels, in ſuch a direct line, ſide, or corner of the ſaid bricks, or ſtones, ſhall be condemned in the ſame puniſhment, as aforeſaid.

*Item*, They that walk along the ſtreets, caſting their cloak under one arm, and ſtretching out their hand, or their finger, ſhall go as they paſſe along, either patting the wall, or making ſtreaks and Indentures with their fingers ends, let them be admitted Scholars of our ſaid Houſe or Colledge; provided alwayes, that they have ſix moneths of approbation granted unto them: In which time we command them to be reformed. Otherwiſe, and in default thereof, we have already ordained, and do now ordain; That the Warden, Sub-warden, or Dean of this our Colledge, and in their abſence, the Senior-fellow put his Coat upon him (according to the cuſtome of the Houſe) his Cap, and his bable, and other ornaments belonging to his degree, and ever afterwards be held a profeſſed foool.

*Item*, They that ſhall play at bowls or at billiards, when they have thrown out their bowl, if by chance it ſhall run awry, and that they with it ſhall alſo wry their body; thinking, that which way they lean, the bowl ſhould run inclining to that ſide, and govern it ſelf, as they direct it with theſe their mimick geſtures, ſhall die in this their ſin: and we muſt declare them for brothers already profeſſed. And we further command, that the like be alſo underſtood of thoſe, who uſe the like Apiſh action, ſeeing ſomething fall down from ſome high place to the ground, ſhrinking their ſhoulders, wrying their mouths, or turning up the whites of their eyes. And likewiſe of thoſe, vvho having vizards on their faces (as in masks and revels) ſhall under thoſe, go making of ſtrange geſticulations, either by frovvning or ſmiling, or biting of the lip, as if in ſo doing, it did really and truly ſeem unto them, that theſe variations, and alterations of their countenances vvere taken notice of by ſome outvvard appearance, vvhen as being thus masked, it is impoſſible, that any invvard geſtures of theirs ſhould be outvvardly diſcerned. And of thoſe vvho do counterfeit and imitate the like, not knovving vvhether they do the ſame or no. Or if in cutting out ſomething vvith a bad pair of ſheers, or a dull-edged knife, or taking pains vvith the like untovvard inſtrument, they ſhall dravv their mouth on t'one ſide like a Playce, lill out their tongue like a Calf, vvrinkle up their cheeks, forehead & eyes like a ſcorched piece of parchment, and ſuch Idiot-like poſtures: our vvill and pleaſure is, that they in like manner ſhall take the degree of fools.

*Item*, They who expecting their ſervant (having ſent him forth on an errand) if in caſe he be ſomewhat long a coming, ſhall ſtay waiting for him at the doors or windows of his houſe, thinking that by his ſtaying there for him, he will make the more haſt, and come the ſooner, we condemn all ſuch to retract and acknowledge their errour, upon pain, that in caſe they ſhall refuſe ſo to do, they be ſeverely proceeded againſt.

*Item*, They that draw their cards with a great deal of leaſure, ſeeking by degrees, by a little and a little, to diſcover at this, or that other corner: firſt, whether it colour right, and afterwards diſcourſing & arguing the caſe, whether it be ſuch or ſuch a card, they themſelves knowing for certain, that for all this their laborious lingring and delay, they ſhall never a whit the ſooner encounter, or miſſe, than if they had preſently taken it up, and made ſhow thereof, as ſoon as it was dealt into their hand: we condemn them to the ſame acknowledgment, as aforeſaid. And for ſome cauſes moving us thereunto, we have thought fit to give them free leave and licence, without incurring any farther penalty, to follow their ancient cuſtome: but with this condition, That as oft as he or they, offending in this manner, ſhall ſee an Ancient of the Houſe, or paſſe by his chamber-door, he ſhall make an acknowledgment of this his errour, by putting off his hat.

*Item*, They that are gotten up into ſome other room, and either ſitting or ſtanding in ſome vvindovv or open gallery, ſhall from thence ſpit dovvn; vvhether it be thereby to

take (as it were with a plummet) the evenneſſe of the building, or to ſee, if he can make his ſpittle to light juſt upon ſuch a ſtone, or ſome one mark or other, which his eye hath choſen out; we ſtrictly charge and command them, that they retract and reform this their folly, and that upon ſhort warning, upon pain of being taken for publick profeſſors of the ſame.

*Item*, They, who travelling upon the way, ſhall inquire of thoſe paſſengers, whom they meet withall, how far it is to ſuch a baiting-place, or to ſuch a Town, thinking that by this their asking, they ſhall the ſooner reach unto it, we condemn them in the like penalty, injoyning them for penance, the badneſſe of the way, the Carriers jading of them, & mine Hoſts cozening of them: Not inflicting any greater puniſhment, out of the hope of their amendment.

*Item*, They, who when they make water, go ſtreaking the walls with their urine, as if they were buſie about ſome curious delineations, or framing ſome Antick figures, or ſhall piſſe in the duſt, making I know not what ſcattering angles and Circles, or ſome chink in a wall, or little hole in the ground; We will and command, that they do ſo no more, upon pain (in caſe they ſhall perſevere therein) to be puniſhed by their Judge, and delivered over to an elder brother, or one of the Ancients of the houſe.

*Item*, They, who when they hear the clock ſtrike, count not the hours, but ask others what's a clock, it being more fit and facile for them, to tell it themſelves. Which careleſneſs of theirs proceedeth oftentimes from the abundance of a cholerick kind of humour; We therefore ſtrictly charge and command all ſuch, that they have an eſpecial care of their health; and in caſe they be poor, and not able to be at the charge of Phyſick, that then one of the Maſters of our Hoſpital, cauſe them to be carried thither, giving order that ſome preparatives be provided for them of wilde Cherries, or ſharp ſowr Oranges, leſt otherwiſe they might run the danger of loſing their wits, and quickly turn either fools or mad men.

*Item*, They, who have but a little meat before them, and many mouths a going, ſhall divert themſelves from their feeding, to entertain the company with this tale, or diſcourſe, taking more pleaſure (like a ſort of pratling fools, as they are) to fill other mens ears, than their own bellies; by which means they often riſe an hunger'd: For as much as theſe are dy'd in the wool, and come ready dreſt to our hands, we remit them to be regiſtred among your incurable fools. And therefore command, that there be an eſpecial care taken of them. For theſe are in the ſeventh degree, and are almoſt in their full height to be taken.

*Item*, They, who out of covetouſneſſe, or any other cauſe or reaſon whatſoever, ſo as they be not driven thereunto of force and neceſſity (for in ſuch caſes Lawes are not to be kept) when they go to market, buy the worſer ſort of victuals for the ſaving of their purſe, and ſpending the leſſe in their houſes, as if a Phyſician, an Apothecary, or a Barber-Surgeon (who all the year long come to your houſes, to cure thoſe diſeaſes, which were cauſed by bad and unwholſome meats) were not dearer by much, than any the beſt meat they could buy; We condemn them to a general diſgracing of themſelves, declaring them, as before declared) to be profeſſed fools, forbidding them from henceforth to do the like, upon pain of being committed over to the Curate, Sexton, or Grave-maker of his, or their Pariſh, to be puniſhed either more or leſſe, according to the hurt that ſhall grow thereby.

*Item*, They, who in the ſummer-nights, as alſo ſome in the winter, ſit or ſtand, till their breech, or their feet ake, in ſome open Court or Taraſſe, gaping and gazing on the heavens, and from the clouds of the air, go forming the figures of Serpents, and the ſhapes of Lions, and ſo of other beaſts, we pronounce and declare them to be brothers of this Fraternity: but if in this kinde of ſort, or the like manner, they ſhall thus entertain themſelves with theſe bables, that they may thereby give place and time in their own houſes, as ſome uſe to do for their own intereſt and private gain, that they may ſee the ſigne of *Taurus*, *Aries*, and *Capricorn*, which is a moſt foul and diſhoneſt caſe, we condemn them (though accounted of the Brotherhood) not to be capable of the priviledges thereof, nor that they be admitted into their Senate-houſe, nor that they have any wax lights allowed them on Feſtival dayes.

*Item*, They, who wearing either black ſhoes, or white, or of any other coloured velvet, ſhall, for to take away the duſt from them, or to give them a better glaſſe, make them clean with their cloak, as if that were not of a more noble & better condition, and much more coſtly, and that for to make them clean and handſome, they ſhall leave that foul and duſty, we condemn them for neat fools. And in caſe they be Noble-men, for their greater honour we will have them to be taken for three-piled fools.

*Item*, They, who having paſt ſome few dayes, without ſeeing their friends and acquaintance, when afterward, meeting one another by chance, they ſay each to other; Are you

alive

alive Sir? Is it poſſible, that there ſhould be any ſuch man upon the face of the earth? Which notwithſtanding, that it be a kinde of indearing of a mans love, yet muſt we have them inrolled amongſt the reſt, being there are other more proper forms of ſalutation, without asking a man whether he be upon earth, or alive, when as he was never yet in Heaven, and ſees him ſtand juſt before him. And we farther will and command, that all ſuch have a ſign, or mark of *Admiration* ſet upon them: and that (during our pleaſure) they never go without it.

*Item*, They, who after the hearing of Maſſe, and when they have made an end of their *Ave Maries*, at the tingling of the bell, or at any other hour, when a ſign is given in the Church, and ſervice is ended, ſhall ſay to ſuch a one; I kiſſe your hands Sir, howbeit, this phraſe of ſpeech is ſuppoſed to be no other than an ackuowledgement of thanks, the other having bowed his body towards him, or given him the good day, or good night; yet notwithſtanding, we condemne them for fools, and command them to abjure this manner of ſpeaking, upon puniſhment that they ſhall carry this name with them to their grave, and while they live, be pointed at for their folly, for that they more eſteem of a falſe and lying *beso las manos*, I kiſſe your hands, which they never kiſſe, nor would kiſſe them, though they were the Biſhops hands, and much leſſe thoſe of other inferiour perſons, whereof ſome have them full of ſcabs, of ſcurf, or leproſie, and other ſome with nayls, either ready to drop off, or full of durt, looking like *Caveary*, that they would be ready to turn a mans ſtomack, then to ſay God give you good night, or good morrow. And the like command we lay upon thoſe, who make anſwer with the like ſalutation, at another mans neezing, when they may as well ſay, God bleſſe you.

*Item*, They, who come to a mans houſe to inquire for him, and asking whether he be within, or no; it being anſwered unto him, or them, that he is not within, but is gone abroad, return a ſecond time to reply: Is he then gone abroad? we condemne them as Rebels, and contumacious people, for repeating that demand, whereof they had already ſatisfaction.

*Item*, They, who having hit their ſhin, or their toes againſt ſome ſharp ſtone, by ſtumbling unawares upon it, and with a great deal of fleam, and full of choler, return back again to look upon it at leiſure with a fixed eye, and a troubled minde, we condemne them in the ſame penalty, and command them, either to remove it out of the way, or that they do not offer to look upon it, upon pain of further increaſing their puniſhment.

*Item*, They, who blowing their noſe, in the taking away of their handkereher, look ſteadily upon it, and pry into it, as if ſome Pearls had dropt from thence, and that they would ſafely lay them up for fear of loſing, we condemne them for brothers of our ſaid foundation, and that as oft as they ſhall offend in this fault, they give an almes to the Hoſpital of incurable fools, grounding our reaſon of this mulct upon this, that they ſhall hereafter have others do as much for them.

When he was come thus far, me thought he wanted onely the bell to toll him off. I was ready to burſt my heart with laughing, and the bede-roll was ſo long, that I would not ſuffer him to go on any farther, & therefore interrupting him in his reading, I ſaid unto him; Now (my good Hoſt) ſeeing you have done me the favour to adviſe me of theſe things, that I may thereby know how to correct my errors; tell me I pray you whereabouts this Hoſpital is, who is the Principal, and what Lands & Rents belong unto it. Sir (ſaid mine Hoſt) for that there are ſo many diſeaſed and ſick perſons, and that the Hoſpital is incapable, and poor, conſidering the few that are well, and the many that are ſick; it was agreed upon, that they ſhould change their lodgings, and be ſcattered up and down in divers other places, ſo that now all the world in a manner pertains to this Hoſpital. Where then (ſaid I unto him) ſhall thoſe diſcreet and wiſe men, that remained yet untouched, be ſo conveniently lodged, that they may be out of the danger of this infection? Hereunto he made anſwer, I hear (Sir) that there is but one onely man in all the world, that is free from this contagion; but as yet I could never learn, who that one ſhould be. Every particular man thinks that he is this ſound party, but few, beſides himſelf will believe it.

The certaineſt news that I can give you hereof, is, That there is a great Enginer lately found out, that will undertake to put into an Egge-ſhell, as many as ſhall be abſolutely free of this diſeaſe, and does farther make offer, that together with their perſons, he will likewiſe thruſt into the ſaid Egge-ſhell, all their Goods, Lands, and Rents, and that notwithſtanding all this, they ſhall have ſo much elbow-room, that they ſhall ſcarce touch one another. I could hold no longer, but muſt needs tell him; This (mine Hoſte) is a malicious interpretation,

and a matter of meer waggery, and no leſſe large than the Hoſpital it ſelf. But being well conſidered, I finde that it is very true; in regard we are all of us but men, and have all ſinned in our father *Adam*. Our converſation had continued ſomewhat longer, and we ſhould have made an end of reading of the ſtatutes of the ſaid houſe, if the night had not waſted away ſo faſt. Beſides, I had a great deſire to have another fling at the vvidow, and did long to fetch a turn, or two before her lodging, to ſee how the vvorld went there. So, leaving the reſt to the next dayes reading, I willed my ſervant to bring me a very gallant ſute of Cloaths, which I had in my Trunk, and taking my ſword under mine arm, I went out of the houſe, and walkt about the Citie, ſeeking my fortune. I went ſtalking through thoſe ſtreets in a careleſſe kinde of faſhion, with a minde ſo well pleaſed, and a heart ſo contented, that I would not have chang'd my preſent ſtate, with any Prince in Chriſtendom; thinking my ſelf to be ſuch a tall fellow of my hands, that no man was able to ſtand in my way.

At the winding of a corner, where two ſtreets met together, and made a croſſe, I met with a couple of young vvenches, the one was a reaſonable handſom one, and might very well have ſerv'd the turn; the other ſeemed to be her ſervant. I made towards them, and they did not ſtep aſide; I ſtopt them in their way, and they ſtood ſtill. I began to talk and diſcourſe with them, and they with me, and in that kinde and courteous manner, that I was as it were raviſhed with their company. I could not put any queſtion to the Gentle-woman, whereunto ſhe had not a ready anſwer; ſhe would not give an inch of her ground, nor let any Carde that came from me, paſſe without a Vye. There was not any one word that could come amiſſe to her. I went about to diſ-inwrap her hands of her mantle, that I might come to touch them; but the crafty byleding, ſeem ſomewhat ſqueamiſh, ſtraining courteſie, did in a pretty kinde of faſhion faign a defending of her ſelf from that friendly violence, yet did ſhe not make any great haſty retreat, but did ſuffer me to come on in that cunning manner, and was ſo nimble finger'd withall, that in that ſhort ſpace of time that I was buſying my hands about her face, and her breaſt, ſhe with hers not idle, but putting them into my pocket, took thence that little, that I had. I was hot upon the buſineſſe, and in this heat of mine, I had no feeling of this ache; nor had it been poſſible for me to have been ſenſible of it, had I taken the beſt care that I could. For, at ſuch times, and upon ſuch fits, our memory, and our underſtanding fails us, onely our will is then occupied. She had no ſooner made her markes, and ſtript me of a matter of ſome hundred Royals, but ſhe ſaid unto me; enough (good Sir) I beſeech you no more for Gods ſake, leave off while it is well, and do that (as you love me) which I ſhall adviſe you unto: Let me then intreat you Sir, that you will have the patience to ſtay awhile at the turning of this ſtreet, through which you ſaw us now come, for the next houſe ſave one, at the end of this ſtreet, is mine; we go but a little wayes off here to fetch a piece of work, that I have put forth to doing, I ſhall make no ſtay, but come back by and by, and be inſtantly with you. We will not tarry ſcarce the turning of your hand, and then you ſhall go in with me into my houſe; for there lodges no body but I, and my maid, and there you ſhall ſee I will be at your ſervice, as you ſhall be pleaſed to command me; beſides, you ſhall hear me ſing, and play in that manner, that you never heard a ſweeter voice, nor ſaw a better, or quicker hand upon a Virginal. Get you thither (my dear) whither I have directed you, that you may not be ſeen to have come along with me; for I am a married woman, of honourable parents, well reported of by my neighbours, and generally well thought of, and I would not willingly loſe their good opinion; yet you ſeem unto me to be a Gentleman of that quality and Nobleneſſe, that I would willingly hazard both my perſon, my reputation, and whatſoever elſe is dearest unto me, for your ſake. I believed her in all that ſhe had ſaid; and did now think my ſelf as cocksure of her, as if I had had her already between mine arms. I did as ſhe commanded me, ſtanding cloſe upright againſt the corner, where I continued from half an hour paſt eight of the night, till the clock had ſtrook eleven, and ever now and then me thought I had a glimpſe of them, and that I ſaw the bulks of them afar off, making towards me, but I might as well have ſtayed there till this day, for any coming again of theirs. The Devil a Miſtreſſe, or maid of them, that I could ſee any more. When I ſaw it was ſo late, and that they ſtaid ſo long, I imagined with my ſelf, that ſhe had ſome Gallant to her ſervant, and that ſhe being gone to his houſe, he would not give her leave to return. For the which I did blame her, but not much; for my ſelf would have done the like by her, if ſhe had come once within my doors. I perſwaded my ſelf, that ſhe could not help it; and that it was not in her hands to do as ſhe would: and ſaid to my ſelf; *Aun, ſirras buenas mangas, deſſues de Paſcua:* It is no great matter, A pair of ſleeves will not do

amiſſe

amiſſe after Eaſter. What is not to day may be to morrow: and as good then as now. There are more dayes in the week than one; as there are more fingers than one on the hand. Thus goes the world; one day follows on the neck of another; but it is the faſhion of it, To be all for the preſent. I took notice of the door againſt another time, and went walking along another way, as I was led along by my deſires. Anon after I returned thither again, whither when I was come, all was very hush and quiet; there was no memory nor ſign of any one body in all that ſtreet, nor at any door, or window, no noiſe to be heard, nor any noiſe, no not ſo much as of a Dog, or of a Cat that peeped out. I ſtood prying and watching from one ſide to the other; I fetcht many turns, I cought, hauk't, and ſpit; I made a noiſe with my feet, but all in vain, and to no purpoſe in the vvorld. In the end, having ſtaid there a great while, and being now grown weary with walking, as well as with expectation, I was reſolved to get me home to mine Inne, as diſpairing of any good hopes for that night: Which as I was about to do, I might eſpy from a little window a countenance, which by its interpreter, the tongue ſeemed to be a vvomans, who had thruſt out her head at a little window, whoſe face I could not ſee, or if I had, I could not give you any account thereof, for that it was ſo dark. I began to talk youthfully to her, (or rather fooliſhly, for ſuch kinde of parlees are but fooleries,) but ſhe told me that ſhe was none of thoſe I lookt after; marry ſhe had a maid that I might haply make love unto, that was a drudge of the Kitchen, and ſcoured her pots and her pans. But be ſhe as ſhe may be; what ever ſhe were, ſhe ſpake ſo well, and entertained me ſo for the time, that I quite forgot my ſelf for the ſpace of two hours that we interchanged talk, all that long while ſeeming unto me but one ſhort minute. But lo, (if it offend not thine ears,) whileſt we were thus pratling, comes out a deviliſh curre, one of *Belzebubs* whelps, which as it ſhould ſeem, flew eagerly forth one of the Neighbours houſes thereabout, and fell a barking and balling ſo loud, that it was not poſſible for us to hear, or underſtand one another: The window was high, the vvoman ſpake very low, there was a pretty freſh winde abroad, and the Dog did ſo lay on, and ſpend his mouth ſo faſt, that being willing to remedy that fault, I groaped with my feet for a ſtone, that I might throw it at him, and not finding any, I caſt down mine eyes to the ground, and I might perceive near unto the vvall, a little copped black thing, which I took to be a ſtone. Preſently I catcht it up in my hand, but it was not a ſtone, nor nothing ſo hard; but had quickly found that I had beſmeared my fingers; ſought luſtily to ſhake it off, and giving a flirt with my hand to fling it away from me, I gave my fingers ends ſuch a ſmart jerk againſt the vvall, that I was much pained therewith; and to eaſe the tingling that I had in my nails, I clapt my fingers to my mouth ere I was aware: but I forthwith repented me of what I had done. My often ſpitting would not mend the matter, and therefore I ſought help with my other hand from my pocket, thinking to take thence my handkercher; but there was no ſuch thing to be found. This ſtruck me in my dumps, and made me melancholly, to think how the ſcurvy harlotry had cony-catcht me. And I was ſo angry beſides, to ſee how my mouth and my hands were inammelled, that with very choler, my eyes were ready to ſtart out of my head, my guts were likewiſe in a good forwardneſſe to have leapt out of my mouth, being upon the point to vomit out of my ſtomack all that I had within me, as thoſe vvomen uſe to do, that have a fit of the Mother. And the more to anger me, this ſcurvy Cur did ſo perſecute me with his bawling, that my Gentlevvoman was forced to withdraw herſelf, and to ſhut to her window, and I driven to look out ſomething, to rid me of this odious and filty ſtink. I rubbed my teeth againſt the vvall, as well as I could, thinking that way to do my ſelf good. Well, when I ſaw it would be no better, I returned in a great rage to my Inne, with purpoſe to return the next night to the ſame place, to ſee if I could by chance meet with that good vvench, that hath ſold me this Greyhound.

CHAP.

## CHAPTER II.

Guzman de Alfarache *goes from* Saragoca, *and comes to* Madrid, *where he turns Merchant, and is married. He breaks his credit, and turns bankrupt. He treats of womens ſubtil tricks. And of the inconvenience of counter-writings; and of their remedy.*

AS ſoon as I came home, I got me to the Well; and feigning that I would refreſh my ſelf there awhile, (becauſe I would not have my ſervant acquainted with this diſgracefull accident) I will'd her to draw me up two buckets of water. Which when ſhe had done; with the one, I waſht my hands, and with the other my mouth, having almoſt rubb'd off the skin from either, and yet did not reſt contented and fully ſatisfied of my ſelf, I had taken ſuch a villanous conceit of this filthy odour, or rather ordure. I could not fall aſleep for my life, nor ſettle my ſelf to reſt all night, for thinking on that truth which the vvench had told me, that I ſhould never while I lived meet with a quicker, or a nimbler hand.

See now whether ſhe ly'd, or no? I am ſure I ſhall never forget her words, ſo good cauſe have I to remember them, for that which fell afterwards. The *Gracian Helen* (I aſſure you) nor the *Romane Lucretia*, cannot be more, or oftner remembred by others, then ſhe by me. And yet, when *I* was thinking on her, the others converſation would ſeek to put that out of my head, one ſeeking to thruſt out the other, ſo that I was as it were diſtracted between them both. I would have had them (like nails) to have driven out one another, that I might have heard no more news of them. And when I began to ſhut the door of my remembrance to theſe, this ſame ſcurvy copped pibble ſtone came flying in at a by-window, the very conceit whereof, began afreſh to turn my ſtomack. What a bad night muſt we needs make of this, having to do with ſo many? For if *Duero* did compaſſe me in on the one ſide, *Pennatajada* did girt me in on the other. But when my hat was come to its colour, and that I had conſidered a little better on the buſineſſe, I ſaid with my ſelf; If this poor trick (not for any great hurt that it did do me) but onely for that it was a trick put upon me) I can thus hardly digeſt, and that it makes my ſtomack to riſe, as oft as I think upon it; how will my kinde kindred in *Genoa* digeſt thoſe gud geons, that they ſwallowed? how broke that famous jeſt, which ſticks ſo cloſe to their ribs? If ſuch a toy as this, a meer trifle, not worth the talking of move my patience ſo much, how would it have wrought upon me, had it been a matter of moment? Thus did I paſſe away the night, thinking one while on this, another on that; what I ſhould do with my ſelf the next day, how to beſtow my time, what Cloaths I ſhould wear? or whether *I* were beſt to put on my great Chain, which *I* kept in ſtore for high Holy-dayes, and great Feaſts? what part of the Town *I* ſhould quarter out? what words *I* ſhould ſpeak, to move her affection? or what preſent *I* ſhould ſend her, to oblige her unto me? Then throwing all theſe things out of my minde, as if they had never been in my thought, *I* ſhould run by and by back again (like a giddy-headed Spaniel) beating and queſtioning upon the old haunt, ſaying to my ſelf: If it ſhould be my good hap, to meet with this young crafty harlotry to morrow, what ſhall I do unto her? Shall I lay hands on her? No: ſhall I take that from her, which ſhe filcht out of my pocket? Neither: what ſhall I do then? Shall *I* crave her better acquaintance, and deſire her friendſhip? Leaſt of all. Embracing therefore none of theſe, *I* adviſed with my ſelf, and ſaid; Why ſhould *I* trouble my ſelf to ſeek after her? To what end? *I* know the goodneſſe of her hand already, and how quick and nimble her fingers be, be it for Virginal, Harp, or any thing elſe that you will put them to, let her go; God be her good ſpeed; and much good may it do her with them. *Alla ſe lo ay Marta con ſus pollos*: I could wiſh they had been more for her ſake. Well may ſhe thrive with them. For if ſhe had not ſtood in need of them, and been in want, *I* aſſure my ſelf ſhe would never put herſelf to ſo much danger. *I* began to look a little better into my ſelf, and when *I* had well conſidered what *I* was, and knew mine own condition, and the courſes that *I* had run, *I* whiſpered my ſelf in the ear, and ſaid; what complaints will not the butcherly Wolf frame againſt the poor ſilly Lambe, accuſing him of troubling the water when he came to drink, that he might pick a hole in his Coat? A luſty ſtrong Mule can hardly carry the Gold, the Silver, the Pearle, the pretious ſtones, and the Jewels, which *I* had purloyn'd, and come clear away with them out of *Italy*, and yet ſtick not to finde fault with this poor Soul, for a thing of nothing, that ſhe took from me, being perhaps urged there-

unto

unto out of meer neceſſity. O the miſerable condition of men? how apt, and how eaſie are we to complain? O how much adoe doe we make about a little! How take on, as though we were undone! What a little loſſe, and what a deal of lamentation! O the immenſe and infinite goodneſſe of God! How much do we offend thy divine Majeſty! How little reckoning do we make of it! And yet how eaſily doſt thou forgive us our offences! What vaſſalage and baſe ſubjection is that, which men yield to their own paſſions! And becauſe the heſt of things, is the curbing of them, and to make uſe of them in their time and place; I know very vvell, and am able from thence to read this lecture, both to my ſelf and others; and vve ought to have as much compaſſion of thoſe that offend, as vve have cauſe to envy thoſe that forgive. For mine own part, I vvill follow this leſſon: Let her make her ſelf merry therefore with the money ſhe got from me; for I forgive her with all my heart.

Now whileſt I was thus diſcourſing with my ſelf, the day began to break. The light by little and little, had crept in through ſome chinks of the windows, when together with it, a little ſleep likewiſe came creeping upon my ſelf, being willing to have my ſenſes clogg'd with thoſe ſoft-lined fetters, in which I lay faſt till nine of the clock, and ſlept ſo ſoundly, that I could not ſay; This mouth is mine, Nor was I ſo glad that I had ſlept ſo well, as that I found my ſelf thereby the better diſpoſed to watch the night following, without being bound to pay that debt to nature, when my game was at the faireſt, if fortune ſhould chance to favour me ſo much, as to offer me a fair occaſion to finiſh what I had begun. I roſe up well ſatisfied, wiſhing the hour were come, wherein I might go to that deſired place. I made me ready and went to Maſſe, and viſited the image of our Lady *Pilar*, which is one of the greateſt devotions that is in Chriſtendom. I ſpent that day in walking up and down; I ſaw my Widow, who came to the window, to waſh her hands. I could have wiſht, that theſe drops of water, which fell from her ſnowy fingers, would have trickled down upon my heart, to ſee if they would have been able to quench the fire that flamed in my breaſt. I had not the face to ſpeak a word to her: No, not ſo much as God ſave you.

I ſtood leaning againſt the corner of a vvall, putting my ſelf in a good handſome poſture, looking on her with a wanton eye, a cheerfull look, and a ſmiling countenance. And ſhe likewiſe ſmiled, and talking with her ſervants, who attended there on her, after ſhe had waſht, they carried away the Towel, the Baſon, and the Ewer, which when they had ſet them aſide, they put their heads out at the window, and lookt upon me. I having received this favour, thought I had now brought my buſineſſe to an end. I ſtretcht out my legs and my breaſt, and lifting up my head, and bearing up my neck ſomewhat ſtiff, I made two, or three ſhort turns, throwing one corner of my Cloak over my ſhoulder, ſetting my hat on t'one ſide, laying my left hand on my ſword, and reſting the right on my ſide, treading my ſteps in ſtate, and turning my rolling eyes upon her, I walk't leaſurely before her window, my eye being never off on her. Whereat they laugh't a good; and I reſted well contented. They made themſelves merry, and I was very well pleaſed. I aſſumed ſo much liberty to my ſelf, and behaved my ſelf ſo boldly, as if I had already obtained what I deſired; and as though the doors and windows of the houſe had of purpoſe been ſet open for me to enter in. And all this while I was uſing this Courtſhip, and performing this my love-exerciſe, ſhe ſtood me ſtill, and did not once offer to wag from the vvindow.

Many Gentlemen paſt that way, well clad, young, able, and handſome; yet in my judgement, none of them like to me, neither in apparel nor perſon. In every one of them I could have found one fault, or other; but in me, there was nothing to be excepted againſt. One came ſhort in the handſom ſhape and feature of his foot; another wanted a well made leg, the Calf was too little, or the ſmall too big; ſome were too tall, & otherſome too low, ſome too fat, and others too lean: This, went a little limping; that, awry. All had one blemiſh, or other; I onely was compleat; I was I *per ſe I*; I was like a Rule, without exception. All in me, was in true mood and figure; in a full and perfect ſymmetry, having a juſt and even proportion of every particular part, in reſpect of the whole frame. And being of beſt both grace and favour in my perſon, I was graced and favoured more by her, then all the reſt: for ſhe did not ſhew them the like countenance, as ſhe did me.

Night drew on, ſhe left the vvindow, but before ſhe vvithdrew herſelf, ſhe turned her eyes towards me, and ſo vvent in. I hy'd me home to my lodging, being rich in hopes, and muſing upon that vvhich in this caſe vvas fitteſt to be done. Mine Hoſt came to me to keep me company; but becauſe I took no content in any thing but my contemplations, I intreated him to hold me excuſed, for that I had buſineſſe to go abroad. I ſupt, and taking my ſword vvith

me, I went out of doors in purſuit of my buſineſſe: you ſhall ſee how evil is mans inclination: For notwithſtanding that I had made, (as you have heard) that diſcourſe with my ſelf, in favour of that woman, which had cozened me of a few Royals, and had put on a reſolution to let it paſſe, and never to think more of it; yet my thoughts were much troubled therewith, and like ſo many Bryez, or Horſe-flies, did make me kick and ſtamp againſt my former determination, and would not let me be in quiet, but that I muſt needs go and ſeek her out. Whereupon I gave that night a hundred turns about the very ſelf ſame ſtreet, having a conceipt with my ſelf, that it would be my good hap to light once more luckily upon her in the ſame manner as before. But not knowing well why, for what cauſe, or to what end I did it, but walk'd idly there up and down, till the hour was come. I had waited long, & when I ſaw to what little purpoſe, I thought to make homewards towards my lodging: and as I entred into the *Coſſe*, by a croſs-way, right over againſt my Miſtreſſes houſe, I might diſcern a pretty way off, two ſeveral companies, one on t'one ſide of the ſtreet, & t'other on the other. Hereupon I returned a little back, and ſtepping into a porch, I began to think with my ſelf; I am a ſtranger, this Gentlewoman of good rank and quality, well deſcended, and rich withall. There is general notice taken of her worth and means. This fleſh need not to have been hung up upon the hooks for want of a Cat. No man will ſay that this was not a woman worth the looking after, but rather that there was a great deal of reaſon, that ſhe ſhould be wooed and ſued unto, and to be ſerved, and obſerved by thoſe that had the happineſſe to ſee her. Theſe (ſaid I to my ſelf) do not wait here to give, or receive an almes: I know not who they are, nor what they pretend; whether they be friends and all of one company, or whether any one of them be intereſſed here; if by misfortune I ſhould come amongſt them, and that they ſhould hedge me in the midſt of them, and make a ring about me, they would not onely muffle me with their Cloaks, but make me as full of holes as a Sieve, and prick me in the body with their Rapiers points, as Bulls are ſtuck with darts, when they are baited in the Market-place, and perchance leave me for dead. This Countrey is dangerous, the men bold and inſolent; their weapons of advantage, they many, and I a poor ſingle man. And therefore (*Guzman*) look to thy ſelf. And if they be enemies and have a minde to go together by the ears, it is not I that can part them, I ſhall never be able to make them friends, but indanger my ſelf & do no good. Go the world which way it will, fall back, or fall edge, the beſt courſe for me is to get me home to my lodging, I am ſure that is the ſafeſt way. And fitter it were for me to go to mine Inne, and look to my Trunks, and get me out of Town as ſoon as I can. For I neither know any, nor am known by any. Beſides, *a quien ſe mueue, dies le ayuda.* God helps thoſe that alter their evil condition. I betook me to my heels, and came in a trice to my lodging. As ſoon as I came in, I preſently got me to bed, where I reſted with much more ſleep, and a great deal leſſe pain, then the night before. For indeed, there is not any thing that doth ſooner thruſt theſe love-toyes out of our heads, then to ſee ſuch kinde of Viſions. Whereupon I reſolved the next day to leave the Citie, and ſo I did; By little and little I drew towards *Madrid*; And when I came to *Alcala de Henares*, I abode there eight dayes, for that it ſeemed unto me, one of the fineſt and pleaſanteſt places of any other that I had ſeen, ſince my coming out of *Italy*: and if the love of the Court had not clapt wings to my feet, I am verily perſwaded, that I ſhould have continued there ſtill, that I might have injoyed that freſh and delicate River, their plentifull proviſion, their rare and ſingular wits, and many other good intertainments. But becauſe *Madrid* was *patria communis*, the common mother to us all, and a large field wherein every man might range at pleaſure, I thought it no diſcretion, to forego the Sea, for a River. And for leſſer things, to neglect the greater. In fine, every man may there follow that which he hath moſt minde to. There no man knows one another: no not ſo much as thoſe that live within the ſame doors, and lodge in the ſame houſe. This drew me thither, and thither I came. The face of the Court, as alſo of the Town, was quite changed, ſince I left it. There was no Grocer there to be heard of; no memory now, that there was ever any ſuch man, I found the fields peopled with houſes, children become men, young folks grown ancient, the ancient old, and the old dead. The High-wayes turned into ſtreets, and the ſtreets altered in their bredth, and buildings; finding every thing in good order, and far better than when I left it. I lighted on a lodging, that liked me exceeding well; and ſo well that I ſtayed full eight dayes within doors, without putting ſo much as any foot over the threſhold, being onely tied thus faſt by the Leg, by the good company and ſweet converſation of mine Hoſteſſe. Who, beſides her handſomeneſſe, had a good faſhion of behaviour and pleaſing kinde of entertainment. She was diſcreet in her carriage, and at boord knew very well how to demean her ſelf. Thoſe few dayes that I ſtayed there, ſhe made me very good cheer,

and

and did with all poſſible punctuality ſeek to pleaſe and obſerve me, fitting my humour to a hair.

While I continued there, I went caſting up of my accounts, plotting and deviſing with my ſelf, what courſe of life I ſhould run, how, and upon what I ſhould live, and in concluſion vanity weighed down the ſcales. And firſt of all, I began my buſineſſe with gallantry & bravery; being every day more fine than other. I made me two different ſutes of Cloaths, with long ſilk ſtockings, of the beſt *Naple*-ſilk, neat ones they were, & ſtrongly ſow'd to my pain'd hoſe: And I took another ſute out of my Trunk for change; thinking with my ſelf, that being thus well clad, and getting me a good horſe, and taking two ſervants to attend me, by ſhewing my ſelf abroad in this good equipage, I might the eaſier vent my merchandize, and meet with thoſe that would buy theſe Jewels of me. I put this in execution, and began to brave it, and to ſpend liberally. My Hoſteſſe was not ſhort, either handed, or witted, but a gentle courteous dame: ſhe ſought in all things to pleaſe my palat. She had found out the beating of my pulſe, and needed not to be taught how to apply herſelf to my malady. It hapned that among many of thoſe her ſhe-friends that did often come and viſit me, one of them brought along with her in her company a young vvench, well favoured, well behaved, having a face like an Angel: and though ſhe were extream, both fair and beautifull, yet was ſhe far more wily and ſubtile, it was a notable crafty carrion. To this vvench did I make love; ſhe ſhews herſelf coy and diſdainfull; gifts molifie Rocks, and break the hardeſt ſtones in ſunder. The more I did regard her, and the more courteſies I beſtowed upon her, the more kind ſhe grew; of a Haggard ſhe became a gentle Hawk; and though ſomewhat wilde and ſtrange at firſt, yet now was ſhe taught to come to my fiſt; I could play with her, break, caſt her, and give her ſtones, ſo that now ſhe was managed, as I would have her. I continued this friendſhip with her for ſome few dayes, in all which time (as if ſhe had been ſome gutter to receive all the rain that falls, or ſome *Chimiſt*, or *Alchimiſt*, to melt a mans money, and to extract quinteſſences) there was not that day that paſt over her head, wherein ſhe did not beg, or crave ſomething of me; peeling, and polling me, as much as poſſibly ſhe could, carrying herſelf therein ſo ſlily, and ſo cunningly, as if ſhe had been a woman of much riper years, and well beaten to theſe kinde of buſineſſes, never a Courtizan of them all, could go beyond her. But ſhe was the better verſt (I doubt not) in theſe things, in that ſhe had ſo good a tutor of her Mother. Once (amongſt the reſt) I remember ſhe intreated me, that I would buy her a Gown of crimſon damask, which a Broaker had to ſell at the *Puerta de ſol*, trimmed with Gold lace, and richly embroidered; the price no leſſe than 1000 Royals. This ſeeming in her an exceſſive kind of liberty, that ſhe had aſſum'd to herſelf, to diſpoſe of my mony at her pleaſure, (for albeit, I was not a little taken with her love, and though I ſaw her craving nature, yet I had not dealt ſo ill with her, but that I had beſtowed on her above 100 Crowns one way, or other, and that if I ſhould ſuffer her ſtill to untap my veſſel, ſhe would ſuck me ſo dry at laſt, that ſhe would not leave one drop in all the Hogſhead) I would not give it her, but grew ſomewhat angry with her; ſhe ſets light by it, was offended with my denial, took it to heart, and thought hardly of me, and that I had uſed her unkindly. I would take no notice of it. The Mother and the Daughter were both diſpleaſed with me. I ſaid nothing, but lookt on, to ſee what would become of this buſineſſe. They came not at me, nor did I ſend to them. They entred into counſel with mine Hoſteſſe. The Wolf and the Fox, had both laid their heads together, how they might entrap the poor harmleſſe ſheep; and all three did combine themſelves againſt me. Now here ſee their roguery, and what a villanous plot they had laid for me. When I was ſet down to my meat when I was juſt in the midd'ſt of my dinner, not dreaming of any ill that was intended towards me, I might perceive all *Alguazil de Corte*, make towards my lodging. Who, when he came within hearing, ſpeaks out aloud, body of me; *Aqui morira Sanſon, y quantos, con el ſon*; Here ſhall *Sampſon* die the death, and as many as be here with him. My end (ſaid I to my ſelf) is now at hand. I thruſt the table from me, & roſe up much troubled. Then ſaid the *Alguazil* unto me; Pacifie your ſelf Sir, and reſt you quiet, we come not to apprehend you for a Thief. It cannot be for any other thing (thought I with my ſelf;) for he had nam'd the word Thief before, and I did verily believe that he ſpake in a frumping and ſcoffing kind of manner; and that for this cauſe he was come thither to arreſt me. That word ſtruck my heart ſo dead, that I was not able to ſpeak a ready word, much leſſe to ſave my ſelf by flight, but ſtood as ſtill as a ſtock. The Catch-poles had made good the door, the window was of the leaſt, and too high from the ſtreet from whence I could not go down ſo eaſily, but that they would take hold on me, ere I came to the ground; or if I eſcap't their hands, it was a thouſand pound to a peny I ſhould break my neck in the fall. At the laſt, for all my ſpirits were thus troubled within me,

I did (as well as I could) ask him, what was his will with me? He (having much ado to forbear laughing, and having no ſhare of the care that I was in) putting his hand into his boſome, pull'd out a Warrant, by vertue whereof the *Alcaldes* had commanded him to apprehend me upon the breach of that Law of theirs, *de violatione virginum*, of cracking of maiden-heads, and the deflowring of a Virgin. The Devil take thee for a wicked woman as thou art, and me for an arrant villain, (ſaid I) if I know what thou wouldeſt have or what thou doſt mean by this: and let me never live, if ſhe do not ly like an hundred thouſand Devils. I ſwear unto him, that it was a moſt ſinfull and abominable untruth, and a teſtimony as full of falſhood, as God is true. The *Alguazil* ſmiling upon me, ſaid, I believe you Sir, but told me withall, that he might not exceed his commiſſion, nor was it in his power to releaſe me. And therefore wiſht me to put on my Cloak, and to go along with him to priſon. Now I was in the bryers; I knew not how to winde my ſelf out of them; my final ruine was before my face; I had Trunks; what ones they were, you your ſelves can imagine; my ſervants not known, I lay in a lodging where they had made a bed for me, or rather a trap to catch me. I did fear this was but the Prologue to the Tragedy, that would come after, making this but a colour for the better cozening me of all that I had. If I left my Trunks there, they would have been as ſafe in the ſtreet; and if I ſhould remove them thence, I knew not whither to carry them; And to go to priſon is like unto thoſe, who go to play in a Tavern, that is ſeated on the top of ſome cold Mountain; who begin in Cards, and end in drunkenneſſe, falling aſleep with the pot between their hands. Thinking with my ſelf, that though I went thither for a trifle, I could not tell whether theſe Mole-hills would be made Mountains; and ſmall occaſions breed mighty inconveniences So that I was at a ſtand with my ſelf, and knew not which way to take. I took the *Alguazil* aſide, and intreated him as he did honour one onely God, that he would not be the inſtrument of my undoing. I told him, that wealth that I had, was like to run great hazard of being utterly loſt, and that he would be pleaſed to deviſe ſome means, that they might not do me ſo great a wrong; for that I aſſured my ſelf they had a purpoſe to rob me, and they were minded to make a ſpoil and prey of me, and that this was onely their intent, and nothing elſe.

He was an honeſt man (which was no ſmall good fortune, conſidering his calling) diſcreet, and courteous, he knew my innocency, as one that was well acquainted with the contrary parties courſe of life; and I promiſed to be ſo thankful unto him for this his kindneſs, that he ſhould have no cauſe to complain, or repent him of the favour he ſhould afford me in this caſe. He told me that I ſhould not need to trouble my ſelf any farther in the buſineſſe, for I ſhould finde him ready to ſerve me in all that he was able. He left his ſervants there to look unto me, and went to ſeek out the adverſe party, that brought him thither, who was in my Hoſteſſes Chamber. He went to and fro between us, with offer of ſuch and ſuch conditions, to accommodate the buſineſſe; and in the end, he threatned them, that if they would not come to agreement, and make ſome reaſonable end, he would ſwear the truth in my favour, and diſcover their cheatings, and their rogueries, if they would not reſt contented with that which was fitting.

They, when they ſaw how ill their cauſe was like to go with them, were willing in the end to put it wholly into his hands, and ſo this quarrel was ended between us for two thouſand Royals. For he having put the Mother to her Oath, ſhe ſwore that I had promiſed to pay for the Gown, and double the value of it in money, and that if this would not content her, ſhe ſhould have more. But ſhe I know reſted well contented, and was glad with all her heart, that ſhe went thus away with theſe two thouſand Royals, becauſe ſhe knew they were not due unto her. Well, I paid down the money on the nail, and we went to the Regiſters Office, and there had the bill daſht: So that the ſute was now at an end. It coſt me in the whole, a matter of two hundred Ducates; and within half an hour after all was diſpatcht, it was dark night. But I would not ſtay a minute longer in that lodging, nor would not ſo much as have ſet my foot within the doors of that wicked houſe, had it not been to have away my Trunks, and ſuch other things as I had there. Which done, I preſently parted thence, & went to ſeek out another. I was not curious, but took the firſt that came to hand, till I could fit my ſelf better, and meet with ſome quarter part of a handſom and honeſt houſe, with perſons in it of ſome worth and credit. I bought me ſome moveables and ſuch houſhold-ſtuff, as was neceſſary for my ſelf, and my ſervants, and provided me pots and pans for the Kitchin. Whileſt I was making this proviſion, it was my hap one morning to meet with the ſame *Alguazil* in the *Deſcalcas*, and after we had both heard Maſſe, at the ſaid Monaſtery, we talkt together, and I ſwear unto him by the bleſſed Sacrament, that was there upon the Altar, that I had never made

made any ſuch promiſe to that woman; he told me, Sir, not only in thoſe things which I know, but in thoſe which I know not, you might have ſpared this oath with me, much leſſe was there need of it in any thing of this nature; for this is well known to be a packt piece of knavery, and a plot laid of purpoſe to pick your purſe. I know this young baggage; who beſides this, which ſhe hath now put upon you, hath exhibited two other ſeveral bils in the Court in this kind. The firſt before the Vicar of this Town againſt a poor Subdeacon, who came hither about a certain buſineſſe; he was the ſon of honeſt and rich parents, who for quietneſſe ſake, was content (good man) to have his cloaths torn from his back by them, and being ſtript of all that he had, went away (as they ſay) in his ſhirt, they leaving him as poor as *Job*. Afterwards, they commenced the like ſuit here in this town, making a grievous complaint againſt a *Teniente*, who was a *Catalunian*, and exceeding rich: They firkt him too, and fleeced him as well as they could; but this man hath deeply ſworn, that he will be fully revenged on her. And now hath ſhe complained on your ſelf to the *Alcaldes*. And had it not been, that I held it the leſſer inconvenience to pay them that money, than to yield your ſelf a priſoner, leaving your goods (as they ſay) at ſix and ſeven, I aſſure you I would not have given way unto it, but have executed my office. But of two evils, the leaſt is to be choſen. For albeit you would out of doubt have been freed in the end, yet would you not have procur'd your liberty in haſt: for much time muſt firſt have been ſpent in the proofs, and then in the replies to thoſe proofs; whereas this way, though you were at an unjuſt charge, yet have you by this means avoided the priſon, your ſhackles, your Viſits, your Atturneys, your Proctors, and your Regiſters, bringing in this relation, and returning that relation; this information, and that information, all which is but vexation of ſpirit, and prolongation of time, trouble, charge, and diſcontent. The bargain was driven cheaper this way, and with a great deal leſſe diſtaſte. I vow this unto you, as I am a Gentleman, and an honeſt man, that in all the time that I have ſerved his Majeſty with this *Vare* in my hand, which is now going upon the three and twentieth year, and of all the caſes that I have ſeen in this kind, I have not known above three in three hundred that have been juſtly perſecuted in Court: For he that feeds upon that diſh, (unleſſe he have very ill luck) ſeldome or never payes for it. But when ſuch things come in queſtion, the accuſer hath commonly the better of the accuſed; the plaintiff will be ſure to fare well, how e're it go with the defendant; he hath that he looks for, he cares for no more; for it is in this, as at *Beſt be truſted*, amongſt Coſter-mongers, the firſt ſpeaker ſcapes ſcot-free. And theſe kind of people will never give over this trick, till they have lighted upon one unlucky bird or other, whom they may rob both of his credit and his money, or get them ſuch an husband as may ſupply their wants and neceſſities. It is like unto ſome botch or kernel, which firſt begins in the finger, but afterwards breaks out in the arm-pit: And the cauſe of it is, becauſe the delinquent either ſuddenly flies upon the accuſation, or is ſo poor a fellow, that he is not worth the looking after.

Theſe young queans, either walk the ſtreets, to ſee if they can meet with a good chapman, or drop into ſome friends houſe: or keep at home at their fathers or their mothers houſe: this or that other young man enters within doors, comes into the kitchin, where he hath opportunity to ſpeak unto her, and ſhe to anſwer him: They are all alone, the doors ſhut, time enough, will they want not, occaſion is offered, and she bargain driven. But this is practiſed for the moſt part amongſt the poorer ſort; and the party hath no ſooner the ſent of thoſe raſhers of Bacon, that are making ready for him, but he preſently gets him out of the houſe, and comes there no more. Now, when their parents come to know it, that they may not loſe the fruit of their labours, they give her an admonition or gentle reprehenſion. And afterwards they themſelves ſtand ſentinel, and have a neerer eye to the buſineſſe, and ſo order the matter for her, that ſhe may fall into ſuch a mans hands, of whom they may make profit of this their Merchandize. Whence, it oftentimes comes to paſſe, that he that is leaſt in fault, ſmarts moſt. Then ſaid I unto him, I pray Sir tell me, if theſe things never happen, but in ſecret, and unſeen, none knowing thereof but themſelves, who dare to ſwear, or can truly take his oath, unleſſe ſhe ſhreek and cry out, whereby it may appear, that he did offer her force and violence, or that the people came in, and found them buſling together, or in the act it ſelf? He told me, ſuch an oath is not neceſſary, nor in ſuch caſes do they put the witneſſe to prove, that he ſaw them together in that actual manner, for this were an impoſſibility, the buſineſſe being carried in that ſecrecy, as you propound it. It will ſerve turn, that he or they depoſe, that they were ſeen to talk together, or to have been in private together, or that he was ſeen to kiſſe her, or to imbrace her in his arms, or that he was in ſome

chamber with her, the door ſhut upon them, or that they had ſeen ſome ſuch paſſages, by which it might well be preſumed, that ſuch a thing was either done, or in doing. For what with theſe circumſtances and her own aſſeveration, ſtanding ſtifly unto it, that he had raviſht her, and forced her againſt her will, it being found upon inſpection, by a Jury of women, that her maiden-head is crackt, and that ſhe is no more a Virgin, this ſhall be a ſtrong and ſufficient proof againſt him. I my ſelf (ſaid the *Alguazil*) ſaw in this Court a very rigorous courſe taken in this kind, and one of the ſtrangeſt caſes, that *I* believe you have ſcarce ever heard of the like heretofore.

There was once abiding in this Town a very handſome and beautiful Gentle-woman, a ſtranger in this place, who came hither, (being baited out of her own Countrey) for no other end, than to ſeek out ſome means to live. She profeſt her ſelf to be a maid, and in that habit ſhe went a while up and down the Town. A certain Prince in this Court had a great mind unto her; he pretends and procures her love; he gives her a ticket under his own hand for to pay her eight hundred Ducats, in which writing ſhe would have it ſet down, that there ſhould be a reſpect had unto her honour, ſpecifying therein, that he beſtow'd the ſame upon her by way of dowry for her advancement in marriage. The Prince did not pay this money at the day, ſhe puts his bond in ſuit, he anſwers not unto it, ſhe gets out an execution againſt him, and recovers the money.

About ſome four years after (being favoured by a certain great perſon) ſhe provided the like pickle for another, that was a ſtranger, who having had ſome dealings with her, ſhe picks a quarrel with him, and makes a grievous complaint againſt him. And howbeit the defendant alledged againſt her the original writing, and the payment of the principal, together with the intereſt, yet they condemn'd him, and made him to give her full ſatisfaction, ſo that the poor Gentleman was forced to pay her ſoundly for her cut Melon, it was argued to and fro, that ſhe was, and was not a maid, but not to diſpute whether ſhe were or no: Sure I am, that ſhe recovered twice or thrice in Court that which ſhe never ſold, & in this manner did ſhe go away with the bucklers. And therefore (Sir) you have not been ill ſerved in this buſineſſe, but have well wound your ſelf out of the briars. For in good faith (Sir) the witneſſes did threaten you ſore, were violently bent againſt you, and ſpake very bloody words, (though the wench was not ſo.) And ſo we took leave one of another, he going his way, and I mine. I did much wonder to hear ſuch buſineſſes to be ſo carried. Inſomuch, that diſcourſing thereof with my ſelf, I began by degrees to fall into conſideration of the ſacred Councel of *Trent*, which ſo holily, ſo juſtly, and ſo lawfully had made proviſion for clandeſtine marriages; & by which there was a remedy found out for ſo many inconveniences, ſtopping ſo many gaps, and rearing up ſo many walls, to keep them out, and hinder their entrance. And I did likewiſe weigh with my ſelf, that if the ſecular power would (as in juſtice they ought) do as much in theſe dayes in ſuch caſes, (as mine was) I verily perſwade my ſelf, that there would not be the fifth, nay not the tenth part of thoſe lewd & naughty women as are now, (the more is the pity) every where abroad in the world, living to their own, & others undoing. For really and truly there is no ſuch thing as this *force*, which they did ſo much inforce (that we may ſpeak it under *benedicite*) but that which they call *force*, is rather an accord & conſent of both parties. Nor is it poſſible, that one man alone ſhould force a woman, if ſhe of her own will, or with a kind of unwilling willingneſſe, grant him not that which he deſireth of her. And if ſhe give way, and reſt contented with it, why doth ſhe queſtion & trouble him for it? And here I ſhall take occaſion to tell you a true Story, which happened in a certain place within the Signorie or Juriſdiction of *Andaluzia*.

There was a Countrey-Clown, a good honeſt day-labourer, that had a pretty young wench to his daughter, with whom a young fellow fell in love, that was a neighbours ſon of the ſame Pariſh; and in fine, having obtained what he deſired, when her father came to know of it, and that this young man had pluckt from her the faireſt flower of her garland, he made haſt to ſuch a Town (that was the Head-town of that Diviſion) to make his complaint againſt this his neighbours ſon. The *Alcalde* hearkened with great attention to all that he had ſaid, and after that the poor man had informed him at full of the caſe, and had ſaid all that he could, he ſaid unto him: Well (my honeſt friend) you complain here of this young man, that he hath tickled your daughter, and plaid the wanton with her, wherewith you find your ſelf agriev'd: Is it not ſo (my good friend?) yes, (and it pleaſe your Worſhip) ſaid her father, it is as your Worſhip ſaies, you ſay very true Sir. And I am much griev'd with it indeed, for that he did diſhonour my daughter by force. Then the *Alcalde* ſpake again unto him, & ſaid; Tell me (I prethee) how old is thy daughter, and how old is the young fellow?

My

My daughter (ſaid the father), will be (next Auguſt) one and twenty year old: and the young man (as *I* take it, is ſome three and twenty. When the *Alcalde* heard him ſay ſo, in a rage he roſe up from the Bench, and frowning upon him, ſaid angerly unto him: And com'ſt thou with this to me now? Have *I* nothing elſe to do (thinkeſt thou) but to hear every idle fooliſh complaint? He twenty three, and ſhe twenty one: Let me hear no more of this (my friend) go get you home, and reſt you quiet: here's a pretty accuſation with all my heart; one, one and twenty, and the other three and twenty, they might very well do the buſineſſe, they could not chuſe, but well and willingly go to it. If others in the like caſe ſhould receive the like anſwer, and that there were a Law made, whereby it were enacted, That no woman, from eleven years upwards, dwelling in a Town, ſhould pretend her ſelf to be forced; they would then be good perforce.

But upon this ſubject, may it pleaſe you to hear a ſingular accident, and a notable caſe in this kind, which hapned (not long ago) in one of the principalleſt Cities of that moſt noble Common-wealth of *Venice*.

There lived in that City an old woman, baſe in birth, and poor in her means, who had a daughter, that was very lovely, fair and beautiful. And becauſe ſhe had not wherewithall to marry her, this crafty *Gabrina* (being an old cunning Hag) deviſed with her ſelf to make ſale of the purity and virginity of her daughter, and that not once, but many & many times: & theſe her wicked proceedings did proſper wel with her. Firſt, ſhe would either be ſure to have that before hand, which they had agreed upon, and by the favour of ſome principal perſon, this or that other man, was fain to compound with her, and to make his peace as well as he could. One day amongſt the reſt, this handſome young wench being ſeen and well eyed by a young Gallant, and one of the principall Gentle-men of that City, a ſingle man, and exceeding rich, uſed divers means to win her affection, and in the end obtained his purpoſe, and after that he had enjoyed her, he did very liberally requite her for her kindneſſe. But the greedy old woman (who was covetouſneſſe it ſelf) thinking this Lordly gift too little, made her moan to a particular Gentleman, complaining how ill ſhe had been dealt withall.

He, as it were in a jeſting kind of manner (ſcorning and hating in his heart the vile and baſe humour of this wicked and accurſed woman) ſaid thus unto her: thou knoweſt *Lena* (for that was her firname) that the moſt illuſtrious and moſt excellent *Segnor Generaale* will ſhortly be here; and thou likewiſe knoweſt, what upright juſtice he doth indifferently adminiſter to every one, without reſpect of perſons, and more particularly in ſuch caſes that concern the good and honour of maidens. And therefore the beſt counſel that *I* can give you is, That you and your daughter *Ricciolina* get you both (as ſoon as he comes hither) unto his excellency, and plainly deliver unto him, how *Signor Conde N.* hath forced and defloured your daughter, and falling both a-weeping before him, ye farther declare unto him, that after he had had his will of her he was not ſo good as his word with her, nor performed the promiſe which he made unto her; which was, that he would either give her two hundred Crowns, or get her a good husband. And that therefore, ſeeing that he did not comply with you neither in the one, nor the other, that his Excellency would therefore be pleaſed to take this your wretched and woful caſe into conſideration, and to do you juſtice. *If* you can do this handſomly (as *I* know you are not to ſeek, & can do it better than *I* can adviſe you) my life for yours, you will have the day of him, and the buſines will go clear on your ſide. It was not long after, that the General his excellency came, before whoſe preſence theſe women being brought, they opened this their falſe accuſation. Upon which relation of theirs his excellency was much moved, and cauſed the *Conde* to be ſent for by one of his ſervants: who when he came before him, was demanded, whether at any time he had converſation with *Ricciolina*, the daughter of *Lena*? He without any more ado, ingenuouſly confeſt that he had. When he heard him ſay ſo, he beſtow'd upon him ſuch a loving & fatherly reprehenſion, that the *Conde* began to bluſh, and for very ſhame, could not for the preſent expreſſe himſelf, as he might and would have done in his own excuſe. Whereupon the *General* perceiving this his tacit confeſſion, cauſed *Ricciolina* to be called forth (who by his appointment ſtaid in the next room) and when ſhe was come, he gravely ſpake in this manner unto him; *Signor Conde*, if we ſhould puniſh faults with rigour, an heavy puniſhment would light upon you. But we, for that we love your ſelf, and all other offenders that come before us, as our own children, and taking pitie and compaſſion of your youthful fervour, and thoſe violences that accompany ſuch young years, we do pardon you that grievous and moſt hainous offence of forcing this maiden, as far forth as it may touch your life; but withall, we condemn you to

pay

pay the double of what you promiſed her, which comes to four hundred Crowns: which before you go from hence we command that you preſently diſburſe, and give it to *Ricciolina*.

To this the *Conde*, his bloud now waxing warm, which before was frozen, with that reſpect and decency which was fitting for him; replied thus: Moſt illuſtrious and excellent Sir, I have hitherto held my peace, it beſeeming me ſo to do, as one that is your moſt true, faithful, and obedient ſervant, and moſt ready to ſubmit my ſelf to any reproof or puniſhment, that you ſhall be pleaſed to inflict upon me, in caſe this their accuſation were true. And if your Excellency out of the greatneſſe of your wiſdom, ſhall be pleaſed to dive into the depth of theſe ſubtil womens hearts, and ſearch them to the very bottom, your Excellency will ſoon diſcover, how wickedly falſe theſe their accuſations have been againſt me. And though I have confeſſed, that I have had converſation with her, it was upon covenant and agreement between us, upon ſuch a price, which I punctually paid, giving her more out of mine owne bounty, than ſhe could challenge of me. Notwithſtanding, if it ſhall ſeem good unto you, that I diſburſe this money, I crave no longer time, than that I may go home and fetch it, wherewith I ſhall preſently return, and put the money into your Excellencies hands, to be diſpoſed of as you pleaſe; but not as in any puniſhment of any ſuch errour by me committed.

The *General*, having heard what the *Conde* ſaid, replied unto him, *Signor Conde*, goe and fetch the money, for I ſhall ſtay here till you come. And you *Ricciolina*, ſee you depart not.

Now, whileſt the *Conde* was going home, and returning back again, his Excellency went aſar off, asking this and that other queſtion: one while of the old woman, another of the young, and ſo talking to and fro of divers things, at laſt, he ſaid unto her; tell me (*Lena*) have you ever carried a good hand over your daughter? have you alwayes lookt narrowly unto her? Yes marry have I Sir (ſaid ſhe.) And did you never (repli'd he again) leave her all alone by day or by night? No Sir, quoth ſhe. How comes it then to paſs (ſaid his excellency) that you would ſuffer your daughter to be forced and deflowred by the *Conde*? why did you not defend her from that violence? And you (*Ricciolina*) having your mother in your company, why ſhould you let him force you, & take that from you, which (unleſſe you ſhould in ſome ſort conſent thereunto) it were impoſſible for him to get from you? Both of them, then weeping, ſaid unto him, that the *Conde* was too ſtrong for them, and that they were not able to reſiſt his violence, and therefore beſought his excellency, that he would not ſuffer her daughter to be thus abuſed, and both of them be left open to ſuch a deal of ſcorn & reproach: but that he would be pleaſed to do them juſtice.

By this time the *Conde* was come, and had told out upon a little table of Ivory four hundred Crowns; which by the *General* were given to *Ricciolina*, giving her this *Item* withall, Take them (daughter) and look well unto them, leſt they chance to be taken from thee. And you (*Lena*) have a care both of her and her money. And ſo God be with you, I have no more to ſay unto you.

When they were gone, his Excellency turning himſelf towards the *Conde*, ſaid unto him, go, get you after them, and ſee you take the money from them, either by love or force, by fair means or foul. And look that you give me a true account of the paſſage of this buſines.

The *Conde* hearing this, moved with rage and diſdain, ſeeing how baſely he had been uſed by theſe infamous women (not conſidering the condition impoſ'd upon him, nor to what end it was done) made haſtily after them; nor did he go alone by himſelf, but made choice of a ſervant of his (amongſt thoſe many that he had) whom he took along with him. And ſo walking a good round pace, he overtook them a little of this ſide their own houſe, & coming unto them, after that he had ſaluted them very kindly, and by little & little had inſinuated himſelf unto them, he continued diſcourſing with them, till he had brought them home. Where, as ſoon as he was come into the houſe, he began to demand his money of them. And when he ſaw he could not prevail with intreaties, he aſſayed to get it by force, & went roundly to work with them. But *Ricciolina*, who had put her purſe in her boſome, ſtoutly defended both it and her ſelf, ſcratching the *Conde* with her hands, and biting him with her teeth; who with all the ſtrength that he had, could not come ſo much as to touch, much leſſe to take the purſe from her. To make good this quarrel, the mother ran in, and took part with her daughter, and they did ſo help and aid one another with their nails and their teeth, and by their loud out-cries and ſhreeks; that although the houſe were a lone houſe, farre from neighbours, and little frequented, yet notwithſtanding many people upon this great noiſe and tumult came running thither, and amongſt the common rout, one Gentleman, who preſſing

preſſing in, and ſeeing the *Conde* all bloody, who fought like a fierce Lion, ſet upon by two rather inraged Beats, than women, what with his words, and what with his deeds, being aſſiſted by others, he parted the one from the other. The *Conde* was ſo overcome with choler, that he laid about him like a mad man, and had ſo loſt all patience, that doubtleſſe he had done much miſchief, if he had not been reſtrained by the company. He waſht his face and his hands, and having wiped them with his handkercher, he departed thence in company of that Gentleman, threatening thoſe women, that he would be revenged on them: who no leſſe offended than the furious *Conde*, made no long tarrying, but haſted with all the ſpeed they could to the *General*. But the *Conde* had got the ſtart of them, and was there before them, having fully acquainted his Excellency with all that paſſed, ſhewing the ſcratches and the bitings which he had received from them: who had no ſooner told his tale, but in come the women, unſheathing their malicious and ſharp-edged tongues, grievouſly complaining of the *Conde*, who was there preſent, declaring how firſt with fair and kind words, and afterwards by violent and forcible deeds, he would have taken their money from them, threatning beſides to kill them.

Then ſaid the *General* unto them: He hath not taken them from you, hath he? No (and like your Excellency) ſaid they. How came it then to paſſe (quoth he) that he took them not from you? They anſwered, Sir, we did ſo well beſtir our ſelves with our hands, our nails, our teeth, and the ſhreeks that we made, to call in company, that he miſt of his purpoſe and could not do it.

Very good (ſaid the *General*) and you *Ricciolina*, if your mother had not come in to help you, could you (think you) have made a ſhift to withſtand the *Condes* courage, that he ſhould not have taken the purſe from forth your boſome? Yes indeed Sir, ſaid ſhe: for *I* fear him not, nor any thing he can do, *I* care not a ſtraw for him, for *I* think my ſelf every way as ſtrong as he; yet is it not meet, that men ſhould come in this violent manner into poor womens houſes, to take from them which is none of theirs. Then (ſaid the *General*) you did both of you help and defend one another as well as you could? Yes Sir, ſaid they. It is very well (repli'd the *General*) I like well of it, and *I* muſt needs ſay, you have born your ſelves well in the beſineſſe. But where is the purſe? *I* have it here in my boſome, ſaid *Ricciolina*. Let me ſee it, ſaid the *General*. The young wench preſently plucks it out of her boſome. Then ſaid his Excellency unto her; Pour them out (daughter) there upon the board, and tell them anew, to ſee if you have all, and that the *Conde* hath not taken any of them from you. She did ſo, and found the number juſt. Whereupon, ſhe told his Excellency they were all there, and not ſo much as one Crown miſſing. Then the *General* (who was a a very wiſe and diſcreet man) perceiving the *Condes* goodneſſe, and theſe other womens wickedneſſe, ſpake and ſaid; *Signor Conde*, take you your money again, you have fought hardly for it; it is yours, put it up.

Then turning to this young Queane, looking ſternly upon her, he ſaid unto her, Thou lewd and filthy baggage, if thou hadſt defended thy ſelfe, as well as thou didſt thy money, the *Conde* could not have forced thee; but it ſeemes thou was very well content, that he ſhould have his pleaſure of thee, having conſented to his will, you were not forced (Minon) as both you and your mother have falſly accuſed the *Conde*, to whom we juſtly award his re-having of his four hundred Crownes. And as for you, get you gone, and let me hear no more of you, and be glad that you ſcape ſo, for if you were well ſerved, and puniſhed according to your deſerts, *I* ſhould ſend you to Bridewell, and have you well whipt, and ring your mother out of Towne, for an old wicked Bawd. The *Generall* having pronounced this ſo juſt a ſentence, the buſineſſe was ended, to the great contentment of all that heard it, and to his owne no ſmall commendation.

But to come into our old way again: No force of man can prevail againſt the woman that is unwilling. But ſay ſuch a thing might once in a thouſand years chance to happen; me thinks it is no reaſon, that a buſineſſe of this nature ſhould be compounded withall for money, much leſſe injoyn them marriage, (unleſſe he had formerly given her his word and faithful promiſe before witneſſes) but that in this caſe the fitteſt means were perſonal puniſhment, either more or leſſe, according to the quality of the delict, and that the cauſe might be handled before the Kings Atturney General, that there might be no hope of pardon left to ſuch boiſterous offenders. Aſſuring my ſelf that by this means, men would have more fear, and women more ſhame; & would not ſo often, as now they do, commit ſuch like ſins and treacheries as theſe. For, this refuge being taken from them, and having no hope of

remedy or help left unto them, they would leave this lewd course of life, and not be so hastie to undo themselves and others. If a wench go to it with a good will, why should she urge it was against her will? Or if perhaps she have not wherewithall to live, why should she pick a living out of such disgraceful and dangerous deceits? There are a thousand other, and far more honest for a woman to live by, than these.

But here pity (methinks) comes in, and pleads thus: Alack, poor women, they are weak and simple, and suffer themselves to be overcome through their too much facility and aptnesse of belief, and mens too much falshood in their promises; and therefore they ought to be much favoured & pitied by us, I confesse this plea to be true. But if they were either taught, or knew before-hand themselves, that this their facility is a fault in them, and that they ought not so easily to be won, they would learn the better to keep their cabinet close, and not to depart with so precious a jewel, but upon very good terms. And this foolish confidence of theirs hath undone many a woman, and is like to undo more, unlesse they look a little better to themselves. This destroying confidence of theirs is like unto faith without good works, which hath sent thousands packing to Hell. Let no woman therefore (if she be wise) depend upon mens promises, be they never so fair: for they promise with passion, perform with delayes, and seldome or never satisfie expectation. That woman therefore, I say, that shall trust any mans faith or promise, and shall upon such false assurance surrender up her Copi-hold into his hands, let her blame no body but her self, if she be afterwards cozened and deluded by him.

There is another kind of injustice in the world, somwhat neer in this nature, which would require some reformation. You shall (which *I* have seen oftentimes) have two fellow-servants lodge together in one house, who being agreed upon the businesse, and both very willing to enjoy each other, she (like a silk-worm) continues her three steps with him, till at last the Master comes unawares upon them, and takes them in the manner. Who thereupon laies hold on this his unfortunate servant, who neither tasted the cream nor the cheese of this milk, but onely that sowr whey, which is cast out to the dogs and the swine: he puts them in prison, where he keeps this poor soul so long, till at last growing desperate, he is driven to marry her, and the more to increase his misery, they condemned him in a pecuniary punishment, which he and all his whole linage, if they were sold to their shirts, are not able to pay. When he sees himself thus undone, being first forced to marry whether he will or no, and then to have all that little that he hath to be taken violently from him, and torne as it were out of the very throat of him, he goes one way, and she another. He runnes about the Countrey, and turnes rogue, and she stayes at home, and turnes whore. *I* pray see, what a proper marriage this is, what a wise and worthy sentence, and the great good that comes of it?

Or if there were some provision made for the reforming of this abuse, *I* doubt not but it would do very much good, and prove profitable for the Common-wealth. *I* paid the punishment of that sin, wherein I had not offended: and the price of that meat, whereof I had not tasted. *I* had provided me an house, put all things in order, and withdrew my self thither, with all that I had; for *I* was much afraid, lest I might be served with the same sawce by another Hostesse, as I was by this. And because I was likewise jealous, that the Collar and Girdle, which my Vncle had sent me, being peeces of that great value, as they were, might by the fame that went of them, come to be discovered, *I* was the willinger to retire my self to an house of mine own, where I might with secrecy all alone by my self deface the same, and so alter the fashion, that they might not be known. I did so, taking out the precious stones & the pearls that were in them, with the point of my knife, laying every thing aside by it self. I did put all the gold into a great Crisol, but not all at once, for it would not hold it; six or seven such pots being scarce able to contain it, which in the end I made a shift to melt; & preparing it with a little sublimate (for I had some superficial knowledge in that kind of Art) having all my tools and moulds in a readinesse, befitting such a businesse, I did (when I found my self best at leasure) cast the whole masse into several ingots or little bars of Gold. And *I* thought *I* did very wisely therein, lest by saving their workmanship, my self might have made work for the Hang-man; and by keeping them in fashion, been my self in no fashion: and therefore thought it better to spoil that, than that should spoil me. With these stones *I* began to turn Jeweller, first, informing my self very well of their worth and value, causing some of them to be set in Crucifixes, some in Rings, some in pendents for the ears, and other some in Jewels, as they would sort and fit best, differencing the setting, and inchasing of them, as I saw cause: so that of the same gold and stones, I made

made divers and ſundry pieces: where I ſold ſome for ready money, others *I* lent out at Weddings with good gain, and others *I* trifled away at dice, inſomuch, that *I* loſt little of that which *I* otherwiſe might have gained, had I preſerved their faſhion, and with a great deal leſſe fear of danger to mine own perſon. My ſtock began to increaſe apace, *I* knew how to ſell at dear rates upon truſt, and how otherwiſe to afford a reaſonable good peny-worth: *I* could tell how to turn and winde my money to the beſt profit; and *I* wanted no credit, becauſe I was fluſh of money.

There was cloſe adjoyning to my houſe, certain ground, that was to be ſold for the building of houſes upon it. *I* thought good to buy a plot thereof for to build upon, that I might have an houſe of mine own to put my head in, making choice rather of a litttle corner of mine own purchaſing, than to go every moneth chopping and changing of our lodging, lugging our bedding on our backs, and being at a continual charge in removing of our houſhold-ſtuff. Well, *I* agreed with the owner of the Land, *I* paid him his full price in good Royals, holding the ſame for ever, the Lord reſerving onely for himſelf a yearly rent of two Royals. *I* built a houſe upon it, wherein I ſpent before *I* was aware (and now there was no turning back) above three thuſand Ducats: it was a neat pile, handſomly contriv'd, and of good receipt, and ſtood finely for pleaſure and entertainment. There did I live, with that poor trading that *I* had, like a *Fucar*, and there ſhould *I* have ended my dayes like a Prince, if my hard fortune and greedy ill luck had not croſt me, by the unhappy encounter of a craſty knave, with a covetous wretch. For my houſe being ſo well furniſht, my perſon ſo well reſpected, and my reputation ſtanding on ſuch good terms, as it did, there was not a foot wanting, who had a moneths mind to make me his ſon in law: Who had a conceit, that I was all good meat, and that *I* had not (like the grape) ſome ſtony kernels in me, that were to be taken out, and thrown away, as good for nothing.

This alſo is another great folly (and I fear me too much in uſe) that men ſhould be ſo ſimple, as to marry their daughters to the ſons of unknown parents. Take heed, take heed, I ſay, how thou beſtoweſt thy child: think upon that old, but ſound counſel of our fore-fathers; *Al hijo de tu vezino, metelo en tu caſa*: Match thy daughter with thy neighbours ſon: Thou knoweſt his breeding, his diſpoſition, his behaviour; what his honeſty is, what his wiſdome, what his means: but never admit thou a new comer, or receive him for thy ſon in law, who is a meer ſtranger unto thee: For ſuch an one, though thou ſee him to day in his one houſe, may to morrow be led thence to the Gallowes, if he chance to be known, and found out what he is.

This ſilly fool was a kind of trucker of commodities as well as my ſelf, and birds (you know) of a feather, will ſtill flock together. He clung ſo cloſe to me, that he glew'd me unto him: he married me to his daughter, having no other child in the world: He was rich, ſhe was fair, and of a good graceful behaviour. He promiſed me with her three thouſand Ducats, and I was well contented with it. He, who was a ſubtle fellow, and knew the dapps of the world, and could wind a peny to the beſt advantage, had no ambition to ſeek any higher than to finde out a man of my making, that knew how to imploy my money to profit. And in this he had reaſon. For, better is a poor ſon in Law, that is a good husband, and knowes when to ſave, and when to ſpend a peny, than one that is rich, and a great waſter. And there is no wiſe father (I aſſure my ſelf) but would rather have a man without money to his ſon in law, than money without a man. This man had a wonderful great affection unto me, we were agreed on the point, the conditions were drawn, the writings ſealed, and the marriage ſolemnized.

Now I am a married man, now am *I* entred into an honeſt and honourable calling, *I* have a Miſtreſſe now in my houſe, well contented with her choice, much made of, and well ſerved. Some dayes paſſed over (which were not many) when as my Father in law, carrying us home with him on Sunday to dinner, after that the cloath was taken away, we three being all alone, he ſaid thus unto me; Son, being now growne old, and having in my life-time paſt through many troubles, and for that I ſee thou art but a young man, and ſtandeſt now but at the foot, as it were, of the hill, that thou maieſt get up to the top, with the greater eaſe, and that thou maieſt not tumble down backward, when thou art half way up, *I* will deliver thee my opinion, as one who is ſo much intereſſed as I am in thy good: otherwiſe, *I* ſhould ſave that labour, and not give thee any part of that which I now pretend to do.

Firſt, then I would have thee to conſider, that if thou ſhalt diminiſh one farthing of thy ſtock, which thou windeſt and turneſt in the world, it will quickly be conſumed,

be it never ſo great. You muſt likewiſe have a care to uphold and maintain your credit; And if you mean to be a Merchant, you muſt carry your ſelf like a Merchant, laying aſide all that which is not integrity and plain dealing, for there is no negotiating now adayes, but with it and with money; changing and rechanging, as the market goes, making, according as you can ſee the times are, either more or leſſe gain. I ſhall ſtand ſtill by you, and be ever ready to give you my helping hand, and hold you up the chin, that you may not ſink, if it be in my power to bear you up. But if at any time (which God forbid) the Dice ſhould turn, and that lucky chance which we look for, ſhould not come, take phyſick in time, purge your ſelf while you are in health, of your bad humours, and by a provident forecaſt prevent all future ſickneſſe. This, ſaid he, cauſed two bills of debt to be brought in, and two counter-bils of credit; and going on in his diſcourſe, he ſaid thus unto me, One of theſe writings ſhall be to this effect, that you acknowledge your ſelf to be indebted unto me in the ſumme of four thouſand Ducats, which *I* have lent unto you; againſt which (to ſave you harmleſs) I will make a counter-bill, wherein I will confeſſe a full ſatisfaction and true payment of the ſaid debt, in ſuch ample manner as you your ſelf ſhall be pleaſed to deviſe it. Both which we will ſafely keep to help our ſelves at a pinch, if need ſhould require; though it were much better, that no ſuch occaſion ſhould offer it ſelf, nor come (as *I* hope it never ſhall) within our doors. The other writing ſhall be, that I will procure my brother to ſell unto you an annual rent that he hath, of five hundred Ducats, *de juro*, and it ſhall be done in this manner; There will not one caſh-keeper or other be wanting unto us, who (out of the acquaintance and friendſhip that is between us) will be willing to make ſhow of ſo much money, to the end that the publick Notary may avow and teſtifie the payment thereof; or elſe we will take it there, and they ſhall lend it us in bank, paying for the uſe thereof fifty Royals; and when this bill of ſale ſhall be made over unto you in as abſolute manner as Law can deviſe it, you ſhall return the ſame back again unto him, giving him full power to diſpoſe thereof, and by a writing under your own hand, you ſhall acknowledge that this was but a feigned thing, put over to you onely in truſt, and that really and truly thoſe five hundred Ducats are, and were alwayes his, & that you can by no means pretend any lawful claim unto them. I liked very well of it, ſuppoſing it might do me much good, but could do me no harm.

*I* did as he directed me, who had been an old beaten Souldier in theſe kind of buſineſſes, had taken all the degrees of a cunning Dealer, and knew the true trick, wherein he was to trade, by which tricks and devices he had wrought himſelf into a fortune, and come to be ſo rich as he was.

This foundation being thus laid, I continued my trading a pretty while, being alwayes in all things very circumſpect and punctual: And becauſe I was not ignorant, that the credit of thoſe that are great dealers in the world doth depend much upon oſtentation, fair ſhows, and flouriſhes, I did make the world believe, that my houſe, my wife, and my ſelf were in a fulneſſe of plenty, and wanted nothing, that was for ornament or neceſſary uſe. And in particular, my word, in all my dealings, was like a clock, it ſtruck alwayes true, and never went falſe. My wife had a hole bored through her hand: all run out to waſt, that was poured into it; an augur had likewiſe pierced her temples, whereby her hogſhead had taken the vent of vanity. And I (kind fool) ſeeing the world thriv'd with me, and that my gettings were great, began to give way to her idle deſires, and to humour theſe her womaniſh appetites, giving her greater liberty, than in diſcretion I ſhould have done; and ſhe for her part took ſo much on the other ſide, ſtreching every inch to an ell, that ſhe ſpent exceſſively, and beyond all manner of meaſure in the accompanying & entertaining of her friends, in her banquets, feaſts, and other intermealary entertainments, beſides the great pomp of her apparel, jewels, dreſſings, and a thouſand other the like gallantries, with as many bobs and other dingle-dangles, hanging at every one of theſe, as the *Polypus* hath tales: All theſe things concurring with that dearth and ſcarcity which befell us in theſe our firſt years; and that ſmall correſpondence which we had in trading, it being a dead world, *I* began at length to know mine own weakneſſe, and was taken on the ſudden with ſuch a ſwimming and giddineſſe of the head, that I was ſcarce able to ſtand on my legs, and lackt little of falling like a lumpiſh piece of Lead, flat to the ground. So true is that ſaying;

*No man knowes, (ſave who by proof doth taſte)*
*What a good houſe, and a bad wife waſte.*

If

If now in theſe dayes there were made a Law, that whereas in *Caſtile* they allow the half of that which a man hath to his wife, in way of dowry; that the husband ſhould not onely give her that, but ſhould rather take ſome of their vvives dowry from them; they would then labour to get ſomething, at leaſt; ſeek to ſave what the husband gets; Whereas now they take no farther care, than how they may waſte and conſume what the husband painfully brings in.

When I was a ſingle man, I had vvealth and trading enough, to have made my ſelf a rich man in a ſhort time; but now, by having a vvife, I was grown poor and ready to go down the winde. And becauſe my Father in Law was onely acquainted with my book of accounts, and knew as well as my ſelf what was owing to me, and what I did owe unto others, and was true and truſty therein unto me. I could not want credit; and the rather, for that all men did verily believe, that thoſe 500 Ducates of yearly revenue were mine own. With this prop I bore up this burthen of my debts, till my back was ready to break, and when I could endure the weight of them no longer, I ſuddenly ſunk like unto a building that is raiſed on a falſe foundation. Now the time of my payments drew near; and though time of it ſelf doth naturally ſtill run along, yet to thoſe that owe money, it flies away with a ſwift wing, and ſeems ſhorter, than otherwiſe perhaps it would. I ſaw my preſent ruine before mine eyes, and was ſo perplexed with the very thought thereof, that I could not take any reſt, nor knew in the vvorld what to do. In this perplexity of minde, I got me to my father in Law's houſe, that I might break my griefs unto him, and communicate my cares with him; He comforted me the beſt that he could, and wiſht me not to be diſmaid, for that we had a ſalve for this ſore in our own hands, and that the remedy for this malady, was here at home within our own doors. He takes his Cloak, throws it on his ſhoulders, and away he and I go together, to one that was *Eſcrivano de Provincia*, the publick Notary of that Province, an eſpecial friend of his, and carrying him to *Santa Cruz*, which is a certain Church adjoyning to the Market-place, and ſtands right over againſt the priſon, and theſe Offices belonging thereunto, there we made in ſecret unto him a private relation, how the caſe ſtood with us. Then ſaid my father in Law unto him; *Sennor N.* This buſineſſe ſhall be many Ducates in your way; you know very well how I dealt vvith you in my laſt troubleſome ſuite, and how fairly things vvere carried between us on both ſides; and I muſt alſo truely confeſſe unto you, that by your good means, all the decrees and ſentences that vvere publiſhed in that cauſe, came forth in my favour, turning greatly (for the vvhich I muſt ever thank you) to my profit and credit, which makes me hope (preſuming upon your vvonted love) for all good from your hands. My ſon in Law, owes by a former writing to this of mine a 1000 Ducates, and this is already preſented, and diligences uſed therein in another Office; yet vve are both of us very vvilling, that all this buſineſſe ſhould be brought before your Worſhip, and that you ſhould have the ordering of it; in conſideration whereof, we hope you vvill deal vvell vvith us, and uſe us friendly, being ſo much your ſervants, as we are; for I ſhall not onely my ſelf requite this your kindneſſe to your own good content and liking; but my ſon, that is here vvith me, ſhall, vvhen our buſineſſe is diſpatcht, beſtow 200 Crowns on you to buy you Gloves; and I vvill paſſe my vvord unto you for him, and ſhall ſee you truely paid. The *Eſcrivano* told us; All ſhall be done to your minde, and as vvell as you your ſelves vvould have it. Let this bill, ſaid he, of 4000 Ducates be firſt preſented, and vve ſhall accord the debt for ten in the hundred, by means of a friend, to vvhom vve vvill give an account of this pretenſion, to the end that he may do it upon any reaſonable conſideration that vve ſhall give him, and for the reſt lay the care upon me, and leave it to my charge. My father in law preſented his own bond. In concluſion, I vvas carried to priſon, all my goods vvere ſeized on, my vvife ſhe brings forth the Indenture for her Dowry, taking ſo much Cloath to themſelves, that there vvas a great deal of ſtuffe vvanting to make up my Garment. But both of them, having poſſeſt themſelves of mine houſe, my Bills, and my moveables, there vvas nothing elſe left for me to take hold on vvith my teeth. And for my Jewels, and my moneys, they vvere ſold, and ſpent, and that little that vvas remaining, vvas too far out of my reach to come at it.

When my Creditours ſaw me clapt up, they came all upon me, entring their Actions againſt me, preſenting their Bills and their Bonds before divers and ſundry Notaries: But when this Bond of ours was brought forth, all were to yield to that, as one that commanded all the reſt, and had already paſt the Office, as being the moſt ancient debt, and therefore ought to be ſerved firſt. For the *Alcaldes*, ſeeing it was *res juſtificata*, a good and authentical Bond, and proved ſo to be, gave order that ſhould be firſt ſatisfied. When they ſaw

what an ill hand they had of it, and that they could not come to finger my goods, they presently went about to imbark those my 500 Ducates of an annual rent, before specified. But the true owner then appears, and defends his own right, my wifes Uncle claiming those as properly belonging unto him. Then they fell to Law about it, whose bills, and answers, together with other writings, processive, justificative, obligative, testamentive, partitive, acquisitive, renunciative, and infinite other the like, being as the body of a great Army, when they were all joyn'd together, came to no lesse than 2500 sheets of paper. Every one that came to demand them, for to carry them to his Advocate, when he saw, that he must, before he could have them, pay so much money to the Notary, he did tremble at it. And albeit there were some, that were at the charge; yet there were others some, who seeing that they were like to have a cold suite of it, and that they should but throw away their money in vain, would not be at the cost to take them out, but did rather desire to come to some indifferent terms of agreement and to sit down with losse, than to be at any more charge, and in a Cholerick humour, to cast the cord after the cauldron. They well perceived, that albeit they had taken out a Copy of the Processe, they were as far to seek of their money as before; And therefore seeing there was nothing to be got by the bargain, their losse remediesse, and their debt desperate, they did help to Negociate for me, and to come to composition with me. I demanded ten years term; and some of them were well contented with it. Then began my father in law to stir in the businesse, and because his was the greater debt, he wrought so with them, that the lesser debts followed the example of the greater, by which means I came out of prison, and was set at liberty, the *Escrivano* having well lickt his fingers on both sides: whosoever lost, I am sure he got well by the bargain. After all these storms, my ship, and goods sunk, I made a shift at last to get a land, I came swimming to the shore in a pair of linnen linings, being stript of all the rest, yet were these linings lined with silver. I had a great deal of wealth of divers poor men remaining still in my hands, who had trusted me with all that they had, being deceived by that credit which I had abroad in the world. I did in this, as I used to do in all the rest of my actions I was no changeling; onely I proceeded herein with a little more credit, and a better kinde of name, which my other had no colour for. For albeit this was no better then theft (to speak the truth of it) and plain robbery, yet I continued still with the name of Merchant, and not of Thief. By this, I got experience of that, which I knew not before. This roguish trick, till now, did I never understand what it was, nor did so much as once enter into the reckoning of it. This seemed unto me *cautela damnosissima*, a very hurtfull warinesse, a caution too too cautelous, which ought narrowly to be lookt into, and some good remedy in this case to be provided. For by these their Counter-writings, there is no debt certain, no assurance good, nor any true security to be had, being the most prejudicial thing that can be to a Common-wealth. For, from thence are occasioned most of your Law-suits; by means whereof, many of poor, come to be rich; and many of rich, to be poor; being thereby utterly undone, and driven to beg their bread from door to door. And it being the intention and purpose of a good Judge, to averre the truth between litigant, and such as wage Law one against another, and duely to administer Justice to every man aright; yet is it not possible for him in this case so to do, because things are so intricate and so intangled one within another, that they which are most innocent, are oftentimes most deceived, and by consequence most wronged. And the reason of it is, because when a man doth plot a deceit, or cozenage in this kinde, he goes warily to work, and beats his brains how he may secure himself, possessing himself before-hand of the ports and passages that lead unto the truth; to the end, that the way thereunto may be barricado'd and blocked up, that no body may come unto it. So that this light being taken away, the Judge remaineth blinde, and that mans false play, which is not yet found out by Justice, triumphs over truth, and goes away with the victory. *I* know there are some that will not stick to say, that your Counter-writings for Commerce and Negotiation are very necessary; but *I* must be so bold with these men, as to tell them plainly, that they are not. For he that is willing to help another man with his credit, let him stand (a Gods name) as a surety for him, and not as a Cloaker of his knavery. That which *I* learned in *Barcelona*, the first time that *I* was there, & now within these two dayes, since my return to *Italy*, is; That to be a Merchant, is a dignity, and an honourable calling; and no man can have that title, unlesse he be first presented unto the Prior, and the Consuls; where he puts in security to deal faithfully and truely in the trading that he shall undertake. And yet in *Castile*, where there is such a *Machina* of merchandizing, such a great trade driven, where there is contraction for whatsoever commodities,

modities, the huge ſtore-houſe of the Univerſe doth in a manner afford, they take this noble profeſſion upon them, when as they are neither men of ability, nor able to put in good ſecurity for that which they deal for; but are onely rich in ſhifts and tricks, and more cunning in deceiving thoſe, who give them credit, than skilled in an honeſt courſe of trading. Every one now will take upon him to turn Merchant; whereas in other parts of the vvorld, he that enters thereinto, had need of a good ſtock to begin withall, and a greater every day than other, if he mean to continue in that courſe. And if perchance it ſo fall out, that (through want of a ſtrong brain, or a ſtrong purſe, or both) their buſineſſes fall out contrary to their expectation, and ſucceed otherwiſe than their falſe imagination did ſuggeſt unto them, making uſe of theſe their Counter-writings, they remain in better and richer eſtate, than they did before. I need not to inſtance in particulars, becauſe it is exemplified unto us by dayly experience. With their breaking, they pull a great many others after them, eſpecially all thoſe that have truſted them with their goods; who conſume that little that is left them in ſuing for their own. And if peradventure they be Officers, or Husband-men, the Lord with his loſſe, loſeth likewiſe his part; wanting thoſe by this means, which ſhould follow his profit, and receive his rents, and his cuſtom; and the Common-wealth thereby robb'd of the travel and pains of theſe laborious and induſtrious day-labourers, and honeſt husband-men; who being buſied in ſuits of Law, cannot apply themſelves to follow the plough, and to manure and dreſſe their land as they were wont to do. Leſſe harm it were a great deal, that a few, and thoſe baggage-people ſhould not be rich, than that a great many good and honeſt men ſhould be overthrown, and undone by them. If it were not for theſe Counter-writings, and fraudulent deeds, men might more ſecurely truſt one another, and there would be much better dealing in the vvorld: For then a man might have certain knowledge of his eſtate and means, whom he truſts, without having other owners ſtep forth, and challenge all that he hath to be theirs. And becauſe it may be, that at ſome time, or other, there will be order taken for the remedying of this ſo great a miſchief, I will onely briefly tell the effects (that I may be as good as my word) of this harmfull cozenage, if they do not the ſooner leave off theſe their damnable fraudulent tricks and devices. For queſtionleſſe, many men would deal more honeſtly and plainly, than now they do, if theſe fobs and gigs were not put into their heads by others. And hence it is, that many things loſe thoſe good effects, which otherwiſe they would take, for that theſe ſtrange owners are not made known in time, who do not onely invent, but execute what they have deviſed, cheating the Creditour of that juſt debt which is due unto him. I cannot chuſe but ſpeak my minde; and if there be no care taken for the reforming of this groſſe abuſe, I cannot do withall. It ſhall ſuffice me, that I have herein ſatisfied that obligation and duty, which in this caſe is required at my hands. Let others likewiſe look to their obligations; and ſeeing, they neither vvant age, nor diſcretion to look into theſe things, let them not alſo be vvanting in their good vvill, to redreſſe that, vvhich is ſo neceſſary for the ſervice of God, and of their King, it concerning ſo much as it doth the general good of the Common-wealth.

When a poor Merchant is minded to enter into great trading, he intreats (for the increaſe of his credit) ſome kinſman, or friend of his, that he will make over ſome land of good value, or other his goods in truſt, for the which he makes him a Counter-writing, wherein he acknowledgeth, that notwithſtanding theſe parcels of lands, or goods ſeem to the vvorld to be his, yet really and truely it is not ſo, and that he ſhall be ready at all times to reſign them up into their hands, to whom of right they do belong, whenſoever they ſhall demand the ſame of him. And ſo with the credit of this ſeeming ſtock of his own, he gets farther credit of others, and takes up upon truſt, what he will himſelf. See now, what a kind of people we are, and what true dealing there is amongſt us! How like unto thoſe *Moors* and *Negro's* of *Chimes*, an ignorant and barbarous kinde of people, who with counterfeit beads, falſe ear-rings, bells, and other the like bables, which Children wear about their necks, do with the bare ſound, gay ſhow, and glorious glittering of theſe glaſſie commodities, coozen and deceive us. If their trading thrive well with them, it is well; for then the Creditour ſhall receive what is due unto him: If ill, they have a trap, wherein to catch their Creditors, and all goes ill with them. Then he that made over his goods unto him in truſt, comes by a Counter-writing to recover them, and all the reſt are defrauded of their due.

When a man will not pay what he owes before the day of payment comes, that this debt is due, the debtor ſelleth, or abſolutely paſſeth away all the whole eſtate in truſt by ſome fraudulent

fraudulent deed, or Counter-writing in that kinde. And it afterwards ſo falleth out, that before the day of payment comes, the debtor, who made this cautelous proviſion, dyes; whereby the true Creditor cannot come to recover his own. For the party, whom the Debtor truſted with his goods, doth cover and conceal this Counter-writing; ſo that the Feoffee in truſt carries away all his goods, and the Devil the deceaſed down to the pit of Hell.

When a man hath a purpoſe to deceive with his perſon, to get him a wife with a good Dowry, the better to coozen both himſelf and others, he runs the like courſe. He gets himſelf to be truſted with a great deal of vvealth; and anon after that he is married, his debts begin to grow upon him, and living at a greater charge than before, he is not able to pay what he owes. So the owner of theſe goods recovers their own, and the new married couple fall into want. This his coozening of her, coming at laſt to be known, their love begins to cool each towards other, and oftentimes they go together by the ears, for that the vvife will not conſent that he ſhall ſell away her Dowry, or any way be charged with her husbands debts.

All which inconveniences would finde a ſpeedy and eaſie remedy, if there were an expreſſe command given, that there ſhould be no ſuch kinde of fraudulent deeds, and Counter-writings at all; and if there were any, that they ſhould be of no force, or validity in Law, and that any Act in that kinde ſhould not ſtand good. And for the preſent, any ſuch deed, or deeds, to be publiſhed and made known within ſuch a certain time, upon pain of taking the others debt upon him. If this courſe were taken, men might then certainly know, what a mans eſtate were, and whether he were of that ſufficiency to be truſted, and to take up upon credit. And I dare be bold to ſay, that thereby one half of your Law-ſuits would be excuſed; for that moſt of thoſe, which are here in *Caſtile*, are of this nature, or at leaſt, have their ground and beginning from thence.

## Chapter III.

Guzman de Alfarache *proſecutes the ſucceſſe of his marriage, till ſuch time as his wife died. And how her Dowry returned back to his father in Law. He diſcourſeth of bad wives, and the hurt they do their husbands.*

READER; Haſt thou by this time conſidered with thy ſelf, into what a Labyrinth I was willing to put my ſelf? What good can it do me? Or why do I ſpend and conſume my time in vain, baſting ſtones with butter, and annointing flints with oyl, to ſee if I can ſupple them, and make them become ſoft? Doeſt thou think I ſhall make the Black-more white, by my often waſhing of him? Or doeſt thou conceive, that any good will come of that which I have ſaid? Will it bring forth any profitable fruit? I rather believe that I ſpend my breath in vain, beat my brains to no purpoſe, and loſe both my coſt and my labour, without receiving either profit, or honour thereby. For I know I ſhall be tit in the teeth, with that old anſwer; Why ſhould he give counſel to another, that cannot follow it himſelf? It would have ſuted better with me, to have told them two, or three merry tales, wherewith Miſtreſſe ſuch an one, and my Lady what you call (who are now quite tired out, and begin to nod, being brought aſleep with theſe fooleries) might have entertained themſelves, and paſt away the time. Me thinks I hear him ſay, who is now reading what I have written, that he will caſt aſide my book, and rather get himſelf into ſome corner, and there take a nap, than endure the trouble of hearing me talk. I confeſſe he hath a thouſand reaſons on his ſide, to do as he doth; nor can I blame him; for, being truely (as they are) truths, which I treat; they are not ſo fit for *entretinimiento*, as *ſentimiento*, entertainment, as the underſtanding; being to be reſpected more, for the ſenſe, than the conceit: Theſe are not things fit for laughter, and to make merry when friends meet; but are to be weighed with a great deal of ſtudy, and conſideration; and to be ruminated, and chewed over, again and again. But becauſe the purge that I ſhall give thee to cleanſe thee, may not ſeem loathſame unto thee, or that thou mayeſt refuſe to take it, *propter malum odorem & ſaporem*, for it is ill, both ſmell and taſte, let us gild over theſe our pills with Gold, to cover them with the pap of an Apple, conſerves of Roſes, or ſomething elſe, that may pleaſe both the eye, and the palate. And ſo I return again to the purpoſe, from whence I have made this digreſſion.

Now

Now did I begin to lift up my head again, and to enter afreſh into the vvorld; I had a new ſtock a going, the beſt I could make, though much leſſe than I could have wiſht it, and meaner than ſtood conveniently with my preſent, both neceſſity and occaſions. For to bear a good burthen, a man had need of a good back: and they who build Towers on the land, ſee them quickly fall to the ground. Thoſe that have a minde to marry, muſt have wherewithall to make the pot ſeeth. The good man muſt be able to give his wife a dinner: and ſhe bring wherewithall to beſtow on him a ſupper. There is more goes to marriage, than two pair of Legs, in one pair of ſheets. Four naked vvalls, ſix Carpets, two Table-cloaths, and half a dozen Napkins, are not a Dowry for a vvife, when at the firſt entrance into the houſe, I muſt ſpend upon her in Jewels, and other idle dreſſings, that out of which I ſhould pick my living. My principal was gone, and I was now in want. For, (as it is in the proverb) *Quien compra lo que no ha meneſter, vende lo que ha meneſter:* He that buyes that he needeth not, muſt ſell that he hath need of. What profit can it be for a poor Tradeſman, to trick up his wife in ſome ſix change of Gowns, wherein he conſumeth his main ſtock? Can he afterwars continue his trade with this traſh?

My Gentle-woman, my wife, was ill acquainted, and leſſe exerciſed in miſeries. She had lived well at home with her father, ſhe knew not there what want meant, but had the vvorld at will, there was not that dainty ſhe deſired, which ſhe had not; but now in my houſe ſhe had nothing leſſe, though as long as my wealth laſted, ſhe lacked not any thing, that ſhe had a minde unto. But being not able any longer to hold out, ſhe was forced to work and ſweat for her living, and being not uſed heretofore to take pains, it ſeemed the harder unto her to endure it. With that little, which was now remaining unto me, I began to buy at dear rates upon credit, and to ſell good cheap for ready money, *ſicut erat in principio.* I ſtood ingaged, and my father in Law bought the wares. I could have wiſht the ballance had weighed the contrary way. And theſe commodities that we dealt for, never went out of the houſe. Our ordinary wares, were Gold threed, and ſometimes wrought plate and Jewels of Gold, handſomly ſet forth, curiouſly inchaſed, and for the faſhion exceeding neat and delicate: Some other things we had of little, or no value, old moth-eaten ware, which lay upon our hands, & could not be rid away, which were bought at a far leſſer price. And thus out of thoſe ſmall gains that we made, we rubb'd out, and made a ſhift to live as well as we could. But all was little enough to bring the vvorld about, becauſe our ſtock was ſo little: and ſo by little and little, we went eating of it out, it conſuming by degrees. And for all we were brought to this low ebbe, my vvifes Dowry was never ſo much as once touched, or fingred by me, that ſtood ſtill on foot, being laid out upon poſſeſſions, which my wife would never conſent ſhould be medled with: I could as well take the Moon in my teeth, as to come to lay hold on them; nay, I could not ſo much as have a ſight of them. Theſe our commodities, we did deliver forth upon credit for four moneths; with condition to have a fifth part of the gains. And the *Eſcrivano* (whom he had ready upon all occaſions, to ſerve our turns) did alwayes make teſtification of the conſigning over theſe commodities; which goods a Broaker preſently took into his hands, who made up the third perſon in theſe our dealings, and was all one as it were with my ſelf and the *Eſcrivano*. And having them in this manner made over unto him, within ſome two hours after he would bring the money to its owner, to ſuch loſſe, as he himſelf ſhould ſay they were ſold (as was ordred between us) though they had not ſold one peny-worth of them, but had them ſtill in ſafe cuſtody, and were never ſo much as once removed out of the houſe. We made up the money amongſt us: He received an acquittance for his diſcharge, and there was an end of this buſineſſe.

It was a common trick amongſt us, to make uſe of a moſt cunning and ſubtill ſtratageme, to the end that none might eſcape our fingers, by alledging his Gentility, or any other exception that might beſtead him, or free him from arreſt. When we were to furniſh any man, vve vvould firſt inform our ſelves, vvhether he had the means to pay us; & knowing him to be a ſufficient man, and that he took up ſuch, or ſuch commodities, onely to ſupply his preſent occaſions, vve did vvillingly give him credit: howbeit, it vvould ſometimes ſo fall out, that vve ſhould come ſhort of this our reckoning, and thoſe men fail us, vvhom vve thought to be very good men, and of good vvealth. But vvhen vve had no perfect knovvledge of the party, and that it did not ſort to our purpoſe, vve vvould demand a Surety, together vvith the morgage of ſome houſe, or piece of land, for default of payment. And howbeit, vve knew well enough, that this houſe, or land, thus morgaged, was none of his, and that whatſoever that he had was extended already for the payment of his debts, and that he had not ſo much as a tyle, or brick that was in it, which was not indebted in a Crown, yet we did not ſtand ſo much upon that,

nor was this the thing that we did much care for, and were willing it ſhould be rather ſo than otherwiſe: But that which we did aim at was this, To draw him to acknowledge by a writing under his own hand, that this Houſe, or Land, was his own fee-ſimple, free from all kinde of incumbrances, morgages, ſeſſings, rents, feoffements of truſt, or otherwiſe obliged for any other debt whatſoever. And with this aſſurance, when the time of payment was come, if he brake his day with us, we had an *Alguazil* ſtill at hand, with whom we were in league, who made him to give us ſo much for every tenth part that we delivered unto him, and ſo we preſently came upon the back of him, putting our bond in execution.

And if at any time they would oppoſe the Arreſt, or did offer to make any reſiſtance for to eſcape the hands of Juſtice, that he might not pay the debt; then came we upon him another way, bringing a criminal action againſt him, and making a diligent ſearch and enquiry into his eſtate, we would prove that it was not extended to its true valüe; that there was ſome *legger-demayn* uſed therein, and that he had dealt falſly and deceitfully to defeat his Creditors, laying to his charge many other miſdemeanours. And thus did we make ſure work for our ſelves, whileſt the poor man ſlipt down the hill, without being able to recover himſelf, or to ſtay the force of his ſudden falling. Uſing this precaution, we play'd upon ſure Cardes, and without this proviſion made before-hand, we ſeldom prevailed in our buſineſſes. Whether this kinde of dealing were lawfull, or no, I know what I know; but we ran the ſame courſe we ſaw others run before us, we did no more than what others did, our conſciences were ſeared, ſo that we had no great ſenſe, or feeling of it. I well wot, that all the while I continued this wicked courſe of life, I did never truely confeſſe my ſins, and if I did come to confeſſion, I did not do it as I ought to have done, and performed that duty for no other cauſe in the vvorld, but to ſatisfie the Pariſh, and to avoid excommunication.

Wilt thou ſee whether it be ſo, or no? Conſider whether I ever promiſt to make reſtitution, whenſoever it ſhould be in my power to do it? Or whether I had likewiſe a purpoſe to amend my lewd and wicked life, when at that time there were fifteen, twenty, or more bonds afoot of the like nature; and yet did I never go my ſelf, nor uſe any diligence by others, to acquaint thoſe that were thus bound, that ſuch and ſuch a bond was unlawfull, and that I had grated upon them with a griping and biting Uſury; and that for to clear my conſcience, and that I might worthily receive the bleſſed Sacrament of the Communion, I would abate them of the over-plus, and make good all that which I had wrongfully and unlawfully taken from them? And how that I would reſtore unto them beſides, all that which I had, for that it was all ſtoln, and had nothing that I could juſtly and truely ſay was mine own. And if afterwards, when they came to pay me, I had no relenting in me, nor did not return them any thing back again, what an intention muſt this be? Certainly as bad as bad may be. This truely is that which I ought to have done, but I did it not, nor is it in uſe now-adayes to do ſuch good things as theſe. God (if it be his will) give us a due acknowledgement of our ſins. And I verily perſwade my ſelf, that if then at that time I had finiſhed this my life, my Soul had aſſuredly gone down to Hell, and been condemned to fry in that eternal fire.

O your Uſurers, they are a wicked generation of Vipers: they have neither any conſcience nor any fear of God. O what a brave, and what a ſure mark is this to ſhoot at! How near am I now to the drawing of mine arrow up to the head? And how do theſe trayterous villains, the Caterpillars of a Common-wealth, ſtand peeping and watching to ſee how, and where, I mean to hit? O what a temptation do I feel, what a ſtrugling do I finde in my ſelf, and what adoe to pull in this hand and arm of mine, from letting fly a whole ſheaf of arrows at them, and ſo to wound and gall them on all ſides, that I leave no part about them untoucht, and no bone in their whole body unbroken. For, in regard that I am (as they ſay) *Ladron de caſa*, an houſe-thief, one of the ſame ſtamp, I know them as well as they know themſelves, & am not onely acquainted with their actions, but even with their very thoughts, and ſecrets of their hearts. Will you give me leave to give them a gentle nip, and that I make them to ſee their own perdition, and put them into ſuch a great confuſion, that they ſhall not know in the vvorld what to do with themſelves. I know that you will not, and I alſo know why you will not.

But if I ſhall ſpeak the truth, I muſt plainly tell you, Riches are the cauſe of all this. But when they are ill gotten, in what miſery lives the Soul of ſuch an one? Certainly it is in a very bad caſe. And hence it cometh to paſſe, that covetous men too much devoted unto riches, incur infinite troubles, perils, and hazards. And therefore to free himſelf from this

this danger, & the better to ſecure himſelf, *Crates* the *Thebane*, that moſt famous Philoſopher, with an undaunted courage, bound up in one pack, or fardel together all the Gold, and other ſuch precious Jewels as he had, and with great fury threw them into the Sea, ſaying; get you gone, O ye riches, into the bottom of the Sea, leſt you drench me in the deep. I had rather drown you, than you ſhould drown me. But this great Philoſopher (by his leave) did herein (me thought) very ill. Much better had he done, if he had diſtributed theſe his goods amongſt the poor: but in doing that which he did, he gave us thereby to underſtand the great trouble that Gold brings with it; ſo that to him it ſeemed a far leſſer inconvenience to remain poor, than to live in ſo many griefs and afflictions, as riches occaſion in thoſe that poſſeſſe them. What other thing is it to enter with conſideration into the minde of the rich, than to enter into a fearfull priſon, where within we ſee men impriſoned, laden with irons, bound with chains, fettred, manacled, and girt about the neck with collars of iron, wherewith they are brought before the Judge? And how many then are the afflictions, and the torments of theſe, miſerable and wretched men, thus incarcerated, and compaſſed in with ſtrong vvalls, and hard chains? And how much more are they oppreſſed, and how much heavier are their ſhackles, who love riches, and thoſe moſt bound, who moſt abound in them? And as there is more compaſſion had of thoſe which are in theſe miſeries, and are thus faſt bound, and painfully laden with bolts, manacles, collars, and chains of iron about their feet, hands, necks, and their whole body throughout: So much more pity is there to be taken of the rich, and ſee how much the richer he is, and the more wealth he hath about him, and all thoſe good things which his heart deſireth, yet for all this are we not to account him a rich and wealthy man, but rather wretched and unfortunate: For beſides the priſon, wherein he lives (miſerable as he is) he findes himſelf attended and guarded with a barbarous and cruel keeper, which is the *Love* of riches. And if it ſo happen, that thou fall at any time into their hands, there is no getting out of their clutches: but that they may keep thee ſafe, when they have thee, and that thou mayeſt not eſcape from them, they will have three, or four ſtrong doors ſhut upon thee, and as many great chains to make all ſure, beſides locks and keyes, with I know not how many double wards and bits, that all the pick-locks in the vvorld, that ever have been, ſhall, or will be, ſhall not be able to open theſe doors, and ſet them free from thence. And yet theſe wretched creatures are ſo blinded in the pleaſure which they take in this their impriſonment, that they never think upon it, nor ſeek to get out, but are content to continue in it all the dayes of their life.

*Bonaventure* ſaith, that he, who hath once ſet his affection on Gold, can hardly withdraw his love from it. King *David* ſaith, That our Soul cleaveth unto the duſt, and that our belly traileth on the ground, and is as it were faſtned and glued to the earth: Unfolding thereby the affection which we have to theſe earthly things. For ſeldom, or never are riches poſſeſſed without a mans ſetling his affection on them, it being ſo eaſie a thing to have it wedged to the things of this vvorld. And by ſo much the more, by how much the more ſtrongly the heart of man is knit unto them. The *Gloſſe* ſaith, That with difficulty we deſpiſe them; and with loathneſſe leave them. But the ſafeſt and ſureſt way is, neither to love them, nor to keep them. And therefore that Kingly Prophet ſaid, If riches encreaſe, ſet not thine heart upon them. True it is, that they are as hurtfull for the Soul, as dangerous for the body. And therefore our Saviour *Chriſt*, much pitying and lamenting thoſe who poſſeſſing them, did heartily love them; ſaid: Woe unto you that are rich, for ye have already received your comfort. And Saint *James* likewiſe with a great deal of grief and ſorrow, doth bewail and lament theſe kinde of men, ſaying; Go to now ye rich men, weep and howl for the miſeries that ſhall come upon you: your riches are corrupted, and your garments moath-eaten: your Gold and Silver is rankred, and the ruſt of them ſhall be a witneſſe againſt you; and ſhall eat your fleſh, as it were fire: you have heaped treaſure together for the laſt dayes. Behold, the hire of the Labourers which have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, cryeth: And the cries of them which have reaped, are entred into the ears of the Lord of Sabbath. Ye have lived in pleaſure on the earth, and been wanton; ye have nouriſhed your hearts, as in a day of ſlaughter. Ye have condemned and killed the juſt, and he doth not reſiſt you. Bemoan therefore the miſeries wherein you are, for your riches ſhall end in anguiſh and vexation of ſpirit, and all your comforts ſhall forſake you: you ſhall ſleep your ſleep, and when you awake finde your hands empty.

*David* ſaith, Rich men turn fools through their too much vvealth: they become ambitious and vain, they give themſelves over to a thouſand vices; they ſuffer a thouſand ſharp journeyes, and as many troubleſome toylings, for to get riches; which when they have got,

they have a dayly fit of fear and trembling, leſt they may chance to loſe them. The imagination of their loſſe cauſeth extream ſorrow in them: their brains are ſtill working, and their underſtanding never takes any reſt. For, (as our Saviour ſaid;) Where a mans treaſure is, there alſo is his heart. O wretched man, thou doſt not any thing in this vvorld, that is ſo bad for thee, as the love of money! For they, that ſeek to make themſelves rich, fall into a thouſand temptations, and into as many ſnares, which the Devil hath laid to intrap them. For the root of all evil is covetouſneſſe. This cauſeth us to commit Sacriledges, Theſts, Murders, Rapineſſe; it is the author of Symony, the cauſer of uſuring, contracts of ungodly gain, and a thouſand deceits, and frauds of breakings, both in our deeds, and in our words of perjuries, and perverting of Juſtice. O what an unquenchable fire is the deſire of riches! O how inſatiable is this our luſt, but much more inſatiable our will! Tell me (he that can) who did ever yet ſee the rich man ſatisfied? Who, hear him ſay, That he had now enough? For, when he hath got what he deſired, he hath no ſooner obtained it, but he is as greedy as he was before; like unto your hungry Curs, who when you throw them one morſel, ſtand gaping for another. His end is alwayes on that he deſireth, forgetting how full he is, and the ſtore of vveakh that he poſſeſſeth. The eye of a lover is never ſatisfied with looking; And the covetous minde hath never money enough. But (which is a curſe that accompanieth the covetous) he that loves riches, never reaps the fruits of them. Hell is never ſatisfied with the ſwallowing down of Souls; neither the eyes, nor heart of the covetous with riches. For theſe wicked men have two horſe leaches belonging unto them, which alwayes cry, give me here, and give me there; let more and more come in ſtill. By ſo much the more the love of money encreaſeth, by how much the more our money encreaſeth. O what a falſe and unfortunate felicity is that of riches! Becauſe it maketh him truely unhappy, who doth not truely poſſeſſe them.

The poor man lives more contented with that little which he hath; than the rich man that walloweth in his vvealth. O how many have been deceived with the deſire of riches! *Balaam*, hearing the ringing and ſound of money, which King *Balack* offered unto him, fell into deſpair, and had a miſerable end. *Achan*, being deſirous of a rich rayment, and a wedge of Gold, was ſlain, and ſtoned to death, together with all his family. King *Achab*, out of the deſire he had to have *Naboth's* Vineyard, was the occaſion of *Naboth's* death, who by *Jeſabels* order, vvife unto *Ahab*, was ſtoned to death: For which evil fact, *Ahab* was deprived of his life, and his Kingdom; and his wicked wife *Jeſabel*, the inventer of this villany, devoured of Dogs. *Gehezi*, out of a deſire to be rich, received ſo many changes of rayment, for which he was cloathed all his life-time with a moſt loathſome leproſie. *Judas*, to get thirty pieces of ſilver, loſt his Apoſtleſhip, and his body, together with his Soul, by becoming his own executioner. *Ananias* and *Saphyra*, out of greedineſſe of gain, were ſuddenly ſtrucken dead. If thou wilt be rich, thou ſhalt not be without ſin: for ſuch is their miſerable and unhappy condition.

Moreover, it induceth men to embrace vice, and to abandon vertue; it falling out for the moſt part, that where there is abundance of riches, there is abundance of pleaſures, and ſenſual delights, and of evil company, which are often an occaſion of infinite infamies, and wicked actions, with great offence to the Majeſty of God. The rich think that God hath no power over them; but they are much deceived; who with open eyes ſee themſelves carried headlong into Hell. And this misfortune befals them, becauſe the fear of God is not before their eyes; and for that they love not their Neighbour as they ought; But rather on the contrary, love their riches better than themſelves; nay, more than their own Souls. O miſerable and unhappy men as you are! look, and diligently conſider that which hapned unto *Lazarus*, that poor begger, who received more contentment in that his extream poverty, and in thoſe his rags and ſtinking ſores, living in the fear of the Lord, than in any other thing in this vvorld; by means whereof, he came to enjoy thoſe rich treaſures of Heaven, and the continual and eternal viſion of his God. For a man to make himſelf rich, it is a dangerous thing, for before ever he is awake, he draws upon him an infinite of all kinde of troubles and miſeries. It is a wonder to ſee at how dear a rate they buy Hell, who pretend to be rich; ſeeing with how many reſtleſſe travels they purchaſe eternal torments.

Wicked and vvorldly-minded men, for a little vain-glory, or rather a ſmoke that ſuddenly vaniſheth, care not how many tribulations they undergo, for love of this, they ſubmit themſelves willingly to infinite ſufferings, toyls, and ſweats, and voluntary ſtoop their neck to the heavy yoke of ſo many woes. And why do they this? Onely for a little muck. So that your rich men take a great deal delight in ſuffering annoyances, afflictions, tribulations, toilings,

ings, turmoilings, travels, troubles, uſing diligences, ſolicitudes, and placing all their care and their ſtudy, in getting wealth, and with it Hell. By which their carke, pains-taking and ſweats of blood, they gain unto themſelves eternal damnation. Do ye not perceive (ye wretches) that how much the more care ye take in hoording up of riches, ſo many the more theeves and murderers you provide for your ſelves, that may rob you, and cut your throats? Whence it alſo cometh to paſſe, that they who did commit theſe outrages againſt you, are likewiſe for this their wickedneſſe whipped, ſent to the Galleys, if not to the Gallowes, and there hanged and quartered.

That man is a fool, that boaſteth himſelf of his riches; For why ſhould any man glory in that, which takes away the ſafety of his life? Riches deprive us of our liberty. We ſhould be our own, if theſe were not our maſters. Riches take not away want, but occaſion; draw not content, but withdraw it from us. They are maſſed up with trouble, poſſeſſed with fear, and forgone with ſorrow. The rich man therefore had need of many things, and muſt ſubmit himſelf to many baſeneſſes and vile indecencies, being that he is evermore beſieged and aſſaulted with fears, jealouſies, and ſuſpitions. They are full of perturbation and confuſion; the common ſubject of murmuring and repining. They ſcratch and ſcrape all that they can wrap and wring from others. They are daily more and more inflamed with the deſire of getting. In a word, they will commit any wickedneſſe, or villany whatſoever, ſo as they may be ſure to get by the bargain.

Harken to that, which was delivered unto me by a famous Preacher; who diſcourſing upon this ſubject of rich men, amongſt many other things, *I* remember he told us at that time of a certain picture, the upper and middle part of which ſquare or peece, was taken up by a great rich man, which was there portraied forth to the life: On his right hand ſtood a roaring boy to fight for him, if need were; and on his left, a fool, to make his worſhip merry, and to put him out of his dumps: both which were expreſſed in ſuch a poſture, as fitted beſt with them: under this rich man was drawn a Countrey Clown; under the Clown, a Merchant; under the Merchant, a Counſellor at Law; under the Counſellor, a Confeſſor; under the Confeſſor, a Phyſician; and under the Phyſician, the Devil, with a long chain, whoſe links were made of womens tongues, which kept an horrible ratling. And he further added, that the rich man had written over his head; Theſe two I keep: The Clowns word was; I maintain theſe three: The Merchants *Motto*, I rob theſe four: The Counſellours poſie, I pill theſe five: The Confeſſors; *I* abſolve theſe ſix: The Phyſicians; I kill theſe ſeven: And the Devil had a label comming out of his mouth, which ſaid; *I* carry away all theſe eight with me to Hell.

All theſe and many other the like miſchiefs do riches beget, whoſe poſſeſſor purchaſeth no other fame, ſave onely; Lo, there goes a rich man: their riches being their total and eternal deſtruction. But your true riches indeed are the vertues of the mind; which like invincible Forts defend thoſe that poſſeſſe them. Againſt theſe, neither all the men in the world, nor all the Devils in hell can prevail; They may wage war againſt them, but they ſhall never overthrow them. O thou, that do'ſt either read or hear me, make vertue the end and center of all thy deſires, and there ſtick in the nail, that it may ſtick cloſe unto thee. And here *I* will ſtop my pen, that *I* may not run my ſelf out of breath in the praiſing of that, which is ſo well able to recommend it ſelf. But I would have thee withall to know, that as *I* have purpoſely and willingly made this conſiderable digreſſion; ſo in all the courſe of my life, *I* have not done any thing more unwillingly, than to wink at theſe men, and to let them go by, without leaving ſome pawn behind them. But becauſe they may not object unto me, that I ſpend all my diſcourſe in Reformations, and in prying into other mens actions, *I* am the more willing to give way unto them, and for this once to let them alone. Another motive, that makes me loth to meddle with theſe Vſurers, is; That I may have one day need of their help; and I would not willingly make them my enemies, whom afterwards *I* muſt ſue unto to ſtand my friends. In a word, we are ſo far forth to keep ſome kind of men our friends, as we may have occaſion to uſe them, and as they may be profitable and beneficial unto us. And as a faithful friend is known in doing good in time of need; ſo an enemy will never hide himſelf, when he may do thee a miſchief.

Onely this one thing I will ſay; Let a man caſt up his reckonings with himſelf, and when he findes that he comes ſhort of his Account, and that he ſtands in need of two hundred Ducats to make it up, let him but take up ſo much upon uſe, and he ſhall ſee them amount in two year to more than ſix hundred. To how much more then, if a man take up more? And therefore it is good to have care to the main, and to take heed that we come not within ſuch

mens danger. For there is no ſuch Cormorant, as Uſury; it devoureth houſes, and ſwallowes down whole Lordſhips, as it were a bit, and makes no bones of it. And if a man cannot get out of this bog, when he is but over ſhooes, how ſhall he do, when he is over boots? Or how ſhall he ſatisfie a great debt, that is not able to diſcharge a ſmall one. But here let your Uſurers (for me) reſt in peace, and let me return again to my ſelf.

I ſay then, that men, by not doing that which they ought to do, come in the end to pay ſoundly for that which they do. What doth it avail a man to gain much) What good to get, if he know not how to keep? Eſpecially, ſeeing we are daily taught by experience, *Que vale mucho mas al cuerdo la regla, que al necio la renta:* That a wiſe man will go further with a peny, than a fool with a pound. His poor pitance (well husbanded) ſhall bring him in more profit than all the others rents, though never ſo great. Such great oddes had moderation, of revenue. He that hath a time of it, let him take time, while time ſerves, and not lie lazing, looking for a better, yet let him not be ſo confident, nor ſo far preſume upon his ſtrength, that he doth not keep a good and careful watch upon himſelf: He muſt look about with many eyes, and that diligently too, having an eye here, and an eye there; it oftentimes ſo falling out, that when we think our ſelves ſafeſt, and freeſt from danger, then (when we leaſt dream of it, we meet with a *Martinus contra*, ſome pad in the ſtraw, or ſome Gil to plague us: I had money in my purſe; I once was rich, but now am poor. God he knowes, why, and wherefore. I ſtood looking for a day, to ſet up my reſt, and how to order the remainder of my life in ſome ſetled courſe; but this day never came: I did build too much upon mine own ſtrength; it was ever my fault; I preſumed I could recollect, & take up my ſelf how & when I liſted: & being verily perſwaded, that though I could cozen and deceive all others I ſhould never be ſuch a fool, as to cozen my ſelf. But here in me, you may ſee how ſelf-confidence cauſeth a forgetfulneſſe of God, and by truſting more to our ſelves than to him; hence it cometh to paſſe, that we loſe not onely our goods, but our ſouls. The greateſt enemy that I had was my ſelf. Mine own hands wrought mine own woe. And as the good actions of the good are the reward of their vertue; ſo the bad actions of the bad are the occaſions of their greater torment. Mine own work did follow me. They were the furies that did perſecute me; Whereof mine own naughty dealing, and other mens wickedneſſe, were not the leaſt part of this my miſery. And God doth therefore permit, that that which we make the inſtrument of offending him; the ſame maketh he to be our deſtruction. Nor did I ſo much grieve for the loſſe of my wealth; for I knew full well, that the goods of fortune come with her, and with her go their way. And that the more favour ſhe ſhoweth, the leſſe certainty ſhe aſſureth. That which did vex me to the very heart; was, That that, which ſhould have been my comfort (I mean my wife) ſhe, whom with ſuch earneſtneſſe her father deſired to marry unto me, and uſed a thouſand means to effect it, that was another my ſelf, fleſh of my fleſh, and bone of my bone, that he ſhould riſe up againſt me, and prove a croſſe unto me, perſecuting me without a cauſe, and for no other reaſon in the vvorld, but onely for that I was now grown poor. And that her hate ſhould come to that height, that contrary to all truth, ſhe accuſed me for keeping a vvench at rack and manger, ſeeking by this means to finde ſo much favour as to ſue out a divorce, and procure a ſeparation between us, not wanting a Lawyer to adviſe her thereunto, firming it with his own hand, that ſhe might lawfully do it.

This grief, of all other, was the greateſt unto me, this wound ſtruck deepeſt. For as Matrimony once contracted, cannot be diſſolved; ſo when it is ill conjoyned, it is hard to be endured. For a troubleſom wife, is like unto an houſe, whereinto the rain falleth, dripping into every room and corner thereof. And by how much the more ſhe ſhineth in wiſdom, and good government, when ſhe will apply herſelf unto vertue; ſo much the more beaſtly ſhe is, the more inſupportable, and the more to be abhorred, when ſhe departeth therefro. What facility hath ſhe, in all thoſe things, that ſhe hath a minde unto? What a cunning *Scotiſt* is ſhe, for to compaſſe what ſhe longs for? Put the judgement of a thouſand men together, yet ſhall they not equal the wit of one ſingle woman, for to frame a lye on the ſudden. And although it be commonly ſaid, That when a man ſhuns company, and deſires to be alone, he is *aut Deus, aut Dæmon*; either a God, or a Devil, either ſpending his time in his ſervice, or living like a beaſt; yet do I ſay, that the ſolitude, which he ſuffereth all alone, is not ſo great, as is the puniſhment, which he receiveth, in having ill company, and ſuch as are contrary to his liking. I was rich, when I was not married, married, I became poor. The dayes of my nuptials were joyfull to my friends; but thoſe enſuing dayes of my marriage, ſad and mournfull for me. They were jocund and merry, and went

well

well contented home to their houſes; but I remained to endure martyrdom in mine own dwelling; and for no other cauſe, but becauſe my wife would have it ſo, and for that ſhe was too proud, and preſumptuous. She ſpent beyond meaſure, ſhe had an high minde, and a liberal hand; and ſhe had been uſed to ſee me come home, like the Bee, laden with much honey; and that I had ſweet comings in, bringing her ſtill one dainty, or other to pleaſe her: She could not endure, to ſee me go forth in the morning, and bring nothing home with me at noon: She loſt all patience, and was ready to run out of her wits, when the vvorld did not goe as ſhe would have it. But now (ay me, poor wretch, that I am) when ſhe ſaw that all the oyl was ſpent, that ſhould maintain the weke, and that alſo quite burnt out; and when ſhe found, that we had not where-withall to eat, nor knew where to get meat to put in our mouths, and that we were fain to ſell our houſhold-ſtuff to buy us bread; from hence grew all this miſchief, here ſhe loſt her footing, and with it her patience; inſomuch, that ſhe could not afford me a good look; and (which is worſe) did ever after hate me, as if I had been her mortal enemy. Neither my fair words, nor her fathers admonitions, nor the intreaty of her kinſfolk, nor the perſwaſions of her friends and acquaintance, could win her to receive me into her former favour, or to recover her loſt affection. She fled from peace, becauſe ſhe found it in diſcord; ſhe loved unquietneſſe, becauſe it was her contentment; ſhe would be revenged of me, by retiring and ſeparating herſelf from me, both at bed, and at boord; and would refuſe many times to eat her meat, for that ſhe knew how well I wiſht her, and that it was a death unto me, to ſee her ſo to do. I knew not what to do with my ſelf, nor how to govern my paſſions, by reaſon of the great difficulty I found to give her content, which conſiſted onely in feeding her with the fulneſſe of mony, which (God he knowes) I extreamly wanted. Truly, it ſeemeth unto me, that there are ſome women, that onely marry for to ſatisfie their own fooliſh longing, and to make trial what a kind of thing marriage is, it ſeeming unto them, to be like unto an hired houſe; if they find themſelves well in it, it is well; if ill, and that it be not to their mind, and fitted as they would have it, all is nothing, nor will they want one excuſe or other, and two falſe witneſſes to work a divorce. And beſides other ſo many inconveniences, if it ſo fall out, that a mans wife being any thing fair and beautiful, and that ſome one or other happen to fall into love with her; but here I will be ſilent, and ſay no more. I could wiſh that the Advocates, Notaries, and Judges of ſuch Courts, would open their eyes, and conſider well with themſelves, that that which they do therein is no other thing than to diſſolve a matrimony, and to open a door to the Devil, that he may enter in: firſt, to the loſſe of the wifes life; ſecondly, to the husbands honour; and laſtly, to both their undoings. And I dare aſſure them, in the name of that all-powerful and mighty God of heaven and earth, that a moſt grievous puniſhment ſhall be poured down upon them from above, which ſhall pay them home, and make the ſmart thereof intolerable. I would have them therefore to know that theſe are ſecret ſins, and that the plagues that ſhall come upon them ſhall be alſo ſecret. Not becauſe the husband hath laſht his wife over the face, and gives her a whores mark, or hath beaten her (like a ſlave) with a cudgel, let theſe men think, that this ſin ſhall eſcape without puniſhment, for the chaſtiſement is then inflicted upon them, when another taketh away his wife from him, God ſo permitting it. When he ſhall ſee his houſe full of diſſention, infamie, and ſickneſſes, let him lay it to his ſoul & conſcience, that theſe come for this cauſe, I ſpeak not to one, but to all, let them put their hand in their boſome, & take themſelves by the ſleeve as well thoſe that are the occaſioners, as they that are the favourers thereof, for they all ſail in one and the ſame ſhip, and the fault is alike in both; and therefore are to look for the like puniſhment. Doeſt thou not ſee how (on the wedding day) all things goe trim and trickſie, what a troop attends us at our heels, what a deal of kind care every man takes from the Bridegroom to the gueſts, how contented they are, & how well pleaſed with their entertainment, the table covered with neat, & pure linen, the boords furniſhed with dainty fare, the bed handſomly made up, the ſheets fine and ſweet, and all the reſt of the furniture anſwerable thereunto, all then was delicate and delightful unto us. And thus it laſted with us for a while. But now that my moneyes are gone, that our gallantry begins to go down, & that things go not ſo well with us, as they were wont to do, the teat withdraws its milk, and the love of many years (as if it were a mortal ſin) is loſt in a moment. It is like to ſucceed with them, as it did with me, who was quite undone, not out of any inſufficiency in my ſelf, or want of care and pains-taking, for I had wit enough to manage my affairs with good judgement. But I miſcarried for the reaſons I told you but a little before. This was Gods handy-work, his chaſtiſement was upon me. For as he is infinite, ſo hath he no circumſcription, his power is not

bounded,

bounded, his arm not limited to puniſh this man for this, and that other for that. *In* ſome things he pronounceth a ſet and determinate ſentence, and for ſuch a particular ſinne, ſuch a penalty appointed, beſides others, which appertain unto the ſoul, as alſo thoſe that ariſe out of ſuch and ſuch circumſtances. Mine was ill gotten gain, & therefore could not thrive with me. *Male parta, male dilabuntur*, Ill got, ill ſpent. Now when a woman is married to a man, and finds her ſelf afterwards deceived, for that her husband proves not ſo rich, as he was reported to be, thoſe goods that he hath being other mens, & taken up upon credit; and likewiſe, that when he was to be married, he ran further in debt, for the apparel & ſetting forth of his wife, and that within a few dayes after the Mercer comes to demand his money for the ſilkes he had of him, and the Tailor for the making up of the cloaths, and that the Sergeants be on the back of him, both for the one and the other, there is not any thing wherewith to pay them; and if there be, yet meat is more neceſſary, than the payment of debts. For whoſoever goes without, the belly muſt be ſerved; though we cozen all the world beſides, the belly will not be cozened. He will daily importune us, and we muſt daily ſatisfie him. It is a debt of Nature that muſt needs be paid: it admits no forbearance: it is a commandment without controlement: it is a rule without exception. When it comes to this, the Peacock hangs down his tail as ſoon as he looks upon his feet. The pride of his ſtarry train begins to flag, and his hoarſe trumpet ſhriks out his pitiful complaints. The flowers then begin to wither, their pleaſant ſpring is paſt, contentment & patience betake them to their heels. They preſently ſet a ſowr face on the matter, like him that hath taſted ſharp vineger. And if you ſhall ask them then, what they have, how they do, how their husbands uſe them, how like of marriage? inſtead of an anſwer, you ſhall have them ſtop their noſes; it is fiſh of four dayes old; it is too ſtale, and begins to ſtink. They will not indure the moving of this ſtone; and will therefore tell you by ſome ſcurvy ſilent geſture or other: Speak no more of him, for Gods ſake, let the man alone, do not ſtir the turd, that ſtinks too much already, let us talk of ſome other ſubject. But how can thy *Lazarus* (dear wife) being dead in his ſins, otherwiſe chuſe but ſtink, and lament his hard misfortune, being buried in the grave of thy miſeries, from whence I ſhall never be raiſed up again to life? Doth he not lie intombed in the dark & ſtrong ſepulcher of thy vain thoughts? and in that hollow vault of thy noiſome clamours & peſtilent importunities? Is he not ſhrouded in the winding ſheet of thy love, tied to thy contents? Which he ſtrives all that he can to give thee, be it by hook or by crook, with the expence of his purſe, or the hazard of his perſon, having my hands bound, ſhewing that I ſubmit my ſelf as humbly to thy ſubjection, as thou (good wife, wert thou good) ſhould ſubmit thy ſelf to mine? He that hath charge of a wife & a family, let him hold his tongue, he cannot be at leaſure to talk, he hath ſomething elſe to do, he muſt imploy himſelf in making proviſion to ſupply neceſſary wants, & perhaps is in want through thee, & is come to all this miſery by thy means. Do not thou then complain that he ſtinks, ſeeing that he is putrified with thy impertinences, finding himſelf thruſt in amongſt the wormes of thy waſtful riots & exceſſes, which like ſo many devourers lie gnawing upon his heart & bowels? Thy boldneſſe in going abroad; thy liberty in converſing; thy exorbitances in ſpending, thy waſtfulneſſe in ſcattering; thy vanity in vaunting thy ſelf, bragging & boaſting thy birth & parentage, which hath ſo many mixtures, as there are differences of keys, and variety of ſtops in an Organ. Haſt thou an husband that can bear with all theſe, and much more; and yet is he fiſh of four dayes old? grows he ſtale with thee, and begins he now to ſtink? Tell me (I prethee) by the life & light (I conjure thee) of thoſe thy fair eyes, and do not lie unto me, whether yeſterday thou didſt not viſit ſuch an Hermitage, ſuch a Chappel, and ſuch and ſuch other places of devotion, making there thy vows and thy offerings; but to what purpoſe, God he beſt knowes? And is it not likewiſe true, that ſince thou hadſt the uſe of reaſon (nay, rather before thou hadſt it, becauſe thou yet wanteſt it) there was never yet any Midſommer-night, or Feaſt of S. *John*, wherein, without ſleeping (for they ſay, that ſleep hindreth the vertue & operation of thoſe, you know what I mean) thou betook'ſt thy ſelf to ſuch a prayer, thou know'ſt well enough what one, but better it had been for thee, that thou hadſt not known it (being ſuch an one as it is, & ſo much reproved) & without opening thy mouth, or ſpeaking ſo much as one word (for they likewiſe ſay, that ſilence is another eſſential point of that prayer) thou ſhould ſtſtay waiting & looking for the firſt that would paſs along by thee after midnight, to the end, that by what thou ſhouldſt hear come from him, thou might'ſt accordingly judge of thy future marriage, and know him that ſhould be thy husband, having therein a ſtrong confidence and affiance, and giving the ſame credit and belief unto it, as if it were an article of faith, or one of thoſe of thy Creed, when as in very deed they are no other than old wives tales,

the

the impoſtures of witches, and the meer fooleries of fooliſh women, and ſuch as want judgement. And is it not alſo true, that there is not that *Beata*, nor that devout and religious woman, that thou haſt not either been with her, or ſhe with thee to the ſame effect?

Is it not true, that thou haſt put on thy mantle, walking divers ſtations with them, onely for this purpoſe? Haſt thou not forcibly laid hold on their garments, and torne the mantles of theſe Saints, who never throw them off from their ſhoulders, burning tapers, to thou know'ſt whom? Haſt thou not broken the bounds of modeſty without bluſhing; neither ſetting before thee thine own ſhame, nor the fear of God? Haſt thou left any ſieve, without trying the ſorceries thereupon? or beans lie ſtill in their place, which thou haſt not made to leap and dance, by evil means, and by words, and charms, hated and prohibited by our holy Religion? Is there any match-maker or known friend of thine, whom thou haſt not been importunate withall, telling them that thou art ſick, and that thou longeſt for an husband? At laſt, God ſends her an husband (*I* ſpeak of others, not of my ſelf) a quiet man, milde-ſpirited, one that is careful to live, and an honeſt man, who takes pains, and labours hard to get a Royal wherewith to feed and maintain her, not ſuffering her to want her ointments, her paintings, and a thouſand other toyes and trinkets, as brooches, flowers, buttons, agjets, and the like, for the ornament of her perſon; and yet for all this within four dayes, this man alſo grows ſtale & ſtinks. If (poor ſoul) he do all that he can for thee, why doeſt thou afflict both him and thy ſelf, and why ſhould it turn thy ſtomack, & cauſe a loathing in thee, when others ſhall but name him unto thee? Why doſt thou ſeek to defame him, by thy obloquies, detractions, depravings, reproaches, railings, and revilings? Why doſt thou grumble at thoſe good offices he does thee? Why miſconſtrue his kindneſſe? Why faſhion his affection according to thy falſe fancie, meaſuring his heart by thine own? Thou wouldeſt not have him digg'd out of his grave, but that the memory of him ſhould ſleep for ever, and yet thou diggeſt him up with thine own hands, not ſparing the very bones of his Anceſtors, and harmleſſe aſhes of his whole linage, throwing out lies and ſcandals by ſhovels full to thoſe that give thee the hearing, laying foul (but falſe) imputations upon him, proclaiming that (as they ſay) in the open market-place of him, which neither doeſt thou know to be true, neither indeed is he guilty of. To what end then is all this outrage? *I* will tell thee; it is onely out of her malice towards him, thinking by this means to affront and diſgrace him. But thou doeſt therein, like thy ſelf, thou ſheweſt thy ſelfe a right woman, full of change and mutability, fickle and inconſtant: and would to God, theſe thy ſudden and undeſerved alterations do not ariſe (taking the courſe that thou doeſt) from the offences that thou haſt committed againſt thy husband, againſt thy God, and againſt thine owne ſoul.

Now that I am come hither, and brought thus, before ever I thought of it into this port, *I* will unpack my commodities, ſet up a booth, and make ſhow of all my wares, as your Pedlers and poor Mercers uſe to do, that go from Fair to Fair, and from Town to Town, opening them here to day, and there to morrow, without making any ſet reſidence in this or that other place, and when they have ſold all their trinkets, return home to their own country. Let us here ſet open our ſhop, and ſell you ſome of theſe our good wares, and let us in open market make ſhew unto you of the intentions of ſome kind of marriages; as well that we put thoſe out of their errour, who are led thereunto for thoſe ends: as alſo for that they may know that they are known: and it is fit, that we ſhould tell them the ill that they do, becauſe they truly do ill; and that done, we will preſently return home again to our ſelves.

Some take this holy eſtate of marriage upon them, out of no other conſideration in the world, than to free themſelves from the ſubjection of a father or a mother, and to be at their own liberty, it ſeemeth to your fooliſh young girle (be ſhe Gentlewoman, or otherwiſe) that ſhe ſhall preſently be a free woman: and that as ſoon as ſhe is removed from her fathers houſe, and received into that of her husbands, ſhe may gad and run where and whither ſhe liſt. That ſhe ſhall have the law in her own hands, that ſhe ſhall command with authority, have wherewithall to give, and ſervants to wait and attend upon her, and to be at her beck. To theſe kind of creatures ſubjection ſeems to be too ſharp and cruel a tie upon them; and therefore eaſily ſuppoſe, that as ſoon as they are married, they ſhall on the ſudden, be abſolute in their Empire, powerful in their will, & ſway all things as they liſt themſelves. They will not ſtick to frame this argument to themſelves, that their parents perſecute them, that they are their daily torment, never ſuffering them to be at quiet, & that they ſhall find their husbands

more ſoft and pliable than wax, and that they will prove kind and loving unto them. The growth whereof ſprings from this, That their fathers, in the life that they lead with their wives, live like bruit beaſts, whereby they raiſe up vain deſires in their daughters, inflame their appetites, and cauſe them (by their ill example) to run a croſſe courſe; for, being (as they are) imprudent, they cannot diſtinguiſh of things aright; they imbrace all, that is ſweet and pleaſant, thinking to meet with it, whereſoever they come, not thinking that there is any tartneſſe or ſowrneſſe in any, ſave onely in their parents.

Theſe and other the like idle conceits diſquiet their minds, making them not to care which end goes forward, it puts them beſides their wits, and leaves them without any judgement. But as they look and gaze upon this, why do they not alſo with a fixed and ſetled eye behold that other friend and acquaintance of theirs, who is married with a jealous fool, a rough & bitter husband, who not onely gives her not a good word, but will not ſuffer her to ſtep a foot out of doors, to take the air, and recreate her ſelf, not ſo much as to go to Maſſe, unleſs it be very early in the morning, and that in a cloath kirtle, and muffled up in a poor mantle, as if ſhe were one of the ſervants of his houſe: And in a word, not uſing her as his wife, but as his ſlave that hath fled, and run away from him. It is not ſo well (my maſters) as you take it to be; & believe me, that good marriages are not chickens of every dayes hatching; they happen good now and then by chance, or as it pleaſeth God to ſend them; and it befalleth thoſe that are married, as it fareth with him, that buys a Melon, for one dainty & delicate one indeed, which he may chance to light upon, he ſhall meet with a hundred other, which proves Gourds & Pompeons in their taſt & reliſh? Haſt thou not obſerved that other familiar friend of thine, who hath married a Gameſter, who playes away all, to the very ſheets wherein he lies, turning them into table-cloaths at a common Dieing-houſe? Doſt thou not think upon that other neighbour of thine, whoſe husband keeps an whore under her noſe, and never a morning throughout the year, but that he ſends her out of the market a good basket full of proviſion, whileſt his poor wife is ready to famiſh at home for hunger. Nor have they heard (as it ſhould ſeem) of ſome husbands, who are no ſooner entred within the doors of their own houſe, but that they level their eyes with their feet, and never lift them up, unleſſe it be to chide, and finde fault without a cauſe, and to feed this their peeviſh and froward humour? Do theſe women haply think, that all wives are as much reſpected and beloved of their husbands, as they are of their fathers? I can aſſure you, that a bad father is to be preferred before a good husband; I have ſeldome ſeen a father, that hath not ſtill ſhewed himſelf a father; but few husbands ſo kinde, that they have ſtill continued kinde. And if any ſuch hath at any time been, that hath not been wanting to thoſe obligations and duties, which belong unto wed-lock, it may well be taken for a wonder. But I never knew a father ceaſe to be a father, though his ſon ceaſed to be a ſon. There is many a good father, that will make much of a bad ſon; but ſeldome ſhall you ſee a bad husband make much of a good wife.

Others do marry, becauſe (having neither father nor mother alive) they deſire to be out of their Tutors or Guardians hands; thinking that by them they are ſold and robbed of that they have. They caſt up their reckoning, and ſay with themſelves, that an husband would manage their eſtate farre better, and look a great deal more faithfully unto it, than a Guardian, who being loth to be diſpoſſeſſed thereof, and to render that up unto her hands, which is her own, takes no great care to preferre her, but doth all that he can to keep her from marrying, hoping that to morrow ſhe will fall ſick and die; and him himſelfe have all.

And therefore they ſay; How better were it, that mine own children ſhould enjoy that which I have, than to leave it to mine enemies, who wiſh my death, that they may inherit my goods. I will marry, that I will, I will to this gear, though it be with ſome foul filthy Negro, for my father did not take the pains to get that he did, for my Guardian, nor was it his meaning, that he ſhould lick himſelf whole by me, cutting himſelfe large thongs of another bodies leather, eſpecially uſing me ſo untowardly as he doth, ſuffering me to goe all to ragg'd and torne, halfe ſtarv'd for want of good meat, and not ſo much as one poor Royall in my purſe, to buy me a few pins. This is that that makes them run headlong down the hill; and therefore taking counſel of the firſt they meet with; they think, that this their friend hath adviſed them well, and that what they tell them is out of love, and a well-wiſhing to their good: and being led thus along in this blind-fold manner, they pitch upon a dunghil, where they are ſo bemired, that they ſhall never come off clean from thence, while they live, becauſe they made choice of ſuch a young gallant, that waſtes all upon his

his back, and his belly, in good cloaths, and good meat; whose main care is to pamper his body, keep his horses fat, bestow rich liveries on his servants, spend in feasts and banquets, leaving his wife weeping at home in a corner: and that which she purposed, and desired to leave to her children, to wit, the wealth that she brought with her, having now an houseful of little brats, she hath not one single penny to give or leave unto them: for having mareht with an unthrift, the wind hath blown it all away. And if she were afraid before, that her kinsmen, for to make themselves masters of her estate, did desire her death: sure her husband now wisheth it no lesse, for out of an humour of his that he hath, to shift clean linnen, being now grown weary of so much wife, which never misses him at bed, and at boord, he desireth, and peradventure also procureth to put her under ground; and so this poor soul, deceived by her self and others, fails in the obtaining of that, which her false imaginations proposed unto her.

Others, of a lesse staid temper, a kind of giddy-headed Hobby-horses, will needs marry forsooth for pure love: these shew themselves in Churches, and at publick meetings, when they are at home in their own houses, their windows stand wide open, that they may see and be seen; and in the night they lie tumbling and tossing in their beds, looking still when some one gallant or other should come under their *Balcone*, who with the *Trin-trin* of his *Ghittern*, should rouse them up from their unquiet rest.

This or that other young wench hears him sing certain *triplas* or verses, which *Gerinaldos* made to *Donna Vrraca*, and thinks that they were purposely made for her. She is more black than the Crow, more foul than the Tortoise, more foolish than the Salamander, more ugly than the Rat; and because there they paint her forth to be more fair than *Venus*, not leaving any box or cabinet unsearcht, from which they take not forth for her, Alablaster, Rubies, Turkeis, Pearls, Snow, Jessmines, and Roses, even to the undaming from heaven of the Sun and the Moon, setting her forth with Stars, and comparing her eye-browes to the Rainbow, that beautiful Arch of heaven, they are taken so truly therewith, as if they did properly belong unto them, applauding themselves with these their undeserved praises: Being as an even so, or rather far otherwise.

Alas poor silly fool, get thee gone, and sooth not up thy self with these glorious (but feigned) glosses; for he (I allure thee) that made them, did not so much as once dream on thee; he made them not of thee; or if he did, he lied, that he might deceive and abuse thee with his flattering of thee, knowing thee to be vainly given, and a lover thereof. Take heed, I advise thee, of such a glozing companion: for he is a meer Emperick, who with one kind of syrrop cures all sorts of persons and diseases. He sayes the very same unto others, as he doth unto thee. He readeth unto thee (to stir up thy desires) another Lecture, taken out of *Diana*, where he tells thee, that he saw the burning flames of those fair Shepherdesses, the Palace of that wise Dame, with all the riches and sumptuousnesse thereof, the pearls and precious stones wherewith it was adorned, those delicate gardens, and pleasing groves, wherein they took their pleasures and delights, and the dainty musick which they had made unto them; and as if all this had been true, or might have been, and that the same things might one day happen to themselves, these poor fools begin to melt, and pine away for love.

The wenches are like tinder, any the least spark that lights upon them, sets them all on a flame straight; they are quickly tinded, and quickly ended, no sooner in, than out, they make a blaze, and die.

There are some others, that are a little more curious; who retiring to make themselves ready, and to buy other things more necessary for them, spend their money in hiring of books, and because they have read in *Don Belianis*, in *Amadis*, or in *Esplandian*, or *Knights of the Sun*, those dangers, and ill voyages, wherein those unfortunate Knights went for the *Infanta Maydana*, which should be (as it seemed) some well disposed Dame, they suppose that the horse is ready saddled at their door, and that there is the dwarf, and that good old Wench with *Senior Arfidis*, to go and direct them in the way, and to bring them through those thick forrests and Woods, to the end that they might not touch upon the inchanted Castle; whence they go to perform some other archievement. And an headlesse Lion, encountring with them, as they were on the way, using many courtesies and ceremonies unto them, with a great deal of willingnesse, brings them where they are served, and royally entertained with diverse daintily dreit dishes of meat, which to their thinking, they now feed upon, and that they finde themselves after wards there sleeping in delicate soft beds of down, not knowing who brought them thither, nor whence they come, for all is in-

chantment. There they are honestly lodged, and well used; till *Don Galaor* comes thither, and kills the Gyant, who makes me to shed tears as often as I hear tell of the cruelties that he used towards them. Whereas it had been much better, that he or one of these Gentlewomen, he had been sent into *Castile*, together with his oppressed prisoners, where onely for the very sight of them, they might have got so much money, that would have made up a sufficient Dowry for to marry them, without running so many adventures, and disadventures. And so this inchantment is now wholly come to an end. But let them take heed, who read such and the like books, lest that succeed unto them, which happened unto *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, who thinking himself an errant Knight, came to be an arrant Asse. But there is not wanting such another mad rogue as my self, who told me the other day, That if such books as these should, like a bundle of faggots, be pitcht round about these fair curious creatures, and that fire should be put unto them, yet were it impossible to make them to burn, because their vertues would extinguish those flames. But I say nothing; and so I protest, because my self goes wandring thorow the world, *I* know not whither: and if *I* should say this of others, they would say the like of me.

Other wenches there are, who upon the first sight of some spruce younker, with a starcht beard, and his whiskers turn'd up, his body peradventure being as full of gums, as a *Valencia* Velvet, and as many issues in his arms and legs, as *Aranjuez* hath fountains; yet conceiting him to be another *Adonis*, for his handsomnesse and his neatnesse, are taken with the prettinesse of his person and apparel, and are ready, forsooth, to runne mad for love. This dandling, fidling, tender, & wanton young fellow, made of purpose (as they think) for pleasure and delight, who makes a profession of neatnesse and other apish toyes, as conging and kissing his hand, a poppet that one may put in his pocket is the onely man with them: as if these curiosities were not the Vespers of some bone-fire, wherein they are to be burned. Let a woman be like a woman, and a man like a man. Though these vanities and idle superfluities befit neither the one nor the other, but serve onely as Liveries, to shew that they are the Devils followers. But if you will allow fore-tops, curlings of the hair, lies, paintings, neat dressings, a soft skin, and a thousand other things to beautifie both face and body, let women have onely this priviledge, who have need thereof, and know best how to make use of their niceties. It shall suffice man, that he expresse himself to be a man; it will well become him, to have a big voice, a hard and bushie hair, a thick skin, a manly face, a grave carriage, and an hand that is none of the tenderest. Yet these fooliſh wenches think, that such spruce princoxes as these, are made of such pure metal, that they have not any natural pallions nor that they spit and cough as other men; and yet for all this their seeming fineneſſe, they are subject to *Sarsaparrilla*, *China* earth, *Guaycum*, *Emplastrum Melilotum*, *Unguentum Apostolorum*, decoctions, syrrups, and electuaries, & many other mixeries & medicines, for whom these fond things are ready to run mad, and are so hot in their love, that if the bridle of shame did not somewhat restrain this their head-strong affection, they would be worse than any devil, when he is unchained and let loose. And if you shall ask, either all, or any one of them, what they see in this finical fellow, what reason they have so dote upon him, why conceit him to be such a precious piece? This accustomed answer (as it is common with them) so it serves them instead of all other: That it is their pleasure, forsooth, to have it so; it is their humour, and they will not be beaten out of it. And if you lay before them their unadvisedneſſe in doing so, the inconveniences that are likely to follow thereupon, the ill counsel which they take, and the like; their answer is, I must suffer for it, and no body for me: it is I, & not you, that must feel the smart of it; and therefore you were as good hold your peace. If it succeed ill with me, I must be contented with my bad fortune, & con no body thank but my self, and therefore *I* pray let me alone, and spare your labour to speak thereof any more, for I am of age, and know well enough what I do. And yet this miserable maid, neither knows what she does or says. But if they find themselves obliged by the sweet meats that are sent unto them, a gawdy girdle, a neat pair of Twizes, a silk pair of stockings, garters fringed with gold, perfum'd gloves, or a love-letter brought her by her maid, or her answer thereunto, if she suffer him to pinch her as she passeth by, or reach forth her hand to him from under the door, if not perhaps her foot: when it comes to this, Lord have mercy upon her, there is no other medicine for this malady. For she is already touch't with the venom of that herb, whose infection (without divine help) is incurable.

There are other women that do likewise marry, only that they may live as merrily as the day is long, that they may go whither it pleaseth them, as well to see, as to be seen; that they may dresse themselves to their owne liking, weare this gowne, or put

on this mantle, either as it suits with their fancy, or the fashion: it seeming unto them, that because they saw such an one upon such a festival day, or all the week long, in her bravery and gallantry, that as soon as she is married, her husband will maintain her in the same manner, and if not better, yet at least as other husbands keep their vvives: and if such a mans vvife trot up and down all the day long, he will not deny her leave to walk the streets at her pleasure.

Hence ariseth the quarrel, this is it which makes the fray; for if her hopes be croſt, and that things fall not out according to her expectation, or that her husband doth not like of it, and that he will not have his vvife to go either cloathed, or naked, for any but himself; telling her, that though such an one let his vvife do what she list, and to go thus and thus, he doth not well in it, giving the vvorld occasion to scandal her good name, whereby he must needs be touche in his honour; and therefore he will not permit her so to do, for fear of incurring the like cenſure. Whereupon, and for no other cause in the vvorld, because they will not give them leave to wear what Cloaths they list themselves, what shooes, and what stockings, nor to take their pleasure abroad, and to walk the streets, as some other women do, nor be left wholly to their own liberty, not one stone shall rest quiet upon another in all the whole house: she plotteth treasons wherewith to revenge herself upon her unfortunate husband, who being a wise and considerate man, knowing what a kinde of vvoman she is, and how affected in her disposition, is afraid, that if he should grant her this licence, and give her wings, they would turn to her destruction, as they do to the Ant. So that he dares not give her leave to range abroad, nor to consent to other her extravagancies. This onely coal is enough to kindle the fire, this single contradiction will serve the turn to make her fall a scratching of her face, and tearing her hair, calling her self the most wretched and unfortunate of all women, and wishes that as soon as she was born, it had pleased God, that her mother had strangled her, buried her in a ditch, or thrown her into some deep Well, rather than to live to be subject to so tyrannical power; that she onely of all other married vvomen, is the most miserable, that such a vvoman is of this and that quality, and that she lives like a Queen with her husband, in comparison of her, that she is no whit inferiour unto her, nor brought a lesser Dowry with her, nor would she ever have married, if she had thought her husband would have used her no better. And breaking the bonds of vvomanhood, she dishonours him, calling him base fellow, dunghill squire, neglectfull villain, rogue, rascal, and what not, upbraiding him, that her father kept better men than he was; and that he was not worthy to make clean her old shoes. And if her husband chance to over-hear her, she straines her voyce a note higher, crying out, Wretched vvoman that I am, was I so daintily bred up, to be fed with this course fare? Are these the delights I am like to have? Did they leave me so well for this, that thou shouldest use me in this scurvy manner as thou doest? Must I be thy slave night and day, to look to thy house and Children, and to be made a drudge to thy servants? See, and there be any grief like unto mine? God and the vvorld knows what I am, of what house I come, and how well I am descended! *Don Fulano*, and *Don Cutimo*, such a Bishop, such a *Conde*, and such a Duke, are of my alliance, leaving out neither beardling, nor shaveling, high, nor low, whereof she does not make a Letany, and verbal processe.

But poor unhappy man that he is, if it should fortune so to happen (which God forbid should ever befall any honest man) that he hath his aged mother at home with him in his house, his sisters that are Virgins, or Children by another vvife; then will she keep a racket, & cry out, That it was for them, that her father got his vvealth; and that, it is spent upon them; that they eat it out whilest I (poor Soul) who brought him all this, must be used like a *Negra*, or *Negra* (said I) if it were Gods will, would I were no worse used than such an ones *Negra*, which passeth here dayly by our doors, as if she were some great Lady; to day in this change of cloaths, to morrow in that. Lord, am that unlucky bird, that continues still in these old rags, ever since I was first married, and have not where-withall to mend them, nor to put between these walls, accompanied with I know not how many spindles, reels, distaffs, and baschels for flax. What can her husband (poor man) say to all this? What answer can he make her? His best counsell will be to let her alone, otherwise he shall never end his purpose to passe.

There are another sort of women that marry to the end that by having a husband to Cloak their faults, they may not be molested by the Justice, nor reproached by their Neighbours, nor any other persons whatsoever. This is roguery, knavery, villany, beastlinesse, and dishonesty in the highest degree. What shall a man say more of them? They are a kinde

of kinde wenches, but dishonest and shameleſſe. They are like thoſe Gardiners, that clap up a skar-crow in a Fig-tree, that the birds may come and peck at their Figs; which are onely kept for thoſe, whom it ſhall pleaſe the Gardiner to give leave to pluck them, or ſuch as ſhall pay him well for them: ſo as the birds do not peck them, it is all good and well.

Is there none then, that may correct, reprove, or open his mouth againſt theſe kinde of women? no ſurely. They have a skar-crow in the Fig-tree, a husband of their own in the houſe. Touch them who dares. They can either give, or ſell, their honour, or their perſons, as they will and liſt themſelves, even in the ſight of the whole world, and yet by reaſon of this their skar-crow, the Juſtice dare not offer to puniſh them. For it fareth with them, as it doth with Vineyards, which have a guard upon them in their time of fruitage; but when the Vintage ſhall be gathered in, and the Grapes carried away, and put into the wine-preſſe, they are no more looked into, but are laid open and made a common-field, for their flocks and heards of Cattel to feed on, treading and trampling them down with their feet.

Siſter, let me tell thee, that theſe are the ſteps that lead unto Hell: God will take away this Cloak from thee, this husband of thine for thy diſſolute life and ſhameleſſe luſt; to the end, that this may be the whip to laſh thee, by bringing thy ſecret whoring in publick view, and in that balance wherein thou did'ſt put his honour, thine own ere long ſhall be weighed. But I were beſt take heed to whom I ſpeak, leſt I chance to have my head broken for my labour. She feared not her husband, ſhe was paſt all ſhame towards God and man: and ſhall I think to reclaim her, or ſuch as ſhe is, by theſe my fooleries? (for I know they take them for no other,) I ſhall never be able to do it while I live, and therefore I will let them alone.

Other ſome alſo marry, for that they ſee their wealth begins to waſte, they know not how themſelves: yet pretend, that the onely cauſe why they marry, is, for that they are young, and are loath to have their honour liable to the laviſh tongues of evil diſpoſed people; as alſo, leſt their perſons might run the hazard of Rapes, and other the like violences. Well, of two evils the leaſt: But becauſe God hath not any part in theſe marriages, and that it may be better laid of them, that they be the Devils contracts: and for that all things are to be reputed either good, or ill, according to the end whereunto they are directed: and this being known, thoſe actions are determined and defined that lead thereunto: behinde more love always to the end it ſelf, than to thoſe things which conduce and guide us unto it. So that marriage is not loved in ſuch as theſe, for the love that they bear unto marriage, but onely uſe it as a meanes, for the accompliſhing of their deſires. And theſe kinde of women do not walk directly in the right way, but go ſeeking out about to ſerve their own turns, becoming a by-way to their own ruine. And therefore I hold it no good marriage, (nor indeed is it) when it hath any other end in it, ſave onely to ſerve God in that holy and honourable eſtate.

God doth permit (I confeſſe) all theſe marriages, but I muſt tell you withall, that in moſt of them the Devil hath a ſhare, and that not the leaſt. It is a good and holy Calling, but thou makeſt it an belliſh marriage. It was inſtituted for quietneſſe and for comfort, but thou loveſt it not; thou neither haſt it, nor are willing to have it: but thou doſt rather intangle thy ſelf in it, that thou mayeſt the ſooner trip, and fall with it into the grounſil. Let not a Virgin, or a Widow make uſe but that ſhe ſhoots at her lawfull liberty, nor the freeing of her ſelf from her Father, or her Guardians ſubjection: let her not be led along with vain love, let her caſt away from her all ſuch filthineſſe as ſhall follow her ſenſual appetite. Which if they do not do, let them aſſure themſelves, that it will go ill both with the one and the other: and if their husbands ſhall not prove ſo good and kinde unto them, as they themſelves did think, and wiſh they ſhould, if they ſhall make ſlaves of them after they are married unto them: if they ſhall mew them up like Hawks, if they ſhall lead an evil life with them, if they ſhall waſte away their wealth, and get love a great charge of Children upon them, if their purſe ſhall be ill empty, if trouble ſhall come upon them: if their husband ſhall be a Gameſter, or a Whore-maſter; if they ſhall be thus abuſed by them, and ſhall haply die under their hands: all this ariſeth from thoſe evil ends, which they propoſed to themſelves, either by ſeeking to advance themſelves beyond their quality, and to ſtate it beyond their means: or thoſe other forementioned raſions, which are the ſole cauſe of their ruine. This idol of *Baal* whom they adored, in him did they put their truſt: this was the God, who (they thought) could ſuccour, help and defend them; but in the very

time

time they ſhould have true need indeed of his help, they ſhall finde, that he ought not to be feared, nor that he is able to ſend down fire to conſume their enemies, or comfort them; for as he hath it not, ſo can he not give it them. Thou adoreſt Idols', but thou ſhalt be delivered by none of them in the day of trouble: for in a word, they are Idols, the work-manſhip of our own hands, faſhioned out of wantonneſſe, and a longing to be doing of ſomething, and adored onely out of an idle humour, and out of a kinde of pleaſure and delight that we take in theſe toyes. Fire ſhall come down from Heaven, and conſume the ſacrifice, the vvood, the ſtones, and the aſhes, even to the waters themſelves in the trenches, (like unto that of *Elias*) though they be filled afreſh, barrel after barrel, yet ſhall all that moiſture be licked up by the fire. Know ye then, that thoſe are marriages which God ordaineth, and ſuch as you enter into, onely to ſhew your ſelves obedient to his will, and have conſulted therewith afore-hand; leaving it wholly to him, to work in the reſt, as he ſhall think fitteſt for his ſervice, without ſeeking after any ill and foul means: and then though you ſhould be dung-wet, and bucketted an hundred times with the waters of perſecutions, of hunger, of cold, of impriſonment, and all other troubles and miſeries, that may befall the life of man, it is no matter: For fire ſhall come down from Heaven, that is to ſay, the love of God and his charity, which ſhall conſume and drie up, theſe their many waters of tribulations. This quick fire makes ſpeedy riddance of all our troubles, preſenting them as a ſacrifice before his divine Majeſty, who will not onely aſſiſt us with his grace in this vvorld, but Crown us with his glory in the vvorld to come. And let this ſerve as an end to this my Sermon. Now let us return again to our marriage, which (and it had pleaſed God) would it had never been.

I had now ſerved ſome ſix years in the Marriage-gally; in which ſhort time (would it had been leſſe) I endured (I thank my wife for it) a great deal of miſery. Howbeit, for the four firſt years, our vvedding loaves (I muſt confeſſe) were freſh and new: for as yet, it was but hony-moon with us; all was of the fineſt flour, and of the pureſt vvheat. But when we began to go down the hill, and were now faln half in half from the height wherein we were before, and wanted money to maintain us at that ſcantling: when the Cloath of Gold-kirtle, which was both richly bordered and imbroydered, was to be ſold and turned into Gold; and that not any the leaſt threed of it, though no bigger than a Spiders, eſcaped the melting-pot, and yet paſt for a reaſonable handſom kirtle ſtill, as the vvorld went with us: when all our old ends were ſpent and gone; when I could not inch it out any further, when I ſaw that the water was come up above my chin, and that I could not long hold out, but muſt needs ſink, for that by no means ſhe would conſent, that I ſhould ſell any thing either of hers, or mine own, and that my credit, to furniſh my ſhop, would not reach ſo far as one farthing-worth of Radiſhes, I found my ſelf then in that ſtrait, that adviſing with my father in Law, I was willing to take ſomewhat a more rigorous courſe with her. God ſend us a good night of it. She thereupon began to ſet out ſo loud a throat, as if (like a Pig) I had offered to ſtick her, or that the matter had been of more moment than indeed it was: inſomuch, that the Neighbours came running in for to help her, who were ſo many that the houſe could not hold them. But when they ſaw the truth of the buſineſſe, as God would have it, it was a thing of nothing: and when they perceived I had reaſon to do as I did, they reſted quiet, and went their wayes: yet for all this did not ſhe leave off her lamentation, which might very well have ſerved her turn for an hundred holy-weeks. I was inforced that I might not fall further foul with her, to let her alone, and to leave her to herſelf, that I might not be bound by hearing her, to anſwer her both with words and deeds. I took my Cloak, threw it on my ſhoulder, and got me out adoors, leaving her all alone, and giving her thereby free liberty to ſay and do what ſhe would, till ſhe ſhould grow weary, and ſhould no more.

This nadded her more than all the reſt, when ſhe ſaw me ſet ſo light by that which ſhe ſaid, and that I ſeemed to make ſuch little reckoning of it. And I may truely confeſſe unto you, that in all that time that I lived with her, I cannot accuſe my ſelf, nor did ſhe ever tax me of any the leaſt injury that I had done her, but uſed her with all kindneſſe that a husband could uſe a wife. But when God ſhall beſtow wealth upon us; or when he pleaſeth, take it away, this alters the caſe; for man cannot then do withall, it lies not in his hands, neither is it in his power, to go increaſing in riches, neither can he ſtop them in their courſe, (no more than a man can the Tide) when they are ebbing from him. He cannot be termed an unthrift, or a bad husband, who uſeth his beſt endeavours, as others do, for to get wherewithall to live in ſome good and honeſt faſhion, and to provide as well as he can, for his vvife, Chil-

Children, and Family. But he is a mad husband, who ſpends his means upon vvomen, throws it away at play, waſtes it in eating and drinking, and prodigally conſumes it in pride of apparel, and other vices of like exceſſe.

Let my young prodigal harken unto me, and do thou to underſtand this leſſon, thou that art the onely Son and Heir of ſome rich Merchant: for it is unto thee that I ſpeak, and thou knoweſt why, and wherefore I ſpeak it. And I was alſo about to ſay farther unto thee, that if thou do not take heed, thy raſh and unadviſed courſes, (holpen on by other mens ill counſel) will carry thee thence to Hell. Repent thee therefore betime, and have a care to live, that thou mayeſt not die.

So that I ſay, it is neither good, nor bad ſucceſſe, that ſhould cauſe any ſeparation betwixt man and wife; nor ought married folks to fall out and diſagree about the tranſitory things of the world. For an husband hath no more obligation, than to uſe all his induſtry and diligence, and to do the beſt he can. The ſucceſſe we muſt leave to God. Nor is he to be condemned for a bad husband, who keeps his wifes Dowry well ſecured, & hath rather augmented, than diminiſht it, without having either ſold, or paltred it away. She, without doubt, could not confeſſe ſo much, or if ſhe did confeſſe it, ſhe did not ſpeak the truth; or if ſhe did ſpeak it, ſhe did adulterate it in that manner, that they might abſolve her upon it. Thus (poor Soul) did ſhe deceive herſelf, whileſt ſhe thought to coozen her Confeſſour. Likewiſe there were not ſome wicked people wanting, of baſe birth, who upon weak grounds, and a weaker underſtanding, to flatter and ſooth up this her idle humour; did help to further her fooleries, favouring them all that they could, not ſo much as once giving ear unto me, nor knowing the juſtneſſe of my cauſe: And theſe were they that wrought my woe, and brought her to Hell. For ſhe died ſhortly after of a ſharp diſeaſe, without ſhewing any tokens of repentance, or receiving the Sacrament.

In two things may I ſtile my ſelf unfortunate: Firſt, in this my marriage, though on my part I did uſe all poſſible means to obſerve the Laws thereof. Secondly, that having done penance ſo long a time with her, and having loſt all my wealth, I had not any acquittance or receit under her hand, no not ſo much as a Childe by her, whereby I might have recovered her Dowry. Howbeit, I have no other cauſe to complain much for this: for the unhappineſſe of her death made my life happy. For there is no burthen ſo heavy, as the unſupportable weight of a froward wife. As a certain paſſenger plainly gave us to underſtand, who being upon a voyage at Sea, and a great ſtorm ariſing, the Maſter of the ſhip gave order that they ſhould preſently lighten the ſhip, and throw the heavieſt commodities over-board for the ſaving of their lives. The paſſenger hearing him ſay ſo, took his wife up in his arms, and threw her into the Sea. The Juſtice afterwards going about to puniſh him for this his offence, he excuſed himſelf, ſaying, That the Maſter of the ſhip had commanded him ſo to do. And that amongſt all the merchandize he had aboord, there was not any that weighed ſo heavy as his wife, which was the cauſe that he threw her into the Sea: And it pleaſed God that they had fair weather after it.

Now turn your eyes upon my father in Law, who never had any difference with me, but did cheriſh and comfort me, as if I had been his own natural Son; and taking alwayes part with me againſt his daughter, and would ever chide and reprehend her; and when he ſaw his fatherly admonitions could not reclaim her, nor work any good upon her, he would never come within her doors. But howſoever, he did hate her conditions, in concluſion, ſhe was his daughter: and Children are thoſe tables that are ſawen and hewen as it were out of the fathers heart. And though they cauſe their ſorrow, yet they love them dearly. He mourned much for her, but we remained friends. We buried this unhappy vvoman (for that muſt be her name) and did that was fitting for her Soul. And within a few dayes after, we parled of parting company, for he would that I ſhould return that unto him, which he had given me with his daughter. I did not ſtand off, but gave him all that he had given me, and in better caſe than he conſigned it unto me. He kindly thankt me, we levelled our accounts, remaining ſtill as good friends as ever we were heretofore.

CHAP.

## CHAPTER IV.

Guzman de Alfarache, *being now a Widower, reſolves to go to* Alcala de Henares, *to ſtudy the Arts, and Divinity, that he might make himſelf fit to ſay Maſſe. And having fulfilled all his terms, and duely heard his Lectures, he leaves all and marries again.*

FOR to tumble down a ſtone from the top of a hill, every mean mans ſtrength will ſerve, with the touch (as they ſay) of his little finger, he will make it to roul to the ground. But if the ſame ſtone were to be drawn out of ſome deep vvell, many men would not be able to fetch it forth, & great diligence muſt be uſed for the getting of it up. For to make my ſelf fall from that good eſtate, wherein I was, and to run head-long out of my vvealth and credit, my vviſes waſtefulneſſe was enough to turn me going; but to get my ſelf up again, to the ſame height wherein I was before, I had need of the help of other the like Uncles and Kinsfolk; ſuch another *Genoa*, and *Milane*; or that another *Sayavedra* ſhould come and live with me; or that the ſame man ſhould riſe again; for I never lighted on the like ſervant, or companion for my turn; by whoſe helping hand I might have been raiſed up as high as ever I was, and reſtored to a better eſtate than before: But wanting theſe good helps, I lay buried and whelmed over head and ears in a vvell of miſeries.

Goods and riches, the ſlower they are in coming, the quicker they are in going. They are gathered with a great deal of leaſure; but are ſcattered away in haſte. All at this preſent (whatſoever it be) in this vvorld, it is all ſubject to mutation; it being fuller of alterations, than any thing elſe. Let not the rich man therefore reſt too ſecure, nor yet the poor man deſpair. For the wheel is as ſlow in coming up, as in going down; and as quickly 'emptieth, as fills the buckets that it bringeth up. The exceſſive expences of my houſe had ſtript me of all, both my Jewels and money; My wife might with a good conſcience (if ſhe had it) conſidering what I ſuffered for her ſake, and the troubles which by her exorbitances, lighted upon me, have left me ſome ſmall part of her portion, (which ſhe might lawfully have done) wherewith at leaſt I might (had I been ſo diſpoſed) being a ſole and retired man, have driven ſome ſmall trade, attended my old occupation of uſury, or imployed my ſelf in ſome one thing, or other, to have pickt out a poor living, and to begin the vvorld anew, to ſee if I could recover this my weakneſſe, whereinto by her means I was fallen, and now brought ſo low. But not onely in this particular occaſion, but in all the reſt, that offered themſelves unto me, with my friends and acquaintance, I might ſay that which *Simonides* ſaid; He had two Coffers, or Cheſts in his houſe, and was wont to ſay, (uſing to open them at certain times) that when he opened that of cares and troubles, from which he thought, and hoped to reap ſome profit, it fell out contrary to his expectation, finding nothing but his labour for his pains; and of that it was brimfull; that wherein the graces were kept, who ſhould have recompenced him for his good ſervices, he could get nothing thence, but had the ill luck to finde it alwayes empty.

This Philoſopher and my ſelf, were equally unfortunate; and it ſeemeth that the influence of one and the ſame Star, had lighted on us both. For albeit, I did evermore labour to help and benefit others, not conſidering the good, or hurt that might come thereof, and without taking the counſel of thoſe, who ſay; *Haz bien y guarte*: Do well for others, but yet look to thy ſelf; ſo may I alſo ſay, That I never waſht that head, that I had any other reward for my pains, but ſcabs and ſcurff, and albeit I had found the ſmart of it, and paid ſoundly for this my folly, yet I could not hold my hand, but willfully perſiſted in mine own wayes; for being made drunk with the delight that I took therein, I did not ſeek to repair the hurt it had done me. For as it is an eaſie matter to ſtrip a drunken man of his Cloaths; ſo is it hard to do the ſame upon him that is ſober. They may rifle him that ſleeps; but not him that is awake. I did never ſtand upon my guard; I did never think to ſee the day that *I* ſhould have wanted; Whileſt *I* had wherewithall, *I* alwayes made this account; But when *I* ſaw to what poverty *I* was brought, *I* then knew the errour *I* was in. And though *I* was a naughty man, yet *I* had a deſire to be good; not out of any true love to goodneſſe it ſelf, but for the ſhunning of ſome greater evil, that otherwiſe might enſue. *I* had thrown aſide my vices, forgetting them for a while, and had applied my ſelf to labour & pains taking;

I had try'd all the means and wayes that might be to work my ſelf a fortune, and to come forward in the vvorld; but not any one of them that thrived with me. I was an unfortunate man in all thoſe better courſes, that I ran. Onely, in doing ill was I lucky, I had a happy hand in filching and ſtealing, fortune onely favouring me ſo far, as to make me unhappily happy.

This is a cunning trick, which ſin ſtill puts upon us, to further us with its counſel, and to help thoſe that are her Champions; to the end, that with that heat and warmth they receive from ſin, they may be the better incouraged and drawn on with the more metal, to commit more heynous crimes; and when ſhe ſees that they have attained to the height of all villany, and that they cannot well climb higher, ſhe tumbles them down head-long with a witneſſe. She makes them to climb up by the Ladder, but ſends them down by the Rope. Differing herein from God, who works after another manner. For he never ſendeth us any trouble, which he doth not accompany with ſome bleſſing, or other; from our greateſt miſeries groweth our greater glory: leading us by a narrow path, to the broad and ſpacious way of bliſſe.

It ſeemeth unto us, that when we are ſwallowed up as it were with deſperation; and that want and poverty lye heavy upon us, that he is forgetfull and unmindfull of us; when as indeed, he is but like unto that father, who for to teach his ſon to go, maketh as if he did looſen his hand from him, feigning to let him go alone by himſelf, and for a while to ſee how he will ſhift his feet, ſtands in ſome near diſtance from him, yet not ſo far off, but that he ſtill keeps himſelf cloſe by his ſide, and when walking ſoftly, and with trembling ſteps towards him, he ſees him ready to fall, he runs in unto him, and catching him in his arms, receives him into them, and imbraces him, not ſuffering him to fall to the ground. But when the father had no ſooner left him to himſelf, but that either he makes too much haſte, or will not go at all, nor ſo much as offer to move a foot, or letting go his hold, unfaſtning himſelf from his fathers hand, he comes to catch a fall, the fault is not in the father, but in the ſons, either too much dulneſſe, or too much haſte.

We are of a naughty and evil nature, we are not willing to help our ſelves a jot, we do not endeavour to do our ſelves good, we will not uſe our beſt diligence, nor put to any helping hand of our own, but look (like little Children) to have our meat ſtill put in our mouths (being now big lubbers) and that all ſhould be put into our laps, without any pains, or care-taking of ours. But God is of that infinite goodneſſe, that he never forgets us. nor forſakes us; He knows very well how to take away from the wicked in a moment, many great Lordſhips and Farms, which they have been many years a purchaſing; and to enrich *Job* within a little while, with double ſo much wealth, and thoſe other good bleſſings which before he had taken from him.

I never had the grace to be ſo good; but I am ſure I was as naked as *Job*. For I had nothing to lean my ſelf againſt, ſave onely the bare walls of my houſe. If when I had plenty, I did pamper up my ſelf; now I did deſire, to have onely wherewithall to hold life and Soul together. I was ready to periſh for want of food.

I remember (when I was a youth) that I had known in *Madrid* a pretty little boy, that was very well given, and for his years of good underſtanding. This little Lad was bred up by a Gentle-woman, that was his mother, not that ſhe had born him, but for the love ſhe bore him; ſhe gave him good breeding both for his book, and otherwiſe; ſhe cloathed him well, and handſomely; and for his diet, if there were one bit better than other at the boord, he was ſure to have his part of it. This Childe was bred in *Granada*, where there are certain little ſmall Grapes, which are very dainty ones indeed, wonderfull pleaſant, and of excellent reliſh; which in thoſe parts they call *javies*. Now there being none of this kinde in *Madrid*, and for that this little boy would not eat any other, ſave his own Countrey Grapes, when he ſaw he had none of that ſort given him, ſeeing your *alvialls* one day on the boord, he aſkt for ſome of thoſe little ones, as he was wont to do; To whom his mother ſaid, Childe; Here are no little ones to give thee. We have none but theſe: To whom the Childe anſwered; Then (good mother) give me ſome of thoſe. For I can eat alſo great ones for a need.

I likewiſe could now feed upon groſſe fare, no meat came amiſſe, all was ſweet and ſavoury unto me, nothing did hurt me, but hunger without meat; any thing, ſo as it were a belly full, it was all one to me. For the alterations of times, oblige all, and to all; and to content our ſelves with thoſe things, which are quite averſe to our nature, and no way ſuting with our diſpoſition. I was driven to that, which I never dreamt to have

have done, to the end, that I might alwayes be able to ſay; That neither ſelf-love made me doubt; nor fear dread, to adventure upon any means whatſoever, that might make for my profit. And queſtionleſſe, if I had wholly bent my ſelf to ſome one ſet courſe, or other, and had ſetled my ſelf cloſe unto it, and conſtantly perſerved therein, I ſhould have done ſome good in it, and made it at means of no mean advancement unto me. But I was hot and collerick; I miſ-ſpent my time; and my beginnings being bad, I failed in the goodneſſe of the ends. I had often reſolved to be good, but I was quickly weary of well-doing; I was that rolling-ſtone, that never gathers moſſe. And becauſe I could not tame my ſelf, time had now tamed me. I ſaw my ſelf abandoned of all humane remedy, and had no hope of any other help, than that onely of my houſe. I began then to conſider, and ſaw with my ſelf; What have I now in the houſe, to ſtanch my hunger withall? Shall I bite upon a brick-bat? That is but tough feeding, and ſomewhat too hard a cruſt to gnaw upon. Shall I roſte one of my rafters, That will be burnt away upon the ſpit? I found that a naked houſe, without ſomething to maintain it, could not afford me any kinde of remedy. I could think upon no better thing, than to betake my ſelf to ſacred Orders, and to become a Church-man: Saying to my ſelf; I have humane learning; I will make benefit of that, by hearing thoſe Lectures read in *Alcala de Henares*. I have ſome little ſmackering alſo in the liberal Arts, and Divinity, and when I have ſtudied theſe awhile, I will take my Degree, then ſhall I be qualified for the Pulpit, and being able to ſay Maſſe, and to preach a Sermon, I ſhall be ſure to have wherewithall to eat; and if all ſhould fail, I would turn Fryar at the laſt, whereby I ſhould not onely live upon certainties, but ſhould alſo lead a very ſafe and ſecure life. For a *Dominus vobiſcum*, did never yet dye of hunger. But this courſe, I ſhall not onely repair my life, but I ſhall free it likewiſe from any danger whatſoever, which I might have incurred by my former miſdemeanours. The time, for the payment of my debts, draws on apace, and my wealth goes away as faſt, if by this means I did not provide for the ſtorm that was now a coming, I might afterwards ſee my ſelf oppreſſed, and in great peril to be utterly loſt.

I knew that this came not from my heart, for I was not ignorant of mine own evil inclination; but he that hath no other means, and is put to his ſhifts, muſt do as he may. He that cannot make choice of his game, muſt fly at that which comes next in his way. Now that I am imbarked, I muſt play the cunning Marriner, and ſeeing I cannot ſayl with a fore-winde, I muſt fetch boords, and come about with a ſide-winde. Any one will ſerve my turn, ſo it be not ſuch a contrary winde, as ſhall chop me into the mouths of my hungry Creditors. This is the key that muſt make all ſure, and keep them out from coming within me. The mony that I ſhall make of this houſe, will ſerve well enough to maintain me as a Schollar; which being well husbanded, though *I* ſhould ſpend yearly an hundred Ducates, or an hundred and fifty, which will be the moſt, (and is a good liberal allowance) I ſhall have ſtore of money for that time, that I ſhall need to continue there; ſo that *I* may live like a Duke, (if *I* liſt my ſelf) and yet have wherewithall to buy me books, and to take ſome honourable Degree. *I* will make choice of a good Chamber-fellow, a Student of mine own profeſſion, that we may follow our ſtudies cloſe together, hear the Lectures, compare our Notes, communicate our doubts, that ſo by joyning our forces together, and aiding one another, we ſhould be able to quit our ſelves like brave fellows, when we came to break a lance in thoſe liſts. In this manner had *I* made up my reckonings with my ſelf; this was my conſultation, and this was *I* fully reſolved to put in execution. But how ill a conſultation, and how worſe a reſolution, that *I* ſhould determine to ſtudy Divinity, more for the nouriſhing of this my body, than for the feeding of others Souls! How a Gods name ſhould it enter into my imagination to be a Maſſe-Official, and not a Maſſe-Prieſt? Or that *I* ſhould once think of becoming a religious man, having ſuch a ſcandalous ſpirit? Accurſed *I*, and accurſed he, who is ſo unhappy, as not primarily to propoſe unto himſelf the ſervice and glory of God. And moſt unfortunate are they of all others, who treat of their own profit, of their preferments, of their honours, and of the maintaining of their back and belly, by this ſo worthy and Divine a calling; and that do not ſolely and wholly take the Miniſtery upon them, for no other end, but to be Gods meſſengers, and to do him ſervice in his Church; and that ſhall not worthily perform that holy function; and that ſhall not deſire learning for any other end, than to be a light unto himſelf, and unto others.

Traytor as *I* was, why did *I* treat like another *Judas*, of the ſelling of my Maſter? And I ſpeak it to all, as well as to my ſelf; that he ſhall be taken for no other than a Traytor,

that ſhall treat of being Prieſt, or a Fryar, having no other aim, but to feed his belly, cloath his back, and ſpend laviſhly. And that Father is a Traytor, whoſoever he be, that ſhall enforce his Son, contrary to his own inclination and liking, to take the Miniſtery upon him, becauſe his Grand-father, his Uncle, his Kinſman, or his Friend, hath left him ſuch a Patronage, or ſuch an Advouſon, if his Son ſhall in ſuch a time take holy Orders. When a Father caſts about with himſelf to make his Son a Fryar; or one, or more of his Daughters Nuns; either becauſe he hath not ſtore of wealth to leave them, or that he may leave his other Children the richer, or for any other worldly cauſes, which cannot be but vain and idle, let him weigh and conſider well with himſelf what he doth in ſo doing: For it is a great wonder, if one of a hundred prove good (I ſay nothing of the Nuns) the moſt part of them, roming and rambling through the world, like a company of Vagabonds, and Apoſtates, diſhonouring their religion, diſgracing their habit, putting their lives in peril, and ſending their Souls to Hell. It is God that muſt call us to his holy calling: For it is he that annointed *David*, he that made choice of the Prieſts and Prophets. The religious man muſt be religious, meerly for religions ſake, for the very love that he beareth unto it. This muſt be the principal end, this the ſubſtance, and all the reſt but matter of dependance. For it is fit and juſt, that he that ſerves at the Altar, ſhould live by the Altar: and it were inhumanity, when thy Ox hath plowed thy ground, and laboured hard, to tie him to his ſtall, and give him no meat. Let every one open his eyes, and look well about him, before he reſolve as I did. Let him weigh well with himſelf, what charge he takes upon him, & what a deal of danger he runs. Let him firſt ask of himſelf, what moves him to take that eſtate upon him? For by walking in the dark, the eye that ſees not, muſt make the feet to ſtumble. The mark whereat a good Prieſt, and an honeſt religious Soul ſhould ſhoot, muſt be brighter, purer, and clearer than the Sun. Let not Parents think, that for to fill their ſons bellies, they muſt needs make them Church-men: nor let them think, when they have a lame, weak, ſickly, unprofitable crumpt-backt, or ill-featur'd ſon, to offer him upon Gods Altar, or to make him a Prieſt. For God will have the beſt, and thoſe that are without blemiſh for his ſacrifice, being that he offered up the beſt that ever was for us, when he offered himſelf in his beloved Son. Therefore if thou ſhalt make a bad choice, thou wilt have the worſt of it. For if thou ſhalt reſerve the better for thy ſelf, and give the worſer unto God, he will take them both away from thee, ſo that both thy eyes ſhall be put out; he will bereave thee of the bad, becauſe he was not good enough for him; and of the good, becauſe thou thoughteſt him too good. You muſt not change bridles, leſt you ſpoyl your horſes mouths: Every horſe muſt have his own bit: What need a continent man to marry? Or a laſcivious wanton to be a Prieſt? The one is not ſo fit for a wife; And I am ſure the other altogether unfit for the Church. There are many habitations in Heaven, and every one hath his right place appointed for him. Let every man take that way, that may direct him to his ſalvation; and let him not go any other way, leſt he may chance to loſe himſelf, and thinking he treads in the right path, never ſees his deſire, nor that which he pretends. It were a pretty kinde of over-ſight in me, if being to go from *Madrid* to *Barajas*, I ſhould take over *Segovia* bridge, and paſſe on to *Guadarrama*. Or being to go for *Valladolid*, I ſhould make for *Siguenca*. Doeſt thou not ſee how thou art out of thy way? Doeſt thou not perceive thy folly? Let a Virgin, be a Virgin; a married man, a married man: Let the continent abſtain; The religious be religious: And let every one go on in the way that is ſet before him, without turning to the right hand, or to the left.

I was reſolved to be a Church-man, and for no other reaſon in the world, but onely to repair a broken Fortune, to fill my belly, and to be free from my Creditours; who, as ſoon as my ten years were out, were to come upon my back. With this, I finely ſtopt their mouths, ſhut the gap whereat they ſhould enter, and left them to ſhake their ears. I ſold my houſe for almoſt as much as it coſt me: For, albeit, men do uſually ſell houſes to great loſſe, yet mine yielded me little leſſe than what it ſtood me in. For, I did value it at ſomewhat the dearer rate, becauſe it was bettered by the bordered buildings that were round about it, which time had wrought for me. When the Scrivener had drawn the writtings, and that they were ready to be ſealed, and I to receive my money, I ſaid; That before *I* proceeded therein any farther, we would go to his houſe, that was the publick Officer for the rating of mens goods, that we might have a Licence from him under his hand, requiring his confirmation of the Contract that was between us, and that we might conclude with him touching the ſetting of the Rent, as alſo the twentieth part that was to go out, and to be levied upon the ſale of the houſe. When we came thither, and had caſt up our reckonings, we found that the ſeſ-

ment

ment came not to above ſix Royals, but the twentieth part to better than a thouſand five hundred. Methought this was ſomewhat cruel, and beyond all reaſon of policy, that I ſhould give him ſuch a great ſum of money, which amounted to more than the fee-ſimple of the ground, whereon I built it. I ſtood upon it, and was very loath to pay him ſo much, but becauſe my ſtanding out might have hindred the ſale thereof, and ſo I might have let ſlip the occaſion of doing my ſelf good, I paid thoſe duties, but with proteſtation, to require the ſame again by courſe of Juſtice, as a thing which in all Law and conſcience, he could not duely challenge of me.

The Maſter of the Office began to laugh at me, as if I had uttered ſome famous foolery. And it might very well be ſo; but as then it did not ſeem ſo unto me. I asked him, why he laught? He told me, at my pretenſion. And that he would return me all my money again, on condition, that *I* would but give him half a Royal every day, till I had ſentence on my ſide in this ſute. I was about to have accepted of it; it ſeeming to my underſtanding, that an ill cuſtome ought not ſo far to over-ſway reaſon, but that upon diſcovering the cunning and deceit uſed therein, it would eaſily be abrogated and broken. Nor would this which I ſpeak of, been my caſe alone, but all the whole Kingdom would have put in their pleas into the Courts of Juſtice; and as well for their private profit, as the publick good, would have declared themſelves in my favour, to the end, that there might be ſome order taken for the redreſſing of ſo great a wrong. *I* was not ſo wide of the mark; nor did *I* go upon ſuch weak grounds; but that with that which *I* then knew, *I* thought *I* ſhould be able ſtrongly to maintain my opinion; it ſeeming unto me *ſcientiam certam*, a ſetled knowledge, the certainty whereof could not be gain-ſaid.

It might have ſo faln out, that *I* might have defended it with a little coſt, and peradventure *I* might have ſpent much in it, and ſo much, that not onely this one, but all others of this kinde, might have been utterly overthrown. As it did once happen with certain Seſſings that were afoot in thoſe dayes, for that it was found out at laſt, that there was in the ſetting of thoſe rates a certain kinde of Uſury, which our State doth not allow. The cauſe which moved me to this Defence was, becauſe *I* ſaw it grew out of the diſcourſe of natural reaſon: conſidering with my ſelf, that onely from thence all Lawes had their beginning.

But becauſe this buſineſſe crept in by degrees, and was not ſo currant and common in the world as now it is, it was not much ſtood upon. But if we ſhall a little more curiouſly ſearch into it, and the abuſe thereof were well lookt into, I doubt not, but it would appear ſo harſh and ſowr to moſt mens taſtes, that it would in ſome great part, if not wholly, be reformed. For ſuppoſe a thing not to be worth any more than that which is given for it; and that this which is given, ought to be limited, finite, and certain. Now, if to me they ſhould ſell that plat of ground for a thouſand Royals, with two Royals of perpetual rent upon it, and that there is not any man that will give more for it, nor indeed is worth any more; and that *I* have ſpent in building a houſe upon it, three thouſand Ducates at leaſt in good money: If it be true, and a Rule in Law, that no man ought to make himſelf rich with another mans wealth, why ſhould this prolling Officer inrich himſelf out of my moneys. For that this, which gives this value, and inhances the price of the ground, is mine own peculiar purſe, and thoſe moneys *I* laid out my ſelf, is a clear caſe, and cannot be denied. So that if the ſame building which *I* had reared, ſhould be taken down and carried away, the ground it ſelf would remain upon the very ſame terms, as it did before that *I* had bought it. So that this twentieth peny to be levied out of it, ſeemeth in my poor underſtanding to be rather *pœna delicti*, a puniſhment for the offence that *I* had committed in building me an houſe, than *debitum juſtum*, a juſt and due debt: becauſe it had its being from a bad cauſe.

And ſo true is this, which *I* have already told you; that in caſe even that very day that *I* ſold this houſe, *I* ſhould have placed a pillar in it, or a *Statua* of ſtone, of ſome great value, and that buying the ſame, together with my houſe, he ſhould give me in the whole ten thouſand Ducats, out of which ſumme this Office will have a twentieth part; if *I* to excuſe this intolerable tax, may take away, and have taken away the *Statua*, and afterwards ſell the houſe for onely one thouſand Ducates; I may well juſtifie the doing of it, and they can demand no more of me, than what accrews unto them out of the price of the houſe. But that we may proceed a little further; if I ſhould afterwards carry away all the iron-work, the timber, and the glaſſe; if *I* ſhould demoliſh the walls, and ſhould make it, of an houſe of ten thouſand Ducats, ſcarce worth an hundred, *I* may likewiſe do it. And I may lawfully ſell

all that I thus took away, and ſeparated from the houſe, without being charged with the twentieth part.

How then can this hang together, that the parts, every one of them being taken ſeverally by themſelves, do owe no ſuch tax, but in whole and in groſſe, ſhould be liable to this debt? If the Maſter of the Office ſhould ſay unto me, you are to pay me the twentieth part of that price, where you firſt bought this plat of ground, for the which you paid a thouſand Royals, and that the charge wherewith he charged me ſhould ſtill run on in this ſet and certain kinde of manner, there were ſome reaſon for it, as being grounded upon *Dominum rectum*, a true and lawfull claim; for that it was ſold with that condition at ſuch a ſet price, with ſuch a reſervation of a perpetual rent upon it, which I voluntarily and willingly did accept of. But how can he oblige me, or I conſent to pay that which I my ſelf do not know what it is, nor how much it may come to, and which peradventure may mount to ſuch an exceſſive ſumme, that onely with that twentieth part I might buy an whole Town. And as thoſe that I beſtowed upon my houſe were but three thouſand Ducates, they might as well have been three hundred, or thirty thouſand, and that houſe might hap to have been ſold thirty times in one year, which would have come to an exceſſive and exorbitant ſeſſement. And ſuch unreaſonable rates as theſe are neither ratified in the *Civil*, nor the *Canon* Law, nor hath any other ground, or foundation for it, but that which ariſeth from that which we call *jus Gentium*, or the Law of Nations. And that, not *commune*, but *privatum*, not common, but private: for it is impoſed as it pleaſeth the impoſer, nor doth it paſſe generally in all places, but in ſome particular parts; and within four leagues compaſſe, in ſome Towns they pay it, and in ſome not. Eſpecially in *Sevil*, and in almoſt all *Andaluzia* they know no ſuch thing, nor ſo much as ever once heard of it. The perpetual ſeſſement, that was firſt ſetled, this I ſay, is ever more truely paid, without any other taxes, or tallages, though the ſaid poſſeſſion, or houſe ſhould be ſold an hundred thouſand times over.

Now, for to make the carrying away of the twentieth part lawfull, it muſt be by the vertue of the Common-Law, ratified and confirmed by the approbation and conſent of the whole Kingdom, but this neither is ſo, nor ever was, but onely approved by the ignorant; and ſuch mens errours cannot make this good. There is no man but knows the nature and quality of your Seſſings, as alſo how and which way they are to be raiſed, and with what reaſon and moderation, and how much is to be paid out of every hundred: And if theſe be liable to the Laws, and ſubject to their cenſure; why ſhould not theſe perpetual Seſſings, as they call them, ſubmit themſelves in like manner to the Laws? What ſtrange kinde of taxes are theſe? What new kinde of devices to wrong the ſubject? What reaſon is there, that they ſhould be paid in this manner? What ground have they for it? They have but two prices to work upon: Either that for which I bought it; or that for which I ſold it. And why ſhould they not rather pitch upon the price for which it was bought, than for which it was ſold? Will they oblige me to pay theſe duties out of mine own particular moneys, out of my proper expences, out of mine own improving of my eſtate, and out of mine own proper induſtry?

So that every way this caſe is nakedly laid open, and duely conſidered, there being no greater, either Law, or Reaſon on their ſide, than I can ſee as yet it ſeemeth unjuſt, that they ſhould take that my wealth from me, which I had *bona fide* ſpent upon it, or from my wife and my children, being that the one half thereof is ordinarily loſt, that is laid out in building; Why then ſhould it be permitted, that my principal, by the benefit of that piece of ground, ſhould not onely become leſſe than before, but that I muſt afterwards alſo pay and loſe that which they take from me, and carry away with this their twentieth part?

And in caſe it muſt be paid, as paid it is, and that to a peny; let it be lookt into, treated of, and determined: for it being defined and ſet down, we will reſt ſatisfied, becauſe it hath been conſulted on, and that good heads had the handling of it, who would not willingly do any thing, but what is juſt and honeſt; and therefore ought to like of it. But till that courſe be taken, the people take great ſcandal thereat; not a man but talks, and that liberally too, of the great wrong and injury which they receive thereby. Some holding it for a great piece of injuſtice; and others, not able to contain themſelves, ſtyling it with worſer names.

This paſt with me at that time with the Receiver of theſe Seſſements. But he and I were well met, we were as wiſe one as another; I knew little, and he not over much. He would needs reply unto me, ſaying; That was the condition of the Contract, and therefore was of force:

force: for a man may oblige himſelf as far out of his own free will, as if he had been otherwiſe bound. This did not ſatisfie me, wherefore I anſwered that truly, that it were likewiſe a condition of Contract, if I ſhould lend an hundred Ducats, which were to be paid unto me within ſuch a time, wherein if he failed, he was to pay me every day eight Royals, till he had paid me the principal. But this is not lawful: So that to juſtifie a thing, it is not enough, that it is a condition contracted and agreed upon, but we muſt ſee whether it be allowable and lawful.

Then he turned upon me again, and told me: this, Sir, is but a matter of hap-hazard: for that a houſe be ſold, or not be ſold, it is a meer venture: and if it be not ſold, there is nothing due unto me. O what a good reaſon (quoth *I*) is this? As ſoon therefore as the houſe is ſold, the twentieth part muſt be as a puniſhment of the contract. And if it be, why do you binde my hands, and prohibit, that I may not ſell it to ſuch and ſuch perſons? You your ſelf (by your own confeſſion) condemn the Contract. You open the door to all that may pay you, you ſell the thing for that it is worth, and you will have the *Indians* to give you the ſweat of their browes, and take pains for you; and for no other end, but to better your own ground, and by ſecuring you of a good round ſumme of money; they augment your wealth, by diminiſhing their own: And when they muſt live thus by the loſſe, wilt thou have one out of twenty? But ſay ſuch a thing ſhould be done *mala fide*, yet you may pretend your right: but of that poſſeſſion whereof you are now deprived, and have made me Lord thereof in your room, ſhall I out of thoſe things, which *I* may as it pleaſeth me, either remove thence, or bring thither; will you have a penſion out of that, which *I* have ordained for my pleaſure? Of the *Statuas*, the *Pyramides*, the *Fountains*, of whoſe conduits and waters I alwayes am Lord and Maſter, and can alienate all this from thee, without letting thee have any part therein? Wilt thou have it adjudged unto thee, becauſe thou ſaieſt, it muſt follow with the whole, as a thing that is founded on the ground?

That *totum* of yours, *I* do not well underſtand (ſaid he) what it is, neither can I believe, that it can be brought within the compaſſe of juſtice, and that you can carry it away by Law. And I am verily perſwaded, that they who know and underſtand theſe things, and are able to determine of them, will not incline to your part.

I paid him that which he call'd his due, though ſore againſt my will, and having made my proteſtation againſt it, *I* began to follow the ſuit; but becauſe the Schools at *Alcala* were now ſhortly to be opened, and that the time drew neer for the reading of their Lectures, I gave that over, that I might go about that which did more neerly concern me. And ſo committing the care of this and ſome other buſineſſes to a Solicitor, a friend of mine, and to my father in law, I prepared for my journey. I got me my money together, and put it out to profit, which yielded me a moderate gain, purpoſing to ſpend upon my ſelf ſo much as was needful and neceſſary for me. I made me a cloak, and a *Sotana*, provided my ſelf of bedding and ſuch other implements as were fitting for a Students chamber, and ſo preſently got me to *Alcara de Henares*, where I had ſo often wiſht to be.

When *I* came thither, *I* was doubtful with my ſelf, what I were beſt to do, not knowing as yet what to reſolve upon, and whether it would be my better and more profitable courſe, to take a chamber by my ſelf, and to be all alone, or to be under pupillage, and common with others. I had known already what it was to keep and govern an houſe, to be chief commander of it, to pleaſe mine own taſte, and to enjoy mine own liberty. Yet notwithſtanding, having reſpect to the leſſer trouble of two, *I* was content at laſt to take my fortune in the Common, amongſt the reſt of thoſe Pupils, that dieted altogether in one houſe, though it went ſomewhat againſt the hair with me, (*I* muſt confeſſe) to ſubmit my ſelf to the poor and ſlender pittance of a Maſter over Pupils, who was to command in the houſe, to ſit at the upper end of the table, to divide the Commons, and to give every man his portion upon his plate, with thoſe his filthy, and perhaps mangy fingers, and thoſe his foul and dirty nails, as crooked and as long as thoſe of an *Oſtriche*, tearing rather, than cutting the fleſh out into threeds and ſtrings, like the rending of the barbes from the root of ſome plant, or young tree, diſtributing the porrige in Lettice-leaves, to make it ſtretch the farther, cutting the bread eaven, and giving every one his ſlice for the avoiding of waſte, allowing us no new bread, but that which was ſtale and hard, that we might eat the leſſe of it; our *Olla* was nothing but the fat of Bacon, whence onely it might take its name, which made it very glorious both to ſee to, and more clear than the light, at leaſt, ſo bright, that a man might eaſily diſcern the leaſt Louſe that fell from our ſleeves in the bottome of the porringer. Which if we did not ſwallow down inſtead of a crumb, we ſhould take forth with our fingers, and crack it be-

tween

tween our nails. And of theſe kind of repaſts, we had ſome four and fifty every moneth; for on the Saturdayes, we alwayes made our meals of *Mondongo's*. In fruit-time we had ſome four Cherries, three ſowr Plummes, one or two little Apricocks, half a pound of Figgs, and now and then a whole pound, according to the number of thoſe that ſate at table; but in that minced and curtal manner, that there was none of us ſo nimble finger'd, that we could come to vie it the ſecond time.

Our grapes were divided by little ſprigs or bunches, even as they give little children to the Bever, being no more in the whole, than would lie upon a poor little plate, and he that had moſt, had not above ſix grapes that fell to his ſhare.

And of theſe you muſt underſtand, that we had not all of all ſorts every day, but in one onely kinde: for when we had Figs, we had no grapes; and when we had Cherries, we had no Apricocks. Our Tutor would tell us, that too much fruit would breed tertian Agues, and therefore for our healths ſake, he would not have us to have any more, for fear we ſhould be ſick.

In winter-time upon a little Plate, thinly ſcattered, we ſhould have a few Raiſins laid out, as if they had meant to dry them in the Sun, ſo far off were they ſundred the one from the other.

For our laſt courſe, to cloſe up our ſtomack, we had a thin ſlice of cheeſe, which ſeemed rather to be a ſpiders web, than any thing elſe, or like thoſe thinne ſhavings which your Joyners planiſh away with their plainers, when they ſhave their wainſcot; alledging that thoſe thicker ſlunchins would dull our wits. Beſides, it was ſo full of eyes, and ſo tranſparent, that whoſoever had ſeen it, would have judged it to have been the *diaphragma*, or that thinne and ſlender cauſe of ſome young little Kid, or ſome Lambkins mid-riffe; and for a need might have ſerved inſtead of ſpectacles, ſo eaſily could we ſee through them.

Other whiles we had half a Pompeon amongſt us all, and a little thin cut of a ſmall Melon, nothing ſo big as a mans head, but about the bigneſſe of my fiſt, or a well grown Pear. And upon fiſh-daies, we had a meſſe of lentil porrige, ſuch as *Æſope* was fed withall, being no better than Ducks-meat; and if at any time we had peaſe-porrige (which was very ſeldome that we had ſuch Gaudies) I aſſure you, that the beſt and cunningeſt *Indian* diver of them all, that fiſhes for pearls, muſt have been forced to have dived four times, at leaſt, to the bottome of my porringer, before he ſhould be able to bring up one of theſe pearls; which how ſcarce they were to be met withall, you may judge by this, that the peaſe had not given ſo much tincture to the porrige, as would ſerve to give a colour to a wenches coyſe. One day in the Lent, and no more, he did uſe to give us Cheſſenuts for an Antipaſt to whet our ſtomacks, but no honey with them, for that they were ſweet enough (he ſaid) of themſelves; and of theſe too, we had but a few, for he would tell us, we were as good eat ſo much wood, they were ſo hard of digeſtion.

What ſhall I ſay unto you concerning your fiſh, which was poorer than the worſt poor John, of our withered and rotten ropes of Onions, our purple-fiſh, our dried Pilchards, that had hung I know not how long in the ſmoke, and a man had as good alſo be hanged, as to have eaten of them, being ſo dry and ſo ſalt, as if they would have fretted out our very guts and bowels. We had every one a piece, and had the head alſo into the bargain, if it were a faſting-day; but on other dayes we had but half an one, and that was ſlit aſunder, head and all, and equally divided between two of us.

What ſhall I tell you of that other fiſh, which the Abbot will not meddle with, becauſe it was ſo rammiſh, and ſtunk ſo vilely? Yet they ſet it before us, and we muſt be contented with it. As alſo of our fri'd eggs, that we had now and then, like unto thoſe in ſome baſe Inne, or poor Victualling-houſe, or little better, if not ſometimes worſe; for they would buy a great many of them together, that they might have them the better cheap, keeping them in a tub of aſhes, or in ſome great heap of ſalt, that they might not grow ſtale, and addle; and in this manner would they preſerve them ſome ſix or ſeven moneths, whole and ſound.

What ſhall I ſay to our benediction or giving thanks both before and after our meals, and how neceſſary we were ti'd to a ſolemn grace? Inſomuch, that a certain Student, who took his diet in ſuch another kind or Ordinary, as I did, coming late to dinner, and being very hot with the haſt that he had made before they ſhould have dined, fell to unbuttoning of his doublet, and to unbrace himſelf for coolneſſe, and when he vvas about to fall to his meat, he might hear them begin to give thanks: vvith that he ſtruck his hands againſt the

boord,

boord, and with a loud voice ſaid unto them; Silence (my Maſters) I know not what I ſhould give thanks for, let them give thanks that have cauſe ſo to do, for I ſee none.

At ſupper we had a Sallet, but a very poor one, and a great deal of chopt green ſtuff, (I know not what) amongſt it; for they would not loſe ſo much as the green leaves of a Radiſh root, or the blade of an Onion, whereof they would not make uſe, pouring a little unſavoury oil into it, and a little vinegar, whereof the one half was water, the Lettice were onely thinly ſpread upon the top with two or three ſlices of Carrets, with a little Marjoram or Penny-royal mixed with it; they were wont ſometimes to intermix with it (but alwayes all the Summer long) a hodge-podge of boiled mutton, and was nothing but mammocks.

They would buy of the reffuſe bones, which the Cooks had left out, when they made their pies; they did coſt but little, and took up much room. The ſhow being greater than the price. And when we had not whereon to gnaw, we wanted not yet whereof to ſuck; and the hungry ſavour of our porridge was a ſhooing-horn to draw down the hardneſſe of our bread. We had alſo certain wilde Olives allowed us, becauſe we ſhould not eat too many of them, for feare of ſetting our teeth on edge. Our wine was like that which they gave our Saviour upon the Croſſe, compound ſtuffe, that taſted worſe than ſowre beer.

What ſhall I tell you of the care that our Tutors wife had, to notifie unto us the faſting-dayes that were in every week; to the end, that we might not look for our Collation; nor call for our break-faſt; and for the more ſurety that ſhe might not erre, ſhe would uſually ſay there were two, when there was but one. What ſhall I tell you of the commutations of our ſuppers into dinners, which being put both together would not make up a reaſonable nunchions. Which when they did give it us, was weighed out as juſt, and as even, as you would weigh Saffron, allotting to every one his four ounces, and not a penny-weight over; as if this ſame *Caſuiſt*, who did thus ſeize us, did know our neceſſity, and how much would juſt ſerve our turn; or as if in regard of our long ſtudies, and ſhort dinners, (and thoſe none of the beſt) we had not reaſon to finde fault, ſeeing we were uſed all alike, and were now entred like fellow-labourers into one and the ſelf-ſame Vineyard, where every man muſt have one and the ſame allowance, not one having more than another. Or, if the food that they gave us were well fitted and proportioned for our ſuſtenance; being that was ſo limited, ſo ſcanted, ſo little, and ſo ill dreſt, than your ſchool-boyes, and poorer ſort of Scholars could not have their diet in a worſe faſhion, who have their ſtomacks pinn'd to their back-bone, who have more mind to a good meal, than a good lecture, and a greater will to eat than to ſtudy.

This our Tutor that boorded us, would now and then tell us, that *Marcus Aurelius* was wont to ſay; That ſots and fools onely had poor ſtudies of books, and tables plentifully furniſhed with meats; ſtinting their mindes more than their bellies; but that a wiſe man (ſhewing himſelf therein moſt wiſe) doth abhor full diſhes, and will feed very ſparingly that he may the ſooner and the better retire himſelf to his ſtudies: That Hogs and horſes fatneſſe did well become them, but that it was more commendable in men to be lean and ſlender; for that your groſſe men are commonly groſſe-witted; beſides they have a filthy wallowing gate, they are unfit to fight either for themſelves or their friends; they are a kinde of unweldie lump, an unprofitable maſſe of fleſh and bone, being not able to uſe any manly exerciſe; whereas we ſee it is quite otherwiſe in thoſe that are lean, and not laden with fat.

I was willing to grant him this; to the end, that he might not deny me a more manifeſt truth than the other; to wit, That a little meat, and that naught, quickly ſhortens the life of man. And if I may not live to thrive by my ſtudies, it is but loſt labour to drudge at my book. What Falcon I pray, was ever brought into the field to flie, which was not firſt fed before ſhe came there? What Greyhound, or other Dog, was ever put to courſe, or to hunt before they had put victuals into their belly? They muſt both be kept reaſonably high, and not come hunger-ſtarv'd into the field; for then will neither the one maintain her flight, nor the other her courſe. They muſt be kept in good ſtate, and ſo muſt we Students. There is a mean in all things; and that mean is the beſt. We will grant to theſe meat-moderators, theſe gut-mathematicians, That it is not fit to feed to fulneſſe, nor to cram the belly as full as it will hold: ſo as they will yield again on the other ſide, that we are not to faſt, till we grow ſo feeble therewith, that our legs are not able to ſupport our bodies. And we had one ſtudent there amongſt us, who was well known to have his guts ſhrunk, and his excre-

excrements grown mouldy through the penuriousneſſe of his diet. Yet notwithſtanding I thought good to make choice, as of the leſſer inconvenience, to enter into penſion: it ſeeming unto me, that being (as I was) a man of ſome years, if I ſhould take a chamber-fellow unto me, I muſt comfort my ſelf with one that was mine equal, and ſuch another as I am; conſidering with my ſelf, that as our countenances muſt be differing, ſo we might differ in our conditions; whereby it might ſo come to paſſe, that whereas I had a purpoſe to profit my ſelf by learning, my ſtudies might end in the harmful exerciſe of Vices, frequenting them more than the Schools. Of two evils I choſe the leſſe; and ſo became a Pupil: Though I knew they would play upon me, and laugh and ſcoff at me, to ſee ſuch a Gyant as I was, in regard of the reſt, with ſuch a big muzzel, and ſuch another great beard, as the good wife of *Pennaranda*, to ſit and converſe with boyes. Yet it was ſome comfort unto me, that there were likewiſe ſome boorders amongſt us, that were as big Lubbers (almoſt) as my ſelf; ſo that (to ſay the truth) we, and thoſe leſſer frie, were mixed one amongſt another, like peaſe and beans. And this benefit I had by boording my ſelf, that I was free from all manner of care and trouble, not being put to make mine own proviſion, nor to take thought either for my dinner or my ſupper, but remained free and at full liberty to follow my book, and ſuch other things as I had moſt minde unto. For he that will attend his ſtudies, muſt firſt ſtudy to remove all impediments, that may be an hinderance unto them, and he that will not do ſo, may goe ſhooe goſlings, for any great good he ſhall get thereby. I did ſeek all that I could to avoid your Innes-of-Court Wenches, thoſe your ancient maids, or more elderly matrons, that make a living of ſweeping chambers, making of beds, emptying of piſ-pots, and other the like ſervile Offices; for they are worſe than fire, burning and conſuming what ever is before them.

What we ſay of theſe may likewiſe be meant of our Miſtreſſes, our Tutors wives; we may put them all into a pack, and ſhuffle them together; Miſtreſſe and maid, maid and Miſtreſſe, all is one; there is not an half-peny odds between them: Oh, how my fingers ends do itch at them! How much better were it to box them about the ears, and to tugge them by the hair, than to do them any the leaſt kindneſſe, or courteſie in the world? I ſpeak of theſe Governeſſes over your young Sudents, who will ſeeme to take all the care upon them of guiding the houſe, and ordering all things in good faſhion, as if nothing could be done well without them, when as there is not a more raſcal, or roguiſher kind of people in the world. Oh, how quick and nimble in filching and ſtealing! How dull and lazy to doe any labour! Oh, how cleane would they make our Cheſts; but how foule would they keepe the houſe.

Our Maſter had one Governeſſe amongſt the reſt, who did commonly ſteal from us a third part of that which ſhe ſhould have given us: And when ſhe could not come to the fingring of our money, or to pilfering this or that other thing out of our coffers, or our trunks; ſhe would rob us of our coals, our ſpices, our peaſe, and whatſoever elſe ſhe could cleanly lay hands on, and theſe commodities ſhe kept apart by themſelves, and when they were grown to ſome pretty quantity, ſhe would ſell that unto us, which we had paid for already; faigning to have brought that, which we well knew ſhe had ſtolne. If ſhe were to waſh our linnen, ſhe would cozen us of our ſope, and what with the boiſterous blowes of her beetle, ſquaſhing and beating them upon ſome ſtone or waſhing-block, and renſing them in river water with I know not how many lavers, ſhe made our cloaths reaſonable white, though ſhe took away two thirds of the life of the threeds, which we were forced, through ill handling to turn into tinder, ſooner than (had it been well uſed) we needed to have done. So that we were not onely damnified by that which ſhe purloyned from us, but ſhe marred and quite ſpoiled that which remained unto us. Now, if you would fain know, how ſhe ſpent that which ſhe had thus got, hearken unto me, and I ſhall tell you.

This Governeſſe, maid, ſervant, houſwife, kitchin-drudge, or what other name ſuch a vile creature can be capable of, when ſhe did not ſell that which ſhe had ſtoln; ſhe kept it for ſome poor Scholar, or Servitor, that was her ſvvet-heart, on whom with all care and diligence ſhe attended, furniſhing him vvith all ſuch things as he had need of; he could not lack that vvhich ſhe could not preſently help him to. For him vvould ſhe ſteal our bread; for him vvould ſhe skim our pot, reſerving the very beſt, and as it vvere the very cream and flovvr of all that vvere therein for him: And if by chance he vvere in the houſe, ſhe vvould be ſure to give him of the fatteſt of the porridge, vvith ſippets

of

of bread throughly ſoaked in it, and fleſh without bones, and his linnen cleanly and handſomely waſht with ſope; and in a word, ſhe maintained him well, out of our means; for it was our, and not her purſe that paid for it.

In concluſion, ſuch kind of women as theſe are prejudicial, untameable, notable lurchers, arrant thieves, farre worſe than that ſouldiers boy, who plaid the wag-paſty with his Maſters Paſty; and of eight *Maravedis* made twelve. For he opened the lid of the Paſtie, that it was not to be perceived; and ſupt up all the ſirrup and ſweetneſſe that was in it. Afterwards, his Maſter ſending him for wine, he kept the eight *Maravedis* that were given him, to himſelf, and ſold the Jarre for four, preſently comming crying home unto him, and telling him, that the Jarre brake by the way, and all the wine was ſpilt.

There never came a quarter of Mutton into the houſe, but that by little and little we loſt a fifth part of it, and with it the kidney, ſaying; That for the devotion which ſhe bare to the bleſſed Saint *Zoilo*, ſhe would not boil that part; ſo that the kidneys never came to our ſhare; they fell to her Sweet-hearts lot. But he was not ſo devoted unto her, as to offer her all that he had. There was not any thing that we had, whereof he had not a part, nay ſometimes all; ſaying, I put it here, it ſtood there but now, the Cat hath eaten it, ſome body or other hath taken it away, and a thouſand ſuch excuſes to ſerve her turn, ſtealing and filching from us at her pleaſure. But will you peradventure ſeek to reſtrain theſe theeves, to limit them, to keep them within their bounds, or to hinder them in any thing contrary to their liking? It is impoſſible to do it. Speak but a word unto them, that doth not pleaſe them, there is not an houſe in all that ſtreet, nor a ſhop, a tavern, nor an oven, where ſhe will not make a large relation of your life, reckoning up all the miracles done by you, painting you out to be a wretched and unfortunate man, baſe-minded, a crib, an hunger-ſtarv'd whore-ſon, a miſerable wretch of an ill condition, a grumble-ſeed, one that is ſtill murmuring, that a hen cannot lay an egge, but you muſt be prying into her neſt, that you muſt have an eye to the skimming of the pot, that you will tie your bacon to a ſtring, and put it into the kettle amongſt other meat, a fourth part whereof ſhall ſerve you a whole week, taking it out one day, and putting it in another, making thy meal of one poor morſel, to make it hold out the longer. Will you turn her out of doors, and take another, you ſhall not finde any that will come at you; and ſo you muſt be forced to ſerve your ſelf: for ſhe that is gone from you, will tell her that is to come unto you, what a manner of man you are, what an ill life ſhe led with you, and for what cauſe ſhe quit her ſelf of your ſervice. In a word, he that will be ſerved by them, muſt wink at all their faults, muſt make no replies; and beſides, muſt let them do what they liſt, let them have their owne will, and yet that will ſcarce content them.

I remember, that before I was married, I received a maid-ſervant into my houſe; and for that ſhe was a beaſtly filthy ſlut, an idle drone, and altogether unfit for ſervice, I turned her away after ſhe had been ſome three dayes with me: Then I took another, who ſeemed to be in good health when ſhe came unto me, but falling ſick of her old diſeaſe; ſhe onely continued with me two dayes, and went back again to the Hoſpital, from whence ſhe came. Preſently after I had a third, a neat ſervant, but a great thief; for, willing her to roſt me a Coney, ſhe cuts it in pieces, and ſtues it, and brought onely to the Table the head, the legges, and the wings, diſpoſing of the reſt, as ſhe thought good; for which roguery of hers, ſhe ſtaid with me onely that day, and the next morning I put her away.

When my neighbours ſaw that I had three ſervants in ſix dayes, and that every one of them went away mumbling their mattens, and murmuring at me, a bad report went of me, they laid an hundred faults to my charge, and did diſcredit my ſervice in that ſhameful and vile manner, that for ſome twenty dayes after, I was fain to take my diet in a common Victualling-houſe. For no woman would be drawn to my houſe, by reaſon of the evil ſpeech that was given of me, till ſuch time that a friend of mine, brought me one, that was worſe than all the reſt: for ſhe would be in love with every body, and deny none that would ask her the queſtion: Not any Stallion that came amiſſe to her: She was a wheel that was eaſily to be turned with every hand. I would preſently have put her away, but I durſt not, for fear of being ill ſpoken of by my neighbours. And I tell you the truth: For this cauſe I held it the leſſer inconvenience of the two, to leave my houſe, and to hire me another in ſome other ſtreet that was was farther off, keeping her till then with me, before I would diſmiſſe her. And ſo I did. If you were at home, ſhe would be abroad;

if you were abroad, ſhe would be at home. If ſhe have nothing to do, ſhe will call to you for flax; and if you give it her, ſhe will ſay you are miſerable, and too great a huſband. And neither of theſe are without their myſtery. But this I leave to your conjecture.

And how can you imagine them to be otherwiſe than ill diſpoſed in their perſons, when as there is not any Governeſſe, eſpecially amongſt theſe your Scholars, which is not branded with the like baſeneſſe? Theſe kind of creatures would not converſe with all, nor yet filch from all, they would have little or nothing to do with your young idle fellows, that lie loitering in the market-place, nor with your Lackayes, nor ſteal from ſome, though they found it lying before them upon the ground.

*I* did not make any reckoning of it, nor did it trouble me ſo much, to ſee that they robbed of my goods, or that they were never without one Sweet-heart or other, that ſtill haunted their company, though I was not willing to give way to any ſuch things in my houſe; as that they went about to rob me of my judgement and my underſtanding, and to deprive me of my ſenſes; for with lies and tears they would ſeek to grace and countenance their villanies; ſo that though the truth thereof appeared unto me as clear as noon-day, and that with theſe eyes *I* plainly perceived their rogueries, their knaveries, and all their wicked ſhifts and devices, yet they would force me whether I would or no, and contrary to mine owne knowledge, to hold their converſation and their carriage to be good and honeſt. A man muſt ſuffer much at their hands, even at all times, and in all ages. If they be old, they are ſtarke naught; if young, farre worſe. And if one be ſo troubleſome, what will two be? Happy is that man that can excuſe himſelfe of them, and ſerve himſelfe with leſſe; for no man is worſe ſerved, than he that is moſt ſerved.

Notwithſtanding, I proteſt, that *I* do not ſpeak this of our Miſtreſſe Governeſſe, or with purpoſe that ſhe ſhould hear me, for I know her to be a good woman, and of that kinde nature, that ſhe will forget and forgive all, if you will but begin to her in a cup of wine.

*I* was now ſetled in my Pupillage, which *I* patiently ſuffered, that I might not ſuffer: What was amiſſe, I ſought to amend, by ſome proviſion of dainties, which I kept ſtill in ſtore in my chamber, with which I paſt the better, entertaining my ſtomack with them, when I ſaw it was needful. We thought it good diſcretion ſo to do, and our Maſter was well content with it, that we ſhould roſt a good lunch of pork, or boil us a friendly piece of bacon, and onely out of the hope that he had, that we would invite him unto it, and I doubt not but all Tutors, by a general conſent, would yield to accept of ſuch conditions as theſe, four days in a week.

Living in this manner, as I have told you, after *I* had ſtudied the Arts and the Metaphyſicks, and had duely obſerved thoſe publick Lectures that were required of me, they gave me the ſecond place, when I was preſented to take my degree, the whole Univerſity crying out, that they had therein done me great wrong, in taking the firſt place from me, that they might confer it on a Gentle-mans ſon of good rank and quality, but my *Junior*.

Having taken my degree, *I* began now to fall to my Divinity, and to frequent thoſe Lectures. *I* entred into it with a great deal of delight: for I took much pleaſure in following my book, that bait that drew me on, being that moſt ſweet entertainment of the Schools, becauſe it was a kind of life that was ſomewhat neer a-kin to that, which *I* had always led. Where doth a man enjoy more liberty, than in the Univerſity? And who lives ſo merry and ſo quiet a life, as your Scholars? What entertainment of all ſorts whatſoever have not your Students amongſt them? There is not the thing you can name, that they want. In a word, they have what they will, and do what they will. *If* they will be civil and retired, they may fit themſelves with company that ſhall jump juſt with them: If looſe and diſſolute, they ſhall meet with as mad wagges as themſelves. There every bird ſhall finde ſome, of his own feather, ſuch as ſhall equally ſute with them in their diſpoſition. The ſtudious ſhall have thoſe that will confer with them about their ſtudies, that will keep their ſet hours, write out Lectures, compare their Notes, and punctually perform all thoſe laudable exerciſes that appertain to a good Student: And if they are diſpoſed to walk abroad, they are like unto your *Biſkainers*, thoſe women that live in the mountainous Countreys; who wheresoever they goe, carry their diſtaffe along with them, that a man may truely ſay of them, That they plow, ſpinning. Wheresoever you light upon a Student, though he be out of his Colledge, and walk abroad with a purpoſe onely to recreate himſelf

by

by the Rivers side, in those sweet and pleasant fields, yet even then doth his wit and his memory also go a walking, calling to minde what he hath read, arguing and reasoning upon this, or that other point; and conferring with himself on those things, which he hath studied, being never lesse alone, than when he is thus alone. For men that employ their time well, though alone, cannot be truely said to be alone. If once in a year, he will take his liberty, and ride into the Countrey, slacking for awhile the string of his bow, fetching some vagaries abroad to make merry with his friends; what sports, or what pastimes can be equall'd with theirs? How by their Art will they make a Pasty to run of it self up and down the Table? A Melon, to roll from one end of the boord to the other? Your biskets, and other dishes of sweet-meats to daunce as they will have them? Who can so featly do these tricks as they? If you will give your Mistresse Musick at her window, if you will bestow a posie on her, some fine embleme, or the like device, entertain her with pretty jests, and witty conceits: will you have them with a *stentorious* voyce to deliver an Oration *ex tempore*, to maintain Paradoxes for pleasure and entertainment, to presse an Argument to the proof, to invent a thousand merry toyes, to passe away the time, to make something of nothing, onely to shew their wit, without any reason, or ground that they have to maintain it: Who; where, or how, can these things be done so handsomly in all the world, as in the Schools of *Alcala*? Where have you braver, or more flourishing wits in the Arts, in Physick, and Divinity? Where have you Colledges better seen and practised in the three principal languages? Whence do there dayly proceed so many and so good Students, as from thence? Where is the like concourse to be found of so many well-skill'd in the Arts, who conversing together like friends and brothers, yet as if they were enemies, are alwayes one against another in the exercise of learning? Where so many, so good, and such faithfull friends to be had? Where such good fashion, such good fellowship, such good discipline, such good skill in Musick, in arms, in dancing, running, leaping, and throwing the bar, making their wits able, and their bodies agile? Where do concur so many good things together, besides the pureness of the aire, the clearness of the sky, the temperateness of the Heaven above, and the fertileness of the soyl beneath; and above all, such a Cathedral Church, which may justly be called the *Phœnix* of the world, for the rare and singular workmanship in that most stately and unmatchable fabrick? O my dear mother *Alcala*, what shall I say of thee, that may sufficiently expresse thy worth? Or how, without wronging thee, shall I be silent in thy praise? I shall do thee wrong, and yet I cannot do it. Though it were better for me to hold my peace, for therein I should lesse offend. It was a rare thing, if not a wonder, to see any Schollar so debaux'd, or so wholly given over to Vice (were it of gaming, or otherwise) that would omit the principal end for which he was sent thither, or neglect those good studies, whereunto he was to apply himself; for with us, no greater infamy could befall him, than to be accounted an idle loyterer, and mis-spender of his time. O the sweetness of a Schollers life! You cannot imagine the many pleasures and delights that they take: O how merry do they make themselves upon Saint *Nicolas* day, when they meet to make choice of some pretty little Bishops amongst them! What sport do they make with your Fresh-men! How do they play the wags with them, putting them upon a wheel, and twirling them down into a hollow pit, bring them up again laden with snow! How put a little round rolling-pin between the lid of their chests, and the lock, taking forth what they can finger, challenging it as a fee for their entrance! Not a book of theirs that can escape their hands, no nor their very Cloaks that are upon their shoulders. What a pleasure is it to see them labour and canvase for voyces, to make up a major part at the election of their Genetal! How close do they that are Countrey-men cling and stick together, how do they stickle to make their own man, every one striving to prefer him that is of their own Shire, or Province! How stifly and how faithfully will they labour in the businesse! What a quarter and a racket do they keep, posting away Messengers to this friend, and that friend; impawning all that they can rap, or wring, till the next return of the Carrier; some of their books lye in Lavandar at the Cooks; some at this Inne, and some at that: *Scotus* his works are in pawn at the *Bunneleros*, or those that sell Fritters, *Aristotles* lye ingaged in the Tavern; *Bartolus* at the Bakers; *Baldus*, and all his fellow *Civilians*, some in one place, some in another: So one thing after another, all goes away, not sparing so much as the Jack of male that lies between our mattresses; the sword that is under our bed, the pot-lid that hangs in the Kitchin, the covers of the powdring tubs, of the pans, and what not? In what Comfit makers shop, had not we a pawn and a score, when our credit began to fail?

In this manner, and with these entertainments did I merrily passe my time, till I was ready

dy to profeſſe Divinity. And when I was upon my laſt year, and ready to proceed Bachelor therein, my ſins carried me one evening towards *Santa Maria del val*: there are ſome kind of Pilgrimages, and other the like places for devotion, that a man were better break his leg, and abide at home, than to gad thither. For we often go thither, not with any intention to give an alms to the poor, or to pour forth our prayers unto God, and to praiſe and thank him for his benefits; but all clean contrary. There we commit a thouſand offences againſt our Lord God, that it were better for us not onely to break our leg, but our neck too, and to die in the ſtate of grace. I know, and ſo doeſt thou too, why I ſpeak it. This perambulation or ſtation of mine, was the chief cauſe, and principal occaſion of my utter undoing. Hence roſe that terrible ſtorm of my tempeſtuous life, the deſtruction of my wealth, and the final overthrow of my credit.

I went out of my Lodging, with a purpoſe onely to viſit this holy houſe. I did ſo: And at my entring into the Church, I eſpy'd a company of vvomen; and amongſt them, ſome very beautifull and handſom; according to my wonted cuſtom, I made towards the Font, where the holy water was: I dipt in my right hand, and that little I took out on the tops of my fingers, I ſprinkled on my fore-head: But having my eyes and my feet tending towards that fair herd which you heard me ſpeak of. Not ſo much as once offering to look towards the Altar, nor once dreaming, or thinking on the Sacrament, I kneeled with one knee on the ground, putting forth my other leg in that manner of poſture, as your Fowlers uſe to do, when they lye cloſe to make a ſhoot. And inſtead of croſſing and bleſſing my ſelf, I made an hundred love-ſigns; and that I might the better drive theſe Conies into the Net, I went directly towards them; but before I could come at them, the game was riſen; and going away from thence, they took down through a grove of Alder-trees, towards the River-ſide; and being come to a pretty little green meadow, they made the graſſe their cuſhions, and ſo ſate them down. I followed them afar off, to ſee where they did quat, and perceiving that they had there taken up their reſt, and meant to ſit by it, for they had now taken out of their ſlieves ſuch junkets as they had brought along with them. And as they were thus preparing for their bever, fair and ſoftly, and in a ſober and civil faſhion, I drew nearer and nearer unto them: This good company conſiſted of a vviddow-woman, a good honeſt Hoſteſſe, & two of her Daughters, that were more fair and beautifull than *Caſtor* and *Pollux*, beſides ſome other their friends and acquaintance, that were not much inferiour unto them, as being likewiſe endowed with thoſe gracefull gifts of nature; but ſhe whoſe name was *Grace*, (for ſo was the elder Daughter to my Hoſteſſe called) did ſo far exceed the reſt, that they ſeemed rather her attendants, than her companions; they were Stars, but my *Grace* was the Sunne.

I was a man generally vvell known, I had reſided in *Alcala* ſome ſeven years, and better; was accounted one of the beſt Students amongſt them, and held to be rich, which was no ſmall addition to my credit; Attributes, that have the power to draw the hardeſt hearts to love. And theſe vvenches were the buxomeſt and the wittieſt in all the Town. Now they were beginning to fall to their *merendar*, or inter-mealary repaſt, when jeſting with them, I began to inſinuate my ſelf, and to cloſe with them; wherein I was not ſo crafty, but they were as cunning.

But before I proceed any farther, leaving this buſineſſe on theſe terms you ſee, I muſt give you to underſtand, that what with the charge I was at, for books to furniſh my ſtudy, for the taking of my degrees, and for apparel, I, and my monies, had in a manner made an even reckoning. I had ſome left, but ſo little, that I was not able therewith to take my farther degrees, and ſo enter into holy Orders. And becauſe, before I was to proceed Bachelor of Divinity, I muſt neceſſarily take Orders, and this was impoſſible for me to do, becauſe I wanted an Eccleſiaſtical benefice, or ſome Chaplainſhip to qualifie me; I had no other ſhift to help my ſelf withall, but to have recourſe unto my Father in Law, and to requeſt his helping hand, with whom I did alwayes communicate my neceſſities, whoſe friendſhip had never yet failed me. He did encourage me on in my good courſes, by affording me at once his beſt, both advice and help. For little doth he (that is able) who doth not as well afford us his hand, as his head; his help, as his counſel.

He told me, that he would make a Donation unto me of the poſſeſſions of my wifes Dowry, ſaying; that he would beſtow the ſame upon me for the maintaining of a Chaplain to ſay Maſſe for his Soul: and that I on the other ſide, ſhould make a Declaration of the truth, obliging my ſelf by bond to return the ſame again, when and as oft, as he ſhould require it at my hands. Even in theſe things alſo are theſe Counter-bonds ſtark naught, being

that

that they take place againſt that which is eſtabliſhed by the Holy Councels, running on ſo inſolently and impudently, devoid of the feat of thoſe grievous penalties and cenſures, which they incur by theſe their Simoniacal contracts. O good God, how is it poſſible to cut off the thread whereat this ſo great a miſchief hangs, ſince *I* cannot reform this abuſe in my ſelf!

*I* kindly accepted of his offer, and gave him many thanks for that his good will was ſuch unto me, that he would hand in hand walk with me to Hell, to keep me company.

Shall I here ſay any thing unto you concerning this point? Me thinks I hear you ſay, No: And that I ſhould meddle no more with matters of Reformation, unleſſe they might do more good, and work more amendment than (for ought you ſee) they yet do. I can do no more than I can do. But ſay (Friend GUZMAN) I could, put that to thy account, for what is this to me? Nothing, I aſſure thee. Doeſt thou think, that thou art the onely man that is ſenſible of theſe things? That thou art the firſt that hath found fault with theſe abuſes, or that thou ſhalt be the laſt that ſhall complain of them? Do thou talk of that, which concerns thee a little more nearly, and makes more for thy preſent purpoſe: For (if thou be remembred) you left thoſe pretty vvenches with the meat in their mouths (feaſting and making merry) and expecting the words that ſhould come from yours. Bring us back again therefore to to thy former diſcourſe, and let theſe things alone, for there will a day come when my Lady *Simony* ſhall have her doom.

Thou ſayeſt well, thy demand is reaſonable, and I cannot denied thee. And ſince that I am ſo willing to yield to thy requeſt, do me likewiſe the favour, pardon this my fault, in falling afreſh upon this ſubject.

I ſtood upon theſe terms which you have already heard me tell you, I had paſt over all my Lectures, and in a manner ended all my exerciſes, a Chaplainſhip ſetled upon me to qualifie me for the taking of Orders, being within three Moneths after to take my degree. This was in *February*, I was to take my Orders the firſt Ember-week following, and my degree about the beginning of *May*.

This pretty Souls ſayings and doings, name and actions, were compact of *Grace*: and all the graces being put together, (ſhould they come upon compariſon) muſt fall ſhort of this Grace. For her wit, ſhe was a Cabinet ſtored with all manner of pleaſant and merry conceits: for her beauty, I know not how to expreſſe it better than by ſilencing it: ſhe ſang delicately, plaid daintily on the Viol, was wonderfull diſcreet, had a nimble apprehenſion, but quicker eyes, wherewith (me thought) ſhe formed a pretty kinde of chearfull laughter upon him, towards whom ſhe was pleaſed to turn them, ſo ſparkling and clear were they, and ſo full both of life and love. Glancing with them to and fro, her and mine met, it ſeeming on the ſudden, that the viſive beams in both reconcentrating themſelves in this encounter by a reciprocal percuſſion, ſtruck home upon our Souls. I knew it was affection in her, and ſhe was fully perſwaded of the like in me. She had robb'd me of my Soul; and ſo I told her then, ſpeaking aloud to her by my looks, but not a word of any ſuch matter that came from my mouth. All that I then uttered was onely this; That he would be pleaſed ſo far forth to grace me, as to make me worthy their company, by inviting me to be their Gueſt. They did ſo, every one of them did offer me a part of their junkets, and did in a manner inforce me to receive this courteſie from their hands.

When *I* had given them thanks for this undeſerved kindneſſe they had ſhown me, commending much their fair carriage, *I* began (with a very good will, though ſeeming to be conſtrained by their command,) to ſpread my Cloak upon the ground, and ſitting down thereupon, *I* took my ſhare amongſt them, (which was none of the leaſt) for they did all ſtrive who ſhould make moſt of me, and bid me moſt welcom. *I* did greatly acknowledge this their love, the vvine went round, we took and gave healths one from another, as they came about to our turn, and made ſo good a beever, that *I* might very well excuſe my ſupper.

When we had made an end of eating, a maid-ſervant, that waited upon them, took out a Viol, which ſhe had brought along with her under her mantle; and *Grace* putting it with a very good grace unto my hand, intreated me to ſhew my skill thereupon, for that they were minded to dance: Which they did in that manner, with ſo much comelineſſe and art, and every way ſo excellently well, but *Grace* beyond them all, ſo gracefully, that *I* was exceedingly taken therewith, and more inflamed now than before.

When they were now grown weary, and were willing to reſt themſelves a while, delivering up the Viol into her hands, from whom *I* had received it, *I* beſought her to grace that In-

Instrument with a Song: which without any kinde of nicety, or coyneſſe, when ſhe had tun'd it, and accorded the ſame with her voice, ſhe performed both ſo ſweetly, as well for the ayring of her notes, as the vowelling of her words, now towring, then melting them at her pleaſure: that for the time, ſhe ſeemed to have arreſted Time. For before ever we were aware, ſhe had no ſooner made an end, but Time went away, and haſtning to recover that he had loſt there; it was inſtantly night.

And now was it high time for them to hye them home, homewards they go; and I in kindneſſe would needs accompany them all the way, leading my Love by the hand. I was ſomewhat abaſht at the firſt, not knowing how, or where to begin to ſpeak unto her; till ſhe taking notice of this either my daſtardlineſſe, or fear; I cannot ſay, whether carelelly, or of ſet purpoſe, ſhe tript with her Chapin, but to ſave her from falling, I preſently opened my arms, into which I lovingly received her; and as I was raiſing her up, my cheeks happed (as if it had been done by chance) to lean a little upon hers: But having ſet her now upon her feet, (taking my ſubject from thence,) I ſuddenly flew back, beſeeching her to excuſe that exceſſe, and that if either my ſelf, or mine eyes had offended in preſſing ſo near upon her, they were for their own unmannerlineſſe, moſt willingly ready to receive ſuch puniſhment as ſhe ſhould be pleaſed to enjoyn them: ſhe anſwered me in that manner, that I was forced to reply. And leading her (as before) by the hand, I did gently ſtrain it with mine, wringing it ſoftly hard, that I might not hurt it. Whereat ſhe ſmiling, ſaid; For all your wringing it ſo hard, you ſhall never ſqueeze any juyce from thence.

This put a little more metal into me, and added farther boldneſſe to my words: So that faigning we ſtaid behinde, becauſe we were not able to go any faſter, we went diſcourſing together of our Loves; I ſpake onely of mine own; for ſhe laught at all that I ſaid, making her ſelf merry therewith, the better (as ſhe would have it ſo to ſeem) to entertain and paſſe away the time.

Her mother was a crafty ſlye ſubtil thing: ſhe ſought after ſons in law, and her daughters were deſirous of husbands, nor did they diſlike of the man: They gave me line enough, till they had led me along by the noſe within their own doors: whither when we were come, they made me enter into their private Chamber, which was very well furniſht, they brought me a Chair, and would needs have me ſit down, that I might reſt my ſelf a while; and taking out of a Cupboord, near there at hand, a box of Conſerves, they brought me with it a jarre of water, which was no more than needed for to quench the fire of that poyſon which had ſo ſcorcht my heart: but all would not do. It was now time for me to take my leave; I did ſo: deſiring them to give me leave, that I might now and then receive the like favours again from them; They told me, that they ſhould eſteem it as a great courteſie, that I would be pleaſed to command this their houſe, and to make my ſelf no ſtranger, and that in ſo doing, they ſhould thereby know that my words did correſpond with my works.

Well, now I have left them, and am gone. Not ſo. I am neither gone, nor yet have left them. For my heart ſtaid ſtill there with my dear, that ſhe might the better imprint in it the lively image of her matchleſſe beauty. I had already bid them good night: But what a night (trow you) was this to me? How long were the hours? How ſhort the ſleeps? What a confuſion of thoughts? What diſtractions of minde? What a general war? What a battail of cares? What a cruel tempeſt riſen on the ſudden, even in the very Port and Haven where I thought my ſelf ſo ſurely Anchored, the ſky being ſo clear, the weather ſo fair, and the Sea ſo ſmooth, as heart could wiſh? This made me ſay to my ſelf; How in ſo quiet a calm, could ſuch a ſudden ſtorm come upon me, without perceiving its approach, or knowing how in the world to provide any remedy againſt it? I am utterly loſt, and undone for ever; ſo uncertain is my hope of recovery. But now that morning was come, and that I had got me to the Schools, when I came thither, I knew not whither I were there, or no; nor did I underſtand any word that was read unto me all the while that the Lecture laſted. That done, I returned home, the Cloath was laid, Dinner brought in, I ſate down, and offering to eat, my meat would not go down, my morſels remained as it were frozen within my mouth, and ſeemed ſo careleſſe in all that I did, that it wrought amazement in all my fellow-ſtudents, and admiration in our Tutor, who thought with himſelf, that this was but an induction to ſome moſt grievous inſuing ſickneſſe. Nor was he therein deceived, for this was the diſeaſe that afterwards wrought my death. He askt me what I ayled? I knew not what anſwer to make him; onely I told him, That my heart did forebode ſome great misfortune, that was coming towards me; for ever ſince yeſterday, my thinks I feel it

ſunk

ſunk down as it were into my body, and ſo ſhrunk together, that I finde my ſelf in a manner without a Soul. All is Lead and lumpiſhneſſe with me, that I know not what to think of it.

He told me that I muſt not be a *Mendocino*, nor be ſuperſtitious as to admit ſuch idle toyes to my imagination, nor to let ſuch abuſing alluſions to come within me, but to keep them at arms end; for this ill (ſaid he) which you preſage unto your ſelf, is nothing elſe but the abundance of ſome ill humour in the body, which will quickly be removed.

Now for that I already knew that my malady *Nullis erat medicabilis herbis*, was not to be cured by any Herbs, or other Medicinable Drugs, I diſſembled the buſineſſe, and that I might not manifeſt the misfortune that was like to befall me, I ſaid unto him, it may be ſo Sir, and I hope it ſhall be ſo, but in the mean time it pains me much.

I roſe from boord, but not from dinner, for I had eaten nothing. And thence got me to my Chamber, where I was ſo oppreſſed with ſorrow, that ſuffering my ſelf to fall down upon my bed, wrapping my mouth and eyes in my pillow, I poured forth tears in abundance, burying my ſighs within the ſtuffing thereof. What with this, and the deſire that I had to ſee the Phyſician of my Souls health, I found my ſelf ſomewhat eaſed: So putting on my Cloak, and putting off my Lecture, I went home to her houſe. I may not omit onely in two words to tell you, That there is not any exerciſe, but deſires a continuance thereof, wherein to fail, though never ſo little, more than ordinary, is like to the breaking of a ſtitch in a mans ſtockin, which if it be not taken up in time, will ravel out all the reſt.

With this Lecture that I loſt, I loſt the benefit of all my former terms, and with them my ſelf. For one after another I left off to continue them, not caring a ruſh for them. *Love* had now matriculated me in his School. *Grace* was my *Rector*, her grace my *Tutor*, and her will my exerciſe. I did now deſire to hear no other Lectures, but thoſe ſhe read to me, nor any other directions, ſave what her eyes taught me. I began in joy, but ended in tears. I begg'd in jeſt of them a bit of their bever, but I found in earneſt, how (going croſſe my throat) I was choaked with this contrary morſel. Beſides, I was poyſoned therewith, for it had quite taken my underſtanding from me, having now been bereft thereof for the ſpace of three moneths and more, it being much pitied, but more condemned in me, that one that had been heretofore ſo ſtudious, and ſo famous a Schollar for his time, as there were few better in the Univerſity; ſhould now when he is come to the up-ſhot, rove thus at random, loſing both himſelf, and that good opinion which the world had of him.

The *Rector*, when he had notice thereof, taking compaſſion of me, ſought to apply ſome remedy to cure me of this my diſeaſe: but therein he rather did me hurt than good; for ſeeing my ſelf ſo hardly ſet upon on all ſides, but much more oppreſſed with mine own proper paſſion, not having any power of reſiſtance, I burſt forth into open rebellion, following my unruly appetite. The bones of reaſon, which like ſo many ropes, ſhould have ſerved to ſtrengthen my weaker underſtanding, were all broken, and ſo ſtrangely ſplit and ſhivered in ſunder, that there is no hope of ever letting them together again.

Now our Loves went on amain; the favours offered me, great; the hopes not ſmall; for it was left to my choice, whither I would have her to wife, or no. Let us now (my Maſters) change places; and let him that is the wiſeſt amongſt you take mine: let him be ſhut up, as I was in *Loves* ſtrongeſt priſon; let him have ſuch juſt cauſe as I had, to yield my ſelf captive unto him; let him be croſt and thwarted in his deſigns, all things conſpiring together, to hinder the execution of his deſires; then let him ſit down and give me counſel. For that is the man that I would hearken unto. I knew no better means for my good, I left all other for this; for that I thought this would be my beſt remedy. Her mother offered me her houſe, and with it all that ſhe had. She was a woman that had good credit in her kinde of trade, and had good and quick returns, ſhe gained wherewithall to maintain both the back and the belly, ſhe made exceeding much of me, ſhe was ready upon all occaſions to ſerve me, I could not imagine more kindeneſſe than ſhe was willing to do me; ſhe kept me neat, ſweet, and handſome, and made that reckoning and reſpect of me, as Lord and Maſter of all. I thought this world would ſtill have laſted; I ſought to avoid the venom of evil tongues, but all in vain; for they had raiſed that already of me, which if it had been true, perhaps I might not have miſcarried. Pardon me (Gentlemen) I am now a married man, and there is no more to be ſaid of it. Is not this an ill account which I have given you of ſo many years ſtudies, ſo much good learning, and being upon the point of taking Orders, and to attain to ſome Degree

in Schools, that I might at leaſt have been able to have read another day Lectures in the open Schools, as publick Profeſſor, and Doctor of the Chair; which might have been eaſie for me to have done, conſidering the good conceit they had of me. And being come now to the height of all my labours and pains taking, and when I was to have received the reward of them, and to take mine eaſe after all this toyl, the ſtone rolled down, and I was forced like *Syſiphus*, to begin the vvorld anew, and to fall afreſh to my work. Do thou therefore conſider that now, which I then ſo often thought upon.

O how often doth God put a ſpoke in our wheel! How doth he croſſe our deſignes, making them to prove vain and fruitleſſe! For the Altar being now made ready, the vvood laid upon it, and upon it *Iſaac*, the ſword drawn out, the arm lifted up on high, and now letting it fall, to ſtrike the ſtroke; even then, and not till then, was it hindred in its execution.

O GUZMAN, why didſt thou ſit up ſo late anight to thy book? Why waſt thou ſo diligent at thy ſtudies? Why didſt thou riſe ſo early in the mornings? Why didſt thou continue ſo long in the Schools? So many Acts, ſo many Degrees, ſo many pretenſions, as thou haſt now on foot, what is become of them all? What good will they do thee?

I have already told you, that the courſes that I took in my Child-hood, came to end in the carrying of a basket; and now theſe of my more manly years, to make their manſion in an Inne, or common Victualling houſe. And God grant my troubles may here have an end, and that my foot may be once fixed.

## CHAPTER V.

Guzman de Alfarache *leaves his ſtudies: he goes to live at* Madrid; *he carries his wife with him from whence they were both baniſhed.*

HAving leapt from Bachelor of Divinity, into the Degree of a Maſter of prophane Love; it is now to be ſuppoſed that I am become a *Licentiat*; and having already ſo far proceeded therein, I may with your good Licence (as a true profeſſion thereof) be permitted to ſpeak ſo much as I know concerning the ſame. For, out of the good experience that I have had thereof, I dare boldly boaſt my ſelf to be one of the beſt proficients that was ever bred up in the School of Love. If we ſhould go about to define it (ſo many having ſaid ſo much of it) it were but to repeat the Leſſon, which had already been ſaid over a thouſand times and more. Love then is, *Totum in toto*, all in all: and ſo contrary in its effects, that the more we ſay thereof, the leſſe we ſhall be underſtood. Yet will we ſhoot one Arrow amongſt the reſt that have endeavoured to hit this mark, and ſay ſomething of that whereof ſo many have ſpoken.

Love is the priſon of folly, born of idleneſſe, bred up by ſelf-will and money, and maintained with filthineſſe, uncleanneſſe, and diſhoneſty: it is the exceſſe of a brutiſh and beaſtly deſire; moſt ſubtil in piercing, making its way through the eyes to the heart: It is that poyſoned ſhaft, delivered from the hand of the Archer, which never ſtayes till it come to its Center. It is a gueſt, whom with a great deal of earneſtneſſe, we our ſelves invite, but being once received into our houſe, is not ſo eaſily put out. It is a Child that longs for every thing it ſees, fantaſtical, and full of Apiſh tricks; it is an old doting fool, feeble and decrepit. It is a Son that will not help his own Father; and a Father which will miſ-uſe his own Son. It is a God that hath no mercy, a ſecret enemy, a feigned friend, a blinde but ſure ſhooter, weak to undergo any pains, and yet as ſtrong as death. He obſerves no Law, nor is he governed by reaſon; he is impatient, ſuſpicious, jealous, revengefull, and a ſweet tyrant. They paint him blinde, becauſe he keeps neither mean nor meaſure, diſtinction, or election, order, or counſel, conſtancy, or modeſty, but evermore erres. They give him wings to ſhow his lightneſſe, in apprehending that, which is beloved by us, by which he bringeth us to an unfortunate end. So that onely he that goes blindly to work, ſpeeds beſt; and he that lightly wooes, likely wins the vvench. And though theſe, and ſuch as theſe, be the effects of Love, yet for to bring them to paſſe, ere ever we can execute them, he will, that we ſhall want patience in our hopes, fear in the hazarding of our perſons, wit in our words, modeſty in our demands, judgement in making our choice, a bridle to reſtrain our inconſiderate actions, and conſideration to free us from dangers.

I fell

I fell in love at the firſt ſight, I was taken with a look, the darts that flew from forth thoſe their eyes, coming ſo thick, and with that force upon me, that I preſently yielded thereupon, and became her captive. Nor was tranſcurſion of time needfull in this caſe, as ſome would neceſſarily infer, which affirmation of theirs, I hold to be an errour. For ever ſince the fall of our firſt Parents, with that Leaven of theirs, was the whole lump and maſſe of mankinde made ſowr and corrupted with theſe their hereditary vices; the frame of this their horologe, was ſo broken and put out of order, that there was not one whole wheel left, to anſwer one another, nor any ſpring remaining, whereby to give it motion: But was utterly ſo ſpoyled, ſo rent and torn in pieces, and ſo wholly out of frame and order, as if it had been a clean contrary thing, ſo differing was it now from that firſt ſetled eſtate, wherein God had created it; the alteration of this its truer courſe, ariſing from mans diſorderly obedience. From hence grew that blindneſſe in his underſtanding, that forgetfulneſſe in his memory, that defect in his will, that diſorder in his appetite, that depravedneſſe in his actions, that deceit in his ſenſes, that weakneſſe in his ſtrength, and thoſe pains and torments in his greateſt delights and pleaſures. A cruel ſquadron of ſore and fierce enemies; who as ſoon as God hath infuſed our Souls into our bodies, incompaſſing us on every ſide, violently ſet upon us, and ſo hotly aſſail us with the ſweet enticements of ſin, fair promiſes, and the falſe appearance of foul and filthy pleaſures, that they overthrow all goodneſſe in us, and ſo taint and corrupt our Souls, that they put them quite out of that good courſe, for which they were created. So that it may be ſaid of the Soul, that it is compoſed of two contrary parts, the one rational and divine; and the other, of natural corruption. And for as much as the fleſh on the one ſide whereto it inclines, is weak, frail, and ſo full of imperfection, (ſin having ſo wholly infected it clean throughout) hence is it come to paſſe, that imperfection and diſorder, is as it were natural unto us. And ſuch and ſo great is this extream, that man cannot account any conqueſt greater than the ſubduing of his paſſions. Great is his courage, whoſoever he be, that can reſiſt them, and bring them under, in regard of that mortal vvar, and infernal enmity, which is, and ſtill will be, between our *Reaſon* and our *Appetite*. For our *Appetite* perſwadeth us unto that, which is moſt agreeable to our nature, to that which doth beſt like and pleaſe us, and to things of that quality, which we take pleaſure to treat of, and have a deſire to obtain them. Whereas on the contrary, Reaſon is like unto a School-maſter, who, that ſhe may the better correct us, goes alwayes with a rod of reprehenſion in her hand, condemning the ill which we commit. But we like little Children plaid the Truants, and fly from this School, for fear of correction when we do amiſſe, and run a mouching, either to our Aunts houſe, or our Grand-fathers, where we are made much of, and ſuffered to play the wantons.

Thus often (if not alwayes) Reaſon remaineth (which ought not ſo to be) in vaſſallage and ſlavery to our Appetite: Which when it hath once gotten ſo great a power and dominion over us, that of filthy Love, being ſo vehement, ſo violent, ſo powerfull, ſo proper to this our being, ſo ſolely, and wholly ours, ſo ſutable to our diſpoſition, ſo glewed and wedged to our nature, that to breath, or live, is not more proper unto us; it muſt of neceſſity follow, that it is the hardeſt paſſion to repreſſe, the terribleſt enemy that we have to deal withall, and who with moſt ſtrength and greateſt force comes unto us, aſſaults us, and ſubdues us.

And albeit it be true, that *Reaſon* holding (as ſhe doth) her ancient place of preheminence, is wont ſometimes to hinder, by her great wiſdom and valour, the ſudden working of a look (although it have the power of potent of cauſes, to aſſiſt and further the ſame) that it may not eaſily, and as it were in a trice, rob us of our will, before we are aware, putting a man in an inſtant beſides himſelf: yet (as already hath been ſaid) for as much as the *Appetite* and the *Will*, are ſuch ſure mark men, ſo free, ſo Lord-like, being never yet taught to obey, nor acknowledge any Superiour, it is an eaſie thing for them, having *Love* on their ſide, to work whatſoever effects, and in ſuch form and manner, as ſhall ſeem beſt to ſtand with their own liking.

And becauſe likewiſe there is not any thing, which doth not naturally *appetere bonum*, deſire that which is good; and that every action which we undergo, is in regard of that good, which repreſents it ſelf unto us, or that happineſſe we finde to be in it, we evermore deſire to obtain the ſame, and joyn it unto us, ſide (as they ſay) to ſide: Nay, we would (if it were poſſible) out of this our earneſt deſire convert it, and incorporate it into our own ſubſtance.

From hence then, this concluſion may be gathered; That for a man to fall in love, there is

no ſuch force, or neceſſity in it, that there ſhould ſome diſtance of time interpoſe it ſelf, that ſome diſcourſe enſue thereupon, or that there be any election, or deliberation had in the matter; but that upon the very firſt view, that onely, ſole, ſingle, and primary ſight, there may joyntly concurre in both a correſpondency, or conſonancy, or (as we here in *Spain* commonly uſe to call it) *Una confrontacion de ſangre*, a confronting, a conformity of the bloud, wherein the Stars by a particular influence are wont to work, and do often move us thereunto.

For, being that theſe beams do dart themſelves by the eye from the heart, they take infection from that which they finde before them, eſpecially if thoſe they encounter withall, be like unto their own, and returning preſently back again to the very ſelf-ſame place, from whence they were ſent forth, as they draw theſe in with them to the heart, ſo do they protrait and ingrave therein that fair object, which they ſaw and deſired. And becauſe it ſeemeth to the *Appetite* to be a noble pledge, and well worthy the buying at any rate, or price whatſoever, eſteeming it as a thing of infinite value; it preſently enters into treaty, how he may come to injoy the ſame, freely offering for it, and with a very good will, the greateſt treaſure and riches that he hath, which is his liberty, his heart being made priſoner by that Lord, whom himſelf admitted into his boſom.

And in that very inſtant, that this *bonum*, or this thing, be it what it will be, comes to be beloved, and entertained by us, it is likewiſe to be conſidered, that man doth forthwith apply his underſtanding to eſteem it as its *ſummum bonum*, or chiefeſt happineſſe: and ſo deſiring to have it converted into himſelf, is himſelf converted into that which he ſo much deſireth.

Whence it cometh to paſſe, that thoſe very ſelf-ſame effects, which may be wrought by length of time, getting ground upon us by continuation, conſideration, and converſation: ſo alſo they may be occaſioned in that inſtant, that this contentment, or pleaſure, that we take in that good, which we in our imagination, figure and faſhion to our ſelves, is cauſed in us. For, in regard that we know not, or (to ſpeak in a truer kinde of language) will not hinder the cauſe thereof, nor make any reſiſtance againſt it; as alſo in reſpect of the corruption of our nature, debility of our reaſon, captivity of our liberty, and the weakneſſe of our forces, dazled, if not blinded with this light, we want wings to fly from it, and like men that are hood-winkt, run head-long on to our own ruin: it ſeeming decent and fitting for us; to yield our ſelves preſently thereunto, as to a thing that is natural unto us.

And this is ſo proper unto man, as light is to the Sun, cold to Snow, heat to fire; as it is to heavy things to deſcend, and to thoſe that are airy to aſcend: without giving way to the underſtanding, or any power to free-will, who injoying their priviledges, might exerciſe their office; which are now in ſubjection to the vvill, which remains now no more free, ſo that inſtead of making reſiſtance, we furniſh the enemy with vveapons againſt our ſelves. Juſt ſo doth it ſucceed with *reaſon* and *underſtanding*, in regard of the *Will*. For whereas in the firſt age, whileſt we ſtood in the ſtate of innocency, they were abſolute Lords, and like Kings, had all things under their ſubjection, and did conſerve and keep in peace all that fair and goodly Fabrick. After mans firſt ſin, they remained ſlaves, and were made obedient to the *Will*, and forced to become the Miniſters and executioners of this her cruel Tyranny. So that now, our paſſions and affections having got the upper-hand, and we being furthered and led along with a blinde and depraved underſtanding, and hungring and thirſting after our own luſtfull appetites, we do inconſiderately debaſe our manly breaſts, bowing them to the ground, to lap of thoſe waters which may pleaſe the palate of our luſtfull pleaſures.

We fly like hooded Falcons, one while to wring to the uttermoſt regions of the aire; another while taking through the thickeſt vvoods, ignorant of any future danger, nor fearing the aſſured miſchief that muſt light upon us. So that few do ſtand upon this diſtance of time, which is ſet before them; neither do they previſe, and provide for after-claps; or if they would, Love will not ſuffer them ſo to do, ſo impatient is this little great god of delayes. And theſe the like effects did he work upon me.

I was now turned married man the ſecond time, and ſo well and happily to mine own liking and content, that I did verily perſwade my ſelf, *Que nunca por mi ſe comencara el tocino del parayſo*, That I ſhould never have fallen from ſo great a happineſſe, and that I ſhould ſtill have continued the happieſt man in the vvorld. I did not then conſider with my ſelf, nor did it once enter into my imagination, that this holy Ordinance, ordained by God in Paradiſe, I ſhould ſolely and wholly have ſought after it for the ſervice and glory of

of God, the augmentation of his Church, and the continuation of his own *Species* or kind, by a lawful kind of ſucceſſion. But theſe were the leaſt of my thoughts, I did meerly intend mine own pleaſure and delight. It was her beauty, and not my duty that *I* minded. Much leſſe did I give place to the *Underſtanding*, that he might adviſe me to that which he knew was beſt for me: nor indeed was *I* willing to hearken to his good counſel. *I* did ſhut mine eyes againſt thoſe things, that ſhould have done me good. I did put *Reaſon* away from me: I ill intreated *Truth*, for ſhe told me, that marrying with a fair woman, many cares muſt neceſſarily offer themſelves unto me, for fear ſhe ſhould become common.

In concluſion, being ill adviſed *I* purſued, to pleaſe mine own humour, an ill-deſired good: I was blinded with thoſe her natural gifts, and bewitched with her grace and beauty; things as proper to my Spouſe as they were without any artifice or dawbing. He erres, who thinks that any thing can ſeem well, that is an artificial compoſition, or a borrowed beauty; for this fair tincture that is given to the face, is but a falſe and counterfeit plaiſtering, and when that dawbing is taken off, that foulneſſe that was there before, returns a-freſh, and becomes more foul.

I lived as merrily as the day was long; and he, that is not bleſt with a Mother-in-law, knowes not what a bleſſing he wants. She uſed me as if I had been heen her own ſon, ſeeking by all means poſſible how ſhe might pleaſe me, and give me content. There was not any Gueſt, that brought a good morſel of meat into the houſe, whereof *I* had not a part. And if it came not in my wayes, why then her purſe ſhould pay for it, buying the beſt the market would afford.

And as my wife brought me but a ſmall dowry, ſo did ſhe take unto her ſelf the leſſe liberty of ſpeech, and had the leſſe cauſe to put me to unneceſſary and ſuperfluous expence, and to demand a thouſaud idle toyes of me; which chargable fooleries, your wives that bring great portions, too too often put their husbands unto. She was young, and ſo young, that I eaſily wrought her to mine owne will, and could bowe and bend her which way I liſt my ſelfe. It was a pretty flexible fool, and was willing to be ruled by me.

I had got me kinsfolk, who thought themſelves much honoured & graced by my perſon, becauſe they knew I was every way ſuperiour unto them. For he that ſhall link himſelf in alliance with thoſe that are of greater rank and quality than himſelf, ſhall never lack Lords to ſerve, Judges to fear, and Princes, to whom we muſt pay perpetual tribute. But my mother-in-law was tributary to me, and my ſiſter-in-law was my ſlave, my Spouſe did adore me, and all the houſe did ſerve me. Never at any time, as now, was *I* ſo free from taking thought for any thing, or from the troubles and cares of the world. For *I* thought upon nothing but eating, drinking, and ſleeping, and to paſſe away the time merrily, without being ſubject to anothers controlment, nor liable to any payments, not ſo much as the value of one farthing, either for houſe-rent, or to the King. All did dance after my pipe, and did foot it as *I* would have them. But this dance was the blind-mans meaſure, and my ſelf that led them, was the blindeſt amongſt them.

They ſay of *Circes*, that inticing ſtrumpet, that with her wicked ſorceries and devilliſh inchantments, ſhe turned thoſe men into beaſts, with whom ſhe converſed. Some ſhe turned into Lions, others into Wolves, Boars, Bears, Serpents, and other the like bruitiſh ſhapes: but withall, left them their underſtanding quick and ſound; for in that particular ſhe did not touch them. But this other whore (which is our blind Will) takes a clean contrary courſe; for, leaving us the forms of men, ſhe beſtows on us the underſtanding of beaſts And (as I have ſaid heretofore) I never ſaw any alteration of fortune, which was not accompanied with ſome diſaſters, which were never preſuppoſed, or once dreamt of before. And alwayes at the firſt ſhe makes a ſhow of a great deal of love and kindneſſe, that to our great grief ſhe may tumble us down, from that height of happineſſe, wherein we now ſuppoſed we ſafely ſtood. For that which grieves us moſt in theſe our worldly loſſes, is the recordation of the poſſeſſion of them. So that the more (in injoying them) was our happineſſe, the more ſenſible (in loſing them) is our miſery. She turned her wheel againſt me, my vvife, and all our vvhole houſe.

My father-in-lavv (vvhoſe ſoul is novv in heaven) though he vvere an Inne-keeper, yet I can aſſure you, he vvas a good honeſt man: for they are not all of them knaves, they do not all pick their gueſts pockets, rob their males, nor peruſe their cloak-bags: and there are many of them that do not vvill their Oſtlers to cozen the beaſts of their provender; nor

will themſelves pinch their gueſts in their diet, and make them pay dear for it. For theſe are things which appertain more properly unto women, for that they are naturally more ſparing and ſolicitous about theſe things, than men, and more curious in the ordering of their proviſion. And if there be any ſuch falſe dealing amongſt them, the fault was none of theirs, nor was any ſuch thing to be preſumed from my father or mother-in-law; for that they were good honeſt plain people, bred in the mountainous Countrey, as good Gentle-folk, and as well deſcended as Cid himſelf, ſave that through their misfortune and poverty, they were forced to follow that courſe of life: which ſhall plainly appear to you by that which enſueth. For he being ſo honeſt a man as he was, ſuch a friend to his friends, and naturally given to do other men good, he truſted one of his acquaintance with a certain rent of Tithes; ſome would ſay, that he ſpent all this Barley and Wheat in his houſe, but I do not believe it, being it fell out ſo ill with him; but did rather loſe thereby, preferring his credit before his profit. For, as it was afterwards told me, both by my mother-in-law, my wife, and my ſiſter-in-law, he was a man that loved to fare well, and that his table was alwayes well furniſht, his veſſels well filled with rich Wines, he made much of himſelf, and led as merry a life as cup and kan could make him; for there are a certain kind of men whoſe god is their belly.

I knew a good fellow in *Sevil*, that was juſt ſuch another for all the world as he was, though he lived not in that credit as he did; who pickt out a poor living by copying out of Sermons, every ſheet that he wrote yielding him half a Royal. This mans help my ſelf had occaſion once to uſe, for to copy out a certain proceſſe for me at home in mine own houſe, and he having ſtaid ſomewhat long after dinner, before he returned again to his work, I demanded of him why he came no ſooner: And he told me, that he was fain to go a great wayes off to fetch his dinner. But looking a little better upon him, and beholding him to be a man of Taylors ſhreds, compoſed of a company of patches, and thoſe all to be tatterd and torne, not having a rag to his tail, a ſhooe to his foot, a cloak to his back, nor a hat to his head, but as poor as poor might be; I imagined with my ſelf, that for his own eaſe he might or ought to have dined in ſome poor Victualling-houſe, or the next Tavern that was at hand. Whereupon *I* ſaid unto him, Are there no Cooks-ſhops or Victualling-houſes here about, that you are forced to go ſo far? He told me, I am a poor man, I eat that I get, and I get what I can, that *I* may live the better. To that *Bodegon* or Victualling-houſe whither I goe they are acquainted with my diet; and know that I will have to my dinner a pound of the beſt mutton that is to be bought in the market, and another of Kid; the ſawce thereunto being Rocket and Sugar. And this is my faſhion of feeding for the winter; for the ſummer a little thing contents me, a morſel of veal, or a chicken, or ſome ſuch light meat.

But to go on with my former diſcourſe, This friend and acquaintance of my father-in-laws, beginning to ſink in his eſtate, and dying within a few dayes after, when the day of payment was come, they came upon my mother-in-law with an execution, by vertue whereof they ſeized on all that was in the houſe, and carried away with them whatſoever they found there, and I was afraid, that they would have taken me and my wife along with them, as reckoning us a part of the houſhold goods. But though they did not, yet was it little better, and in a manner almoſt all one: for they took us by the ſhoulders, and thruſt us out of doors, that we might not hinder them in the execution of their office, or keep a coil and ſtir with them about the carrying away of their goods.

We ſaw our ſelves, like thoſe that are robb'd by Pirats, rifled of all that we had. We made ſhift to withdraw our ſelves as well as we could, to a neighbours houſe: and becauſe the creditors would make the beſt benefit that they could of the Inne, being willing that they ſhould have it, that would pay moſt for it; there were not thoſe wanting that did ſeek to out bid one another; for there is no man ſo great an enemy unto thee, as he that is of thine own trade. In theſe kind of men, there is no envy wanting; they do repine at anothers proſperity, and ſeek to cut each others throat.

This Inne had been heretofore in very good credit; ſo that they went outvying one another, (every one ſtriving to have it) ſtill out-bidding my mother in law, who was likewiſe a ſuiter unto them, that ſhe might rent it of them, for that ſhe and her daughters had been there bred up, and had continued therein ſo long, which made her the more deſirous to hold it, and to offer more for it than it was worth. In concluſion, we had poſſeſſion again of the houſe, in deſpight of all our enemies, but ſo inhaunced in the rent (for the which we may thank others malice) and other by-payments that were to goe out of it, that we were

ſcarce

ſcarce able to finde our ſelves bread and pilchards. For the Rent, like a Sponge, did ſuck up all our gains, and drunk up ſo much of our commodity, that we were ready (being thus over-rented) to periſh for want of food.

When *I* ſaw my ſelf brought to ſo low an ebbe, I began to bethink my ſelf, purpoſing to make uſe of my Philoſophy, and apply my ſelf to the ſtudying of Phyſick, thinking to thrive by that courſe, and to pick a good living out of it; but it would not fadge with me, nor was it poſſible for me to do my ſelf good that way; howbeit I had ſpent ſome time therein to make trial what I could do: Some little profit I made of it, by reaſon of thoſe good grounds which I had from the Metaphyſicks: For it was an uſual ſaying with us: That *Vbi deſinit Philoſophus, ibi incipit Medicus, & vbi Medicus, ibi Theologus*; Where the Philoſopher ends, there the Phyſician begins; and where the Phyſician, there the Divine. The main drift of my deſire was, to ſee if I could make a ſhift to rub out, and by ſome means or other to ſuſtain my ſelf, but all was loſt labour, howbeit that I might the better bring the world about, I permitted gaming, viſits, converſations, and other impertinencies in my houſe, all which did me more harm than good. *I* ſought to ſhun *Charibdis*, and fell upon *Scylla*. And thinking to mend, *I* marr'd my fortune. So ſeeing mine own errour, and perceiving at laſt, that none of all theſe would come to take fire, *I* began to conſider with my ſelf, that ſome dainty pleaſing bait that was ſweet to ſwallow, would do the deed, and prove like unto your Comine-ſeeds, which being hung up in a little linnen bag in ſome Dove-houſe, will onely with the ſcent thereof cauſe the Pigeons to flock unto it. But herein that happened unto me which commonly befalleth your Comfit-makers; when as the Flies with the very ſavour of his ſweet-meats reſort in ſwarms to his ſhop, and there glut themſelves with feeding upon theſe his pleaſing confections.

At the firſt *I* diſſembled it a little, and would not ſeem to take notice of any ſuch thing; for, give you but never ſo little way to a woman, ſlacken but the line that holds her in, and nothing in the world will laſh out more, or aſſume more liberty to it ſelf. Lay but the rains on her neck, and ſeek not to hold her in, there is no ho with her, then ſhall you ſee what friskals ſhe will fetch, leap, fling and flie out, that no ground ſhall hold her. She will take hedge or ditch, or any thing; nothing comes amiſſe, though it be to the breaking of her own, and her riders neck.

All things (as it is with old cloaths) grew worſe and worſe with us, we did eat, but (God he knowes) how little it was, to ſo hard a ſcantling, and to ſuch a poor allowance, were our hungry bellies limited. But there was no limitation put to our lawleſſe liberties, they had now broken all bounds of modeſty, they had loſt their former ſure footing, & had run themſelves out of all order, without any fear or reſpect, either to God or man; ſo that my reputation lay now in the ſuds, our honour gone to ruine, our houſe all on a flaming fire; and all this were we fain to ſuffer, for want of food. My mother in law was content to wink at it, my ſiſter ſhe ſolicited the buſineſſe, my wife was a willing worm, and theſe three playing booty, they made their game the ſurer. My mouth was bung'd up, *I* durſt not ſpeak, becauſe it was I that had ſet open the door to three, and entertained all occaſions; which if *I* had not done, we might all have ſtarved.

*I* paſt a while with this, (ſtill ſeeming ignorant of what was done) (and taking no notice of the meal that fell into the Mill-cheſt) but the tolle was ſo poor, that we could not live by that kind of grinding in *Alcala*. The Students were able to part with but a little; for their allowances were ſo ſmall, that they could not maintain themſelves and another; and there was not one amongſt them all that was capable to be made a Nominative to rule a Verb in order of Conſtruction, and whereunto a man might have reference and recourſe, when things are neceſſarily required to be joyned together. But to fare ill, to eat little, and that late, and to part with ſo much pleaſure for ſo little profit, that *I* ſhould ſee my ſelf (like a perſon that ſuffereth) but ſtill in the Accuſative caſe, I could by no means indure it; nor was I willing to give entertainment in my houſe to theſe needy Scholars, who are more fit for the Vocative than for the Dative. I had caſt up my reckoning, and found that the Crow could not be blacker than his wings: The harm is already done: The greateſt Gudgeon is already ſwallowed down: Things cannot be vvell worſe than they are. My honour is already impavvned, the leſſer evil is to ſell it out right; the profit here is ſmall, the infamy great; the Students craſty, and full of tricks; and victuals hard to come by: So that novv it vvas not onely fitting to change our bovvles, but to do the ſame ſpeedily. It goes ill vvith us one vvay, and vvorſe another; and therefore vve muſt apply our ſelves to that, vvhich may make moſt for our profit. And being that ſomething muſt be loſt by the

the bargain, let us not be like the botcher, that dwells at the corner of the ſtreet, who works all day for nothing, and then throws away his needle and threed in a rage. We muſt not hurl all away with a curſe, but carry things in that manner, that we may have ſomething remaining to help us at a pinch, at leaſt as is neceſſary for our *victum* and *veſtitum*, our food and apparel. Let us leave this valley of tears, before the long vacation come, when all is in a calme, and no wind ſtirring to blow us any good. Let us leave this unhallowed people, from whom the greateſt things of value that can be gotten is a ſix-peny pie, or two rolls of *manjar blanco*, and when they do beſtow theſe things, they go not out of the houſe, till they have eaten the better halfe thereof themſelves. If their mothers ſend them a barrell of *Cordova* Olives, they thinke they doe us a great kindneſſe, if they give us a little plate-full of them, and that they make our eyes water, if not clean put them out, with two ſmoaky ſawſages of the mountaine. No, no, there is no ſuch matter, it coſts us more than ſo. I will not ſell mine honour ſo cheap to Scholars, where there is nothing to be got, but half-peny loaves and hat-bands.

I knew well enough what had paſt in Court, and how the world went there: There had I ſeen many men, who had no other trade to live by, nor any other in-come to maintain them, but a fair face, and that they would often take inſtead of a Dowry; for with them it was held to be a mine of infinite treaſure, labouring and ſuing to marry with women of ſuch worth and credit, that were cunning in their Art, and knew what did belong to the buſineſſe, and could tell without teaching where their ſhooe did wring them. I was alſo acquainted with thoſe their ſubtle and cunning tricks which they made uſe of, that they might not be obliged to that, which was unbeſeeming them. For when the Chamber was occupied, and that they had a friend with them, whom they were willing to entertain, they would either take down the Lettice, or ſet a jar in the window, or a ſhooe, or ſome one thing or other, whereby their husbands might know that they were to paſſe by the door, and not to come in for fear of interrupting their ſport. But at noon the field was left open unto them, they might then freely enter into their own houſes, where they ſhould finde the table well furniſht, the meat good, and neatly dreſt, and needed not to take any great care to keep the chair warm; for he that ſent this proviſion would come thither in perſon to paſſe away the time, and to make merry awhile with them. And a nights, when the *Ave-Mary* bell had gone, and that devotion ended, they would return home again, they had their ſupper ready provided for them, then would they go to ſleep alone by themſelves, till that the hour was come, that their wives were to come to bed to them, it ſometimes ſo falling out, that they would ſtay away till it were broad day, for that they had occaſion to go forth to viſit ſome of their neighbours.

In a word, theſe good men and their wives did live in that cunning faſhion, that without ſuffering themſelves to be underſtood, either by word or by deed, they both knew very well how to play their parts, and what each of them had to do. And theſe kind of kind huſbands were well reſpected by their wives, and honoured with many Viſits in another gates faſhion, than they were, who did walk without this diſguiſe: Nay, their wives would be earneſt to have them abroad with them, calling and carrying them along with them to thoſe feaſts and banquets, whereunto they were invited, eating together at one boord, and ſleeping together in one bed.

I knew one, who becauſe a Gallant, that loved and maintained his wife, had ſetled his affection upon another woman, made no more adoe, when he heard of it, but goes preſently in all haſte to look him out: And when he had found where he was, he comes unto him, and asks him, what fault he could finde in his wife, that he had forſaken her company: Which queſtion he had no ſooner put unto him, but he ſuddenly claps within him, and ſtab'd him twice in the body, but (as God would have it) he did not die of thoſe his wounds.

Such as theſe go to a *Bodegon* for their dinner, for their wine to a Tavern, and to the market with a basket. But thoſe that are of a more honourable and noble diſpoſition, it will well agree with them, that they leave the houſe free for all commers, going themſelves in the mean while to ſee a Comedie, or to get them abroad to play a bout or two at billiards, or ſome other the like paſtimes, eſpecially when their Commiſſions are out. I would not for any thing do that which ſome do; who, when in the preſence of their wives, others begin to commend theſe and theſe good parts, in ſuch or ſuch a courted Dame, will never leave till they make their wives diſcover theirs there before them, preferring and praiſing

ſing them to be far better than any that they can ſhew. But for a tacit permiſſion, without any kinde of ſubmiſſion, or yielding thereunto of mine, I did no way diſlike it, but was well contented with it.

I got my bag and baggage together, made up that little that I had into a fardle, all which a man might in a manner have put up in a Snails ſhell; for one little old worm-eaten cheſt contain'd all the houſhold-ſtuff and wealth that I had; which being put into a Cart, my wife and I ſitting thereupon, we marched on to *Madrid*, ſinging all the way as we went, *Tres amades madre*. Before we came thither, I began to caſt up my reckonings with my ſelf, and when I had well thought upon the buſineſſe, and made up my account, I ſaid to my ſelf; I carry here along with me a morſel for a King, new fruit new, freſh ware, freſh, never ſeen, nor handled before: And therefore I will ſell dear, and ſet what price of it I liſt my ſelf: I will make mine own market; I ſhall not fail to meet with ſome one or other, who that he may ſupply my turn, will imploy me abroad in ſome profitable buſineſſe; and a ſecret moleſtation may well be diſſembled, and fairly born withall, eſpecially when it ſhadows it ſelf under the cloak of friendſhip: So that what with ſparing the expences of my houſe, and what by getting other wayes, I ſhall quickly grow rich; I ſhall once more come to be a Maſter of a family, and to have an honeſt houſe of mine own, wherein I may be able to lodge ſix or ſeven good Gueſts, which will yield me ſuch reaſonable profit, that we ſhall not want wherewithall to live, but be ſupplied with all ſuch things as are neceſſary for us. I am privy to mine own good parts, and know how fit I am for any imployment of importance, wherewith they may truſt me, and how ſurely they may rely upon me. In buſineſſe abroad, I ſhall be carefull and diligent; and at home in my houſe patient and quiet. I will uſe all the means I can to gain my ſelfe credit, and to grow into a good opinion with the world: And when the meaſure of my deſires ſhall be full, and come to its height, I will bend my courſes to matters of greater moment, and leave off my trading; nor ſhall any other by-occaſions neceſſarily with-draw me from theſe my deſignes.

My wife entred into *Madrid* in the beſt cloaths ſhe had, having a gallant hat on her head, ſet forth with a fair plume of feathers of divers colours, but the devil a jot of any thing elſe that we had, that was worth any thing, excepting onely our Ghittern, which we ſtill carried with us whereſoever we went.

We were no ſooner come to Court, but preſently in an inſtant, before vve could ſet our feet on the ground, the fame of our welcome to Town had ſpread it ſelf abroad, her beauty had muſtered together a great number of Voluntaries, that offered their ſervice unto her, and were willing to hazard their lives and fortunes fighting under her Colours; where ſhe was, there vvas their *randezvous*. The people flockt apace, where ſhe had pitcht her Standard; but onely the man that ſhevv'd himſelf moſt forvvard at that time to accomodate us, being thus newly arrived vvas a rich Fripper or Broaker in the high ſtreet, vvho asking us, vvhence vve came, and vvhither vve vvould: vvhen I had told him, that vve vvere bound for this place, and had no farther to goe, and that vve had no knovvne lodging, nor any acquaintance, whither to direct us; he forthwith made profeſſion how willing he vvas to further us, and how deſirous to expreſſe himſelfe a friend unto us; and thereupon brought us to a womans houſe, a friend of his, vvhere vve vvere kindly entertained, and with a great deal of reſpect, not for the Aſſes ſake, but the Goddeſſe that was born by the Aſſe.

This good honeſt Broaker, when he had ſeen us in our lodging, told us, that we could not chuſe but be weary with our laſt nights ill reſt, and our hard journey: And for that we had not any that could on the ſudden make fitting proviſion of ſuch things, as vvere needful for us, that we ſhould not trouble our heads therewith, nor take any further care; for we ſhould be ſupplied by a ſervant of his, whom he would ſend unto us. And ſo that day he ſent us in good ſtore of meat ready dreſt by one that kept a Cooks-ſhop, and had alwayes good victuals in a readineſſe. And after that he had furniſht us with all things fitting, tovvards the evening he himſelf came to viſit us, and after that a few of complements and ceremonies had paſt to and fro between us, I askt him how much he had laid out for us; But he ſeemed to make light of it, and told me (as one that was not willing to hear on that ear) that it was a trifle, a thing of nothing; telling me farther, hovv much he did deſire to ſerve me in things of a higher nature than theſe vvere, vvhenſoever occaſion ſhould offer it ſelf; and that this vvas not worthy the talking of; and therefore I ſhould ſpeak no more of it, ſeeming as it were to be aſhamed of himſelf, that I ſhould touch any more upon

that ſtring; yet notwithſtanding, I did preſſe to receive the coſt he had been at; Telling him, That friendſhip is friendſhip, and money is money; and that I ſhould not eſteem the leſſe of his love, if he would give me leave to diſcharge it, it being enough that I had put him to ſo much trouble. So at laſt (to ſatisfie my importunity) he told me, that the whole came to a matter of eight Royals, which I preſently paid him: But becauſe I would not have him go out of the houſe. I began to uſe my old occupation, and putting on my Cloak, I took my leave of him, telling him, that I muſt needs go viſit a certain friend touching ſome buſineſſes, that did much concern me, and that therefore he would hold me excuſed, and pardon this my unmannerly proceeding. Having thus made my way, *I* left him in good converſation in mine Hoſteſſes lodging, and got me abroad a walking, untill it was night.

When *I* came home, *I* found the cloaths laid, ſupper ready, and all things in that good order, and in that plentifull manner, as if *I* had left ſtore of money in my vvifes hand for to make this proviſion. *I* ſpake not a word of it, nor did ſo much as once ask whence ſhe had it, or who had ſent it in; as well becauſe it was not fitting for me ſo to do; as alſo for that mine Hoſteſſe had told me, that we were that night to be her gueſts; as alſo this honeſt man the Broaker. And from that ſuppers acquaintance, he and *I* remained ever after very great and kinde friends. He did often come to viſit us, and would carry us abroad to walk, and merrily to paſſe the time, inviting us ſometimes to go down to ſup by the River-ſide, to dine at ſuch and ſuch *quintas* and gardens of pleaſure: In the evening he would carry us to Comedies, and beſtow a box upon us, and there make us a good Collation; wherewith we paſt away the time the better.

And albeit *I* muſt truely confeſſe, that this honeſt man did all that he could, and that nothing was wanting unto us, yet notwithſtanding, all that he did, ſeemed little, or nothing unto me; for *I* muſt tell you, there were ſome, who to have had a taſte of theſe ſavory fruits, would have paſt the bounds of honeſty, and come to a higher price, and given much more money for a ſtanding in ſuch a Fair. For *I* knew very well, that women that are fair, and of a good preſence, are like unto your Meal, which is made of the beſt Wheat; for from the Flour, the pureſt and fineſt part thereof, that white and delicate bread is taken forth, whereon Kings and Princes, your *Grandes*, and Gentle-women of quality do feed; but that which is not of the choiſeſt Flour, but is browner, as it comes from the Mill, is bread for the houſhold, for ſerving-men, travellers, and perſons of mean account: and the bran, or refuſe part thereof, ſerves for Dogs meat, or for the feeding of Swine, makeing lap of it for the one, and waſh for the other. But a woman of a beautifull and cheerfull countenance, ſhe no ſooner comes into any place, though ſhe be there unknown, but all are ready to grace her, the chiefeſt and principalleſt perſon, offering, the firſt thing they do, to riſe, and give her reſpect, the gallanteſt and richeſt amongſt them, even to the very Lords, and greateſt Peers of the Kingdom, vayling their bonnets, giving her a fair and civil ſalutation, deſiring to enjoy ſuch a dainty piece, whom Nature hath ſo adapted for noble converſation. But anon after (when theſe are glutted, and will no more) the common rout ruſhes in, firſt our Neighbours Sons, than thoſe that come to the Vintage with a Tankard of *arrope* in their hands; a burthen of vvood upon their backs, to make a Chriſtmas fire, or a basket of Figgs, according to the ſeaſon of the year; theſe pay a penſion all the year long for their pleaſure, as duly as they do to their Phyſician, or their Barber. But when theſe will nibble no more, but refuſe to bite at the bait, the Dogs will begin to bark at her; not a knave Shooe-maker, nor poor Cobler, that will not ſet upon her, and rail at her; nor a Sive-maker, that will not make her dance to the ſound of his bells.

This kind-hearted Broaker had already beſtow'd on my wife a Gown of black Sattin, trim'd with Velvet, and a Scarlet mantle, which was daintily ſet forth with a broad parchment lace of Gold, which made a glorious ſhow; we had a marvelous fair bed, a neat little Table, & a handſom ſute of Chairs, ſutable thereunto; but how, or which way we came by them, I knew not. We had four good pieces of leather-hangings, richly guilt. In a word, the furniture of our houſe was now ſo well increaſed: that with the help of a little more houſhold-ſtuff, we might very well ſet up for our ſelves, and kill our fleſh within our own doors, and make a market within our own liberties, which could not chuſe but be much more gainfull unto us. On the other ſide our Hoſteſſe did fleece us, it ſeeming unto her, that ſhe had good reaſon to lick her fingers, and to dip her ſop in our honey, and onely forſooth for her permiſſion and connivency. But this was not a thing that *I* ſought after, *I* did not ſo well like of it, nor did

did it make for my profit. And *I* did as little like of my Broaker, for that a better and more beneficial *Opponent* ſought to ſit in that chair, which he now occupied. And although I knew well enough, that he proceeded in his dealing like an honeſt Broker, yet the cauſe was now otherwiſe with me, it was quite altered, and came about another way. For I would part with that to day for three, for the which to morrow I would not take ten. Men muſt ſell according to the ſeaſon, and make their market as the time ſerves. Nor is it material that ſuch an one be an honeſt man in this or that particular, if *I* have more need of another for my purpoſe. For it little importeth, that a Taylor, who is to make me up an handſome ſute of cloaths ſhould be a good Muſician; nor that a Phyſician, who is to treat of my health ſhould be a famous Player at Cheſſe. Money, more and more money, which I vvas that lookt after, and honeſty and greatneſſe of alliance, or good acquaintance.

That which was not of much profit, was to me tedious and diſtaſtful. For I could not content my ſelfe with onely neceſſary food and apparell; I muſt live like a King; *I* was to be courted with extraordinary kindneſſes; and that they ſhould buy as its weight in gold, the chaire wherein I ſhould give them leave to ſit, the ſweet converſation that they were to enjoy, the good lookes that were caſt upon them, our permitting them to come into our houſe: and above all, the liberty which I left unto them, by going forth my ſelfe to give them the freer acceſſe. And this our honeſt Broaker could not do. He was willing to lead us ſtill along by that plain ſong, which he began withall, when he grew firſt acquainted with us; as if it had been an impoſition of ſome perpetual tribute, which was to paſſe for ever, after one and the ſelf-ſame forme.

I had now found out one, who did far ſurpaſſe him both in wealth, and in merit, and was much more for my advantage; onely that difference did preſent it ſelf to mine imagination, which there is between having and wiſhing the preſent poſſeſſion of a thing, or the deſiring to poſſeſſe it. As alſo that I knew not how to go to this amorous Gentleman, to give him to underſtand, that I ſhould be very glad to imbrace his friendſhip. And better is one bird in the hand than two in the buſh. I knew full well, and it plainly appears unto me, that he did much deſire her, and had a moneths minde to have a fling at her; but he was a ſtranger, and durſt not adventure on the buſineſſe. And for me to animate him on to this gear, had been to make him the leſſe to eſteem of it. And to leave the other, that was taken alreedy in the next had been folly, if not madneſſe. For better is ſtale bread, than none at all. So that I durſt neither take nor leave. Thus did things paſſe for a while, waiting ſtill when that happy day would come.

I did uſually frequent your Ordinaries and houſes of gaming, one while playing my ſelfe, another while expecting ſomething to be given me for good lucks ſake, by thoſe that had a good hand, asking now and then ſomething of thoſe that have been my ancient friends and acquaintance. And what with that which they gave me, and that which my ſelf had ſcraped together, I took occaſion, when the Broaker was with us at our houſe to give it to my wife to ſpend as ſhe ſaw cauſe, becauſe he ſhould not know the weakneſſe of my eſtate; or to conceive, that I willingly gave way to his Viſits out of meer want, and to maintain my ſelf at his coſt; but he was no ſooner gone from thence, but I preſently demanded the ſame money again of my wife to goe to play. And ſhe did not onely return me that, but much more. So that alwayes before him, I bare my ſelf like a Lord of mine own will, without laying any gap open unto him, whereby he might have entrance to loſe his reſpect towards me.

This ſtranger on the other ſide went for his part ſucking in the air, and (as it is in the Proverb) drinking down the windes; uſing extraordinary diligences to gain our good will; and every one of us on all ſides working upon all advantages, to effect our ſeverall intents. But I for my part, being very careful to avoid all diſaſters, eſpecially that might fall out in my own houſe, and for the better preventing of diſorder, was much afraid, and wonderful loth that two ſhould tread together in one and the ſame path; as one that knew by experience, that one Kingdom would not admit of two Heads; nor two birds make their neſt together in one hole. Nor durſt my wife likewiſe conſent thereunto, being unvvilling to have more ſacks brought to her mil, than ſhe could vvell grind, it going much againſt our ſtomack to be put in the Grammar-rules for a *common of three*. Till at laſt, we perceiving that this would make vvell for us, and that by how much the more the Broaker did ſlacken his ſtring, ſo much the more the ſtranger did ſtrain to ſhoot home, dravving his bowe for that purpoſe to a good round compaſſe; for preſents, jevvels, moneys and banquets, like ſo many arrovves,

came thick one upon another, in hope at laſt to hit the mark. I began now to look bigge upon the matter, and to talk in a higher ſtrain, ſaying; That I was not minded to pay a Rent any longer for my Lodging, being that I was able to keep houſe of my ſelf. So the ſiege was raiſed, my old Hoſteſſe and I parted, and began to ſet up ſhop wholly for my ſelf.

The ſtranger made me a thouſand duckes and congies, ſaluting me, whereſoever he met me, with a great deal of reſpect; and on the contrary I lookt on the Broaker with a ſcornfull and diſdainfull eye ſhowing as dogged a countenance towards him, as I could poſſibly put on. And by how much the more the one did ſeek to draw me after him; ſo much the more I ſtrove to ſhake off the other.

Till at laſt, growing weary of him, I came and told him that if I had now taken an houſe of mine own, and had left that which he wiſht me unto, I had onely done it, that I might be ſole maſter of mine own houſe, that I might go and come at my pleaſure, and be either cloathed, or naked, as I ſaw cauſe, unſeen, or over-looked by others. And that he ſhould do me a favour to come now and then and ſee me, when I ſhould be at beſt leiſure to receive him, and not when I had earneſt occaſion of buſineſſe. For neither I, nor my wife could alwayes be in diſpoſition to receive viſits.

The poor man was out of countenance with this anſwer, and took it ſo ill at my hands, that never after would he offer to put his foot within my doors, except by the mediation of his friend, ſhe that had been our Hoſteſſe, and that alſo very ſeldom, ſome once (as we ſay) in a thouſand years, when he could do it handſomely, and my wife was beſt at leaſure, neither my ſelf, nor any body elſe, being then at home.

Now our ſtranger being open-handed and liberal as he was, I was forced to carry my ſelf fairly towards him, for he was well able to go through thick and thin, and if he held on that round pace that he began, there was great hope that he would quickly bring us out of the mire, and that we ſhould happily arrive to our intended journey, and ſo it fell out. For my wife, ſhewing him but a good look, when they two were alone, he did ſo highly eſteem of every ſlight favour that ſhe afforded him, that he would requite her kindneſſes with their wait in Gold.

We entred into a great league of friendſhip; he invited me to his houſe, and when I had taken my leave of him, he would ſend home after me many, and thoſe very good diſhes of meat, which ſerved very well to furniſh our own Table, taking ſecret order with thoſe his ſervants, that carried them thither, that they ſhould not bring them back again, but leave them there, though they were all of ſilver.

I was not offended at this, but it did ſomewhat trouble me, that he ſhould do it ſo openly; for there is no man ſo blockiſh, that doth not perceive, when ſuch things as theſe are done, it is not *a humo de pajas*; for Moon-ſhine in the water, nor for a mans good lookes.

It is a brave thing, when a rich Gallant ſhall entertain my vvife with great preſents, and whatſoever elſe that may give her content, and that I may not know the end why he does it. But I was well enough contented therewithall, and all other Witals to the like. He ſayes not true, who ſayes it grieves him, for if it did grieve him; he would never give way unto it. If I were glad thereof, and gave my conſent that my vvife ſhould kindely entertain him; If I ſuffered her to go abroad, and was well pleaſed when ſhe returned, to ſee her come home laden with Jewels, or with a new Gown: or with ſome delicate ſweet-meats, brought from the banquet that was made for her; and if my ſhame was ſo little, that I could fall heartily unto them, and eat my part of them, and could diſſemble all this, and much more; they likewiſe do the like; neither will they, nor can they clap the Horns on my head, and think to go without them themſelves. For I muſt aſſure them, that I underſtand them, and they underſtand me.

But this was the miſchief of it, that when they ſaw me walk the ſtreets ſo well clad, with a Jewel in my Hat, and a Hat-band ſutable unto it, garniſhed with ſtones of good value; they would ſay, as I paſt by them; and that ſo loud, that I might very well hear it; What rich ſtones hath *Guzman* in his Hat? O what a glorious ſhow they make; but do you mark how that fame *Cornix* doth out-ſhine all the reſt? And perhaps ſome of theſe which ſaid this of me did envy my good fortune, and others like your Goates did not ſee their own Horns, though all the vvorld beſides did ſee them.

This ſtranger of ours did purchaſe our liberty, and he had ſuch ſtore of wealth, that now my houſe was for no body elſe but him. But I had alwayes a care to keep a *decorum*, entertaining

taining his friendſhip, and maintaining mine own credit. The goods in my houſe did like froath, gather dayly more and more increaſe. I had both winter and ſummer hangings, pieces of Arras, wrought in *Bruxels*, others of branched Damask, interwoven with tinſel, beds of Damask, Canopies, and Quilts of the ſame, Turky Carpets to tread upon, Pillow-cuſhions for my wives *eſtrado*, when ſhe was pleaſed to ſit in State: and many other moveables, that might well beſeem ſome great Lord. The Table that I kept, and the houſe that I maintained, did not (I aſſure you) ſtand me in leſſe than in two thouſand Crowns a year. And when I was diſpoſed to make my good Maſter almoſt ready to run mad, (which I was ſometimes wont to do, eſpecially on feſtival dayes) I would as ſoon as we had dined command the Gittern to be brought in, and laid upon the boord, and then looking cheerfully upon my wife, I would ſay unto her, I prethee (good *Grace*) if thou beeſt a good vvench, do us that kindneſſe to beſtow a Song upon us, it is a Holy day to day, and therefore I prethee do not ſtick with us, but let us have it quickly and with a good will. For otherwiſe, it was a wonder to ſee her take her inſtrument in her hand. And ſtill in my preſence, whenſoever I cauſed her to ſing, (howbeit ſhe knew, that I knew all, and that nothing was hidden from me) ſhe would carry herſelf very ſoberly, and decently, keeping alwayes a ſetled and compoſed countenance, and was as carefull (as if her life had lain upon it) that I might not perceive any thing to come from her, either in her looks, or her geſture, that might give me any the leaſt cauſe to interpret it as an affront, or ſhould otherwiſe force me to make demonſtration, that I took any diſlike at it. Each of us did underſtand our ſelves; and both one another; though we would not ſeem to underſtand any thing, or make any ſhow thereof to the vvorld. With this Shooing horn ſometimes we drew on our good Maſter, which coſt him many a fair Crown.

I lived like a young Prince; ſilver diſhes did run upon wheels round about my houſe; one tumbled here, and another there. My Coffers could not contain thoſe rich imbroyderies, and the reſt of my wardrobe; ſome of ſundry ſorts of Cloath of Gold, and others of ſilks, that were full of variety: my Cabinets were cramm'd full of Jewels, precious ſtones, and other curioſities. I never wanted money to game, I did triumph in plenty, and had good Cardes in my hand to trump about; And for this cauſe, our friends did injoy their liberty; for I perceiving that it was not fit for me to enter into mine own houſe, (which I knew, as oft as I found the door ſhut) I paſt by it, and went abroad a walking, untill a more convenient time did offer it ſelf, and ſeeing when I returned home, that the door was open, it was a ſign unto me that the Coaſt was clear, and that they had paſt the time away in good converſation: whereupon I boldly went in, and ſitting down, we all fell a talking of ſome one thing, or other, as occaſion offered.

Thou ſeeſt all this my happineſſe, the fairneſſe of the weather, the freſhneſſe of the wind; thou ſeeſt how favourable fortune was unto me, how ſhe ſmiled and laught upon me, how frank and liberal ſhe was towards me. But it ſucceeded in the end no leſſe unhappily with me, than all things elſe which I under-went by evil means. Nor do I think that any man can eſcape ſuch flaws as theſe; whoſoever he ſhall be, that ſhall ſayl in the ſame Ocean.

Upon the fame of this ſo rare a piece of beauty, and the large licence that I had given her, ſome Princes, and Gentlemen belonging to the Court, aſſumed the more liberty to themſelves, who had ſmelt out what an hungry and ſavoury ſent this raſher on the Coals had with it; they walk their Stations before my houſe, meſſages are ſent to and fro; howbeit I am verily perſwaded, that there was never any friendſhip ſtrooken with them, nor any juſt cauſe given, whereat your young maſter might deſervedly take offence. Yet notwithſtanding, ſeeing himſelf thus perſecuted, and as it were out-braved by others, that were mightier and more powerfull than himſelf in wealth, linage, and gallantry; he grew ſo exceeding jealous thereupon, that he was ready to run out of his wits, and had almoſt utterly loſt his judgement. He went about at the firſt to ſtrain himſelf to ſtand in competition againſt them all, exerciſing to this end, extraordinary liberality towards us; preſenting us with gifts of great price, amounting to thouſands of Ducates; but when he ſaw that he could not conteſt with them, nor be able to reſiſt ſo great force and power as theirs was, un-conſttained, without cauſe, or any other juſt exception in the vvorld, ſave onely what his own jealouſie did ſuggeſt to his weak conſideration, he by little and little fell off, and began to retire himſelf, frighted thus from us onely with a vain ſhaddow.

And ſometimes I went conſidering with my ſelf, what a ſtrange kinde of fool this was, that in his heatfull humour, ſet on fire with filthy luſt, he ſhould ſo eagerly follow the chaſe,

and hunt with that violence after ſuch diſhoneſties as theſe, to his both ſo great coſt and vexation of minde. I laught at him, as alſo at the poorneſſe of his wit and judgement. For if one of the maids of my houſe had come unto him, craving ſomething of him that was of good worth, he would very willingly and freely beſtow it upon them; but if by chance a poor man ſhould come unto him, and beg but half a Royal of him for Gods ſake, he would not ſtick to deny it him. All of us received the reward we deſerved, we were paid in our own coyn: The Maſter we ſerved, for to incrich us, had made himſelf poor; and we, through our ill government, could not continue rich; ſo that like ruinous buildings, we fell all together to the ground. Our firſt man had left the field and was fled, and now thoſe other Gallants come on amain: for the greater thoſe perſons are, who are privy to their greatneſſe, and truely underſtand their own ſtrength and worth; ſo much the more free they are in that which they pretend, and think that all other men muſt give way to them.

I could have told them, or demand of them; Sir, what ſervice do I owe you? What have you thrown upon me, whereby to binde me unto you? What good did you ever do me? Why then ſhould you expect, that I ſhould wait upon you with my works, words, and thoughts? And which is worſt of all; beſides that they are bad Pay-maſters, they uſe us harſhly, and bear themſelves ſo proudly, as if we were in debt to them, and had an execution to enter by force upon my houſe, my vvife, and all that I had. So lawleſſe was this our liberty, ſo uncivil their proceeding, that within a few dayes after we fell into the hands of the Juſtice.

A grave Miniſter of the State came to know what had paſt amongſt us; You may haply have heard, how the Lion once upon a time, having admitted all the other beaſts into his company, and having in a general hunting killed a Hart, when they came to the diſtribution and ſharing of it, he out of his abſolute authority, and Princely prerogative, adjudged it wholly to himſelf.

Juſt ſo did this Miniſter deal with me. And that he might have ſomewhat the better colour to do as he did, he began (Lion-like) with a little roaring, as if he had meant to quarrel with us. When I knew the courſe whereunto it tended, I preſently had recourſe unto him, complaining of ſuch and ſuch wrongs that were offered unto me, boaſting my ſelf to be a Gentleman, and one that was anciently deſcended of the *Gothes*. And he (cunning as he was) who deſired nothing more, than that I ſhould thus come unto him, gave me kinde entertainment, and cauſing me to ſit down ſide by ſide with him, he began to ask me what Countrey-man I was? I told him that I was of *Sevill*. O (ſaid he) of *Sevill*? The beſt Countrey in all the vvorld.

Then began he to treat of that Citie, indearing it very much unto me, as if, by his commendation of it, I ſhould have received a great deal of honour, or profit thereby. He demanded of me what my Parents were, and how they were called? And when I had named them unto him; he told me, that they had been his very good friends, and acquaintance, making a long diſcourſe unto me, how when he was Judge there, he had ſentenced a certain ſute in his favour. And he farther told me, that he did aſſure himſelf, that my Mother was ſtill living, to whom he was well known in her younger dayes. In a word, he proceeded ſo far with me in theſe and the like kinde of complements, that there was nothing wanting to make it full and compleat, but his acknowledging himſelf to be my near Kinſman. Which I did ſtill look for, eſpecially when I ſaw him come to ſuch particulars, and that he could tell me ſuch and ſuch tokens; which made me ſay with my ſelf, *Omnia poſſunt potentes*. What cannot your great men do? And now I am faln upon this Theam, I cannot but call to minde a certain Judge, who having moſt faithfully uſed his Judicature, and exerciſed his Office with a great deal of integrity, his time of reſidency being expired, and that he was to render an account (as the cuſtome is) of his Government, they could not charge him with any thing, ſave onely for his wenching, and for being a little too much ſubject to this humane frailty; for which, being ſharply reprehended, he made anſwer; That when he was recommended by them to this Office, they had onely given him in charge, that he ſhould deal uprightly, and truely adminiſter Juſtice, which he moſt faithfully performed, and that no man could tax him of the contrary. Would ye therefore be pleaſed to peruſe my Letters, and to look upon the Contents of my Commiſſion, and if there (amongſt other my inſtructions) you ſhall finde that I was by vertue of them, injoyned Chaſtity, I ſhall moſt willingly ſubmit my ſelf to your cenſure, and endure ſuch puniſhment as ye ſhall be pleaſed to inflict upon me. So that, becauſe this clauſe was not expreſly ſpecified in his Commiſſion, nor any particular mention made thereof; it ſeemeth unto theſe kinde of men,

men, that they do not fail in their duty, nor do any thing contrary to their Office, though they ſweep (as they ſay) a whole ſtreet before them, and do otherwiſe undo a Countrey: As did a certain Judge, who having deflowred about ſome thirty maidens, and amongſt thoſe the daughter of a poor vvoman, who when ſhe ſaw what wrong he had done her, ſhe went unto him, and beſought him, that ſince he had done, or undone her daughter, that he would be pleaſed to return her home unto her, to the end that her diſhonour might not be divulged.

Whereupon, he taking a Royal of eight out of his purſe, ſaid unto her: Good woman, I know nothing concerning your daughter; Lo, here be eight Royals for you, take you theſe, and get you ſome Maſſes to be ſaid to S. *Antonio* of *Padua*, that he may do you the favour to recover her loſt maiden-head. A very good amends. I do not know to whom this may ſeem to be well done. Do thou tell me if thou canſt. I am alwayes at my wits end, to think on the ſmall puniſhment, that is inflicted upon ſuch great faults.

He commanded me to get me home to my houſe, proffering (out of his love unto me) to do me many favours, and that he ſhould count himſelf very happy, if at any time it ſhould lie in his power to do me a courteſie. For it was a ſufficient motive unto him, to binde him unto me, that I was of *Sevill*, and the Sonne of ſuch Parents; and that as well in this as all other occaſions, he would aſſiſt me in all that he could, and afford me his beſt fauour.

With this fair anſwer I got me home. And within a few dayes after, when I and my vvife were all alone, and thought our ſelves ſecure, not thinking on any thing in the vvorld, much leſſe dreaming of his coming thither, behold, one night, when he walked the Round, he came to our door, and commanding one of his people to knock thereat, upon anſwer given, they asked for me; intreating a Jar of water of me for his Worſhip. I well knew where his thirſt lay; Whereupon I earneſtly beſought him, that he would do me the honour to come in, that he might ſit and take his drink, and not (like beggers) to take it without doors. He deſired nothing more, this was that which he lookt for. He comes in, and when he was ſate, ſome Conſerves we brought him to ſweeten his mouth, which having taſted, he took the Jar and drank. Then began he to enter into diſcourſe, telling us that he had walked himſelf weary, and that he had ſeen that night many fair vvomen, but none that came near my wife. He ſaid farther, that he had heard her exceedingly commended for her good voice. I then willed her to take her Viol, and ſeeing his vvorſhip was pleaſed to give her the hearing, that ſhe ſhould ſing ſome one ſong, or other, which ſhe thought fit. Which ſhe did without any coyneſſe, or ſtraining courteſie; it ſeeming unto us both, that it would much advantage us, to get ſo great a perſon to be our friend, who might be ready to ſtead us upon all occaſions. The man was aſtoniſhed, as well with the ſeeing, as the hearing of her; and when he was to take his leave, he willed me to come now and then to ſee him, and that I ſhould make my ſelf no ſtranger. With that he went his way; and I and my wife began to talk as well of this, as other things that had paſt; and how far forth this his favour might be a means, to make us hereafter to be both more reſpected and feared. I did viſit him ſometimes: and one day amongſt the reſt, careleſſe of any thing that might befall me, he ſaid unto me: How happens it (*Guzman*) whileſt I am yet living, (for men are mortal, and I may die before I ſhall be able to do thee any good, if it be not done the ſooner) that thou doeſt not make uſe of my favour, and ſue unto me for ſome Commiſſion, that may be both honourable and profitable unto thee? I told him, that I held my ſelf much bound unto him, and that I ſhould ever reſt thankfull for this expreſſion of his love and favour towards me, but becauſe I was loath to be troubleſome unto him, as alſo for that I had not as yet ſerved him in any thing, whereby to deſerve any the leaſt kindneſſe from him, I had forborn to move him in things of this nature. He then telling me the friendſhip of my Father and Mother, (though this his kindneſſe towards me, proceeded more from his love to my wife than my ſelf) he offered me a Commiſſion; telling me that it would be very beneficial unto me. I thank't him for it, though this was the Induction to all my future miſ-fortunes. For within two dayes after, he puts thoſe papers into my hands, with order for the recovery of certain debts that were due to the Exchequer. The which he had procured (begging it for me) of an eſpecial good friend of his, a great man in his place, and one that aſſiſted in that Court; telling him that I was a friend of his, and a well-deſerving perſon, worthy to be imployed in weighty matters, as ſhould appear by that good ſatisfaction, which I ſhould give both of my perſon and imployment.

When I had my diſpatch, I went from home, but (I muſt confeſſe) ſore againſt my will;

I carried

I carried along with me eight hundred *Maravedis*, which I had by way of ſalary, or ſtipend; and for that I had ever been accuſtomed to fare well, I knew not how to begin to frame my ſelf to live with this poor allowance, much leſſe to be able to put money in my purſe, or to hoord up to carry, or ſend home any thing to my houſe. But I ſaw now, that there was no other remedy, and *I* muſt of force do as *I* did: and ſo for avoiding of farther miſchief, *I* held my peace, and accepted of it. *Partime, y perdime*, My departure was my deſtruction. And when *I* went away, all went awry. For it ſeemed unto this kinde maſter of mine, that he might get himſelf ſlaves at other mens coſt to do him ſervice, and that with theſe eight hundred *Maravedis*, *I* might part ſhares with my wife, and maintain two houſes, and that this would be a ſufficient recompence for us; out of which reſpect, he was not onely willing to be exempted from all other taxes and tributes belonging unto us; but alſo that my wife ſhould not look out to ſee Sun, nor to receive any Viſits, but onely his. He ſought to be ſo abſolute a Judge over any thing that was mine, and ſo did wring and pinch us, that I and my family were ready to ſtarve for hunger, ſo that we were driven dayly to go ſelling ſome of our houſhold-ſtuff, for to put bread in our mouths.

My wife (who was now become his Hoſteſſe) could not live by theſe reckonings, it was no good account for her, to endure ſo much ſubjection, and to be tyed to ſo ſhort proviſion. She firſt began to ſhow ſome diſlike of this his imperious, yet baſe dealing; and alſo many times of purpoſe refuſed to ſee him; hiding herſelf out of the way, uſing the help of a great friend of hers, who ſtill made her excuſe, when ſhe was diſpoſed that he ſhould not come at her: For ſhe thought ſhe ſhould have made herſelf by this market; but it proved otherwiſe.

But when this new Maſter of mine perceived the evil correſpondence which ſhe held with him, thinking with himſelf, that my preſence would quickly remedy all this, and bring the boul to its old byas, he preſently gave order, that there ſhould be no more Prorogations granted unto me, and that I ſhould be commanded to give an account of that which I had done. They put me to it, and I did it; more willingly reſigning up my Office, than I took it upon me; for I found my ſtate thereby much impawned, and my houſe much waſted and conſumed. He thought that my preſence ſhould have been the onely remedy to give him content, and that he might the better enjoy all things to his own liking, but it fell out far otherwiſe, for by my preſence, his expence increaſed, and we had the better means to make it riſe. He was much troubled herewith, and knew not in the vvorld how to mend himſelf; and conceiving with himſelf, that nothing would work us better to his will than rigour, than to put us to our ſhifts, that we might come Cap in hand crouching unto him, and that with our arms a croſſe, and tears in our eyes, we ſhould come and cry him mercy, and intreat his favour; he treated with his Colleagues and fellow Officers, to baniſh us the Court; and ſo accordingly it was notified unto us. I began to caſt up my reckonings, and made this account with my ſelf; This Lord Judge takes himſelf to be ſuch a great man, that he thinks he does me a great favour, in putting me to maintain his houſe, and procure his pleaſure, ſelling him that for a ſong, which I have bought with ſo many affronts, and ſcraped together with ſuch a deal of toyl.

Again, it will do me no good to ſtay here, if I may not have free leave to make the beſt of mine own Commodities. It will be the leſſer evil (thought I with my ſelf) to obey this baniſhment, and to be packing, than to tarry here to no purpoſe. For though it were hard meaſure that was offered unto us, and did pinch us ſomewhat; yet I knew it would wring him much more; nay, gall him to the very heart. For, though we loſt one of our own eyes, yet we had put out both his. For he miſt of his mark; he had taken the wrong Sow by the ear, and all went kim-kam, clean contrary to his expectation. So this poor ſilly Aſſe, thinking to bang us, had made a Cudgel for his own ſides. Beſides, at the end of that year, thoſe ten years were to be expired, wherein I was to give my Creditors ſatisfaction.

All theſe things have *I* laid together, and throughly weigh'd them with my ſelf. *I* knew likewiſe that my Mother was alive; ſo on the ſudden *I* hired a Coach for our own perſons, and two Carts, for to carry our ſtuff, and our people, leaving the Court and the Courtiers to themſelves, bidding them farewell for ever. Thinking with my ſelf, that thoſe that came from *Peru*, fluſh with their Gold and Silver, would prove a great deal more profitable for us. And ſo we went quietly along to *Sevil*.

## CHAPTER VI.

Guzman de Alfarache *and his wife come to* Sevill; *He findes his Mother to be now ſomewhat ancient, and well ſtrucken in years. His wife gets her away to* Italy, *with one of the Captains of the Gallies, leaving him alone to himſelf, and exceeding poor. Whereupon he falls to his old trade of thieving.*



OR that they, who eſcape out of ſome great danger, as oft as they think thereupon, it ſeemeth ſtill unto them, that they are yet ſcarce free from the peril they were in; I did often call my life to remembrance, but never to amendment; and more particularly, that of my lewd courſes, that bad eſtate wherein I found my ſelf, the little honour that I had to mine own credit, and the ſmall, or no reſpect at all which I bare towards my God, all the while that my feet walked in theſe evil ſteps. I began to wonder at my ſelf that I vvas become ſuch a beaſt, as amongſt men, none could be greater: For none of all thoſe that are created on earth, vvould ever have permitted that which I did wink at; making my ſelf a living, out of my vvives lewd and filthy gain, putting her into the occaſion of ſinning, giving her tacit licence to trade; nay, expreſly commanding her to turn vvhore: And which is as bad, (if not worſe than all the reſt) that I ſhould require from her, my food, my raiment, and the maintaining of my houſe, whileſt I my ſelf led an idle kinde of life, holding (like the ſluggard) my thumbs under my girdle. It is a fearfull and terrible thing, that I ſhould think my ſelf to be an honeſt man, and to have honour in me, being ſo far from it, and ſo deprived of true good. That for to have Crownes to play, I ſhould crown my ſelf with infamy; and that not by uſing theſe armes of mine, to labour for my living, I ſhould blot thoſe armes of Anceſtors, and the nobleneſſe of that houſe, whereof I was deſcended; Loſing that, which is one of the hardeſt things to be gotten: to wit, a good name, and opinion in the vvorld; That I ſhould prophane ſo holy a Myſtery; That I ſhould uſe it in that ill and vile manner, that being I ſhould have made it to ſerve as a means of my ſalvation, I made it the high-way to bring me to Hell, and onely for food and apparel, to nouriſh, and cloath this miſerable carkaſſe, That I ſhould oppoſe my ſelf to ſuch peril, vvhen as behinde my back, and even face to face, they might have put an affront upon me, obliging me thereby rather to loſe my life, than to endure ſuch diſhonour; That a man ſhould not be able to do more than he can do; that he ſhould know it and diſſemble it, either out of his too much love, or his too much grief, or that he may not proclaim himſelf a Cockold to the vvorld: I do not ſo much vvonder at this. And this may not onely be a Vice, but a Vertue, and a goodneſſe, in caſe he conſent not thereunto, nor afford any favour, or entrance into it. But to do as I did, who did not onely take pleaſure therein, but as if it had been neceſſary for me ſo to do, did (as they ſay) caſt my Cloak over it; I do not vvell know, vvhether I vvere blinde, or mad, or bewitcht, that I did not conſider better thereupon, or if I did, that I did not uſe ſome good remedy againſt it, but did further it all that I could. O fool, fool that I was! And give me leave here to be-fool my ſelf a thouſand times, that *I* vvas ſo vvretchleſſe as I vvas, that *I* did not ſo much as once dream on this miſchief, and to ſeek to prevent it, knowing, how incompatible companions theſe two are, *honra, y muger guit arrera: Honeſtie*, and a vvoman that playes and ſings to her inſtrument, and that *I* did not weigh, what hurt it had done others, and that it might likewiſe ruin her and me, beſides the diſhonour that muſt thereby redound to us both. Men, for to oblige their Miſtreſſes unto them, are vvont to beſtow Muſick on them under their vvindows, and to ſing unto them in the ſtreets, but my vvife was ſuch an one, that ſhe made theſe men fall in love with her, by going abroad to ſing and play at their houſes. And it is a clear caſe, that ſuch graces are appetible in their own nature, and much deſired.

Now then, if men vvere invited; nay, incited thereunto, vvhy ſhould they not deſire and ſeek after my vvife? What vvit, or judgement hath that man in the vvorld, vvho vvill make ſhow of his treaſure to thieves? What quiet ſleeps can he take? With vvhat eaſe can he reſt, living (as he cannot chuſe) in a continual fear of being robbed? How vvas it poſſible, that I ſhould be ſuch an Aſſe, that ſince *I* had given my ſelf over to ſuch ſhame and reproach, which haply might be occaſioned by my too much weakneſſe, *I* ſhould (for mine own pri-

vate intereſt) incur another far greater? To wit, to fall in company, into the commendation of my vvife, extolling to the skies, in the preſence of thoſe that pretended love unto her, thoſe lovely qualities, and commendable parts that were in her, intreating alſo her; nay, ſometimes commanding her, that ſhe ſhould diſcover and make ſhow of ſome illicit part of her perſon, as her breſt, arms, feet, and likewiſe (but I will here hold my peace for ſhame, for I bluſh to think on it) that they might ſee whether her fleſh were fat, plump, and ſoft; white, brown, or ruddy? So that all grew worſe and worſe with me. For that which heretofore I did hate and abhor with my heart, and was as it were a death unto me to indure it, was now by uſe and cuſtom become eaſie and familiar unto me, and I grew at laſt to take great delight in it. That I ſhould conſent, that ſhe ſhould receive Viſits, and that I my ſelf ſhould bring Cuſtomers to my houſe, and leaving them with her, ſhould get me out of doors, and walk abroad; and above all, that I ſhould feign ſimplicity, and make my ſelf ignorant, as if there were no ſuch matter in the winde; and that I ſhould think withall, that they verily did believe, that this was a good and lawfull thing, being indeed a moſt depraved and wicked Act? That I ſhould ſet her awork to ſollicite Commiſſions, and to follow buſineſſes at ſuch great Miniſters houſes, as had a minde unto her, and deſired nothing more, than that ſhe ſhould come unto them, and that I ſhould make, as if I knew nothing, ſo ſlight reckoning of that infamy, which returning with them, or without them, ſhe brought home with her? That they making ſo many feaſts and banquets, giving her ſo many Jewels, ſo many Crowns, and ſo many coſtly Gowns, that they could think, that I ſhould believe, that they beſtowed all theſe things upon her for nifles in a bagge, for meer ſmoak, for her fair looks, for very pure love, and honeſt affection, ſimply and plainly, without any doubling, or other by-pretenſion? What can I anſwer for my ſelf? Or what can be expected from me, who not onely gave way thereunto, but did alſo work for her to run that courſe? That fellow had good reaſon to ſay that he did, who ſeeing how well I began to thrive in *Madrid*, himſelf being then in priſon, he ſaid in the preſence of my ſelf, and others. You ſee in what caſe I am here, it is now ſome three years ſince that I was apprehended for a Thief, for a Forger, an Adulterer, a Slanderer, a Murderer, and a thouſand other crimes, which they laid to my charge; all which being heaped upon me, I ſink under the burthen of them, and am ready to periſh for want of food: whereas *Sennor Guzman*, onely by giving his vvife leave to take her liberty, lives free, takes his eaſe, and grows rich.

What thinkeſt thou, could I think, when I heard this? O accurſed riches, accurſed eaſe, accurſed freedom, and accurſed alſo be that day, wherein I conſented to any ſuch thing; whether it were for love, neceſſity, favour of great Perſons, or any other intereſt of mine own. But becauſe the end may be known, which that man muſt come to, who gains by ſuch ungodly means, and that ye may ſee the unfortunate ſucceſſe, of ſuch baſe delights and pleaſures, I will recount my miſ-fortunes unto you, and entertain you with the diſcourſe of my ſharp and bitter life, which was ill beſtowed on me, as it was ill imployed by me.

We travelled to *Sevill* (as they ſay) *al paſſo de buey*; with the foot of an Ox; that is, fair and ſoftly, and with a great deal of leiſure. For my wife was afraid of the jogging of the Coach, leſt it ſhould make her little foiſting-dog ſick, which ſhe carried along with her in her lap, in which was all her happineſſe, it was her onely Jewel, and her deareſt delight. For one of theſe fizling-curs is a main piece of a Ladies Eſſence, and the proper paſſion of a Gentlewoman. Nor can they any more go without them, than the Phyſician without his gloves and his ring, an Apothecary without a cheſſe-boord, a Barber without a Gittern, a Miller without a Kit, or a Spaniſh *Don* without a Tooth-pick.

When we were come thither, out of the deſire that we had to draw profit from thoſe that return from *Peru*, and to ſee our houſe to become ſuch another, as the Contractation houſe for the *Indies*; whither and from whence bars of Gold and Silver dayly come, and go; and that it might be all built of Plate, and paved with Gold; methought it ſeemed unto me, that I ſaw them already entring in at my doors, their backs bowing under them with the burthen of their bars, ſo maſſie is that kinde of metal; and that their ſtrong-ſowen pockets were ready to rip and rend in ſunder, with the weight of their double Piſtolets, and Royals of eight, and all to offer them up to that their idol, my vvife.

With this golden conceit, and glorious imagination, I ſought to revenge my ſelf upon him that had baniſht us the Court; and ſaid with my ſelf; O thou Traytor; thou thought'ſt to put a trick upon me, but if any be cozened, it is thy ſelf, for all fell upon us for

the

the beſt. The affront that thou offered'ſt me, hath lighted on thine own head. I am now coming into the Countrey of *Cucanna*, or the Land of *Xanxa*, where is Gods plenty of all things, and where the ſtreets are ſtrowed with ſilver, where we ſhall be no ſooner arrived, but they ſhall come forth to receive us with a rich Canopy of State, where we ſhall all live like Kings.

With theſe, and the like thoughts, I called to remembrance, whatſoever had ſucceeded there unto me, in that my firſt departure from *Sevil*. S. *Lazaro* his Church would not out of my minde; I ſaw the Fountain where I drunk, the ſtone, whereon I ſlept in the Church-porch; the ſteps, by which I went up and down; I ſaw his ſacred Temple, and that holy Chappel, where I ſo devoutly ſaid my prayers; and though I was far off from it, I ſaluted the Patron thereof in this manner:

O glorious Saint; when I took my leave of thee, I went away with tears a foot, poor, all alone, and a Childe. Now I return to ſee thee, rich, attended, merry, and a married man.

Then was repreſented unto me from the very beginning of all the diſcourſe of my life, ripping it up even to that very inſtant. I remembred my ſelf of my Hoſteſſe that kept a Victualing houſe by the High-way-ſide, and of the Inne, where they gave me that good froyze of Eggs, and the Muleter of *Cantillana*; but I had now left that on the right hand. I entred by that Royal Cauſey, we turned about by the field, rounding the Citie, till we came to the Inne where our Carts were, where, of neceſſity my people were to ſtay; And for that all thoſe were ſteps which I had often troden, when I was a boy, and that place was well known unto me, becauſe I was there bred and born, my bloud began to riſe as cheerfully, as if I had ſeen mine own Mother. We lodged there that night, but not very well. But in the morning I roſe up with the Sun, for to ſeek out a new lodging, and to free my goods from that *Magazine*, as alſo to make inquiry, if any one could tell me tidings of my Mother. But for all the good diligence therein uſed by me, all was to no end; I could hear no news of her, no, not a word. I thought I ſhould have found all things as I left them; but they were ſo far from being in *ſtatu quo prius*, in the ſame caſe, wherein they were before, that there was not ſo much as a ſhaddow, or any memorial thereof remaining. For ſome were altered, others abſent, and moſt of them dead, inſomuch that there was ſcarce one ſtone left upon another, whereby a man might be able to ſay; This is ſtill the ſame *Sevil*. I forbore for the preſent to make any farther ſearch after her, deferring it till ſome fitter ſeaſon, in regard of the great haſte that I had at that time to accommodate my ſelf; and going about to ſee how I could fit my ſelf, I might perceive a bill, newly ſet up over the door of a certain houſe, that was to be let in the *Barrios* of S. *Bartholmew*, being within the precincts of the ſaid Pariſh. I made means to ſee it, I viewed it, I liked it then well, I hyred it for ſome moneths, and paying my Rent before-hand, I cauſed all my ſtuffe to be carried thither.

We reſted our ſelves ſome two dayes, eating and ſleeping our fill, till my *Grace* began to think with herſelf, that it was not fit, that he ſhould come to ſo noble a Citie as that was, and ſo much famouſed throughout the whole vvorld, to mue herſelf up within door, and not once offer to walk abroad. I got me to the *Cradas*; for her, I had hired a Squire, to uſher her through the ſtreets, for that theſe kinde of people are beſt acquainted with them; and that ſhe might go ſee thoſe things, that ſhe had moſt minde to, without roving up and down at random, or loſing of herſelf, or without asking which was the way to ſuch, or ſuch a place. And ſo for fifteen dayes together, ſhe never folded up her mantle. For every morning and evening, ſhe duely all that while walked abroad, and was never weary, nor fully ſatisfied with ſeeing ſuch greatneſſes, as did offer themſelves every where to her view. For albeit, although that ſhe was in *Madrid*, ſhe liked it very well, and ſo well, that ſhe then thought, that that Court had the advantage of all other habitations of the vvorld for its State and Majeſty, the greatneſſe and great number of their Dukes, Marqueſſes, Condes, and other *Titulados*, for its concourſe of Ambaſſadours from all forrain parts, for the good trading that is in it, for their temperate carriage, their diſcretion in general, and their liberty without compariſon, for the earth affords not a freer place to live in: Yet ſhe found in *Sevil*, the favour of a Citie, another I know not what, other greatneſſes, though not in the ſame quality, for they wanted Kings there to keep their Courts, nor ſo many *Grandes* and men of Title, at leaſt in quantity; yet had they great ſtore of vvealth amongſt them, and were in no leſſe eſteem; for ſilver was there as common amongſt the vulgar ſort, as Copper money in other places, and they made ſuch ſmall reckoning of it, that they ſpent it far more freely.

Within a few dayes after we came thither, Lent was come, and we ſaw the Holy-week in that manner, as it is there ſolemnized, we ſaw the liberal alms that were there, and at that time beſtowed on the poor, the ſtore of vvax which was ſpent in Taper-lights. My wife was ſtrooken with wonder, and as a woman beſides herſelf, not well imagining how this could poſſibly be, ſo far did it out-ſtrip in works, that which had been uttered of it in words.

Now in this mean time, which was not long after my arrival in this Citie, I had, by the great care that I had taken, and by ſome circumſtances, got to the knowledge of my mother, and if I may ſo ſay, had found her out by the track of her bloud. For my wife entring into ſpeech with ſome other fair Gentle-women, that were of her acquaintance, as they were diſcourſing of divers things, falling by the way upon her, ſhe came to know, that ſhe kept company with a handſome young vvench, to whom ſhe was ſuſpected to be mother, for the good uſage wherein ſhe treated her, and for the due reſpect which ſhe barè unto her. But in truth it was not; for ſhe had no other Childe but my ſelf. But the true cauſe thereof onely was this; that ſeeing ſhe was left thus all alone, poor, and growing now old, ſhe had bred her up of a little Girle, to do her ſervice hereafter, whom ſhe now made profit of, whereby they made a ſhift to live as well as they could. I, when I had notice of her, was very inſtant with her, to have her come live with me; but I could not win her to it, being wondrous loath to leave this young vvench, as well for that ſhe had bred her up; as alſo, for that ſhe was unwilling to have any difference with a Daughter in Law, which, her diſcretion told her, could not well be avoided. And as oft as I intreated her thereunto, ſhe would ſtill anſwer me, *Que dos tocas en un fuego, nunca encienden lumbre a derechas.* That two white Kerchiefs in one Kitchen, did never yet make good fire: Themſelves being apter to kindle one another, than to kindle it. For the ſorrow is not ſo great which a woman ſuffers, when ſhe lives alone, by, and of her ſelf, as is the torment which ſhe indureth, when ſhe is inforced to keep company contrary to her liking. And ſeeing that there was never yet any Daughter in Law, that could live peaceable and lovingly with her Mother in Law, ſhe was of the minde, that my wife would live more merrily alone by herſelf with me, and reſt the better contented with it, than if ſhe ſhould live with her. But in the end, the love of a Son prevailed ſo far with her, that I had perſwaded her to yield to my deſire. She was my Mother, I deſired to cheriſh her, and to make much of her, and that ſhe might now take her eaſe in her old age. For albeit to me ſhe did ſtill repreſent herſelf with the ſelf-ſame beauty, and the ſame freſhneſſe of colour, and clearneſſe of skin, with the which I left her, when I parted from her; yet was ſhe now quite altered from that ſhe was, it was hard to ſay, This is ſhe. I found her lean, old, tawny, toothleſſe, her face (like an old Apple-*John*) all ſhriveled, and altogether another kinde of creature. I ſaw in her the ruines of Time; and how years conſume every thing. Whereupon, turning my ſelf about to my wife, and looking wiſtly upon her, I told her; This fair face of thine muſt runne the like Fortune one day; beauty will not laſt for ever: And if at any time a vvoman chance to eſcape that deformity, which age layeth upon her; yet at leaſt ſhe muſt fall at laſt into the hands of death, which will diſfigure even the youngeſt body, and claw all the fleſh from the bones. I did figure the like unto my ſelf. But as well in this, as in all other thoſe good conſiderations, which had offered themſelves unto me, I did juſt as he doth, who comes to drink in an Inne, that ſtands in the High-way, who as ſoon as he hath drunk, ſets down the glaſſe and goes his way. They ſtayed but a little while with me; I kept them ſtill going, but never proffered them a chair to ſit down and reſt themſelves; for thoſe that I had in my houſe, were occupied and taken up by my Appetite, and Senſuality. At my earneſt intreaty, the Mother and Daughter in Law came to houſe together. My Mother, you knew her well enough before, though not by ſight, yet by report, and thoſe famous things you had heard of her. She was able to over-maſter the beſt of them, nor any of them all that could go beyond her for her wit, and her underſtanding; as well becauſe theſe things were ſo naturally and truely her own; as alſo for that ſhe had been ſchooled and trained up in them, and above all, having the advantage of ſo many years experience.

She gave my vvife very good counſel, adviſing her, that ſhe ſhould not admit into her company the young men of that ſtreet wherein ſhe dwelt, but (like the Fox) ſhould fetch her prey farther off; for beſides the infamy and diſhonour that ſhe ſhould get thereby, ſhe told her; that they are *Coma agua de por San Juan; quitan el provecho, y ellos no lo dan.* Like unto your Midſomer rain, which quits all profit, and yields no gain. They will rather draw

from

from you than bring any benefit to you. They dine and ſup ſtill at home, and when they know not what to do, or how otherwiſe to beſtow their time, then will they come to our houſe, and to look to be entertained by us in a good converſation; there will they ſtay all that evening; *Tres necios en plata, y un majadero en menudos*; Three fooles in one diſh, and a blockhead cut out in Sippets. Having no other ground for their acquaintance, but this weak foundation, that they are (forſooth) of the ſame ſtreet, or Pariſh, wherein you dwell.

Of your Court Pages, your ſtudents in Law, and your Univerſity young Fry, ſhe read the like Lecture unto her; telling her, that they were like unto Crows, which would ſmell out fleſh afar off, and were good for nothing elſe but to peck at it, and when they had done, get them gone.

She wiſhed her to ſet a Croſſe upon her door, to keep all married men out; for, from no enemy that ſhe had, could ſhe receive greater harm. For vvives that are jealous, commit a thouſand outrages, and cauſe millions of inconveniencies to come upon you. And when they cannot come to miſchief you, and work their will upon you themſelves (for not one amongſt a thouſand of them, but will ſcratch out your eyes, if ſhe do but imagine, you draw the cuſtom from their Mill) they will get them to this, or that Judge, and with four tears, two ſighs, one wry mouth, and a wringing of the hands, they will put all the Town in an uprore, and utterly overthrow your credit. In a word, ſhe gave in this kinde, many true, wholeſom, and ſound inſtructions, one that from the very wombe of her Mother, proceeded Doctreſſe in her Art, had all her leſſons that ſhe had learned, at her fingers ends, and knew how to make uſe of them. She carried her alwayes along with her, whitherſoever ſhe went, omitting no ſtation, that ſhe did not go unto; no Feaſt, that ſhe did not viſit, nor no ſtreet, that ſhe did not walk thorow.

When they came home, they would one while return with Taſſel-gentles, amorous Knights, like *Amadis de Gaule*, that would eaſily be mann'd, and quickly brought to ſtoop to the Lure; and other-whiles with fierce Maſtiffs, roaring Boyes, and Ruffian-like Swaggerers, ſuch as would ſwear and drink, and throw the houſe out at the windows: And out of theſe my Mother did cull, and pick out ſuch, as ſhe thought would make moſt for our profit: for having traded ſo long as ſhe had done in that Countrey, ſhe knew which track to take, there was not that path, which ſhe had not beaten; nor that thing which ſhe did not know; and knowing all, ſhe knew beſt how to go beyond them all.

For your beardleſſe young Gallants, and Sattin-cheekt boyes, ſhe would not have her to have any thing to do with them; nor to be beholding to them for ſo much as a ſtick of fire, which is a common courteſie betwixt neighbour and neighbour. For ſuch as theſe will not ſtick to tell you, that their peny is as good ſilver as yours; their Sugar-pellets, are as ſweet as your Conſerves; that their gay Cloaths, their curl'd Locks, and ſtrong Perfumes, deſerve your perſon, and that you ſhould kindely (without any other retaliation) entertain their love: And they will alſo think (being well conceited of themſelves) that you ſhould rather wooe them, than they you, and that you ſhould make them a courtſie, and cry, I thank you Sir. She took a great deal of pains with her in theſe, and the like, but above all, ſhe bid her take heed, that ſhe held no commerce, or correſpondence with thoſe of the place of *San Franciſco*, and that ſhe ſhould be afraid how ſhe did meddle with them, for if ſhe once begin to have any thing to do with your Officers of the Court of Juſtice, as your Clarks, and Regiſters, the whole rabble of them will run in upon you, even to thoſe that write at the desk, and will copy out a ſheet for a groat. And being they follow the Law, they think, that all that is yours, is theirs, and that of right it belongs unto them. For if you once fall into their hands, there is no ſcaping from them; for either by fair means, or by foul; by intreaties, or by threatnings, being ſo abſolute and ſo diſſolute, as they are, (I mean ſome of them) they exerciſe more Tyrannies, and more cruelties, than *Totila*, or *Dionyſius*, as if there were not a God for them, as well as for other folks.

The Fleet was not come; the Citie was in great want; their purſes were ſhut and our mouths open; and we were ready to dye for hunger. We fell a ſelling, and then a eating; and which was worſe, we paid a great Rent, and had little comings in. All went ill with us, we had brawling and ſcolding at home, and the poor maid that was in our houſe, ſhe paid for it; off goes her Kerchief, and with it her hair, tugging her thereby upon every light, or ſlight occaſion, keeping a great deal of ſtirre about toyes and trifles, that were not worth the talking of. There was not that Rogue, or baſe Raſcal, but would dare to do

us wrong, and not ſtick to gybe and flear at us; one ſaluting me in ſcorn, with the ſtile, *Sennor don Fulano*, and another with that of *Don Cutano*. My wife lived in a continual fear, and was now grown weary and ſick of the mother in law; for in regard that with me ſhe had lived ſo long at her own liberty, and had taken ſo much head, and now finding herſelf ſomewhat reſtrained of it, and that ſhe could no longer be miſtreſſe of her own will; and that if the one did but ſpeak, the other would begin to grumble; of every Gnat they made a Cammel; and of mole-hils, Mountains. And ſuch a cruel ſtorm and tempeſt would ariſe between them, that becauſe I would not be Stickler between them, or ſeem to take one part more than another, I would take my Cloak, and throwing it on my ſhoulders, when I ſaw theſe *Dolfines* once begin to play above water, and hie me (with all the haſt I could) out of the houſe, and getting me abroad, leaving them together by the ears, tugging one anothers head-gear off; fight Dog, fight bear; take them off who would for me. For I would have nothing to do with them.

My wife hereat was ſo mad, and grew ſo angry with me, that I would not ſhew my ſelf on her ſide, that by little and little ſhe grew to hate me; that whether it were right or wrong, ſhe thought it fit that Man and Wife, ſeeing God hath joyned us together, we ſhould cleave each to other; or whither with, or without reaſon, I had great reaſon to take her part againſt my mother; but that on the other ſide I held not to be ſo lawful.

Whereupon her hate grew to that height, and ſhe did ſo abhor my company, that meeting with an occaſion by means of a Captain of the Gallies of *Naples*, that lay there in the rode, ſhe exchanged my love for his. And gathering all the money together ſhe was able to make, and thoſe jewels of Gold and Silver, which we were ſtored with at that time, ſhe hoiſed ſayle, and went for *Italie*, I not knowing then for the preſent, what was become of her.

I have heard it ſpoken, That he is a Mad-man or a Fool, that will ſeek after his Wife, when ſhe is once gone: And that a man ſhould make a golden *Bridge* for a flying enemy; and be glad that he can be ſo rid of him.

I thought with my ſelf, That I ſhould better be alone, than ill accompanied. For, although it be true, that I gave way to all her deſires, and ſo had all my maintenance by that means: whereas otherwiſe I ſhould have wanted meat to put in my mouth, and cloaths to put on my back; yet I grew weary of it, becauſe every one had one fling or other at me.

See the force of uſe; for being that I was alwayes bred up to baſeneſſe, and was ever accuſtomed to bear affronts, when I was a childe, and afterwards when I grew ſomewhat bigger, I could the better bear them, when I was to be a man.

My Wife was gone from me, and therein ſhe did me a favour; for beſides that I was now free from that obligation of giving way, that ſhe ſhould lead that kind of life, which ſhe did, I was likewiſe free from that daily ſin, which might have lien upon my conſcience; For I did not caſt her off; but ſhe for to ſatisfie her own wilful humour, abſented her ſelf from me. And it was impoſſible, that I ſhould follow her, and hunt her out for the hazard that I ſhould run, if I ſhould return back again into *Italy*. Theſe difficulties therefore offering themſelves unto me, I led a retired life with my mother. And not having wherewithall to maintain our ſelves, we fell a ſelling ſuch houſhold-ſtuff as was left. But there being more daies in the year than we had implements in the houſe, all was gone within a very ſhort time. Saint *John & Corpus Chriſti* happened to me all on a day. I had now brought both ends together. I wanted goods to ſell, and money to buy. I found my ſelf out of reparations, not having wherewithal to cloath my back, nor to feed my belly; nor any thing elſe whereby to gain a peny, unleſſe I ſhould fall again to my old trade. I got me forth a nights into thoſe ſtreets, vvhere there vvere divers turnings or croſſe wayes, and when I had made my purchaſe, I vvould come home laden with two or three Cloaks, ſuch as I could compaſſe vvith leaſt trouble and peril to my perſon.

The next morning, one of theſe two courſes I took vvith them, that I turn'd them in a trice, either into Mandilians, Doublets, and Hoſe, altering the property of them, or elſe rid my hands othervviſe of them as handſomely as I could. But commonly when I had chang'd the faſhion of them, in the dusk of the evening I vvould get me unto the *Gradas*, and there barter them away, either for other vvare or ready money as others did.

This kind of trading my Mother was not ſo well pleaſed with, ſhe did not like well of it; as well, for that ſhe had never us'd it in all her life; as alſo, for that ſhe would not vvillingly novv in her old age, run the hazard of ſo foul an affront.

Whereupon

Whereupon ſhe reſolved with her ſelf once more to ſet up ſhop, and ſee what good ſhe could do by her old trade, ſhe and the young wench which ſhe lived withall before being agreed to become partners, and equally to ſhare all gains between them. O how glad was ſhe when ſhe ſaw my mother come within her doors; how did ſhe hug and imbrace her, as if ſhe brought in the *Indies* with her, or were the onely Phyſician to recover the ſick and decayed eſtate of her low brought fortunes, having no ſuch utterance of her ware, nor nothing the like doings now, as when ſhe liv'd with her! I (my mother being now gone from me) quickly brought my ſelf acquainted with ſome other good fellows, with whom I might merrily paſſe my life, till fortune ſhould change, and the time grow better. Theſe my Camerades, I fitted them with invention, plotted their buſineſſes for them, aſſiſting them in all occaſions with my perſon, went along with them to the Towns and Villages neer adjoyning. And whatſoever elſe we did chance to light upon by the way, we did never likely miſſe, in ſome of the back Court belonging to their houſes, a good Bucke of cloathes, which together with their Flasket, we made to vaniſh and diſ-appear in an inſtant.

We had in the Suburbs, and the *Triana* certain known houſes, places of purpoſe for receit, where, without entring into the City, we did pitch our Pikes, and make a ſtand. There did we drie our cloathes, and being clean waſht, and handſomely folded up, by little and little we conveyed them into the City, one while through the gates, another while over the walls, after midnight was paſt, when the Juſtice had done walking the Round, and was retired home. For thoſe garments of Cloth and of Silk, which by our induſtry we had purloyned here and there, as we could come to lay hands on them, we had known Brokers for them, to whom we ſold them at a reaſonable good price, loſing little or nothing of what they were worth, which being once delivered into their hands, they well knew that they ſhould paſſe for currant, as goods that had been gotten in a juſt war, and vvere their Craftsmaſters in altering the form and faſhion of them, to the end, that they might not be known for fear of after-claps. For we had no other obligation, but to give them good vvares for their money, dry and well conditioned, putting it vvithin the doors of their houſes free from tax and tallage, and all other payments, leaving them to be freely enjoyed by them. Your clean white linnen had quick diſpatch, in regard of the good convenience that was offered us to come eaſily by it; as alſo that it vvas very good chaffer, to traffick avvay with ſtrangers. And in this manner did wé maintain our ſelves bravely, and went well and cleer avvay with it.

One time (*I* remember) in the Winter, there was ſuch a continued rain vvithout intermiſſion, that none did dare to go out of doors, ſo that the owners of thoſe houſes keeping themſelves within, all commodity of viſiting them was taken from us; whereby money began to grow ſcant with us. It was my hap at that time, as I was paſſing along through a certain ſtreet, that *I* eſpi'd all the fore-part of an houſe quite fallen down to the ground. *I* askt whoſe houſe that was? They told me it was a Gentle-womans that was a Widow. I went and ſought her out, and deſired her, That ſeeing there was no body dwelt in her houſe, ſhe would give me leave to go in, and lodge there, promiſing her to look carefully unto it. She (good woman) being afraid, leſt the whole houſe ſhould come tumbling down about my ears, told me; That *I* were beſt take heed what *I* did, leſt the houſe ſhould chance to fall. As for that, *I* anſwered again, it made no great matter, for that there was an upper room, which (as I conceived) was ſtrong and ſure enough, whereinto I might ſafely retire my ſelf: telling her beſides; that ſuch as were poor (as *I* was) had no cauſe of fear, or loſſe; life being to them rather a burthen than otherwiſe; and was the thing, vvhich of all other they could beſt ſpare. Whereupon, very vvillingly ſhe gave me leave ſo to do. And *I* preſently vvithout any more adoe, got me in, and vvithin ſome four dayes after, there vvas not a door, vvhich I had not unhindged, nor a lock, vvhich I had not ripped off.

The next day after, *I* got me into the ſtreet of *San Salvado*, and there I caus'd it to be openly cri'd at the Croſſe, that whoſoever vvould buy four or five thouſand Tyle-ſtones, he ſhould repair unto me; for *I* had authority to ſell them unto them. At that time, there vvas not a Tyle to be got in all the vvhole Tovvn for any money. Anon after came poſting unto me three or four Maſons and Brick-layers, and happy vvas he that could come firſt, all of them earneſtly ſtriving, vvhich of them ſhould have the bargain out of each others hands, and vvere ready to go together by the ears about it.

Well, they came to agreement vvith me for five *Maravedis* a tyle; and bringing them to the

the houſe, I made ſhow of them unto them, telling them that I was the *Mayor-domo*, or Steward of the houſe, and that my Miſtreſſe was minded to pull it quite down to the ground, and build it all new after another manner. Beſides theſe of mine, which I made my ſelf Maſter of for the time, I ſhewed them others of our next next neighbours, joyning houſe to houſe with us, being ſo near the other as they ſeemed to be fellowes, which likewiſe they were to have away with them. They gave me ſix hundred Royals in good ready coyn, upon condition, that I ſhould make up my tale of Tyles, to the full number of five thouſand; telling me, that the next day they would come and fetch them away.

When I had my money, I haſted away to the Miſtris of the houſe, and ſaid unto her; that it was great pity, that ſhe had given leave to her *Mayor-domo* to make ſale of all the doors, and tyles that covered her houſes. Whereupon ſhe grew into a great rage, and kept a foul coil about it, ſaying, She had no *Mayor-domo*, nor yet knew, who had any ſuch authority to do it. Thereupon I told her; That your worſhip then may know, who it is that takes this upon him; I have been already commanded to get me out of the houſe, and that I muſt have nothing to do there any more. Wherefore I muſt be inforced to look out a lodging elſewhere. For to morrow very early, thoſe that have bought the Tyles will come to carry them away. Your worſhip may be pleaſed to ſend ſome body thither, or to take the pains to go your ſelf, and then you ſhall ſee what hath paſſed. This ſaid, I took my leave of her; and the next day following, ſtanding a looof off, leaning againſt the corner of a Wall, I kept my ſelf cloſe, to ſee the ſtir that would be about this buſineſſe; and I can aſſure you, it was ſport alone, as was able to make as many as beheld it, to break their hearts with laughing, to ſee how buſie the Tylers were, in untiling the houſe, and how the poor Gentle-woman beſtirr'd her ſelf, to defend her own. In concluſion, ſhe exhibited a complaint againſt the poor Tyler, and did not onely take away the Tyles from him, but alſo made him pay the price of her doors and locks. This cauſed me for ſome few dayes to keep my ſelf cloſe within doors, having a good fire, and laughing in my ſleeve, till the ſtorm was over-paſt; and that they had given over looking after me.

One day, there was a great feaſt in *San Auguſtin*; and becauſe ſuch kinde of meetings made for us, I got me thither. Where I perceived, that a Gentleman had good ſtore of money looſe in his left pocket, on that ſide where his Rapier hung. Now, when he came into a place, where there was a great preſſe of people, and that there was much thruſting & crowding one another, I did gently lift up his Hangers, and thruſting in my hand, did nimbly dive to the bottom, letting not ſo much as one Royal eſcape my fingers. But the unquiet motion of thoſe that were about me, hindred my hand being ſo full as it was, to carry it away cleanly, by means whereof a great deal of it fell down upon the ground. And for that the Cloyſter was pav'd, it made a great gingling; With that let all goe, and putting my hand into my pocket, in a trice I took out my Handkerchief, and crying to the people, that they would for Gods ſake give back, and make a little room, for that in pulling forth my Handkerchief, I had ſhed all my money. All very kindly did as I deſired them; And the good honeſt Gentleman, whom I had thus robb'd, moved out of charity, hearing the pitious moan that I made, crying out, that I was with theſe moneys to pay my Merchant, ſtooped down with me to the ground, and holpe me to gather it up, till I had all to the laſt Royal. I gave him thanks for his pains, and getting out of the throng, I went home vvell contented. This was that knife that cut my throat; this poor little theft was my final perdition and utter undoing; being the laſt that *I* did, and for the which *I* paid dearer than all the reſt. For albeit heretofore *I* had been taken in the like manner; yet for all thoſe ſtorms, *I* arrived at laſt in a ſafe Haven. With money *I* could negotiate what *I* liſt my ſelf; and there, and in every place there is no other talk, than how a man may make a ſhift to live, and to get wherewithall to maintain his port; this was, is, and will be the practice as long as the world is the world; Judges have hands to take, and Malefactors money to give. Every man (you know) would fain live by his place. But now thoſe Trumps would do me no good, for *I* had renounced them long ago. When *I* was flush of money, *I* would ſeek to furniſh my ſelfe afreſh, before they were ſpent, for preventions-ſake. *I* would make new proviſion; for as long as *I* could out of mine own ability, ſupply my neceſſities and wants, *I* did not ſeek after incumbrances, or to draw ſorrow upon my ſelf. *I* had in a corner ſome purſes, that *I* had cut, and ſome pretty little ſtrange pieces, that *I* had met withall. *I* made choice of one that *I* lik'd beſt of, and cauſed it to be handſomly trim'd up, and putting into it ſix Crowns, in three Doblones of gold, fifty Royals in Plate, a ſilver Thimble, and four Rings; *I* carried it to my mother, and ſhew'd her every thing particularly by it ſelf, uſing therein a great deal

of

of leaſure, pawſing well between every parcel: I likewiſe did ſet down the ſame in writing unto her; to the end, that ſhe might learn it without book, and not miſs one letter of the leſſon that I taught her: for a good memory is all in all; and that which in this buſineſſe did moſt of all import. And having well inſtructed her in that which ſhe was to do, when ſhe was to come afterwards to repetitions, I got me to the Cell of a certain famous Preacher, who was a good man, and an holy, and reputed and reverenced of all men, as if he had been ſome Saint, and ſaid unto him:

Reverend Father, I am a poor ſtranger in this place, I am come hither to this City, and am at this preſent in great want and neceſſity; I deſire to accomodate my ſelf, if I could light upon ſome honeſt houſe, where *I* might live peaceably and quietly for my ſouls health; this is the onely thing that I deſire in this world; as for any ſet wages I ſhall not ſtand much upon that. For ſo as I may have honeſt cloaths to my back (I care not how mean, ſo they be whole) and ſome ſet Commons (though never ſo poor) to paſſe over this miſerable life, I ſhould well content my ſelf therewithall, without either hope, or deſire of any farther profit. And albeit I am in this wretched eſtate as you ſee, and that I am nothing but rags; inſomuch that for lack of decent and ſeemly cloaths (being ſo ill clad as I am) *I* ſhall not haply light upon any, that will take me into his ſervice; and albeit I could for the preſent be able to help my ſelf, and ſupply this my neceſſity by an occaſion that is now offered unto me to relieve my wants, yet I hold it better to ſuffer penury, and to relie upon an hopefull expectation of Gods helping-hand (who will at one time or other pity the diſtreſſed eſtate of the poor) than by offending his Divine Majeſty, in uſurping upon the goods of my neighbour. God forbid, that other mens purſes ſhould free me from my corporal labour, leaving to my ſelf a guilty and condemning conſcience.

I got me this morning out of my lodging, for to ſeek ſome work, whereby I might gain me bread to put in my mouth, and it was my good hap to finde this Purſe in the midſt of the ſtreet: *I* took it up, and went to look what was in it. And when *I* perceived it was money, I preſently ſhut the Purſe, fearing leſt mine own weakneſſe might draw me to do an unlawful Act? I ſhall intreat your father-hood, to take it into your hands, and being that you are next Sunday to preach, that you will publiſh the ſame to the people. It may be that the owner thereof may be preſent there, or by others report chance to hear of it, who peradventure may have as much, if not more need of it than I have. Much good may it do him with it, for I will not enjoy any other goods, ſave onely ſuch as his divine Majeſty may be beſt ſerved by me.

The honeſt Friar, when he had heard me out, and ſaw the heroical diſpoſition that was in me, took me rather to be a Saint, than a man. And he did ſo much honour and reverence me for it, that there only was wanting the kiſſing of my garment: and in an heavenly kind of language, he thus ſpake unto me:

My dear brother, give hearty thanks to Almighty God, that he hath conferr'd upon you ſo clear an underſtanding, and the knowledge of that little eſteem which we are to make of the goods of this world, and aſſure your ſelf, that he that hath communicated unto you this his holy Spirit, will (as he hath promiſed in his holy Word) provide for you, and miniſter ſuch things unto you as his divine Wiſdome ſhall think fit and needful for you. He, who to the poor leaſt little Wormes, and all your ſmall fleſhleſſe and bloudleſſe Vermine (as your Ants, Flies, Caterpillers, and the like hurtfull creeping things that crawl upon the earth) is not wanting, but careth for them, ſhall much more be mindful of you, and ſupply you with all thoſe things that he ſhall ſee you ſtand in need of; not onely freeing you from theſe your preſent miſeries, but farther increaſing your joyes, and his bleſſings upon you. This action of yours is ſupernatural and divine work, which ſtrikes admiration into men, and ſtirs up thoſe Angelical ſpirits of Heaven to ſing forth a thouſand Hymnes of praiſe and thankſgiving, that ſuch a noble creature was born for the glory of God, and the good of the world. This is his gift, and none but his, acknowledge it, and magnifie his praiſe by ſpeaking good of his holy Name, and perſevering in vertue.

*I* ſhall do as you would have me, and ſee you return again unto me ſome day in the next week; for I hope in God, I ſhall be able to do you much good, and procure ſome favour to be ſhown unto you.

When this good man had made an end of theſe his holy words, my heart therewith (methought) was quite pierced thorow, and began to bleed within me: for, conſidering the greatneſſe of his ſanctity and ſincerity; and on the contrary, of my roguery and

villany, who by ſuch vile and wicked means ſhould go about to make him the inſtrument of my theſts; and the more to colour the buſineſſe, I let fall a few feigned tears; this holy Friar thought I had ſhed them for Gods ſake, and thereupon began likewiſe himſelf to grow ſomewhat tender.

This matter reſted thus till the next Sunday following, which was *All-Saints* day; and when he came to preach, he ſpent the greateſt part of his Sermon in this buſineſſe of mine, indearing that Act ſo much the more, for that it had proceeded from a ſubject ſo much neceſſited; and did exaggerate it ſo to the heighth, that he moved all thoſe that were there to compaſſion, and made them the willinger to do me good. So they repaired unto him with their almes, which they poured forth in a plentiful manner.

On Munday morning my mother came to the *Portaria*, and askt for that holy Father; that ſhe was to ſpeak with him about an earneſt piece of buſineſſe. The Porter, who perceived how deſirous ſhe was to come to the ſpeech of him, went in to call him, and preſently brought him unto her. Whom ſhe no ſooner ſaw, but taking hold of his hands, and his habit, kneeling down before him, and offering to kiſſe his feet, told him; That the Purſe was hers, deſiring him for Gods ſake, that ſhe might have it again. She acquainted him with all the outward marks of it, as alſo with the particular and remarkable pieces that were in it, as one that had well ſtudied the Caſe. Whereupon the Friar without any more adoe, did deliver it unto her, knowing the tokens to be true.

When my mother had the purſe in her own hands, ſhe opened it, and taking out one of thoſe three *Doblones* that were in it, ſhe gave it to this holy Father to beſtow upon me for the finding of it: As alſo four *Royals*, for two Maſſes to be ſaid for the Souls in Purgatory; and for that purpoſe ſhe recommended them unto him. Thus did ſhe recover her purſe, and brought it preſently home unto me, not wanting ſo much as a pins head of all that was in it; for I had likewiſe of purpoſe wrapt ſome of thoſe pieces in little parcels of paper, that it might the ſooner ſeem to be ſome womans houſe, who uſe ſuch kind of fidling and fooling with their money.

After this buſineſſe was thus over-paſt, about ſome two dayes after, upon Wedneſday towards the evening, I went to viſit my Fryar; who againſt my coming thither, had provided for me a Coffer full of cloaths, which might very well out-wear ten years, and ſpending-money beſides for ſome dayes. He gave it me with a cheerful countenance, and willed me to return again unto him the next day: For he had ſomething elſe to ſay unto me, and he did not doubt, but it ſhould be much for my good. I did ſo, repairing unto him at the time appointed: Then did he ask me, whether I could write or no? I inform'd him of my ſufficiency in that kind. Whereupon he told me, that there was a certain Gentlewoman, whoſe Husband was in the *Indies*, who did much deſire to have ſuch an one as I was, to follow her buſineſſe, and to have a care to husband her eſtate both in the City, and in the Countrey, and to be true and faithful in thoſe things that ſhe ſhould commit to his charge; and that therefore I ſhould deal plainly with him, and truly tell him, whether I could like of this courſe, or no? For that, according to my anſwer he ſhould ſeek, or not ſeek to ſettle me there, as he ſaw I ſtood affected.

I (after that I had given him thanks) ſaid unto him; My good father, that which appertains to my perſonal pains, to my ſolicitude, diligence, and fidelity, wherewith I ought to ſerve her, this *I* am able to tender unto you; but I muſt tell you withall, that *I* am not of this Countrey, nor have any known acquaintance in theſe parts. And therefore if this Gentlewoman ſhall put her goods into my hands, and that I muſt have the diſpoſing of them, ſhe will expect that ſome body ſhall be bound for my truth; but I am not able to give her any ſecurity; and this is likely to be the onely rub that *I* know. I leave it therefore to your fatherly conſideration, what is to be done in this caſe, craving your advice therein. He told me, that he would be my Surety; and that if that were all that I ſtood upon, that ſtop ſhould not dam up the way, wiſhing me not to foregoe ſo fair an offer. *I* accepted it very willingly. For *I* ſaw, that by this means my buſineſſe was in a good forwardneſſe, and would finde legs to goe on with it. For there is not any thing that doth ſooner deceive a juſt and an honeſt-minded man, than the ſimulated ſanctity of a wicked and counterfeit Rogue.

## CHAPTER VII.

Guzman de Alfarache *being preferred to a Gentlewomans ſervice, robs her; Upon this theft he is apprehended, and condemned to the Gallies during life.*



SO great is the force of cuſtome, as well in the roughneſſe of troubles and afflictions, as in the ſmooth waters of happineſſe and proſperity, that ſome eaſe in the miſeries, doth lighten the load, and doth in ſome ſort help to make them ſeem more facile in their ſufferance; but the greater burthen lights upon thoſe that have lived well and happily; there is no grief to this, comfort hardly takes hold on them: Fortune cannot doe a man more harm, than when ſhe hath inveſted him with an habit of happineſſe, to diſ-robe him thereof, and that diſgracefully: for this unexpected privation makes it the more inſupportable.

This Cuſtome is that uncontrouled Lord, that preſcribes, and proſcribes Lawes at his pleaſure; infirming ſome, and confirming others; ratifying this, and diſ-anulling that. He (like a powerful Prince) prohibits here, and eſtabliſheth there; and conſequently, to that ſide, whereunto he leans, he carries all after him, as well in the purſuit of Vice, as in the practice of Vertue. So that, if he apply himſelf to goodneſſe, he eaſily runneth the danger of loſing it; and adhering to that which is evil, it will hardly afterwards be rooted out. There is no force that can ſubdue it; but hath power and command over all humane actions.

Some have called Cuſtome a ſecond Nature; but experience teacheth us, that its power is greater than that of Nature; For Cuſtome will overthrow Nature with her little finger. She is no body in her hands: if ſhe affect ſowr and bitter things, with ſuch artifice doth ſhe conſerve and ſweeten them; that as if they were not bitter at all, ſhe makes them to become ſweet and pleaſant. But if ſhe clap in cloſe with Truth, and link her ſelf in a League with her, ſhe is then the mightieſt monarch that is, and her Force is inexpugnable. Who but ſhe makes the poor Shepherd to live alone by himſelf in the ſolitary fields, in the depth of the low Valleys, and on the tops of high Mountains, amidſt Buſhes and Thorns, Woods and Rocks, oppoſing himſelf againſt the unmercifulneſſe and cruelty of a ſharp and rigorous Winter, ſuffering terrible ſtorms, continual rains, bitter Windes, and piercing Aires? And in the Summer, a parching and ſcorching Sun, which doth as it were roſte and ſindge the Trees, burn ſtones, and melt metals? And its force being ſo great, that it tameth the fierceſt and wildeſt beaſts, and thoſe that are moſt venomous, bridling their fury, and allaying their poyſon, Time at laſt overcometh Cuſtome; it is he, and none but he that works upon it, and to him onely it is ſubject.

For comparing Cuſtome with Time, her long and ſtrong preſcriptions are but as Spiders webs, made to catch an Elephant: For, if Cuſtome be powerful, Time is prudent and wiſe. And as wit goes beyond ſtrength; ſo Time ſubdueth Cuſtome. After night, comes day; after light, darkneſſe: They tread one upon the heels of another; and the ſhadow that followes after the body, and growing greater and greater, conteſts with him for ſuperiority. The Fire wageth war with the Air: the Earth with the Water, and all the Elements goe together by the ears, and are at a perpetual enmity one with another. The Sun generates the Gold, it gives it its eſſence, and its life. In like manner, Time purſues, proſecutes, and fortifies Cuſtome. It makes and it marres, working wiſely with ſilence, according to the ſelfe-ſame order, as ſhe is wont by continued drops, to hollow the hardeſt ſtone.

Cuſtome is of others, not ours; but Time is our own. It is he that diſcovereth the threed, manifeſting what is moſt ſecret, and by the fire of occaſion, maketh an eſſay and trial of his Art. By experience he teacheth us the quilates and aloy of that gold, and ſheweth us the end whereunto his pretenſions tend; And declared himſelf at laſt to be one, that never took any pity of me. For in a very ſhort ſpace, he made that publick, which I had laboured with all diligence to keep hid and ſecret. All that which hath been ſaid was verified truly of my ſelf in its proper terms and caſes. O how often treating of my buſineſſes, trading of my wares, putting money out to uſe, framing nets to catch fools, by raiſing of my price,

ſelling my commodities far dearer to him that went upon truſt, than him that paid ready money, carrying alway my beads in my hand, my countenance compos'd, and ſtill the ſame; with a Truly and Verily in my mouth (from whence never any truth yet came) did I openly (according to my old Cuſtome) cozen and ſteal from as many as I had to do withall! But Time did diſcover all my rogueries.

How often, and by how many have I been heard to ſay; I promiſe you Sir, that it ſtood me in more, I cannot afford it you at that price, I vow and proteſt unto you, that I get not a Royal by you in all this whole parcel of Wares that you have bought of me? I may go ſhut up my ſhop, if I make many ſuch markets. And if I have let you have it better cheap than I could afford it; it is becauſe I am to make ſome payment of moneys; and if it were not for that, you ſhould not have them at this rate. And the ſame courſe I took in a thouſand other things of the like nature, not having any other uſe than for moneys, more than from their hands to mine, to gain an hundred in an hundred.

How often likewiſe when I was in my proſperity, during this my good fortune, and ſtudying daily to grow greater and greater (onely that I might get my ſelf a good opinion in the world, meerly for vain-glory, and not for the love of God: for I did not ſo much as dream upon him, nor think upon any thing elſe, ſave only to be well thought of, and to have the peoples eyes upon me, who taking me to be a charitable minded man, and a giver of almes, would gather thereupon, that I was a man of good Conſcience, and that I had a care of my ſouls health, and therefore might the better truſt me) did I cauſe a great number of poor, morning after morning to come to my door, and keeping them there two or three houres, that there might be good notice taken of them, and ſeen over and over by thoſe that paſt along by my houſe, did I afterwards ſend away with (God he knowes) a poor ſlender almes, whileſt with that *no nada*, that thing of nothing, which they received from me, I did gain my ſelf a good reputation, which like a ſtalking horſe I made uſe of, the better to get other mens goods into my hands? How often have I divided a loaf of bread in twain, (when I was no whit hungry, but as full as my belly could hold) and of that which remained, as if it were a thing to be loſt, or to be caſt away to the dogs, did I part in a thouſand pieces, and beſtow it afterwards on the poor? Nor did I give it unto thoſe, who, I knew had moſt need of it; but to thoſe, by whoſe mouths I knew it would be moſt ſpoken of, and divulged to the world. And how often (having a bloudy heart, and a damnable intention, being naturally cowardly, timorous and feeble) did *I* pardon, and put up injuries, putting them in publick to Gods account, mine own thoughts ſecretly condemning me, did I in ſecret diſſemble them, not ſticking to ſay in publick, God be thanked for it; when I was truly inwardly offended, and that no other thing in the world did hinder my revenge, but that I was fearful, and found my ſelf unable to put it in execution? But the coals thereof were alive, and did burn within my ſoul, whoſe flames *I* had much to doe to ſuppreſſe. How often at other times did I ſhew my ſelf an abſtinent and ordinary faſter, not for any other thing in the world, than to ſeem to be ſuch an one, and that *I* might ſpend leſſe, and ſpare the more? But when I did eat at another mans coſt, or ſpend upon another mans Purſe, I did then ſwallow down my victuals like a Cormorant, then *I* had a Wolf in my belly, and was ſtill afraid, that I ſhould never have enough. I did continually viſit the Churches, I would often both goe and ſend to the Priſons, onely to get my ſelf credit among the Officers there, and ſuch other Miniſters as belonged unto them, and not for to do any good offices for the Priſoners, or any grateful work unto God. But rather to the end, that it ſhould be my ill hap at one time or other to come thither, being formerly known by them, they might uſe me the more kindely, and bear me the better reſpect. If *I* repaired to the Hoſpitals, if I went upon Pilgrimage, if I did frequent places of devotion, kiſſing, nay, gnawing as it were the Altars, out of an hungry zeal; if *I* would not loſe a Sermon, nor a Jubilee, nor any publick devotion, all the ſteps that *I* trod, and all the pains that *I* took, were onely directed to the getting me a good name; to the intent, that under the colour thereof *I* might the better cozen my neighbour, and take his cloak from off his back.

Moreover, *I* muſt not forget to tell you, that divers things were now and then told me, and thoſe very ſecret ones, touching ſuch or ſuch a perſon; the which were kept ſo cloſe, that afterwards, when *I* did chance to talk with thoſe perſons, whom they concerned, counſelling them to leave off ſuch and ſuch courſes, or rather correcting and reproving them for it; they imagined of me, that *I* had come to the knowledge of them by ſome divine revelation. And ſo by indirect wayes, and a ſeeming kinde of holineſſe in me, *I* gave them to underſtand their faults; by which meanes, *I* got my ſelfe a great deal of reputation,

eſpe-

eſpecially amongſt the vvomen, who after theſe things, and Gypſies, run as ſwift as the wind; being facil in believing, and nimble in publiſhing. Out of whoſe mouth, my praiſe and commendation went ſpreading it ſelf abroad.

Many a time and oft, when ſome poor body was willing to uſe my help, making eſpecial choice of me, as one that was well eſteemed and reputed of all men, I would ſtand in the open ſtreet with a Diſh in my hand, publickly begging Almes for him, of thoſe that I was acquainted withall: and having got a pretty round ſumme of money, I gave him the leaſt part of it, and kept the reſt to my ſelf. I ſuckt up the Cream, and left him the Whey.

When I was minded to do ſome notable Villany; the firſt thing that I went about, for the better effecting of ſuch a buſineſſe, was to get me a very fair and goodly large Jeſuitical Cloak, wherewith to cover it; and for the better diſſembling of it, I would put on all the geſtures of outward ſanctity, and ſubmiſſion, mortification, and good example; having the true turning up of the white of mine eye, a ſober look, a grave utterance, ſeldom ſpitting, but when I was to ſpeak to the purpoſe, a broad-woking Hat, a little Band, and a leſſe pair of Breeches. And with this kinde of habit, and poſture, I bore the Ball before me, and tript up the heels of all thoſe that ſtood in my way. Which if in nothing elſe, yet was it plainly to be ſeen in this; that I had therewith ſo eaſily deceived this holy man, this good honeſt Fryer, that did wiſh me ſo well; nay, had already done ſo well for me. Nor did I onely do him this harm alone, but a greater miſchief followed upon the neck of it. That he by my means loſt that good opinion, which the vvorld had of him: But ſay he had not loſt it; and admit, that he kept it whole and ſound, as before; yet, what a villanous inſtrument was I, and what juſt cauſe had I given of prejudicing, and that in no mean meaſure, the credit and reputation of ſo honeſt and innocent a creature as he was.

Well, he had now placed me with this Gentle-woman, being verily perſwaded of me, that I would do her all true and faithfull ſervice, as he might very well preſume by thoſe particular actions, which I had made ſhew of unto him, of this my rare and ſingular (ſhall I ſay knavery, or) perfection? Well, whatſoever I was, I am ſure he took me to be a very honeſt man. He gave his word for me, and truſted me with much of his own: I could not lack any thing, if it lay in his power to pleaſure me, ſo good an opinion had he conceived of me. She willingly (upon his recommendation) received me into her ſervice. She truſted me vvith her vvealth and her family. She had ordained a very good lodging for me, provided a delicate ſoft bed for me, and all other neceſſaries that were fitting for me. She uſed me in all things elſe, not as a ſervant, but as a Kinſman, and ſuch an one, for whoſe ſake ſhe did verily believe, that God would throw many favours upon her. Sometimes ſhe would intreat me, to ſay an *Ave-Mary* for the health and good ſucceſſe of her husband. I made anſwer to all her demands, as if I had been ſome Oracle, and with ſuch a deal of mortification, that I made her many times to ſhed tears. By this means I came to coozen, to rob her, and which was worſt of all, to injure her, by wronging her houſe. For you ſhall underſtand, that this Gentle-woman had a certain fair white ſlave (none I wiſh of theſe black-mores, but a handſome well-favoured vvench) to her Maid-ſervant, whom for a long time, I took to be free-born, and ſhe likewiſe ſeemed to be a good and holy creature. But in very truth, ſhe was ſuch an one, that ſhe and I might very well ſhake hands; of us both, there was never a barrel better Herring: Well, were ſhe better, or worſe than my ſelf, be ſhe what ſhe will be, let it ſuffice you, ſhe and I had tumbled together upon one bed. I know not how we did ſmell out one another, that in ſo ſhort a time, we had grown to be ſo well acquainted. For within ſome few dayes that I had been in the houſe, there was no ho with her, I could not keep her out of my Chamber, would I never ſo fain, but ſhe would come in whether I would, or no. To all the reſt of the ſervants, ſhe ſeemed to be a Saint, and looked as though butter would not have melted in her mouth, but with me ſhe ſhew'd herſelf moſt looſe and diſſolute, as if ſhe had been bred up in ſome brothel houſe, or trained to this gear in the publick Stewes, yet ſtill carried herſelf with that wiſdom and diſcretion, that none of the houſe, except my ſelf, no not her Miſtreſſe could come to know, or the leaſt way to ſuſpect, that there was any ſuch ſecret buſineſſe between us. Beſides, ſhe did ſo cheriſh me, and make ſo much of me, that my Cheſt was never without good ſtore of Collations, and other ſweet-meats. So that my Chamber, was like a Comfit-makers ſhop. She furniſhed me with a great deal of fine Linnen, as white as the curd, neatly folded up, neat and ſweet it was. And her Miſtreſſe was glad to ſee it; for ſhe took us both to be Saints. She likewiſe gave me money to ſpend, not knowing whence ſhe had it, nor how ſhe came by it, or from whoſe hands ſhe received it.

I had a glimpſe of ſome things: but becauſe I would not fall from thoſe good terms wherein I ſtood, I would not be too curious in the ſearch of them; as well that I might not loſe her company, while I continued there; as alſo that I might thereby oblige her the more unto me: I went entertaining her with fair words, and good hopes, telling her, that when time ſhould ſerve, I would ſeek to redeem her out of her captivity, and afterwards make her my vvife. This ſeaſoned the pot, made her rowze up her ſpirits, and like a Spanel, to wait diligently upon me, and to ſerve me in any thing that ſhe thought would pleaſe me. For, conſidering the love which I feigned to bear under her, (though ſhe were a crafty ſubtile vvench) ſhe did evermore make ſure account of me, as if I were not a free-man, and ſhe a ſlave. And yet not ſo free as you think neither, having a vvife (for ought I knew to the contrary) ſtill alive.

My Miſtreſſe knew nothing concerning her own eſtate and wealth, nor did finger any other moneys, than what I gave her. All things that were in the Citie, went through my hands; I likewiſe had the command of all her ſtock abroad in the Countrey, and did take and gather in all the fruits and profits thereof. For my deſign was to make a reaſonable good round booty and ſo get me gone, to ſeek me out a new vvorld. I had a great minde to go to the *Indies*, and did but watch for an opportunity to imbark my ſelf, howſoever it ſhould afterwards fall out with me. But I could not handſomely put this blow home. For my Miſtreſſe fore-ſeeing her certain ruin, for that her Farmers and Tenants had told her, that they had paid in their Rents to me; the Shepheards, that I had ſold her flocks; the Bayliff of her Vineyards, that I had conveyed all her vvines out of their Vaults and Sellars, where they were wont to be kept; and that of all this, one peny-worth thereof was not come to her purſe; ſhe reſolved with herſelf to communicate this matter in private onely to one Gentleman that was her near Kinſman. She then acquainted him with all that had paſſed, and what an ill account I had made her, intreating him to apply ſome convenient remedy for the ſame. He, without ſpeaking ſo much as a word thereof unto me, when as I was going one evening to caſt up my reckoning, and to deviſe with my ſelf, how I might make clean work of all that my Miſtreſſe had, not thinking (God wot) on any ſuch thing, being devoid of all care, and free from the leaſt ſuſpicion of any ſuch matter, the weather being hot, and my ſelf very drowzie, I fell faſt aſleep.

Now, whileſt I was thus taking my reſt, and thinking no body any harm, an *Alguazil* comes in ſuddenly upon me, takes hold on me, and without telling me why, or wherefore; (for that (ſaid he) I ſhould know hereafter at better leiſure) he carried me away to priſon. The buſineſſe was thus carried, that neither our houſe, nor the ſtreet, ſhould be in a hurry and tumult, by any ſtir, or coyl that *I* ſhould make, when *I* ſhould come to know by whoſe order *I* was apprehended, and committed. *I* went along very ſad and heavy, and knew not in the vvorld what to think of it; one while deviſing with my ſelf, whether this my Commitment were by vertue of ſome *Requiſitoria*, or Commiſſion come out *Italy?* Whether it were at the ſuite of my Creditors in *Caſtile?* Or for ſome of my new theſts, that *I* had ſo late committed in that Citie, which perhaps for want of good carriage, were now come to light? And albeit, every one of theſe had weight enough to preſſe down my heart, and to make it ſink under ſo many, and ſuch heavy burthens; yet did it grieve me more than all the reſt, that *I* ſhould now lye no more at rack and manger, as *I* was wont to do; and that together with my good name, *I* ſhould likewiſe loſe my credit and eſtimation, and that men would not truſt me, as they had done heretofore. But what remedy but patience? And ſeeing it was no better, God be thanked it was no worſe. For this miſ-fortune befell me juſt at ſuch a time when as my Crown was ſhaven and had not any thing worth the ſpeaking, that was to be found either about me, or at home in my lodging. For in regard that my Mother was a ſingle vvoman, and lived alone by herſelf, by a little and a little, *I* carried all that *I* had ſcrap't together, to her, and ſhe kept it for me. Afterwards they broke open my Cheſt, but found nothing in it, but a Bill of the laſt year, and a few of old rags. Whereupon, they came to priſon to take an account of me; giving them ſo bad a one, as might well be preſumed from ſuch a one as *I* was, who would alwayes receive, but never pay.

*I* did not give them ſuch a Bead-roll, as they do, that pray upon their Beads. They laid great ſummes to my charge, but could meet with nothing but blanks. They made ſtrict inquiſition to finde them out; They looked here, and they looked there, but they could not light upon any thing, for *I* had not ſo much as one farthing of it in my cuſtody. When they ſaw that, they got them to the Fryer, and gave him a large account of the caſe how it ſtood with them.

He

He (like a wiſe man) did neither condemne, nor abſolve me, till he ſhould hear what I could ſay for my ſelf, that he might the better judge thereof, when he had heard both parties. He came to the priſon to viſit me, and talking with me about this buſineſſe, I denied all, and ſtood ſtifly to it; affirming, that they had ſuborn'd falſe witneſſes againſt me; and I was as innocent as the Childe that was new born; and that no man knew leſſe thereof than I did. And therefore my hope was in God, and that he would help me; and that, as he had freed *Joſeph* and *Suſanna*; ſo would he defend the juſtneſſe of my cauſe, and would not ſuffer the uprightneſſe of my dealing to periſh: Acknowledging withall, that this, and much more chaſtiſement my ſins had deſerved, for many other my former offences, which I had commited againſt his divine Majeſty.

The good religious man knew not what to do, nor to which of us he ſhould give moſt credit. He was much perplexed within himſelf, and ſtood doubtfull to which ſide he ſhould lean. But for the preſent, he inclined to that part that was falling, ſeeking to ſupport the weakeſt. He gave me comfortable words, promiſing his beſt care and pains in my defence, recommending my buſineſſes unto God, who would (when he ſaw fit) free me out of my troubles, and afford me his helping hand. He took his leave of me; from thence he went to the *Eſcrivanos* Office, for to *abonar*, and make good my Cauſe, deſiring him for charities ſake, that he would have an eſpecial care of it, and look well into it, telling him that he was verily perſwaded, that I was a religious honeſt man, one that feared God, and was a Saint upon earth.

But when the *Eſcrivano* heard him laſh out ſo far into my commendation, laughing heartily thereat, he pull'd forth ſome *Proceſſes*, that had been put in againſt me, and making a relation unto him of the particular points therein contained, laying there before him, what a lewd kinde of fellow I was; the thefts that I had committed; and the cozening tricks that I had uſed; the poor Fryer was aſhamed of himſelf. Thereupon this good holy Father, with all the ſincerity and ſimplicity in the vvorld, up and told him, what had paſt between him and me, and by what means he came to the firſt knowledge of me, and how, and for what cauſe, he gave me ſo much truſt and credit; not thinking (good man) thereby, to do me any harm; but did onely tell him this, that he might be the better perſwaded of me, and that he himſelf had ſome reaſon to ſpeak for me, and to do me all the lawfull favour he could.

When the *Eſcrivano* had heard this tale, he grew heart-angry, and his Soul was vexed at this my villany, to ſee that I had no more grace with me, but to make ſo grave a perſon a ſtale for my roguery; and that I ſhould put ſo groſſe a jeſt upon ſo good a man. He was herewith ſo incenſed againſt me, and his choler did riſe in that abundance, that if he had had the Law in his own hands, I had preſently been hang'd out of the way, without any more adoe. He left the Office, and went preſently to the *Teniente*, or Deputy Lieutenant, to whom he made a large relation of all the whole matter, and ſet it down all under his own hand, and finding himſelf as much affronted with this wrong I had done the Fryer, and that the parties aggrieved had paſt over all their power unto him to proſecute it for them, as if it had been his own cauſe, they laid more and more to my charge, forming another new proceſſe againſt me of far greater aggravation than the former, and commanding me ſtricter impriſonment, willing the Jaylor to put me down into the Dungeon.

This unfortunate day did not catch me ſo naked, that I wanted money to be able to draw out my thread to its length, and to wage Law with them. But the Priſon is of the nature and quality of fire; it conſumeth all that come unto it, converting it into its own proper ſubſtance. Large experiences had I made thereof, and by my account I found it to be a Wind-Mill, and a May-game for Children. There is not any one that comes thither, but is a Miller and grindes there; crying out that his impriſonment is but for a thing of nothing, a toy, a trifle; when as ſometime it ſo falleth out, that they are committed thither for three, or four Murderers, for a robbery upon the High-way, or for ſome other the like foul and odious offences. It is a place where fools ſet up their reſt, a forced trial of mans patience, a dear-bought experience, a too late repentance, a proval of a mans friends, & a revengement of his enemies, a confuſed Common-wealth, a ſhort Hell, a long death, a Haven of ſighs, a Valley of tears, a houſe of Mad-men, a very Bedlame, where every one cries out, and loves to hear himſelf talk of his own fooliſh and wilde pranks. And all of them being guilty, not a man of them that will confeſſe he is faulty, nor that his crime is any thing heynous.

They that are priſoners, are like unto your Grapes on a Vine Bower, which as ſoon as they wax ripe, there is not a ſprig, or bough of them which is not laden with Waſps, who inſen-

inſenſibly (they having no feeling of it) ſuck all the juyce and ſweetneſſe of them, leaving onely the Casks, and Husks of them empty, hanging upon the Arbour; And as are the Grapes, ſo is the ſwarm; if great and more, the more Waſps; if few and ſmall the leſſe. As it is with this Vine and its Grapes; ſo it is with thoſe that are led to priſon.

The Officers and Miniſters, that belong thereunto, come thick and threefold about him, clinging ſo cloſe unto him, and ſucking ſo hard from him, that they never leave him, till they have drawn him drie, and taking all his pith and ſubſtance from him. And when the poor priſoner hath not longer wherewithall to feed his hungry maw, and that they have ſqueez'd all his ſweetneſſe out of him, they flie away from him, and forget him, as if there had never been any ſuch man, leaving him to himſelf poor, and comfortleſſe. And this is as it were but a flea-biting, and a little evil, in compariſon of a greater, which is too uſuall and common amongſt them. For if the priſoner be poor, and have no money, they preſently pronounce ſentence againſt him, leaving him ſtark naked, and undone.

As ſoon as they conſigne and deliver him over to the Maſter-keeper, or head-Jaylor, who hath the keeping and diſpoſing of the upper-wards, and the beſt lodgings, they give him that entertainment as his purſe ſhall deſerve. For that Keeper, or Jaylor does like him that buyes; who has no reſpect to the quality of him that ſells, but to the thing that he ſelleth: ſo to him it matters not, whether the priſoner be more one, than another; Noble, or baſe; Gentleman, or Clown; all is one for that: He looks onely unto that which he gives him. When his Commitment is not a matter of importance, nor meriting corporal puniſhment, and is not of that heynous nature, as murder, theft, the foul ſin, and other ſuch like, they leave him at large to take the pleaſure of the priſon, alwayes provided, that they pay him well for this his Liberty. I was well uſed at the firſt, (for my cauſe was not criminal) and handſomely lodged, before that I had given ſecurity either to ſatisfie, or anſwer to that debt, wherewithall I was charged. By this time they all knew me, and all of us underſtood one another well enough, we were all Camerades, and hayl fellow, well met, one with another. I gave them content, and ſtayed below amongſt them, talking and paſſing away the time with them, but had evermore an eye, to ſee if I could ſafely get to the door, and ſtood ſtill, watching an opportunity, when I might conveniently do it, and ſo give them the ſlip.

But upon my firſt apprehending, as ſoon as I was come in ſight of the priſon; as alſo, after that I was committed, there preſently flockt about me twenty ſeveral Proctors, Attourneys, and Sollicitours, (who lived by the ſins of the people) who with their pen and paper, (which they never went without) took both my name, and the cauſe of my impriſonment; all of them making it a matter of nothing, and an eaſie ſuite to go through with. One of them would tell me, that the Judge was his very good friend, and did favour all the cauſes that he brought before him; another, that he had a great intereſt in the publick Notary; a third, that within two hours he would get me bayled; a fourth, that my buſineſſe was a toy, a meer trifle, a thing of no conſideration in the vvorld, and that for ſix Royals, he would inſtantly undertake to free me. Every one of them would make himſelf Maſter of my cauſe, ſaying, that it did properly belong unto him, for that he had accompanied me, and came along with me, from the time of my arreſt. This man I entertained, for his plea of prevention, being unwilling to croſſe that Proverb: of *firſt come, firſt ſerv'd.* Whereupon I entreated him, that he would call ſuch an *Eſcrivano*, a friend of mine unto me. Another, for that he was the firſt that put pen to paper, and had drawn my Petition for me to the *Teniente.* But to my ſelf, I laught at them all. For I knew them well enough, and the manner of their proceeding. For they onely live by what they can get and wring from a man beforehand; but afterwards you ſhall not draw them along, with two yoke of Oxen; they will ſo hang the arſe. And there was one of them that having a Power, or Warrant to free a Thief, was not aſhamed to ask him money for to make his Interrogatories, after that he ſhould be condemned to the Gallies.

Thus, all of them ſtriving, which of them ſhould be imployed in my buſineſſe, there comes me ruſhing in violently through the midſt of them, a very bold and confident fellow, that thought to rule the roſte, and to carry all away before him, one that had been my Proctor heretofore in criminal cauſes, and ſaid unto me; What, Sir, are you here? I told him, yes. Which queſtion he might have ſaved; for he ſaw I was ſure enough. Then he askt me; What was the cauſe of my impriſonment? When I had told it him, he replied: Tuſh, laugh, and be merry, Sir, take no care for this, it is a toy, a trifle, I warrant you Sir, we will take order for this, and therefore let it never trouble you. Have you any money, Sir, that I may carry

it

it to the *Eſcrivano*? I will poaſt preſently with a Petition to the *Teniente*, that you may put in Sureties to anſwer the matter, and in the mean time to have your Liberty to follow your buſineſſe. And if he ſhall refuſe to grant you proviſion in this Caſe, we will have a Writ of remove, to bring the matter into the open Hall, and thoſe that aſſiſt there in Councel, ſhall preſently give order for your releaſe. I ſhall ſpeak to one of them, who is my ſingular good Lord, and I dare pawn my word to you, that you ſhall not tarry here above half a day.

When the others heard this, they ſaid, Ha? How now? What is this? Is the winde in that door? Here is a pretty kinde of form of framing a Petition with all my heart. Is this the courſe you mean to take? We have been ſome twenty of us and upward, theſe two long hours and better, taking pains in this buſineſſe, and will you now take the ſame out of our hands? Shall the hindermoſt Dogge bear away the Hare? Muſt he now follow the ſuite?

My Proctor thereupon made them this anſwer; My Maſters, had you been writing and labouring about this buſineſſe theſe two moneths and more; yet notwithſtanding upon my coming unto him, I am the man that muſt go through with it. For this Gentleman is my very good friend, and I am to diſpatch all his buſineſſes. And therefore a Gods name ye may be gone, and let my Clyent alone.

When they heard him ſay ſo, they reply'd unto him; O what a ſweet and ſeemly manner of negociating is this? What a fair flouriſh does he make? Where has he waſht his hands, that he ſhould ſhave us on this faſhion, and carry away this cauſe ſo cleanly? You may be gone, Sir, and it pleaſe you; for this Gentleman knows reaſon, and will entertain him in this cauſe that he hath moſt minde to: and therefore what need ſo many words? In concluſion, one ſaid yea; and the other ſaid no; and in the end, they differed ſo long about it, that they grew at laſt ſo hot and ſo angry one with another, that they began to rip up each others faults, and to tell (without any other bodies help) who they were; there was not a ſpot in their practice, which they did not lay open to view; nor that ſtain in their life, which they did not diſcover; ſhewing how and in what manner they did cozen the poor priſoners, and pick their money out of their purſes. Which was a Dialogue (for thoſe that heard it) of excellent entertainment, and paſſing good mirth; for that they were truths, repreſented to the life. And this (I aſſure you) is a common trade amongſt them, and this cozening courſe they take at all hours, and with all perſons, as well priſoners, as others.

Now, when this heat was over-paſt, and all was quiet; I came to my old Proctor, intreating him to do what was fitting, and I would ſee him well contented for his pains. I gave him four Royals to begin withall: which when he had fingred, I could ſee my friend no more in fifteen dayes after. I knew well enough before what he meant to do; and that he had no other errand unto me but this, to lick ſomething from me, though it were never ſo little, the better to ſecure the ſeething of the Pot, againſt the next day following, and to have wherewithall to go to the Market-place. But I was driven perforce to make choice of him, becauſe I ſtood in fear of him: who, for that he was well acquainted with all my old cauſes, if I ſhould have refuſed him, or ſhewed him any but the leaſt kindneſſe, and that he ſhould have taken a ſtitch thereupon againſt me, he would have diſcovered the pot of Roſes, and thrown open the Cloak that covered all my knaveries, and would in two hours have heapt upon me a hundred ſeveral accuſations. So that partly chuſing him, (by refuſing the reſt) and partly leaving him, (in the poorneſſe of his Fee) as well to have him hold his peace, as to get him to follow my buſineſſe; for I muſt have paid ſome body; I held it the beſt courſe to make him my Proctor, though this were not a buſineſſe that required much following; but did mainly conſiſt on matter of money. But afterwards when I began to be examined, and throughly ſifted of that my audacious deluſion, and impoſture, which *I* had put upon that good religious Fryer, and that they came to compare cauſe with cauſe, then did *I* need a Proctor.

Now things begin to go on in good earneſt; they called me up, and went about to clap bolts on my legs; but thoſe *I* redeemed with my money. *I* paid the Keeper, who had the keeping of them, and the young fellow, that was to put them on, had his Fee likewiſe of me. My *Eſcrivano* now often viſits me; my Petitions run up and down from place to place; Give me thus much, ſayes my Sollicitour: Where is my Fee, quoth my Advocate? Thus by little and little, like ſo many Horſ-leeches, they went ſucking all my bloud from me, till they had ſcarce left me one drop. So that now *I* was like a cluſter of Grapes, that was quite dried away, and withered to nothing. Yea, notwithſtanding all theſe miſeries, it is not fit,

that I ſhould paſſe over in ſilence, that which paſſed betwixt my vvench, and my ſelf. For as much that every morning, as ſoon as it was day, ſhe rained down Manna upon me; in her I found ſome help, for that ſhe furniſhed me with all things that were neceſſary for me: and and when the rigour of my impriſonment was upon me, being ſentenced by the *Teniente* to the Gallies, ſhe ſent me a Letter: which for that it is a pleaſant and witty one, I thought good to make it known unto you; as alſo, becauſe it is not amiſſe, to ſlacken the ſtring, and unbend the bow, by recounting of ſomething, that may ſerve for entertainment. Which Letter ſpake after this manner:

To *Sennor Guzman de Alfarache*, my hearts joy, and my hopes comfort.

*MY dear* Love; *(though now to my great grief, a poor condemned Slave) I write theſe lines to no other end unto thee, ſave onely to perſwade thee to caſt away ſorrow, and to take comfort unto thee. Let it ſuffice (ſweet-heart) that I have none; and let me alone for thee: For ever ſince S.* James *his day, about two of the clock in the after-noon, when thou was firſt apprehended whil'ſt thou lay'ſt quietly aſleep, who (hard hearted, as they were) would not let thee take out thy nap, my Soul hath much ſorrowed for thee. But that which farther encreaſeth my affliction, is, that this ſad news is brought this day to my ears, that the* Teniente *hath adjudged thee to two hundred ſtripes, and ten years continuance in the Gallies. God laſh his ſhoulders for it with whips of wyer, and the knottieſt, and ſevereſt ſcourges of his wrath; Let him live a ſlave all the dayes of his life in the Gallies, and then rot, and die. It well appears, that he wiſhes thee not ſo well as I do; nor knows the bitterneſſe of thoſe tears that I ſhed for thee. Little does he think how dear thy love coſts me.*

Juliana *wiſhes me to tell thee, that thou ſhouldſt forthwith appeal from him. Appeal twenty times, and more (if more ſhall ſeem fitting unto thee) and take care for nothing; for (by the grace of God) I doubt not, but all ſhall go well enough in the end: And then, this Tyrannical* Teniente *ſhall ſee (though it grieve him) that thou ſhalt not for ever remain a priſoner to his pride: for I ſwear and vow unto thee, by this my* Mulata *face, that I will make him to remember as long as he lives, the tears which he hath drawn from mine eyes; which have been ſo many, that I had much adoe to keep them from the worlds knowledge; And I ſhould have poured them forth, till they ſhould have grown to be great Rivers, had I not feared I ſhould have been drowned in them, and ſo never have enjoyed thee more. By the faith that I owe unto thee, I will never ceaſe weeping, till the fountain of my tears ſwell ſo high, that I may come ſwimming unto thee, and draw thee out of that dungeon, whereunto my Soul is chain'd, and remaineth there priſoner with thee.* Juliana *can tell thee, how I tore my hair, when I heard this bad news. By her I have ſent thee twenty Royals, that thou maiſt follow thy ſuite, be as merrie as thou maiſt, and that thou would'ſt think on me; howbeit, I knew the time, when ſuch ceremonies needed not between thee and me: For had I been but a minute of an hour from thee, ſtaying no longer away, than while I had put a few coals under the pot, thou didſt think it a thouſand years. Remember (my ſweet Slave, my prettie Cage bird) that I both love, and adore thee: and receive this green Girdle from my hands, in token of the good hope which I have, that mine eyes ſhall quickly ſee thee ſet free. And if for to ſupply thy wants, it were needfull that I ſhould be ſold, brand this my face with two hot irons, and ſet a Slaves mark in either cheek, and make ſale of me in the open market: for aſſure thy ſelf, I ſhall eſteem it the greateſt happineſſe that can befall me, that my boundage may work thy freedom.*

*Thou telleſt me, that* Soto, *thy* Camerade *is ill, and was never well, ſince the Hang-man dealt ſo roughly with him, and ſtrained the ſtrings ſo hard, that he made him change his note; racking as much from him, as there needed no farther confeſſion; it grieves me to the verie heart, that a man of his ſpirit, ſhould be ſo cow'd by*

*ſuch*

*ſuch a vile and baſe fellow, that for verie fear, he ſhould be forced to confeſſe, not onely his own, but other mens faults. Commend me unto him (though unknown) and tell him, that I am heartily ſorrie for him; ſhare part of theſe Conſerves with him, which I ſend you, which (my dear Love) I have made a ſhift to ſave for thee.*

*To morrow is our kneading day, wherein we muſt mould up our bread, and put the loaves into the Oven; then ſhall I make thee ſuch a friendly Cake, and butter it ſo finely for thee, that thou ſhalt not be aſhamed to bid thy beſt friends to the eating of it.*

*Send me your foul linnen, and ſhift dayly, that you may keep your ſelf clean and ſweet. For ſince that theſe mine arms cannot imbrace thee, they ſhall tire and weary out themſelves in thy ſervice; as being moſt willing to do any thing, that may give thee content. My Miſtreſſe ſwears that ſhe will hang thee, becauſe ſhe ſayes you have robb'd her of you know what; but I am ſure, you have robb'd another of more than ſhe; of I know what you know; To a wiſe man a word is ſufficient.*

*If Uſher* Gomez *ſhall come to ſee thee, talk not with him, or if thou doeſt, be very circumſpect, what thou ſayeſt unto him: For he is a man, that carries two faces under one hood; he ſeeks to inſinuate himſelf into other mens boſomes, onely to ſift them: And beſides, he is a great friend to a cup of wine; And a drunken tongue (which I need not to tell thee) will blab out all it knows. I advertiſe thee of all: And becauſe this is for no other end, here I end: yet never end to pray unto God, that he will free thee out of this filthy dungeon. From this thy Chamber, about an hour before midnight, my contemplation (ſweet heart) being ſolely and wholly beſtowed on thy beſt beloved ſelf.*

Thy Slave till death.

This vvenches Oyl maintained the weke alive, all the time of my troubles, which otherwiſe would have gone out. For I lived at a great charge, my expences were many, and though I had made my Harveſt, and gathered a great deal together, yet was all melted away, like Salt in vvater, or butter againſt the fire. My mother likewiſe, when ſhe ſaw in what bad terms my ſuite ſtood, told me; That ſhe was robb'd of all that ſhe had; but as I did conceive (and think truely) her meaning was to hold that faſt which ſhe had, when ſhe ſaw it was to no purpoſe to let it go. Whereupon, I was inforced to do as the reſt did, and to follow the current. My plea ſtill went on, and I wanted money to maintain my cauſe. I could not corrupt the *Eſcrivano*, (for I had nothing wherewithall to bribe him.) The Judge, he was ſo highly incenſt againſt me, that there was no hope of working him; My Proctor, he ſlept in the buſineſſe, and would not ſtir a foot; and my Solicitor fled as far from me, as his legs would carry him. There was now no more juyce in my bunch of Grapes, the Waſps were now gone their way, and had left me all alone; they had pronounced ſentence againſt me, the effect whereof was, That I ſhould be ſet upon an Aſſe, and ſo ride ſtript to the waſte, round about the Town, receive ſo many ſtripes; the Crier proclaiming my offence before me; and this done, to remain for ſix years in the Gallies.

When I ſaw I muſt be made a Gally-ſlave, and that there was no redemption of this my puniſhment, I put on a brazen face on the matter, and grew careleſſe of any mans either ſight, or cenſure. I play'd my part without fear, or ſhame, as being now the Kings ſlave, and out of all other mens reach and danger, they having no more to do with me. Yet was it ſome comfort unto me, that my Camrade *Soto* was condemned to the like puniſhment, and that we ſhould, like a couple of loving Curs, be tyed together in one pair of couples. And as we were fellows and companions in one priſon, and in one and the ſame Dungeon, and had run both of us one and the ſame Carreer; ſo was I very willing, that there might have been that good amity between us, and that true love that ought to have been, which if he had been the ſame man he ſhould have been, it had gone better both with him and me, than now it did. But (as you ſhall ſee hereafter) he plaid the Traytor with me.

He was a notable ſqueeze-grape, a huge quaffer, his glaſſe ſhould be alwayes brim-full, and he would up with it *de profundis*; his uſual draught was a large pinte and a half: and having drunk liberally before he came to the rack, thinking that would have made him leſſe ſenſible of his pain, he confeſt at the firſt whatſoever they would have him. Seeing I had now

received my doom, and that there was not any remedy, nor the leaſt hope thereof for my redemption, I was willing to trie my fortune; but I never had her yet to friend: So that it had been a miracle, if ſhe had not failed me now. I feigned my ſelf ſick for ſome fifteen dayes, never came out of my Dungeon, nor roſe from my bed.

At the fifteen dayes end, having provided my ſelf of vvomans apparel, and having ſhaved my beard clean away with a Razour, putting on thoſe Cloaths, caſting a Mantle over them, and painting my face, dawbing it firſt with white, and then giving it a little tincture of red; now when night was in, I paſt through the two upper doors, that belonged to the Galleries, and neither of thoſe Porters ſaid a word, but let me paſſe quietly, yet were they both of them quick-ſighted enough, and had their eyes clear and ſound.

But when I came down to the door that opens to the ſtreet, and was ready to put my foot over the threſhold, a blink-eyed Porter that had but one eye (would to God he had been blinde on the other) claps his arm athwart the Poſtern, kept me back, lookt upon me, and preſently knew me: whereupon, he ſhuts to the door. I had provided my ſelf of a good ſhort arming ſword, one, that if need had been, would have done the deed, which I carried cloſely about me, if I ſhould chance to be put to my ſhifts, and have occaſion to uſe it. But as ill luck would have it, I bore it about me at ſuch a time, when as it could do me no good, nor ſtand me in any ſtead in the vvorld. This was ſuch an aggravation of my fault, that my accuſation was now made criminal.

Well, they turned me up ſtairs, and fulminating a new *Proceſſe* againſt me, they condemned me to the Gallies, during life. And it was no ſmall courteſie, that they did me, that they did not make me ride in thoſe cloaths up and down the Citie, as they had heretofore done the like diſgrace unto others, I thought to have avoided danger, and fell upon my death.

## Chapter VIII.

Guzman de Alfarache *is taken out of the Priſon of* Sevill, *to be carried to the Port, to be put into the Gallies. He recounteth that which befell him on the way, as likewiſe in the Gallies.*



Am a Galley-ſlave, and am now come to the end, for which I was ordain'd, whereunto my lewd courſes were the means to bring me. I muſt now lead that life, as the reſt of my fellows do, who endure the like fortune. I muſt pull at a Rope, tug at an Oar, and content my ſelf with ſuch poor fare, as others of my wretched condition are allowed. I was one of the Band of the Braggards; *de los, de Dios, es Chriſto*; one of that Company, who confeſſe Chriſt to be God, and have no other Cognizance of their faith; for their works march under the Colours, and conduct of the Devil. I put on my white linnen breeches, my colour'd ſtockins, my cut doublet, and my Holland night-cap; all which my kinde and loving *Mulata* had ſent me; living in hope, that in time the Dice would turn, and that ſhe might one day ſee me again at liberty. What with the help that I had from her, & what with thoſe my fees, that I recovered (as due unto me) from thoſe new Priſoners that came in, I led a fine gentle life, as alſo the life of a Gentile; for ſuch is the quality of ſuch as I am, when they are admitted into ſuch a famous School as this is, where ſuch a deal of roguery is profeſt.

I had now got ſome Oyl to my Lamp, ſome money in my purſe, partly out of other mens devotions, and partly out of mine own endeavours; I did lend upon pawns, of every ſingle *Royal* I made dayly a *Quarte* profit; I did filch from thoſe that were freſh-men, and newly come in amongſt us; not one of them that ſcaped my fingers, all that came under my hands paid ſoundly for it. When they were aſleep, I would play the wag with them, putting the ſnuffe of a Candle on the top of their ſhooe, and holding matches of brim-ſtone under their noſes, or rolling a Carde, let the ſmoak run up into their noſtrils, till it was ready to choak them; and a thouſand other the like knaviſh tricks. For albeit God is there known, yet is he not feared. They have no more reſpect unto him, than if they were ſo many Pagans. And for the moſt part, thoſe that come to the like miſery are Ruffians, and High-way robbers, a brutiſh and beaſtly kinde of people. And it muſt be either a great wonder, or a miſ-fortune, that ſuch an one as I ſhould come thither; and when it ſo falleth out, the reaſon of it is, be-

cauſe

cauſe God blindeth their underſtanding, to the end, that by leading them this way, he may bring them to the acknowledgement of their ſin; and that they may in time come to a clearer knowledge of him, learn to ſerve him, and be ſaved.

There was a Ruffian, a notable ſhaver (in my time whileſt I was there) who being condemned to death, and put into the *enfermiria*, or that quarter, where the ſick are cured; whence he was to be taken forth the next day to be executed, ſeeing ſome of thoſe that had the guarding of him, playing at three-hand *Primera*, he roſe from his bank, he made to them as well as he could, crawling along with his two pair of fetters, and a great chain; and they asking him, whither he would? He told them; I come hither to paſſe away the time a while.

The Guards that had the charge of him, told him, that it was fitter that he ſhould betake himſelf to his prayers, and recommend himſelf and his ſoul unto God. Whereunto he anſwered, *I* have pray'd already all that I can pray; I have not one prayer more left me; I have no more to do, than what I have done already; and therefore ſhuffle and deal about, and fill out ſome Wine, and let the Cup walk, that we may waſh away ſorrow, and rid away that care, which is ready to choak my heart. They repli'd, it was very late, and that the Tavern-door was ſhut, and there was no getting in. Goe tell then (ſaid he) the fellow that keeps it, that it is for me, and that is enough; I warrant you, he will not deny me. And therefore no more words, my Maſters, but play on, and follow your ſport; for I ſwear unto you, that I know not what will become of this buſineſſe, nor what the iſſue thereof will be.

They dance all to this Tune. Others there are, that will have their Head and Beard neatly trimm'd, that they may ſeem the handſomer when they come to the Gallows, and be ſaid to be proper men and well-favoured; and will take order to have a fine clean ſtarcht Ruff, daintily and curiouſly ſet, it ſeeming perhaps unto them, that the wearing of that, and the bearing their *Bigotes* high, turn'd up with hot irons, and ſtiffened with gummes, ſhould be their ſalvation, and bring them to heaven. And as in Philoſophy, mens complexions follow generally the goodneſſe or badneſſe of their meats; ſo may it likewiſe of the good or bad company that we keep. Whence grew that Proverb: *No con quien naces, ſi no con quien paces.* We muſt not judge of men by their birth, but by their breeding. It is their converſation, that muſt give them their denomination.

Now I was one of theſe, and like a barbarous and ill-bred fellow, would fain imploy that little money which I had in renting one of thoſe *Bodegones* belonging to the Priſon; but fearing a day, that they would on the ſudden ſtrike up an Alarme, and ſo *I* might chance to loſe all, I did not do it; and I think I did well in it. For now that we began to make a number of ſome ſix and twenty Galley-ſlaves, and were grown ſo unruly in the priſon, that there was no ho with us; the Keeper was half afraid, that we would make ſome hole or other in the Meſhe, and find a time to get out of the net; and therefore laboured all that he could to be diſcharged of us.

One Munday morning we were called up, and giving every one of us a Teſtimoniall of his ſentence, we were all chained one to another: And being thus threeded, as it were upon four chains, we were delivered over to the Commiſſary, who was to convey us by little journeys to the Port; fair and ſoftly, foot after foot, and as we would hale our haltered legs after us; our pace like our irons being very heavy.

In this manner went we out of *Sevil*, to the great grief and ſorrow of our Parents and Kinſfolk, and other our good friends, who went tearing their hair, as we paſt along the ſtreets, and ſcratching their faces with their nails, every one according to the love and reſpect which ſhe bare unto her friend. And they on the other ſide pulling their Hats over their eyes, went along like ſo many meek and gentle Lambs; and not with that Lion-like look, and haughty carriage, as they were wont heretofore; it was not any braving now, or out-facing of the matter, that could do them good. Arrogancie was out of requeſt with them, and would not ſerve the turn. I cannot deny, but it did touch me for my part to the very quick, it went to the heart of me: eſpecially when *I* called to minde the merry life that I had led, the good ſtate wherein *I* had lived; if *I* had but the grace to keep my ſelfe well, while *I* was well; and to ſee the miſery, whereunto now I was come.

Then did I begin to think with my ſelf; if this be ſo painful unto me already, if this chain doth ſo much torment me, that *I* can ſcarce indure it, if I feel ſuch trouble now, and if this befall me while the wood is green, what will it do, when it grows old and dry? What

torment wil they feel that are condemned for ever to a perpetual pain? Muſing upon theſe things *I* paſt along thorow the ſtreets of *Sevil*, for my mother did not come to accompany me, nor was ſhe willing to ſee me. And I was the onely man amongſt them all, that was *Solus cum ſolo*, left alone to my ſelf.

We walkt along very leaſurely, which (God wot) was ſlowly enough, yet as faſt as we could conveniently: for when my chan was ſlack, and I was offering to go forward, my next fellow would oftentimes pull me back, which he could not ſometimes do withall, and ſometimes again would ſtop of ſet purpoſe, as his neceſſary occaſions did require. Another, he was foundered with going bare-foot, and all the reſt ready to ſink, they were ſo weary. We were men ſenſible of pain, as other men are, and being in that caſe as we were, none had more cauſe to ſorrow than we, yet amongſt our ſelves our griefs were ſo equal, that we had but little advantage one of another.

O the wretched and miſerable ſtate that we live in, and to how many various and unfortunate chances are we neceſſarily obliged! We came to a place called *Las Cabecas*: and as we went on a morning from thence, we had ſcarce gone half a League, but that one of our company had eſpi'd afar off a certain young fellow, who was going towards *Sevil*, with a great many fine little young Pigs, and giving the word one from another, we did preſently battel-wiſe caſt our ſelves into a Wing, as if we had been the Thrkiſh Galies; and marſhalling our ſelves after the manner of an halfe Moon, we did in ſuch an orderly faſhion ſet upon them, that the points of the Hornes meeting as it were before, and in a kind circle-wiſe inclining each to other, we had ſhut in the Pigs on a ſudden, and incompaſſed them ſo, that they could not get out from amongſt us, and in ſpight of the young fellowes teeth, do what he could for his life, every one of us made purchaſe of a fat Pig.

The fellow began to cry out aloud, making great exclamations, and intreating the Commiſſary, that for Gods ſake, he would take order, that he might have them again. But he ſeemed to be deaf, and would not hear of that ear, as one that was to have the greateſt ſhare in this booty; and ſo we paſt along with our prey, leaving the poor Clown to go ſeek his remedy elſewhere. We knew the worſt of it already, ſo that our care and our pity were much about one.

About noon, when we came to our Inne, where we were to reſt our ſelves, and with a little ſleep to paſſe over the heat of the day, the Commiſſary called to us for the ſhare that he was to have of this our theft: for, being that he was conſenting thereunto, the Acceſſary was to have as much as the Principal; the Aſſentant, as the Aſſailant. He commanded one of them to be roſted for him; whereupon there a roſe a great ſtir and tumult amongſt us, being ready to goe together by the ears, whileſt we were arguing the Caſe, which of us was to part with his Pig. For amongſt us all there were ſcarce three of us that had the uſe of reaſon.

When I ſaw the mutiny that was amongſt them, and that in the carriage of this buſineſſe, he might (and that juſtly) blame me the more, becauſe my underſtanding was more than theirs: I ſaid unto him, Maſter Commiſſary, my Pig is here ready at your ſervice, diſpoſe of it as you pleaſe: And if you ſhall ſo think fit, ſeeing here is Guard ſufficient upon us, may it pleaſe you to command them to unchain me, and I will take the pains to dreſſe it for you with mine own hands: for *I* have ſome reliques yet remaining of a good Cook. He thankfully accepted of this my civil complement, and ſaid unto me; Of all this company that is here under my charge, *I* muſt truely confeſſe unto thee, I have, ſince my firſt knowledge of thee, obſerved in thee a certain kind of nobleneſſe and free nature, which cannot but proceed from ſome good blood. *I* therefore thank you for this your preſent, and take it kindly at your hands, and ſhall be very glad to eat it, as you ſhall order it for me. I was taken from the chain, and being recommended to the Guards, I call'd for ſuch things as were neceſſary: but becauſe the Inne was ill provided of ſuch things as I would have had, to ſhew my Cookery, I could ſhew my skill no farther then in the well roſting of it, with a few eggs bartered together, and ſeaſoned with a little pepper and ſalt: I would have made a pudding in its belly, but I wanted neceſſaries. *I* minced the liver, and of that, and of ſuch other things as I could for the preſent, I made him ſawce for his Pig, which I knew well how to do.

At the ſame time ſome Travellers came in, to take their eaſe, who were not a little ſorry to finde us there; for that they were half afraid, that their ears were ſcarce ſure to their heads amongſt ſuch a company of Rogues as we were. The Table whereat they were to

ſit,

ſit, was a long plank, neer adjoyning to a bench of ſtone: they were to eat all together. The Commiſſary kindly ſaluted them, and they him; and after a few complements were exchanged between them, they ſate three in a file; and one of them taking his Port-mantua unto him, and putting it between his legs, under the boord, he there likewiſe laid his *Alforjas*, or Wallet, wherein he had a Cheeſe, a Bottle of Wine, and a piece of a Gammon of Bacon; and that he might the better take it out, he did thruſt his Port-mantua a little forward, leaving the *Alforjas* in the midſt between his legs. I, when I ſaw that he was ſo wary, began to ſuſpect, that it was not without cauſe; and calling to the Hoſteſſe for a Knife, I cloſely clapt it in between mine arm and my ſleeve: And putting a great earthen Jar full of water, underneath the boord, and in it a Bottle of Wine; that the Commiſſary might have it freſh and cool, when he ſhould call for it; as oft as I ſtoopt down to pour out his wine, by little and little I fell to fingering of the Port-mantua, till at laſt, having made a ſhift to undo all the Buttons, and giving it a gentle ſlaſh cloſe where the Chain ran along, that made all faſt, I nimbly took out two little bundles, but ſomewhat weighty withall, which I preſently conveyed very handſomly into my Gally-ſlops, where there was Sea-room enough for them; and afterwards buttoning it up juſt in the ſame faſhion as it was before, it was cloſe and well, and not any ſigne to be ſeen of this theft that I had made.

When they had made an end of their dinner, the cloth was taken away, and having paid their reckoning, away went theſe Travellers; and we likewiſe began to provide to be packing: for we all were to be gone. *Soto*, my *Camerade*, was faſtned to another chain, ſomewhat farther off from me, than I could have wiſh't it, which did not a little grieve me, becauſe this diſtance did hinder our more private talk; but before they brought me back again to my Chain, I came unto him, and ſecretly delivered unto him thoſe two bundles, deſiring him to keep them ſafe for me, till we ſhould meet with ſome better occaſion, to know what was in them. He received them with a great deal of joy, and killing his Pig unknown to any, he thruſt them both into the body of it, placing the intrails before the mouth of the wound, as well that the bundles might not drop out, as alſo to hide them thereby the better out of ſight.

Now when they were going to put me to the Chain, *I* intreated the Commiſſary to do me the favour, that I might be filed next to this my old friend and acquaintance. He willingly granted my requeſt; ſo one was taken out of that file, and he and I were ranked together, that other and my ſelf exchanging.

We went lazily on along, as the faſhion is, and as we were pacing theſe our leaſurely ſteps, I rounded *Soto* ſoftly in the ear, and ſaid unto him; How now (my Camerade) what haſt thou done with that which I gave thee to keep? How haſt thou diſpoſed of it? But he, as if he had not known me, or I had not given him any ſuch thing at all, made ſo ſtrange of it, that he made me to ſuſpect, that according to the cuſtome of that Countrey, he had drunk a cup too much, and ſo might haply have forgot it. Whereupon, I went putting him in minde, when and where *I* gave it him. But he ſtill denied any ſuch delivery. And in the end grew ſomewhat hot and angry with me, asking me, whether I were drunk, or well in my wits, that I ſhould demand any ſuch thing of him, or make him believe, that *I* had delivered him either this or that? *I* underſtand you not, *I* neither know you, nor it, nor have any thing of yours, and therefore all that *I* can ſay unto you, is; That for me you may goe look it. Nothing *I* had of you, and nothing are you like to get from me.

You cannot imagine, nor am I able to expreſſe the great, both danger and ſorrow that I had, that I ſhould be ſo unthankfully dealt withall, and receive ſuch hard meaſure from one to whom I had done ſo many good offices, and loved ſo truly, as I did him. For there was not that morſel of meat that went down my throat, whereof he had not his ſhare; nor that money in my purſe, whereof *I* did not divide half with him. And my purpoſe was, that he ſhould likewiſe ſhare with me in this. But that he ſhould thus break the bonds of friendſhip, and deny, (and that ſo inſolently and impudently) that I had ever given him any ſuch thing: This was it that troubled me; this was it that vext me to the very heart.

He was a man of an ill condition, his concoction was not good, and he was ſo moved upon theſe words of mine, and ſo out of all patience, that in a thundring voice he began to bolt out oathes and blaſphemies, inſomuch that the the Commiſſary was inforced to correct him with a Cudgel. I, relying on the favour he had ſhowne me, intreated him to bear with him, becauſe he was angry, and in choler, which was the cauſe of this his intemperancie.

And

And he being deſirous to know the cauſe of this his diſtemperature; I began to apprehend with my ſelf, that *Soto* would reſerve all this for him; And I made this reckoning with my ſelf; *If* I ſhould acquaint the Commiſſary with that which had paſt between us, it may be, that though I ſhould not have all, yet at leaſt ſome part of the booty might fall to my ſhare.

This thief (thought I) ſhall not carry it away ſo; he ſhall not have all the thanks, and laugh at me when he has dooe. I will not be thus gull'd by him. And therefore *I* reſolved with my ſelf to acquaint him with the whole ſucceſſe of the buſineſſe, who, *I* preſumed, would not be a little glad of it, out of the greedy and covetous deſire that he would have to take that bone from us, which we two ſtrove for.

Hereupon (being informed by me) he commanded *Soto*, that he would preſently give him that which I had given him. He ſtoutly denies, that he had any thing of me. The guards are will'd to ſearch him; they do ſo, and when they had done the utmoſt of their diligence, they could finde no ſuch thing about him, nor any the leaſt ſigne or token thereof. Whereupon I gathered, that he had done as I did, delivering the ſame over to ſome other body, to keep it ſafe for him.

I told, the Commiſſary, that there was no queſtion to be made of it, but that he had ſecretly convey'd it away to ſome one or other of this our company, for that really and truly he received it of me, who gave the ſame to him with mine own hands. When he ſaw, that neither by fair means, nor by foul, by perſwaſions, nor threatnings, nor any other courſe that he took with him, he could be brought to manifeſt the truth, and to bring theſe things to light; the Commiſſary commanded, they ſhould take him aſide, and put him to the Rack, till they ſhould make him to confeſs. And for that they had no other inſtrument there, ſave Cords, they applied them to thoſe his lower parts; and when upon their twiſting they began to ſtrain ſomewhat hard upon the fleſh, which was too delicate and ſenſible to indure any torture, being likewiſe a faint-hearted fellow, and of little or no courage, he forthwith confeſſed, whither he had conveyed them. Thereupon they preſently took his Pig from him, (ſo that he loſt that too by the bargain) and taking out the intrails to ſee what was there, they quickly lighted on the two little bundles, in either of which was a *Roſario*, or ſet of beads of the perfecteſt and the daintieſt Coral, that ever mine eye ſaw; every Bead at both ends having his Cap of Gold, which was much graced by the neat cutting and enamelling that was beſtowed upon them, which (it ſhould ſeem) were ſent as tokens to ſeverall perſons.

The Commiſſary makes no more ado, but preſently claps them up in his pocket, promiſing to befriend me for it, and to give me, what I my ſelf ſhould ask for them. *Soto* was herewith ſo madded, and ſo extreamly incenſed againſt me, that they were forced to change our chains, and ſet us farther aſunder than before; for though we were thus divided, and parted each from other, they did afterwards fall to manacling of him, faſtning both his wriſts together with bolts of iron, becauſe when he came where any ſtones were, he would take them up and throw them at me.

In this troubleſome manner we came at laſt unto the Gallies, juſt upon the nick, when they were calking, and rigging, and making all ready to put forth to Sea, and to goe in chaſe. And before they brought us aboord, they carried us to a priſon, where he paſt over that night with the like incommodity and trouble, as at other times. Nay rather, it was worſe with us now than heretofore, for that the priſon was little, and cramm'd as full as ever it could hold. But be it better, or be it worſe, ſuch as it was, we were forced to take all in good part, and to make as good ſhift as we could. For we could not do as we would, nor make choice of any part to our liking.

The Commiſſary had talk in the mean while with the Kings Officers; who came with thoſe other of the Gallies, and the Kings *Alguazil*; and having now aſſigned and appointed us our banks, where we were to ſit and rowe, they gave the Commiſſary a diſcharge for the delivering of ſo many ſlaves into their hands, who told me, that they would come and ſee me; and that he would ſtand my very good friend; ſo he betook him to his Mule, and from that day forward I did never more ſet eye on him.

Now, before that they took us out of priſon, to lead us along to the Gallies, they had ordered how we ſhould be divided, and it fell out, that we were to go ſix and ſix in a file; in which diviſion, it was my ill luck (thanks to my ſins, that laid this puniſhment upon me) to have *Soto* to be my Camerade.

This done, they preſently delivered us over to certain Mooriſh Slaves, who with their half

half-pikes came to guard us along, and tying our hands with tough thongs, which they had brought with them for that purpoſe, away we goe with them. We come aboord the Galley, whereinto being entred, we were willed to retire our ſelves to the poop, till that the Captain and the Maſters-mate ſhould come, and call us out one by one, placing every man in this, or that other Bank, as they thought fit; now when they were come amongſt us, they went walking up and down on the *Courſey*, or the Gallery-like ſpace, on both ſides whereof the Slaves Banks are placed: and whileſt they were looking on the banks, and adviſing with themſelves where it were fitteſt to diſpoſe of us; the other Galley-ſlaves began to ſet out throats, and to cry out aloud unto them, deſiring that they would diſperſe us amongſt them; ſome complaining that they had an unprofitable member amongſt them; others, that all in their Bank were weak and feeble perſons, unable to doe any ſervice.

But the Captain and the Maſters-mate, not giving ear to their clamours, but governing themſelves by their own diſcretion, having conſidered what was fitteſt to be done, placed us here and there, as they ſaw cauſe: in which partition it fell to my lot, to be ranked in the ſecond Bank, juſt before the Cook room, neer unto the Maſters-mates Cabbin, at the foot of the Maſt; having placed *Soto* in the *Patrone*, or Maſters Bank. It grieved me very much, that he was ſeated ſo near unto me, in regard of the late quarrel that had been between us; for we could never afterwards indure one another; and he, me, leſſe than *I* could him; for he was a malicious minded man, and had entertained in his heart a deep hatred againſt me; though I (for my part) never did deny him my friendſhip; nor was ever wanting unto him, whenſoever he had occaſion to uſe me: but he, like the Commiſſary, would have all to himſelf, if I ſhould have let him alone. And all he ſhould have had, and that with a very good will, if *I* had once thought, that he would have cried quits with me, and paid me home in mine own Coine. When they had brought me to the bank, thoſe that were there bad me welcome; in requital whereof, *I* could have wiſht, I had been able to ſay unto them; Excuſe me, that *I* cannot come.

They inſtallad me in my ſeat, and put on the Kings robes upon me, two Shirts, two pair of linnen Breeches, a colour'd Waſt-coat, and a red Cap. I was ſcarce warm in my ſeat, when a baſe under-Barbar comes unto me, a better Shaver than a Cutter, and with his Razor makes my head and beard as bare as my hand, which I took to heart, for the great account *I* made thereof. But re-collecting my ſpirits, I began to comfort my ſelf, that this was the fortune of the world, and that others, that had been in farre higher place, had falne into far greater miſeries.

I removed mine eyes from thoſe that were before me, and looked towards thoſe that were behind me: not conſidering ſo much with my ſelf how many were more happy, but how many were more wretched than I was. O this looking downward is a comfortable thing to a man in miſery. And albeit, it be true, that there is not any life almoſt ſo miſerable, as that of a Gally-Slave, yet was it not half ſo bad as that which *I* indured with my firſt Wife. And it was ſome comfort beſides unto me, that I was not a lone man in theſe my afflictions, but had many fellowes that ſuffered the like torment.

A young fellow that belonged to the *Alguazil*, made preſently towards me, to clap fetters on my feet, and manacles on my hands, chaining me, and other my companions, that ſate together on the ſame Bank, ſo faſt and ſo ſure, that we could not ſtirre from thence. Then did they give me my allowance, which was ſix and twenty ounces of Bisket; it ſo fell out, that that day was (as we call it) *dia de Galdero*, the Caldron day, for the boyling of fleſh, and making of pottage: And becauſe *I* was but a new-comer, and was unprovided of a wooden diſh, I took my part of thoſe mammocks that were ſhared amongſt us, with one of my fellows that ſate by me. *I* would not offer to ſoke my Bisket in it, but chew'd it down dry, as all your freſh-men do at the firſt, till time had taught me the uſe of my armes.

The pain we were put to for the preſent was little or nothing; for the Gallies being then a trimming and a calking, we that were the gang, the baſe rout, and raskality of the Gallies, ſerv'd as then for no other uſe, but to row towards the ſhore, when we were ſo commanded, and to make proviſion of boughes, or ſomething elſe for ſhade, leſt the heat of the Sunne ſhould melt the tallow. All the cloaths that I brought aboord with me into the Gally, I made ſhow of them, and ſold them; which yielded me ſome money, though not much, adding that, to that other little ſumme, which I brought with me, when I came out of priſon. Nor did I know in the world how, or where *I* might

ſecretly lay it up, and keep it ſafe, either to relieve me in ſuch neceſſities as uſually offer themſelves, or to imploy it in ſome one thing or other, that I might have a peny in my purſe at a pinch. And for that I had neither Coffer, Cheſt, nor ſo much as a Desk, that had a lock and Key to it, where I might ſafely lay it up, it did ſomewhat trouble me, not being able to deviſe with my ſelf, what I were beſt to do with it. To carry it ſtill about me, were to runne the hazard of being robb'd, or cozen'd of it by my own Camerades: And to commit it to another bodies keeping, I had already too late experience of the ill correſpondence in that kinde.

All I ſaw was ill, it concern'd me to look well unto it, and to bethink my ſelf how I ſhould diſpoſe of it. At laſt, (after long conſideration) I reſolved with my ſelf, that *I* could not give it a better or more ſecret place, than to clap it in my boſome, and to lay it as neer to my heart as *I* could poſſibly bring it. Others put their hearts there, where they put their treaſure: but I tooke a cleane contrary courſe, putting my treaſure where my heart was.

Well, I got me a needle and threed, and clapping my Thimble on my finger, I fell to work, and made me up a little Purſe, about the bigneſſe of a Wax-kernel, which being ſtrongly ſowed, and quilted with many a ſure ſtitch upon that part of my ſhirt, which toucht upon my heart, I bare it there, never ſuffering it to be out of my ſight; and having ſtill an eye upon it, that it might be ſafer from its friend, and my enemies, who would be ever and anon leering that way; caſting a ſheeps eye towards it; but he whoſe mouth watered moſt at it, and had a moneths mind to be doing with it, was a notable famous Thief, that was my Camerade, and ſate next unto me, who could never come to filch it from me, neither at midnight, nor at any other time, ſo ſurely did I guard it on that ſide. Yet was he not wanting to do his beſt; for, when he perceived that I was a-ſleep, he would go groping here and there, viſiting every part about me with his hand; and for that the rooms were but few, and the houſhold-ſtuff that belonged unto them not much, they were eaſily and quickly run over. He had paſt over in a trice, a little Satchel that I had by my ſide, my Gabardine, and my Breeches; and was now come at laſt to my Waſte-coat, which I might properly have termed my Soule: For that with its warmth it did vivifie and quicken the blood, whereby it ſuſtained it ſelfe, and was kept alive. We both laboured hard, he to rob, I to keep. He was not ſo crafty, but I was ſo careful. And if at any time *I* did ſtrip my ſelf naked, *I* would order the buſineſſe ſo, that it ſhould be impoſſible for him to take it from under me, unleſſe he took me away with it. He continued a long time in this his care to come by it, watching all opportunities to rob me of it.

Now, in the mean while, foraſmuch as I did conſider with my ſelfe, that whereſoever a man lives, he had need of an Angel of guard to attend him upon all occaſions. I began to bethink my ſelf whom I ſhould make choice of to be my Protector. And after that I had thorowly thought thereupon, I could not finde out any fitter for my turne, than the Maſters Mate. For albeit it be true, that the Captain, as Lord, and chief Commander of all the reſt, is to be accounted the onely Protector of us all; yet, out of his authority and greatneſſe of his Place, he will not trouble himſelfe with this raskall rabble.

They are for the moſt part principal perſons, and men of quality; they will not vouchſafe to look ſo low; they reckon not of ſuch poor ſnakes as we be, nor take any notice who, or what we are. And I was the willinger to make this choice, for that the Maſters-Mate was my neer neighbour, his Cabbin was cloſe to my Bank; by means whereof I might the eaſier and more conveniently ſerve him. And ſo much the rather was I deſirous to ſettle upon him, becauſe he carried the Cudgel, and had the poſſeſſion of the ſalt Eele, which he diſtributed amongſt us, either more or leſſe, according as he favour'd, or diſ-favour'd, paying ſome ſoundly, and letting others goe ſcot-free.

Thus by little and little *I* went ſcruing my ſelfe into his ſervice, getting more ground ſtill upon him, and ſtriving to out-ſtrip the reſt: As well in my attendance at his boord, as in having him to bed; *I* trickt up his Cabbin, bruſht his Cloaths, kept them neat and handſom, lookt to his linnen, and was in every other reſpect ſo diligent about him, that within a few dayes *I* was the onely man in his eye. Nor did I account it as a ſmall favour, that he would deign me a good look: It ſeeming unto me, as oft as he lookt upon me, that he had beſtow'd a Bull (*I* mean not the Pizzle) upon me, and a free Indulgence from ſtripes; and that he did thereby abſolve me, both *a culpa, & pœna*: From my fault, and the puniſhment thereof. But therein *I* was deceived; for that they being naturally ſevere and cruell,

and

and that commonly ſuch kind of ſtern and auſteer men are put into ſuch places, they never have an eye to conſider courteſies; not ſeeking to requite good, but to puniſh ill.

They are a people that will not acknowledge any thankfulneſſe, becauſe all that we do for them, they think to be due unto them. A nights I did rid the Dandruffe out of his head, rubb'd his feet, fann'd his face, deſtroyed the Gnats, and waited on him with that obſervance and punctuality, that the greateſt Prince in the world could not be better ſerved. And if they ſerve their Prince for love, *I* did the like to the Maſters-mate for fear; leſt the Hoop of an Hogs-head, or an Eeles tail ſhould twine it ſelf about my ſhoulders, which kind of weapons they never go without. And howbeit it be true, that this manner of ſervice is not ſo perfect, nor ſo noble as the other: yet fear makes men to take more heed. And now and then when I ſaw he was waking, and had no mind to ſleep, I would entertain him with a merry Fable or pleaſant hiſtory to paſſe away the time the better. And *I* was never unprovided of a company of witty jeſts, and fine conceits, to make his Worſhip laugh: It being no ſmall comfort to me, to ſee him look cheerfully. I grew in grace with him, and was very happy in this particular; yet am I ſo much privie to mine own worth, that it was no more than my good ſervice did deſerve. So that now he would not that any other, ſave my ſelf, ſhould ſerve him in thoſe things, which gave him the greateſt content. And I had more eſpecial reaſon to eſteem of this his favour towards me, in regard that he had a Gally-ſlave, before he entertained me, that attended on his perſon. Whom, though he uſed well, yet he went daily pining and conſuming away, that he was very ſorry to ſee it. For though he led a better life than the reſt, and that he lov'd him ſo well, that he fed him from his owne trencher, and beſtowed the beſt morſels upon him, yet was he like your *Gaeta*-colts, which the better you feede them, the worſe they prove.

One day, when we were both together with him, waiting at the Table, he ſaid unto me; I prethee *(Guzman)* tell me (for thou art a Scholar, and an underſtanding fellow) what ſhould be the reaſon that *Fermin* being, at his firſt coming into the Gallies, of a very able body, ſtrong, fat, and luſty, and *I* having ſought to continue him ſtill in the ſame eſtate, by entertaining him into my ſervice, and doing other friendly Offices for him, not eating that good morſel, whereof he hath not a part; ſhould, the more I make of him, fall (as thou ſeeſt) the more away? Whereupon I made anſwer; Sir, for to give reſolution to this your queſtion, it will be needful for me to relate unto you another caſe like unto this, of a new Chriſtian, who had paſt thorow the hands of the Holy-Houſe, or (as we commonly call it) the Inquiſition.

This man was rich, and powerful, liv'd honourably, and in a plentiful faſhion, led a merry life, waxed plump, and fat, had all things neat and handſome about him, and took much content in the houſe wherein he dwelt. Now it ſo fell out; that one of the Inquiſitors came and took an houſe, that was the very next door to his; who for no other reaſon in the world, ſave onely that he was ſo neer a neighbour unto him, grew ſo meager & ſo lean thereupon, that within a very ſhort time he was brought ſo low, and pined ſo faſt away, that he was nothing but skin and bone. So that to both theſe, I ſhall give ſolution, by another the like accident, which *I* ſhall deliver for truth unto you, and thus it was.

*Muley Anmancor* (who was King of *Granada*) had a great *Privado*, or principall favourite of his, who was called *el Alcayde Buferiz*; a very wiſe man, punctuall, truſty, and having many other good parts, worthy the great love that his Lord and Maſter bare unto him; for the which the King loved him ſoe dearly, as alſo for the truſt and confidence that he had in him: (for there was not any difficulty in the world, which he would not wade thorow, ſo as it might make for his Majeſties ſervice) and for that thoſe that deſerve theſe kinde of honours, are evermore envi'd by thoſe that are unworthy of them, there were not ſome wanting, who hearing the King ſpeak of his love and affection towards this his Favourite, ſaid unto him; Sir, that your Majeſty may ſee, whether that be true or no, for which you ſo much commend your *Alcayde*, would you be pleaſed to make proof of him in ſome buſineſſe of importance, and wherein there is ſome difficulty; and then ſhall you finde, whether he be that manner of man, that you take him to be: For by the diligence that he ſhall uſe therein, your Majeſty ſhall truly know, whether his heart be with you or no. The King liked exceeding well of this motion, and ſaid; *I* will not only command him in a buſineſs that is difficult, but ſuch a one, as is impoſſible to be effected. And cauſing him forthwith to be called in, he

ſaid unto him; *Alcayde*, I have a thing to give you in charge, which you muſt accompliſh out of hand, upon pain of my diſpleaſure, and the loſſe of my favour; And this it is that *I* ſhall deliver unto you, a good fat Weather, which you ſhall keep at home in your own houſe, you ſhall give the ſame allowance of meat, as he was wont to have heretofore, and more, if more he will eat; and within a Moneth you muſt return him back unto me, poor and lean as a rake.

This poor Moor, whoſe deſire was never other, than to ſerve his King, and punctually to perform whatſoever he ſhould be pleaſed to command him; howbeit he did believe, that he ſhould never be able to bring ſuch an impoſſibility as this to paſs; was not therewith diſmayed a whit, but readily, and with a cheerful countenance receiving the weather, he cauſed it to be carried home to his houſe, according as the King had commanded: And there ſitting down, and deviſing with him himſelf, how he might bring his buſineſſe about, and give ſatisfaction to his Maſters deſire; he began to ſet his wits awork, and at laſt lighted upon a ſtrange, yet a natural conceit, which, he preſumed, would make much for his purpoſe, and comply with the Kings command.

He cauſed two wooden Cages to be made out of hand, both ſtrongly barr'd, and of equal bigneſſe, the which he gave order ſhould be placed very neer each to other; in one of the which he puts me the weather, and in the other hard by him a Wolf: To the Weather he gave his full allowance; but the Wolf be kept ſo ſhort, that he was ſtill exceeding hungry; And being almoſt famiſht for want of meat, he did labour all that he could (thruſting his legges within the grates) to reach at the Weather, and to try if he could come at him and eat him. The fearful Weather, being much troubled, and ſorry at the heart, to ſee himſelf ſo neer his mortal enemy, although he did eat that which they gave him, he did then thrive ſo ill with it, out of the continuall fear that he was in, that he did not onely not wax fat, but pined away, till he was pure skinne and bone. By this courſe that he had taken with him, he returned at the time appointed, the Weather back again to his King, not failing in that he was commanded, nor falling from his accuſtomed grace and favour.

Now that *I* may apply this ſtory to the purpoſe we have in hand; It ſeemeth unto me that *Fermin* is grown lean and feeble, by being ſo neer about you, and by living in that grace and favour with you, as he doth: and it is onely the fear which he hath of you, whom he ſo much deſires to ſerve, that makes him to thrive no better than he does.

The Maſters-mate was ſo well pleaſed with this tale of mine, becauſe it fell out ſo pat to the purpoſe, that he preſently gave order to have me removed from my Bank, receiving me into his ſervice, and giving me the charge of his Wardrobe, and of his Table, for that he had alwayes found me ſuitable to his deſires. Nor (for all this favour that he ſhewed unto me, which was very great in releaſing me from the obligation of a Slave, and exerciſing ſuch duties, as were required in the Gallie) would *I* forbear (for mine own pleaſure) to come ſometimes amongſt them, and to do as they did; but would now and then, of mine own accord, fall to my labour, that I might not be to ſeek, if out of neceſſity I ſhould chance to be put unto it.

There did I learn to knit Stockins, to make falſe Dice, as your High-men, and your Low-men, ſetting two Aces one againſt another, or two Sixes on one Die, for your Coggers and Cheaters; who, for the uſe that they made of them, would pay well for them. I likewiſe there learned to make Buttons both of Silk, and of hair; as alſo dainty delicate Tooth-picks of divers fundry inventions and colours, and neatly guilded; which none in the Galley could do beſides my ſelf. My poyze being put into this ballance; that is, ſtanding upon theſe even terms, we were forced to goe with our Galley to *Cadiz* for Maſts, and Main-yards, Sails, Pitch, Tar, Tallow, and the like neceſſaries; and this Voyage was the firſt, wherein *I* was put to any pains: For, being ſo much friended by the Maſters-mate, as I was, they did not force me to do any work, than what I would my ſelf.

And for that this did not ſeem to me, to be a matter of any great labour, that I might not ſhew my ſelf an idle ſpectator, or that I did ſeek to avoid pains-taking, eſpecially, being that we were not to give the chaſe, or forced to betake our ſelves to flight; where, and in which caſes, we were to rowe for our lives, and to tug with all the force and ſtrength that we had, at the Oar; And for that when we were once in the Port, and had a good Haven to friend, we did uſually lie quiet, and were never whipt, and had our entertainments and paſtimes, preſuming that betweene Port and Port, eſpecially being ſoe neere, there needed not the ſinewes of an Oxe, to hale and pull; I would needs ſet my ſelfe to

the

the Oar, onely to try what manner of thing it was: But it was not ſo ſlight and eaſie a thing, as I took it to be: for (becauſe we were forced to go rowing the Maſts, and (Main-yards) when we came to caſt Anchor, I was nothing but wearineſſe and ſweat, becauſe I would not leave my Oar, nor give occaſion to others to murmure, withdrawing my hand from that, which for mine own pleaſure I had voluntarily undertaken. And this was the onely, and ſole cauſe, why ſo ſoon, and ſo ſoundly, (after I had had my Maſter to bed) I fell aſleep, falling like a ſtone flat to the ground; giving very good ſigns and tokens thereof to my Camerades, who heard me now to do that, which they had never heard me do before; to wit, to ſnort like a young ſucking Pigge. That Traitor of mine own bank was the firſt (as being neareſt unto me) that heard me rout; and calling ſoftly to another of my fellows that was his Conſort, one that was his very good friend, and whom he might beſt truſt, acquainted him with his deſire, and the good occaſion that was now offered, to rob me of that little money that I had. They joyn'd both together, as well in the manner of ſharing it, as of taking it from me. Which they had gone clear away with, if I had not had the *Alcalde* to friend. They took it as eaſily from me as they could wiſh; paſſing it preſently from bank to bank, to the farther end of the Galley; perſwading themſelves, that becauſe it was night, and not perceived by any, both of them ſtifly denying it, they ſhould, without any more adoe, carry away the prey, and divide the ſpoyl between them.

Now, when it was day, they all began to wake, and I amongſt the reſt, got up, heavy of ſleep, but light of purſe: for that weight which I was wont to feel lying upon my heart, I felt no more; and it did much trouble me, that it did not trouble me. I lookt about, and found my money gone; I was ſtrook as dead as a door-nayl; death was in my face, and I knew not what to do. If I held my peace, I ſhould here no more news of it, but muſt give it for loſt; and if I ſhould ſpeak thereof, I ſhould roaſt all my part thereof (as the Proverb is) upon my finger, and put all in mine eye, that I ſhould get by the bargain. Now was I put out of the poſſeſſion of that which I had injoyed ſo long; Whereupon I ſaid with my ſelf: If he that hath taken it from me; will give me no thanks for it, much leſſe ſhall I reap any benefit from him; better it were notwithſtanding, that he ſhould keep it, that has it, for it may be, that at ſometime, or other, he will not be wanting to make ſome acknowledgement thereof, and he at laſt may come to be puniſhed, who did me this wrong: at leaſt, he will eat his meat with ſorrow, when he ſees he ſhall reap no profit by it. But this Counſel did not pleaſe me.

Now, when the Maſters-Mate was ready to riſe, I brought him his Cloaths, and while he was making himſelf ready, I made him a long relation of my miſ-fortune, making him (to my coſt) to know, and to touch, as it were with the hand the miſery of thoſe men, who having purſt up a few pence with a great deal of labour and pains taking, earning it very hardly, are either by miſchance, or by a pilfering hand deprived thereof in an inſtant: Telling him moreover, that I had brought theſe moneys from *Sevill*, amongſt which I had likewiſe put to thoſe other, which I made of my Cloaths that I ſold, when I came aboord the Galley, which I kept as charily as I could for my life, that I might therewith either relieve my neceſſities, when occaſion ſhould ſerve, or elſe imploy it in ſome thing, or other, that might yield me profit. And as I was opening my minde thus unto him, I likewiſe opened my boſom, and ſhew'd him the falſe ſtuffing, wherein I had put it, the mold, or indented mark whereof, theſe Thieves had left behind them, being for all the world, ſuch a kinde of print, as a Hare leaves in her Form, when ſhe is newly gone out of it.

It ſeemed to the Maſters-Mate, that this that I told him, was an evident truth, and giving credit unto me, ſtrengthened the more in his belief by this empty Form, where the Hare was uſed to ſit, as alſo, out of the love that he bare unto me, he commanded the two fore-banks, and ſix other that were in the reer, to be had in *Coram nobis*; whereupon, the *Alguazils* ſervant, coming amongſt them with a good Ropes end, (which your Sea-faring men call a ſalt Eele) gave every one of them fifty ſound blows a piece, which made the Wheals to bunch out upon their backs, leaving the[illegible]n clinging cloſe unto them: Examining firſt every one by himſelf, whether he had ſeen, or heard of this ſtoln money? And after they had been well laſht, they waſht them with Salt, and tart Vineger, rubbing their wounds therewith, leaving their backs and ſides ſo rent and torn, as if they had not been men.

When this theft hapned, there was by chance a Gypſie that was not then aſleep, when my purſe was ſtoln, and when his turn came to receive his paymenr, he confeſt, that he had ſeen his companion, the night before, riſe from his own bank, and go to mine; but why, or wherefore he knew not.

When that Slave perceived that he ſpake of him, and that he had charged him in this manner, he ſtarted up on his feet, and ſaid: That he was intangled in that chain, vvhich belonged to the other bank, and that he had ſprained his foot thereby, it being wrung and wrenched by it, and that he was fain, (for to give himſelf eaſe) to clamber over thither, to diſ-intangle himſelf. But becauſe this reaſon was too weak to hold water, and carried not that fairneſſe with it, as to be taken for a juſt excuſe, much leſſe with thoſe, who knew well enough on which foot he halted, they took him preſently to task, and had many more ſtripes beſtowed upon him than any of the reſt. And the Maſters-Mate was ſo angry with the *Alguazils* ſervant, becauſe he did not lay them on ſo ſoundly as he would have him, that he gave order, that he ſhould preſently have as many beſtowed upon him; beſides, a great many more which he himſelf with his own hand laid upon him with the Hoop of a Hogs-head. And in this his chollerick humour, (for he was now mightily moved) he forthwith commanded, that they ſhould take the delinquent in hand again, and baſte him as long as they could ſtand over him; who (poor man) had more than enough before. But when he ſaw that he muſt go this gear again, he then began to think with himſelf, that the Maſters-Mate would never give him over, till he had confeſt the truth, and therefore held it to be his beſt courſe to deal plainly and truely with him, who had the money, by what means they came by it, and the plot that they had laid to get it from me, excuſing himſelf the beſt that he could, as that he had no purpoſe of himſelf to do it, and that he had never entred into the buſineſſe, had he not otherwiſe been drawn into it.

Well, he was well laſht afterwards for his offence, and my money was returned back unto me, which I received with a very good will from my Maſters hand, adviſing me withall, that I ſhould imploy it, making profit thereof, for he ſhould be well pleaſed with any thing that were for my good.

My good fortune (like froth) began to increaſe more and more, in regard that I gave my Maſter ſuch good content. And the Gallies being to go forth, which were to joyn with theſe of *Naples*, upon a certain imployment at Sea, I got me aſhore, having a Souldier of guard to be my keeper, and to my ſafe return, where I imployed all that little money that I had, in matters of victuallage, which preſently from my ſetting forth from thence would double the coſt, and it ſucceeded well with me. Out of that gains, (with my Maſters leave) I made a ſute after the faſhion of an old Galley-ſlave, or one that had been of ancient ſtanding amongſt them. Hoſe and Waſte-coat of black Buckram, liſted and welted handſomely in the ſeams, which (it being then the Summer ſeaſon) was cooler and freſher for me, and fit for my turn.

Now (thinking upon my former misfortunes) I began to have a glimpſe of that light, which they injoy, who follow vertue, and proteſting with a firm reſolution, and ſetled conſtancy, rather to dye, then do a baſe action; I did onely ſtudy, how I might ſerve my Maſter, how I might pleaſe his humour, and give him all content, how I might keep his Cloaths, his Cabin, and his Table clean and neat.

And as I vvas thinking and conſidering on theſe things, I ſaid one night vvith my ſelf; *Guzman*, thou ſeeſt here the top of that Mountain of miſeries, vvhereunto thy filthy ſenſuality hath brought thee: now art thou come to the higheſt part of it, and muſt either make a ſpeedy leap down to the bottomleſſe pit of Hell, or vvhich thou mayeſt more eaſily do, by lifting up thine arms, take hold on Heaven. Thou ſeeſt now the care that thou haſt to ſerve thy Maſter, for fear of a few ſtripes, vvhich being given to day, are not felt to morrow. Thou doeſt watch late, riſe up early, thou art diligent, carefull, and ſolicitous in ſeeking out new inventions, vvherewith to delight him, and to purchaſe his favour, vvhich vvhen thou haſt obtained, is but of a man, and a Maſters-Mate. And this is the moſt thou canſt make of him.

Now thou vvell knoweſt, and canſt not be ignorant of it, for thou haſt been a profeſt Student, and haſt ſtudied that point [illegible] much leſſe God requires at thy hands, and how much more hath he to confer upon thee, and how far a greater friend he is, than any man can be unto thee.

Rouze up thy ſelf therefore, and awake from thy heavy ſleep, vvhich oppreſſeth thy Soul; Return home unto thy ſelf; and conſider, that though it be true, that thy ſins have brought thee hither, yet ſo apply this thy puniſhment unto thee, and lay it ſo near unto thy heart, that thou mayeſt make good uſe of it, and that it may turn to thy good. Thou haſt ſought after a ſtock to imploy it for thy profit; ſeek how to obtain eternal happineſſe, and lay out all that thou haſt, that thou mayeſt buy it. For it is a Jewel of ineſtimable

vvorth,

worth, it cannot be valued. Theſe thy troubles, theſe thy miſeries which thou indureſt, this thy care which thou takeſt to ſerve this thy Maſter, put it all to Gods account, and be as diligent in ſerving him. Charge him alſo with that, which thou art to loſe hereafter, and he will bear the burthen of that charge; he will leſſen thine, and add it to his own account. With this thou mayeſt buy grace, which if heretofore it bore no price with thee, (for even the beſt deſervings of all the Saints that ever were, cannot raiſe ſuch a ſtock, whereby to be able to buy it, till their merits meet with thoſe of our Saviour Chriſt) now make much of it; and the rather ſeeing that Chriſt, that he may communicate this grace unto us, is willingly become our brother.

What brother did ever forſake a good and a loving brother? Serve him but with a ſigh, with a tear, or with a true heart ſorrow, grieving for thy ſins; and being angry and offended with thy ſelf, that thou haſt offended ſo good a brother: and ſo by giving him that which thou haſt, he will joyn thy ſtock with his own, and make it of an infinite price, not by thine, but his merits, thou ſhalt enjoy life everlaſting.

In this diſcourſe with my ſelf, and in other, which roſe out of this, I ſpent a great part of the night, ſhowring down tears in abundance, and waxing now heavy for the grief of my ſins, I fell aſleep; and when I awak'd, I found my ſelf another manner of man than I was before. I had caſt off my old heart, and put on a new one in its place. I gave thanks unto God for this my regeneration, and that he had renewed his ſpirit aright in me, humbly beſeeching him, that he would uphold me with his holy hand, and ſtrengthen me with his grace.

Preſently upon this, I treated of the frequent Confeſſion of my ſins, and of the reformation of my life, and of the cleanſing of my conſcience; in which good deliberation I continued many dayes; but I was fleſh and bloud. I did ſtill ſtumble, almoſt at every ſtep, and now and then took a fall. But for any proceeding in my accuſtomed evil actions, I was much amended, and went from that forward reforming my former courſe of life. Howbeit, for that I had exerciſed my ſelf ſo much in my fore-paſſed ill deportments, I was ſtill pointed at with the finger for a wicked man, which name I could never claw off, but did ſtick cloſe unto me. For this is an evil, that follows evil men; that even thoſe good actions which they do, leave a jealouſie and ſuſpition behinde them, and occaſion, as it were, ſcandal to ſuch as ſee them. For, though we do them never ſo well, and with an upright heart, yet are we held to be but Hypocrites. We have a common Proverb amongſt us; *Que ſe ſacan por las Viſperas, los dias Santos:* That by the Veſpers, we come to know the Feaſts of the Saints. So they by my precedent actions, would judge of the future.

But to give the vvorld leave to cenſure things as they liſt, let him that would fain know vvhether he ſtand in the ſtate of grace, or no, and live in Gods love and favour, look, and conſider with himſelf, how God vvorketh vvith him, and he ſhall eaſily come to know it. Uſe thy beſt indeavours; do that, vvhich (as a good Chriſtian) thou art bound to do: ſo ſhall thy vvorks be acceptable in his ſight, and thou ſhalt know (like *Abel*) that God is vvell pleaſed with this thy ſacrifice, and that he hath ſet his eyes upon thee.

Mark and obſerve, vvhether he uſes thee no vvorſe, than he uſes himſelf; for this is a ſure and infallible ſign, that thy Lord loves thee, vvhen of the ſame bread that he eateth; of the ſame Cloaths which he vveareth; of the ſame Table, vvhere he takes his meals; of the ſame ſeat, vvhereon he ſitteth; of the ſame vvine, vvhereof he drinketh; of the ſame bed, whereon he lyeth; he makes no difference between thee and him, but as it were all one. What did God injoy? What did God love? What did God ſuffer? Troubles.

Now then, when God ſhall ſhare theſe with thee, he ſhews that he loves thee. Thou art his Minion, he feaſts thee, and makes much of thee; Be thou ſo wiſe as to receive theſe things thankfully, and to make profit of them. Nor do thou think, that God refuſes to give thee thine own hearts deſire, thy pleaſures, thy contentments, riches and large poſſeſſions, or what elſe may delight thee, for that he is cloſe-fiſted, niggardly, or covetous; for if thou art willing to ſee the worth of theſe vvorldly comforts, turn but thine eyes aſide, and look upon thoſe that poſſeſſe them in greateſt abundance. But who are theſe? Even Moors, Infidels, and Hereticks. But God runs a contrary courſe with his friends, with thoſe that are his elected and beloved Children; the cheriſhments, and blandiſhments that he beſtows upon them, are poverty, afflictions, and perſecutions. O had I but known ſo much heretofore as I do now, and that God would have been pleaſed to have inlightned my underſtanding, that I might have truely ſeen, and lookt into my former errours, I might have benefited my ſelf in another kinde of manner than I did at that time.

I am

I am the willinger to deliver this unto you, for that when I made this diſcourſe with my ſelf, *I* did do it truely, and with all my heart. And albeit, I am not worthy to merit thereby any reward (being ſo great a ſinner as I am) yet notwithſtanding, this little crum, this poor drop, this ſmall ſpark had its reward at that very inſtant, that ſlender repentance of mine, that my reſolution (though weak) to do good, and that good beginning which I put my ſelf into, was not without its payment.

As ſoon as I had re-gained my money, new perſecutions, and new troubles began to grow upon me. Would to God that *I* had been ſo conſiderate, as I ought to have been. He ſtript me of that contentment, wherein I now lived; and he began to touch me to the quick, and to beat me with many ſtripes. That ſmall ſhade of Ivy, (which like *Jonas* Gourd, did keep me from the ſcorching of the Sun) was loſt, and quite taken from me; it was dry'd up, and withered, there was a worm bred in the root of it, which had waſted and conſumed it; ſo that I was forced to lye open to the heats, ſuffering new calamities, and new troubles, and ſuch as I never thought on, without any cauſe given by me, or any the leaſt ſign of offence, having no way deſerved ſuch hard meaſure. But ſtay the Pen, and ingenuouſly confeſſe, that ſuch miſery and afflictions as theſe, are that hidden treaſure in the field, ſo highly commended unto us. And ſince thou haſt patiently heard me hitherto, for thine own pleaſure, hear me now another while for mine; and hearken a little to the remainder of my misfortune, whereunto I ſhall give an end in the next enſuing Chapter.

## CHAPTER IX.

Guzman de Alfarache *proſecutes that which hapned unto him in the Gallies: And by what mean she came to be freed from thence.*



THere was a famous Painter, who was ſo excellent in his Art, that he had not his fellow in all the vvorld. Upon the fame and report of whoſe admirable pieces of work, there came a Gentleman to his houſe, and going into the room where he drew his pictures, he agreed with him that he ſhould paint for him in a Table, a very fair and beautifull horſe, with rich furniture, and gracefully ſet forth, who being looſe, ſhould ſeem to run away as faſt as his legs could carry him. The Painter performed this piece of work with all poſſible perfection, and ſhewed therein the utmoſt of his skill. And having fully finiſht it, he placed it there where the colours might grow dry.

Now, when the Gentleman came to ſee how this his work went forward, and to know how far he had proceeded therein, the Painter made haſte to ſhew it him, telling him he had already ended it. And for that, when he ſet forth this Table a drying; the Painter did not greatly care (as a thing that was nothing material) to ſet it after this, or that other manner, more one than another: So that the horſe ſtood (as he had then placed the Table) with his feet upward, and his Saddle downward.

The Gentleman when he lookt upon it, it ſeeming unto him not to be the ſame, which he had be ſpoken, ſaid unto him; Sir, the horſe that I wiſht you to make me, was to be drawn running away; and this rather ſeems to lye tumbling on the ground. The diſcreet Painter, mildly made anſwer; It ſeemeth, Sir, that you have no great inſight in painting, the Picture is the ſame, that you pretend, if your vvorſhip will be but pleaſed to turn the Table. Whereupon, that part that was down-ward, was turned upward; which done, the Gentleman viewing it again, reſted very well contented therewith, as well for the goodneſſe of the workmanſhip, as that thereby he was taught to know his own errour.

If we conſider the handy-works of God, they will oftentimes ſeem unto us like this horſe, that lies tumbling and wallowing on the ground; but if we ſhall but turn this Table, wrought by the penſil of that ſupream Artizan, that painted to the life both Heaven and Earth, beautifying the one with Sun, Moon, and Stars; the other, with all variety of colours, flowers, fruits, and the like; we ſhall finde, that this is the piece that we would have, and that the work is done to its full perfection.

Troubles (as I told you a little before) ſeem harſh and ſharp unto us: we have not (no more than had this ignorant Gentleman) the true diſcerning of them aright; there are few that underſtand them as they ſhould; but when he that ſends them unto us, ſhews that mercy unto us, which is laid up in them, then we ſhall ſee them in their true ſhape and colours, and ſhall take great pleaſure and delight in them.

Amongſt

Amongſt all the Slaves that were in the Galley, there was none of them like unto me, either in their good uſage, or in the knowledge of giving ſuch good content as I did, to my Maſter. But the pin in Fortunes wheel ſlipt out, and up came I in ſuch a ſtrange kinde of manner, as the like was never ſeen.

It hapned at that time, that there came a Gentleman into our Galley, who bare our Captains name, and was alſo of kin unto him, to learn experience, and to ſee ſome ſervice. He was rich, well clad, better behaved, and ware about his neck a maſſie chain of Gold, Souldier-like, being juſt ſuch another for all the vvorld, as I was uſed to have heretofore. He dieted in the Poop; he had a good garniſh of Plate; and ſervants that waited upon him, well and handſomely ſuited: But it ſo fell out, that the very next day after his imbarking, there were eighteen links of his chain miſſing, which were no leſſe worth than fifty Crowns. Sure, ſome of his own ſervants muſt needs have them: for there were none that came into the Poop-room, but ſuch as were known perſons, and free from all ſuſpicion: Yet notwithſtanding, for the better clearing of this doubt, all the Captains ſervants were put to the laſh, yet for all that, was there no news to be heard of them, they could never hear of them more, nor yet any the leaſt inckling thereof in the vvorld, nor is it known till this day who ſtole them, or what became of them.

And for the better excuſing hereafter of the like misfortune, the Captain came to his kinſman, and told him, that his beſt and ſureſt courſe was, that for the time, that he ſtay'd there, he ſhould commit the charge of his apparel and Jewels, to ſome truſty Galley-ſlave, who might take care of them, and keep them neat and handſom; aſſuring him, that whatſoever he ſhould deliver to any one of their cuſtodies, they durſt as well be hang'd, as not to give him a true account of it, and that there ſhould not be ſo much as a hair miſſing, of any thing that he ſhould truſt them withall.

This Gentleman liked very well of his counſel, and making afterwards inquiry, who in all the Galley might be the fitteſt man for him, and the moſt ſufficient, I was the onely man they made choice of, as being recommended unto them, for the good ſatisfaction that I would give him in my underſtanding, my diligency in attending his perſon, and for my cleanlineſſe about my ſelf, as alſo any thing that was my Maſters. When the Gentleman had heard of theſe my good qualities, & how I was likewiſe able to entertain him with witty jeſts, and merry conceits, he thought the time long, till he might ſee me in the Poop. So in all haſte, they called the Maſters-Mate unto them, & being intreated to part with me, he could not deny them their requeſt although it griev'd him much, for the good ſervice that he received from me. They clapt a long chain to my legge, which I trailed after me; and I was no ſooner come unto him, but he was very glad to ſee me, and ſpake very kindly unto me: and I think the rather, for that my feature, my face, and my actions, were anſwerable to that which he had heard of me. It did ſomewhat grieve him to ſee me (like a Monky) ty'd thus to a chain, and to draw it after me. He intreated the Captain, that he would favour me ſo far, that I might walk up and down with one onely fetter; which was granted: By which means I was inabled to do him the quicker & nimbler ſervice, as well when he ſate without at his meals, as when he was within his Cabbin, as alſo in going to and fro in the Galley, when occaſion was offered, I had had an Inventory delivered unto me, of all his apparel & Jewels; whereof, I ſtill gave him a very good accompt; But that which he and I had leaſt affiance in, and were more jealous of, was, of his own ſervants: For now that I had the charge of his *recamera*, his Wardrobe, or whatſoever elſe was appertaining unto him, they might eaſily excuſe themſelves of ſuch things, as they could ſteal cleanly from me. They cabbin'd with the Chaplain, near to the main Maſt: and the Gentleman, he had his Cabbin within the Poop; and I, in a little Diſpenſe, or Pantry, where *I* kept ſome *regalos*, and dainties, beſides other neceſſary proviſion.

*I* liked very well my ſervice, though I took a great deal of pains, but it was a pleaſure unto me, & gave me much content, that I had now the power, by thoſe things that paſt through my hands, to perform many kindneſſes towards ſuch ſlaves as were my friends & acquaintance: and albeit, I was willing to have done the like towards *Soto*, my old Camrade, yet *I* could not get within him, nor come to faſten any kindneſſe upon him; *I* wiſh't his good as mine own, but he did me all the ſpight that he could, diſcrediting and diſgracing me, telling ſome things truely of me, and inventing other-ſome, like unto thoſe, at what time we were taken, and committed to priſon, defaming me as much as did lye in him, broaching whatſoever he knew of me, not leaving any one thing un-ript up, for the manifeſting of his malice, and my ſhame: ſo that, albeit *I*, for mine own part, were privy to my ſelf, how much *I* was now reformed; yet thoſe that heard him thus exclaim againſt me, would make interpretation of them, as they ſtood affected, and comment upon them, as they themſelves liſted. And though God, at that inſtant, ſhould have given me the power to have wrought miracles, they would not have ſtick't to have ſaid, that *I* had done them in *Beelzebub*'s name.

*Soto* was the knife that fought to cut my throat; the point, or edge thereof, was ſtill towards

me: yet never did any man hear me ſpeak ſo much as one foul word of him, or ever open my mouth againſt him, or make ſhow of any the leaſt choller, at this his abuſing me; I made no reckoning of it, but let it paſſe as lightly as I could, all my whole care being now taken up, in the diligent attending of my new Maſter, and in doing him all faithfull ſervice, that I might procure his love and good liking towards me; hoping that it might one day ſo fall out, that either by him, or by ſome other, in recompence of my good ſervice, I might chance to purchaſe my liberty.

When he came out of his Cabbin, I was ſtill at hand to receive him, when he ſet his feet to come down the ladder; I lent him my hand at his entring, and returning out of the Cock-boat; I made him Tooth-picks for his Table, putting them upon a plate, when he ſate down to his meat; which, being many, & marvellous curious; he would often ſend for tokens to his friends. His Trencher-plates, and thoſe his other veſſels for the cooling of his vvine, his Cups, and his Glaſſes, were ſo cleanly kept, ſo neat, and ſo every point as they ſhould be, that it was a pleaſure to the eye to behold them. His bottles of vvine, and his Jars of water, freſh and ſweet; whe vvool of the Matreſſes whereon he lay, kept unknotty and ſoft; his whole bedding ſo well look't to that there was not a Flea to be found in it, nor any the like troubleſom vermin, for as my leaſure would give me leave, it was my dayly exerciſe, to go a hunting after them, ſtopping thoſe holes and chinks, where there was any the leaſt ſuſpicion of their breeding, that my Maſter might not onely be free from Fleas and *Chinches*, but the bad ſcent which they have with them.

So great was my diligence, and ſo pleaſing the whole manner of my proceeding with him, that my Maſter had now left off converſing with his other ſervants, and would at large diſcourſe with me of grave and weighty matters; but dealt therein with me, as your Diſtillers uſe to do; he did Limbeck me, and ſqueeze what he could out of me; and when he had exhauſted from me that juyce and ſubſtance which was for his turn, and as much as he deſired at that time to draw from me, he would pauſe awhile upon the matter, or to ſpeak more plainly, was half jealous of me, that I was not ſo compleat and perfect as I ſhould be, nor had not that true touch and reliſh, which properly appertaineth to your purer diſtillations. And all for the ſmack of one Herb, which was that evil report, which *Soto* had given of me. But his virulent tongue could not make me wrong Vertue: I went as faſt in doing well, as he did in ſpeaking ill: as well, that my actions might give him the lye, as alſo for that I now minded no other thing, than to run on ſtill in that good reſolution which I had propoſed to my ſelf.

When I waited on him at Table, I would out now and then with a merry tale, or ſome odd conceited jeſt, or other. And anights, or at other ſuch times as he was diſpoſed to take a nap, I would chat one thing, or other to him, that I might keep him ſtill cheerfull and merry. And the rather, for that of late he was grown ſomewhat melancholly, upon a Letter that he had received but a few dayes before from a grave perſonage, to whom he was much obliged, who all his life-time could never be drawn himſelf to marry, and was now wonderfull inſtant with this Gentleman, my Maſter, that he would get him a vvife. Perceiving therefore how ſad he was, I made bold to ask him the reaſon, why he was ſo penſive. He told it me; and did likewiſe ask my advice, what he were beſt to do in this caſe? I told him; Me thinks (Sir) that the fitteſt anſwer which is to be given to ſuch an one, who hath been ſo averſe from marriage himſelf, and would now inforce others thereunto, at leaſt ſeek to perſwade them unto it, is, That you are well content to do ſo, if he will give you one of his daughters to vvife: My Maſter was well pleaſed with the Counſel I gave him, reſolving with himſelf to take that courſe which I had preſcribed unto him. And continuing till it was dinner time, he will'd me to tell him, being I had been twice married how I liked that kinde of life.

I told him, Sir, a good and peaceable marriage, where love, and condition of the party ſtand upon equal terms, it is a glory; it is an enjoyning both of earth and heaven; it is a ſtate for thoſe, who make choice thereof, out of a deſire to be ſaved thereby, of ſo great perfection, and of ſuch exceeding, both content & comfort, that for to treat of ſuch a ſubject, it will require the relation of ſuch a tongue, as hath taſted the true happineſſe thereof. But for my ſelf, who made Matrimony a matter of mony, & more for pleaſure then propagation, as I did, I know not what to ſay unto it; I have deſerv'dly paid the price of that ſin, by this my preſent puniſhment, wch I now indure.

There are ſome vvomen (I muſt confeſſe) who by their wiſdom, and diſcreet carriage, have reduced to every good order and conformity, as perverſe & wicked men, as any are in the vvold. And there are other ſome again, that will make the beſt tempered, and the holieſt man alive, to loſe all patience, though he be able to ſuffer never ſo much. Look but upon *Job*'s wife, and ſee into what a deſperate humour ſhe would fain have put her husband; how did ſhe perſecute him, and how much did it import him, to have recourſe unto God, and onely to defend himſelf more from her, than from all other his perſecutions, and afflictions.

And therefore three friends being together in converſation; the one ſaid; Happy is that man that

that hath the good hap to match with a good wife. But more happy (ſaid the other) who buries her quickly, if ſhe prove untoward. And the third ſaid; Moſt happy is he, that hath neither t'one nor t'other. How much an importunate vvife and of an ill condition, doth torment and vex a man, let that *Provenzal* tell it you, who being quite wearied and tyred out with a ſhrewd vvife, and being unable any longer to indure her harſh behaviour, and not knowing in the vvorld, how to correct theſe her malignant humours, that he might without ſcandal rid himſelf of her, he was reſolved to go and make merry with his vvife and all his family, at a houſe that he had in the Countrey, that was not far off, it lying in his way, to paſſe by the Skirt of a Mountain, adjoyning cloſe upon *Rodanus*, a great and ſwift River; which in that very part of it, for that it was narrow, and paſt along between two Mountains, was very deep, and ran with a furious Current. He took order that the Mule which his vvife was to ride on, had not for three days before, one drop of vvater given her; ſo that, when ſhe came to the place aforeſaid, and that ſhe ſaw the vvater, there was no holding of her back, but haſtning down the hanging of the Hill, from one ridge to another, ſhe got to the River; from whence, it being impoſſible to turn her about, and to get up againe againſt the ſteepineſſe of the Cliffe, nor being able with all the force ſhe had, to rein her in, they both ruſhed into the River, where the vvoman was drowned, and the Mule with much adoe eſcaped; but came out ſo weak, and ſo weary that ſhe was ſcarce able to ſtand upon her legs.

For thoſe which never knew what marriage meant, and yet deſire to be informed what manner of thing it is, I may for a pattern ſet before their eyes, that which paſſed between thoſe Thruſhes the Summer following they were batcht, and ready to fly abroad and ſhift for themſelves. There was a great Shole of them gathered together, as if all the Thruſhes in the vvorld had joyn'd in one muſter, and were ſuch a cloud of them, when they were upon their wings, that they ſeemed to darken the aire, and by their interpoſition betwixt the Sun and the Earth, to make an Eclipſe.

And when all this jolly company were aſſembled, and met together, they raiſed their Camp, and marched away together, to ſeek out ſome better place to live in, (for that year, their own Countrey failed them of that plenty which it was wont to afford them) ſo at laſt they entred into a very goodly Countrey, that was full of Gardens & Orchards, and freſh fields, and where there were many pleaſant fruits, and other delicate feeding for them; where they were very willing to ſet up their reſt, it ſeeming unto them, to be a place not only of much recreation and delight, but of ſufficient ſuſtenance and maintenance for them. But when the inhabitants of that Countrey ſaw how they flocked together, they ſpred their Nets, made Gins, and Pit-falls for them, and by little and little went taking and deſtroying of them.

The poor Thruſhes, ſeeing themſelves thus perſecuted, and that they could not ſafely feed there, nor reſt in quiet, they ſought out another place that might make better for their purpoſe, which they found as pleaſant, and as plentifull as the former; but they taſted here of the ſame ſauce, as they did there; which made them likewiſe to fly for fear from that danger which hung over their heads.

Thus did they travel up and down from place to place, till that they being in a manner almoſt all deſtroyed, thoſe few that were left alive, agreed to return home to their own Countrey. When their fellow-Thruſhes that ſtayed at home, ſaw them return ſo fair and fat, they ſaid unto them: O how happy are you, and how wretched are we? We ſtayed here behinde, and you ſee how weak, and how poor we be: but you are come home in that good caſe, your feathers ſo ſmooth, and ſo ſleek, that it is a pleaſure to look upon them, and your bodies ſo plump, and ſo well fed, that ye can ſcarce fly, ye be ſo fat: whereas we through pure hunger, are ſcarce able to ſtand upon our legs, and when we are on our vvings, are ready through faintneſſe to fall to the ground.

Whereunto theſe welcom-home Travellers returned this anſwer: The eyes of your conſideration reach no farther, than to this our fatneſſe; but if you would be pleaſed to weigh with your ſelves, how many of us went from hence, and how many of us are returned home alive, you would rather reſt contented with your poor, but ſecure fare, then with this our fatneſſe, and full feeding, ſo full of dangers.

They who look onely on the pleaſures of marriage, and go no farther, where they may ſee ſcarce ten of ten thouſand, to come off clear, & eſcape the danger of it, will think better of a ſingle life, than of marriage; and that it is far better and ſafer to be alone, than ill accompanied.

Whileſt we were in this diſcourſe, dinner was ſerving in, and the cloath being laid, I waited as I was wont to do; having my eyes ſtill fixed on my Maſters hands, that he might not wagge a finger, but I might be in readineſſe to apprehend and execute his thoughts. But whileſt I was thus watchfull about my Maſter, *Soto* was not ſleeping in the mean while to work me a miſchief.

And vvhen he ſaw all his former malice could not vvork me out of favour, nor do me any harm, vvith ſheer money he vvent about to purchaſe out his revenge upon me. He grew into a League of friendſhip vvith my Maſters Page, ſuch another Bird as himſelf, for that bribes had corrupted him, and private intereſt drawn him to be thus diſhoneſt tovvards me. He promiſed him a dainty fine pair of Stockings of his ovvn knitting, and told him, that he vvould beſtovv them upon him, if (as he vvaited at the Table) he could handſomly ſteal a piece of Plate from thence, and hide it in ſome ſecret place in my Pantry, that I might not knovv of it. For, in ſo doing, he ſhould effect tvvo good things. Firſt, he ſhould get a good pair of ſtockings by the bargain. And ſecondly, himſelf, and his other fellow-ſervants, ſhould by this means be received again into favour, and I caſt out.

The Page did not like amiſſe of this motion; and taking occaſion that day to go down, he took up a Silver plate, which (by lifting up a little boord) he hid in one of the ſides of the Gally.

Now, when the Cloath was taken away, going to gather up my plate (as my manner was) that I might make them clean, finding one of them wanting, I made diligent ſearch for it; and when I had ſearcht every corner, and could not finde it, I preſently gave notice, that I miſt ſuch a plate; to the end that ſome diligence might be uſed, for the ſooner recovery of it, with thoſe his ſervants that appertained to the Poop.

The Captain and my Maſter did believe what was truth at the firſt; but becauſe my enemy *Soto* bare witneſſe againſt me, it was voiced out amongſt them, that my ſelf, abuſing the favour that I had with my Maſter, had ſtoln it, and conveyed it away, that I might lay the fault upon others, and ſo go away with it my ſelf. This roguiſh Page, did put a helping hand thereunto and did all that he could to diſgrace me; So that now the doors began to be ſet open to ſuſpition, and had made ſome little entrance; and ſtepping farther in by degrees, my Maſter was often earneſt with me, to confeſſe the truth, before the buſineſſe ſhould grow fouler. But becauſe I knew mine own innocency, and that I was as clear thereof, as the Childe that is new born, I could give him no other ſatisfaction, ſave good words.

Then this Traitor the Page ſtood up, and ſaid; Me thinks, Sir, it were not amiſſe that you would cauſe his Diſpence, or Pantry to be ſearcht. For it is not poſſible, but that he muſt hide it ſome where, or other there abouts. For, being that I had not gone out of the Poop, it was very likely they might finde it in my lodging. This courſe took beſt, and was of all very well liked, and approved; and ſo getting them down, and rummaging all that little room; firſt this place, and then that, they lighted upon it at laſt where the Page had put it; and taking it forth, they came up with great joy, and proclaim'd that now they had found it, and that I hid it there; for that it was not poſſible, that any body elſe ſhould do it.

Now, becauſe this carried with it a ſhow of truth, and that they had caught me in the negative, this confirmed them in their ſuſpition, and this crime was laid to my charge.

The Captain commanded the *Alguazils* ſervant, to give me fifty ſtripes; from the which my Maſter did free me; intreating my pardon, for that it was the firſt fault that I had committed; adviſing me withall, that if hereafter I ſhould be taken with the like, I ſhould be ſoundly puniſht, and pay both for the old, and the new. After this, I held not up my head any more, my heart was never truely merry, nor did I injoy my ſelf, as before; not for that which was paſt, but fearing that which was to come; Thinking with my ſelf, that he, that had done me this wrong, would (having ſcap't this ſo well) watch his time to do me a greater miſchief. And being jealous of ſome farther foul play, I earneſtly beſought both the Captain, and my Maſter, that they would quit me of this charge, and that I might have their good will to deliver over thoſe things that were in my cuſtody to ſome other, and I ſhould take it from them as a favour, that they would return me back again, laden with my irons to my bank. They thought, that the ground of all this, was the deſire that I had to go back again to my old Maſter, the Maſters Mate: And howbeit, I did importune them very hard, and was inſtant with them; they, for the ſame reaſon, were more earneſt and urgent upon me; and that I ſhould (though it griev'd me) ſerve and attend there all the dayes of my life. Miſerable man that I am (ſaid I) I know not in the vvorld what to do, nor how to defend my ſelf from Traitors; who, it ſeemeth, have ſet themſelves againſt me, onely of purpoſe to undo me.

I did all that I could poſſibly do for my life, no man living could be more carefull, watching (like *Argo's*) with an hundred eyes, whatſoever was committed to my charge, not neglecting thoſe things that were ſcarce worth the looking-after, being but trifles, and not to be reckoned of: yet all this my care would not ſerve my turn; it hath done me, you ſee, no good: I was now in my riſing, but Heaven hath thought it fit that I muſt firſt fall.

One evening, as my Maſter was coming forth, I went out (as I was wont to do) to receive him as he was to aſcend the ſtairs, I gave him my hand, he comes up, I took off his Cloak, his Sword, and

and his Hat, and gave him his Sea-Gown and Cap, which was of green Damask; for theſe things I had ſtill in a readineſſe.

When I had done, I carried down thoſe other things, putting them in their right place. That very night, not knowing, how, who, or by what means (unleſſe it were the Devils doing, for I could not conceive otherwiſe of it) that the Hat being faln down from the place where it hung, I found it without a band, which was ſet with Gold buttons. Whip, Sir *John*, it was gone in a trice; ſo that in the morning, when I ſaw how it lay, and the Hatband gone, *I* ſtood like a man amazed.

Well, I ſearch't as diligently for it, as if my life had lain upon it; but to no purpoſe in the world. The Hat-band would not appear, nor was there any ſigne or mark thereof, how it ſhould be gone.

When I told my Maſter of it; Ah (ſaid he) now *I* know thee to be a thief; I wot well what thou art, and why thou doeſt it. But ſet your heart at reſt, it ſhall not ſerve your turn, for the Hat-band muſt not be ſo loſt; *I* ſhall make you fetch it out, and yet fail of your purpoſe beſides. I know you fetch well enough. Doeſt not thou think, that ever ſince the Plate was miſſing, I have lookt into your water, and found out the diſeaſe thou art ſick of, and that thou goeſt ſeeking new occaſions, that thou maieſt be quit of my ſervice? But thou ſhalt ſerve me ſtill in ſpite of thy teeth, if it be but to vex thee the more, and thou ſhalt have a thouſand baſtinadoes walk daily about thy ſhoulders: Nor ſhalt thou ever ſerve any other Maſter in the Galley, but my ſelf; And in caſe, *I* ſhould goe hence, I will ſo far befriend you, that thou ſhalt be rankt like a Rogue, according as thy Villanies deſerve, and thy lewd and naughty dealings, ſince my good uſage towards thee will not make thee leave off, to be that which thou art, and ever wilt be *Guzman de Alfarache*, that's enough, I need ſay no more unto thee.

I know not what to ſay unto thee, nor to indear the grief that I conceived hereupon. Finding my ſelf clear and innocent, and yet charged with a juſt (as they would have it) and lawful crime, I repli'd not ſo much as one word, nor had I the power to ſpeak; And if I ſhould have ſought to juſtifie my ſelf, had it been Goſpel, that I ſhould have delivered unto them, comming out of my mouth, no more credit would have been given unto it, than to *Mahomet*. *I* therefore was ſilent, and held my peace. For, when words will not profit a man, it were better that his tongue ſhould be dumb, and his heart tell its griefs unto God. Inwardly to my ſelf, *I* gave his Majeſty thanks for this his affliction, beſeeching him, that he would free me from this mans hands; for I knew not wherein I had offended him. For *I* was ſo truely become another man, and ſo quite altered from that I was before, that *I* would rather ſuffer my ſelf to be torne in a thouſand pieces, than to commit any the leaſt crime in the world.

When they had uſed many diligences, and ſaw that by no means they could bring his Hat-band to light; the Captain commanded the *Alguazils* man, that he ſhould beat it out of me, and never give me over, till *I* had confeſt the Theft.

I was preſently taken up, they did what they could, and *I* indured it as well as *I* could. They would have me to acknowledge that, which I never knew, whileſt I with my ſoul pour'd forth ſuch prayers as I knew; invocating heaven, that that torment and bloud, which thoſe cruel ſtripes did draw from me, might be joyned with thoſe innocent drops and undeſerved tortures, which my good God both ſuffered and ſhed for me, and that they might be available for me to ſalvation; ſeeing that there was now no way but one with me: For die I muſt under theſe their tyrannous hands, if they did not leave off the ſooner. They ſaw all of them in what a pitiful caſe I was, and there was nothing wanting betwixt me and my death, but the breathing forth of my Spirit. And albeit it ſeemed to my Maſter, that my cruelty, in ſuffering my ſelf thus to be whipt, was greater than his, in commanding it to be done; yet at laſt, taking compaſſion upon me, and pitying the great torment that I was put to, cauſed me to be taken away.

Then did they chaſe my body with Salt and Wine Vinegar, which was of greater torment unto me, than the other. The Captain would have had them to have given me as much more upon my belly, ſaying little do you know, Sir, the condition of theſe Theeves, who are of like nature to your Foxes; they will counterfeit themſelves to be almoſt dead, and will lie as if there were no life in them; but if you let them alone, and ſuffer them to take breath, they will runne from you like ſo many young Colts: And other ſome are ſo hard, that for a peece of ſix pence, they will let you flea the skin from off their backs. But let this Dog aſſure himſelf, he ſhall not carry it away ſo; for I will never give him over, till I have either the Hat-band, or his life. He commanded me to be carried away from thence to my *Diſpenſilla*, or little Pantrie, where they did lie at me (I know not how often) with perſwaſions and admonitions, ever and anon notifying unto me, that *I* ſhould either deliver up the Hat-band, or arm my ſelf with patience; for it was reſolved, that I muſt be beaten to death, rather than I ſhould enjoy what I had ſtoln. But, as no man can reſtore that which he never had; no more could I comply with that which they commanded me.

Then

Then I knew what it was to be a Gally-ſlave; and how that the love which ſome made ſhow to bear unto me, and the good looks that they gave me, proceeded only from the pleaſure that they took in my merry jeſts and witty conceits, and not for mine own ſake. And the greateſt grief that I did feel in theſe my miſeries was not ſo much for the pain which I did indure, nor for the falſe witneſſe that was given againſt me, as that all of them did verily believe, that *I* did juſtly deſerve this puniſhment, and therefore took no pity of me.

Some few dayes (after this my rubbing and being waſht with Salt and Vinegar) paſt over my head, when, lo, they came afreſh upon me, commanding me to make reſtitution of the Hat-band; and becauſe *I* would not, or (to ſpeak more truly) could not give it them, they pull'd me out of the Pantry, being very weak and ill, faſtening Cords to the wriſts of mine arms, and hailing me up with a Pully, I hung (*I* know not how long) in the air, which was a terrible torment unto me, where I thought *I* ſhould have breathed my laſt. For my heart was ſo afflicted, that I had ſcarce any feeling that there was any ſuch thing in my body, and my breath began to fail me. At laſt, they let me down, not to give me eaſe, but to lay me down upon my back athwart the Cannon, that lies between the Fore-caſtle, and hinder Deck; where when my belly lay fit for their purpoſe, they laid thereon ſuch cruel blowes, as if it had been for ſome hainous crime, charging the Officer to be-labour me, even to the death.

But the Captain, beginning now to fear, that I was ready to give up the ghoſt, and that he ſhould be accountable to the King for me, if *I* ſhould through this his cruel uſage periſh in my puniſhment, he held it the better option of the two, rather to loſe the Hat-band, than me. Whereupon he commanded they ſhould take me away, and carry me to my wonted lodging, there to be cured.

When I began to recover, and had got a little ſtrength, they yet thought themſelves not ſufficiently revenged of me; for they had ſtill this ſtedfaſt belief of me, that *I* was ſuch a notable Villain, and ſuch a ſtubborn Rogue, that I would rather ſuffer all that rigour of this their whipping and ſcourging of me, than loſe the intereſt of this my ſuppoſed theft: Inſomuch, that they commanded the Maſters-mate, that he ſhould never pardon me, when I did offend, but that he ſhould be very careful to puniſh ſtil in me thoſe ſins that were venial, as if they had been mortal.

And he, who could not otherwiſe chuſe but fulfill his Captains command (for he durſt not for his life do otherwiſe) did chaſtize me with unaccuſtomed cruelty, one while for that I did not get me to ſleep at my due hours; another while, for that I did not wake in time; if to ſupply my other wants, I did ſell my allowance, ſparing the meat out of my belly, to relieve my neceſſities, I was ſure to be laſht for it, uſing me ſo extreamly ill, that I was weary of my life, and did deſire with all my heart, that I were out of this wretched world. And that they might have the better colour to do as they did, and that they might pick occaſion to pay me ſoundly, and yet ſave themſelves harmleſſe; they committed to my charge the trouble of the *Corulla*; with proteſtation, that if any thing therein ſhould be wanting, I ſhould be ſure to pay well for it. *I* was likewiſe upon all occaſions, like the reſt of the Gally-ſlaves, put to tug at the Oar; My Bank was the hindermoſt, and therefore the more painful, as being ſubject to the inclemency of the weather; in Summer, to heats; and in Winter, to colds; being ſtill ti'd to have a care to keep up the Beak of our Gally in the winds mouth, & to go ſmug and tite. To my cuſtody, were committed all the iron implements that were aboord her; as likewiſe the Cables to caſt or weigh Anchor, as need ſhould require. When we did ſail with the winde, *I* was fain to look to the fore-ſail, as alſo to the ſheet that was to the Lar-booord; ſail, or not ſail, I had ſomething ſtill to do, either before or behind. *I* did ſpin all the hemp, whereof your ſmaller cordage and leſſer ropes were made, which were ſpent and imployed on the Gallies. It was put to my account to tie up the the Yards, to ruffle the Sail, to dry them, and then deliver them to the Ship-boyes, to hoyſe the fore-ſail, and ſee every thing fit about it. I did mend thoſe ends of the ſails that were torne and rent with the wind, I did patch and lengthen out thoſe that were grown too ſhort; *I* did ſtrengthen the old tacklings with odde ends, that I had in ſtore for that purpoſe; but the Cables *I* ſupplied ſtill with new ſtuff: I did keep the Gunners to plant their Ordnance, remove their Carriages, and to winde and turn their Artillery, as they would have it. The care was laid upon me to ſtop the touch-holes, and to ſee them well covered, that no wet ſhould come at them; to look to the ſcouring ſticks, and the Spoons to pour in the powder, to the Rammers, the Spunges, and the Lin-ſtocks that belong to the Artillery. And when the Maſters-Mates-man was out of the way, or otherwiſe occupied, it was injoyned me to ſweep and make clean the Galley, and to be the common Swabber, cauſing the Ship-boyes to bring Mats and Ruſhes, to make Maps wherewithal to rub it, keeping it alwayes neat and clean from all kinde of filthineſſe. And of old ends of Rags, or of Flax and Tow, and make wads and wiſps for thoſe that goe to the Long-houſe (you know what I mean) and this was the utmoſt of all miſeries, and

that

that went moſt againſt my ſtomack, as being of all others the meaneſt and the baſeſt Office; for being to ſerve them with theſe, for ſo beaſtly (that I may not give it a worſe word, for fear of turning thy ſtomack) a piece of buſineſſe, I muſt firſt be forced to kiſſe it, before I give it into their hands, ſo that by an Attourney, I muſt kiſſe, you know what.

He that ſhould have ſo many things committed to his charge as I had, and had not been accuſtomed unto them, it muſt have been almoſt impoſſible for him not to have failed in the performance of them; but through the great care that I alwayes took, I did ſtudy to do all things well; and did ſeldome or never miſſe in doing of my duty, and with uſe, they grew every day leſſe difficult than other. Even from hence alſo would Fortune have thrown me down, if ſhe could; but becauſe her force cannot extend it ſelf againſt the goods of the minde; and that adverſity makes men wiſe and prudent; *I* ſtill bare up ſtoutly, and continued firm and conſtant, withſtanding all the power that ſhe could make againſt me. And as he that is rich, and lives happily, is evermore afraid of falling; ſo on the contrary, was I in good hope of riſing, becauſe it was impoſſible for me to fall any lower. And as my mind gave me, ſo it fell out.

*Soto*, my Camerade, came not to the Gallies, either to give Almes, or to preach Faith in Chriſt to the Infidels. It was his ſins that had brought him thither; for he had been the greateſt and moſt notorious thief, that ever was heard of in his time, either in all *Italy*, or in *Spain*. He had ſometimes been a Souldier, and knew every part of the Countrey, as one that had travell'd it to and fro many a time. He perceiving that our Gallies did ſail along the mediterranean and that we went touching now and then upon the coaſt of *Barbary*, ſeeing reprizals, it entred into his imagination to treat with ſome Moors, and other Gally-ſlaves, that were of his faction, to make purchaſe of this our Gally, and to go ſheer away with it. For which purpoſe, he and they were already provided of ſome weapons, which they had hid in by-corners, and under their Banks, to make uſe of them, when time ſhould ſerve. But becauſe he could not bring this his deſign to paſſe, without having me to be of his Piety, in regard of the place that *I* had in my Bank, where I was behind at his back; and for that the ordering of the Tackling and Cables were committed wholly to my charge, he thought fit to make me acquainted with this his intention, caſting and conſidering with himſelf, that this buſineſſe would be better welcome to no man than my ſelf, as well for that *I* was condemned to ſerve there as a ſlave all the dayes of my life; as alſo that *I* might free my ſelf from that Hell, where-into they had thruſt me, and did ſo ſeverely puniſh me, *Soto* would have broken the Ice himſelf, and did much deſire to confer with me about it, but he could not find the means. Whereupon, he ſent a meſſenger unto me, (one that he might truſt) deſiring my reconciliation and favour, and that I would joyn with him for the better effecting our freedome from this cruel bondage and ſlavery wherein we now lived. *I* returned him anſwer, that this was not a buſineſſe ſo eaſily to be undertaken, as he ſuppoſed; but ought to be well weighed, and thought upon, before we did reſolve thereon; for we muſt needs run a very great hazard in the undergoing thereof; for that there was no *medium* betwixt thoſe two; either to come off clear, or to loſe our lives. To the Moor, who had brought me this meſſage, my counſel did not ſeem amiſſe. Telling me, that he would goe with my anſwer to *Soto*, and finde a time to come again unto me, and talk farther of it.

In the *Interim*, while theſe Meſſages paſt to and fro, *I* conſulted with my ſelf; and for that I had put on a full reſolution, not to do any thing that was infamous, or ill, no not for any profit or benefit that ſhould accrue thereby unto me, I knew that it was now no time for me to adviſe farther with them; as well, for that I ſaw how they were reſolved; as alſo for fear, if I ſhould fall off from them, or otherwiſe miſſe of their purpoſe, they might chance to diſcloſe me, and ſuborne ſome falſe witneſſes againſt me, the better to excuſe and ſave themſelves: Giving out, that *I*, to free my ſelf from the miſery, wherein I lived, had incited them thereunto. Well, I gave them good words, and made my ſelf to be of their party, they being reſolved to put this their plot in execution upon Saint *John Baptiſts* day, betimes in the morning.

Now when the Eve was come, and that one of the Souldiers was going to untruſſe a point, when he came to me for ſome Ockame to wipe his poſteriors, I roſe up, and whiſpering him in the ear, ſecretly ſaid unto him; Sir, tell your Captain, that it imports both his life, & his honour, to hear two words from me, which tend to his Majeſties ſervice; & therefore let him preſently give order, that I may be brought to him into the Poop. He did ſo, and the Captain forthwith commanded me to come before him, where, in his preſence, I revealed unto him this their conſpiracy, whereat he bleſt himſelf, and would ſcarce give credit unto it; it ſeeming unto him, that I had invented this of mine own head, that I might be eaſed of thoſe troubleſome labours, and great miſeries which I indured, and that by this means I might procure ſome mercede or favour from him. But when I told him, where he ſhould finde their Weapons, and why, and how they were brought thither, he rendered many thanks unto God, that he had delivered him from ſo great dangers, promiſing that he would ſee me well rewarded for my labour. He

He commanded one that was a Captain of a Squadron, that he ſhould make diligent ſearch about thoſe Banks, which I had pointed forth unto him, and looking there for their weapons, at laſt they lighted upon them. Preſently thereupon, was a Proceſſe fulminated forth againſt all the Offenders: And becauſe the next day following was a great Feſtival day, and very ſolemnly obſerved by us, their puniſhment was deferr'd till the next day following. God (and my good fortune) who was well pleaſed with this my ſervice, and did guide theſe buſineſſes of mine, by his own divine hand, would needs have it fall out ſo luckily for me, that opening a Cheſt to hang out the Streamers that belonged to the Main-Maſt, the Miſne, and other fitting places for them, as well in acknowledgment of their thankfulneſſe unto God, as the honour and ſolemnity of that day, they found therein a neſt of Rats, and amongſt other trinkets my Maſters Hat-band.

*Soto* conceiving how the world was like to goe with him, was very deſirous to have his ghoſtly Father come to him, that (like a good Chriſtian) he might make confeſſion of his ſins, and craving pardon and forgiveneſſe at my hands, for the falſe witneſſes that he had ſuborned againſt me about the Hat-band, he did together declare, how and wherefore he had done it, and howbeit he made ſhow to be reconciled unto me, and to enter into a league of friendſhip with me, yet his purpoſe and reſolution was, when they had made themſelves Maſters of the Galley, to have ſtabb'd me, his hatred being ſuch towards me, that nothing could ſatisfie it, but my death. From whoſe revengeful hand, my good God, that day, was ſo gracious unto me, as to free me from this his implacable malice.

*Soto*, and one of his Companions, who were the Ring-leaders of this rebellion, were condemned to be drawn in pieces with four Gallies, and five others to be hang'd: Which ſentence was executed. And as many as were found to have a finger in this buſineſſe, were confined to the Gallies for term of life, being firſt publickly whipt, paſſing from Galley to Galley, till they had rounded the whole Fleet. As for the *Moors*, moſt of them had their noſes & their ears cut off, that by this mark they might be known, where ever they came to be Rogues upon record.

This exemplary Juſtice having paſt upon theſe Offenders; when all was ended, and things ſetled as before, the Captain ſends for me, and highly extolling the goodneſſe of my nature, my innocency, and loyalty, craving pardon of me for all my former ill uſage, he commanded my irons to be ſtrook off, and gave me leave to goe at liberty up and down the Galley, till his Majeſties Royal *Scedula* ſhould be ſent for my abſolute diſcharge. For ſo the Captain had ſupplicated for me; and being conſulted on by the Councel of War, the Petition was ſigned; which was no ſooner ſent down, but I was ſet at liberty.

And here (gentle Reader) do I put a full point to theſe my Miſ-fortunes, *I* have given thee a large account of my lewd life; it is truly ſumm'd up unto thee. What it was hereafter, thou ſhalt ſee in my third and laſt Part, if God ſhall give me life: and that *I* do not firſt exchange this tranſitory one, for one that is eternal, which is the hope and life of the faithful.

FINIS.